ANNALS
OF THE
REFORMATION
AND
Eſtabliſhment of RELIGION,
IN THE
Church of England.

CONTAINING

Accounts of the Government and Inſpection of the BISHOPS in their reſpective Dioceſſes; as Matters, requiring their Care, fell out each Year: Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſions. The buſy Actings of *Papiſts* and *Puritans*: The Difficulties and Dangers the STATE as well as the CHURCH met with from Time to Time: Occaſioned chiefly from the Endeavours to overthrow both, by the Power and Practices of ſuch as favoured *MARY*, Queen of *SCOTS*: Of whom many Special Tranſactions; and chiefly of her Sentence and Death; and the Conſequences thereof, are ſhewn: And the *Spaniſh* Invaſion in 1588.

Both ſerving to enlighten thoſe Two Great CRISES of

Queen *ELIZABETH*'s REIGN.

TOGETHER WITH

Divers other Political AFFAIRS of Note interſperſed.

This Hiſtory is alſo improved by Notices given concerning the State and Events of the Church of *Ireland*; Occurrences and Differences that fell out in our Univerſities; Remarks of many Perſons of Rank and Quality in Church and State: Books of Learning and Note, Libels, Pamphlets, *&c.* publiſhed yearly. All commencing from the Year of our LORD, MDLXXXI. and ſo continued for divers Years.

Collected diligently and faithfully from Records, Papers of State, Original Letters of Privy Counſellors, Ambaſſadors, Biſhops, Learned Men in the Univerſities, as elſewhere: And from other choice *MSS.* reſerved in our publick Libraries, or more private Archives.

TOGETHER

With an APPENDIX:

CONTAINING

Many choice Records, and Papers of Value; Tranſcribed from Originals: Referred to in the Work; in Order to the Vindication, Proof, and Illuſtration of the foregoing HISTORY.

By JOHN STRYPE, *M. A.*

VOL. III.

Memento dierum antiquorum. Cogita Generationes ſingulas; Interroga Patrem tuum, & annuntiabit tibi; Majores tuos, & dicent tibi. Deutr. XXXII. 7.

LONDON:
Printed for EDWARD SYMON, in *Cornhill.* MDCCXXVIII.

B L

THE PREFACE.

GOOD READER,

I Have little to ſay by way of Preface, upon the Appearance of this Third Volume of the ANNALS; *but only that I have herein continued them for ſeveral Years further; moved by the ſame good End and Purpoſe I wrote the former: Namely, (for the Service of the preſent Generation, as well as for Poſterity) to communicate ſome more Light to the laſt wonderful Age, when Queen* ELIZABETH *ruled theſe Kingdoms, and to the Settlement and Continuance of our excellent Reformed Religion, and the amazing Concurrence of Gods Bleſſing therewith, in ſpight of all Worldly Oppoſition, however formidable and malicious. And alſo to let the World know, that I have digeſted and compiled this Volume carefully (as I have done the former) out of my large Store of Collections made from Authentick Original Papers; and that, I proteſt, with the ſame Diligence, Fidelity and Exactneſs.*

And here on this Account, I think my ſelf bound, and do take this Occaſion, to vindicate my Credit and Reputation, in reſpect of my Truth, Faithfulneſs and Ability in what I have formerly writ and publiſhed; having been not long ago very rudely dealt with by one Daniel Williams, *Presbyter of the* Church *of England, in his* Engliſh *Tranſlation of a* French *Book, intitled,* A Defence of the Validity of the *Engliſh* Ordination: *Writ in* French *by Father* Francis Couragier, *Canon Regular and Librarian of* S. Geneveve *at* Paris. *Which Tranſlated Book was printed at* Paris, Anno 1725. *When* (pag. 50.) *I am thus by the Tranſlator accuſed and expoſed.*

“ *Mr.* Strype *in his Life of* Cranmer, *without any Heſitation*
“ *placeth the Conſecration of* Barlow *in the Year* 1535. *In the*
“ *ſame Place obſerving, that the Record of it was not inſerted*
“ *into the Regiſter any more than the Conſecration of* Edward
“ Fox *for the Biſhoprick of* Hereford. *What led this Author into*
“ *this Miſtake is, that having placed* Fox, *Biſhop of* Hereford,
“ *Conſecrated on the* 26*th of* September, 1535. *and being*
“ *about to make known, that the Inſtrument of it had not been*

“ *inſerted in the Regiſter any more than that of* Barlows, *he had forgot to ſet down the Conſecration of the latter, but mentions both together, as though they had ſo happened.*

Now I will take Leave to ſet down my very Words in that Place of the Book of Memorials of Archbiſhop Cranmer, *concerning theſe two Biſhops. Whereby the Reader may the better judge of my* Forgetfulneſs, *and running into an Error without any* Heſitation; *two groſs Faults I am charged with.*

Cranm. Memor. *p.* 37. “ Sept. *the* 15*th. was the Act of Confirmation and Election of* Edward Fox, *Elect of* Hereford: *And of* William Barlow, *Prior of the Priory of Canons Regular of* Biſham, *of the Order of S.* Auguſtine, Sarum; *for the Biſhoprick of St.* Aſaph. [*And no Date ſet.*]

“ *The Conſecration of theſe two are not inſerted in the Regiſter.*

Hence it is plain I write there concerning the Confirmation *of thoſe two Biſhops, and not of their* Conſecration. *Whoſe* Conſecrations, *as I expreſly ſubjoin, were omitted in the Regiſter, ſo that the Error muſt be charged upon the Cenſurer himſelf, in his ſo careleſs miſreading* Conſecration *for* Confirmation.

And for the better Satisfaction of my ſelf and others, I had Recourſe to my Tranſcripts from that Regiſter, where it is thus entred, (next after Shaxton's *Conſecration,* Apr. 11. 1535.*)* “ Edward Fox, *Elected and Confirmed for* Hereford, *Sept.* 15. 1535. “ *And next ſtands the Confirmation and Election of* William Barlow, *Prior of the Priory of Canons Regular,* &c. *the Date here omitted. And ſo I left it without Date in the Book. And the Date of the Day there ſet was intended only for the former Biſhops Confirmation. Though elſewhere in the Regiſter the Archbiſhops Certificatory of* Barlows *Confirmation, was* Febr. 22. *And ſo in ſhort, I leave the Caſe between me and my Critick, to the Judgment of Candid Readers.*

But this is not all, but I muſt add, with what Words an Annotator, in his Notes, at the Bottom of the Page, expoſeth me, and my Readers too, concerning thoſe Memorials *of Archbiſhop* Cranmer, *and whatſoever elſe I have writ.* “ *It is a Misfortune that muſt attend ordinary Readers in their Peruſal of the ſeveral laborious Tracts, publiſhed by* Mr. Strype, *to be led into Errors: Few Writers having committed more Miſtakes, than he hath done. Which weak or malicious Adverſaries may one Time or other make ill Uſes of. The Writings will not always fall in the Hands of ſuch candid, judicious Readers, as our Author hath. And therefore it would be an Act of great Charity, or rather Juſtice to the Publick, and Reputation to himſelf, to re-*

"*view what he hath already written. For I have Ocular De-*
"*monſtration, that his very numerous Eſcapes would make a com-*
"*pleat Volume. Would he take Leave of the World with his Re-*
"*tractations, how beneficent, how Praiſe-worthy an Attempt would*
"*that be? I cannot promiſe him large Collections on this Subject.*
"*Here is a Complication of Miſtakes detected by our diſpaſſionate*
"*Author*, D. W.

I ſhall not reflect upon theſe Lines. Yet cannot but obſerve, what Credit is to be given to his, or his Friends, Ocular Demonſtration, *by thoſe groſs Miſtakes above. This Perſon hath preſcribed me a Task indeed; to look over all the Works that I have publiſhed, and to examine them again from the Records, and Original MSS. and Authentick Papers, whence I have collected and digeſted them. That truly would effectually put a Stop to the publiſhing this, or any more of theſe* Annals *of our Church, or any other important Affairs, incident in Queen* ELIZABETH's *Reign. And then perhaps he and his Party would obtain their Ends; that I ſhould no further diſturb them, and their Principles.*

But in ſhort, I muſt tell him, and certify all others, that it would be but a great deal of Labour loſt, and Time ſpent in vain; ſince what I have entred in my Copies, and prepared Writings for the Preſs, were always reviewed by me, and carefully compared with the Records and Originals, by me tranſcribed. And moreover I have ever been very careful and punctual in all my Collections thence. Whereof I have many Volumes (now bound up) taken by my own Pen, and with mine own Eyes, and made uſe of no other Tranſcribers, or Amanuenſes. *Unleſs what ſome learned Friends abroad, and in the Univerſities had communicated to me.*

And I may add, that I dare ſay, I have, for many long Years together, converſed with Hiſtorical MSS. (falling within the Sæculum Reformatum) *whether Records, Regiſters, Inſtruments, Letters of Stateſmen, as well as other private Letters of the Court and Nobility, together with very many antient printed Books of thoſe Times (having met with ſome ſpecial Advantages that way) more than many Men alive have done. And when afterwards I was purpoſed, for the publick Good, to digeſt and publiſh ſome of theſe Pains of mine, I ever made it my Reſolution to be juſt, faithful and impartial in what I ſhould deliver, and recommend unto the World from thence.*

And truly I may well bear the Diſcouragement and Calumnies of one, or a few unknown, prejudiced Perſons, conſidering the Approbation, and Encouragement I have had for many Years, of ſo many other wiſe, learned and able Perſons, of the Clergy, as well as Laity, of this Kingdom, as alſo that of Ireland, *(of better* Rank *than* ordinary Readers, led by me into Errors) *and of their good*

Acceptance of what I have written: As alſo their earneſt Deſires of my Continuance and Proceeding therein.

And that I may not make this a meer Boaſt, I am compelled in reſpect of my Reputation, ſo much injured, to give a few Teſtimonials from ſome of them, of me and my Writings: That I may leave ſome better Character behind me.

The Reverend Mr. Nicolas Battely, *deceaſed, (who ſet forth a ſecond Edition of* Somners Antiquities *of* Canterbury, *with large Additions) had imparted unto me, ſeveral choice Tranſcripts out of the Records of that Church of* Canterbury, *while I was writing Archbiſhop* Cranmers Memorials. *And the Book being printed and one of them preſented to him, I deſired him, that he would take the Pains to read it over with Care, and to obſerve impartially, without Favour or Affection, what Errors or Faults he ſhould diſcover therein, (as he was a Man well known to be very ſtudious and learned in ſuch Antiquities) and I ſhould take it kindly at his Hands. Accordingly he favoured me with a Letter dated from* Beaksborn, *near* Canterbury, *in the Year* 1694. *(the ſame Year the Book came forth) Wherein were theſe Words: "That "I having deſired him to read my Book with ſome ſtrict Scrutiny, "he had accordingly ſent me ſome Animadverſions upon ſome Paſſages "in it, which, as he added, were no Objections againſt any Clauſe of "my Hiſtory, but only ſome Obſervations to the Story, and ſome "ſmall Cavils, hardly worth taking Notice of.*

The Reverend Mr. T. B. S. Th. B. *another of my Correſpondents, (well known for his Learning, and great Searches and Knowledge in the Hiſtory of this Church and Kingdom) divers Years ago,* viz. An. 1707. *(upon ſome Occaſion, in a private Letter to me) had theſe Words: "I have not read any Books with more "Pleaſure, than I have done yours; nor met with any Thing that "beareth more lively Impreſſions of Sincerity and Truth. And it is "that maketh me ſo officious in ſerving you." I hope that Reverend Perſon will excuſe me in thus openly uſing his Name, declaring his good Opinion of me; (eſpecially upon this Occaſion) for the preſerving my good Name to Poſterity, and Reputation of what I have writ.*

And when the Book of the Life and Acts of Archbiſhop Parker, *by me compiled, was propounded to be printed by Subſcription,* Anno 1709. *I had the Teſtimonial of ſeveral Biſhops, eminent as for their Piety, ſo for their Learning and Knowledge of the Hiſtory of this Church; as followeth: "*Dec. 7. 1709. *Whereas the learn"ed Mr.* Strype *hath formerly with much Faithfulneſs and Skill, "written the Life of Archbiſhop* Cranmer, *and other eminent Per"ſons, and containing in them many Original Papers, relating as "well to the Eccleſiaſtical as Civil Affairs of this Realm; "Wherein*

“ *Wherein the Rights and Supremacy of the Crown are maintained,*
“ *the Objections of Papiſts confuted; and the Piety, Juſtice and*
“ *Wiſdom of the firſt Reformers defended: And whereas he is*
“ *now writing the Life of Archbiſhop* Parker, *in which he hath*
“ *further juſtified the Reformation of the Church of* England, *and*
“ *given Light, in a number of Particulars, to the Hiſtory of it;*
“ *which will be of true Advantage to the Proteſtant Cauſe and Intereſt:*
“ *WE do therefore earneſtly recommend his uſeful and*
“ *judicious Labour to the Learned; as being truly worthy of their*
“ *Favour and Encouragement. Signed* H. London: W. Lincoln,
“ J. Ely, C. Norwich, E. Glouceſter, T. Chicheſter.

And I thank God, my Reputation remains fair ſtill; as appears by that favourable Character lately given me by the preſent Archbiſhops and Biſhops, upon my late publiſhing of the two former Volumes of the ANNALS: *Set to the Book by the Printer: Though contrary to my Will; leſt I might ſeem to affect Vainglory.*

But now, to draw to a Concluſion, as to my preſent Undertaking: As the former Volumes reached to near half of Queen ELIZABETH's *Reign, and have been received with general Approbation, as an uſeful Work; ſo I now offer the Continuation of the Hiſtory in a Third Volume, carried on in the ſame Method, and ſupported with the ſame Helps and Inſtructions of Original Papers of State, Records, and various other choice MSS. as the others were.*

And therefore I doubt not, but it will find the ſame Acceptance; eſpecially, ſince there will be found in this Volume, divers curious Hiſtorical Remarks of Affairs, happening within this Period of Years: And particularly, two grand Emergences; viz. *Tranſactions with* MARY, *Queen of* Scots; *and chiefly, the laſt Proceedings with her. Which will give greater and truer Light into that unhappy Event. And the other, the intended Invaſion of this Land by the King of* Spains invincible Armada, *vainly ſo called: Diſcovering many Paſſages thereof, not found in our printed Hiſtories. Alſo, in the Relation (contained in this Book) of the State of the Reformed Religion in this Kingdom, are ſhewn many ſingular Matters of Note, and the wonderful Succeſs it had, notwithſtanding the great Oppoſition it met with from Popiſh Powers abroad, as well as Zealots and the New Reformers at home.*

To conclude, as in my Eccleſiaſtical Memorials, *many ample Accounts were given of the Affairs and Events of this Church, and the State of Religion under three Princes, King* Henry, *King* Edward, *and Queen* Mary, *ſucceſſively, digeſted in three Volumes; ſo I have endeavoured to continue them in three other Volumes under* ANNALS, *commencing at the Reign of the next ſucceeding Princeſs, the glorious Queen* ELIZABETH. *And for* *ſome Commendation of the Uſefulneſs of thoſe* Memorials *and theſe* Annals, *I cannot but repeat what the late moſt Reverend and pious,* Dr. Teneſon, *Archbiſhop of* Canterbury, *ſaid, when I preſented my firſt Volume of* ANNALS *to him,* viz. " *That* Joſephus " Scaliger, *that great Scholar, told ſome of his learned Friends,* " *that he liked* Baronius *better than* Bellarmine. Quoniam Hiſtoria eſt. *Whereby Matters of Religion might better be judged of,* " *than by Controverſial Writings, as thoſe of* Bellarmine *were.*

I muſt call this Volume my laſt, *(though indeed it reach not by divers Years to the End of that Queens Reign) becauſe it is the laſt Concluſion of my Labour therein; my great Age and frequent Infirmities diſabling me from going further in this Work. And I thank God, that hath lengthned out my Life and Strength beyond what I could have expected, to have gone ſo far as I have done; and that I hope, not without ſome Profit and Uſe, for promoting true Religion, grounded upon the Goſpel, accompanied with Unity, Peace and Concord. Which God grant.*

THE

THE CONTENTS

Of the Firſt BOOK.

ANNO 1581.

CHAP. I. NEGOTIATION *about Queen* ELIZABETHS *Marriage with the Duke of* Anjou. *Succeedeth not: Notwithſtanding confident Report of it in* France. *Occurrences in* Scotland; *ſent from* Randolph, *the Queens Ambaſſador there. The ill Condition of* Ireland. *Lamented. The Queen ſends Forces to the* French *King, in Defence of* Roan. Don Antonio *expulſed his Kingdom of* Portugal: *Sollicits the Queen for Aid againſt* Philip *King of* Spain. *Mature Conſultations thereupon. The Prince of* Conde *comes into* England, *to ſollicit the Queen in Behalf of the Proteſtants in* France. *He and the* French *Ambaſſador with Her in Conference. The Queen imparts the Sum thereof to the Lord Treaſurer: And the Treaſurer to the Earl of* Suſſex. *Inſtructions to the Queens Ambaſſadors in* France *about a ſecret League; between the King and the Queen.*

CHAP. II. *Epiſcopal Viſitations: Of the City of* LONDON, *and St.* Edmunds Bury *in* Suffolk. *Diſorders there by the Preaching of* Handſon *and* Browne. *The Biſhop of* Norwich'*s Complaint of the latter to the Lord Treaſurer. Some Juſtices of the Peace favour theſe Preachers:* Philips *a Preacher, and* Day, *the Biſhops Commiſſary, uſed hardly by them.* Dayes *Letter to the Biſhop.* Gaiton, *a* Puritan *Preacher. His Doctrine. Articles drawn up againſt thoſe Juſtices. Their Anſwers. Some Account of* Handſon *and* Browne. Randal *of the* Family *of Love: The Biſhop of* Exons *Proceedings with him.* Crompton, *a Juſtice of Peace, commits a Miniſter, going to read Service. The Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield *takes the Miniſters Part.*

CHAP. III. Cox, *Biſhop of* Ely, *dies. His Will. And* Barkley, *Biſhop of* Bath *and* Wells, *dies. His Character. Grants of the Queen to* Edward Stafford, *Eſq;* *of* Concealed *Lands. The Lord Treaſurers Judgment of a Leaſe of them: Diſorders about Religion in the Inns of Court. A Letter from the Star-Chamber to the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners thereupon.* Romaniſts

ANNO 1581.

buſy. Campion *writes to the Privy Council; concerning the* Jeſuits; *and his Miſſion. A private Letter of a* Jeſuite, *concerning* Campion, *and his Diſputations; and the Reſolution of the* Jeſuits. *A Copy of Verſes made by a Papiſt, beginning,* The Croſs appears, *&c. The cruel Burning of* Atkins, *at* Rome *for Religion.*

CHAP. IV. *The* Seminaries *buſy. Sir* Francis Knowles *Letter concerning them. Search for Papiſts. Proclamation againſt harbouring* Jeſuits, *and ſuch as went hence to* Paris, Rhemes, Doway, *or* Rome, *for Education; And for their Revocation. Conferences with* Jeſuits. *One of them reclaimed.* Recuſants *in the Dioceſs of the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield. *Schiſmaticks. A Libertine. His Doctrine. Endeavours of ſome* Puritans. *Their Prayers.*

CHAP. V. *Univerſity Matters. Tenets of* Baro, *Lady* Margaret *Profeſſor at* Cambridge. *Conteſt between him and* Chaderton *about them. A Batchelor of Arts makes an Invective againſt the Duke* D'Anjou. *Called before the Vice-chancellor. His Letter to the Univerſities Chancellor about him. One in* Trinity *College in Trouble.* Caius *College. Number of Students in* Cambridge. *Sheriffs of* Oxon. *Their Oath; to preſerve the Privileges of that Univerſity: Favour to Schoolmaſters.* Mulcaſter, *a learned Schoolmaſter, takes Notice of it thankfully.* Wincheſter *College, their Addreſs to the Queen.* Lincolns-Inn *chuſe* Chark *a Puritan, for their Preacher.*

CHAP. VI. Edward, *Earl of* Oxford, *diſpleaſed with the Lady his Wife. Whence occaſioned. Her humble Letter to him. Matters between him and the Lord* Burghley, *her Father. His three Daughters endowed with Lands by the Lord* Burghley. *The Earls Debts. Motion made for eſpouſing* Anne Cecill *and* Philip Sydney, *in their Childhoods.* Elizabeth, *the Lord Treaſurers other Daughter, married to the Lord* Wentworths *Son; other Motions of Marriage for her. Lord* Thomas Paget *and his Wife part. A* Note *of* Manwood, *Lord Chief Baron.* Nudigate, *Steward to the Dutcheſs of* Somerſet, *his Death: And laſt Will. The Dutcheſs his Executrice. A Note concerning her. A Woman ſteals. Her horrible Perjury. A Woman deals in Necromancy: Drowns herſelf.*

CHAP. VII. *Books ſet forth this Year.* Engliſh Juſtice, *by Cardinal* Allen. A Diſcovery of *Campion,* the Jeſuit, *by* A. Monday. *The* Engliſh Roman Life *in the Popes* College *at* Rome, *by the ſame. An* Anſwer Apological, *by Dr.* Haddon, *and* John Fox *to* Oſorius, *a Portugueze Biſhop, his* Invective. The unfolding of ſundry Untruths, *&c. in Anſwer to a Book writ by a* Libertine. Caſtalio'*s Book of* Free Will: *Complained of.* A View of Antichriſt in our *Engliſh* Church unreformed. *Writ by certain* Puritans. Expoſition of the Symbol of the

Apoſtles; *by* J. Field. *Two Sermons of* J. Bradford, *the Martyr. Publiſhed by* T. Sampſon. Examination *of certain ordinary Complaints.* Poſitions *for Education of Youth in Learning*: *by* R. Mulcaſter, *a Schoolmaſter.* A Diſcourſe of Royal Monarchy, *by* Charles Merbury. The Pathway to Martial Diſcipline. *Another called,* A compendious Treatiſe, De Re militari. *Dedicated to Mr.* Philip Sydney. A brief Conceipt of Engliſh Policy. Eirenarcha. *Of the Offices of Juſtices of Peace: By* W. Lambard. *The* Pentateuch *in ſix Languages: An Antient Copy thereof ſent to the Lord Treaſurer from* Beza.

ANNO 1582.

CHAP. VIII. *The* French *Match like to ſucceed: And a League with* France. *Treaty with* Mary *Queen of* Scots; *Fruſtrate. Parties in* Scotland. Ireland *chargeable. Plots.* Parry *in* Venice *and* Lyons. *His Intelligence thence. Writes in Favour of the good Knight. A Proclamation againſt harbouring* Jeſuits *and Prieſts; and going to the Colleges at* Rhemes, Rome, *&c. And for ſuch there to return. Seſſions at* London. *Maſs-mongers, Libellers,* &c. *The Queen aſſiſts the Proteſtant Churches. Duke of* Bipont, *Prince* Palatine *comes into* England. Wierus, *his Agent. Letters of the Queens Ambaſſador in* France, *concerning* Geneva, *and the Duke of* Savoy. Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer in Behalf of* Geneva. *The Prince of* Oranges *Death foretold by the Popes* Nuncio, *and the* Spaniſh *Agent.*

CHAP. IX. *A Conteſt with the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield, *about the Chancellorſhip. The Caſe referred to* Civilians, *and Judges. A Petition about it to the Privy Council. This Biſhops Troubles in his Dioceſs. Vexed with Law Suits. The Earl of* Leiceſter *his Enemy. And why. The Lord Treaſurer his Friend. Deſires a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. Names of Recuſants convict, ſent up. The ill State of his Dioceſs by Papiſts, and exempt Juriſdictions. His Letter to the Lords. A wicked Scandal contrived againſt, and caſt upon the Archbiſhop of* York. *Diſcovered. Judgment in the* Star-Chamber *upon the Actors, Sir* Robert Stapleton, and others. *The Archbiſhops earneſt Letters to the Lord Treaſurer about his Caſe. His Letters of Thanks to the Queen and Treaſurer. They make open Confeſſion at* York *of their Treachery. But with little Shew of Repentance. The Archbiſhops Speeches to each of them.*

CHAP. X. *The Biſhop of* Peterburgh *addreſſeth the Queen, for Confirmation of their Statutes, for* Reſidence. *Commiſſion for Concealments in the Dioceſs of* Lincoln. *Whereby the Clergy are oppreſt. The Biſhops Complaint thereof to the Lord Treaſurer. Enſnaring Interrogatories put to the Miniſters and Churchwardens. The ſaid Biſhops Letters in Behalf of his Clergy, and his own Epiſcopal Juriſdiction encroached upon, and his Courts. The Commiſſion ſtayed by a* Superſedeas, *ſent down. The Biſhop of* Lincoln *acting in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion upon one* Mackworth, *for having two Wives. The Trouble of* Scory, *Biſhop of* Hereford, ANNO 1582. ford, *from Sir* Henry Sydney, *Preſident of* Wales: *His rigorous Government. The State of the Biſhoprick of St.* Davids. *Greatly wronged by pretended Concealments.*

CHAP. XI. Puritans. *An Inſcription about the Queens Arms in a Church in* Bury: *Abuſive of the Queen.* Wright, *Domeſtick Chaplain to the Lord* Rich. *His Troubles. Informations concerning him: And his Anſwers, in the Conſiſtory. Romiſh* Prieſts. *Examination of Lord* Vaux, *and Sir* Thomas Treſham, *who entertained* Campion. *Lord* Vauxes *Confeſſion. Sir* Richard Shelly, *Lord Prior of St.* Johns of Jeruſalem: *Abroad. Deſires to come home: Offers to make Diſcoveries to the Queen. A ſafe Conduct granted him. His Loyalty. Some further Accounts of him; and his Family of the* Shelleys. Bourn *late in the Inquiſition. One* Gower, *a Fugitive, comes to the* Engliſh *Ambaſſador at* Paris. *Deſires Conference with ſome Learned about his Religion. Is ſuddenly caſt into the Biſhop of* Paris *his Priſon. Seminary Prieſts and Maſs-hearers brought to the Seſſions at* London. *A Box of Stamps for Popiſh Libels, taken.*

CHAP. XII. Anderſon, *made Lord Chief Juſtice of the Common Place. The Manner of admitting him to the Bench, Endeavour to get the Place by Bribery. Riots in* Finsbury, *by ſome Youths of Inns of* Chancery. *Indicted. The Recorder of* London *informs the Lord Treaſurer thereof. The Slaughter at* Paris Garden *on the Sabboth. The Lord Maiors Letter to Court about it. A pretended Conſpiracy in* Ireland. *Some in the Court, and* London *ſaid to be concerned in it.* Mirfin, *the Diſcoverer and Informer thereof: Falſe, and proves a notorious Forgery. The Earl of* Embden *to the Lord Treaſurer. Mr.* Wentworth, *Lord Treaſurers Son in Law, dies. The Queen, and other Lords, by Letters, condole with him. The Lord Treaſurers Daughter, the Relict of Mr.* Wentworth, *dies. The Queens Meſſage by the Secretaries Letter, to him, to come to Court.*

CHAP. XIII. Blank, *Lord Maior of* London, *preſented to the Queen. The Recorders Speech to her. Her Anſwer. The Increaſe of Buildings in the City. The Inconvenience thereof. Mr.* Rich *in the* Fleet. *His Crime. Sues for his Liberty. His Proteſtation. His Letter from* Leigh *to the Lord Treaſurers Secretary.* John Stubbes, (*whoſe Right Hand had been cut off*) *his Letter of good Counſil.* Fleetwood, *Recorder of* London. *Controverſy in* Chriſts *College,* Cambridge, *about the Fellowſhip of King* Edwards *Foundation. A Diſpenſation for a Fellowſhip in* Peter-Houſe, *complained of. Books publiſhed this Year. The* Elementary. 'Ειρηναρχια, *Sive* Elizabetha. *A Book appointed to be read in Schools. The Bible printed in* Quarto, *with a Catechiſm about* Predeſtination. Golden Epiſtles.

NNO 1583. CHAP. XIV. *The Queens Declaration, upon ſending away the* Spaniſh *Ambaſſador. Motion for Peace between the Queen and King*

King of Spain. *An* Italian *propounded for a Mediator. The Queen againſt it. And why. She protects thoſe of the* Netherlands. *Relieves* Geneva. *Complaints by* Mary, *Queen of* Scots: *With Anſwers to them. The Queen's expoſtulatory Letter to King* James *of* Scotland. *The exceſs of* Retainers *checked. The Queens kind Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, under ſome Diſcontent.*

CHAP. XV. *Apprehenſions from Papiſts. The Archbiſhop of* Yorks *Letter to the Biſhop of* Cheſter, *exciting to Diligence. The Biſhop and the Earl of* Darby, *acting in the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. The Biſhop of* St. Davids *viſits his Dioceſs. The corrupt State thereof: The Biſhop of* Norwich *weary of his Dioceſs. And why. Deſires a Remove. Two of this Biſhops Servants taken at Maſs. A Divinity Lecture ſettled at* Litchfield. *The Deans Account of it. The Biſhop of* Lincoln *removed to* Winton. *The Biſhop of* Meath *moves for Schools in* Ireland. Matthew *made Dean of* Durham.

CHAP. XVI. *The Queen grants a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. The Letters Patents.* Cawdry, *a Puritan, deprived.* Withers *of* Danbury, *writes to the Lord Treaſurer, in Behalf of the* Puritans. *Their Caſe recommended to the Council in a Letter from the Gentlemen of* Suffolk. *The Lords Inſtructions to the Judges of Aſſize thereupon. Proceedings againſt the Diſperſers of* Brownes *Books at* Bury S. Edmunds. *And againſt Papiſts. The Judges Account of the Aſſizes held there. Popiſh Books ſet forth.* Theſes Anglorum Rhemenſium. *Dr.* Allens Defence of the *Engliſh* Catholicks. Parries *Letter from* Lions, *and* Paris. One Fowker, *late in the Inquiſition at* Rome, *comes home. Makes Diſcoveries. The Biſhop of* Roſſe. *Dr.* Lewis *in* Rome. *Dr.* Oxenbridge, *at* Wisbich: *His Submiſſion and Subſcription to the Supremacy.*

CHAP. XVII. *A Project for Prevention of falling away in Religion. The Validity of Popes Bulls in* England, *for Pluralities,* &c. *Controverſy between the* Stationers *of* London, *and the Univerſity. One of Kings College expelled the Univerſity. And why. Books printed this Year. Biſhop* Jewels *Sermons* De Juſtificatione. *Set forth by* John Fox. *Sermons of* Faith, Hope and Charity. *By* Bernard Ochine. Defence *of the* Engliſh *Tranſlation of the Bible. By Dr.* Fulk. *The* Engliſh Rhemiſts *Teſtament.* Cartwright *ſets upon the Confutation of it.* The Practice of Prelates. *Jeſus* Pſalter. Defenſative *againſt the Poiſon of Propheſies. By the L.* Howard. Execution of Juſtice for Maintenance of publick Peace. A Declaration of the favourable Dealing with certain Traitors. A Report of the Diſcovery of *Newfound Land. L.* Latymer *comes from* France. *Suſpected, and taken up. Dean* Wottons *Legations. Lord* Wentworth *dies. Coiners.*

The CONTENTS.

ANNO 1583. CHAP. XVIII. *Conſultation about annoying* Spain. *Captain* Hawkins *his Advice therein,* viz. *to aſſiſt the King of* Portugal. *The Queens Tranſactions with the Agents of* Holland. *She is concerned for the Murther of the Prince of* Orange. *Her careful Letter to the Duke of* Monpenſier *about that Princes Daughters. The Lord Treaſurer to the King of* Navarr. *Prince* Palatine *comes into* England. *A Scandal of the Earl of* Shrewſbury. *Popiſh Plots. An Aſſociation of the Nobility and Gentry.* Mendoza, *the* Spaniſh *Ambaſſador, ſent away;* Stafford, *the Queens Ambaſſador at* Paris. *His Intelligence concerning him, and* Engliſh *Fugitives there. The Faction of the* Guiſes. *A new Parliament. Uſage of Parliament: Supplication for learned and preaching Miniſters. Petitions for that End; and for Regulation of divers Things in the Church. Anſwers of the Archbiſhop and Biſhops thereunto.*

CHAP. XIX. *A Convocation.* Articuli pro Clero. *The Archbiſhops Cares. Comforted by Sir* Chriſtopher Hatton. James Diggs, *ordinary Servant to the Archbiſhop. Dr.* Druries *Advices to him about* Melius inquirendum. *Dr.* Howland *made Biſhop of* Peterburgh. *The Biſhop of* Lincolns Admonition. *A Book, called,* The Abſtract; *for bringing in another Diſcipline: Anſwered. The Counter-poiſon. Dr.* Copcots *Sermon at* St. Pauls *Croſs. A Brotherly and Friendly Counſil to the Miniſters for Peace and Concord.*

CHAP. XX. *The Biſhop of* Wincheſter *goes down to his Dioceſs. Deſires a Commiſſion for Recuſants in* Hampſhire. *Subſcription required by the Archbiſhop, of the Clergy of* Lincoln *Dioceſs, now void. Account thereof from the Archdeacon. Their Backwardneſs. Conteſt about ſettling a Maſter of the* Temple. Hooker *appointed.* Travers *his* Supplication. Chriſtopher Goodman; *a Note of him. The Popiſh Faction. Their great Plot. The Queen of* Scots *privy to it. Her Letter. Sir* Francis Englefields *Letters to the Pope and* Spain.

ANNO 1584. CHAP. XXI. Parry *executed for Treaſon. A Cardinals Letter to him. His Speech at his Execution. His Account of his Condition and Quality, by himſelf given. Falſe and hollow. Sollicits to be Maſter of* St. Katharines *near the* Tower: *Or for a Deanry, or,* &c. *Account of him for ſome Years paſt. Lives abroad. His Letters from* Paris, Venice, *and* Lyons. *His Intelligence from abroad, to the Lord* Burghley. *Comes home. He flies abroad again. And why. Prayers appointed (upon* Parries *Treaſon) in the Queens Chapel; and in Parliament. Order of Prayers for* Wincheſter *Dioceſs.* Parries *bold Letter to the Queen from the* Tower. *A Nephew of* Parries *executed.*

CHAP. XXII. *Dangers from Papiſts in* Cheſhire *and* Lancaſhire. Creitton, *a* Scotch *Jeſuite from* Rome. *Taken; and examined.*

Popiſh

The CONTENTS.

Popiſh Books, writ upon the Execution of Jeſuits. *Books in Anſwer thereto. Proved, that they were Traitors by the Statute of King* Edward III. *Dr.* Whitakers *Application to the Lord Treaſurer, for the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge. *His Letters. Lord* Burghley *to the Provoſt and Fellows of* Kings *College, in Behalf of Mr.* Cowel. Wincheſter *College in danger by means of forged Writings. Dr.* Bilſon, *the Wardens good Service. Remarks on ſeveral Perſons. As,* Richard Rogers, *Suffragan of* Dover. Manwood, *Lord Chief Baron.* Daniel Rogers. John Fox, *his Requeſt for his Prebend.* Hurleſtone *of* Cheſhire. *Sir* Edward Stradling. John, *Lord* Ruſſel, *Sir* Philip Sydney. Emanuel Demetrius. ANNO 1584.

CHAP. XXIII. *Account of the Quarter Seſſions at* London. *Books.* A Defence of the *Engliſh* Catholicks. Execution *of Juſtice in the Land. A* Declaration *of* Parries *Treaſons.* Bullingers Decads *in* Engliſh. *An* Anſwer *to the* Abſtract. *A* Declaration *of Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline.* The antient Hiſtory *of* Wales. *By* David Powel. *D. D.* Deſcription *of* Lincoln. *By* W. Lambard. Guavara's *Epiſtles; Tranſlated out of* Spaniſh. *A Sermon of* Wimbledon; *preached* An. 1388.

CHAP. XXIV. *The Queen moved to aſſiſt the* Netherlands. Saravia's *Letter from* Leyden, *for that Purpoſe: The Earl of* Leiceſter *goes over. Orders to the Vice-Admiral of the Queens Fleet, with reſpect to the King of* Spains *ſeizing* Engliſh *Ships; for Repriſal. A Parliament. They enter into an* Aſſociation *for the Queens Safety. Laws made againſt Seminaries and Papiſts. The Speakers Speech to the Queen. A Book of Petitions from the Papiſts.* Shelly, *the Preſenter of it. His Examination. The Parliament conſult concerning the* Scots *Queen. Her Caſe propounded. The Queens Concern at the yielding up of* Antwerp. *Hereupon ſhe takes the Protection of the* Netherlands. *Inſtructions to her Ambaſſador.* ANNO 1585.

CHAP. XXV. *The Queen endeavours a League between the King of* Scots *and her ſelf. Occurrences in* Scotland. *Inſtructions to her Ambaſſadors ſent to that King. The* French *Ambaſſadors Interceſſion for the* Scots *Queen. Her Letter to the Lord Treaſurer. A diligent Search at the Sea-Ports for dangerous Perſons, coming now into the Realm. Letters from the Privy Council. Toung Gentlemen to be trained in the Muſters, and made Officers. Colleges for Popiſh Seminaries abroad. Dr.* Bilſon *concerning them.* Alfield *arraigned for bringing in Dr.* Allens *Book. Some Contents of that Book.* John Preſtal, *a Conjurer.* Philip, *Earl of* Arundel; Edmund Nevyl, *alias, Lord* Latymer: *Priſoners in the* Tower. *Their Caſe, and Letters.* Robert Turner, *Profeſſor of Divinity in* Ingolſtad: *His Letters to Cardinal* Allen; *and to* Hilliard.

CHAP.

The CONTENTS.

ANNO 1585.

CHAP. XXVI. *Uſury practiſed in* York. *The Archbiſhop brings it before the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer about it. The Dean of* York *openly Diſſents. Articles againſt him in the* Star-Chamber, *by the Archbiſhop. The Deans Submiſſion to the Archbiſhop. This Archbiſhop preaches at* Pauls Croſs, *upon a Day of Thankſgiving for a Deliverance of the Queen from a Conſpiracy.* Scory, *Biſhop of* Hereford, *dies. Eccleſiaſtical* Exerciſes *in the Dioceſs of* Cheſter. *The Biſhop preſcribes Rules for the Clergy to be obſerved in thoſe* Exerciſes. *Biſhop* Scambler *tranſlated from* Peterburgh *to* Norwich. *His Complaint of his Predeceſſor.* Curteſs *Biſhop of* Chicheſter; *dies poor, and in the Queens Debt. Inventory of his Goods. Complaint made by the Biſhop of* Litchfield *and* Coventry, *againſt* Beacon; *about collecting the Queens Subſidy. His Letter thereupon to the Lord Treaſurer.* Cox, *Biſhop of* Ely, *vindicates his Liberties in* Holbourn *againſt the City of* London. *The Revenues of the Dean and Chapter of* Norwich *in danger: Upon Pretence of* Concealment. *The Caſe. The Suit with Sir* Thomas Shirley. *Referred.*

CHAP. XXVII. *A Motion made by* Travers *to* Hooker, *now become Maſter of the* Temple; *to ſtay for a Call of the People. His Anſwer.* Cartwright *returns home. Some Univerſity Matters. One called before the Vicechancellor of* Cambridge, *for a Sermon* Ad Clerum, *about keeping the Sabbath. A new Printing Preſs at* Oxford. *A Book of* Ethics, *being the firſt Book printed there. Conteſt about the Antiquity of the Univerſities. Lord* Lumley *gives Books to* Cambridge. *The want of an Univerſity in* Ireland. *Slanders raiſed of the Lord Treaſurer. Some Variance between the Earl of* Leiceſter *and him. Letters between them.* Philip, *Earl of* Arundel, *fined. His Debts.* Edward, *Lord* Beauchamp. Davys *finds out the North Weſt Paſſage. His Letter to Sir* Francis Drake.

CHAP. XXVIII. *Books ſet forth. The great* Engliſh Bible. *A* Declaration *of the Cauſes of the Queens giving Aid to the* Low Countries. A Summary Report *of the Earl of* Northumberlands *Treaſons.* The true and lawful Right and Title *of* Don Anthonio *to the Kingdom of* Portugal. The State *of the* Engliſh *Fugitives under the King of* Spain. The true Difference *between Chriſtian Subjection and unchriſtian Rebellion: By Dr.* Bilſon. An Apology *and true Declaration of the Inſtitution of the two* Engliſh *Colleges at* Rome *and* Rhemes. A Defence *of* Engliſh *Catholicks.* Pilkingtons Expoſition *upon* Nehemiah. Certain Prayers *and other godly Exerciſes for the Seventeenth Day of* November. A godly and neceſſary *Admonition concerning Newters.* Moral Queſtions *in Latin: By* Caſe *of* Oxford. *Exploits by the* Engliſh *in the* Netherlands. *By* H. Archer. Leiceſters Common-wealth.

The CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

ANNO 1586.

CHAP. I. *MATTERS about the Queen of* Scots. *Reſolution to bring her to her Trial. Her Removal. Sir* Amyas Paulet, *her Keeper; Faithful. The Queens Letter to him. A Commiſſion preparing for her ſaid Trial. The Judges conſulted about it. Letters from* Popham, *Attorney General. Conſultation, after her Trial and Condemnation, of putting her to Death. Which the Queen was againſt. Objections, and Anſwers, for the Queens Satisfaction. Dr.* Dales *Letter to the Lord Treaſurer for that Purpoſe. Conſiderations offered to the Queen by Parliament. Moved to diſable the* Scots *Queen from inheriting. Anſwered. What Precedents might be found.* Joan *of* Naples. *Petition of both Houſes to the Queen, for the* Scots *Queens Execution; and her Anſwer. The Queen of* Scots *executed. The Queen highly provoked at it. The Lord Treaſurer forbid her Preſence. His Letters to her.* Daviſon, *her Secretary, ſuffers for it. His Character. Interrogatories put to him. His Anſwers thereunto.*

CHAP. II. *Revenge meditated for the* Scots *Queens Death. Not ſafe to call in the Aſſiſtance of* Spain, *in taking this Revenge. Advice of the Event thereof, from a Stateſman in* England, *to one about that Kings Court. His Deliberation about it. Several Writings and Books on this Occaſion. A MS. of the Order and Manner of the* Scots *Queens Execution. The Dean of* Peterburghs *Speech to her at the Scaffold; and Prayer. Her Reſentments thereof. A Book,* De *Maria* Scotorum, Regina, totaq; ejus contra Regem conjuratione. *Another Book,* MARIA Stuarta, innocens a Cœde Darliana: *A Tract.* Sentences *againſt the Queen of* Scots. Cœdes *Darliana, a Book dedicated to Cardinal* Allen *at* Rome.

CHAP. III. *A League made between the Queen and the King of* Scots. *The Grudge of ſome of the* Scotch *Nobility at it. Dangers on all Hands from abroad.* Drake *ſent forth with a Fleet. Intelligence from the* Iſle of Wight. *The Queen charged to ſow Sedition among Princes. Anſwered. The King of* Navarrs *Danger. Conſultation for him. The Queen ready to aſſiſt him at* Rochel. *An* Engliſh *Officer going to ſerve in* Holland, *taken by the* Spaniard. *Examined. His Anſwers. Upon ſome Overtures between the Queen and* Spain, *the Advice of* Ramelius, *the* Daniſh *Ambaſſador. Difference between the Lord Deputy of* Ireland, *and Council. The Biſhop of* Meaths *Letter thereupon.*

CHAP. IV. *Sir* John Perrot *contends with the Biſhop of* St. Davids *about the Stewardſhip of that Biſhops Courts. The Caſe.*

The CONTENTS.

ANNO 1586. *The Biſhop of* Meath *forfeits double Fruits. His Caſe: Referred to* Perrot, *his Enemy. Comes into* England *about it. Oppreſſions of the Clergy in* Yorkſhire *by pretence of* Concealments. *Occaſions the Archbiſhops Letter. Letters from the Queen and Council to the Biſhops, to obtain Lances from the Clergy, for the* Low Countries. *Accounts thereof from the Biſhops. Sums raiſed for that Purpoſe in every Dioceſs. The State of the Church of* Weſtminſter. *The State of* Geneva. *Their dangerous Condition. Their Letters to the Lord Treaſurer, to ſollicit the Queen for Aid.* Beza'*s Letters.*

CHAP. V. *A Popiſh Conſpiracy, to raiſe a Rebellion; and murther the Queen.* Parſons *the* Jeſuit, *to Cardinal* Allen *at* Rome; *now ſoon after his Arrival here in a Miſſion.* Creicton *a* Jeſuit, *his Reaſons for the Catholicks their taking up Arms.* Ballard, *a Prieſt,* Savage *and* Babington; *their Confeſſions about the Plot. The City rejoice. The Queens kind Letter to them. The Juſtices of* Suffolk, *to the Council concerning yearly Payment by Popiſh Gentlemen, Recuſants there. Reſolution taken againſt Papiſts in Priſon.* Topcliffs *Diſcovery of the Practices and Reſorts of Seminary Prieſts in and about* London. Cotton, *a* Jeſuit, *and* Perpoint, *Gent. a Recuſant, taken up; Their Examinations.*

CHAP. VI. Anthony Tyrrel, *Prieſt: His Confeſſion, in Letters to the Queen and Lord Treaſurer. His Diſcoveries of* Jeſuits, *and other* Roman *Catholicks. His Recantation. His Revolt. And his Letter to the Queen after it. A Diſcourſe, proving the Treaſon of the Prieſts and others of that Religion, executed. Divers Tracts and Speeches concerning Papiſts; and Caſes concerning the Dealings with them. Cardinal* Allens *Concern with Sir* Edward Stanley, *in betraying* Deventer *in* Holland, *to the* Spaniard. *He with the Pope moves for an* Engliſh *Seminary of Soldiers. Their Uſe. Writes a Book for them.*

CHAP. VII. Travers *acquaints the Lords of the Council with his Lectures at the* Temple, *and Conference with* Hooker, *the Maſter of the* Temple, *upon ſome Points. A religious Company complained of to the Archbiſhop, for certain Opinions. What they were. One* Darrel *pretends to caſt out Devils.* White, *an Enthuſiaſt* Anabaptiſt, *calls himſelf* John a Baptiſt. *His Examination. Diſcourſes and Speeches in Parliament againſt receiving the* Diſciplinarian *Model. A Dearth.* Whitaker, *the Publick Profeſſor of Divinity, and others, ſtand to ſucceed* Howland, *made Biſhop, in the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge. Puritans *in* Chriſts *College. That College Viſited by the Vicechancellor. They refuſe his Injunctions.*

CHAP. VIII. *The Printing Preſs at* Cambridge. *The Archbiſhops Order to the Univerſity, about Books to be printed there. His Letter to the Heads about granting Licences to Univerſity Preachers. That Univerſity and Town at Difference. Their Petitions,*

titions, delivered to the Lord Burghley, *their Chancellor. The Dutcheſs of* Somerſet, *her laſt Will. Her Jewels. Her Letter to Secretary* Cecill, *concerning the Lord* Hertford, *her Son in the* Tower. *Sir* Philip Sidneys *laſt Will. A Letter of the young Earl of* Eſſex. *The Character of* Daviſon, *late Secretary.* Fleetwood, *Recorder of* London, *his Diary. Books printed. Books of* Petrus Bizarus, *a learned* Italian *here.*

CHAP. IX. Don Antonio, *beat out of his Kingdom of* Portugal; *his miſerable Condition repreſented to the Lord Treaſurer. Sir* Francis Drake *takes a rich Ship of* Portugal. *His Succeſs at* Cales. *Intelligence from* Scotland *by a Prieſt there. Remembrance for* Portland *Caſtle, ſent to the Lord Treaſurer from Sir* Walter Raleigh. *Orders for the Lieutenancy of* Hampſhire. *Care taken about the Juſtices of Peace. Biſhop of* Peterburgh, *his Letter concerning them in his Dioceſs. Letters alſo of the ſame Concern from the Biſhops of* Hereford, Norwich, Wincheſter, Bath *and* Wells, *and* York. *A Letter from Dr.* Knibbius *to* Rogers, *the Queens Ambaſſador, concerning the Earl of* Leiceſters *Departure from* Holland. *Two Military Diſcourſes, by* Rafe Lane, *ſeaſonable at this Juncture.* *ANNO 1587.*

CHAP. X. Southwel, *a Collegiate Church, endeavoured to be gotten from the Archbiſhoprick of* York. *The Archbiſhops Application to ſtop it. Required by the Queen to be preſent at the Council of the* North *in* York. Barnes, *Biſhop of* Durham, *dies. Some Account of him. Endeavours at Court for the Dean, Dr.* Toby Matthew, *to ſucceed him. The Deans Letter thereupon. The Decay of that Biſhoprick, by reaſon of long Leaſes. Troubles of that Collegiate Church by reaſon of Suits. The preſent ill State of the Biſhoprick of St.* Aſaph. *That Biſhops* Commendams. *The Queen requires a Leaſe of* Dunnington, *belonging to the Biſhoprick of* Ely, *now void. The Dean and Chapter thereof, their Letter to the Lord Treaſurer hereupon. A large Commiſſion of* Concealments, *granted to* Edward Stafford. *The Contents thereof. Lands of four vacant Biſhopricks ſued for to the Queen by the Earl of* Leiceſter, *in Exchange.*

CHAP. XI. *A Synod held by the* Diſciplinarians. *Orders, conſiſting of 16 Articles, there concluded. One* Durden *in* Cambridge, *calls himſelf* Elias. *His Examination before the Vicechancellor. His pretended Viſions. Letter of Intelligence from an* Engliſh *Prieſt in* France. Anthony Tyrrel, *a Prieſt, renounceth his Religion. Revokes what he had renounced. His Proteſtations in ſome Letters.* Weſton, *a Jeſuit. He, with ſome other Prieſts, pretend to caſt out evil Spirits. A new Commiſſion of the Peace for* Lancaſhire. *The Effect of it for the Diſcovery of Prieſts.* Fleetwood, *Parſon of* Wigan, *his Letter. A Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. A Note taken of the Catholick Gentlemen in each County, and of their Livings.*

CHAP.

The CONTENTS.

ANNO 1587. CHAP. XII. *A Book, entitled,* Theatrum Crudelitatis Hæreticorum in Anglia. *Another Book, called,* Execution of Juſtice in England. *Cardinal* Allens *Book in Anſwer to it, called,* A true, ſincere and modeſt Defence of *Catholicks,* &c. Vindication *of the Execution of Juſtice, in Anſwer to* Allen. Stubbe, *the Writer, his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer. Some Univerſity Matters. Abuſes in the Colleges at* Cambridge. *Which cauſeth a Letter from their Chancellor. Conteſts between the Town and Univerſity.* Edmunds *the Maior, Diſcommoned. Matters of St.* Johns *College. Some Letters of Dr.* Whitaker, *the Maſter.*

CHAP. XIII. Sheffield *of* Chriſts *College, accuſed for a Sermon preached at St.* Maries. *An end of the Vicechancellors Viſitation of that College. Some Account of* Downham, *one of the Fellows.* Chadwic *of* Emanuel *College, called before the Heads for a Sermon of his preached in St.* Maries. *An Epiſtle of Gratitude to the Lord* Burghley, *from the Univerſity of* Oxford. *Occaſional Remarks upon ſome Perſons of Eminency in theſe Times:* Viz. William Lambard. *Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *The Earl of* Oxford, *his Son in Law. Diſcontented Letters between them. Angry Words at Court from the Earl of* Leiceſter *to the Lord Treaſurer. Their Letters hereupon to each other. The Death of the Lord Treaſurers Mother. On which Occaſion the Queens Meſſage to him. Earl of* Leiceſters *Debts.*

CHAP. XIV. John Fox, *the Martyrologiſt, dies. His* Acts and Monuments. *Some Account of that Book; and the Editions; and Enlargements: The great Eſteem of the Book and Author. His Judgment of the Government of the Church by Archbiſhops and Biſhops. Archbiſhop* Whitgifts *Value of him. His Monument. His Life in Latin; written by his Son* Samuel. *His Books. His Poſterity. A* Latin *Epiſtle to the* Puritans. Vindication of the *Engliſh* Juſtice, *by* J. Stubbe. Latin Poems, *by* Newton *of* Cheſhire.

ANNO 1588. CHAP. XV. *A Motion for Peace with* Spain. *Deliberation thereupon. The Lord Treaſurer delivers his Judgment. A Treaty begun with Commiſſioners from the Duke of* Parma. *The* Articles *propounded to* Parma. *Broke off. The* Spaniards *about to invade* England. *Conſultations thereupon: Intelligence of the Fleet from* Spain. *The Queens Preparations. Publick Prayers appointed. The* Spaniſh *Forces.* La feliciſſime Armada; *ſo termed. Account of the* Spaniſh *Forces in their Books. The Defeat of this Fleet. News printed of the Overthrow of the* Engliſh. *Friers aboard the* Spaniſh *Fleet.* Litanies *uſed for their Succeſs. The* Engliſh *Nation at firſt in a dreadful Conſternation. A Paſquil concerning the* Spaniſh *Fleet ſet up at* Rome. *Their Defeat and Miſeries in* Ireland. *Sir* Francis Drakes *Letter of the Victory, from aboard.* Killigrew, *Ambaſſador, his Letter to the States at this Juncture.* Rogers, *Ambaſſador in* Denmark: *His Service there.*

there. *King* Philips *Words, when the bad News was firſt brought him. Publick Thankſgivings. The Queen rides in Triumph to* St. Pauls. *A Thankſgiving-Prayer uſed. Exhortation to the People of* England, *to be upon their Guard. The true Cauſe of the Queens taking up Arms.* ANNO 1588.

CHAP. XVI. *The* Spaniards, *after their Overthrow, ſpread lying Reports of their Victory. Books thereof printed in* Spaniſh. *One intitled,* Advice from London. *Sir* Francis Drakes *Narrative of this Engagement.* Don Pedro De Valdes, Drakes *Priſoner. His Examination: And Randſome. His Letter from* Bruſſels *to the Queen. His Complaint to Her concerning his Randſome; to be paid to Sir* Francis Drake. *The Lords Anſwer in the Queens Name. The Queens Preparations againſt the next Year. Requires a Loan of her Subjects. The Councils Letters to the Lords Lieutenants of the Counties for that Purpoſe.* Don Antonio *offers Articles to the Queen. Reports at* Rome *of the Queens being taken: And to be ſent to the Pope. Triumphs there for this ſuppoſed Victory. Intelligence from* Rome *and other Places abroad, of the King of Spain; and his Purpoſes, for the Catholick Cauſe, againſt the Kings of* Scotland, *and* Navarr: *A Seſſions of Parliament in this dangerous Seaſon. Bills brought in. Speeches made upon thoſe Bills. For a Subſidy: Againſt the Strangers: And againſt Pluralities and Non-Reſidences. The Parliaments Declaration and Offer to the Queen, at the Diſſolving thereof.*

CHAP. XVII. *Conteſt between the Church of* Norwich *and Sir* Thomas Shirley, *Knight, upon Pretence of* Concealment. *A Book drawn up in order to Agreement. The Dean and Chapter diſallow thereof. And why. The Deans Application by Letters to the Lord Treaſurer. And his Complaint of the ſaid Patentee. Articles of Agreement between them, offered. But refuſed. The Lord Treaſurer takes the Caſe before him. The Concluſion of it. Endeavours uſed to get the Archbiſhop of* Yorks *Houſe at* London *from him. His Conteſt with the Dean of* Durham. *This Archbiſhop dies. His laſt Will. His Pedigree: And Poſterity. Some Paſſages in his Sermons before the Queen, and at* York; *Concerning the Reformation, Schiſm, and ſpoiling the Church of its Revenues.* Cooper, *Biſhop of* Winton, *ſlandered by* Marprelate. *Vindicated. Endeavour of obtaining long Leaſes from the Dean and Chapter of* Ely, *Dr.* Pern *the Dean, his Letter thereupon.* Scambler, *Biſhop of* Norwich, *condemns one for Hereſy. His Letter to Court for Execution. Archbiſhop of* Dublin, *Lord Chancellor, commends Sir* William Herbert, *for his promoting Religion in* Ireland.

CHAP. XVIII. *Popiſh Books. Pope* Sixtus *his Bull brought in, and diſperſed; to encourage the Invaſion intended. Cardinal* Allens *Books.* Bennet, *a Prieſt. His penitent Letter to the Earl of* Arundel, *for a falſe Information againſt him. Sir*

The CONTENTS.

ANNO 1588. Thomas Treſhams *Proteſtation of Allegiance.* Francis Blount, *a Catholick at* Paris, *deſirous to come home, writeth to the Queen for the Liberty of his Conſcience. A Caſe of Conſcience propounded by ſome Catholicks; whether they might take up Arms under the* Spaniard *againſt the Queen. Reſolved by a Prieſt at large in the Negative. Divers Liſts of Prieſts, and other* Engliſh *Catholicks at home, and abroad.* Engliſhmen *Penſioners of the King of* Spain. *A Proclamation againſt bringing in the Popes Bull, and other Popiſh Books. Such to be puniſhed by Martial Law.*

CHAP. XIX. *Scoffing and railing Books of* Puritans. Martin Marprelate. *He is brought before the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. A falſe Report he had ſpread of* Cooper, *the Biſhop of* Wincheſter. *His abuſive Book againſt* Bridges, *Dean of* Sarum. *Dr.* Bancrofts *Sermon of the* Jus divinum *of Epiſcopacy.* Penries *Confutation. Dr.* Raynolds *Judgment of that Point, upon the Motion of Sir* Francis Knowles. *Examination of ſome concerned in* Marprelates *Printing Preſs. Their Confeſſions. Secret Conventicles. Diſcovered. Their Worſhip and Opinions. Another Sort of Sectaries. Allow Diſſimulation. The ſame practiſed by Papiſts. Noted in a Sermon of Archbiſhop* Sandys.

CHAP. XX. Digby, *a Senior Fellow of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge, *expelled. Appeals to the Viſitors. Reſtored. Dr.* Whitaker, *Maſter of that College, to the Lord* Burghley, *hereupon.* Digby, *Popiſhly affected. The Earl of* Leiceſters *Letter to the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury *in this Cauſe.* Hickman *of* Benet *College expelled. And why. Reſtored. The Foundreſs of* Sidney Suſſex *College. Her Will.* Bainbrigg *and* Johnſon *of* Chriſts *College: Cited before the Vicechancellor, for their Sermons in St.* Maries. *Their Proteſtations. The Heads to their High Chancellor concerning them. The Judgment of the chief Civilians given of the Caſe. Theſe two Preachers give Account of what they had preached, that had been excepted againſt.*

CHAP. XXI. *The Death of the Earl of* Leiceſter: *Some Remarks of him. The Lord* Burghleys *Meditation, upon the Death of his Lady. Her large Benefactions: Her Learning. An* Engliſh *Gentleman, named Sir* Edward Kelly, *in* Germany, *reported to have found the Art of making Gold; invited by the Queen into* England. *The Lord Treaſurers Letter to* Dyer, *to perſuade him to come over. His great Learning and Abilities, and Deſerts towards* England. *He is ſeized by the Emperors Order. The Cauſe thereof conjectured. The Queen ſends her Agent with a Letter to the Emperor, in Behalf of* Kelly.

CHAP. XXII. *Books this Year ſet forth. Some relating to the* Spaniſh Invaſion. *Some* Puritanical, *againſt the Government of the Church by Biſhops. Anſwers to them. An* Exhortation *to the Queens Subjects to defend their Country. An* Anſwer *to certain*

certain Spaniſh *Lies. Certain* Advertiſements *out of* Ireland, *concerning the* Spaniſh *Fleet ſcattered there.* Elizabetha Triumphans. *The* Coronation *of* David. Penries Supplication: *And* Appellation *to Parliament. His* Epitome. *A* godly Treatiſe *in Vindication of Epiſcopal Government. An* Admonition *to the People of* England. *An* Anſwer *to Ten frivolous Reaſons ſet down by the* Rhemiſts, *Tranſlators of the* New Teſtament *from the Vulgar* Latin. Diſputations *concerning the Sacred Scriptures againſt* Bellarmine *and* Stapleton. *By* William Whitaker, *D. D.* ANNO 1588.

A TABLE,

Of the Records, and other Original Papers, repoſited in the *Appendix*; with the Years, Chapters, and Pages of the ANNALS, where every one of them are mentioned; and may be found according to their Numbers ſet in the Margin.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I. Pag. 1.

Numb. I. *A Letter of the Lord Treaſurer, Lord* Burghley, *to Sir* Henry Unton, *the Queens Ambaſſador in* France. *Upon that Kings requiring more Forces from her.* Pag. 1. ANNO 1581.

[Num. I.] *Mr.* Rafe Lane *to the Lord Treaſurer. Advice upon Occaſion of the Expulſion of King* Don Antonio, *out of his Kingdom of* Portugal. *And what Uſe the Queen might make of him to annoy King* Philip *of* Spain. *Dated* March 7. 1580. p. 5.

Num. II. *Lord* Burghley, *his Judgment: Upon a Conſultation of the Queen and Council, concerning a Fleet to be ſent to the* Azores *Iſlands, under Sir* Francis Drake; *to aſſiſt* Don Antonio, *expulſed his Kingdom of* Portugal, *by* Philip, *King of* Spain. *Digeſted under certain Queſtions, with Anſwers to each.* p. 10.

CHAP. II. P. 14.

Num. III. *A true Anſwer to the Articles exhibited by the Lord Biſhop of* Norwich, *againſt Sir* Robert Jermin, *Sir* John Higham, *Knights;* Robert Aſhfield, *and* Thomas Badley, *Eſquires, Juſtices of the Peace for the County of* Suffolk. p. 20.

A TABLE.

ANNO 1581. Num. IV. John, *Biſhop of* Exceſter, *to the Lord Treaſurer,* Lord Burghley. *To favour his Proceedings againſt one* Randol, *a Miniſter in his Dioceſs, of the* Family of Love. *Holding dangerous Principles.* pag. 23.

CHAP. III. Pag. 26.

Num. V. *Minutes of a Warrant to* Edward Stafford, *Eſq*; *for Parſonages impropriate, Free Chapels, Guildes, Chauntries,* &c. *diſſolved*; *that were concealed. With Inſertions of the Lord Treaſurers Hand.* pag. 30

Num. VI. Campions *Letter to the Privy Council. Offering to avow and prove his Catholic Religion before all the Doctors and Maſters of both Univerſities: And requiring a Diſputation.* p. 33.

Num. VII. *A Relation of the cruel Burning of* Richard Atkins, *an* Engliſh *Man,* at *Rome. Put into the Inquiſition there, for diſturbing the Prieſt carrying the Hoſt.* p. 39.

CHAP. V. Pag. 47.

Num. VIII. *Academiæ* Oxonienſis, *ad Dom.* Burghleium *Epiſtola Gratulatoria.* p. 52.

Num. IX. Exemplum Chartæ, An. 29. *Edw.* III. Pro juramento Vicecomitis. *Touching a Privilege of the Univerſity of* Oxford. p. 53.

CHAP. VI. Pag. 56.

Num. X. *Sales of* Edward, *Earl of* Oxford: *And Names of the Purchaſers. And his Debts to the Queen.* p. 59.

CHAP. VII. Pag. 65.

Num. XI. Tho. Sampſons *Account of the Converſion, and divers other Hiſtorical Remarks, of the holy Life of* J. Bradford, *Martyr.* p. 71.

Num. XII. *A Copy of Verſes ſet before a Book of* Martial Diſcipline; *exciting the Nation to exerciſe Arms: Conſidering the preſent Dangers from Foreign Enemies. By the Author,* T. Styward. p. 75.

Num. XIII. Theodore Beza *to the Lord* Burghley. *Preſenting him with an antient* Pentateuch *in ſix Languages*; *towards the furniſhing of the New Library at* Cambridge. p. 77.

Num. XIV. *The ſame to the ſame. Moving him to procure the printing of that antient Hexaglot Tranſlation of the* Pentateuch:

teuch: *Likely to prove ſo highly uſeful to the Chriſtian World.* pag. 77.

CHAP. VIII. Pag. 77.

Num. XV. Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *To favour the Requeſt of the Council of* Geneva; *for a Loan of Money, in their preſent Diſtreſs, by the Means of the Duke of* Savoy. p. 89. ANNO 1582.

Num. XVI. *The* Syndics *and Council of* Geneva, *to the Lord Treaſurer. To promote their Suit to the Queen for a Loan of Money. The Letter ſent by* Maillet, *their Agent.* Ibid.

CHAP. IX. Pag. 91.

Num. XVII. *The Anſwer of Dr.* Beacon, *to the three Reaſons, propounded by the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield, *why he ſhould not be Chancellor of that Dioceſs.* p. 94.

Num. XVIII. *The Complaints of the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield; *concerning the hard Dealings with him: The Earl of* Leiceſter, *his Adverſary: In a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.* p. 95.

Num. XIX. Overton, *Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield, *to the Lords of the Privy Council. With a Certificate of convicted Recuſants. And concerning the ill State of his Dioceſs.* Ibid.

Num. XX. *Interrogatories miniſtred to Sir* Robert Stapleton, *Kt. in the* Star-Chamber; *concerning Abuſes done to the Archbiſhop of* York *at* Doncaſter, *by* Sciſſon, *the* Hoſt, *(where the Archbiſhop lodged) himſelf and others in the Conſpiracy.* p. 102.

Num. XXI. *The publick Confeſſions at the Aſſizes in* York; *read by Sir* Robert Stapleton, *and others, of their Slanders and Abuſe of the Archbiſhop. And his Anſwers to each of them.* p. 106.

CHAP. X. Pag. 110.

Num. XXII. *The State of the Biſhoprick of St.* Davids, *and the Revenues thereof. Sent up to the Lord Treaſurer, upon the Deceaſe of the Biſhop.* p. 121.

CHAP. XI. Pag. 122.

Num. XXIII. Wright, *a Puritan, his Anſwers to the Matters urged againſt him: Upon his own Anſwers in the Conſiſtory. From Notes taken thereof by the Regiſter.* p. 125.

ANNO 1582. Num. XXIV. Wrights *Anſwers to the Notes of Matters proved againſt him by ſworn Witneſſes.* p. 125.

CHAP. XII. Pag. 138. CHAP. XIII. Pag. 147.

Num. XXV. Ocklands *Character of Sir* William Cecill, *Lord* Burghley, *Lord Treaſurer. In Heroick Verſe.* p. 155.

Num. XXVI. *A Catechiſm, containing certain Queſtions and Anſwers; touching the Doctrine of* Predeſtination, *and the Uſe of Gods Word and Sacraments. Formerly bound up with ſome* Engliſh *Bibles.* p. 157.

CHAP. XIV. Pag. 158.

ANNO 1583. [Num. XXVI.] Declaratio eorum, quæ circa *Mendozæ* Catholici Regis Legati *Commiſſionem acciderunt.* Unà cum Reſponſione ad ejuſdem objecta contra ſuam Majeſtatem. p. 158.

Num. XXVII. *The* Syndics *and Council of* Geneva *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *To move the Queen to relieve them againſt the Army of the Duke of* Savoy. *In* French. p. 161.

[Num. XXVII.] Epiſtola Sereniſſimæ *Scotorum* Reginæ, *ab* Epiſcopo *Roſſenſi* (ut videtur) *miſſa.* Conſolatoria. p. 165.

Num. XXVIII. *A Proclamation againſt Retainers.* p. 166.

CHAP. XV. Pag. 167.

Num. XXIX. Archiepiſcopus *Ebor. Ceſtrienſi Epiſcopo.* p. 168.

Num. XXX. *The Lords of the Council to the Earl of* Darby *and the Biſhop of* Cheſter. *Concerning the Weekly Collections to be made in his Dioceſs; for Maintenance of Popiſh Recuſants in Priſon.* p. 169.

[Num. XXX.] *The Biſhop of* Winton *to the Lord Treaſurer. Clearing himſelf againſt Sir* Richard Norton, *his Officer; that had accuſed him, that he was covetous.* p. 176.

Num. XXXI. *The Biſhop of* Meath *in* Ireland *to the Lord Treaſurer. For the erecting of a Free Grammar School in a Town in that Kingdom.* p. 177.

Num. XXXII. *The Wardens, Fellows and Scholars of* Wincheſter *College to the Queen. Upon her Requeſt of a Leaſe to be granted Her by them. Vid.* Additions.

Num. XXXIII. [XXXII. *in the* Annals] Tobie Matthew, *D. D. Dean of* Durham, *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *Thanks for his*

his Counſil, upon his going down to Durham. *The Condition of the Deanry.* p. 179. ANNO 1583.

CHAP. XVI. Pag. 180.

Num. XXXIII. George Withers *of* Danbury *in* Eſſex, *to the Lord* Burghley. *Concerning Church Controverſies: And Subſcription to the Book of Common Prayer.* p. 183.

Num. XXXIV. [Num. XXXV. *ſet amiſs*] *A private Letter of one* Fowker, *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *Informing him of* Engliſh *Men in* Rome, *and of ſome Matters relating to them.* p. 190.

CHAP. XVII. Pag. 192.

Num. XXXV. *The Vicechancellor and Heads of the Univerſity of* Cambridge, *to their High Chancellor, the Lord* Burghley. *Concerning their Printing Preſs. Hindred by the* Stationers *Company of* London. p. 195.

CHAP. XVIII. Pag. 210.

Num. XXXVI. *An Abſtract taken by the Lord Treaſurer, out of the Inſtructions, given to* Monſieur De Griſes, *and* Ortel, *Agents from* Holland *to the Queen. To take on Her their Protection. In four Papers.* p. 214. ANNO 1584.

Num. XXXVII. *The Queens Letter to the Duke of* Montpenſier. *Upon the Murther of the Prince of* Orange. *For the bringing up of his Daughters. To one whereof the Queen was Godmother.* p. 215.

[Num. XXXVII.] *Vid. Num.* XLI. *An Original Letter of* MARY, *Queen of* Scots *own Writing, to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *To favour her Cauſe with the Queen: And to aſſiſt* Monſieur Mauveſier, *the* French *Ambaſſador, with the Queen in that Affair.* p. 216.

Num. XXXVIII. Petitions; *digeſted into* 34 *Articles. To be humbly offered unto the Queen, her Council and Parliament. For a learned Miniſtry, to preach the Goſpel; and Paſtors, to be Reſident in every Pariſh. And for further Regulation of Biſhops, Officers and Governors of the Church.* p. 222.

Num. XXXIX. *A Writing; containing an Anſwer of the Biſhops to the Book of Articles, offered the laſt Seſſions of Parliament,* Anno Regin. 27. *for Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes: Concerning Miniſters, Excommunication, Diſpenſations, Non-Reſidence,* &c. p. 227.

CHAP.

A TABLE

CHAP. XIX. Pag. 228.

ANNO 1584. Num. XL. *General Propoſitions to be ſupplied with Proofs, by ſuch as his Grace ſhould appoint. And other Particulars to be gathered. Drawn up by* Dr. Drury, *a learned Civilian. And ſent to the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury; *in order to prevent a Commiſſion of* Melius inquirendum : *Endeavoured by a Bill in Parliament.* p. 231.

Num. XLI. *An Original Letter of* Mary *Queen of* Scots, *&c. Miſplaced. To be found at* p. 216.

Num. XLII. *FRATERNUM* & amicum, de reſartienda inter *Anglicanæ* Eccleſiæ *Doctores & Miniſtros* Pace, Conſilium. p. 238.

CHAP. XX. Pag. 239.

Num. XLIII. Cowper, *lately made Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *For a Commiſſion to carry down with him, to make Enquiry after Recuſants.* p. 239.

CHAP. XXI. Pag. 249.

Num. XLIV. *Three Forms of Prayer uſed at Court and Parliament after* Parries *Treaſon.* I. *A Prayer for all Kings, Princes, Countries and People, which do profeſs the Goſpel: And eſpecially, for our Sovereign Lady, Queen* Elizabeth. *Uſed in her Majeſties Chapel: And may be uſed of all Perſons within her Majeſties Dominions.* II. *A Prayer and Thankſgiving for the Queen. Uſed of all Knights and Burgeſſes in the High Court of Parliament. And very requiſite to be uſed, and continued, of all her Majeſties loving Subjects.* III. *A Prayer uſed in the Parliament only.* p. 260.

Num. XLV. *A Prayer of Thankſgiving; for the Deliverance of her Majeſty from many Dangers; and particularly, from the murtherous Intention of Dr.* Parry. A Manuſcript. p. 262.

Num. XLVI. Parries *Confeſſion in a Letter to the Queen. Written from the* Tower, *after his Condemnation. Exemplified from his own Paper.* p. 262.

CHAP. XXII. Pag. 264.

Num. XLVII. *A Treatiſe, That ſuch Papiſts as of late Times have been executed, were by a Statute of* Edward III. *lawfully executed as Traitors.* p. 266.

Num. XLVIII. *Intelligences, ſent to Secretary* Cecyll, *by* Daniel Rogers. *Taken and tranſcribed by him from Letters, written to ſeveral Princes of* Germany, *in the Year* 1569. p. 272.

Num.

Of the RECORDS.

Num. XLIX. John Fox *to the Lord Treaſurer. To obtain the Queens Confirmation of his Prebend in the Church of* Sarum. p. 273. ANNO 1584.

CHAP. XXIII, XXIV. Pag. 280, 288.

Num. L. Adrianus Saravia. *To the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley; *wrote from* Leydon. *Moving him to Counſil the Queen, at this dangerous Juncture, to aſſiſt the Provinces, and to take the Government of them upon Her: His Letter being accompanied with their Ambaſſadors, coming into* England. p. 289. ANNO 1585.

[Num. L.] *Laws and Ordinances ſet down by* Robert, *Earl of* Leiceſter, *the Queens Majeſties Lieutenant, and Captain General of all her Army, and Forces in the* Low Countries. *Meet and fit to be obſerved by all ſuch as ſhall ſerve her Majeſty under him in the ſaid Countries. And therefore to be publiſhed, and notified to the whole Army.* p. 292.

Num. LI. *The Speech of* John Puckering, *Sergeant at Law, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons to the Queen, at the Concluſion of the Seſſions of Parliament:* Anno 27 Regin. Elizab. p. 294.

Num. LII. *Sir* Amias Paulet *to the Lord Treaſurer. For an Aſſiſtant in the Cuſtody of the* Scots *Queen. Writ from* Tutbury. p. 300.

Num. LIII. *Inſtructions given by the Queen to* Daviſon, *her Ambaſſador to the States of the United Provinces: Taking upon Her the Protection of thoſe Countries: Upon the* Spaniards *taking of* Antwerp. *An Original.* Ibid.

CHAP. XXV. Pag. 301.

[Num. LIV.] *The* Scots *Queens Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, of her own Writing in* French. *To favour her Cauſe with the Queen; and to aſſiſt* Mauveſier, *the* French *Kings Ambaſſador with the Queen, in that Affair. See this Letter miſplaced at* Num. XLI. p. 306.

Num. LIV. *Expreſſions in* Dr. Allens *Book; taken Notice of in the Bill of Indictment againſt* Alfield, *a* Jeſuit; *who had brought ſome Hundreds of thoſe Books into* England *to be diſperſed.* p. 312.

CHAP. XXVI. Pag. 320.

Num. LV. Sandys, *Archbiſhop of* York, *his Prayer after his Sermon at* St. Pauls *Croſs; at a publick Thankſgiving for the Queens Deliverance from the Conſpiracy of* Ballard, *and* Babbington. p. 327.

A TABLE

ANNO 1585.

Num. LVI. *A Survey taken of the Value of the Biſhoprick of* Chicheſter: *Upon the Death of* Curteſs, *late Biſhop there.* p. 331.

Num. LVII. *Proof and Evidences from antient Grants of the Liberties of the Biſhop of* Elies *Manor of Holborn Houſe.* p. 336.

[Num. LVII.] *The State of the Cathedral Church of* Norwich. *Truly ſet down by* William Downyng, *in Purſuit of his humble Petition.* p. 339.

CHAP. XXVII.

Num. LVIII. *Minutes of a Letter wrote by the Lord* Burghley *to a nameleſs Friend. Clearing himſelf of ſundry Slanders, raiſed of him.* p. 346.

Num. LIX. *Another Letter of the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley, *to his nameleſs Friend. In Vindication of himſelf from a Slander upon him, of hindering the Negotiation between the Queen, and the King of* Navarr. p. 346.

Num. LX. *The Earl of* Leiceſter, *in Anſwer to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghleys *Letter to him. Upon ſome Informations, as though the Earl were not his Friend. Juſtifying himſelf at large to the contrary.* p. 349.

Num. LXI. Philip *Earl of* Arundel, *his Debts, Eſtates and Circumſtances.* Anno 1585. Ibid.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Num. LXII. *An Anthem in two Parts: Compoſed for the* XVIIth *Day of* November: *And ſung after a Prayer of Thankſgiving. Uſed on that Day.* p. 336.

Num. LXIII. Laurentii Humfredi *in* Speculum Moralium quæſtionum *Joan. Caſai, Præmonitio.* p. 358.

BOOK

Of the RECORDS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I. Pag. 360.

Num. I. *Objections againſt bringing* MARY, *Queen of* Scots, *to Trial. With Anſwers thereunto. Being the Cenſure of the Civilians.* p. 366.

ANNO 1586.

Num. II. *An Analogy or Reſemblance between* Joan *Queen of* Naples, *and* Mary, *Queen of* Scotland: *Offered to Queen* Elizabeth *by the Parliament.* p. 369.

Num. III. Sentences, *written by the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley: *Occaſioned upon the Death of* Mary *Queen of* Scots; *and upon Queen* Elizabeths *Diſpleaſure towards him on that Account. Endorſed with theſe Words*; 1586. After the *Scots* Queens Death, Wedneſday Febr. The Warrant ſigned to the Lord Chancellor that Night. p. 371.

Num. IV. *The Lord Treaſurers ſecond Letter to the Queen, lying under her Diſpleaſure, upon the Death of the* Scots *Queen. Dated* Febr. 17. *But not received.* p. 374.

Num. V. *The Lord Treaſurers Third Letter to the Queen. Dated* Febr. 23. *Remaining yet under her Diſpleaſure on the ſame Occaſion. Delivered to her by Lord* Buckhurſt. p. 374.

Num. VI. *A Writing of the Lord Treaſurer*; *for his Abſence from Council*; *upon ſome angry Words uſed to him by the Queen. To be delivered to Her by Mr. Vicechamberlain.* March the 15th. p. 374.

CHAP. IV. Pag. 401.

Num. VII. *The Biſhop of* Meath *in* Ireland, *to the Lord Treaſurer: Now come into* England. *To ſollicit for Favour upon Account of his Firſt Fruits, not paid. His Caſe referred to the Lord Deputy, his Enemy.* p. 404.

Num. VIII. *Mr.* Henton, *Archdeacon of* Coventry, *to the Biſhop of* Litchfield. *Account of the Backwardneſs of ſome of the Clergy of that Archdeaconry, in the Payment of their Taxations, towards the Queens Forces in the Low Countries.* p. 408.

A TABLE

ANNO 1586.

Num. IX. June *the* 24th, 1586. Frekes *Account for the Monies received of the Clergy for Lances in all the Dioceſſes, from the Biſhops; and of Recuſants for Light Horſe. So endorſed by the Hand of the Lord Treaſurer.* 408

Num. X. *An Account of the Names and Preferments of the Prebendaries of* Weſtminſter. *Drawn up, and given in by* Goodman, *the Dean,* April 1586. p. Ibid.

Num. XI. Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer. The State of* Geneva. *Obliged to him next to the Queen, for Favour and Aſſiſtance yielded to them. This Letter brought over by* William Cecill, *the Treaſurers Grandſon, returning home from Travel.* p. 411.

CHAP. V. Pag. 412.

Num. XII. Parſons *the Jeſuit, to Cardinal* Allen *at* Rome. *Concerning the Succeſs of his and other* Jeſuits, *their late Miſſion into* England, *by Commiſſion from him.* p. 414.

Num. XIII. *The Juſtices of the Peace in* Suffolk, *to the Lords of the Privy Council. Concerning certain Payments required of the Popiſh Recuſants.* p. 419.

Num. XIV. *Examination of* Martin Ara, *alias* Cotton, *a Seminary Prieſt, and Mr.* Gervaſe Perpoint, *a Popiſh Recuſant. Taken before Mr.* Young, *a Juſtice of Peace in* London, *the* 16th *Day of* June. p. 422.

CHAP. VI. Pag. 423.

Num. XV. Anthony Tyrrel, *Prieſt, his Letter to the Queen. Giving his Reaſons for revoking what he had before confeſſed; and denying what he had before declared concerning* Jeſuits: *And recanting his Recantation.* p. 426.

CHAP. VII. Pag. 429.

Num. XVI. *Dr.* Copcotts, *Vicechancellor of* Cambridge, *to the Lord* Burghley, *High Chancellor of that Univerſity: Concerning Matters out of Order in* Chriſts *College: And his Viſitation of it.* p. 439.

Num. XVII. Injunctions *for* Chriſts *College,* Cambridge. *Given by the Vicechancellor, their Viſitor. Dat.* Decemb. 1586. Ibid.

CHAP.

Of the RECORDS.

CHAP. VIII. Pag. 441.

ANNO 1586.

Num. XVIII. *The Archbiſhop of* Canterbury *to the Vicechancellor and Heads of the Univerſity of* Cambridge. *To ſtay the printing of a Book, called,* The Harmony of Confeſſions, *&c.* p. 442.

Num. XIX. *The Archbiſhop of* Canterbury *to the Vicechancellor and Heads. To require Subſcription to the three Articles, of ſuch as ſhould be admitted Univerſity Preachers.* Ibid.

Num. XX. *Petitions of the Univerſity of* Cambridge. *For Quietneſs to be had with the Townſmen. Delivered by Dr.* Perne *to the Lord* Burghley, *their High Chancellor,* Febr. 25. 1586. p. 443.

Num. XXI. *An Inventory of the Money and Jewels of* Anne, *Dutcheſs of* Somerſet. *Taken after her Death by the Queens Order; by* John Wolley, *one of the Queens Privy Council, and* John Forteſcue, *Maſter of her Majeſties great Wardrobe.* p. 444.

CHAP. IX. Pag. 450.

ANNO 1587.

Num. XXII. Howland, *the Biſhop of* Peterburgh *his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer; requiring ſome Account of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioceſs. With his Certificate concerning ſome of them.* p. 454.

Num. XXIII. Herbert, *Biſhop of* Hereford, *to the Lord Treaſurer. Certifying him of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioceſs.* p. 455.

Num. XXIV. Freak, *Biſhop of* Wigorn, *to the Lord Treaſurer. In Anſwer to his, to enquire of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioceſs. With the Biſhops Certificate concerning them.* Ibid.

Num. XXV. *The Biſhop of* Norwich *to the Lord Treaſurer. Concerning the Juſtices in his Dioceſs; and their Qualifications.* p. 456.

Num. XXVI. *The Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *to the Lord Treaſurer. His Letter and Report; Concerning the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioceſs; and chiefly, in* Hampſhire. Ibid.

Num. XXVII. Godwin, *Biſhop of* Bath *and* Wells, *to the Lord Treaſurer. His Letter and Certificate; concerning the Juſtices in his Dioceſs.* Ibid.

Num. XXVIII. Sandys, *Archbiſhop of* York, *to the Lord Treaſurer. His Judgment of the Juſtices of Peace in* Yorkſhire, *&c.* Ibid.

A TABLE

CHAP. X. Pag. 461.

ANNO 1587.

Num. XXIX. Toby Matthew, *D. D. Dean of* Durham, *to Mr.* Francis Mills, *Attendant on Sir* Francis Walſingham, *Secretary of State. Upon his being nominated to ſucceed in the See of* Durham, *now void. Dated from* Durham, Nov. 23. 1587. p. 464.

Num. XXX. *Ten long Leaſes of the Biſhoprick of* Durham: *To the Queen granted moſt of them, by* Barnes, *the Biſhop of that Dioceſs. With a Note of the Particulars demiſed; Date of the Leaſes; Number of Years, and yearly Rent.* Ibid.

Num. XXXI. Toby Matthew, *D. D. Dean of* Durham, *to Sir* Francis Walſingham, *Secretary of State: Concerning his Preferment to that Biſhoprick.* Ibid.

Num. XXXII. *A Diſcovery of the preſent Eſtate of the Biſhoprick of St.* Aſaph. *Sent to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley, Feb. 24. 1587. p. 467.

Num. XXXIII. *The Dean and Prebendaries of* Ely, *to the Lord Treaſurer: Upon Occaſion of the Queens Letter to them, to grant a Leaſe to one* Aſhby, *her Servant, of certain Manors of that Biſhoprick, now void.* p. 467.

CHAP. XI. Pag. 470.

Num. XXXIV. *Orders made at a Synod of* Puritans, Sept. 3. 1587. p. 470.

Num. XXXV. Durden, *a Miniſter that called himſelf* Elias. *His Propheſies concerning the Times approaching, and the Return of the* Jews, *by his Conduct. In a Letter to one of his Party, named* Williamſon, *a Taylor in* Cambridge. *With his Interpretation of the Propheſies of* Daniel, *and the* Apocalypſe. p. 473.

Num. XXXVI. Anthony Tyrrel, *Prieſt, to the Lord* Burghley, *after his Recantation at St.* Pauls *Croſs: For his Favour: With his Proteſtation, and Purpoſe for the Future.* p. 477.

Num. XXXVII. Fleetwood, *Rector of* Wigan, *to the Lord Treaſurer: Upon Occaſion of a new Commiſſion of Juſtices of Peace for the County of* Lancaſter. *And the good Effect thereof.* p. 479.

CHAP. XII. Pag. 480.

Num. XXXVIII. *Perſons executed under Queen* Elizabeth, *(Prieſts and others of the Popiſh Religion) in the Years* 1570, 1571, 73, 77, 78, 1581, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87. *As they are ſet down, in a Book,*

ANNO 1587.

Book, intitled, Theatrum crudelitatis Hæreticorum *in Anglia. Printed* 1587, *at* Antwerp. p. 481.

Num. XXXIX. *A Decree of the Vicechancellor and Heads of the Univerſity of* Cambridge; *for Diſcommoning* Edmunds, *the Maior of the ſaid Town.* p. 485.

[Num. XXXIX.] *The Maſter and Fellows of* Peter-house *in* Cambridge, *to the Lord* Burghley. *Occaſioned by the Queens Letters to them, to admit one unqualified to be Fellow of their College, againſt their Statutes.* p. 489.

CHAP. XIII. Pag. 489.

Num. XL. *The Maſter and Fellows of* Chriſts *College,* Cambridge, *to the Lord Treaſurer of* England. *Thanking him for putting ſo ſeaſonable an End to a long Controverſy between Dr.* Copcot, *late their Viſitor, and them.* p. 490.

Num. XLI. *The Epiſtle of the Univerſity of* Oxford, *to the Lord Treaſurer. In thankful Acknowledgment of Favours ſhewed them.* p. 493.

Num. XLII. *Mr.* William Lambard *to the Lord Treaſurer: Upon Notice of his being nominated for a Judge, or ſome other eminent Place in the Law.* p. 494.

[Num. XLII.] *Certain general Notes upon the Actions of the Lord* Burghley. *In Anſwer to a Libel.* Ibid.

Num. XLIII. *The Earl of* Leiceſter *to the Lord Treaſurer, juſtifying himſelf for ſome angry Speeches uſed to that Lord. Who had thwarted him in ſomewhat diſcourſed between the Queen and him in Council.* p. 497.

Num. XLV. *Mr.* Rither, *a Gentleman of the North; His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley; *Conſolatory, upon the Death of his Mother, the Lady* Cecill; *dying in thoſe Parts.* p. 498.

CHAP. XIV. Pag. 501.

Num. XLIV. John Fox, *his Epiſtle to Dr.* Laurence Humphrey, *Preſident of* Magdalen *College,* Oxon. *and the Scholars of the ſame. Written with his own Hand before his Book of Martyrs: Preſented to the ſaid College.* p. 502.

Num. XLVI. *Inſcription upon the Monumental Stone, ſet up in the Chancel of St.* Giles Cripplegate *Church againſt the South Wall, in Memory of the Reverend* John Fox, *the Martyrologiſt.* p. 504.

A TABLE

ANNO 1587. Num. XLVII. *Inſcription upon the Monument of* Simeon Fox, *D. of Phyſick; buried in* St. Pauls. *Compoſed and erected by Dr.* Thomas Fox, *Phyſician, his Nephew.* p. 506.

Num. XLVIII. Samuel Fox, *his Diary: Concerning himſelf; his Education, Travels, Gifts, Purchaſes and Children.* Ibid.

Num. XLIX. *An Expoſtulatory Letter in* Latin *to the* Puritans; *Upon Occaſion of their Contentions in the Church: And Exhortatory to Peace; and earneſt Application of themſelves to preach the Goſpel. Written, as it ſeems, about the Year* 1587. *By* John Fox, *or* Laurence Humfrey, *D. D.* p. 507.

CHAP. XV. Pag. 508.

ANNO 1588. Num. L. *The Queen, upon Apprehenſion of the* Spaniſh *Invaſion, her Letter to all the Lords Lieutenants of all the Counties; To make large Preparations for Defence. Her Letter to the Lord Marqueſs of* Wincheſter, *and to the Earl of* Suſſex, *for* Hampſhire. p. 516.

Num. LI. *An Account of the* Spaniſh Armada, *that invaded* England, Anno 1588. *Their Numbers of Gallions, Ships, Pinnaces, Zabres,* &c. *Together with their Burthens, Soldiers, Mariners, Munition, Weapons, Artillery, and other Furniture of War, brought with them. Taken from a* Spaniſh Book, *by Order publiſhed. Briefly here ſet down.* p. 520.

Num. LII. LITANIAE & Preces pro fælici Succeſſu Claſis Regis noſtri *PHILIPPI* adverſus *Angliæ* Hæreticos, veræ Fidei impugnatores. De mandato Sereniſſim. Principis Cardinalis. Excudebat *Anthonius Riberius, Anno* 1588. Ibid.

[Num. LII.] *The miſerable Condition of the* Spaniſh *Fleet, fled to the North of* Scotland: *And ſcattered for many Weeks on the Sea-Coaſts of* Ireland. p. 522.

Num. LIII. *Ships and Men ſunk, drowned, killed and taken: Upon the Coaſt of* Ireland, *in the Month of* Septemb. 1588. Ibid.

Num. LIV. *Sir* Francis Drake *to the Lord Treaſurer. Diſcovery of the* Spaniſh Armada. *Preparation to receive them. The Courage of the* Engliſh: *And particularly the Lord Admirals Forwardneſs.* p. 523.

[Num. LIV.] *A Prayer uſed in the Queen's Chapel, and other Places: For Preſervation and Succeſs againſt the* Spaniſh *Navy and Forces.* p. 528.

CHAP.

Of the RECORDS.

CHAP. XVI. Pag. 529.

Num. LV. Spaniſh *Letters of the Succeſs of their* Armada. p. 530. ANNO 1588.

I. *The Copy of a Letter ſent into* Spain *by* Juan de Gamarra, *a* Spaniſh *Merchant. Dated the* 31ſt *of* Septemb. 1588.

II. *The Copy of a Letter, which* Pedro de Alva, *a* Spaniſh *Merchant, wrote from* Roan *unto* Spain, *the* 1*ſt of* Septemb.

III. *The Copy of a Letter, which* Diego Perez, *Poſtmaſter of* Logronno *wrote, in Confirmation of the Victory againſt* England, *in the Ocean Sea. Dated the* 2*d of* Septemb. 1588.

IV. *By a Letter from the Poſtmaſter of* Bourdeaux. *Written to the Ambaſſador in* France, *the* 2*d of* Decemb. 1588.

Num. LVI. Aug. 5. 1588. *Articles for the Examination of* Don Pedro de Valdez: *Taken Priſoner in the Defeat of the* Spaniſh Armada, *in ſeveral Queſtions; with* Don Pedro's *Anſwers.* p. 532.

Num. LVII. *Intelligence from* Rome, Liege, *and* Liſle, *to the Lord Treaſurer, of divers Matters concerning the* Spaniſh Armada *and King* Philip. *And his Purpoſe of ſending the Queen, being taken, to the Pope.* p. 540.

[Num. LVII.] *An Account of the Proceedings between* Spain *and* England; *beginning at the Acceſs of Queen* ELIZABETH *to the Crown. In anſwer to a Libel.* p. 541.

Num. LVIII. *A Speech in Parliament,* An. 31 Regin. *againſt a Bill of Subſidy to be granted for four Years; in Order to a Preparation againſt any Aſſaults from* Spain. p. 542.

Num. LIX. *A Speech in Parliament,* Anno 1588. *Upon a Bill againſt Strangers and Aliens, ſelling Wares by Retail.* p. 543.

CHAP. XVII. Pag. 546.

Num. LX. *Articles of Agreement between the Dean and Chapter of* Norwich, *and the Patentees of their Lands. Drawn up by the Atturney and Sollicitor: And offered to the Dean. To which in theſe Terms he accorded.* p. 551

Num. LXI. Dr. Gardiner, *Dean of* Norwich, *to the Lord Treaſurer. Referring the Caſe of their Church againſt Sir* Robert Shirley, *and other Patentees, to his Lordſhips Orders.* p. 552.

ANNO 1588.

Num. LXII. *A brief Declaration, how the Caſe ſtandeth between Sir* Thomas Shirley, *and other her Majeſties Patentees, on the one Party; and the Fermours of the Poſſeſſions of the Dean and Chapter of* Norwich, *on the other Party. With the humble Suit of Sir* Thomas Shirley *to the Lord Treaſurer,* June *the* 10*th,* 1590. p. 552.

Num. LXIII. *The Laſt Will and Teſtament of the moſt Reverend Father in God,* Edwin Sandys, *Archbiſhop of* York. *Who died at* Southwel *the* 10*th of* July, 1588. *And was there buried under a fair Monument.* p. 553.

CHAP. XVIII. Pag. 560.

Num. LXIV. Benet *a Prieſt, to* Philip *Earl of* Arundel: *Bewailing his falſe Accuſation of him. Dated* January *the* 12th 1588. 563.

Num. LXV. An licitum ſit Catholicis in *Anglia,* arma ſumere, & aliis modis Reginam & Regnum defendere contra *Hiſpanos. Reſolved by one* Wryght, *a Prieſt, as it ſeems, of the College of* Doway. p. 566.

Num. LXVI. *Certain Liſts of the Names of all the Recuſants and Prieſts in* England, *and beyond the Seas,* &c. Ibid.

CHAP. XIX. Pag. 572.

Num. LXVII. *A Paper concerning the* Superiority *of Biſhops. Put into the Hands of Sir* Francis Knolles, *by ſome unknown Perſon. And by him delivered to the Lord* Burghley, Jan. 1588. p. 578.

Num. LXVIII. *The Examination of divers Perſons about the Printing Preſs of* Martin Marprelate: *And of the Books ſo printed,* Feb. 15. 1588. Apud *Lambhith* in Com. Surrey. Ibid.

CHAP. XX. Pag. 583.

Num. LXIX. *Cauſes conſidered in proceeding againſt Mr.* Everard Digby, *Fellow of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge. *In Order to his* Deprivation; *and moving thereunto. Which were offered by Dr.* Whitaker, *the Maſter, to the Lord* Burghley, *and the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury, *Viſitors of that College.* p. 586.

Num. LXX. *Articles framed and propounded to* Cutbert Bainbrige; *as collected out of a Sermon by him preached at St.* Maries, Cambridge. *Of which the Vicechancellor required him to declare under his Oath, what he ſpake publickly. With his Anſwers.* p. 592.

Num. LXXI. Francis Johnſons *Account of his Sermon, preached at* St. Maries, Cambridge, *Jan.* 6. 1588. *Upon* 1 Pet. V. 1. 4. The Elders which are among you I exhort, who am alſo an Elder and a Witneſs, *&c. Againſt which Sermon were divers Articles framed, and propounded to him. Of which Mr. Vicechancellor, and* Dr. Perne, *with other Heads, required him to deliver under his Oath, what he ſpake publickly.* p. 592.

ANNO 1588.

CHAP. XXI. Pag. 593.

Num. LXXII. *A Note of ſuch Things as do appear againſt Mr.* Edward Crofts: *Upon Examination of one* Smith, *a Conjurer, and others, after named: Concerning procuring the Death of the Earl of* Leiceſter *by Conjuration.* p. 593.

Num. LXXIII. *The Lord Treaſurer Lord* Burghleys *Letter to Mr.* Dyer, *the Queens Agent in the Parts of* Germany; *Signifying the Queens Invitation to Sir* Edward Kelly: *Labouring his coming into* England, *to give his Service to the Queen.* p. 599.

Num. LXXIV. *A Letter from an* Engliſh *Merchant, lately at* Prague, *to Mr.* Edward Wotton; *Concerning the ſeizing of Sir* Edward Kelly, *and committing him to the Caſtle at* Prague, *by a Special Commiſſion from the Emperor: With the Cauſes thereof.* p. 601.

THE
NAMES *of the* SUBSCRIBERS
to this Third VOLUME.

*Thoſe mark'd with a * are for Large Paper.*

A.

Reverend Mr. Walter Atkyns, *Vicar General of* Cloyne *in the Kingdom of* Ireland.
Rev. Mr. Chriſtopher Anſtis, *Rector of* Brinkly *in* Cambridgſhire.

B.

Right Hon. Lord Viſcount Bruce.
Right Rev. Lord Biſhop of Bangor.
Peregrine Bartie, *of the* Middle-Temple, *Eſq;*
James Butler, *of* Warminghurſt-Park *in the County of* Suſſex, *Eſq;*
Henry Bradſhaw, *Eſq;*
Rev. Dr. Thomas Bennet, *Vicar of St.* Giles Cripplegate.
Rev. Mr. Thomas Baker, *S. T. B. of St.* John's *College in* Cambridge.
Rev. Mr. James Banks.
Mr. Robert Beachcroft, *of* Baliol *College*, Oxon.
Mr. Joſeph Beachcroft.
Mr. Thomas Bowdler.

C.

* *Right Rev. Lord Biſhop of* Chicheſter.
Right Rev. Lord Biſhop of Cloyne, *in the Kingdom of* Ireland.
Sir Robert Salusbury Cotton, *Bart.*
Anthony Collins, *Eſq;*
James Chatham, *Eſq;*
Humphry Chatham, *Eſq; for the Library at* Mancheſter.
John Campbel, *of* Stackpole Court *in the County of* Pembroke, *Eſq;*
Thomas Carew, *Eſq;*
Edward Conyers, *of* Walthamſtow *in* Eſſex, *Eſq;*
Rev. Mr. Robert Carleton, *Dean of* Cork, *in the Kingdom of* Ireland.
Rev. Edmund Calamy, *D. D.*
Mr. Joſeph Cave.

D.

* *Right Hon. the Earl of* Derby.
Rev. Mr. Richard Davis, *of* Ruabon.

F.

Robert Foulkes, *M. D.*

G.

Rev. Zachary Grey, *D. D. Rector of* Houghton Conqueſt *in* Bedfordſhire.
Rev. Mr. John Goodwin.

H.

* *Sir* James How, *Bart.*
Mr. John Harris, *of* Lambert-ſtreet *in* Goodman's *Fields, Apothecary.*

I.

Charles Jenneno, *Eſq;*
John Jeffries, *of* Leyton-Stone *in* Eſſex, *Eſq;*
John Jermy, *of the* Inner Temple, *Eſq;*
Thomas Jervois, *Eſq;*
Meſſeurs William *and* John Innys, *of* London, *Bookſellers.*

K.

Rev. Samuel Knight, *D. D. Prebendary of* Ely, *and Rector of* Bluntſham.
Meſſ. James *and* John Knapton, *Bookſellers in* London.

L.

Rev. Mr. John Lewis.

M.

* *Right Hon. Earl* Montrath, *in the Kingdom of* Ireland.
Dr. John Burchard Menckenius, *Counſellor of the Court of His Majeſty the King of* Poland, *and Profeſſor in the Univerſity of* Leipſick. *F. R. S.*
Rev. Mr. James Mills, *of* Lewes *in* Suſſex.

Q.

Queen's *College Library in* Cambridge.

S.

Right Rev. Lord Biſhop of Sarum.
Rev. Dr. Savage, *Maſter of* Emanuel *College in* Cambridge, *for the Library.*

T.

Right Hon. Lord Viſcount Tyrconnel, *in the Kingdom of* Ireland.
Rev. Thomas Tanner, *D. D. Chancellor of* Norwich, *and Canon of* Chriſt's *Church*, Oxon.
Rev. Thomas Tenniſon, *LL. D. Archdeacon of* Carmarthen.
Trinity *College Library, in* Cambridge.

W.

William Wright, *Eſq;*
Rev. Mr. William Woodroffe, *Rector of* Balſham *in* Cambridgeſhire.
Mr. Edward Wickſtead.
Mrs. Mary Woolryche.

ANNALS,
BEING AN
HISTORY
OF THE
Affairs of the Church of *ENGLAND*:
TOGETHER WITH
Various other *Occurrences* of the State and Kingdom co-incident; chiefly with Relation thereunto: Continued.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Negotiation about Queen Elizabeth's *Marriage with the Duke of* Anjou: *Succeedeth not: Notwithſtanding confident Report of it in* France. *Occurrences in* Scotland; *ſent from* Randolph *the Queen's Ambaſſador there. The ill Condition of* Ireland; *lamented. The Queen ſends Forces in Defence of* Roan. Don Antonio *expulſed his Kingdom of* Portugal, *ſolicites the Queen for Aid againſt* Philip *King of* Spain. *Mature Conſultations thereupon. The Prince of* Conde *comes into* England, *to ſolicite the Queen in Behalf of the* Proteſtants *in* France. *He and the* French *Ambaſſador with Her in Conference. Inſtructions to the Queen's Ambaſſadors in* France; *aſſiſting* Monſieur, *going into the* Netherlands. *And a ſecret League between that King and the Queen.*

ANNO 1581.

Intelligence from *Walſingham* Ambaſſador in *France*, concerning the Queen's Marriage.

STILL the Queen's chief Stateſmen conſulted for her Majeſty's Marriage, as concluding it the beſt Way to eſtabliſh and ſtrengthen the Kingdom, and to ſecure *England* againſt the Uncertainty of a Succeſſor, as well as for other Cauſes. *Walſingham* was now in *France* her Ambaſſador, tranſacting that Deſign. He ſent two Letters in the Month of *Auguſt*, 1581. to the Earl of *Suſſex*, Lord Chamberlain, concerning the preſent State of this

ANNO 1581.

this grand Affair: Referring him to the Account he had given at large of his Negotiation with *Monſieur*, in his other Letters both to the Queen and the Lord Treaſurer, and the Succeſs thereof. And let the Earl further in general underſtand; “That *Monſieur* finding by his [*Walſigham*'s] Anſwer, delivered unto him in her Majeſty's Name, that her Highneſs waxed cold in the Matter of Marriage, in reſpect of the Miſlike, that ſhe ſaw her Subjects would conceive, to have her Realm thrown into foreign Wars, by Reaſon of that Match; yet notwithſtanding did very conſtantly reſolve that he would follow his Purſuit; and would not be diſſuaded from it by any Reaſons that he [*Walſingham*] could alledge in that Behalf.

“And that touching the League [Offenſive and Defenſive] between the Queen and his Brother, the King, he told him [the Ambaſſador] that he thought his Brother would very hardly conſent unto it, unleſs it were accompanied with the Marriage: But that he promiſed to employ his Friends to prepare his Mind to hearken to it. And indeed, added *Walſingham* in this Letter, whether the Marriage be, or be not, conſidering the preſent Action his Highneſs hath embraced [*viz.* His Defence of the *Low Countries* againſt *Philip* King of *Spain*] his Lordſhip [*viz.* the Earl] could eaſily perceive, how much it ſtood him upon, to be countenanced in it by ſuch a League, both for the encouraging of his Friends, and diſcouraging of his Enemies.

He proceeded to hint to the Earl another Affair, concerning the Queen's ſupplying *Monſieur* with Money, abſolutely neceſſary to the carrying on his War, “That he underſtood by a Gentleman, which was very inward with *Monſieur*, and alſo greatly devoted to her Majeſty (as his Lordſhip might perceive by the Letters) that *Monſieur*'s Affairs were reduced to ſuch Extremity for want of Money, that unleſs her Majeſty did relieve him, he was like to remain at a Stay. He beſeeched his Lordſhip therefore, (who could conſider of what Importance it was to her Majeſty not to ſuffer the Gentleman to quail in his Enterprize) to put to his helping Hand, to procure that he might be relieved.

Concluding, “That he took upon him to aſſure himſelf that if any Defect or Error fell out in this his Service he ſhould find the Earl's honourable Favour, to excuſe the ſame to her Majeſty, according to the comfortable Promiſe it pleaſed him to make him at his Departure. Dated at *Fere en Tartenoys*, the fifth of *Auguſt* 1581.

Another upon the Report in France *of the Succeſs of it.* Cott. Libr. Titus B. 2. Eliz. Sub. Cam. An. 1581.

Monſieur, the amorous Duke, was now come again into *England*, to proſecute his Love-Buſineſs with the Queen. And ſucceeded ſo far in it, that ſhe gave him a Ring off from her Finger, (ſaith our Hiſtorian.) Whence a common Report preſently aroſe, that the Match was undoubted. And *Mauviſier*, late Ambaſſador from the *French* King, told that King as much. Whereat *Walſingham*, now at *Paris*, and the other *Engliſh* Ambaſſador there, were under a great Surpriſe, having had no Account thereof ſent them. And this cauſed another Letter from *Walſingham* to the Earl; importing, *Walſingham to the Earl of Suſſex.*

ing, “That his Lordſhip by the general Letters ſent unto the “Lord Treaſurer ſhould perceive, how that they, [the Queen's “Ambaſſadors] were now at a Stay for their Treaty, upon “ſome new Comfort *Monſieur Mauviſier* had put the King in; “that her Majeſty is fully reſolved to proceed to the Concluſion “of her Marriage. Which if it were true, then they, her Maje“ſty's Ambaſſadors there, were hardly dealt withal. For that “they were not privy thereto. And that if it were not true, then “had the Advertiſement done a great deal of harm many Ways.

And then giving his Judgment, he adds theſe Words: “Surely, “my Lord, if her Majeſty be not already reſolved touching her “Marriage, it will behave her to grow to ſome ſpeedy Reſolution “therein. For the entertaining of it doth breed her greater Diſho“nour than I dare commit to Paper: Beſides the Danger ſhe daily “encreaſeth for not ſettling her Eſtate; which dependeth altoge“ther upon the Marriage. And ſo forbearing further to trouble “his Lordſhip, he moſt humbly took his Leave at *Paris*, the twen“ty ſixth Day of *Auguſt*, 1581.

The French Ambaſſador diſpleaſed about the Match.

But this confident Report ſoon vaniſhed. For to give ſome further Account of this Courtſhip this Year, take a ſhort Extract out of a Letter of *Brook*, the Queen's Ambaſſador in *France*, writ unto her: *viz.* “I perceive, and it like your Majeſty, how *Monſieur* “*Mauviſier*, in his laſt Letters written from thence, ſheweth “he hath no further Hope of the Marriage; underſtanding your “Intent to be for to entertain him graciouſly, and no more. And “ſo to paſs the Time. And therefore he [the ſaid *Mauviſier*] “required to be revoked. I ſuppoſe, added the Ambaſſador, he “did write this, being in ſome Paſſion. For not many Weeks ſince “he ſent aſſured Hope of the Marriage. Thus this Matter waver“ed about this Time.

Occurrencies in Scotland.

As for *Scotland*, among the Occurrences there this Year ſent to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* by *Tho. Randolph* the Queen's Reſident there, theſe are ſome, as I take them from the Original Letter: “That the Lord *Flemming*, Sir *Thomas Carre* of *Furnehorſt*, Sir “*James Baford*, *John Matland*, ſometime Secretary to the King's “Mother, with many other, forfeited in the Civil Diſſenſions, and “for the Murther of the King's Father, and his two Regents; were “with their Children reſtored to their Blood and Poſſeſſions; con“ditionally, that they ſhould abide the Laws for the ſaid Murther, “when the King ſhould pleaſe to call and charge them therewith. “But the Lord *Flemming* was not reſtored to his whole Poſſeſſions. “And *Baford* had his Pacification but for three Years. This Fa“vour was obtained to them by the ſpecial Suit and Means of the “Duke [of *Lenox*].

The ſad Caſe of Ireland.

Lamented by the L. Burghley.

If we look over into *Ireland*, it would give a very ſad Proſpect, in reſpect of the Wars, and alſo the great Difference and Quarrels that were there among the Queen's Officers, and the exceeding Expences ſhe was put to. Of which that wiſe Stateſman, the Lord Treaſurer, thus wrote his Mind to one of them: “That he did “heartily lament the lamentable State of that Country. And that

ANNO 1581.

“he was therewith more grieved, in that he ſaw the Calamity either to continue, or not to diminſh: And yet he ſaw no Way, how to remedy it. Neither in ſo doubtful Opinions as there were, both there and here [at Home] for the Remedy, dared he to lay hold on any of them. And yet he did not think the Remedies deſperate, if good and wiſe Men, addicted to publick State, were therein employed. And concluding, thus I uncomfortably end, referring the Succeſs to God's Mercy to be extended both to you and us: Whoſe Sins, I am aſſured, do provoke him to chaſten the Nation ſo ſharply. Adding, that he thought well of a late Direction from her Majeſty, to reduce her Army to a convenient Number there, that otherwiſe were not provided to live in their Luſts, but by Wars and Spoils. This Letter was dated at *Weſtminſter*, *December* 15, 1581.

The Queen aſſiſts France *againſt the* Spaniard.

The Queen was now engaged with the *French* King; and aſſiſted him with Supplies, againſt the *Spaniard:* Who was now coming to *Diep*, the Earl of *Eſſex* being her General, and Sir *Roger Williams*, a brave Soldier, one of her great Officers there. By the Forces of the Duke of *Parma*, *Roan* was taken. And the ſaid Duke himſelf was haſtening thither with his Army: And the *French* King himſelf was then before *Roan*, beſieging it; and in Apprehenſion of a Battle with the ſaid Duke, which made him requeſt of her Majeſty to ſend him more Forces, and ſpeedily.

Sir *Henry Unton* was now the Queen's Ambaſſador in *France*, and upon a Letter of his to the Lord Treaſurer, acquainting him with the Affairs there, the ſaid Lord wrote him an Anſwer at ſome length. The Contents of which the ſaid Sir *Henry* wrote on the Backſide of it, being a ſhort Summary of the Letter; which ſhews as well this Ambaſſador's great Exactneſs and Diligence, as the Particulars of this Expedition. Which our Hiſtories, for ought I find, are ſilent of. What was thus written by Way of *Contents*, was as followeth.

The Q. to Unton *her Ambaſſador in* France.

“My Letter expreſſing the King's Requeſt for further Aid, unpleaſant to her Majeſty, though ſhe laid no Fault on me.

“Her Majeſty made Anſwer thereunto by her own Letter, whereof he [the Lord Treaſurer] ſendeth Copy, to infer to the King the Unſeaſonableneſs of the Time.

“Her Majeſty ſuſpecteth that the King's State is made worſe, than the ſame truly is, in reſpect of the Contrariety thereof to Sir *Roger Williams*'s Report.

“The News of the Duke of *Parma*'s Entrance not likely to be true: Neither that he can come ſo ſoon to *Roan*, but that the King may before gain Mount *S. Katharine:* And afterwards go and make Head to him.

“Sir *Thomas Leyghton* Ambaſſador ſent over.

“Marvaileth that I have not received his former Letters. Wiſheth me to learn exactly the State of the King's Forces. Hopeth ſhortly to receive News of the taking of the Mount *S. Katharine*.

Append. Num. I.

The whole Letter being a Diſcovery of a conſiderable Piece of our Hiſtory, I have tranſcribed from the Original, and laid it in the *Appendix* of *Originals*.

ANNO 1581.

The Queen minded to aſſiſt Don Antonio, *King of* Portugal *againſt K.* Philip.

A Motion to aſſiſt Don Antonio.

Philip King of *Spain* was the Queen's fatal Enemy, which ſhe well knew: And therefore was not wanting to defend herſelf and her Kingdoms againſt him: Though as yet no open Breach between them. This Year ſhe was enclined to take Part with *Don Antonio*, late King of *Portugal*; but beat out of his Kingdom by the ſaid King of *Spain:* Who took Poſſeſſion of that Crown unjuſtly. But both *France* and *England* intended to aſſiſt him. For into *England*, encouraged by *France* he now was come. If we turn back to the laſt Year, when this expulſed King firſt ſhewed his Complaint to the *Engliſh* Court, it was thought a fit Opportunity offered the Queen to enable her to check the malicious Purpoſes of King *Philip:* And by preparing a Fleet to aſſiſt *Don Antonio* to be able to defend herſelf thereby, in Caſe of an open hoſtile Invaſion of her Kingdom, even then feared. There was then an expert Soldier, and accompliſhed Gentleman in Matters of War, named *Raſe Lane*, who in a private Letter ſhewed his Thoughts to the Lord Treaſurer on this Occaſion, " That being moved of Zeal to her Majeſty's Safety and Service, he humbly offered to his Lordſhip the Conſideration of the Plat touching the Report of King *Antonio* to her Majeſty for Aid; and many ſingular Advantages and Guard of her Kingdom, which ſhe might gain hereby, which he proceeded to ſhew." The whole Letter being ſomewhat large, I leave to be read in the *Appendix*. Concerning *Don Antonio*'s Buſineſs, ſome Particulars of it may be collected from a Diſcourſe thereof between *Edward Brook*, the Queen's Ambaſſador in *France*, and Count *Vimioſo* the *Portugal* King's Agent there. The Account of which is beſt taken from the ſaid *Engliſh* Ambaſſador's own Letter thereof, written to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, the Secretary, in *May* this Year lately come from *France*.

Num. I.

The Queen's Ambaſſador in France, *his Conference with the* Portugal *Agent* Cott. Librar.

" That the Count *Vimioſo* arrived there [in *France*] the ſecond Inſtant, being very well lodged, and furniſhed of the King's Stuff; entertained of the King's Officers; and his Diet provided and defrayed. That he [the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador] the ſame Night went privily unto him: Declaring the Affection the Queen's Majeſty had to maintain the Liberties of them and their Country; as alſo that ſhe affected *Don Antonio*, and the Juſtice of his Cauſe. But for that their Caſe required rather Help than open Demonſtration of a Complement, he thought it more convenient to viſit him in that Manner. The rather likewiſe, that if the Queen, his Sovereign ſhould otherwiſe make Shew to Friend *Don Antonio*, it would miniſter Occaſion of greater Jealouſy to King *Philip:* Whereby he might be provoked to deal more rigorouſly with ſuch of their Confederates as were in *Portugal*. The which being reſpected, he ſhould do his Kingdom the greater Service, and find the apter Means to deliver his Country from the Oppreſſion of the *Spaniard*.

He added, ' That the ſaid *Vimioſo* ſeemed to accept of his [the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador's] coming, and of the Choice of the Time and Manner: Diſcourſing to him of his hard Adventures, firſt paſt in *Barbary*, when he was taken Priſoner in the Service of *Don Se-*

" *baſtian*,

ANNO 1581.

“ *baſtian*, their late young King: Acknowledging to have received his Liberty by the Means of King *Philip*. For the which he was to adventure his Life in his Service, the Liberty of his Country and Honour reſerved. And that for thoſe Cauſes he had put himſelf in thoſe Hazards; repairing to thoſe Princes [in *France*, *&c.*] of whom he hoped to find that Honour, as they might receive Help in the Redreſs: Not meaning, as he proceeded, to enter into Diſcourſe, how neceſſary this Action was to be embraced by the *French* King and the Queen of *England*. For that he enſured himſelf their own Judgments, and the Advices of their Counſellors were ſufficient to penetrate. Which would be conſidered for the Benefit of their own Eſtates. But that he was diſpoſed to declare the Right of his King, and to ſhew the Juſtice done to the Right of *Portugal*, with deſiring their Aid of Men and Means for the many and juſt Conſiderations.

“ That as for the Particularities touching the Queen, he would leave to communicate with him therein, until he had conferred with the *Chriſtian King* and the Queen his Mother.” That to all theſe Speeches, he [the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador] only anſwered him thus: “ That as for the good Will and Diſpoſition of her Majeſty, his King and Nation ſhould find to be ſuch, as the Benefit of her Meaning ſhould be rather ſhewed towards them by her gracious Deeds than by many Promiſes and outward Shews: Such was the Manner of her ſincere Proceeding.

“ He ſaid, how *Rodrigo de Souza* [*Don Antonio*'s Ambaſſador] had informed him of her moſt Royal Dealing: Purpoſing after he had done his Affairs in that Court [of *France*] to repair into *England*.

It muſt be remembred here, that the Queen had ſent *Prim*, her Agent, to the Emperor of *Fez* and *Morocco*, in Behalf of *Don Antonio*, in Compaſſion of his Condition. And what Succeſs that Affair had the Lord Treaſurer had communicated to this *Engliſh* Ambaſſador by *Waad*, one of the Clerks of the Council. Concerning which thus the Ambaſſador proceeded in his Letter: “ For that Mr. *Waad* had ſhewed him his Honour's Letter, with the Inſtructions for to deal in the Matter which *Prim* brought, he deſired the Count, it would pleaſe him for to confer with Mr. *Waad*, as with a confident Gentleman, and one truſted by his Honour, [the Lord Treaſurer] that he [the Ambaſſador] had underſtood by the ſaid Mr. *Waad*, that he had paſt Speeches with the Count about thoſe Affairs.

Further, “ That on the twenty ſecond in the Morning the Count *Vymyos* did ſend him Word, that he would in the Afternoon viſit him. And he accordingly ſent his Coach and Horſes for to ſerve him and his Company. But that it ſeemed he changed his Purpoſe, and ſent *Prim* unto him with a Meſſage, as that he would be glad to have him [the Ambaſſador] reſort to him. But he willed *Prim* to ſay unto the Count, that he could willingly do any thing that might give him Honour: But that there were in this Caſe theſe Reſpects to be had in Conſideration. Firſt, his

" coming thither unto the Court for to addeſs himſelf and his Negotiations unto their Majeſties: So as by open coming in Viſitation, he [the Ambaſſador] ſhould give Cauſe of Miſtruſt to their " Majeſties, that he did it to intrude himſelf into ſome dealing " with the Count; and to ſeek by Conference to undermine their " Affairs. Moreover that it was the Manner of Proceeding of all " ſuch as were diſtreſt, for to ſeek unto Princes, and to all their " Miniſters. And that therefore he was to enter into Conſideration " hereof what he thought good.

" That upon this, in the Evening *Don Juan de Souza* repaired " unto him [the Ambaſſador] and required him to think, that the " Count would willingly viſit, but that he was loth to give any " Cauſe of miſliking unto their Majeſties [the *French* King and the " the Queen his Mother.] Otherwiſe that he was willing of himſelf to repair unto him. For that upon the Speeches he paſt with " their Majeſties there was Cauſe, importing the Queen's Majeſty's " Service, for to declare unto him.

And then, as to that Meſſage from *Vimioſo*, the Ambaſſador told the ſaid Meſſenger, " That for his Part, he had done the Office " of his Sovereign, as Servant, to viſit him, being a Perſonage " of that Merit: And that he was willing rather to conſent, he " ſhould do all Things to the Advancement of his Affairs, than to " the Impeachment. That therefore if he found it convenient for " the Affairs which he had dealt with their Majeſties, to confer " with him, [the Ambaſſador] in reſpect it touched the Queen, his " Sovereign, he hoped he would deal accordingly. Then *Don Juan* " *de Souza* required him, that he might in the Night meet with the " ſame Count beſide his [the Ambaſſador's] Lodgings; and he " would confer with him. He aſſented to it; becauſe he pretended " it would ſomewhat import her Majeſty. But about nine a Clock " he [*Vimioſo*] ſent an Excuſe in Writing.

The French *King in ſome Heſitation.*

I ſhall add ſomewhat more, to make up this Vacancy and Silence of our Hiſtorians in this Part of Queen *Elizabeth*'s Hiſtory. It ſeems it was a tender Point to meddle in *Don Antonio*'s Affair: And not to attempt the provoking the formidable King of *Spain*. Inſomuch that the *French* King was in ſome Heſitation of giving Aſſiſtance to this expulſed King: And that Crown had more Mind this Work and Charge might be undertaken by the Queen. And *Vimioſo*, by ſhifting Conference with the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador, ſeemed to have ſome Doubt of her. All this with other Matters may be gathered from another Letter of Intelligence from *Brook*, the foreſaid Ambaſſador, to Secretary *Walſingham*, writ *May* 6. " That there were " which ſecretly perſuaded the King, for to find it unneceſſary to " break into Wars with the *Spaniſh* King, for his Brother's ſake " only [Duke of *Anjou* now in the *Low Countries*, contriving to " get Honour and Government there:] Except there ſhould be offered ſome other juſt Quarrel. And yet notwithſtanding the King " had not only given open Entertainment unto the Count *Vimioſo*, " being required to the Contrary by King *Philip*'s Agent; but did " appoint *Monſieur Villequer* to confer with the ſaid Count, for the " Means

Brook *the Ambaſſador in* France, *his Intelligence.*

ANNO 1581.

“Means to be taken and uſed for the Reſtitution of *Don Antonio.*

And concerning the Conference between the ſaid Count and the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador, thus he repeated the Matter to the Secretary: “That the Count did after his firſt coming [to *France*] pretend to have meant to come to confer with him [the Ambaſſador], but that when either he attended on his Coming, or that he [the Ambaſſador] offered to meet him in ſome convenient Place, or otherwiſe in the Evening to viſit him privately, it was deferred and ſhifted, until the Day of parting; whenas he ſent one of his Gentlemen to let the Ambaſſador know, he purpoſed to repair unto *Tours.* Whereon remembring how once he had ſaid, it was requiſite he might ſpeak with me upon Cauſes [as the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador's Letters proceeded] which were neceſſary for the Queen's Majeſty to know, I reſolve, (ſeeing I thought it not convenient to repair myſelf to him publickly) for to entreat my Lord *Sandys* to vouchſafe, under Colour of Viſiting *Don Juan Rodrigo de Souza,* to addreſs himſelf unto the Count; and to let him underſtand, how I had been moſt willing for to have taken my Leave of him; as alſo to be informed ſo much of his Affairs as were neceſſary for her Majeſty to be certified of.

“The which the Lord *Sandys* performed. Whereon the Count anſwered to my Lord, firſt, with my giving of Thanks for my firſt Viſitation; as likewiſe for thoſe further Demonſtrations and Offers to repair unto him. But he ſaid, they found not her Majeſty ſo affected to the State of *Portugal* as there was Cauſe. Howbeit, whether it proceeded of Fear or Love towards King *Philip,* he did not know. Alledging moreover, that it appeared in ſome Sort, how there ſhould be in her Majeſty's Council, Perſons of Quality, which affected the *Caſtilian* King: Lamenting how it had not pleaſed her Majeſty to give in her Letters the Title which belonged to their King [in not ſtyling him *King Antonio:*] Nor yet admitted his [the ſaid King's] Ambaſſador to have publick Audience.

L. Sandys.

“That he rehearſed theſe Points with ſome Earneſtneſs, ſeeming to think they were Indignities. Wherewith conſequently he took Occaſion to praiſe the Acceptance and Favour this King [*viz.* the *French* King] had in his Court apparently uſed toward him: Reſting much ſatisfied in all thoſe Commands he had required of their Majeſties [the *French* King and Queen Mother.]

“My Lord *Sandys* anſwered to theſe former Speeches thus. Firſt, how her Majeſty did favour the Juſtice of their Cauſe, and had dealt to their Contentation, as it ſeemed, by the Report of *Rodrigo de Souza.* But whereas there had not been that open Shew made by her Majeſty, as was now here uſed by this King, that there was greater Cauſe for this King to perform the ſame, in Conſideration of the Queen, and the King's Mother's Pretence. The Count laſtly praiſed her Majeſty's Virtues, ſhewing, how he purpoſed to write ſhortly by the King's Ambaſſador *Juan Rodrigo de Souza*; or elſe to repair into *England* himſelf.

“He

ANNO 1581.

He concluded his Letter, “ That the Count and *Rodrigo de Suza* parted thence yeſterday by Water to *Tours*. And from thence it was ſignified to him, that he meant to go to *Monſeignieur*. That *Rodrigo de Suza* ſaid to him at his laſt Viſitation, how this King offered the Count *Vimioſo*, that if *Don Antonio* ſhould deceaſe, he would furniſh him for Forces to recover the Realm of *Portugal*; notwithſtanding the Judgment of them of Quality in that Country was, without Money there would be little Help had for *Portugal* as yet from thoſe Parts: Except ſome Ships might ſhift by Sea, and about the Out-Iſlands; and watch for to fetch the *Indinn* Fleet.

Deliberation about aſſiſting Don Antonio.

This Affair of reſtoring *Don Antonio* was tranſacted ſome Time before, while *Walſingham* was Ambaſſador in *France*, and then moved at the *Engliſh* Court. To which a Paſſage or two in the Treaſurer's Correſpondence with him will give ſome Light: Suggeſting, why the Queen dealt ſo warily in this Matter; namely, that ſhe might not draw all the Fury of King *Philip* upon herſelf: And that ſhe might firſt be aſſured of the *French* King to bear his Proportion of Charge and Forces, and to be true to her: The ſubtil Queen Mother endeavouring to plunge the Queen into this Buſineſs with as little Danger and Expence, as might be, to themſelves. The Words of the Lord Treaſurer in his Letter to *Walſingham* were, “ That the *French* Ambaſſador with the *French Portugueze* Conſul were with her Majeſty with Letters from the Queen Mother: Of great Earneſtneſs to her Majeſty, to aid *Don Antonio*: By that Name, but not by that of *King Antonio*. Whereof, added the Writer, the *French* King made Reaſon for the Queen Mother's Pretence. ” For ſhe pretended Title to the Kingdom herſelf. In another of the ſaid Treaſurer's Letters: “ How *Don Antonio* may be relieved, there had been no Delay on the Queen's Part, otherwiſe than that ſhe would be well aſſured, that for yielding Relief unto him (which both the *French* King and the Queen Mother had often ſollicited) ſhe might not receive Offence of the King of *Spain*. But that the *French* King would join therein with her Majeſty as well for the Charges, as to withſtand the Offence. And for this that a private League might be entered into by them both. Which the *French* King cunningly declined.

Compl. Ambaſ. p. 394. *and* 398.

A Fleet to be ſet out to the Iſles for Don Antonio.

At length, after ſome Months, *Don Antonio*'s earneſt Application for Aid was liſtened to, eſpecially a conſiderable Advantage being like to be obtained by a Fleet to be ſet out from *England* to the *Azores* Iſles belonging to the *Portugueze*: Upon the Proſpect of the Treaſure and Wealth that might be brought thence, after a ſucceſsful Fight with the Enemy there. The two great Seamen *Drake* and *Hawkins*, with divers Merchants and others, willing and deſirous to be at the Charge of the Expedition themſelves, the Queen alſo to bear ſome Charge, ſince *Don Antonio* had delivered her a very coſtly Jewel for that Purpoſe. Ten thouſand Pounds was computed might accompliſh the Charge. This looking ſo plauſibly; and our brave Sea-Commanders, and other *Engliſh* ſo forward, it was not ſlightly recommended to the Queen, and eſpouſed by

ANNO 1581.

her. And ſo it laid before her Council: Whether without breaking Terms with the King of *Spain*, and that according to the Law of Nations, ſhe might not aſſiſt another King, oppreſt by a Third. The Latter requiring ſo much Caution and Deliberation, the great Stateſman, the Lord Treaſurer, abſent now, as it ſeems, from Court, was required to give his Judgment in this weighty Queſtion, which he did at large under his own Hand.

The Action by Advice of the L. Treaſurer laid aſide.

Num. II.

But in ſhort, the Reſult of his Advice was, that however this Action was judged, not to violate the Peace of the King of *Spain*; yet he would ſo take it. And though a Commiſſion to Sir *Francis Drake*, and King *Antonio*'s War was juſt, in order to recover or to preſerve his Kingdom, he yet held: Yet the King of *Spain* would take the Action, as maintained by the Queen. And ſo as he found himſelf able would revenge himſelf upon her, and arreſt and take her People, Ships and Marriners, coming within his Power. And on this Occaſion might give new Supports to *Ireland*, and Relief to the King of *Scots* to be an ill Neighbour. And then he adviſed, if the Voyage proceeded not, then the ſaid King to have his Jewel again of the Queen: The Preparation that was made, to be viewed, and ſold and diſtributed. And the four Ships which the King had deſired, and the Munition, to be ſold to him by a Bond and the Pawn of another Jewel. This curious Paper, being of this wiſe Counſellor's Writing, I have tranſcribed, as containing many Remarks, and preſerved in the *Appendix*. But though this Expedition, as it ſeemed, failed at preſent, yet divers Years after, when open Wars brake out between the Queen and *Spain*; this Action was effectually entered into, and proſecuted ſucceſsfully to the infinite Dammage of *Spain*, as is related at large in our Hiſtory, made in the Year 1589. When the Queen by *Drake* invaded *Spain* and *Portugal*, King *Antonio* with ſome Forces aſſiſting.

A private Conference between the Queen and the French *Ambaſſador and Prin* Conde.

The Sum whereof the Queen imparts to her Treaſurer.

Civil Wars for divers Years had vexed the Kingdom of *France*; occaſioned by the implacable Malice of the Duke of *Guiſe*'s Faction, and the *Roman Catholicks* ſiding with them againſt the Proteſtants, called *Hugonots*. The chief Heads on this ſide were, the King of *Navarre*, and the Prince of *Conde*, his Brother, a firm Proteſtant, as well as a brave Soldier, and very active. Applications were ſometimes made to the Queen on this Account, being a Favourer of the oppreſſed, eſpecially for Religion. The foreſaid Prince was now come into *England*; both to vindicate their Cauſe, and (more privately) to endeavour to engage the Queen on their Side with Men and Money. But ſhe prudently forbore to do that, any further than to be a Mediator for Peace between them, and for the Liberty of Religon to be granted to the Proteſtants. Yet ſhe ſeemed to favour the Prince of *Conde* and his Cauſe. To whom ſhe now gave a private Audience together with the *French* Ambaſſador, at her Court of *Nonſuch*, and only one or two of her Privy Council preſent. An Account of the Conference ſhe imparted to her Treaſurer the ſame Night. And what the Particulars of it were we are enabled to diſcover from the ſecret Letter of the Lord Treaſurer to the Earl of *Suſſex*. Who thus related the Matter:

“That coming from his Houſe at *Theobald's* to the Court, at *Nonſuch*, and repairing to the Privy Chamber to have ſeen her Majeſty, he found the Door at the upper End of the Preſence Chamber ſhut. And then underſtood, that the *French* Ambaſſador had been a long Time with her and the Prince of *Conde*; and none other of the Council, but the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and Mr. Vicechamberlain; Secretary *Walſingham* being ſick then in his Chamber. But that about ſeven of the Clock that ſaid Ambaſſador being about to depart towards *London*, came to him [the Lord Treaſurer] and told him a great Part of their Proceedings. Being well pleaſed with her Majeſty for her temperate Dealings; and no wiſe contented with the Prince of *Conde*. In whom he found more Diſpoſition to move Troubles in *France*, than to enjoy Peace. And that the Ambaſſador added, how he verily thought, that thoſe Troubles in *France*, and the Prince's coming hither were provoked from hence. To which the Lord Treaſurer ſubjoins, That herein he himſelf knew nothing of Certainty, but ſhould be ſorry, it ſhould be ſo in Truth. Nevertheleſs that it augmented the Ambaſſador's Suſpicions upon the Sight he had of the great Favours ſhewed to that Prince by certain Counſellors here, [probably thoſe two preſent at the Conference as well as others.] Which he underſtood had been many Times, both on *Friday* and *Saturday* [that is the Days next before the Conference] with him at the Banqueting Houſe, where he was lodged.

And then the Treaſurer proceeded to ſhew the Earl, how the Queen, late that Evening, told him of the Dealing with the Ambaſſador and the Prince. “Wherein ſhe commended the Prince's Modeſty in declaring the Cauſe of his coming, to ſhew to her Majeſty the juſt Cauſes that had moved the King of *Navarre* to take Arms for his Defence againſt the Marſhals, *Montmorency* and *Biron*. Of whoſe Violences, as he ſuppoſed, without Warrant from the King, he ſhewed many particular Caſes. To which the Ambaſſador made Defence, by retorting to the King of *Navarre* the Occaſion of thoſe Marſhals Actions to have grown from the King of *Navarre* firſt. The Prince alſo declared the Cauſes of his coming from S. *John d' Angeli* to have been to ſerve the King in his Government of *Picardy*. Where he ſought to obtain the good Will and liking of the Towns in *Picardy*. Becauſe the King and his Mother alſo, had aſſented for their Parts, that he ſhould have the Government: Saying, that they found the States of the Country unwilling. Which was, as he underſtood, but a Suggeſtion by Means of the Houſe of *Guiſe*, to the End that *D'Aumale* might have the Government from him. And ſo he coming into *Picardy* found: As namely, the People of *Soyſſons*, the People glad of his Acceſs. And yet notwithſtanding his Adverſaries, on the Part of Duke *D'Aumale*, procured contrary Suggeſtions to be made to the King. And in the End, he found certain Numbers of Men of War amaſſed by the *Lige* of *Picardy* to have trapped the Prince. And thereof complaining and finding no Remedy, forced to flee towards *Almain*, leaving the Houſe of *La Fere*

ANNO 1581.

“guarded. And perceiving that the *French* King was induced by his Adverſaries to credit their falſe Complaints, he came hither to intreat her Majeſty, that the *French* King would ſuſpend his Judgment both againſt the King of *Navarre* and him; and accept them as his moſt dutiful Subjects, as they meant and intended ſincerely and plainly, without attempting any Force, otherwiſe than for their Defence againſt their Oppreſſors.

“And to this, as the Lord Treaſurer added, as he underſtood, the Ambaſſador uſed ſmall Defence; but excuſed the King as one that was very loth to come to Terms of War. But he argued, that his Maſter was ſo provoked, as he thonght it a very hard Matter to ſtay him from proceeding with ſuch Force as God had given him, to the expending of his Life and Crown.

“The Ambaſſador went to *London*, and the Prince to his Lodging, conducted by my Lord of *Leiceſter:* When *Wilks* the Clerk of the Council attended upon him. That by her Majeſty he perceived the juſt Cauſe of his coming was for Money in this Sort, that is, after this Rate the Charges to be born, *viz.* A Part by the King of *Navarre* and his Part: Another by *Caſſimére*] Brother to Prince *Palatine*] and certain Princes Proteſtant. And a Third was required from her Majeſty. What that may prove, I know not, as this wiſe and wary Stateſman concluded. I wiſh her Majeſty might ſpend ſome portion to ſollicite for them ſome Peace, for the Good of the Cauſe of Religion. But to enter into a War [with *France*] and therewith to break the Marriage [now in Hand and endeavoured with the Duke of *Anjou* the *French* King's Brother,] and ſo to be left alone, as ſubject, to the Burthen of ſuch a War, I think no good Counſellor can allow.

The Prince within a Day or two went thence to *Fluſhing*. From whence he went by Sea to *Colen*; and ſo to *Almain*.

Matters tranſacted between England *and* France.

But I have here ſomewhat of Importance further to add concerning *France* and *England*, tranſacted this Year by divers honourable Commiſſioners on both ſides, about a firm League between both Princes. And how Matters were concerted between them, in order to the ſtrengthening themſelves againſt the *Spaniard*, who threatned them both, having now ſeized the Kingdom of *Portugal*, and buſy in maſtering the *Netherlands*, a curious Paper of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*'s will give notable Information; and particularly concerning entering into a *Secret League* between them: Of which Affair I find not a Word in our Hiſtorian of Queen *Elizabeth*'s Reign. An exact Tranſcript whereof follows.

A Note of ſuch Things as were agreed on at the Conference: And other Things propounded, and not agreed, on Aug. 23, 1581. *between the Commiſſioners of the Queen of* England, *and the* French *King.*

Matters agreed upon.

I. THE Treaty made in *Charles* IX his Time ſhall be confirmed, with an Addition to be joined to the ſame, for the Redreſs of Pyracies. II. That the Treaty offenſive ſhall be only for Conſervation of State without naming any Perſon. III. That if the Invaders of any of the Confederates ſhall not after Admonition given, ſtay his Proceeding, and make Reſtitutions, then the Prince confederate ſhall denounce War unto him.

Things propounded, but not accorded.

Matters propounded in Caſe of Invaſion.

I. Whether after the Denomination of the War, the Princes Confederate are to aſſail the Prince invading with their Forces joyned, or apart. If the Forces joyned, what Number it is thought meet the ſaid Forces ſhould conſiſt of; of what Quality; Horſemen or Footmen; for how long Time to be continued; and how and by whom the Charge thereof ſhall be born. If with ſeparate Forces, then what Numbers ſhall be thought meet to be employed. Whereof how many by Sea, how many by Land; or whether all by Sea, or ll by Land: And for how long they ſhall be continued.

Whether thoſe Forces agreed on for the Defence may not be thought ſufficient for the Aſſiſtance of the Prince Confederate at the Charges of the Giver. And whether it may not be at the Choice of the Confederate that is aſſailed, to have the ſaid Number of Men or ſo much Money as may wage them.

A Note of ſuch Things as are to be reſolved by the Queen's Majeſty, touching the Secret League between the French *King and the Queen. At the ſame Time as the above League in* 1581. [This League was for aſſiſting the King's Brother going to the *Netherlands.*]

A ſecret League.

I. WHAT of Money her Majeſty will be content to contribute. In what Sort, openly or ſecretly. II. To what Sum we ſhall preſs the King to yield unto, in Proportion of that which her Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to ſupply: Whether double or treble, more than the ſaid Sum, which her Highneſs ſhall be content to contribute. III. How long her Majeſty will be pleaſed to contribute the ſaid Sum; and upon what Conſiderations; whether by way of Loan, or otherwiſe. And if by way of Loan, what Caution ſhe will require. And whether it were not meet to covenant with him to procure the Bonds of the States, *ad majorem cautelam*, within ſome convenient Time, for the Repayment of the ſame. IV. Whether her Majeſty could not beſt like, that this Secret Treaty between the King and her, paſs only by mutual Promiſe, to be contained in private Letters under their own Hand.

On the Margin of this Paper the Lord Treaſurer being required, I ſuppoſe, by the Queen, ſet Anſwers in his own Hand. And in another Paper likewiſe under his own Hand, they are thus anſwered, as Inſtructions to her Commiſſioners Inquiries, as above.

Anſwer to the three firſt Articles.

Her Majeſty for Anſwer hereunto ſaith, That ſhe cannot reſolve upon any Particularities concerning the ſaid firſt three Articles following, until it may be underſtood, upon what Points this ſecret League, is to be made. Nor until ſhe ſhall be informed, according to my [the Lord Treaſurer's] late Writing to you [the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners

ANNO 1581.

The Lord Treaſurer's Judgment thereof:

ſioners then in *France*] what may be thought will be the monthly Charges of *Monſieur*'s Actions, [in the *Low Countries*.] And how the ſame may be born by Contribution of the States of the *Low Countries*, according to their Compacts with *Monſieur*. And thereupon alſo what ſhall be further thought neceſſary for a Supply of the ſaid Charges: And how the ſame may be anſwered by *Monſieur* his own Expences. And how much his Brother, the *French* King will yield unto. To whom for the Honour of the Crown of *France* this Cauſe doth principally belong. And when her Majeſty ſhall underſtand from the ſame probable Eſtimation hereof, ſhe may then, having your Advice alſo, reſolve of ſuch Portion, as ſhall be meet for her to yield.

Anſwer to the Fourth.

Her Majeſty liketh beſt to have this Treaty ſecretly handled for ſundry Reſpects, which will hardly be kept ſecret, if all the *French* Commiſſioners, that now treat with you, ſhall treat alſo of this ſecret League.

CHAP. II.

Epiſcopal Viſitations; of London *and* S. Edmond'*s* Bury. *Diſorders there by the Preaching of* Handſon *and* Brown. *The Biſhop of* Norwich'*s Complaint of them to the Lord Treaſurer. Some Juſtices of the Peace favour theſe Preachers.* Philips, *and* Day, *the Biſhop's Commiſſary, uſed hardly by them.* Day'*s Letter to the Biſhop.* Gaiton, *a Puritan Preacher: Articles drawn up againſt theſe Juſtices. Their Anſwers. Some Accounts of* Handſon *and* Browne. Crompton, *a Juſtice, commits a Miniſter going to read Service. The Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield *takes his Part.*

Epiſcopal Viſitation at London.

Mr. Earl. Cott. Librar.

BUT now we come to Matters at home. *Aylmer*, Biſhop of *London*, held a Viſitation this Year of the Clergy of *London*, at the Convocation Houſe. Where he adminiſtred Articles to them: And made certain Enquiries. His Articles were, (as I take them from the *Diary* of one of the Clergy then preſent) I. Streitly to keep the Book of Common Prayer and Sacraments. II. Not to uſe Invectives in their Sermons. Forbid by the Statute eſtabliſhed. III. None to be ſo hardy as to refuſe wearing the Surplice in their Miniſtration. IV. None to add, alter or diminiſh any thing

ANNO 1581.

thing in Divine Service. Then for the *Enquiries*. I. If any that had Cure of Souls did not alſo adminiſter the Sacraments. II. If any did not obſerve the Ceremonies to be uſed at Baptiſm and Marriage. III. If the Youth were Catechized. IV. What Miniſters, who utterly refuſed to read the *Homilies*. V. What uncharitable Preachers, that called others that preached not, by ill Names, as *Dumb Dog*, *&c.* Some further Account is given of this Viſitation in the Life of Biſhop *Aylmer*.

Pr. 1701. *p.* 81.

Epiſcopal Viſitation of S. Edmond*'s* Bury.

This Year alſo *Freke*, Biſhop of *Norwich*, Viſited the Town of *S. Edmond*'s *Bury*; occaſioned by the Diſorders there (of which the Queen's Commiſſioners for Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical at *London* had informed him) againſt the due Worſhip and Service of God preſcribed and uſed in the Common Prayer. Many of the People at and about *Bury* were carried away into a Diſlike thereof by two Miniſters there, *viz. Handſon* and *Browne*. And of this, and of the Effect of this Viſitation, the Biſhop gave this Account to the Lord Treaſurer in his Letter written from his Houſe at *Ludham*, *Apr.* 19.

The Biſhop of Norwich *his Account thereof.*

“ That being informed of many great Diſorders in that Town and Country thereabouts, as well in the Clergy as the Laity: Whereof, beſide the general Complaint, the high Commiſſioners at *London* underſtanding of the ſame Diſorders, had advertiſed him thereof in Letters: Requiring him to take Order therein. And that thereupon he did in Perſon, with other of his Aſſociates in Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical for thoſe Parts, viſit the ſaid Town. In the which were found great Defect among the People. Some whereof were deſirous in dutiful Affection to have her Majeſty's Proceedings obſerved: Others on the contrary, being given to fantaſtical Innovations. There were moreover divers Matters of Importance exhibited and proved againſt Mr. *Handſon:* Who was, as he added, in very deed, the only Man that blew the Coals, whereof this Fire was kindled. That it was therefore thought meet for the better Quiet of that Place, that he ſhould be ſuſpended from Preaching, unleſs he could be contented to enter into Bond to her Majeſty, as hereafter to teach and preach the Word ſincerely and purely, without impugning or inveighing againſt the Communion Book, the Order of Government, and the Laws of this Realm now eſtabliſhed. Which after he refuſing, he was thereupon, and remained, inhibited to preach,

Articles againſt Handſon.

Adding, “ That hereof he thought fit to inform his Lordſhip, and alſo the reſt of the Lords of the Council; if ſo it ſhould like their Lordſhips. And that herein the Bearer was to attend, and follow their Lordſhip's Directions. And that he had, for his and their Lordſhips better Inſtructions, ſent therewith a Copy of the Articles, and Proofs thereof, preferred againſt Mr. *Handſon:* Reſerving his [the Biſhops] proceeding therein taken, to their Lordſhips Judgment and Conſideration.

And Browne.

Herewith he alſo ſent unto his Lordſhip other Articles miniſtred againſt one *Robert Browne*, a Miniſter (from whom the Sect of the *Browniſts*) and his perſonal Anſwers thereunto. That the ſaid Party had been lately apprehended in that Country upon Complaint made

by

ANNO 1581.

by many godly Preachers, for delivering unto the People corrupt and contentious Doctrine: Which the Biſhop ſent up under divers Articles to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer. Of whom he gave this further Character; “That his arrogant Spirit of reproving was ſuch as it “ was to be marvailed at: The Man being alſo to be feared, leſt if “ he were at Liberty, he ſhould ſeduce the vulgar Sort of the People, “ who greatly depended on him: Aſſembling themſelves together “ to the Number of an hundred at a Time in private Houſes and “ Conventicles, to hear him, not without Danger of ſome evil Event. “ At laſt he was diſmiſs'd and ſent out of the Dioceſs: But returned “ again.

His Character.

The Biſhop's Complaint of Browne*'s coming into his Dioceſs.*

And ſuch was the buſy Zeal of this *Browne*, and being alſo backed with ſome Gentlemen in thoſe Parts, that the Biſhop's Viſitation had done but little good; and the Diſorders continued there: Notwithſtanding at the Aſſizes the Judges, *viz.* the Lord Chief Juſtice and Juſtice *Anderſon*, ſhewed the Statutes for the Breach of theſe Orders of the Church, and threatned the Puniſhment due to the Breach of them. The Biſhop could make but his Complaint to the Court: Which he did by another Letter, writ in *Auguſt* following to the ſame Stateſman; eſpecially informing him, how theſe Diſorders were bolſtered by certain Gentlemen from about *Bury:* Shewing, “That “ Mr. *Browne*'s late coming into his Dioceſs, and teaching ſtrange and “ dangerous Doctrine in all diſordered Manner, had greatly troubled the whole Country, and brought many to great Diſobedience of all Law and Magiſtrates. That yet by the good Aid and “ Help of the Lord Chief Juſtice and Maſter Juſtice *Anderſon* his “ Aſſociate, the chiefeſt of ſuch Factions were ſo bridled, and the “ reſt of their Followers ſo greatly diſmayed, as he verily hoped of “ much Good and Quietneſs to have thereof enſued, had not the “ ſaid *Browne* returned again, contrary to his Expectation, and “ greatly prejudiced thoſe their good Proceedings: And having private Meetings in ſuch cloſe and ſecret Manner, that he knew not “ poſſibly how to ſuppreſs the ſame.

He went on, adding, “How ſorry he was to foreſee, that “ touching this his Dioceſs what muſt needs in ſhort Time by “ him [*Browne*] and other diſorderly Perſons, which only ſought “ the Diſturbance of the Church, be brought to paſs. And that “ therefore the careful Duty which he ought to have to the Country being his Charge, enforced him moſt earneſtly to crave his “ Lordſhip's Help in ſuppreſſing him eſpecially: That further Inconvenience might follow by this his Return: And in procuring, for “ the Lord Chief Juſtice and Mr. *Anderſon*, ſuch Thanks from her “ Majeſty for their painful Travail in that Behalf, that thereby “ they might be encouraged to go ſtill forward in the ſame “ Courſe.

And then the Biſhop came to the Mention of the Gentlemen in thoſe Parts that favoured theſe Diſturbers of the Peace of the Church: And prayed the Lord Treaſurer's Advice and Aſſiſtance concerning them, in theſe Lines following: “And herewithal, if it would “ pleaſe your Lordſhip to give me your good Advice, how to prevent ſuch Dangers, as through the ſtrange Dealings of ſome of the Gentlemen in *Suffolk* about *Bury* is like to enſue, I ſhould be much bound to your Honour for the ſame. Which Gentlemen winking at, (if not of Policy procuring) the diſordered Sort to go forward in their evil Attempts, and diſcouraging the ſtaid and wiſer Sort of Preachers, (as by ſundry Letters which I ſend your Lordſhip by this Bringer may appear more plainly unto your Honour) will in Time, I fear me, hazard the Overthrow of all Religion, if it be not in due Time wiſely prevented. And ſo leaving the reſt to the further Declaration of the Bringer, he humbly betook his good Lordſhip to the Protection of Almighty God." Dated from *Ludham, Aug.* 2. 1581.

And to explain this latter Part of the Biſhop's Letters, I proceed to ſhew what Uſage two Perſons received, partly for preaching Quietneſs and Submiſſion to Government with reſpect to theſe ſeditious Practices; and partly for informing againſt the Inſtruments and Promoters thereof.

Some Gentlemen favour the Factious, and threaten others.

For there was then a Miniſter at *Bury*, that had preached the Doctrine of Submiſſion and Obedience; and reflected upon thoſe Preachers that made theſe Diſturbances among the People: And other Eccleſiaſtical Officers did their Duty in ordering Preſentments to be made of diſordered Perſons. But divers Gentlemen, and they Juſtices of the Peace, had checked them for thus doing, and threatned them. Two Letters were ſent to the Biſhop from ſuch as were thus uſed.

As Philips's *preaching Obedience to the Laws,*

The one was from *Oliver Philips*; ſhewing him, how he was reviled by the Juſtices of *Bury*, for preaching Obedience to the Queen's Laws. Whoſe Letter ran in this Tenor: "That he had been requeſted by his Brother and others to preach the *Sunday* before at *Bury*. And that only for preaching Obedience to the Queen's Laws, and ſpeaking ſomewhat ſharply of thoſe that were contemptuous and diſobedient to the ſame, he had been called before the Juſtices of the Peace; and uſed with very evil Manner of Speeches and Threatnings, being termed a ſeditious Perſon; One that moved the People to Sedition; a *Jeſuit* and roguing Miniſter; ſuch an one as preached out of his own Cure. And that he was threatned to be bound to his *Good Behaviour*. But that in the End they had bound him over to anſwer it at the next Aſſizes to be holden among them." And then the Miniſter ſubjoins to this Complaint of his to his Dioceſan, "Theſe, methinks, be hard Dealings towards the Miniſters in your Lordſhip's Dioceſs. And except your Lordſhip do ſpeedily provide ſome Remedy againſt theſe Evils, there will be no quiet Dwelling in your Lordſhip's Dioceſs, for any Miniſter which means to conform himſelf. Adding, that in theſe Things which he had written unto his Lordſhip, in every Point, he would juſtify and approve them before his Lordſhip; or elſe let him have the greateſt Puniſhment his Lordſhip could deviſe for him. Concluding, thus taking my Leave of your Lordſhip, I beſeech God long to preſerve you in Health and Proſperity among us.

Your Lordſhip's moſt humbly at Command,
Oly. Philips.

This

ANNO 1581.

And Day, *for ſwearing Queſtmen.*

This for *Philips*. The other was *Day*, who was an Eccleſiaſtical Officer of the ſaid Biſhop of *Norwich*, reſiding at *Bury*. He writ another Letter of Complaint to him, of the Juſtices Uſage of him for ſwearing Queſtmen to bring in their Preſentments againſt ſuch as came not to Church. And his Caſe he alſo thus laid open at large.

His Letter to he Biſhop.

“ That Sir *Robert Jermin*, Sir *John Higham*, and Mr. *Badbie*
“ had dealt very unjuſtly and revengingly with him: And did
“ mind very imperiouſly to proceed. The Cauſe was, that he did
“ the *Friday* before call certain honeſt Men of both the Pariſhes of
“ *Bury*; purpoſing to make them *Queſtmen*. For that one there,
“ named Mr. *Gaiton* [who ſeems to be a Miniſter of the Pariſh]
“ had ſo continually cryed out againſt him, for puniſhing ſuch as
“ came not to Church. And as for Queſtmen who ſhould pre-
“ ſent them unto him, he could hear of none. That the foreſaid
“ Juſtices did preſently then ſend for him. And for that he had
“ ſo done, and had alſo ſworn ſix of them, not making the Juſtices
“ firſt privy unto it; they called him *Jack* and *Knave*, he knew
“ not how often. And for that ſo like a *Jack* and *Knave* he had
“ done knaviſhly and lewdly, as they ſaid he ſhould to the Jayl.
“ There was no Remedy; unleſs he did put in Sureties for his
“ forthcoming at the next Seſſions holden at *Bury:* And in the
“ mean Time to be of good Behaviour. And ſo Mr. Dr. *Wood*,
“ Mr. *Rob. Golding* were bound for him. And ſo they re-
“ mained.

And then he proceeded thus, ſhewing further the ill State of theſe Affairs. “ Of Truth I confeſs, I dare ſcarcely do any
“ Thing touching my Office for fear of Violence; I do ſee the
“ lewd Sort ſo animated againſt me. And then he prayed his
“ Lordſhip would confer with one Mr. *Davie*, or ſome other, what
“ he were beſt to do. I thank my God, (as he went on) I care not,
“ what Man can do unto me. My only Deſire is, to continue my
“ good Name and Credit with the honeſt in the beſt Manner
“ that I may.

Then he ſhewed the Biſhop, what his Purpoſe was in theſe his Circumſtances. “ That in the Beginning of next Term, or
“ ſooner, if it ſhould be thought beſt, to kneel before her Majeſty:
“ And to lay open, how they had dealt with him from Time to
“ Time; and for what Cauſe. Humbly to crave, that by her
“ Means, he might have the Countenance of an honeſt Man, ſo
“ long as it ſhould appear, that he was not diſhoneſt. And then
“ he requeſted that it might pleaſe his good Lordſhip to let him
“ have his Letters, directed unto her Majeſty in that Behalf for him:
“ Teſtifying therein, what he [the Biſhop] found to be in him,
“ and of all their Troubles, and the Juſtices their continual abu-
“ ſing of him; [that is, in the Diſcharge of his Office in the Eccle-
“ ſiaſtical Court.] And that he doubted not, but that as it would
“ make for his Credit, ſo it would work for his [the Biſhop's] great
“ Quiet alſo.

ANNO
1581.

And how earneſt he is in this Requeſt, his following Words declare, “ My good Lord, I do moſt humbly deſire that it may ſo “ be; and that you will ſo tender my Credit, and ſtand with me, “ as my honeſt Life and faithful Dealing, ſhall or may ſeem to “ urge. Otherwiſe I do not crave.

Nay, and this was not all the Trouble he met, namely, from the Juſtices; but he was baited from the Pulpit, when he was preſent by *Gaiton* a *Puritan* Preacher, which he thus relates in the ſame Letter. “ Mr. *Gaiton* forgetteth himſelf daily more and more in “ the Pulpit, both in abuſing me, and alſo divers others: And that “ with Untruths. He was not aſhamed to ſay in Pulpit in my “ Preſence: That I, who would puniſh ſuch as were abſent from “ Church, did dine with one whom I had licenſed to be away in “ the Afternoon. He ſaid alſo, that we urged Orders ſo long as “ Orders maintained Superſtition. But all other Orders were no “ Orders. He concluded by the Firſt of the *Acts* of the Apoſtles, “ That no one Man might appoint Miniſters but the Diſciples in “ every Pariſh, and none other. He would needs urge alſo, that “ none might be ſuffered in the Church, but Preachers only; neither ought any in Government of the Church to be urged other “ than God in his Word commandeth.

And then the Writer concluded, “ That to be brief, no Miniſter as yet they had in S. *Mary*'s Church, [one of the Pariſh “ Churches; by Reaſon, as it ſeems, of the Differences in the “ Town,] Neither did he know what to do, that they might “ have one. That, for himſelf, he muſt ſeek his Quiet, as he “ might: And he did not doubt, but by his [the Biſhop's] Help to “ obtain it. That Mr. *Badbie* [one of theſe Favourers of the “ Party] had called him *Toſs-pot*, and otherwiſe greatly reviled “ him. Oh! that your Lordſhip would but ſend for him, and “ bind him over to his good Behaviour. And that he ſhould greatly hereby encourage him to go forward. At the leaſt, he added, “ he would make Friends to be in Commiſſion of the Peace. Otherwiſe he feared there would be no Dwelling there for him. “ He left all to his Lordſhip's good Care of him. And then piouſly “ ends with his Prayer, God work for me his Will. Subſcribing, “ *Your Lordſhip's moſt faithful in God,*

John Deye.

“ *Poſtcript.* The Juſtices do threaten to do many Things.

This Dr. *Deye* was Commiſſary to the Biſhop of *Norwich*, or to the Archdeacon of *Sudbury*.

Gaiton, *a Preacher in* Norwich, *ſuſpended by the Biſhop.* Part of a Regiſt. p. 393.

This *Gaiton*, of whom all this Complaint was made, was a Preacher in *Norwich* ſome Years before. And ſuſpended by the Biſhop about the Year 1576, after an Examination of him before the Biſhop and Dean: For that in his Pulpit he had taken upon him to confute his Chaplain's Sermon, and admoniſhed the Pariſhioners to beware of ſuch falſe Doctrine. This gave the Occaſion of his being cited, and charged in ſeveral Articles: As for his not wearing the Surplice, nor obſerving the Order of the Queen's Book, neither in the Prayers

ANNO 1581.

nor Adminiſtration of the Sacraments, which was the Cauſe of his Suſpenſion: But how he came afterwards to get off his Suſpenſion, and to preach at *Bury*, I know not. But I am apt to think he did it by the Slackneſs of Diſcipline, and out of the Countenance he met with there, notwithſtanding his former Suſpenſion: Since it appears that his Opinions and Practice were the ſame. This Matter between him and the Biſhop's Court, and Proceeding may be read more at large in the ſecond Volume of my *Annals*.

Annals, Vol. II Book II. Ch. 4.

The Biſhop prefers Articles againſt the Juſtices.

But to ſee a little farther what Iſſue this Matter had. The good Biſhop found himſelf not ſtrong enough to encounter theſe Gentlemen and Juſtices; who carried all before them in their countenancing of theſe diſſaffected Perſons to the Orders and Diſcipline of the Church. And therefore he apply'd himſelf again to the Lord Treaſurer: Sending the very Letters aforeſaid of *Philips* and *Day* to him to peruſe, with his own Letter. Wherein he ſhewed, how far he had proceeded with theſe Juſtices in Articles drawn up againſt them, to the Number of twelve, which he ſent to the ſaid Treaſurer. The Chief whereof were concerning their rigorous Dealing with the Commiſſary, Dr. *Day* and *Philips* the Preacher: And binding ſome others to their good Behaviour, that ſtood for the due Obſervation of Orders, as appointed in the Church. The Juſtices Anſwers to thoſe Articles ſent to the Lord Treaſurer in their own Vindication, being ſomewhat long, may be found in the *Appendix*. Being intituled, “The Anſwer of Sir *Robert Jermin*, Sir *John Higham*, Knights, *Robert Aſhfield*, and *Thomas Badby*, Eſqrs, Gentlemen of *Suffolk* and *Norfolk*, to certain Articles objected againſt them by the Biſhop of *Norwich*.

Num. III.

The Sum of the Articles.

In theſe Articles they were charged to countenance diſobedient and diſorderly Men. Particularly, that they favoured *Coppin* and *Tyler*, who ſome Years ago were impriſoned, for ſpreading of *Browne*'s Books, which condemned the Book of Common Prayer, and the whole Conſtitution of the Church: And that for obtaining the Freedom of theſe Spreaders of thoſe Books, the ſaid Juſtices had uſed their Endeavours with the Judges: That they refuſed divers Miniſters, ordained by the Biſhop, becauſe they were ignorant, and could only read. That they were for nothing but *Geneva* Pſalms and Sermons. That they endeavoured to remove one *Wood* a Miniſter from his Living, becauſe he only read; and gave him Warning to be gone: And put the Pariſh upon chuſing another; though the Collation was in the Biſhop. That at an Inn, called, the *Angel*, they meddled in Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes, that belonged to the Biſhop. That they joined their Authority together againſt the *Commiſſary*, and threatned to ſend him to the Jayl. That Violence and violent Speeches were uſed towards him; and their Part Sir *Robert Jermin* took: And deny'd him Juſtice: And deny'd him to have any Authority, as a Magiſtrate: And further, that they bound him, a Biſhop's Commiſſary, to his *Good Behaviour*. That Mr. *Philips*, for a Sermon preached at *Bury* exciting to Obedience to the Queen and her Laws, was required and bound to an Appearance before them.

The Juſtices make their Anſwers to them.

Upon theſe Articles preferred againſt them, and an Appeal the Biſhop had made to the Queen againſt them, they were cited up to anſwer

ANNO 1581.

ſwer before her: Where after their ſaid Anſwers given in (ſmartly, and rudely in ſome Places retorting upon the Biſhop) they required the Lord Treaſurer that they might be diſmiſs'd by the Queen to their own Country: And that he would be their Petitioner to her for that Purpoſe in theſe Words: "That now they had been called out of their own Country, and every Street ſounded their Diſgrace, wrought by the Biſhop, that either they might deſerve the juſt Deſerts of their Doings by due Puniſhment; or being cleared both in her Majeſty's Royal Judgment, or his Lordſhip's Opinion, the Biſhop for his bold and untrue Suggeſtions, might be ſo cenſured, as they might, with the Reſtitution of their poor Reputations, be attended with ſome good Comfort upon their Places. In which they deſired no longer to live, than they ſhould be found very loyal and dutiful to their ſo gracious Sovereign.

Sir Robert Jermin's *Account of* Handſon;

I have this to add concerning the aforeſaid Preachers *Handſon* and *Browne*; the Former yet remaining under Suſpenſion. The Lord Treaſurer had examined his Caſe himſelf, and had wrote a Letter to the Biſhop, that upon due Reformation of what was done amiſs by him, he might be reſtored to his Preaching. And Sir *Robert Jermin* on this Opportunity, with the Lord *North* and ſome others, wrote to the Biſhop on his Behalf to this Purpoſe: "That ſince his Lordſhip had examined *Handſon*'s Caſe at Length, even as it was ſet down at the hardeſt againſt him, and in his [Sir *Robert*'s] Opinion very indiſcreetly, as he ſaid, in many the moſt principal Parts thereof; and that they knew his Miniſtry to have been very profitable to a great Number; that they who ſought to remove him were rather Adverſaries than Friends to the Truth: That for Matter of Faith and Manners, he was ever held a ſound Teacher: And that in theſe indifferent Things he had never laboured much: That therefore in Conſideration of theſe Things, he [the Biſhop] would give him Liberty to exerciſe his Miniſtry. To which the Biſhop's reſolute Anſwer was, That unleſs he would publickly confeſs his Fault, and to be bound to follow another Courſe, he would not ſet him free.

And upon this Denial of the Biſhop, Sir *Robert* and others apply earneſtly to the Lord Treaſurer again, that notwithſtanding the Biſhop's Refuſal, he would grant him the Freedom to teach the People, and take off his Suſpenſion. But this I conclude that Lord would not do, nor would arbitrarily intrude ſo far into the Biſhop's Right. Nor did he ever go farther than perſuaſive Letters to the Biſhop ſometime in behalf of ſuch Miniſters, who notwithſtanding ſome Scruples, brake not off Communion with the Church.

And Browne *to the Lord Treaſurer.*

And then as for *Browne*, this favourable Account the ſaid Sir *Robert* gave to the Treaſurer of him; and how he dealt with him now upon his ſecond coming. That Mr. *Browne* came by chance to *Bury*: That he, [Sir *Robert*] ſent for him, and moved him to be careful of his Proceedings. He told him, how dangerous his Courſe ſeemed in the Opinion of many honeſt and godly Men: And how apt the Adverſaries of the Truth would be, to ſlander and diſcredit the Profeſſion and Profeſſors of the Truth, if theſe his ſingular Conceits might not be warranted by the Word and Chriſtian Policy. "To “which *Browne*'s Anſwer, as Sir *Robert* added, had many Things that were godly and reaſonable, and as he thought to be wiſhed and prayed for. But with the ſame there were other Things (in this his Anſwer) ſtrange and unheard: And the Means to put the ſame in Execution, as they reached beyond both their Callings, being private; ſo he [Sir *Robert*] thought them over dangerous to be retained in Opinion.” [He meant, in reference to the Opinion about ſetting up a new Diſcipline, and overthrowing the preſent eſtabliſhed Church Government by *Epiſcopacy*.] “And then moving the ſaid Lord Treaſurer to adviſe *Browne* to a more careful Regard of himſelf in ſo deep and dangerous a Matter; the Man being young both in Years and Experience: And to threaten him, that he ſhould be very ſharply cenſured to the Example of others. And he preſumed his Lordſhip ſhould do a good and honourable Deed in ſtaying him from going too far; and making him of a Man very able, ſo very fit to yield the Church his profitable Service.

Errors maintained at Bury.

But theſe Courſes went on at *Bury* for ſome Years, the Miniſters varying from, or altering the Common Prayer at their Diſcretion, diſliking the Order of it, and depraving the Book: Aſſerting the Queen's Supremacy to be only in Civil Matters, not religious: And ſome alſo holding certain Hereſies, as that Chriſt was not God, *&c.* And many young Miniſters of this Sort encreaſing in thoſe Parts. And all this in great Meaſure by the Favour of ſome of the Juſtices. Till in the Year 1583, they received a Check by ſome ſevere Proceedings at the Aſſizes at *Bury*, Sir *Chriſtopher Wray*, Lord Chief Juſtice, being upon the Bench: When many were convicted, and ſome obſtinately perſiſting put to Death: And the Juſtices reprimanded; and warned to keep the Peace: As ſhall be ſhewn at large, when we come ſo far. The Biſhop quite weary of living there, got a Remove a Year or two after to another Biſhoprick.

The Judge's ſharp Reproof.

I meet this Year with an Inſtance of the Paſtoral Care of another Biſhop, in taking Cognizance of ſome Heterodox Opinions in one of his Dioceſs; and his Proceedings againſt him. *John*, Biſhop of *Exon*, had received Information againſt one *Anthony Randal*, Parſon of *Lydford*, of the *Family of Love*; a Sect that ſpread about theſe Times in that Dioceſe, as well as in other Parts. Whom, for his damnable Doctrines and Hereſies, the Biſhop had deprived. This Man taught and aſſerted, that the Creation of the World, and the three firſt Chapters of *Geneſis* were to be underſtood *Allegorically*, and were not ſo true *literally*. That as many as received *Jeſus Chriſt*, did perform all the Moral Law, and lived without Sin. That the Lord's Supper and Baptiſm were not Sacraments. That the Church of *England* is a falſe Church, and ſo is the *Roman*. And that there is a Third Church which ſhall ſtand, when the other ſhall fall. And either Church, being authorized by the Prince muſt be obeyed. Theſe Opinions under divers Articles ſubſcribed by his own Hand, are ſet down at large in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*; to which I refer the Reader.

One Randal *of the* Family of Love, *deprived by the Biſhop of* Exeter.

Append. Book III. Num. III.

Complaints againſt the Biſhop in the Court of Arches.

But *Randal*, however by the Biſhop for theſe groſs Tenets deprived, reſted not ſo; but had the Hardineſs to complain Above againſt him, as ſuffering Wrong at his Hand: Having firſt appealed to the *Arches*, and thence to the Queen's *Delegates*. Whence notwithſtanding the Biſhop had his Proceedings approved and ratified. But this Sectary deſiſted not, but clamoured about the Biſhop unto the Council; and ſtood ſtill in his Opinions, and obſtinately maintained them at that preſent, owning them under his Hand, and that in the Preſence of divers publick Notaries. The Original whereof remained in the Biſhop's Regiſtry, as a perpetual Teſtimony againſt him. A Copy whereof the Biſhop thought fit to ſend to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; accompanied with a Letter from the ſaid Biſhop to him. And that becauſe, as he wrote, *Randal* had many Complices; and that hurtful Sect of the *Family of Love* began to creep into that Country. Of which therefore he had brought Twenty to open Recantation in his Cathedral Church. “ And in “ Conſideration of the Premiſſes he beſeeched his Lordſhip, that “ his Sentence given againſt the ſaid *Randal*, and ratified as aforeſaid, might have good Countenance and Liking at his Hands. “ And that he requeſted it, not ſo much for his own Credit, as for “ the Peace and Quiet of God's Church. Which by Means of “ *Randal* and his Adherents, was very much diſturbed. ” This Letter was Dated from *Exceſtre*; and I have exemplified it from the Original. Num. IV.

The Biſhop's Letter to the Lord Treaſurer concerning him.

A Caſe between the Biſhop of Coventry *and* Litchfield, *and a Juſtice of Peace.*

Something happened this Year in the Dioceſs of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, wherein another Biſhop alſo was concerned, named *Overton*, Biſhop there. Wherein he ſhewed both his Courage, and his paternal Care of his Clergy. Wherein alſo may be obſerved, how in theſe Times ſome Parts of that Dioceſs ſtood affected towards Religion, and how forward to receive the old abandoned Religion of *Rome:* Which ſeemed now to many to be upon the Point of being reſtored, upon the *French* King's Brother's Courtſhip of the Queen. The Caſe was this; a Juſtice of Peace there (whoſe Name was *Crompton*,) on Pretence of his Office to inſpect the Behaviour of the Clergy, and to puniſh them, if they any Way varied from the Orders of the Church, or neglected their Conformity to the Forms preſcribed; cauſed a Miniſter in his own Church, going to perform his Office, to be carried away by a Conſtable to Gaol; and left the Congregation without any Service. This diſorderly Proceeding with a Miniſter in his own Church coming to the Biſhop's Ears, he thought fit to call the Juſtice before him, by his ordinary Juriſdiction, and to examine what he had done; and to vindicate his Clergyman; who was indeed a Man of good Deſert. And of this he thought good, in a Letter to the Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer, to make Complaint; and to acquaint him with the whole State of the Matter: And withal hinting, how unfit ſome in Commiſſion were of that Place and Truſt. The Letter ſhall follow, which will give Light into ſome publick Affairs in thoſe Times: Namely, “ How ready the People there, were to take “ great Boldneſs upon ſmall Occaſions, (as he had wrote to him in “ a former Letter) and how apt they were to ſtir at firſt, if they “ were

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer concerning this Matter.

ANNO 1581.

“were not ſuppreſſed betimes. That he ſignified to his Lordſhip by the ſame Letters, that there were not wanting among them ſome of the better Sort, and of the Juſtices themſelves, that fed the People's Humours, and gave Spirit and Courage unto them in their Folly. And becauſe as then he writ but darkly unto him, (for that he had but as Inkling of Matters) he promiſed, that as he ſhould afterwards further ſift out the Truth, ſo he would let him underſtand more of it in Time. It was ſo now, that upon better Examination, he had learned both certainly: Both the Matter how it ſtood, and the Occaſion whereof it grew. That there was a great Muttering among the People of late, and in one of the moſt dangerous Parts of all that Shire, [*Staffordſhire*] namely, in the *Morelands*; that the Maſs in all haſt ſhould be ſet up again.

Report in his Dioceſs of ſetting up the Maſs.

And upon this Report the Biſhop adds, “That when he heard of it, he ſuppoſed it had been but the murmuring Humour of the *Papiſts*; becauſe it was commonly ſurmiſed by them, that upon the Coming in of the Duke [*D'Anjou*] Religion would ſtraight have a Change. But as this peradventure might be ſome Cauſe of that ſudden Muttering and Surmiſe, tho' it was not all, nor the Chief; ſo it was rather occaſioned meerly by the raſh and prepoſterous (I cannot ſay, added the Biſhop, whether I may ſay ill Meaning) Behaviour of one of their Juſtices. The Matter was this. One *Richard Crompton*, a Lawyer, and a Juſtice of the Peace of that Shire, about the very Time, that the Aſſurance between the Queen's Majeſty and *Monſieur*, began to be talked of among the People; came into his Pariſh Church at the Time of Divine Service, with an *Araunge* [ſome Weapon, it ſeems] on his Side, and a great Baſtingdow in his Hand; and going up to the Church, without Stay or Reverence uſed in the Place, called the Miniſter unto him, as he was beginning to ſay Service, and ſaid unto him, Sir *Hu*, come hither, I muſt firſt talk with you, e're you begin. And ſo being come unto him, he carried the Miniſter down the Body of the Church towards the Church Porch. And when he was there, he asked, Whether there were any Conſtable there, or no? And when the Clerk anſwered, there was none, he bid him go fetch one, for he muſt ſend the Miniſter to Goal. Whereupon it flew abroad ſtraitway, and grew to this Speech, that the Maſs ſhould be ſet up, and eſtabliſhed again. For one of the Queen's own Juſtices had been himſelf in the Church, and drove out the Miniſter, that he ſhould ſay no more this New Service, and had ſent him already to the Goal, for ſaying it.

“Speeches thus paſſing, the Miniſter made Complaint unto him [the Biſhop] both of the Juſtice his ill Behaviour, and of the People's readineſs to look for a Change. That upon the Complaint made, he ſent for the Juſtice by his ordinary Juriſdiction, and miniſtred Articles unto him, to be examined of, according to the Evidence that was given in againſt him. That the Juſtice, as he denied not ſome Diſturbance to be made by him, ſo he would confeſs no Fault; but coloured his Doings with Pretence of Law

“ and

ANNO
1581.

“ Shew of Juſtice: Namely, that the Miniſter refuſed to wear the “ Surplice, and that he would not keep the accuſtomed Place of “ Prayer, where Service was wont to be ſaid; but ſtood lower to “ the People; and turned not his Face upward toward the *Eaſt*, “ but downward to the *Weſt*; and that he left out ſome Piece of “ the Service, and uſed not the Order of Common Prayer according “ to the Book, as it is ſet out, and eſtabliſhed by Act of Parliament. And therefore he thought good to forbid him the Service “ altogether, and ſent him to the Goal.

Concerning which Accuſation of the Juſtice againſt the Miniſter, thus the Biſhop ſubjoined, “ That theſe and ſuch other like were “ his Excuſes for the Fact: But that all, upon due Proof, were found “ to be either fond or trifling, and very falſe and untrue. And “ therefore, he, (the Biſhop) told him, that he would ſignify unto “ his Lordſhip [the Lord Treaſurer] his raſh and undiſcreet Dealings “ herein: As now he had done.

Complaint of unqualified Juſtices.

And then applied himſelf unto his Lordſhip after this Manner. “ And ſurely, my Honourable good Lord, if ſuch light-headed Ju- “ ſtices, or otherwiſe hollow-hearted, ſhall be ſuffered ſtill in their “ Office, and have Authority, as they have had, it will not only “ be long e're the People be reclaimed, but alſo it will give Occaſion “ hereafter of more Heartning.

The Biſhop's good Character of the Miniſter, injured by the Juſtice.

And concerning this Miniſter that was ſo uſed by the Juſtice, he ſeemed to fare the worſe, becauſe of his Worth. For this was the Character that the Biſhop gave of him. “ That if the poor Mini- “ ſter, that was ſo miſuſed by him, had been ſome ignorant Dolte, “ and but a Sayer of his Service only, the Matter had been ſome- “ what leſs, though not tolerable: But he was a Man endued with “ good Gifts, a diligent and zealous Preacher of the Word, counted “ rather too painful in his Charge than otherwiſe; ſober in his Life “ and Behaviour, and not to be touched for his Converſation any “ way. And therefore the other's Outrage and Raſhneſs no way to “ be tolerated and born withal.

Nor did the Biſhop like, that a Juſtice ſhould take upon him to correct a Clergyman for a Neglect in his Miniſtry, as taking the Office out of the Dioceſan's Hand. For thus he proceeded: “ And what “ if the poor Man had in ſomething offended by Ignorance or Over- “ ſight, your Lordſhip knoweth, there had been other ordinary “ Means to be uſed for his Correction in Church Cauſes; and not “ every Juſtice of Peace to intermeddle in ſuch Matters, before “ there be need. I thank God, I can and will reform ſuch Faults, “ when I hear of them. If I cannot, I will pray Aid of others. And “ if I will not, they may complain of me, and reform it them- “ ſelves.

This Juſtice a Papiſt.

But then, as to this Juſtice, he gave this Information of him: “ That the Truth was, Mr. *Crompton* was ſuppoſed to be a Papiſt in “ Heart, and was a Friend unto Papiſts, and a great Receiver of Pa- “ piſts to his Houſe. And that therefore, that which he did, he “ might ſeem not to have done in way of Reformation, but for Ma- “ lice to the Religion. And that indeed he had ſo bewrayed him-

ANNO 1581.

" ſelf by this Fact, that that very Sort did note him a very Papiſt " for it; although he were ſo noted for other Things before.

And then upon this Occaſion, the ſaid Biſhop gave the Treaſurer his Advice: " Your Lordſhip, and the reſt of her Majeſty's " moſt Honourable Privy Council, may think of him and ſuch o-" thers here, as it ſhall pleaſe you: But methinketh under your Lord-" ſhip's Corrections, if he and ſuch others as he, were clean diſ-" charged out of the Commiſſion, ye ſhould do God good Service, " and a great good Turn to the Country. For in my Opinion they " love but to wait for a *Day*. And in the mean Time, boulſter " ill Subjects in their Obſtinacy and Contempt. He hath ſome " Fellows: I would to God more zealous Men were put in their " Places. And ſo leaving the further Conſideration thereof under " their Honourable Wiſdoms, he humbly took his Leave. Writ-" ten from *Eccleſhal*, the 15th of *Jan.* 1581. Subſcribing *His* " *Lordſhip's moſt bounden,*

W. Coven. & *Litch.*

CHAP. III.

Cox, *Biſhop of* Ely, *dies: His Will. And* Barkley, *Biſhop of* Bath *and* Wells, *dies: His Character. Grant of the Queen to* Edward Stafford, *Eſq; of concealed Lands. The Lord Treaſurer's Judgment of a Leaſe of them. Diſorders about Religion in the Inns of Court. A Letter from the* Star-Chamber *to the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners thereupon.* Romaniſts *buſy.* Campion *writes to the Privy Council; concerning the* Jeſuits: *And his Miſſion. A private Letter of a* Jeſuit *concerning* Campion, *and his Diſputations; and the Reſolution of the* Jeſuits. *A Copy of Verſes made by a Papiſt: Beginning,* The Croſs appears. *The cruel Burning of one* Atkins *at* Rome *for Religion.*

Death of Biſhop Cox. *His Legacies.*

THIS Year concluded the Life of *Cox*, Biſhop of *Ely*. He left in good Debts, 2322 *l.* By his Laſt Will and Teſtament he gave theſe Legacies. To the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, a Ring 2 Ounces, Value 6 *l.* To the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, to the Biſhop of *Lincoln*, and to Dr. *Lewis*, to each Rings, one Ounce and an Half, Value 4 *l.* 10 *s.* To *Roger Cox* 100 *l.* To *Richard Cox* 100 *l.* His Books of the old Doctors he gave to the Library at *Ely*. Theſe following to be paid within one Year from the 22d of *July*, 1581. [the Day of his Death, or the Day his Will bore Date.] To the Poor in *Somerham*, in *Doddington*, in *Downton*, in *Wiſbich*; to theſe each 53 *l.* To the Poor in *Holborn*, and *Feny Stanton*, 10 *l.* To the Poor in *Buckingham* Town, 5 *l.* To the Poor of *Harrow of the Hill* in *Buckinghamſhire*, of *Wickendove*, three Miles by *Stony Stratford*, of *Whaddon*, of *Naſh*, in the Pariſh of *Whaddon*; to each 10 *l.* To the poor Scholars of *Peter-Houſe*, and of another College in the Univerſity, 5 *l.* each. To Mrs. *Parker*, to Mrs. *Collet*, and to Mrs. *Bullingham* 20 *l.* a-piece. To *John Parker*, Archdeacon of *Ely* 40 *l.* To *Richard Arkenſtal*, *Richard Upſher*, *John Chapman*, *Henry Mannox*, *William Rente*, his Servants, 5 *l.* 6 *l.* 13 *s.* 8 *d.* 4 *l.* 40 *s.* Theſe Legacies amounted to 155 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* In Plate to Mr. *Richard Cox*, and Mrs. *Rachel Cox*, 20 *l.* The whole Sum of his Legacies came to 945 *l.* 3 *s.* 4 *d.* Theſe Particulars I take from a Copy of his Will.

He was made Archdeacon of *Ely*, *Anno* 1540. in the Room of *Tho. Thirleby*, the King's Chaplain, made Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*: The Preſentation being in the King, by Reaſon of the Removal of the ſaid *Thirleby* to that Biſhoprick, 32 *Henry* VIII. For ſo that King's Writ ran, *Dilectum Capellanum noſtrum*, Richardum Cox *Clericum, vobis præſentamus*: Directed to the Reverend Father in Chriſt, *Thomas* [*Goodrich*] Biſhop of *Ely*. Witneſs the King at *Weſtminſter*, *Novemb.* 24.

Made Archdeacon of Ely, 1540. Convention. Rymer.

One Remark I add concerning this good Biſhop: That *Thomas Sutton*, the Founder of the *Charter-Houſe*, School and Hoſpital, by his Laſt Will and Teſtament, among the reſt of his Legacies, gave certain Legacies to the Children of that Biſhop: And that out of Gratitude to his old Schoolmaſter. For when *Cox* was Maſter of *Eaton* School, he had this *Sutton* his Scholar for three Years. And then he went to *Magdalen* and *Jeſus* Colleges in *Cambridge*. The Words of his Will are theſe. *Item*, I give to every one of the Children of *Richard Cox*, late Biſhop of *Ely*, who ſhall be living at the Time of my Death, 10 *l.* a-piece of lawful Money of *England*.

Sutton *leaves Legacies to Biſhop* Cox's *Children.*

This Biſhop's Learning, his Piety, his Zeal for true Religion, his Exile, how inſtrumental he was in promoting the Reformation at Court: (Whither he was preferred by King *Henry* VIII. to be the Inſtructor of the young Prince, and his Almoner) and what Reputation he had then for a ſingular Scholar, juſt and good Man, may be gathered from a Copy of Verſes of *Leland*, written to *Thomas Legh* of *Adlington*, Eſq; who had required *Leland* to tell him, If he knew any Perſon in the World (that ſo generally abounded with wicked, falſe Men) that might be in all reſpects ſaid to be endued with Faithfulneſs and Integrity; *Leland* gives him Anſwer that he knew one ſuch; and that was *Cox*. Which he elegantly ſhewed in a Copy of Verſes, *viz.*

Commended in a Copy of Verſes made by Leland.

ANNO
1581.

Ad Thomam Leghum *Armigerum* Adlingtonenſem, *de Ric. Coxij Fide & Integritate.*

Cum fucis adeo laborat Orbis
Totus, me rogitas, Amice narrem
Ore ut viridico tibi petenti,
Si dum repppererim, omnibus fidelem,
Quem poſſem numeris virum proba- [re:
Talem me volo repperiſſe, credas,
Albo rarior eſt ac ille corvo.

Noviſti benè Coxium *prim illum*
Sacri Evangelij tubam ſonoram,
Quem clarus Patriæ pater Britan- [nus
Dilectum refovet, ſuòq; nato
Inſervire jubet, probum tenello.
Te vir judicio omnium piorum,
Omni ex parte fidelis integerq; &c.

Biſhop of Bath *and* Wells *dies:*

Collect. Matt. Hutton.

This Year alſo *November* 2. died *Gilbert Barkley*, Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*, in his Epiſcopal Houſe in *Wells*. Whoſe Regiſter began *April* the 20*th*. 1560: And ended *October* 28. 1581. Wherein I obſerve at a Royal Viſitation *Anno* 1560. a Sentence of Deprivation given by *John Cottrel* LL. B. Archdeacon of *Wells*, and the Biſhop's Vicar General againſt *Bourneford*, Prebendary, and Rector of *Clotworthy*, *Cratford*, Rector of *Lediard Laurence*, *Giles Hillinge*, Prebendary and Rector of *Shillgate* and *Bartholomew Blithman* Prebendary and Rector of *Coſington*; by Reaſon of their Abſence and Contempt *Regiæ Viſitationis.*

December 15. 1561. *Tho. Maiſter* was preſented to the Church of *Sutton Bingham*; united, annexed, and incorporated to the Church of *Chilton*, during the Time of his Incumbency in the ſame, *Authoritate* Matthæi Cantuar. *Archiepiſcopi, & Regie Majeſtatis Confirmatione.* This *Tho. Maiſter* had been preſented the Year before, *May* 17. by the Queen to the ſaid Church of *Chilton*. This *Maiſter* was Son, or ſome Relation, to Dr. *Maiſter*, the Queen's Phyſician.

I meet with a pretty ſtrange Diſpenſation in this Biſhop's Regiſter under the Year 1564. *July* the 12*th*. When *Tho. Harrington* was preſented to the Church of *Kilſton*, by the Death of *Henry Simmons*, at the Preſentation of *John Harrington*, Eſq; He was a Scholar of *Oxon* of eighteen Years old, *nullo clericali Ordine inſignitus:* And obtained Licence of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* to retain the ſame Church to lawful Age: And then, if he were promoted to Holy Orders, to the Title of the perpetual Benefice. But theſe Letters of the Archbiſhop's were to be of no avail, unleſs confirmed by Letters Patents from the Queen. Dated *July* 28, 1564. which was done the ſame Day. This *Simmons* was preſented to this Church of *Kilſton*, *Anno* 1560. by the Reſignation of Mr. *Geo. Carew*, at the Preſentation of *John Harrington* of *London*, Eſq;

The Biſhop's Character.

We diſmiſs this Biſhop *Barkley* with this Character, That he was a Man of great Gravity, and ſingular Integrity of Life. And being an Exile under Queen *Mary*, reſided with many other worthy Confeſſors at *Frankfort* in *Germany*: And adviſed Dr. *Traheron*, who read Lectures there to the *Engliſh* upon *Revelations*, Chap. IV. to print his Readings: Which he did. This Biſhop had a Charter for the ſettling of his Biſhoprick; but not ſo full as the Charter granted by Queen *Mary* to his Predeceſſor, *Gilbert Bourne*, many Things being left out in the laſt Charter to this Biſhop. In the Year 1572 he had a long Fit of Sickneſs for nine or ten Weeks. After that, not able to ride, nor well to go, keeping his Chamber, as a lame Man, of the *Sciatica* in his left Leg; doubting in himſelf then, whether he ſhould ever have the Uſe of it again; as he wrote in *December*, 1572. to his Friend Biſhop *Parkhurſt*. Though he made ſhift to hold out to this Year, being eighty Years of Age: As *Godwin* writes.

Stops a Parſonage from being impropriated.

I ſhall leave one Remark of him: Which ſhewed him to be an honeſt as well as a ſtout Man for the Good of the Church, by ſeaſonably ſtoping a Part of the Church's Patrimony from running into a Layman's Purſe; when the Lord *Tho. Pawlet*, dwelling within the County of *Somerſet*, Patron of a good Parſonage, *viz. Weſt Monkton*, endeavoured to impropriate it to himſelf and his Heirs for ever, as was related at large, *Vol.* II. under the Year 1578.

Commiſſion for concealed Lands

Now was coming forth another Commiſſion from the Queen for recovering ſuch Lands and Revenues, as formerly belonged to Churches, religious Houſes, Colleges and Hoſpitals, granted by Parliament to the Crown. Many of which being concealed in this Queen's Reign, She, to gratify ſome of her Courtiers, had granted them, or ſome good Portions of them; namely, what they could by Search diſcover and find out: Which Commiſſions made great Havock ſometimes of the ſmall Livelihoods of the Livings and Salaries of Miniſters and Chaplains, the poor Inhabitants of Hoſpitals, *&c.* in Caſe it was found they were given for ſuperſtitious Uſes. Therefore as ſuch a Commiſſion had been granted to *Edward Stafford*, Eſq; and ſome other Gentlemen Penſioners, was called in, as it ſeems; another was made this Year for his Uſe and Benefit, with more Tenderneſs and Caution towards many that might ſuffer by it; but ſtill with certain Rents payable by him to the Queen: It was called, *A Warrant to* Edward Stafford, *Eſq; for Parſonages, Chapels, Guilds,* &c. diſſolved: The Copy whereof ſhall be exemplified from the Minutes, with the Lord Treaſurer's Hand interlined in ſome Places; (which I have encloſed in Crotchets) intended by him for the moderating of this *Grant*, and ſtopping the Violences, that theſe *Concealers*, as they were called, would have been apt to uſe towards the Churches, and the Clergy thereof, the Hoſpitals and Chapels.

Granted to Edward Stafford.

The Contents of a Leaſe granted him.

It ſpecified "A Leaſe, granted by the Queen to this *Edward* " *Stafford*, one of her Gentlemen Penſioners, of all Parſonages im- " propriate, Free Chapels, Guilds, Chauntries, Hoſpitals, *&c.* " that had been diſſolved, and were wrongfully detained from her, " and which of Right belonged to the Crown, ſince ſuch a Year of " King *Henry* VIII. Or which might afterward be found out and " diſcovered by the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, his Deputies, *&c.* Yield- " ing and paying therefore unto her, or her Succeſſors, during ſuch " Leaſe or Leaſes, certain yearly Rents: And after ſuch Rate, as " the ſame were valued at in the Book of *Firſt Fruits* and *Tenths*. " And likewiſe granted unto him Advouſons, Preſentations, Dona- " tions, *&c.* of all Parſonages and Vicarages, being without Cure, " profaned, waſted, *&c.* Alſo all Advouſons, Preſentations of Par- " ſonages, Vicarages without Cure, Prebends preſentative, *&c.* " which were concealed, wrongfully detained, *&c.* And that did " of Right belong to her Majeſty, Preſentations, Donations, *&c.* to

ANNO 1581.

" give, diſpoſe, and preſent unto the ſame, being become void, during ſuch a certain Term.

" And then, by the ſame Commiſſion, to the Lord Treaſurer, " the Chancellor of the Exchequer, *&c.* She commanded them " from Time to Time, upon Information given by the ſaid *Stafford* " to them, to cauſe to be made Books and Writings as ſhould be requiſite to be paſt from her of the Premiſſes, or any other Part " thereof: And for certain new Rents according to her Letters " Patent. And that if any Variance, Suit, Debate, Controverſy, " *&c.* might happen by any Claim or Complaint in or about any " of the Premiſſes, or concerning any Manner of Preſentation, " removing, or diſplacing any Parſons or Vicars, then the Grants " to be ſuſpended, 'till it ſhould be heard and determined in her " Court of Exchequer, by them the Lord Treaſurer, Chancellor " of the Exchequer, *&c.* for the Time being, for any Matter belonging to the Revenue of the Crown. Theſe are the brief Contents: But the whole Grant and Commiſſion will be found exemplified in the *Appendix.*

Num. V.

Lord Treaſurer's Judgment of making Leaſes of Lands, &c. concealed.

As to that Particular above, of a Leaſe to *Stafford* of Parſonages, Colleges, Hoſpitals, *&c.* concealed, it became a Queſtion concerning the Queen's making Leaſes of ſome ſuch. I find the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* ſetting down his Judgment in Writing; no Queſtion upon the Queen's and Council's requiring his Opinion in this Affair. This I have from Minutes of his own Pen. The Year when he wrote this his Judgment is uncertain: but hereabouts it muſt be. This I look upon as a curious Piece: And therefore ſhall ſet it down from the Original.

" My Opinion on a ſudden, under Correction of ſuch of his Majeſty's learned Counſil, as can better inform how her Majeſty may " make ſuch a Leaſe of the Contents.

I. " The firſt ſeven ſeveral Things may, I think, be granted by " her Majeſty. But in good Reaſon her Majeſty's Title ought firſt " to be found by Inquiſition. And ſo her Majeſty's Title being of " Record, the Grant may more orderly paſs. Otherwiſe many " Things under this Title may paſs without Warrant. But ſo not " Honourable to paſs her Majeſty; where they ſhall paſs upon " Wrong to Pre-Occupiers.

" As for Parſonages impropriate, Free Chapels, Guilds, Chantries, " Lay-Prebends, there is not ſo much Regard to be had, as upon " Colleges, and eſpecially Hoſpitals. In which laſt I ſaw by a Grant " made by her Majeſty to certain of her Guard, of the Hoſpital of " *Ledbury*, what Inconvenience had followed, if great Care had " not been.

II. *Secondly*, " For Parſonages and Vicarages without Cure containeth great Uncertainties. And whereſoever the Patronages " thereof did belong to any Subject, the Queen's Majeſty hath no " Intereſt therein; but by Lapſe to have one Preſentment only. " The Depopulation or Prophanation maketh no Title to the Queen's " Majeſty. And therefore her Majeſty cannot make any Grant " thereof.

III. " The

III. “ The Third for Parſonages and Vicarages without Cure, can-
“ not be granted by her Majeſty, but where ſhe is Patron; or where
“ ſhe is intitled by Lapſe.

IV. “ The Fourth for the like with Cure, and for Prebends that
“ are concealed, and belong to her Majeſty's Patronage; may be
“ for the firſt Time granted by her Majeſty's Patents. But after
“ that they cannot be accounted concealed. And thereby the Cu-
“ rate cannot have Continuance, otherwiſe than that her Majeſty
“ ſhall make a Gift of the Patronage, [or] of the Inheritance of
“ her Patronage.

“ How theſe kind of Parſonages or Vicarages ſhall be given, I
“ know not. But if the Patentee ſhall have any Profit thereby,
“ they muſt be ſold, and not given. And openly to aſſent thereto
“ will be held for a Man that hath thereof a Conſcience.

“ But theſe Articles would be conſidered by ſome that under-
“ ſtand more than I do; that her Majeſty's Grants may be ground-
“ ed upon Juſtice; or at the leaſt ſome Colour of Juſtice. And for
“ any Profit to paſs from her Majeſty, I weigh it not. But I wiſh that
“ Profit were double, in reſpect of the Gentleman, who indeed hath
“ deſerved as much, and can deſerve more.

Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical for the Inns of Court.

This is a ſecond Time the Inns of Court and Chancery were taken Notice of, to harbour Perſons Popiſhly affected. The Government thought it very neceſſary to check and reſtrain conſiderable Numbers there: And many of them of Quality; and ſo more apt to influence others in the Kingdom, with Principles contrary to the Laws eſtabliſhed for good Order in the Church. As in the 11th of the Queen, *Anno* 1569. the Council had wrote to thoſe *Inns*, with Orders granted for the Government of thoſe that inhabited there. And then ſome were reconciled, and others expelled. But Diſorders happening again in thoſe Houſes; and Information thereof made in the *Star-Chamber*, a Letter was ſent thence to the Queen's Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical, to take Cognizance thereof; and to ſend for the Benchers and Antients, and enquire after theſe Diſorders. Which was this Year, or near it: And ran in this Tenor;

Letter to them from the Star-Chamber.

“ After our very hearty Commendations. Where in the 11th
“ Year of the Queen's Majeſty's Reign, in the Term of *Eaſter*, we
“ did by our Letters to the Antients and Benchers of the Inns of
“ Court ſignify, what Order was then taken in the Star-Chamber,
“ for Reformation of a Sort of Perſons about that Time detected to
“ be in the ſame Houſes, of diſordered Demeanor, and perverſe Diſ-
“ poſition, eſpecially againſt the Laws and Orders Eccleſiaſtical of
“ the Church. Which Orders being of good length by our ſaid Let-
“ ters then declared and explained, we underſtand were for that Time
“ reaſonably executed, to the Reformation of ſome: Which were
“ thereby profitably reconciled; and to the Expulſion and Secluding
“ of ſome others that were ſo perverſe, or rather ſeditiouſly bent to
“ continue in Diſorder, as by no convenient Perſuaſion they were
“ then reformed.

“ But after ſome Time expired, as we are now credibly informed,
“ the former Diſorders are received; or rather encreaſed, for lack

ANNO 1581.

“ partly, of the Continuance of ſome of thoſe Diſorders within the Houſes, by the Antients and Benchers; and partly, for that ſuch Regard hath not lately been had by the Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical, to underſtand of the ſaid Contempts, as was neceſſary.

“ Wherefore, conſidering how neceſſary a Matter it is to proceed, if in thoſe Houſes, conſiſting of ſo great Companies, where properly Obedience to Laws, and Obſervation of good Orders ſhould be profeſſed, and the contrary thereof not nouriſhed, and that by Sufferance the Miſchief may, by the Authors of ſuch Contempts, be diſperſed abroad in the Realm: And that with the more Facility and Danger alſo to encreaſe, where the Offenders ſhall gather Credit among the vulgar Sort, by Profeſſion of the Knowledge and Execution of the Common Laws of the Realm: We have upon good Deliberation thought it very neceſſary, that your Lordſhip and others having ſufficient Authority from her Majeſty, to ſee to the due Execution of all the Laws Eccleſiaſtical, ſhould hereof be informed. And ſo we require you, that you will ſpeedily, before the End of this Term, ſend for ſome of the Antients and Benchers, of the diſcreeteſt and dutifulleſt of every Houſe or Inn of Court; and likewiſe for ſome of the Inns of Chancery: And enquire of the Diſorders in theſe kind of Cauſes, concerning the Obſervation of the Laws Eccleſiaſtical, and the Rights of the Church. And as ye ſhall find the ſame Diſorders likely to be encreaſed, ſo to conſider, how the ſame may be reaſonably and ſpeedily redreſſed: Uſing therein, as Cauſe ſhall require, Conference either with the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*, and the two Chief Juſtices, or any of them: To whoſe Party doth belong, as we underſtand, ſome Regard for the good ordering of the ſaid Houſes or Inns. And thereupon, as far forth as appertaineth to the Authority of your Commiſſion, to reform, or otherwiſe to correct the Parties offending, and to limit ſome good Orders for the due Service of God in thoſe Houſes; and to ſtay and reform the reſt from the Entry into like Offences. Wherein ſurely the whole Realm ſhall take no ſmall Profit, both for the Honour and Service of God, and for the better Adminiſtration of Laws: And finally, by the giving of a general good Example of Obedience to the reſt of the Subjects.

Papiſts, Jeſuits *and Seminaries buſy.*

The State found it neceſſary now, to ſecure the Government againſt the *Romaniſts:* Who were very buſy in Corners, both Seminaries and *Jeſuits*, to withdraw the Queen's Subjects from their Allegiance, and to plot Treaſons. Whereof *Campion* had given ſufficient Cauſe of Jealouſy; who was executed with ſome other Prieſts and Jeſuits this or the laſt Year. I meet with a bold Letter of his to the Privy Council, upon his firſt coming into *England:* Wherein he confidently and frankly declared himſelf of the *Society* of *Jeſus*; and that thereby he had devoted himſelf, Honour, Life, and all to the Pope's Service. His Letter, ſhewing his Reſolution, and Confidence, and his Zeal to the Pope and his Cauſe, was chiefly to make a publick Challenge of Diſpute with all the moſt learned Divines and Lawyers in the Land, and to require them of the Privy Council, nay, and the Queen herſelf, to be preſent: Deſiring them

Campion's *Letter to the Privy Council.*

ANNO 1581.

them to grant him a quiet Audience of what he ſhould ſay before their Honours. “ And that his Diſcourſe ſhould be, Firſt, of Religion, ſo far forth as it touched the Common Wealth and the “ Nobility. And Secondly, That before the Chief Doctors and “ Maſters of both Univerſities, he would avow the Faith of the “ Catholick Church by Proof invincible, Scriptures, Councils, Fathers, Hiſtories and Reaſon. And before the Lawyers, Spiritual “ and Temporal, he would juſtify the ſame Faith, by the common “ Wiſdom of *Law*.

Further, he frankly declares to them, “ That he had vowed “ himſelf to the *Society* of JESUS, and had taken upon him a “ Warfare in the Banners of Obedience, and reſigned all his Intereſt of worldly Wealth, Honour and Pleaſure. And that at the “ Voice of their *General Provoſt*, which was to him a Warrant “ from Heaven, and an Oracle from Chriſt, he took his Voyage “ from *Prague* to *Rome*, where the ſaid Father General was always “ Reſident; and from *Rome* into *England*; as he would joyfully “ have done into any Part of *Chriſtendom*, or *Heatheniſs*, had he “ been thereto aſſigned. And that his Charge was, without Coſt “ to preach the Goſpel, to adminiſter the Sacraments, to inſtruct “ the Simple, *&c.* to confute Errors, *&c.*

And as to their Society, he informed thus much of them (with the Preface of *Be it known unto them*) “ That they had made a “ League, (all the *Jeſuits* in the World) whoſe Succeſſion and “ Multitude muſt over-reach all the Practices of *England*; cheerfully to carry the Croſs, that they ſhould lay upon them, and “ never to deſpair of the Recovery of them [*viz.* the Realm of “ *England*] while they had a Man left, to enjoy their *Tyburn*, or “ to be wracked with their Torments, or to be conſumed with their “ Poiſon.

And ſo concluded, as it were threatning, and in an Aſſurance of Succeſs, “ That the Enterprize was begun. That it was of “ God, and could not be withſtood: And is the Faith that was at “ firſt planted: And ſo it muſt be reſtored. ” This was the Brag, Reſolution and Proteſtation of *Campion*, in the Name of that Society. And therefore the State, with good Reaſon, thought it neceſſary to ſecure itſelf againſt them by its Laws, and Watchfulneſs over ſuch a Generation of *Devoto's*. But let the Reader peruſe the whole Letter in the *Appendix*.

Num. VI.

Campion's *Challenge to Diſpute.*

And conſequent to this, *Campion* afterwards, being now a Priſoner, made a bold Challenge to Diſpute with the Proteſtants certain Points of Religion. And accordingly divers Diſputes and Conferences were held with him in the *Tower*, in the Month of *Auguſt*, which were ſet down afterwards in Writing, by the learned Men themſelves that dealt therein; and were printed in 1583, by *Alexander Noel*, Dean of St. *Paul*'s; and publiſhed upon Occaſion of Writings diſperſed by ſome Papiſts, extolling *Campion*'s Diſputations, to the Overthrow of his Adverſaries. Wherein it is ſaid, “ That the Catholicks by the Judgments of thoſe, that were not “ wedded wholly to Will, did get the Goal. And again, one of “ them had theſe Words: In my Soul I proteſt, that in any indiffe-

ANNO
1581.

“ rent Judgment, the adverſe Proteſtants were quite confounded. “ And if I were not a Catholick already, the only hearing the “ Conference would have made me one. This I took out of the Preface to the Reader, by *Alexander Noel*, and *William Day*, both Deans and Diſputants, with that *Jeſuit*. There were three other Conferences with him, *viz.* the 18th, 23d, and 27th of *Septemb.* 1581, which were after ſet down in Writing by *John Field:* And peruſed by the learned Men themſelves, that Diſputed with him, in order to the publiſhing the ſame. Theſe Things I paſs over, having mentioned them more at large elſewhere.

Conferences with him.

Annals, Vol. II. Chap. 22.

A Jeſuit *rejoices at* Campion*'s Sufferings.*

Soon after *Campion*'s Condemnation, and before his Execution, one of the ſame Order ſhewed his great Satisfaction, that his *Brother* (as he called him) as well as his Companion, was like to make ſo glorious an End; mentioned in a Letter to another of his Friends, written from *London*; whither after ſome Abſence he was newly returned: Confirming him and them in his Abſence, and aſſuring them of his own Conſtancy and Reſolution to die in the Cauſe, as others had bravely done, and as *Campion* was now ready to do. This Letter ſeems to have been intercepted, and ſo brought into the Hands of the Queen's Council. For I met with it among the Papers of State in the *Paper-Houſe*. And therefore, though it be ſomewhat long, it will deſerve to be here exemplified. Which will ſhew their firm Purpoſe to promote their Religion to the Peril of their Lives, and how fully perſuaded they were in the Goodneſs of their Cauſe, and the Succeſs of it, and their Steadineſs in carrying on of their Affairs in this Realm.

His Letter upon the Condemnation of Campion *and others.*

Paper Houſe.

“ My dear good Friend, *Pax Chriſti, &c.* That he underſtood “ of the late Advancement and Exaltation of his dear Brother “ Mr. *C.* and his Followers [*Brian*, *Sherwin*, &c.] Our Lord be “ bleſſed for it. It was the joyfulleſt News in one reſpect that ever “ came to his Heart, ſince he was born. I call him *Brother*, as he “ added, for that once God made me worthy of ſo great Prefer- “ ment: [*Viz.* to be admitted into the Society of *Jeſus*] But that “ now he took him rather for his *Patron* [to pray for him and pro- “ tect him] than for his Brother: Whoſe Steps he beſeeched Chriſt, “ he might be worthy to follow. That there was nothing happen- “ ed to him, which he looked not for ſome Time before, and where- “ of he made not Oblation to God, before ever he ſet forth to go “ towards *England:* [That is, vowed his Life to promote that “ Cauſe.]

And then, as for the Diſputation which he held with our learned Divines, thus he alſo triumphed, “ That he looked for this End, “ [meaning *triumphant* End] of the Diſputation alſo. And ſurely, “ added he, where I heard, how proſperouſly God turned them to “ the Glory of his Cauſe, that he would have his Life alſo. For “ that it was like his Adverſaries would never put up ſo great a “ a Blow without Revengement upon his Blood. His impertinent “ and malicious Witneſſes God will Judge. But yet he beſeeched “ the Divine Majeſty, if it were his Will, to pardon them and give “ them Grace to repent, and prevent his great Wrath, due to their “ moſt grievous Iniquity. There were Men in the World which

“ drank Blood as eaſily as Beaſts did Water. And becauſe the Earth did not open, and preſently ſwallow them down, they thought all was well. *Sed heu!* (ſaid the Prophet) *juxta eſt dies perditionis, & adeſſe feſtinant Tempora.*

“ That it might be as truly ſpoken of Mr. *C.* as ever *Ezekiel* ſpake it of the like, *Effus. eſt ſanguis ejus in limpidiſſimam petram, & non in terram, ut operiatur pulvere.* His Blood is ſhed upon a moſt clear Stone, to be ſeen of all Men; and not upon the Earth, that it may be covered with Duſt; the pretended Duſt of feigned Treaſon, wherewith they go about to cover his Blood; *His Blood!* Away with every little Air of Conſideration that comes near it. Your Conſcience and mine, and the Knowledge of God Almighty, with all the Saints of Heaven, are privy, and ſhall bear Witneſs at the Day of Judgment, of his pure Innocency in all ſuch Matters, and Meaning, either by Fact, Word or Cogitation. This hath he proteſted, and will proteſt, I know, upon the Perdition of his Soul at his Death. For yet I am not certified, that he is dead. And we [*Jeſuits*] proteſt the ſame before God, and Men and Angels in Heaven. And all that ever we have dealt withal in *England*, ſhall teſtify the ſame both living and dying, upon their Salvation and Damnation in the Life to come. All which, ſeeing it ſerveth not in *Weſtminſter-Hall*, we are content, quietly to leave it in God's Hand; and to refer it only to the Tribunal of Chriſt: *Qui cum temp. acceperit, decernet cauſam noſtram.*

The Writer goes on. “ That I am ſo far touched in the ſame Matter, as Maſter *Criſs* telleth me, I cannot but take it moſt thankfully at my good Lord's Hands, who vouchſafeth to lend me a Portion *in Sorte Sanctorum.* Free I am of any Thought of ſuch Matters as were objected, God and my Conſcience, and my Friends with whom I converſe, do know and rejoice. But I know it was not eaſy for the Lamb which drank beneath at the End of the River, to juſtify to the Wolf drinking at the Head Spring, that her drinking beneath did not trouble the Water. And the Reaſon was, for that the Wolf was minded to eat her. My Blood therefore muſt ſatisfy this Matter, which by God's holy Aſſiſtance, I remain as reſolute, and willing to yield, when his Divine Majeſty ſhall appoint the Day, as ever I did to pay my Debt that I did owe; or to receive any Benefit from his moſt merciful Hands. I remember often to my great Comfort, the Saying of St. *Paul*, *Deo manifeſti ſumus, & ſpero in Conſcientiis veſtris manifeſtos nos eſſe.* If we be miſtaken of Men, yet God is not deceived. And therefore for my Part, I do ſeek daily and hourly, according to the Meaſure of his holy Grace given me, to walk in his Sight, and to imagine him preſent in all my Actions, even as though he were preſently to enter into Judgment with me. Which Attention I truſt, though I be otherwiſe a greater miſerable Sinner, ſhall ſo direct my Life for all ſuch Matters, as our Enemies do object, as I ſhall little fear the Judgment of Man, nor the Accuſations of *Eliot Iſcariot*; [ſo ſtiling him, who it ſeems was ſome ſecret Informer againſt the *Jeſuits*] and his Com-

ANNO 1581.

“ partner for the Matter itſelf: That is, the Advancement of
“ God's Glory, by perſuading my Countrymen to virtuous Lives
“ and true Religion. For which Cauſe only I was ſent hither.

In which Reſolution he would perſiſt, uſing theſe Words: “ I
“ will by God's Help never ceaſe, either dying or living, as long
“ as my Soul is able to move any Part within me, from the Proſecution
“ of ſo good and godly a Purpoſe. For I know it is written,
“ *Uſque ad mortem certo pro juſtitiâ.* In which reſpect I confeſs,
“ that I fear little any mortal Power, which killeth the Body;
“ and after hath nothing to do more: For that I have my Maſter's
“ Command for the ſame. And that not only that, but his Warrant:
“ *Capill. de capite veſtro non peribit.* And thus much of myſelf,
“ and of thoſe holy Men that are dead. *Qui viſi ſunt oculis*
“ *inſipientium mori: Illi autem ſunt in Pace.*

“ Now though, you, my dearly Beloved, and the reſt of my
“ good Friends with you, I ſee no Cauſe for me, either to comfort,
“ or encourage you, the very Letter itſelf is moſt ſufficient for
“ both. For what greater Matter of Comfort can there be to us
“ that are Catholicks, than to ſee God work theſe ſtrange Wonders
“ in our Days, for the Advancement of his and our Cauſe: That
“ is, to give ſuch rare Grace of Zeal, Auſterity of Life, and conſtancy
“ of Martyrdom unto young Men, learned Men, brought
“ up in the Adverſaries own Schools; and to whom, if they would
“ have followed the Pleaſures of the World, or yielded in any one
“ little Point againſt the Truth, it had been lawful to have lived
“ both in Favour and Credit. This cannot come of Fleſh and
“ Blood, but muſt needs be an Argument of God's merciful Meaning
“ towards us, if we be humble and patient under this his Fatherly
“ Rod and Chaſtiſement.

“ Again, what can be more forceable to encourage us to all
“ Vertue, and Imitation of theſe Men's Fortitude, than to ſee Children
“ to go into Heaven before us. You know who uſed this
“ Argument, when he ſaid, *Regnum Chriſti vim patitur, Et* v.
“ [*i. e. Violenti*] *illud, &c.* Which if ever it were fulfilled now
“ it is, where the tendereſt and fraileſt Fleſh paſſeth violently to
“ Heaven; through Wrackings, Hangings, Drawings and Quarterings;
“ and through a Thouſand Miſeries more which are laid
“ upon them.

“ Wherefore let other Men follow the Pleaſures of the World,
“ and lewd Life as much as they will; now is the Time for us to
“ make ourſelves everlaſting Princes, by gaining of Heaven. *Qui*
“ *nocet, noceat adhuc, & qui in Sordibus eſt, ſordeſcat adhuc,*
“ ſaith our Saviour. And on the other Side, *Qui juſtus eſt, juſtificetur*
“ *adhuc, & qui ſanctus eſt, Sanctificetur adhuc Ecce! venio*
“ *citò, & Merces mea mecum eſt, reddere unicuique ſecundum opera*
“ *ſua.*

“ Now for this Time, my dear good Friend. From R. in L.
“ this preſent 26th of *Novemb.* 1581.

“ *Your own bounden in moſt harty good Will*
“ *For Chriſt and his Cauſe.*

By Way of Poſtſcript, *this followed.*

The Croſs appears, Chriſt doth approach,
  A Comfort for us all:
For whom to ſuffer or to die,
  Is Grace celeſtial.

Be therefore of good Courage now,
  In this your ſharp Probation,
Which ſhall you bring to Glory great,
  And mighty Conſolation.

If you perſevere to the End
  Of this ſharp Storm indeed,
You ſhall confound both Foe and Friend,
  And Heaven have for Mede.

“ God make us mindful of all his ſweet Promiſes, and our own
“ Duty: Which is ſufficient Armour for all Aſſaults of our Enemies.
“ Commend me heartily to my Daughter *Cr.* and your little
“ Family, and the reſt of your good Company: Willing them
“ all to be of good Comfort, and to pray for us, as we ſhall for
“ them. Weakneſs now is come to ſuch a Head, that the feſtred
“ Sores thereof muſt needs break out, whereby, I hope, all Infirmities
“ will be healed. In the mean Time they intend to do us a
“ good Turn againſt their Wills. I hope we ſhall ſo diſcloſe the
“ fond Forgery of our Enemies, God willing, this Week, as it was
“ never ſince the Queen came to her Crown. God, for whoſe
“ Cauſe we ſuffer, defend the Truth. I have ſaluted your Friends,
“ who re-ſalute you. Our Lord be with you and yours; and all
“ the faithful (Chriſtian) afflicted Flock.

Concerning this *Campion*, I have one Thing more to add, which a learned Man that lived in that very Time related of him; That there were diſpatched into the Realm, under the Conduction of one more preſumptuous than learned, [meaning this *Jeſuit*] a whole Swarm of Boy-Prieſts, diſguiſed, and provided at all Aſſays, with ſecret Inſtructions, how to deal with all Sorts of Men and Matters here; [in *England*] and with Commiſſion from *Rome*, to confeſs and abſolve ſuch as they ſhould win, with a Pretence or Policy, to miſlike the State, and affect Novelty; and to take Aſſurance of them by Vow, Oath, or other Means, that they ſhould be ever after adherent, and obedient to the Church of *Rome*, and to the Faith thereof, *&c.* *Religion* ſounded often in their Mouths, and the Faith of their Fathers. And yet that Poiſon they carried covertly in their Hearts, and cunningly in their Books; that her Majeſty's beguiled and deceived Subjects, by the very Sentence of their *Romiſh* Faith and Abſolution, were tied to obey the Pope, depriving her Majeſty of the Sword and Scepter, and bound to aſſiſt him, or whom he ſhould ſend to take the ſame by Force of Arms out of her Hands.

Young Prieſts under Campion's *Conduct.* *Dr.* Bils. True Subject.

Diſpenſed with by the Pope for Lying. Ubi Supra.

But when ſome of theſe were taken up, and brought to their Trials, they denied this, and earneſtly proteſted in open Audience, that they had no ſuch Meaning: But for their Parts did acknowledge her Majeſty for their lawful and true Princeſs, and taught all others ſo to do: Having firſt obtained, like wily Friers, a Diſpenſation at *Rome*, that to avoid the preſent Dangers, they and all others their Obſequents, might ſerve and honour her Highneſs for a Time; until the Bull of *Pius* V. might ſafely be executed. [This was the Diſpenſation of *Campion* and *Parſons*.] And that this was the Reſolution of them all, appeared by their Examinations. And that Concluſion ſtood in their written Books, as a ruled Caſe, that they muſt rather loſe their Lives, than ſhrink from this Ground Work, that the Pope may deprive her Highneſs of her Scepter and Throne; becauſe they ſay it is a Point of Faith, and requires Confeſſion of the Mouth, though Death enſue.

Their Caſes of Conſcience. Artic. 55.

Their dangerous Doctrine.

This dangerous, if not deviliſh, Doctrine (ſaith the foreſaid learned Writer) was not printed, or publiſhed in the Sight of the Queen's Subjects, until the Time of ſome of the chief Procurers and Kindlers of this Flame, for theſe and others Enterprizes of like Condition and Quality, were by the juſt Courſe of the Laws adjudged to Death.

But there happened this Year an Example of Papal Perſecution at *Rome*, upon an *Engliſhman*, which exceeded much any Perſecution complained of in *England*; which was executed upon one *Richard Atkins*, an *Hertfordſhire* Man. Who ſeemed indeed to be ſomewhat diſturbed in his Head: But however, that hindered not the *Romaniſts* rigorous Dealings with him. I relate it from one that was in the *Engliſh* College at *Rome*; and there either ſaw or heard it from ſome that were preſent.

One Atkins *put into the Inquiſition at* Rome. *And why.* Engl. Rom. Life.

This *Richard Atkins*, out of his Zeal travelled to *Rome*, and coming to the *Engliſh* College there, knocked at the Door; and being let in, told the Students there, that he came lovingly to rebuke the great Miſorders of their Lives: Which he grieved to hear, and pitied to behold. And that he came alſo to let their proud Anti-Chriſt underſtand, that he did offend the heavenly Majeſty, rob God of his Honour, poiſoned the whole World with his abominable Blaſphemies; making them homage Stocks and Stones, and the *filthy* Sacrament; [as he called it.] Which was nothing elſe but a fooliſh Idol. Upon this one *Hugh Griffin*, a *Welſhman*, and one of the Students, cauſed him to be put into the *Inquiſition*. But however it came to paſs, he was after certain Days diſmiſs'd. Afterwards one Day going in the Streets, he met a Prieſt carrying the Sacrament, and being offended to ſee the People, ſo crouch and kneel to it, he caught at it, to have thrown it down, that all People might ſee what they worſhipped. But miſſing his Purpoſe, and it being (luckily) judged by the People, that he did but catch at the Holineſs, that they ſay comes from the Sacrament, upon meer Devotion he was let paſs, and nothing ſaid to him.

Few Days after he came to St. *Peter*'s Church; where divers were hearing Maſs; and the Prieſt being at the Elevation, he uſing no Reverence, ſtept among the People to the Altar, and threw down the Chalice, with the Wine; ſtriving likewiſe to have pulled the

ANNO 1581.

Cake out of the Prieſts Hands. Preſently divers roſe up and beat him with their Fiſts. And one drew his Rapier, and would have ſlain him. In brief, he was carried to Priſon, where he was examined, wherefore he committed ſuch a hainous Offence. He anſwered, That he came purpoſely for that Intent, to rebuke the Pope's Wickedneſs, and their Idolatry. Upon this he was condemned to be burnt, which Sentence he ſaid he was right willing to ſuffer. And the rather, becauſe the Sum of his Offence pertained to the Glory of God.

During the Time he remained in Priſon, ſundry of the *Engliſh* came to him, willing him to be ſorry, for that he had done, and to recant his damnable Opinions. But all the Means they uſed was in vain; and he confuted their Ways by divers Places of Scripture. And willed them to be ſorry for their Wickedneſs, while God did permit them Time. For the Manner and Cruelty of his Execution, a while after, I refer the Reader to the *Appendix*. Num. VII.

CHAP. IV.

The Seminaries buſy. Sir Francis Knolles's *Letter concerning them. Search for Papiſts. Proclamation againſt harbouring* Jeſuits, *and ſuch as went to* Paris, Rheims, Doway, *or* Rome, *for Education: And for their Revocation. Conferences with* Jeſuits. *One of them reclaimed. Recuſants in the Dioceſs of the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield. *Schiſmaticks.* A Libertine, *his* Doctrines. *Endeavours of ſome* Puritans. *Their Prayers.*

Seminaries creep into Houſes, and ſay Maſs there.

THESE *Seminaries* were now very buſy in *London*, as well as in other Places, creeping into Houſes; to pervert the People, and keep Maſs-ſaying: Inſomuch, that Sir *Francis Knolles*, a Courtier and Treaſurer of the Queen's Chamber, thought fit to put the two great Stateſmen about the Queen, in Mind of it; and to ſtir them up to look to them; and to let the Law take its Courſe againſt ſuch of them as were taken; the Safety of the Queen and the whole Nation, depending ſo much upon it. And now going into the Country, to the Quarter-Seſſions at *Oxford*, in the Month of *September*, he left this Remembrance in a Letter to them both, *viz.* the Lord Treaſurer, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*.

Sir Francis Knolles's *Letter to be watchful of them.*

“ The Papiſts ſecret Practices by theſe *Jeſuits*, in going from “ Houſe to Houſe, to withdraw Men from the Obedience of her “ Majeſty, unto the Obedience of the falſe Catholick Church of “ *Rome*, hath and will endanger her Majeſty's Perſon and State more “ than

ANNO 1581.

“ than all the Sects of the World, if no Execution ſhall follow “ upon the traiterous Practiſers, that are for the ſame apprehended: “ Or at the leaſt, if Execution ſhall not follow upon ſuch of them “ as will not openly and plainly recant. Thus deſiring their Lord- “ ſhips, that are the two Heads of the two Univerſities of *England*, “ to pardon my Boldneſs herein; becauſe that I that am an unwor- “ thy Perſon, and half an Abject, do expect great good Things at “ their Lordſhip's Hands; which hath emboldened me hereunto. “ And ſo I take my Leave of your Lordſhips; At *London*, going “ into my Country, *&c. September* 29.

Some of theſe, according to this Gentleman's Counſil, were afterwards executed, about the Beginning of *December*, *viz. Campion*, before ſpoken of, *Sherwin*, *Brian*, and another.

Search for Papiſts in London.

Diligence was now uſed in finding out Papiſts in *London:* And that by ſearching for ſuch Perſons as came not to Church. And accordingly a Liſt was ſent in the Month of *June*, of ſuch throughout each Ward of the City, with their Names; whereof ſome were Strangers of other Countries, many *Engliſh*. Of theſe Strangers were *Horacio Pallavicino*, *Andreas de Low* living in St. *Dunſtan*'s, *Acerbo Vilutelli*, *Paulus Juſtinian*, *Auguſtin Graffigner*, *Nicolaus Gocha*, *Jerome Benalio*, *Morice Van Coleyn*, *Alpher Delymer*, *Lewis de Pace*, *John Calvetto*. Some of theſe were Agents to foreign Princes. Theſe generally lived in *Tower-ſtreet* Ward. Several of the *Engliſh*, whoſe Names were brought in, lived in St. *Helen*'s. The whole Number in all was about one hundred and ten.

Proclamation to take up Seminaries, &c.

And not long after a Proclamation came forth, to attach Seminaries and their Aiders, Abettors, Counſellors, and Hoſtages, [*i. e.* Harbourers.]

Enquiry after ſuch as were ſent abroad for Education.

Enquiry now alſo was made after ſuch as ſent their Sons abroad for Education. Which gave a juſt Suſpicion that they might be tinctured with Popiſh Principles at their coming home, and more diſſaffected to the Laws of the Land. And in Purſuit of theſe, the Clergy of *London* had a Summons in the Month of *January*, to make Enquiry, whoſe Sons were ſent abroad beyond the Sea, to ſtudy, and acquire Learning, either at *Paris*, *Rheims*, *Doway*, *Rome*, &c. And alſo what Servants were ſent abroad.

Proclamation for the Revocation of ſuch.

This *Viſitation* was authorized by a Proclamation, ſet forth in the ſaid Month of *January*, for Revocation of ſundry her Majeſty's Subjects, remaining beyond Sea under Colour of Study, and as lived contrary to the Laws of God and the Realm: And alſo againſt retaining of *Jeſuits*, and Maſſing *Prieſts*, Sowers of Sedition, and other treaſonable Attempt; the Tenor whereof was “ That the “ Queen was given to underſtand, that certain Colleges and Socie- “ ties under the Name of *Seminaries*, had been of late Years erect- “ ed by the Biſhop of *Rome*, as well in that City of *Rome*, as in the “ Dominions of other Princes; eſpecially for the Subjects of her “ Kingdoms and Dominions; with Intent and Purpoſe to train and “ nouriſh them up in falſe and erroneous Doctrine: By which Means “ divers of her good and faithful Subjects had been thereby per- “ verted, not only in Matters of Religion, but alſo drawn from the

“Acknowledgment of their natural Duties unto her Highneſs, as their Prince and Sovereign, and had been made Inſtruments in ſome wicked Practices, tending to the Diſquiet of the Realm and other her Majeſty's Dominions; yea, to the moving of Rebellion within their natural Countries:

Childrens Wards, &c.

“That ſhe thought it very expedient, as a Thing appertaining chiefly to a Chriſtian Prince, to have a ſpecial Care to ſee her Subjects trained up in Truth and Chriſtian Religion, grounded meerly upon the Word of God, and not upon Men's Fancies and vain Traditions; to uſe all Means of Prevention, that might tend to the Remedy thereof. Wherefore ſhe did ſtraitly charge and command all ſuch her Subjects, as had their Children, *Wards*, Kinsfolk, or any other, over whom they had ſpecial Charge, or to whom they did contribute to their Maintenance and Relief, remaining in the Parts beyond the Seas, to give Notice within ten Days after the publiſhing of this preſent Proclamation, not only unto the ordinary the Names of ſuch, their Children, Wards, or Kinsfolks, or ſuch other to whom they had given any Aid for their Charges, as ſhould be beyond the Seas, at the Time of the Publication hereof, without her Majeſty's ſpecial Licenſe remaining in force, and not expired; but ſhould alſo procure a Return of them within the Space of four Months after Notice given by the ſaid Proclamation. And then the Perſons, and other Perſons aforeſaid, immediately upon the Return of their Children and other Perſons, to give Knowledge thereof unto the Biſhop or Ordinary. And in Caſe they returned not upon the Knowledge of this her Highneſs's Pleaſure, given by the ſaid Parents and other Perſons aforeſaid, not to yield them any Contribution or Relief, directly or indirectly; nor ſhould be privy to, or conceal the Contribution of any other, without diſcloſing the ſame to the Biſhop or Ordinary, upon Pain of her Highneſs's Diſpleaſure, and further Puniſhment, as for their Contempt therein might juſtly be laid upon them.

In Caſe of not returning.

Relief and Maintenance.

“That it ſhould not be lawful after ſix Days expired, for any Merchant, or other whatſoever, by Way of Exchange or otherwiſe, to exchange, convey, or deliver, or procure any Money or other Relief, to or for the Maintenance of any Perſon beyond the Seas, which by the Intent of this Proclamation were prohibited to have or receive any out of her Majeſty's Dominions, upon Pain of her Highneſs's Diſpleaſure, and ſuch further Puniſhment as might be impoſed on the Offenders in that Behalf for ſuch their Contempt and Offence.

Not to go out of the Realm.

“That it ſhould not be lawful for any, of any Degree or Quality whatſoever, to depart out of the Realm, without the Queen's ſpecial Licence.

Jeſuites.

“That her Majeſty was given to underſtand, that divers of her Subjects trained up in the ſaid Colleges and Seminaries beyond the Seas, whereof ſome carried the Name of *Jeſuites*, under the Colour of a holy Name, to deceive and abuſe the ſimpler Sort; and were lately repaired into this Realm by ſpecial Direction from the Pope and his Delegates; with Intent not only to corrupt and

ANNO 1581.

“ pervert her good and loving Subjects in Matter of Conſcience and Religion, but alſo to draw them from their Loyalty and Duty of Obedience, and to provoke them ſo much as ſhall lie in them, to attempt ſomewhat to the Diſturbance of the preſent Quiet; and through the Goodneſs of Almighty God, and her Majeſty's provident Government, this Realm hath for many Years enjoyed.

Penalty to receive them.

“ She therefore foreſeeing the great Miſchief that might enſue by ſuch like Inſtruments, whereof Experience hath been of late ſeen in the Realm of *Ireland*, did therefore notify unto her Subjects that if any of them, or any other within her Highneſs's Dominions, after the publiſhing of this preſent Proclamation, did receive, maintain, ſuccour or relieve any *Jeſuit*, *Seminary* Man, Maſſing Prieſts, or other Perſons aforeſaid, come, or which ſhould come, or be ſent into this Realm, or any other her Dominions; or ſhould not diſcover the receiving and harbouring of them, or any ſuch vagrant Perſons as might be juſtly ſuſpected to be of ſuch Quality and ill Condition; as alſo in Caſe they ſhould remain with them at the Time of the ſaid Publication, or afterwards, ſhould not bring them before the next Juſtice, to be by him committed to the common Jayl, or before other publick Officer; to the End they might in like Sort be committed, and forthcoming to be examined, and to receive ſuch Puniſhment, as by her Majeſty ſhall be thought meet according to their Deſerts: Then they ſhould be reputed as Maintainers and Abbettors of ſuch rebellious and ſeditious Perſons; and receive for the ſame their Contempt ſuch ſevere Puniſhment, as by the Laws of the Realm, and her Highneſs's princely Authority, might be inflicted upon them.

Reward for diſcovering them.

“ And that if any other her Subjects at any Time certainly know any ſuch Perſons, repaired into this Realm for the Purpoſe aforenamed, and therefore give Knowledge to any of her Majeſty's Officers or Miniſters; whereby either they may be, or ſhall be taken and apprehended by the ſaid Officers; then the Informer or Utterer ſhall have her Highneſs's Reward for every ſuch Perſon, by him or them diſcloſed and apprehended, ſuch Sum of Money, as ſhall be an honourable due Reward for ſo good Service; beſides her Majeſty's moſt hearty Thanks for the Diſcharge of their Duty in that Behalf.

Merchants.

“ Provided nevertheleſs, that it ſhall be lawful to, and for Factors and Agents for any lawful Merchants in their Trades and Merchandize in any Parts beyond Seas, and for Mariners in their neceſſary Voyages; to paſs and remain beyond the Seas without incurring any Manner of Contempt, ſo long as they ſhould be employed about ſuch their Voyages and Merchandizing, *&c.* Given at her Majeſty's Palace of *Weſtminſter*, the tenth of *January*, in the twenty third of her Majeſty's moſt noble Reign.

Conferences held with the Seminaries taken up.

As many Seminaries and Maſs Prieſts, and ſuch like, were by Means of the former Proclamation and Search, taken up this Year, and committed to Priſon; ſo Care was taken that Conferences might be held with them, to convince and reclaim them. And ſuch as were, had not only their Liberty, but other Favours ſhewed them. One

ANNO 1581.

One of theſe thus conferred with and reclaimed, was *John Nicolls*, a *Jeſuit*, late a Priſoner in the *Tower*, now become a Preacher. And his Condition being but Needy, having left his former Practice, whence his Subſiſtence came, ſuch was the Kindneſs of the Court, that the Lord Chancellor *Bromley*, and the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, and others of the Council, ſent to the Archbiſhop in his Behalf, that ſome Collection might be made for him. And a Contribution was accordingly made for him by the Biſhops of the Province. For further Knowledge whereof, I refer the Reader to the Life of Archbiſhop *Grindal*.

Book II. Ch. 12.

Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion for Recuſants.

But the Emiſſaries of the Pope were ſo exceeding buſy at this Time; and eſpecially in the Parts about *Shropſhire*, and the Counties thereabouts, that Conferences were not enough to bring theſe Men to a better Mind towards Religion and their Country; and more rigorous Methods were required; and particularly an *Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion*. Which therefore the Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield* now called for. It was not unknown to the Queen and her Council, how dangerous a Condition thoſe Parts there were in, by Reaſon of Recuſants. And therefore had directed their Letters to him in *October* the laſt Year, for ſearching out, and certifying the Recuſants within his Dioceſs. And for better Execution of that Service, to join with him ſome other in Commiſſion, within the Counties of *Warwick*, *Darby*, and *Salop*. But the Biſhop being now in *London*, it being Parliament Time, and for other Letts, could not go down into the Country. He therefore ſent Copies of thoſe Letters to the other Commiſſioners that were in the Country: And withal, ſent his own Letters unto them for their careful Performance of their Duties.

Their Proceeding in Salop.

Afterwards he received a Certificate of their Proceedings from them that were appointed for one of theſe Countries, *viz. Salop*, which now in *April* he ſent to the Lord Treaſurer to be peruſed at his Pleaſure. And by him to be imparted to the reſt of her Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy Council, when he ſhould ſee Cauſe. And in this one Country, which was one of the beſt and moſt conformable Parts of his Dioceſs, there was near one hundred detected and preſented for Recuſancy. And ſome of the Gentlemen in Commiſſion wrote in their private Letters to him, that they could get but four only to be bound, [to their good Abearing, or Appearance] the reſt refuſing moſt obſtinately to come before them. Whereupon the Biſhop put it to him, the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, what great Need they ſhould have of the High Commiſſion in that Country and other Shires of his Dioceſs, worſe than that. Which he left to his honourable Conſideration.

Biſhop of Coventry *and* Litchfield's *Information thereof to the Court.*

He added, " That he knew his Lordſhip ſhould hardly have Leiſure to look over theſe Matters at that buſy Time. Nevertheleſs, he thought it his Part as ſoon as it came to his Hand, to ſend the ſame unto him. That he had yet heard nothing from the other Commiſſioners for the other Countries. But he did heartily recommend two of the Commiſſioners for *Shropſhire* to his Lordſhip, being bound, as he wrote, to interpoſe his Cenſure and Judgment of them that had done this Work. Which was, that as he had heretofore heard great Commendations of them for their Wiſdom

" and Zeal in all godly and Chriſtian Affairs, ſo at this Time they " deſerved no leſs, but a great deal more for their great Pains and " good Order that they had taken in this Matter, and wiſhed that " they might hear of it from their Lordſhips to the better encouraging them in ſuch their ſerviceable and dutiful Travail; being as it " ſhould ſeem, not only forward in Affection of Mind, but alſo " able for their Skill and Learning, to perform any greater Service, " that they might he called unto.

" And being deſirous to go down into the Country, to join " with them in this ſo needful Cauſe, he earneſtly beſeeched his " Lordſhip to uſe a Means to her Majeſty to give him Leave to depart, without any further Leave taking, the Caſe ſtanding with " him as it did. For that indeed his Houſe had been ſomewhat " hardly viſited with that loathſome Diſeaſe. [the Plague, it ſeems.] " Commending in the mean Time his Cauſes to his Friends to follow, " and the Means to him and the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and the Succeſs " to God." This was writ from *Chelſea*. Theſe Cauſes ſeem to be concerning his Claim to the ancient Epiſcopal Juriſdiction over the City of *Litchfield:* which the Citizens were endeavouring to reſume to themſelves againſt the Biſhop. Which we ſhall hear more of under the Year enſuing. And likewiſe a Conteſt about the Chancellorſhip of the Dioceſs between the Biſhop and one *Beacon* who pretended a Right to that Preferment: And who brought the Cauſe before the Privy Council: Which Matter is related elſewhere.

Life of Archbiſhop Grindal, Book II. Ch. 12.

Schiſmaticks, Browne, Handſon, Randal.

Several Schiſmaticks and Men of *Heterodox* Opinions ſhewed themſelves this Year. The Chief of theſe was *Robert Browne*, the Separatiſts, at St. *Edmond's Bury*; and *Handſon*, a Preacher that blowed up Coals of Innovation; inveighing againſt the Communion Book, the Order of Church Government, and the Laws of the Realm eſtabliſhed. Theſe were taken notice of by the Biſhop of *Norwich*, and others in the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, as hath been ſhewed before: And of *Browne* more may be ſeen in the Life of Archbiſhop *Parker*, if this *Browne* be the ſame with him. There was alſo *Randal* a Miniſter of the Dioceſs of *Exeter*, of the *Family of Love*; of whom before.

Book IV. Ch. 6.

A Libertine. His Doctrines.

There was alſo now one *J. B.* in *London* a *Libertine*, whoſe Principles were ſhewn in a little Book that came forth this Year, in Anſwer to diverſe Aſſertions and ſtrange Doctrines of the *Libertines*, *viz.* That the firſt Table of the Law taught us our Duty towards *Chriſt*'s Godhead; and the ſecond Table, our Duty towards *Chriſt*'s Manhood. That *Chriſt* was the *Samaritan* that helped the wounded Man, mentioned in St. *Luke*. That Faith was the Light of the Soul. That the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in *Paradiſe*, was a Figure of God's Law. That the Tree of Life, was a Figure of God's Goſpel. [As though Men's Fancy was to allegorize every Matter of Fact related in Scripture.] That the flaming Sword was a Figure of the Threatnings and Juſtice of God. That the Water in Baptiſm was not a holy Water, in reſpect that it was applied to a holy Uſe. That the ordinary and common Waſhing among the *Turks* and *Jews* was the ſame to them, that *Baptiſm* was to us.

That nothing can be counted Holy, unleſs it be perfect. That *Chriſt* in his humane Soul deſcended into the Place of Torment, appointed for the Wicked, called *Hell*. That the Place of Hell is in the Centre; that is, the Middle of the Earth. That it is utterly Evil for the Elect, to think, ſpeak, or hear of the Fear of God.

Further, That *Papiſts*, *Puritans*, Proteſtants, and the *Family of Love*, be utterly deceived, and in the State of Condemnation, ſave He alone, [that aſſerted theſe Tenets] and thoſe that took Part with him. That no outward Thing, as the Works of Sanctification, unfeigned Forgiveneſs of others, or ſuch like, can be Pledges either to ourſelves or others, of our Election. That we may as well ſay, *Chriſt* is Fleſh of our Fleſh, and Bone of our Bone, as to ſay, We are Fleſh of his Fleſh, and Bone of his Bone. That the Word *Kingdom* in the *Lord's Prayer* is to be underſtood only of the Kingd om of Love and Mercy, and not the Kingdom of Juſtice and Power. That *Chriſt* did not fully finiſh our Redemption upon the Croſs. But that he ſuffered ſomewhat afterwards. That the laſt Words which *Chriſt* ſpake upon the Croſs were theſe, *My God*, *my God*, *why haſt thou forſaken me?* That all the *Jews* generally ſhould be called to the Knowledge of God. That the Word *Sacrament* is not to be found in the Scripture: And therefore not to be uſed: But the Word *Record*. Which he went about to prove from 1 *John* v. 7, 8. That there will come a Time wherein there ſhall be no Need of Sacraments in this Life. The Reaſon, becauſe there will be ſuch Multitudes converted, that there ſhall be no Leiſure to miniſter the Sacraments unto them. That it is Hypocriſy for one Chriſtian to reprove another for Swearing, or any ſuch other Offence: Which he called but *Trifles*.

The Anſwerer *T. W.* digeſted theſe Tenets into twenty Articles, and gave diſtinct Confutation to each: And tells us, "That he was "acquainted with this *Libertine*, *J. B.* nine or ten Years. From "whom he heard theſe and many ſuch curſed Concluſions: As, "that there was not need to pray; eſpecially for Forgiveneſs of "Sins: And that if we keep ourſelves within our Caſtle, *Chriſt*, "nothing that we can commit in this Fleſh, can be Sin unto us. "And if now ſith we are married to *Chriſt*, there are no more Men, "becauſe all are become Women." Books he penned, which this Anſwerer calleth *Beaſtly*. One he intitled his *Muſick*; another his *Ax*, and adds, "That might they be brought to Light, and other "ſuch like Books, the World ſhould then ſee a whole Sea of ſuch "like Abſurdities and Falſhoods broached and ſhed abroad.

But when theſe wild Tenets and Aſſertions were charged upon him, he ſhifted them off, by denying that he had ſaid them, though *T. W.* the Anſwerer and others had heard many of them from his Mouth. But ſaith the Anſwerer, It was a Practice among thoſe Sectaries to ſay and unſay. And ſo did this *Libertine* broach many wild Doctrines which he diſavowed and denyed when charged with them, though they were ſpoken in the Hearing of a great many. "And "ſo Experience had taught, added he, that it had been the very "Uſe of ſundry Hereticks, as in old Time the *Preſilianiſts*, and in "theſe Days the *Family of Love*, to ſay and unſay." And therefore he

Theſe Tenets the Libertine *ſays, and unſays. One of theſe reclaimed.*

ANNO 1581.

Swarms of Atheiſts, &c.

advised the godly Chriſtian, not to credit this or that erroneous Perſon, upon a bare denial of their Untruths; but for the better Sifting of them, to require a plain and open Confeſſion of the contrary Truths. This Anſwerer ſpeaks in his Epiſtle, of Swarms of *Atheiſts*, *Epicures*, *Anabaptiſts*, *Pelagians*, and the *Family of Love*, which that preſent corrupt Age unhappily hatched, and over-much cheriſhed.

Other Doctrines of Libertines.
Book II. Ch. 18.

See divers more of theſe Speculations of the *Libertines*, in the Second Volume of the *Annals*, under the Year 1579. And by comparing thoſe with theſe, it may appear they did not agree in one Set of uniform Principles, but varied according to their Conceits, and Enthuſiaſtical Flights.

The Endeavours of the Puritans.

Their Prayer. Part of a Regiſt.

Anno 1581.

Very earneſt and diligent now alſo were the other Sort of the Diſaffected to the Church eſtabliſhed; namely, againſt the *Epiſcopal* Government of the Church, and the Uſages and Ceremonies required and practiſed in it, as *Antichriſtian*. How averſe their Minds were to theſe Matters, may appear by a Prayer they ſet forth the Twenty-third of the Queen, ſet at the End of one of their Books. Which ran in theſe Words: “O! Lord God, grant for thy Mercy's Sake, that as *Jehoſhaphat*, in the Third Year of his Reign, deſtroyed the high Places and Groves out of *Judah*; and ſent his Princes and Prieſts, and gave them the Book of the Lord [Law] with them to reform Religion by: And ſo Fear came upon every City, that they made not War againſt *Jehoſhaphat*: So, Lord, we humbly beſeech thee, to ſtrengthen the Queen's Highneſs with thy holy Spirit, that in the Twenty-third Year of her Reign, ſhe may caſt down all the High Places of Idolatry within her Land, with the *Popiſh Canon* Law, and all Superſtition and Commandments of Men: And to pluck up all filthy Ceremonies, pertaining to the ſame. And that her Highneſs may ſend forth her Princes and Miniſters, and give them the Book of the Lord. That thereby they may bring home the People of God, to the Purity and Truth of the Apoſtolick Church. And then ſhall the Fear of the Lord come upon every City and Country; that they ſhall not make War againſt our *Jehoſhaphat*. The very Enemies that be without, ſhall be compelled to bring Preſents to her Grace.

“Thus, O Lord, grant, that her Highneſs may not only have a happy, long and proſperous Reign, with Peace of Conſcience in this Life; but alſo in the Life to come, her Highneſs may enjoy by the Merits and Death of Chriſt, our Saviour, Life everlaſting. To which, with the Father and the Holy Ghoſt, be all Honour and Glory, for ever and ever. *Amen.*

“And let all her Majeſty's true Subjects ſay, *Amen.*

By which Prayer it appeareth, what Opinion theſe *New Reformers* had of this Church at this Time, notwithſtanding the Reformation of it: Holding it as corrupt by Idolatry and Superſtition, as the *Jewiſh* Church was, when *Jehoſhaphat* firſt entered upon the Reformation of it. This Prayer is ſet at the End of a Book then ſet forth, intituled, *A View of Antichriſt*, &c. *in our* Engliſh *Church unreformed.*

To

ANNO 1581.

Another Prayer againſt Anti-Chriſt. Part of a Reg.

To which I will add another Compoſition of *Thomas Wilcock* and *John Field*, ſet at the End of a Book of theirs, called, *A Confeſſion of Faith*, intitled, *A Prayer for the Faithful. Viz.* "O! Lord "God, and moſt merciful Father, we beſeech thee, for the Honour "of thy Holy Name, to defend us from the Anti-Chriſt of *Rome*, "and from all his deteſtable Enormities, Manners, Laws, Garments "and Ceremonies. Deſtroy the Counſils of all Papiſts and "Atheiſts, Enemies of the Goſpel, and of this Realm of *England*. "Diſcloſe their Miſchief, and ſubtil Practices. Confound their Devices. "Let them be taken in their own Wilineſſes. And "ſtrengthen all thoſe that maintain the Cauſe and Quarrel of thy "Goſpel, with invincible Force and Power of thy Holy Spirit. "So that though they be deſtitute at any Time of worldly Aid "and Comfort, that yet they fail not to proceed and go forward "toward that true Godlineſs commanded by thy Holy Word, with "all Simplicity and Sincerity, to thy Honour and Glory, the Comfort "of thine Elect, and the Confuſion of thine Enemies. Through "Chriſt, our Lord and Saviour, *Amen. Amen.* And ſay from the "Heart, *Amen.*

CHAP. V.

Univerſity Matters. Tenets of Baro, Margaret *Profeſſor at* Cambridge. *Conteſt between him and* Chaderton *about them. A Batchelor of Arts makes an Invective againſt the Duke* D'Anjou. *Called before the Vicechancellor. His Letter to their Chancellor. One in* Trinity College *in Trouble.* Caius *College. Number of Students in* Cambridge. *Sheriffs of* Oxon, *their Oath. Sheriffs Favour to School-Maſters.* Mulcaſter, *a School-Maſter.* Wincheſter *College, their Addreſs to the Queen.* Lincoln'*s*-Inn *chuſes* Chark *for their Preacher.*

NOW to look over into our Univerſities, and among the Learned there.

A Doctrine of Baro, Margaret *Profeſſor.*

Peter Baro, a *Frenchman* by Birth, was now Lady *Margaret* Profeſſor at *Cambridge*. Whoſe Doctrine about *Univerſal Redemption*, ſomewhat varied from, or thwarted ſome of the Articles received in the Church of *England*, as ſome of the Learned there thought: Among the reſt *Lawrence Chaderton*, B. D. Fellow of a College there; who preached publickly againſt thoſe Tenets of that Profeſſor, in a Sermon; of which *William Dillingham* (in a Book writ of the ſaid *Chaderton*'s Life, printed *Anno* 1700.) gives this Account: "That his *Nova Dogmata*, brought

ANNO 1581. " with him into *England*, diſſonant from the Truth, and Doctrine " of the Church of *England*, he refuted in a Sermon, being then " Batchelor of Divinity. For which *Baro* cited him into the Con- " ſiſtory, before the Vicechancellor and other Heads, by Argu- " ments written by him in his own Defence. Which *Chaderton* " learnedly and accutely anſwered.

Baro's *Theſes* were theſe,

Primus Dei Amor eſt de natura Fidei juſtificantis.

Fides juſtificans præcipitur in Docalogo.

Chaderton defended the contrary. But afterwards they ſeemed each of them to come nearer to one another by ſofter Words: And yet both abounding in their own Senſe. Theſe Writings of *Chaderton*, *Dillingham*, the Writer of his Life, tells us, he found in ſearching certain old *Scrinia* of the Univerſity. Which he delivered afterwards to the Univerſity, to be preſerved among their Κειμήλια. In the Concluſion he thus declared himſelf to the Heads, " That God was Witneſs, That in theſe Caſes he neither " publickly, nor privately, ſpake any Thing, either out of a Study " of Contradiction, or with any Mind of ſpeaking Evil of any Man, " but only publickly to teach and defend the true Doctrine of the " Church of *England*, (of which he profeſſed himſelf a Member, " though the leaſt of all) that had been impugned by a Man, " however dear to him: Eſpecially the Senſe of the Place of Scrip- " ture, which he took for his Text, requiring it.

How the Matter of that Controverſy ſtood: And how the Caſe came before the Chancellor of the Univerſity and the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, divers Years after, and *Baro*'s Troubles, may be read at large in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*, under the Year 1595. Book IV. Chap. 13, 14, 15.

As *Monſieur*, the *French* King's Brother was here, Courting the Queen, which was not acceptable to very many in the Kingdom, ſo neither to ſome in the Univerſities. *An Invective made at Cambridge againſt* Monſieur. We have heard of the *Gaping Gulph, wherein* England *was like to be devoured*; a Book writ by *Stubbs*; for which he was puniſhed with the loſs of his Right Hand. So here a Batchelor of Arts, Sir *Morden* of *Peter-Houſe*, ventured to declaim in the Schools againſt the ſaid *Monſieur*. In whoſe Speech were ſuch bold Expreſſions, that it ſoon came to the Ears of Dr. *Perne*, the Vice-chancellor. Who calling the Heads together, ſent for the Scholar, and his Oration, and committed him to Priſon. And withal, that no Diſpleaſure might be taken by the Queen againſt the Univerſity, he addreſſed a Letter to the Lord *Burghley*, their Chancellor, acquainting him with the whole Matter. And then deſired to know his Pleaſure in this Affair. But like a tender Patron of the Scholar, he mitigated as much as he could, the Crime, in reſpect of the Perſon; who was of a melancholick Diſpoſition, and loved a ſolitary Life. And withal, giving the Chancellor the Cauſe the Scholar gave of his Speech, to be, only to exerciſe his Oratory in Imitation of *Tully*.

The Vicechancellor's Letter concerning it. But the Vicechancellor's Letter unfolds at large, and more particularly this Cauſe. Which ran to this Tenor: " That whereas " there was a young Man in *Cambridge*, a Batchelor of Arts of

" *Peter-*

ANNO
1581.

“ *Peter-Houſe*, called Sir *Morden*, who in his Problem kept in the
“ *Logic* Schools, the 28th of *April*, had very lewdly in his Oration
“ inveighed againſt *Monſieur*. As ſoon as he [the Vicechancellor]
“ had underſtanding of it, he immediately ſent a Beadle for him,
“ and for his Oration, and for ſuch Batchelors, as were preſent, to
“ come before him in the Conſiſtory, in the Preſence of certain of
“ the Heads of the Colleges and Doctors, that were then with him in
“ the *Regent* Houſe at a Congregation. Before whom after that he had
“ read Part of the ſaid Oration, ſeeing it was made as an Invective
“ againſt *Monſieur*; he demanded of the ſaid *Morden*, What he
“ did mean ſo wickedly, and like a mad Man to abuſe any manner
“ of Perſon, much more ſo noble a Prince, and in that Place, con-
“ trary to the Order of the Schools, and contrary to all Godlineſs,
“ Honeſty and Wiſdom? That he anſwered, He did it for Exerciſe
“ of the Imitation of *Tully*. The which Anſwer, (as the Vice-
“ chancellor writ) did appear in ſome Part to be true, by the Sen-
“ tences and *Phraſes* taken out of *Tully*'s Orations *Contra Verrem*
“ *& Catalinam*; but wickedly, and without all Diſcretion applied
“ againſt *Monſieur*. For the which he took it his Duty to commit
“ him to Priſon, till he knew further of his [the ſaid Chancellor's]
“ Pleaſure, after that his Lordſhip had ſeen the ſaid lewd and ſlan-
“ derous Oration againſt ſuch a Noble Prince at this Time; and alſo
“ till his Honour ſhould underſtand of the State of the ſaid Batche-
“ lor, who had no Living in *Cambridge*, and was of no Credit or
“ Eſtimation any Way: For that he was well known both in the
“ College, and otherwiſe, to be ſo greatly troubled with Melancho-
“ ly, that he had lived almoſt ſolitary, without any Diſcretion;
“ or troubled in his Wits greatly: And having a great Weaning of
“ his own Wit and Learning, appeared puft up with vain Glory
“ and Madneſs, had played this mad Part, worthy of ſuch Corre-
“ ction, as ſhould be thought convenient to his Honour's Wiſdom,
“ for his wicked and ſlanderous Oration; though he were of no
“ wiſdom, as appeared evidently by the ſame; nor yet of any Cre-
“ dit or Eſtimation.

“ Thus being right heartily ſorry (as he went on) to trouble
“ your Honour at this Time any kind of Way, I pray Almighty
“ God to direct you with his holy Spirit, in all your honourable
“ and weighty Affairs.

And then he concluded with ſome Account of the preſent State of that Univerſity, in reſpect of the Scholars Habits, and the Decency and Sobriety of their Behaviour; which had been diſorderly before, and complained of: And concerning ſome Controverſies with the Townſmen: All was now, by his, their Chancellor's Care and Advice, in Peace, Quiet and good Order. As the Vicechancellor proceeded in his Letter.

The preſent good State of that Univerſity.

“ That all other Things were very well
“ and in good Order in the Univerſity, both for the Exerciſe of
“ Learning, and alſo for Comlineſs in Apparel, and Manners of
“ Scholars, as it was this *prox.* [laſt] Year. And the Town and
“ they had agreed well of all thoſe Things, wherein they craved
“ his Honour's Help. And that for the which they were daily bound
“ to pray to Almighty God, for his Honour's long Preſervation

ANNO 1581.

" in all godly Proſperity. From *Cambridge*, the 29th of *April*, " 1581. Subſcribing,

Your Honour's daily Orator,

Andrew Perne.

The Bearer of this Letter was Mr. *Nevil*, Senior Procter of the Univerſity.

One of Trinity College in Trouble for ſome Opinions.

There is alſo a Remark I have to make of another Scholar of this Univerſity, namely, one *Medolph*, a Fellow of *Trinity* College: Who had maintained ſome Opinions, that touched upon the Church of *England*, as it ſeemed, and of ſavouring ſome odd and dangerous Principles againſt the State of it. For which he was called before the Maſter and Fellows, and required his Anſwer to what he had aſſerted. But not giving them that Satisfaction they required, they did reſolve to deprive him of his Fellowſhip. But the Lord *Burghley*, that Univerſity's compaſſionate Chancellor, hearing this, reckoned, they had proceeded too rigorouſly againſt him. And therefore loth, that a young Scholar, and hopeful Perſon, ſhould be thus expoſed to Need, and thrown out of a Place of Study, and Improvement of himſelf in Literature, reſolved to have the Cauſe brought before him, to hear it: And required the Articles againſt him to be brought to him. Whoſe humane, diſcreet and wiſe Letter to the Maſter and Fellows, deſerves to be here repeated.

" After my harty Commendations. Where I am given to underſtand by ſome Perſonages of good Regard, that you have lately " intended the Deprivation of one *Medolph*, Fellow of your Houſe, " for ſome Opinions maintained by him, wherewith he was charged, " and whereto, as it ſeemeth, he hath not by his Anſwer ſatisfied " you; as believing, and thought by you, ſufficient to anſwer his " Accuſation: Being peradventure more hardly conſtrued than his " Meaning was by the ſame Anſwer, if the ſame were to be interpreted indifferently, and according to his Meaning: And though " happly the Offence of the ſaid *Medolph* may be very great herein, " and deſerving Puniſhment, yet ſeeing the Proceeding of you againſt him in ſo high a Degree as Deprivation, is as great a Puniſhment as can be inflicted upon the greateſt diſordered Perſons " in any Society: Whereto it is thought this his Offence cannot any " way come near; and being as great a Puniſhment in ſuch a Civil " Government, as Death to a Malefactor and Infringer of the Laws " in his Kind:

" I cannot think it convenient, neither do I allow in a Society, " profeſſing Chriſtian Society and Charity, any ſuch extreme Puniſhment to be impoſed upon any, eſpecially being Fellow, and of " Account and Credit, in a publick Univerſity and Society, as " yours is, without greater and more urgent Cauſe thereto, than I " underſtand. And therefore, or ever you ſhall proceed to the Publication of your Deprivation againſt him, I am to, and hereby do " require you, to ſtay the ſame, until ſuch Time as you ſhall have " ſent up to me the Articles, wherewith you charge the ſaid *Medolph*, " and

ANNO 1581.

“ and whereto he hath made his Anſwers, that do not ſatisfy you.
“ That it may be conſidered, how far his Offence ſhall deſerve ſuch
“ ſtrict Puniſhment, or Mitigation, as ſhall be thought to anſwer
“ the Quality of his Offence; or that he may be induced by fairer
“ Means to ſatisfy you.

“ And if you ſhall have any further or other Matter to charge the
“ ſaid *Medolph* with, than this, to which he hath made Anſwer,
“ you ſhall do well likewiſe to ſend the ſame up, to be likewiſe
“ conſidered of. For my Meaning is ſo to temper this Cauſe, as
“ neither I would have any Error or offenſive Opinions maintained
“ againſt the State of our Church; neither yet would I that every
“ Opinion miſconceived, or Opinion that may by Argument be miſ-
“ interpreted offenſive, ſhould ſo ſharply be puniſhed, as I know
“ Deprivation is to a poor Student and Scholar; whoſe Reformation
“ were to be otherwiſe ſought, in a Caſe of no greater Weight, than
“ as I am informed this is.

What the Opinion of this Man was, that varied from, or was oppoſite to the Doctrine or Practice of the Church, I find not; but the Wiſdom of the Chancellor, and his Care as of the Univerſity in general, ſo of every Member thereof in particular, brightly appears in this his Letter.

Maſter of Caius *College, Popiſhly affected.*

Dr. *Legg* of this Univerſity, Maſter of *Caius* College, was Popiſhly affected; and bred up young Gentlemen, his Pupils, in Popiſh and diſloyal Principles. And many Gentlemen in the North, that were *Romaniſts*, or that Way diſpoſed, ſent their Children and Relations to him for their Education. Who ſent them back ſtrengthened more in Popery. *Sandys*, the good Archbiſhop of *York* knew this, and ſent an earneſt Letter this Year to the Lord Treaſurer to inform him thereof; and to be a Means to ſtop *Legg* from taking any more Pupils, to prevent his infuſing bad Principles into them. The Archbiſhop's Letter is tranſcribed, and may be read in the former Volume of the *Annals*.

Annals, Vol. I. Book II. Ch. 21.

Number of Preachers and Students in Cambridge.

A Paper was ſent up, as it ſeems to the High Chancellor of this Univerſity, giving an Account of the Numbers of the Profeſſors, and Students thereof: And what Need there was of more Encouragement for them, conſidering their Numbers. It began at this Year, 1581. and ſo to the Year 1588: *viz.*

“ *Anno* 1581, *Numbers* of all the *Preachers* in *Cambridge*. Their
“ Numbers amounted to 131.

“ *Numbers* of all the *Readers* and *Auditors* of every Lecture in
“ *Cambridge*, amounted to 1862.

The Year uncertain, but not long after the Former: “ Students
“ within the Colleges of *Cambridge*, 1950. *Graduates*, 657.
“ *Preachers*, almoſt all unprovided for, 122. Beſides many which
“ be ready to be employed.

“ Of theſe there be poor Students, which be very godly and pain-
“ ful: And for lack of Exhibition, ſhall be forced to forſake their
“ Studies, 269.

“ May it pleaſe you to conſider of their Relief; and to give In-
“ telligence of your Liberalities herein to Mr. Dean of *Paul's*. By

“ whom with the Aſſiſtance of ſome others, it ſhall be well beſtowed.

By which Addreſs it appears, that the foregoing Account of the Numbers of the learned Men and Scholars there was ſent up, in order to encourage their Studies; that the Church might be furniſhed with able Perſons and Men of Learning; the want of which was the great Complaint of theſe Times. And for this Purpoſe a liberal Contribution was made among well diſpoſed Perſons; and eſpecially in the City of *London:* And the Dean of *Paul*'s appointed the Treaſurer.

The former Liſt ends at the Year 1588. “ Scholars, Profeſſors “ and Auditors in that Univerſity, then were in Number 1671.

A Controverſy decided about an Oath of the Sheriff of Oxford.

Controverſies between the Univerſity of *Oxford* and the Townſmen, continued ſharply from the Year 1575. to this preſent Year, (unleſs pacified for a while) by the favourable Countenance and Determination of the Lord Treaſurer, were compoſed; and particularly about every High Sheriff of the County, to be obliged in the Entrance upon his Office, to take an Oath to uphold and defend the antient Statutes, Privileges and Cuſtoms thereof. For this his ſingular and ſeaſonable Favour, they, in the Name of the Univerſity ſent him an Epiſtle of great Thanks, their long Troubles with their Neighbours being now at an End, by his Means. Wherein they acknowledge his Favour ſhewed them, particularly in two Things, *viz.* In vindicating their antient Privileges, which had been mightily oppoſed by the Juries of the Citizens; and that he ordered, that the Sheriffs of *Oxford*, according as they were wont, and ought, ſhould ſwear to the Obſervation of their Statutes, and to the Defence and Safeguard of them. Beginning their Letter with the Happineſs of the other Univerſity in ſuch a Patron of them and their Studies, as he was: *Quàm ſit beata & felix Reſpublica literaria (Illuſtriſſime Domine) quod te virum Prudentia ornatum ſingulari, & ſummâ præditum authoritate nacta ſit Patronum & Defenſorem, teſtis eſt non illa modo* Cantabrigienſis *Academia, &c.* That is, “ How bleſſed and happy the Commonwealth of Learning was “ in him, a Perſon adorned with ſingular Prudence, and endued “ with chief Authority, its Patron and Defender, the Univerſity “ of *Cambridge* was Witneſs; which happily enjoyed Reſt and “ Quiet under his Patronage, *&c.* Among the Expreſſions to ſet forth their Thanks, they promiſe him, that they would never be overcome by his own *Cambridge* in loving and honouring him, and in all kind of Duty, ſatisfying his Honour in any Thing, and at any Time they might ſhew it. But I leave the whole Copy of that University's Letter in the *Appendix*. Numb. VIII.

The Univerſity to the Lord Treaſurer, concerning Swearing the High Sheriff.

This Letter was written in *June:* And not many Months after, *viz.* In *November* they addreſs to him again, when a new Sheriff was to enter upon his Office; of whoſe Backwardneſs to ſuch an Oath, to maintain their Liberties, as above, they were jealous. They now ſent him up a Copy of their Statute relating to the Sheriff of *Oxford:* And prayed him to oblige the ſaid Sheriff, that there might be no Delay or Procraſtination in the ſwearing him in that Behalf. The Letter was as followeth:

Statutum eſt (Honoratiſſime vir) ut Vicecomes, ejuſque Vicem gerens, juramentum preſtaret de obſervandis Academiæ noſtræ privigelijs. Quoniamque jam Tempus inſtat, quo ſeneſcenti veteri novus eſt Succeſſor ſufficiendus, cujus de Juramento anxij ſumus, & ſoliciti; ab Amplitudine tua ſupplices rogamus, ut ſubvenias huic noſtræ ſolicitudini. Non erubeſcimus id a te per Literas petere humillimè, quod nobis omnium maximum ſit, & maximè neceſſarium. Honori tuo noſtra omnia commendatiſſima eſſe cupimus: tum nihil magis, quàm ne Tempus exigendi hujus Sacramenti, aut omittatur, aut prorogetur. Omnis enim procraſtinatio periculi plena. Hoc, quo feliciores maturioréſque habeat Succeſſus; te, tuum Honorem, tuam Vitam, Salutem, Cogitationes, Conſilia, Divini Numinis Majeſtati & Bonitati, commendamus. Oxon. 14*to. Kalendas Decemb. Anno Salutis*, 1581.

Honoris tui Studioſiſſima,

Academia Oxon.

For the Statute which the Univerſity ſent up with the former Letter; being their Charter granted them 29. *Edw.* III. for the Sheriff's Oath, I betake the Reader to the *Appendix*, where the Copy of it is repoſited.

Num. IX.

From the Univerſities I paſs on to a Paſſage or two which I meet with, falling in this Year, concerning the Inſtructers of Youth in Schools of leſſer Eminence. The Favour ſhewn to School-maſters in theſe Tines was remarkable, being commonly freed from Taxes and ordinary Payments, and had Exemptions from perſonal Services: Commonly charged upon other Subjects. Which *Richard Mulcaſter*, an eminent School-maſter in *London* in his *Elementary*, (a Book of his ſetting forth the next Year) called "The *Munificence*, and that extraordinary, of our Princes and Parliaments towards their whole Order [of School-Maſters] in the Country's Behalf." But it ſeems in a Subſidy given the Queen about this Year, or the next, ſome that were Aſſeſſors had ceſſed all School-Maſters, though it was not done before: Or at leaſt, ſtarting a Queſtion about it, upon ſome Quarrel againſt ſome few of them. And ſo ſeeking the Dammage of all. Which *Mulcaſter* ſtyled, *ſcant charitable dealing the Damages of a Number, by Quarrel to ſome few.* But upon this, the School-maſters make an humble Addreſs to Sir *Walter Mildmay* Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir *Roger Manwood*, Lord Chief Baron of the Court of Exchequer, *Ro. Sute*, *John Clinch*, and *John Sotherton*, Eſqrs; Barons of the Exchequer: Beſeeching them for the common Benefit of a Number of poor Men to favour them in this Matter. Whereupon it pleaſed them to take the Cauſe to Protection; and to conſtrue the Statute both as the Parliament Men did mean it, and as they had ſtill enjoyed it, to the common Benefit of their whole Company. Upon which that Writer concluded, "That this their great Goodneſs to the Favour of their Order, as it deſerved at their Hands an honourable Remembrance, ſo it bound them further to the common Care, for the which they had been favoured.

Favour ſhewn to School-maſters.

Element. p. 271.

The School-maſters Addreſs to the Judges.

ANNO 1581.

The Queen's Requeſt to Wincheſter *College.*

I come now to note a Mark of the Queen's Regard to Colleges of Learning and Religion, by what happened to *Wincheſter* College. She had this Year requeſted a Favour of the Warden of that College: Which was, That they would grant her a long Leaſe of the Rectory of *Downton*, in their Gift. With which ſhe intended to gratify Mr. *Wilks*, Clerk of her Council, and one who by Embaſſies and Meſſages had well deſerved of her. This the College could not tell how to deny the Queen, though the Fear of ſuch like Grants for the Future did diſcourage them, only the Queen had graciouſly promiſed them, that it ſhould be no Precedent, and that ſhe intended now to make no ſuch Requeſts of them at any Time hereafter. They humbly and readily granted her Letter: But withal, put her in Mind of making good that Promiſe, by ſome Aſſurance from her. Their Letter to her may deſerve our Reading. It is as followeth.

Their Letter to her. Paper-Houſe.

“ May it pleaſe your moſt excellent Majeſty, anſwering the Requeſt of your Majeſty's Letter, and our willing, and moſt dutiful Diſpoſition and Promiſe to accompliſh the ſame. We, the Warden, Fellows and Scholars, Clerks of this College, have ſealed and confirmed the Leaſe unto your Highneſs for Forty Years, of the Parſonage and Rectory of *Downton*, in the County of *Wilts*. The rather, our Duties with all Humility conſidered, for that we are given to underſtand, that the ſaid Leaſe is by your Majeſty intended to be conferred on Mr. *Wilks*, one of the Clerks of your Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council; in Conſideration of his Service, done unto your Majeſty and the Realm. Which with our ſaid Duties we have herein ſpecially conſidered. And do moſt humbly deſire and beſeech your moſt excellent Majeſty, that this our Grant may for the Time to come, by your Majeſty's Princely Affection towards the Maintenance of Learning, be a ſufficient Occaſion to make a Stay of the like Suits to be hereafter tendred by any Perſon of your Highneſs. So as our Hope conceived, and your Majeſty's Promiſe thereunto moſt graciouſly yielded, may by your Highneſs's Special Letters be effectually ſignified, to remain with us, as a particular Act of your Majeſty's moſt gracious good Meaning: To diſcharge us of the Hazard of the Decay of our Maintenance, the Hurting of ſo worthy a Foundation, and the Burthen of our Conſciences, being ſworn to the Preſervation thereof, as far forth as the Authority of our Founder might extend; and our Oath as dutiful Subjects may be meaſured by your Majeſty, and the Laws of your Realm in that Behalf provided.

“ And therefore with the Performance of our Duties, and Profeſſion, as is before-mentioned, we do eſtſones moſt humbly, and with all dutiful Submiſſion, very earneſtly deſire your moſt excellent Majeſty to have a gracious Conſideration of our preſent Eſtate, and as a true Mother of all vertuous and good Learning, to yield unto a ſpeedy Defence againſt all other Attempts, as may be, to the opening of ſo large a Gap, as by this our extraordinary Grant unto your Majeſty, may hereafter, by your Authority, be entred into: Wherein hoping to find your Majeſty our gracious good Lady, we beſeech Almighty God to preſerve you in Health

ANNO 1581.

“ and Happineſs, long to Reign over us, to the Overthrow of your Enemies, and the Comfort of us all, your dutiful Subjects. From your College near *Wincheſter*, this xiiith of *March*.

Your Majeſty's moſt humble and obedient Subjects, the Warden and Fellows, and Scholars, Clerks of St. Mary's *College of* Wincheſter.

Chark *nominated Preacher of* Lincoln's *Inn*.

Lincoln's Inn, another Society of learned Men of another Science, had not yet a conſtant Preacher fixed among them, as other of the Inns of Court had. And they were in this, or near this Year, reſolving upon ſome able Preacher to officiate, among them in that Quality. Mr. *Chark* of *Cambridge*, late of *Peter-Houſe* was the Man they enclined to. But he was a Perſon diſaffected to the *Habits* of the Clergy, and to the preſent Government of the Church by Metropolitans, Archbiſhops, Biſhops, *&c.* Which he had openly preached againſt in St. *Mary*'s *Cambridge*, ſome Years before: And was now in the Houſhold of the Ducheſs of *Somerſet*; and eſteemed for his good Parts and Eloquence. But firſt the Society had moved Mr. *Chaderton*, an eminent Man of *Cambridge*, and Mr. *Reynolds* another Man of Note in *Oxford*, to be their Preacher, but they were not minded to leave their preſent Places. But then *Chark* was next in their View. And in Order to that, they applied themſelves to the Biſhop of *London*, for his Approbation and Allowance of him. Which he refuſed not, as knowing his Abilities. But withal, adviſing them to apply to the Lords of the Council for their Allowance firſt, as not willing to admit him of his own ſole Authority. Which accordingly they did, by uſing the Intereſt of ſome Perſon at Court, that had been of their Society, to procure ſome of the Lords to approve of the ſaid *Chark* to be their Preacher. And accordingly wrote a Letter to him for that Purpoſe, which was to this Tenor.

Their Letter to a Courtier to procure the Allowance of him.

“ Where we have been a long Time deſirous to have a Preacher in our Houſe, like as in other Houſes of Court: And having made Offers to divers, as to Mr. *Chaderton*, Mr. *Reynolds*, and others, could not procure them thither, by Reaſon they are not willing to leave the Places and Charges they are in already; and thereupon have at length choſen Mr. *Chark*; we have thought good to acquaint the Biſhop therewith; to the End we might have his Lordſhip's Allowance therein. Who, although for his own Part, he doth very well like of Mr. *Chark* for many good Gifts in him; whereof alſo himſelf remembred ſome Particulars, and gave him his very good Commendations; yet he wiſhed the Lords to be made acquainted therewith. To the End that their good Allowance and Approbation might concur with his, for Mr. *Chark*'s better Encouragement and Countenance in that Place. And for as much as we are deſirous thereof ourſelves, and conſider that you are (as we do all account you) one of us, we have thought good to uſe your good Means in procuring ſome Letters from the Lords and others, to ſuch Effect as may ſeem good to their Lordſhips. Wherein we would have been ready to have given our own Attendance, but that we have ſo good and ready Means as you are, on whom we are bold to lay this Burthen for this Time. And ſo fare you well. Your Loving Friends, *&c.*

The Perſon to whom this Letter was written appears not; yet I verily believe it was either *Vincent Skinner* or *Michael Hicks*, both of

ANNO 1581.

of that Society of *Lincoln's Inn*, and both Secretaries to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* at this Time. And ſo had a greater Opportunity of promoting the Requeſt of theſe Gentlemen. Who had the Succeſs deſired, from the Lords. As appears by their Letter to the Biſhop of *London*, [Biſhop *Elmer*] as follows:

The Lords to the Biſhop of London, *recommending* Chark.

"After our harty Commendations. Where we are given to underſtand, that the Bench of *Lincoln's Inn* have made Choice of late of Mr. *Chark* to be their Preacher, as other Houſes of Court have likewiſe done of others; and that your Lordſhip having been made acquainted therewith, (as in theſe Cauſes we think is requiſite) have deſired notwithſtanding your own good liking, to have ſome Signification of ours alſo; we conſidering the great Hope of Good to be done by ſuch Means in thoſe Places, and underſtanding the Hability of Mr. *Chark* ſufficient for that Purpoſe, have thought good to join our good-liking to yours, to the Furtherance of ſo good a Service, as we hope this will be to God, and to her Majeſty. And ſo we bid your Lordſhip right hartily farewel. Your loving Friends, *&c.*

Book I. Ch. 7. *ſub Anno* 1572.

This *Chark* was a *Puritan*, and for the new Diſcipline, and againſt the Government of the Church by Biſhops: Of whom you may read more in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. But perhaps his Principles were moderated by this Time, and better regulated.

CHAP. VI.

Edward *Earl of* Oxford*: Diſpleaſed with the Lady his Wife. Whence occaſioned. Her humble Letter to him. Matters between him and the Lord* Burghley*, her Father. His three Daughters, endowed with Lands by Lord* Burghley. *The Earl's Debts. Motion made for eſpouſing* Anne Cecil *and* Philip Sidney *in their Childhoods.* Elizabeth, *the Lord Treaſurer's other Daughter, married to the Lord* Wentworth*'s Son. Other Motions of Marriage for her. Lord* Tho. Paget *and his Wife part. A Note of* Manwood, *Lord Chief Juſtice.* Nudigate, *Steward to the Dutcheſs of* Somerſet, *his Death: And laſt Will. The Dutcheſs, his Executrix. A Note concerning her. A Woman ſteals: Her horrible Perjury. A Woman deals in* Necromancy; *drowns herſelf.*

The Earl of Oxon married to the Lord Treaſurer's Daughter; diſcontented.

NOW for a few more private and domeſtick Matters, that fell out within this Year.

The Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*, had divers Years before, [*viz.* 1571.] diſpoſed in Marriage his Daughter

ANNO 1581.

Her Character. Dr. Lewen, *her Inſtructor.*

ter *Anne*, a Lady in the Queen's Bed-Chamber, to *Edward* Earl of *Oxford*, that had been his Ward: She was a very accompliſhed and learned Lady. *William Lewen*, LL. D. was her Inſtructer in Learning. And when he had deſired of the Lord Treaſurer, her Father, ſome certain Place and Employment, ſhe alſo writ to him, his Letter dated at *Wivenhoe*, a Seat of the Earl's, in *Lewen*'s Behalf: And prayed her Father to recommend him to the Queen, to tranſlate into *Latin* from our Mother Tongue the Works of Biſhop *Jewel*: And that he was very deſirous to employ his Pen therein: And this, that he might become known to her Majeſty. In *Lewen*'s Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, he ſtyled her, *Mea, mei Studioſiſſima, Hera*, in reſpect of her Kindneſs and good Will towards him: And in reſpect of her own Ingenuity and Virtue, he commended her in theſe Words, *Hera mea, & Ingenij & Naturæ bonitas, a te quidem, ipſo Patre hauſta*: *i. e.* My Lady, the Goodneſs, of whoſe both Wit and Nature is from you, her Father, derived.

Well, this for her Character: Her Father advancing her by her Marriage to the Title of Counteſs: Here was Honour for her, yet little Contentment. For he ſoon proved unkind to her, an excellent well deſerving Lady, and moſt dear to her Father: the Earl having taken ſome Exceptions to the Lord *Burghley*; as in not procuring him ſome Place and other Favours from the Queen. So that in Diſguſt he ſoon abſented himſelf from her, and went abroad to travel. The main Cauſe was, he was very extravagant, and had run out. Endeavours were now made to make up Matters, and bebeget a Reconciliation between him and his Lady; whom he now pretended ſome Jealouſy of, or ſome other Crime, whereof ſhe, a very virtuous Woman, was altogether innocent. Which in how humble and obliging a Manner ſhe avowed the ſame, and how deſirous of his Return to her, her Letter from her Father's Houſe, whither ſhe was now retired, will ſhew. Which ran in theſe Words.

The Counteſs's Letter to the Earl her Huſband.

“My Lord, in what Miſery may I accuſe myſelf to be, that neither can ſee any End thereof, nor yet any Hope, how to diminiſh it? And now of late having ſome Hope in my own Conceit, that your Lordſhip would have renewed ſome Part of your Favour that you began to ſhew me this Summer, when you made me ſome Aſſurance of your good Meaning, though you ſeemed fearful, how to ſhew it by open Actions. Now after long Silence of hearing any thing from you, at the length I am informed, (but how truly I know not, and yet how uncomfortably I do feel it) that your Lordſhip is entered into ſome miſliking of me, without any Cauſe in Deed or Thought.

“And therefore, my good Lord, I beſeech you in the Name of that God that knows all my Thoughts, and my Love towards you, notwithſtanding your evil Uſage of me; let me know the Truth of your Meaning towards me, upon what Cauſe you are moved to continue me in this Miſery; and what you would have me do in my Power, to recover your conſtant Favour. So as your Lordſhip may not be ſtill led to detain me in Calamity, without

ANNO 1581.

“ ſome probable Cauſe; whereof I appeal to God I am utterly innocent. From my Father's Houſe in *Weſtminſter*, this 7th of *December*, 1581.

Earl of Oxon *a Priſoner in his own Houſe.*

To ſearch a little into this Earl's Diſpleaſure and Diſcontent with his Innocent Lady. By this Time he had run out a great Part of his Eſtate, and was got deep into the Queen's Debt; and conſorted with ſuch Perſons whom the Queen had a Jealouſy of, as the Family of the *Howards*, and others Popiſhly affected. So that I find him now committed to his Houſe. But by his Father in Law, the Lord *Burghley*'s Intereſt with the Queen, ſhe had promiſed him his Liberty. We may gueſs at his Reſtraint by the Meſſage ſhe ſent him by her Secretary *Walſingham*, in theſe particular Points. Firſt, That ſhe would have heard the Matter again touching *Henry Howard*, [who was Brother to the late Duke of *Norfolk*, beheaded] *Southwell*, and *Arundel* [the Duke's Son.] Uncertain I am what that Matter was; whether a Quarrel, or a Law-ſuit about Lands. Secondly, That ſhe underſtood, he meant to cut down all his Woods, eſpecially about his Houſe. Which ſhe did not ſo well like of. As alſo, That he ſhould ſell ſo many Lands elſewhere, as he had done a great many before. And, laſtly, That ſhe had heard that he had been hardly uſed by ſome of his Servants, during the Time of his Commitment. Wherein ſhe promiſed her Aid ſo far as ſhe could with Juſtice, to redreſs the Loſs he had ſuſtained thereby.

Sells Lands to Lord Darcy, *and* Walgrave.

He had ſold Lands among others, to the Lord *Darcy* and Sir *Will. Walgrave*; and being gotten into the Queen's Debt, the Lands that he had ſold to them were in Danger of being extended. And he had entred into Bonds to ſuch as had purchaſed Lands of him, to diſcharge them of all Incumbrances. And to thoſe two Gentlemen he had entred into Statute of great Sums for their Diſcharge. But the Earl was dilatory, and they had entreated him to diſcharge her Majeſty's Debt: And did ſeem willing at laſt to bear a Burthen thereof, if by his Means the ſame might be ſtalled, and paid at ſome convenient Days. For obtaining this, the Earl deſired the Lord *Burghley*'s Aſſiſtance: And that (as he wrote in his Letter to him) *for the ſaving of his Honour, and the ſecuring his Wife's Joynture.* And this he knew would go a great Way with him, her tender Father; and that the Queen's not yielding thereto might give a new Occaſion to the Earl to fall out with his Counteſs.

The Earl highly offended with the Lord Burghley. *And why.*

The Lord *Burghley* perceiving, how the Earl went on ſpending, partly mortgaging, and partly ſelling away his Lands and Demeans, and alſo had made Sales and Leaſes greatly diſadvantageous to himſelf, ſent for one *Amyſe* his Servant, [perhaps his Steward] telling him, that he ſhould take his Opportunity, to adviſe his Lord to leave the whole Management of his Eſtate to him, the ſaid *Amyſe*, or to ſome other faithful Servant; and to reſolve not to treat, or make any Bargain with any hereafter himſelf. But at this, when the Earl came acquainted with it, he was highly enraged. And thus expreſſed himſelf in the Poſtſcript of a Letter he had ſent to that Lord for ſome conſiderable Favour; “ That he now underſtood the mean “ Opinion he had of him, and the ſmall Good-will he bare him. “ And that though he were nearly allied unto him, yet he meant

“ not to be his Ward, nor his Child. And that he was free, and ſcorned to be offered that Injury, to think that he was ſo weak of Government as to be ruled by Servants, or not able to govern himſelf. And that his Lordſhip would leave that Courſe, as hurtful to them both; if he would have him make Account of his [the Lord *Burghley*'s] Friendſhip. As threatning to take another Courſe, if his Lordſhip took that: Not thinking fit to take his Counſil, that was the wiſeſt Counſellor in the Nation. This happened in the Year 1584.

The Lord Burghley *leaves Lands to the Earl's Daughters.*

His Lady had three Daughters by him; who (with their Mother, the Counteſs) lived with the Lord *Burghley*, their Grandfather. And who by his laſt Will had left Jewels among them, and conveyed Lands to each of them: Unleſs by Default of Iſſue. And then thoſe Lands were to return to his own Heirs of his Body. But upon the Death of that Lord, the Earl began to ſtir, and claim to have his Daughters, (his Counteſs being now dead too) probably to finger their Eſtates left them. But this Sir *Robert Cecil*, the deceaſed Lord *Burghley*'s Son, and Heir, would not conſent to: And was ſuſpicious of the Earl's appointing ſome rude violent Perſons to ſteal the young Ladies from *Tybald*'s, the Houſe where they were at the Death of the Lord *Burghley*, who, though not by his Will, yet by Word of Mouth to *Bellot*, his Steward, and one of his Executors, did appoint theſe his Grandchildren, Daughters of the Earl, to be taken Care of, and kept by his Son, Sir *Robert*. And this he deſired *Bellot* to tell the Earl. And *Mainard* [who was his Secretary] would witneſs it. So that if the Earl ſhould now demand of Sir *Robert* the Cuſtody of his Children, he ordered the ſaid *Bellot* thus to anſwer the Earl, That he, or any body beſides, could not have them. For that if he looked into the Deeds, whereby the Lord *Burghley* had conveyed them theſe Lands, he ſhould find, that for Default of Iſſue, the ſaid Lands came to the Heirs of his Body: And whether he, that never gave them a Groat, had a ſecond Wife, and another Child, were a fit Guardian to them; he bad him conſider it himſelf. He adviſed alſo his ſaid Steward, that when he, the ſaid Sir *Robert* ſhould be at Court attending his Office of Secretary of State, to have a Care theſe Ladies were not ſtolen away by the Earl's Means; and wiſhed they had ſome honeſt Men there, whilſt *Bellot* was abſent from them.

The Earl's Daughters Marriages. York's *Heraldry.*

Theſe Ladies, by the Care of their Uncle, Sir *Robert Cecil*, matched honourably: Being all Counteſſes by their Marriages. *viz. Elizabeth*, matched with *William*, Earl of *Darby*: *Bridget*, with *Francis* Lord *Norris*, Earl of *Barkſhire*. And *Suſan*, with *Philip*, Earl of *Montgomery*.

Lands ſold away by the Earl.

This was the Man, that *ſet his Patrimony flying*, ſaid the Hiſtorian in the Life of Queen *Elizabeth*. Some of his Sales may be ſeen in the *Appendix*, with the Names of the Purchaſers. And his Debts to the Queen. Num. X.

A Motion to eſpouſe Philip Sidney *and* Anne Cecil, *Children.*

I add but one Thing more concerning this Lady, *Anne*, Counteſs of *Oxon*. That ſhe and Sir *Philip Sidney*, being both Children, earneſt Motions were made by Sir *Henry Sidney*, his Father, and the Earl of *Leiceſter* his Uncle, might be eſpouſed. And Sir *William*

ANNO 1581.

Cecil, her Father accorded upon Articles with them upon the Match: He to pay ſuch a Portion, and Sir *Henry* to make ſuch Settlement. The only Difference was, That Sir *Henry*, and the Earl were for making the Match firm and abſolute between them, tho' yet but Children. But Sir *William Cecyl*, her loving Father, could not be drawn to that: But thought it convenient, that both Parties ſhould like each other. “In the mean Time, as he told *N. White*, an intimate Friend of his, as I wiſh *Philip Sydney* full Liberty, [that is, to make his own Choice] ſo ſurely *Ann Cecyl* ſhall have it alſo.

Elizabeth Cecil *married to the Lord* Wentworth's *Son.*

This Year another of the Lord Treaſurer's Daughters, *Elizabeth Cecil*, was married to *William*, eldeſt Son of *Thomas*, Lord *Wentworth*, the laſt *Engliſh* Governor of *Calais*. This Match alſo unhappy, by the untimely Death of her Huſband, who died within the Year; a worthy and hopeful young Gentleman.

Sought in Marriage before by Noble Perſons.

While this Lady was but in her Childhood, the Lord *Burghley* her Father, was not without Applications of very Honourable Perſons, to match their young Sons with her. As appears by Letters to him from the Lord *Buckhurſt* and the Earl of *Eſſex*, and Offers made him for their Sons, in the Year 1573. The former propounded his eldeſt Son *Robert*, and to make his Eſtate worth 2000 *l. per Annum*. And if at Years of Diſcretion, his Son liked not of her, he promiſed 2000 *Mark* towards her Portion, to be given within two Years after ſuch Refuſal. *Devereux* alſo, Earl of *Eſſex*, made proffer of his Son, Lord *Ferrers* the ſame Year, to her Father. And would aſſure them 2000 *Mark* a Year in Land, beſides the Houſes, Demeans and Parks. And promiſed to allow his Son 100 *l.* or 200 *Marks* by the Year for his Education, while he was young; and to ſettle a Jointure of 500 *l. per Annum* upon his Daughter. And upon their Marriage to part with a convenient Portion for their Maintenance during his own Life. And at Years of Diſcretion, if the Match ſhould not go forward, to give to his Daughter 2000 *l.* towards her Portion. He promiſed likewiſe for himſelf, his faſt Love and Friendſhip towards his Lordſhip: And adding, that there was an Equality ſufficient in their Years; and no great Diſtance in Neighbourhood between *Tybald*'s and *Bennington*, [the former the Lord *Burghley*'s Seat, and the latter the Earls, in *Hertfordſhire*.] And that ſuch an Occaſion might make him like well of his Lands in *Eſſex:* And where, if God ſhould ſend him Life, he might hereafter ſhew all Offices of Friendſhip to the good Counteſs; [*viz.* of *Oxford:* Who was often in that County of *Eſſex*, where the Earl her Huſband's Demeans lay.] All this the Earl of *Eſſex* propounded by way of Letter from *Knockfergus* in *Ireland:* Profeſſing to do this to expreſs, the beſt Way he could, his Senſe of that conſtant Favour and Love that that Lord had ſhewn him. And therefore reſolved to make the Offer of the moſt ſufficient Pledge of his good Will to him; namely, of the Diſcretion, Education and Marriage of his eldeſt Son.

But none of theſe Propoſals of Marriage took effect, the Lady, as was ſaid before, having the Lord *Wentworth*'s Son for her Huſband. The Wedding was celebrated at *Tybald*'s with great Pomp and Abundance three Days together, *viz. February* 26, 27, 28.

A Domeſtick Jar happened between the Lord *Thomas Paget* and his Wife. He was the Son of that great and learned Stateſman, Lord *William Paget*, employed in Places of Truſt and Honour by King *Henry* VIII. King *Edward* VI. and Queen *Mary*; and who died at his Houſe in *Drayton*, and was there honourably interred in the Year 1563. Of this Noble Lord, and of the Uſe made of him for his great Abilities, I have made divers Memorials elſewhere. He had two Sons, who ſucceeded their Father in the Barony, *Henry*, and this *Thomas*, unhappy in his Wife. So that the Differences between them in fine, came to that Point, that this Year they were parting aſunder, on certain Conditions. Wherein this Lord obtained the Favour of the Lord Treaſurer to be concerned, as a Mediator, and at both their Deſires, the Deciſion left chiefly to him: Which that Lord expreſſed in his Letter to him, *viz.* "That he humbly thanked his Lordſhip for the good Deſire he had " to be a Mediator in his unfortunate Caſe, and which it pleaſed " God it might be better. But that in the mean while this Courſe " which they had agreed upon was a leſs ill than a worſe, *viz.* in living " together with continual Jars. Theſe Articlings (he added) need- " ed not; but that it pleaſed her to uſe it for a Delay. For if ſhe " could tell, (ſaid he) what would pleaſe herſelf, this Buſineſs " were ſoon at an End. And that every Day ſhe came in with one " new Demand, or other, and reſolved upon nothing. Yet would " he ever be ready to do what he ſhould.

Lord Paget *and his Wife diſagreeing, part.*

The Day before, he received the Lord Treaſurer's Letter, with the Articles. To which he returned his Anſwers encloſed: Concluding, how ſorry he was thus to trouble his Lordſhip. This was Dated from *London*, *March* 21. 1581. I ſet down this Note of this Lord, being the Son of ſo eminent a Perſon. I add concerning him, that whether it were out of Diſcontent, or Zeal to Popery, he fled three or four Years after into *France*, with *Charles Arundel*, and ſome others, devoted to the *Romiſh* Religion, upon one *Throgmorton*'s Commitment about the *Scot*'s Queen.

Cam. Eliz. p. 294.

I meet this Year with a Remark upon another Perſon of Rank, *viz.* Sir *Roger Manwood*, Lord Chief Baron: Whether the Matter were juſtly charged upon him, I leave to the Letter of a Gentleman, one *Barry*, ſent to the ſaid Lord Chief Baron from *Dover Caſtle:* As making uſe of the Queen's Name and Authority, to get certain Lands and Poſſeſſions into his own Hands from the right Owners, and ſome of them Minors: For this Original, and ſomewhat ſharp Letter from the ſaid Perſon, I find wrote to him, *viz.*

A Charge of wrong Dealing upon Baron Manwood.

"My humble Duty unto your Lordſhip remembred. Where " your Lordſhip hath by many indirect Means, ſought to have the " Tenants Lands in *Sandhills*, and *Marſhal* Lands in *Sholden* and " *Deal:* And now of late to bring your Purpoſe to paſs, you have " ſent an Injunction, to enjoin ſome of the Tenants out of Poſſeſ- " ſion, and to bring the ſame to your Hands, or your Aſſignees, by " colour of a pretended Right of the Queen's Majeſty to theſe " Lands; ſome Part of theſe Lands do concern me in the Right of " my Daughter and her Children. The which I am not to depart " from, without making her Majeſty privy to your indirect Deal- " ings;

MSS. Cecillian.

ANNO 1581.

"ings. At whoſe Hands he added, that he doubted not but to "find both Favour and Juſtice. That it ſeemed by ſome Speeches "his Lordſhip gave out of late, that he might do what he would, "not to be undone by any Subject in this Land. Whereby his "Lordſhip made him to call to Mind a Speech he heard him once "utter. Which was, That in the *Common Place*, there was all "Law and no Conſcience. In the *King's Bench* both Law and "Conſcience. In the *Chancery* all Conſcience and no Law. And "in the *Chequer*, neither Law nor Conſcience. Your Lordſhip "(as he concluded) being now Judge of that Court, I truſt, there "is both Law and Conſcience; or at the leaſt, Law. For that you "were once one of the Juſtices of the *Common Place*.

"Thus hoping your Lordſhip will not be offended for ſeeming "to maintain my Right, and theirs that cannot help themſelves, "being in Minority; ceaſing from troubling your Lordſhip: Praying to God to turn your Heart, or ſending you ſhortly into *Abraham*'s Boſom. To which I think 500 in *Kent* would rejoice. "*Amen.*

Your Lordſhip's to Command,

From Dover-Caſtle,
the 6th of Aug.

Barry.

Francis Nudigate, *Eſq*; dies. *His Laſt Will.*

This Year died *Francis Nudigate*, Eſq; that was Steward to *Anne*, Dutcheſs of *Somerſet*, Widow of *Edward*, Duke of *Somerſet*. Who getting a conſiderable Eſtate under her, gratefully made her his Executrix, and left the Main of his Subſtance, or indeed all to her, giving away but few or no Legacies; and recommending it to her Charity to be liberal to the Poor, where Need was, and to one or two of her Servants unrewarded, as yet. And becauſe in his Will ſeveral Directions were given her, concerning the Diſpoſal of ſomething by way of Charity, which may deſerve a Remark, and may leave a grateful and good Character of him, I ſhall rehearſe ſome Part of it. It began,

"Our Help is in God and in his holy Name. Into whoſe Hands "by this my Laſt Will and Teſtament, I firſt commend my Soul "to be ſaved only by Faith in Chriſt's Blood-ſhedding. My Body "to be buried in *Hanworth*, or elſewhere, as ſhall pleaſe her Grace, "at her good Pleaſure. Deſiring, and therewithal charging her "Grace, that it be done without any of thoſe pompous Mournings "and Charges of Blacks, as is wonted uſually. Chiefly, my Mind "is, that the Poor, and Priſon Houſes may be ſomewhat liberally "remembred, on her Grace's Behalf and mine. And referring the "Sums to her Grace's good Devotion. And according as I have received all my Preferment by the Dutcheſs's Marriage, ſo do I in "few Words, Will and Bequeath unto her all that I am able any "Way to give her. That is to ſay, all my Goods and Leaſes, "Chattels, Plate, Jewels, Cattle, both Horſes, Mares, Geldings, "Oxen, Kine, Sheep, Corn, Houſed or Sown. And alſo other "Houſhold-ſtuff, Stock and Stores, *&c.* Together with all ſuch "Debts as are at this preſent, or ſhall any Time hereafter, be due "unto me from any Perſon, by Bond, Covenant, or otherwiſe.

“ And alſo to give and bequeath unto my ſaid Dutcheſs, all, and all manner of Lands, both Freehold and Copyhold, which I have in *England*, as well that which is not ſet down herein, but nevertheleſs that which alſo follows particularly by Name, my Houſe at *Canon Row*, purchaſed of the Lord *Hounſdon*, in the City of *Weſtminſter*, *&c.* the Manor of *Littleton* in the County of *Middleſex*; the Manor of *Little Aſhield* in *Surrey*, otherwiſe called *Priory Farm*, &c. All which I give wholly and fully to my ſaid Dutcheſs. Nevertheleſs my Deſire is, that her Grace will be good to her old Servants on my Behalf; eſpecially *Dickenſon* and her Clerk *Saunders*; who have had ſmall Preferment for long Service.

“ And unto *Saunders* my full Promiſe is, to let him have 20 Nobles a Year, till I provide him a Farm for his Life and his Wife's; or for 21 Years. Which, if God ſend me Life, as I mean to perform, ſo my Will is your Grace to accompliſh the ſame. And my further Deſire is, that her Grace do ſee my Niece *Beſſe Saunders*, brought up, and beſtowed. And that your Grace beſtow ſome Rings, as Remembrance, *&c.*

“ And thus committing all Things to my ſaid Dutcheſs; whom I make my full and ſole Executrix of this my Laſt Will and Teſtament. Dated at *Hanworth*, the laſt of *May*, 1580.

There was alſo taken by a Notary, his Conſent for the Gift of *Great Aſhford*, his laſt Purchaſe, in theſe Words, 26th of *Jan.* 1581. Mr. *Francis Nudigate* was content, and did give his Lands and Tenements he lately purchaſed, unto the Right Honourable the Dutcheſs of *Somerſet*, and unto her Heirs for ever. To this among other Witneſſes Names ſubſcribed, were her two Sons, *E. Hertford*, and *H. Seymour*.

A Note upon the Dutcheſs of Somerſet, his Executrix.

Upon the foreſaid Deſire and Will of the ſaid Teſtator, in Behalf of *Dickenſon* and *Saunders* (who married his Siſter) I cannot but obſerve the Neglect, (ſhall I ſay?) or Ingratitude of the Dutcheſs; too viſible in her Laſt Will made ſome few Years after, *viz.* 1587. Who gave therein to theſe two Perſons, ſo ſpecially mentioned and recommended to her, thus ſparingly, as followeth: “ I give to my Servant *William Dickenſon*, 10 *l.* of lawful *Engliſh* Money, to be paid him for an Annuity, or Penſion, of my Executor, yearly during his Life. *Item*, I give to *Richard Saunders*, my Servant, 5 *l.* of like lawful *Engliſh* Money, to be paid him for a yearly Penſion, during Life.

A Woman horribly forſwears herſelf, for Money.

The deſperate Temptation of Money, how it draws People into horrible Wickedneſs ſometimes, and particularly Perjury, appears in a Matter happening this Year in *January*. A *French* Merchant in a Bag ſealed, delivered 40 *l.* to a Carrier's Wife of *Norwich*, to be carried thither, to ſome certain Correſpondent of his. But ſhe ſecretly conveyed the Money to an Houſe a good way off the Inn. And within a Quarter of an Hour the *French* Merchant came again to ſee his Money packed up. But the Woman denied that ſhe ever received one Penny, with moſt horrible Proteſtations. Upon this, Secretary *Walſingham* (who was made acquainted with it) wrote to *Fleetwood*, Recorder of *London*; (from whoſe Letter I have this Relation) and the *Frenchman*. And after great Search made,

ANNO 1581.

the Money was found and reſtored, ſhe not knowing of the ſame. The Recorder examined her in his Study privately. But by no Means would ſhe confeſs the ſame: But did bequeath herſelf to the Devil, both Body and Soul, if ſhe had the Money, or ever ſaw it. And this was her Craft, that ſhe *then* [when ſhe ſaid ſo] had not the Money. For it was either at her Friend's, where ſhe left it, or elſe delivered. Then he asked her, Whether the *French* Merchant did not bring her a Bag ſealed, full of the Metal that was weighty; were it either Plate, Coin, Counters, or ſuch like: Then ſaid ſhe, I will anſwer no further. And then the Recorder uſing the Lord Mayor's Advice, beſtowed her in *Bridewell:* Where ſhe was puniſhed, being well whipt. It was obſervable what ſhe ſaid then, that the Devil ſtood at her Elbow in the Recorder's Study, and willed her to deny it. But ſo ſoon as ſhe was upon the Croſs to be puniſhed, he gave her over.

A Woman a Necromancer, drowns herſelf.

The ſame Recorder, *Fleetwood*, about this Time, acquainted Secretary *Walſingham* in a Letter to him, of another ſtrange Accident; of a Woman, named Mrs. *Norton*, that had drowned herſelf. She was Mother in law to one *Thomas Norton*, a Perſon of ſome Reputation in *London*. Whoſe Father was then aged and ſick in Bed: In her Youth ſhe was bred up in Sir *Thomas More*'s Family. In which Place ſhe learned idolatrous Toyes (I tranſcribe from the Recorder's Letter) and Uſages in the Night; ſo as thereby ſhe was led by evil Spirits, ſometimes to hang herſelf, and ſometimes to drown herſelf; as ſhe did at laſt. Some Part of her lewd Demeanour was in the Exerciſe of *Necromancy:* That is to ſay, in Conferences and Speeches had (as ſhe thought) with dead Bodies, being of her old Acquaintance. The Recorder writ this Accident the rather to the ſaid Secretary; becauſe ſhe had left behind her divers Children, Brothers to the ſaid *Thomas Norton*, which were ſhrewdly given. And that if the old Man ſhould then die, it was to be feared all his Goods would come to a Spoil. And therefore he propoſed, that if Mr. *Peter Oſborn* [who was a worthy Citizen, and Remembrancer of the Exchequer] had a Commandment, he could deviſe ſome good Order (as he, the Recorder thought) for the ſaving of Things that might be loſt. And he prayed his Honour to make the Lord Treaſurer [who was Maſter of the Wards] acquainted with the unfortunate Caſe. Such was the Care of this good Recorder of the Children of the City.

CHAP. VII.

Books ſet forth this Year. Engliſh Juſtice, *by Cardinal* Allen. A *Diſcovery of* Campion, *the* Jeſuit, *by* A. Monday. The Engliſh *Roman* Life. *Anſwer* Apologetical, *by* Haddon *and* J. Fox; *to* Oſorius *his* Invective. The unfolding of ſundry Untruths, *&c. in anſwer to a Book writ by a* Libertine. Caſtalio'*s Book of* Free Will: *Complained of.* A View of Antichriſt in our Engliſh Church unreformed. Expoſition of the Symbol of the Apoſtles, *by* J. Field. Two Sermons *of* T. Bradford, *the Martyr. Examination of certain ordinary Complaints.* Poſitions *for Education of Children in Learning: By* R. Mulcaſter. *A Diſcourſe of Royal Monarchy: By* Charles Merbury. *The* Pathway *to Martial Diſcipline. Another, called, A compendious Treatiſe* De Re Militari. *Dedicated to Mr.* Philip Sydney. A brief Conceipt of *Engliſh* Policy. *Eirenarcha, of the* Office *of Juſtices of Peace: By Mr.* W. Lambard. The Pentateuch *in ſix Languages: Sent from* Beza.

IN this Year, I find theſe Books printed; ſet forth by Perſons of divers Principles, the Authors.

Engliſh Juſtice, *by Cardinal* Allen.

Engliſh Juſtice: A Book ſet forth by Cardinal *Allen*, of the Sufferings, Deprivations, and Baniſhments of the Catholick Clergy and Laity, under Queen *Elizabeth*; chiefly upon her Acceſs to the Crown, in theſe Words: "We yield unto the Libeller, (as he ſtiled him that gave Occaſion to his writing that his *Engliſh Juſtice*) Fourteen Noble, and moſt worthy Biſhops at one Time, [who were deprived] inferior in Vertue and Learning to none in *Europe*. Who were all deprived of their Honours and High Callings. And moſt of them impriſoned, and ſpightfully uſed in all reſpects: Beſide the famous Confeſſor, Archbiſhop of *Armachar*, Primate of *Ireland*, and a Number of Biſhops of that Country. Next, we yield you in Baniſhment two worthy *Engliſh* Prelates, of the ſame Dignity: The one [*viz. Pate*] dead, the other [*viz. Goldwel*] yet alive in *Rome*: Three *Elects*, Biſhops; all now departed this Life. We name the Honourable Abbot of *Weſtminſter*, [*Feckenham*] Four *Priors*, or Superiors of Religious

ANNO 1581.

" Covents, with three whole Covents, put out of their Poſſeſſions, " either into Priſon, or out of the Realm. In the ſame Caſe were " a Dozen of famous, learned Deans: Which next to the Biſhops " do hold the chief Dignities in the *Engliſh* Cathedral Churches: " Fourteen Archdeacons; above Threeſcore Canons of Cathedral " Churches; not ſo few as an Hundred Prieſts of good Preferment " in Queen *Mary*'s Reign, beſides many one made in our Baniſhment, and ſince martyred: Fifteen Heads, or Rectors of Colleges " in *Oxford* and *Cambridge*; Men of great Importance in thoſe Univerſities, and in the Commonwealth: And with them, and the " rather by their good Example and Provocation, not many Years " after, many of the chief Profeſſors of all Sciences, and above " Twenty Doctors of divers Faculties, for Conſcience-ſake fled the " Realm, or were in the Realm impriſoned. And both at the firſt, " and in divers Years ſince, have many of the very Flower of the " Univerſities come over, both into the Society, [of *Jeſus*] Seminaries, and other Places, famous for Learning. Where through " God's Goodneſs, and the great Benignity of Prelates, Princes and " Catholick People, they have paſt their long Baniſhment in honeſt " Poverty, and ſome in worſhipful Callings and Rooms in Univerſities, with as much Grace and Favour, as to Foreigners could " be yielded: In no Place, Thanks be to our Lord God, impeached of Crimes or Diſorders. Whereof we can ſhew the honourable Teſtimony of the beſt, where we have lived in all Nations.

This was in Anſwer to what the *Libeller* (as he ſtiled him) wrote, *viz.* " That very few were fled for Religion, other than " ſuch as were not able to live at Home, but in Beggery; or diſcontinued for lack of Preferment, which they gaped for unworthily in Univerſities and other Places, or Bankrupt Merchants, *&c.*

And then this Writer ſhewing the Difference between thoſe that left them, and thoſe that came over to them, both in reſpect of Number and Quality, thus he boaſts; " So earneſtly they woe " every poor *Apoſtata*, lewd Scholar and looſe Companion, that for " wearineſs of Baniſhment, looſe Life or Impatience looketh homeward toward Hereſy, or carnal Liberty or Licence again, *&c.* " While we in the mean Space receive Hundreds of their Miniſters, a Number of their beſt Wits; many delicate young Gentlemen, and divers Heirs of all Ages; voluntarily flying from their " damnable Condition, and ſeeking after God: And many of them " alſo becoming Prieſts or Religious. " This is the Strain of the foreſaid Book: And as far as the Writer is to be depended on, we may learn how the State of the Kingdom ſtood, as to Popery; and particularly the Induſtry of theſe *Engliſh* learned Papiſts abroad to make Proſelytes. But this Book was ſubſtantially anſwered a Year or two after, *viz.* 1583. in a Book called, *The Anſwer to Engliſh Juſtice.*

The Diſcovery of Campion.

The Diſcovery of Campion, *the* Jeſuit. A Book that came out about this Time: Writ by *A. Monday*, a Man the better able to diſcover what *Campion* was, and his Courſes, himſelf having ſometimes lived in

ANNO 1581.

in the Seminary at *Rome*, the Pope's Scholar there. And afterwards came home, and fell off from them. His Book he preſented to *Bromley*, Lord Chancellor, to Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer, and to the Earl of *Leiceſter*. This Writer made a further Diſcovery of the *Engliſh* at *Rome*, in another Book which he printed ſome Years after and dedicated it to the ſame noble Perſons. It was called the *Engliſh Roman Life*. “Diſcovering the Lives of ſuch *Engliſhmen*, as by ſecret Eſcape left their own Country, to live in *Rome* under the ſervile Yoke of the Pope's Government. Alſo after what Manner they ſpend their Time there: Practiſing, and daily looking for the Overthrow and Ruine of their Princeſs and Country.” And further Account may be given of this Book hereafter, in the Courſe of the Hiſtory.

An Anſwer Apologetical to Oſorius.

This Year alſo came forth an Anſwer Apologetical againſt *Jerome Oſorius*, a *Portugueſe* Biſhop of *Sylvain*, being a pretty thick *Quarto*, tranſlated out of *Latin* into *Engliſh*, by *James Bell*; and dedicated to the Lord *Arundel*. That which gave Occaſion to this Book was this. This *Portugal* Biſhop had writ a long Epiſtle in *Latin* to the Queen. In which he fancied many monſtrous Errors to be received in our Church; and with reproachful Railings depraved the Profeſſors of that Goſpel. This ſomewhat provoked *Walter Haddon*, a learned Civilian: Inſomuch that he gave Anſwer to ſeveral particular Points in his Book: Which he did in a very elegant *Latin* Style: Thinking that what he had writ might have better informed, and ſatisfied the Man. Of this I have given ſome Account in my *Annals*. After a Year or two *Haddon* was appointed the Queen's Agent in *Flanders*, and was Ledger at *Bruges*. At which Time another *Portugal* Biſhop, called *Emanuel D'Almada*, undertook the Defence of his Friend *Oſorius*; and ſtuffed a great Volume full of Slanders and Brabbles. And in the End of his Book cauſed certain ugly Pictures to be pourtrayed; thereby to defame *Haddon*'s Perſonage: One of their Ways of anſwering an Author by Perſonal Abuſes. In this *Apology* (for ſo he called it) *Haddon* ſeeing, how it was filled with Scoffs and Abſurdities (which two Things being taken away there remained nothing elſe beſide) after ſome Deliberation with himſelf, he deſpiſed the Anſwering of it.

Vol. I. Ch. 32, and 37.

Apology for Oſorius by Dalmada.

Character of Oſorius.

Two Years being paſt, *Tho. Wilſon*, LL. D. (and *Haddon*'s Friend) returning from *Portugal* to *England*, brought over, at *Oſorius*'s Requeſt, ſeveral Volumes of the ſaid *Oſorius*, framed into three Books. One of them he delivered unto *Haddon*. He peruſed it once or twice, (as he tells us in his Epiſtle) and truſted, that *Oſorius* being now inſtalled a Biſhop, would have been a much more modeſt Man than he was before, but found that it fell out quite contrary. For inſtead of a civil and ſober Perſon, he found him a moſt frivolous Sophiſter, for a grave Divine, a childiſh Counterfeit, and for a diſcreet Biſhop, a moſt ſhameleſs Railer. And that hereunto was added Store of Vanity and proud Haughtineſs. He concludes his Epiſtle with theſe Words, “That he truſted it ſhould eaſily appear, both that he had not leſs piouſly than neceſſarily entered into the honeſt Defence of his Country. And that the Reader alſo might as plainly perceive,

Anno 1581.

“ how maliciouſly and wickedly *England* had been accuſed and de-“ praved by her curſed Enemy, *Oſorius*.

Oſorius *his* Invective.

And as *Haddon*'s Epiſtle, ſo his Anſwer, ran in a pretty ſharp Style againſt his Adverſary: Whoſe Way of Writing gave juſt Cauſe of Provocation, which may be ſeen in one Paſſage of his *Invective*: “If “ after this Doctrine of this new Goſpel, and new Religion was “ brought into *England*, there were brought therewithal alſo Ho-“ neſty, Integrity of Life, *&c.*” Then, a little after, “ But if none “ were performed by the Study of this new Doctrine; But rather, “ if ever ſithence all Raſhneſs, Unſhamefaſtneſs, and Letchery have “ been embraced in all Places: If intolerable Pride and Arrogancy “ have now taken ſurer Footing than before: If Seditions, Uproars, “ and Rebellions have been more eaſily raiſed: If Treaſon have more “ boldly attempted the Royal Majeſty, and have more freely pur-“ ſued the Blood of Princes, *&c.*

Fox *continues the Anſwer to* Oſorius.

Dr. *Haddon* died before he had finiſhed his Anſwer. The Remainder of *Oſorius* his Book (which was the greater Part) was undertaken by *John Fox*, the Martyrologiſt; who had an excellent *Latin* Style, as *Haddon*'s was, and withal was a very learned Divine, and was thoroughly acquainted with the Hiſtory of this Church, and particularly the Steps of the Reformation: And ſo able to write in Vindication of it. This Book wrote by theſe two *Engliſhmen*, contained a very learned Vindication of Proteſtants, and a Confutation of the Doctrine and Practices of the Church of *Rome*; and was managed with a briſk Style againſt that Biſhop; whoſe Book was all Invective.

Some Notice of Haddon.

Fox began his Anſwer with ſome Notice of *Haddon*, deceaſed. “ That ſo long as the Nation had that excellent learned Man, as “ the Church of *Chriſt* had a very worthy and valiant Captain: “ So had *Oſorius* a couragious and puiſſant Encounterer, and meet “ Conqueror of ſuch a Monſter, *&c.* And that there was much “ Cauſe to move them and all the Learned to much Sorrow and “ Grief of Mind; who had loſt ſo great and learned a Ring-leader “ of Learning. The Loſs of whom did by ſo much the more in-“ increaſe their Heavineſs, in reſpect of that preſent Enterprize, un-“ dertaken againſt *Oſorius*, by how much they were bereft of ſo “ ſingular a Patron.

Oſorius's *Lies and Slanders*.

He took notice of *Oſorius*'s Plenty of Lies and Slanders. And particularly of two notorious Lyes concerning *Luther*; as tho' he wickedly taught extream Deſperation, and a bold and preſumptuous Confidence of Salvation. Other of his inſufferable Calumniations taken notice of by *Fox*, were theſe: That where *Haddon* had named the ſacred Doctrine of the Goſpel to have been the Diſcipline of *Luther*, *Zuinglius*, *Bucer*, *Calvin*, &c. he replied, “ That thoſe Men had “ not only with the Rules of their Doctrine, but alſo with the ill “ Example of their Lives rooted out all Shamefaſtneſs, Modeſty, “ Civility, and Obedience: And inſtead of Faith and Freedom, they “ had beſtowed upon their Families Preſumption and Raſhneſs, toge-“ ther with unpuniſhable Licentiouſneſs of ſinning: That they had, “ inſtead of true Righteouſneſs, brought in a falſe and deceitful “ Righteouſneſs. That they had made God the Author of all

“Wickedneſs. The decayed Church, which they pronounced to reſtore to her ancient Integrity, they had defiled with more Abominations. So that by how much the more a Man did decline to their Diſcipline; ſo much the more he was eſtranged from all Shame and Chaſtity.” And again, “A Man might deſcry the Nature of this Doctrine by the very Foundation of this Church [of *England*.] Which he proved thus. “Becauſe *Venus* and *Cupid* were the Founders of it; Breach of Laws, and Contempt of the Pope encreaſed it. Flattery and Lying had ſupported it. Greedy Covetouſneſs had eſtabliſhed it. Cruelty againſt the Saints had ſanctified it. Timorous Fear of Men had ſtreightened it. Finally, a Doctrine of Men, not ſent by God, but ſtirred up by Satan, had, with moſt troubleſome Error poiſoned it.” By this Period that Strain of the Man was viſible. And to have the Reformed Church of *England* thus repreſented to the World in a *Latin* Book, was not to be born without effectual Vindication, and ſome Sharpneſs too. Which between *Haddon* and *Fox* was done well: And the Tranſlation into *Engliſh* was ſet forth this Year.

Fox endeth all with a very pious Wiſh of Unity and Agreement among all Chriſtians, and in a holy Life ſuitable to their Profeſſion: “Moſt heartily wiſhing to all the elect Saints of God, whoſoever profeſs his Name and wear the Badge of Chriſtianity: That departing from Iniquity, and gathering all together in one uniform Agreement of ſincere Doctrine, by the enlightening and Inſpiration of the Holy Ghoſt, we may be altogether received into that heavenly *Jeruſalem*, and into that Kingdom of immortal Glory, and eternal Felicity, which ſhall never have End: Not for the Works of Righteouſneſs which we have done, but for the Love of our Lord and Saviour *Jeſu Chriſt*; who ſuffered for our Sins, and roſe again for our Juſtification.

The unfolding of ſundry Untruths, &c. *Writ againſt a* Libertine.

There was in theſe Times a certain *Libertine*, in *London*, that had vented divers odd Opinions, that headed, as it ſeems, that Sect. A little Book in *Twelves*, in Anſwer to him and his Doctrines, was ſet forth this Year by one *T. W.* intitled, *The unfolding of ſundry Untruths, and abſurd Propoſitions, lately propounded by one* J. S. *a great Favourer of the horrible Hereſy of the* Libertines. This Book was printed at *London* by *Tho. Mayne*, whence we are told, that the ſaid *J. S. Feb.* 26. 1580, uttered theſe Speeches, [I ſuppoſe in ſome Preachment,] which the ſaid *T. W.* anſwered diſtinctly. I. That the firſt Table of the Law taught us our Duty towards *Chriſt*'s Godhead. And the ſecond Table our Duty towards his Manhood, *&c.* They are to be found before, *Chap.* 4. *p.* 44.

Caſtalio's *Book*. Free-Will-Men.

The *Free-Will-Men*, (as they called them) at this Time gave ſome Diſturbance by their Doctrine. And now they had procured *Caſtalio*'s Books to be printed here, or brought over hither. Sir *Francis Knollis*, Treaſurer of the Queen's Houſhold, a zealous Man againſt this Doctrine, and thought it highly convenient to have the Book ſearched for, and the Reading of it hindred; and that becauſe, as he ſaid, the *Anabaptiſts*, and ſuch as were for Perfection in this Life went along with them: This moved him to write a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*, to this Tenor:

ANNO 1581.

Sir Francis Knolle's *Letter to the Court concerning them.*

“My very good Lords; Your Hableneſs, and Readineſs to do good in theſe perillous Days of traiterous Practices, both againſt God and againſt her Majeſty, doth embolden me to preſume to remember your good Lordſhips, that by your good Means Order may be taken, that the true Authors and Favourers of the ſetting forth of *Caſtalio*'s Book, with the Abuſes of the Biſhop of *London* in that Behalf, may be diligently examined, and bolted out. That the Hypocriſy herein uſed being known, the peſtilent Doctrine thereof may be the more ſoundly ſuppreſſed. For it ſeemeth to me, that theſe *Free Will Men*, or *Anabaptiſtical* Sectaries, do follow the ſame Scopes that the *Deified* Men of the *Family of Love* do follow; ſaving, that the ſame Perfection that the *Family of Love* do pretend to obtain by Virtue of *Love*, the ſame Perfection do *Caſtalio* his Sectaries pretend to obtain by the Virtue of *Faith*. But it is not by Faith in believing to be ſaved in the Merits of *Chriſt*, but by a Faith in believing that every Man is able to fulfil the Law of God. And that the Cauſe why Men do not fulfil the Law, is the Want of this *Caſtalio* his Belief. Now both theſe Sects do ſerve the Turns of the *Papiſts*; as all *Free Will Men* and *Juſticiaries*, or Juſtifiers of themſelves do. Yet this Difference is betwixt the *Papiſts* and theſe Sectaries, I do mean touching their Practices here in *England*. For theſe Sectaries are more Hypocritical, and will ſooner deny their Doctrines and Aſſertions, to avoid Puniſhment, than the *Papiſts* will.” This was writ in *September* 29. 1581, at *London*.

Deified Men, Sectaries.

View of Antichriſt. *Part of a Regiſt.*

A View of Antichriſt; His Laws and Ceremonies in our Engliſh *Church unreformed*; was another Puritanical Book that came forth about this Year. The Beginning of this Book ſhews the Purpoſe of it. *viz.* “A clear Glaſs, where may be ſeen the dangerous and deſperate Diſeaſes of our *Engliſh* Church: Being ready utterly to periſh, unleſs ſhe may ſpeedily have a *Corroſive* of the wholeſome Herbs of God his Word, laid very hot to her Heart; to expulſe thoſe cold and deadly Infections of Popery: Which the attainted Apothecaries of Antichriſt have corrupted her withal: Elſe long ſhe cannot endure. And which more encreaſeth her Griefs, having Relief daily offered unto her by her ſkilful Phyſicians, that would adminiſter the ſame, is denied thereof: And they alſo reſiſted and hated, becauſe they will not mingle their putrified Drugs with the ſaid pure Confection: Which to do were preſent Death.

The Subſtance of this Book is digeſted under divers Tables. Firſt, The Book of the Generation of Antichriſt, the *Pope*, the revealed Child of Perdition, and his Succeſſors. This began thus: “The Devil begot Darkneſs, *Eph.* 6. Darkneſs begot Ignorance, *Acts* 17. Ignorance begot Error and his Brethren, 1 *Tim.* 4. Error begot Free will and Self-love, *Eſa.* 10. Free will begot Merits, *Eſa.* 58. &c.” The Second Table, Of the diſplaying of the Pope and Popery in our unreformed Church of *England*. The Third Table, Containing an hundred Points of Popery remaining: Which deform the *Engliſh* Reformation. At the End of this Third Table is ſubſcribed, *A. Gilbe*. Who I ſuppoſe therefore was the Writer. The Fourth Table is, Of the bringing in of divers of the Popiſh Corruptions,

ruptions, yet remaining in our *Engliſh* Church. The Beginning is, "The conjured Font brought into the *Roman* Church by Pope "*Pius* I. *Ann.* 147. as witneſſeth *Platina* and *Sabellicus*, &c." At the End of this Table, or Chapter, is ſubſcribed *T. W.* which I ſuppoſe was *Tho. Wilcox*; a great Man for the New Platform.

Expoſition of the Symbol of the Apoſtles.

There came out alſo this Year, *An Expoſition of the Symbol of the Apoſtles; or rather, of the Articles of Faith.* In which the chief Points of the everlaſting and free Covenant between God and the Faithful, is briefly and plainly handled: Gathered out of the Catechizing Sermons of *Gaſpar Olevian*, Profeſſor of Divinity at *Hydelberg*. And tranſlated out of *Latin* into *Engliſh*, by *John Field*, who Prefaced it with a long Epiſtle Dedicatory, concerning the buſy *Jeſuits*, unto his Patron, the Right Honourable *Ambroſe*, Earl of *Warwick*, Maſter of the Queen's Majeſty's Ordnance, and Knight of the Noble Order of the Garter.

Two Sermons of Bradford *the Martyr.*

Now were printed two Sermons preached by *John Bradford*, the Martyr in Queen *Mary*'s Days. The one of *Repentance*, the other of the *Lord's Supper*. The Epiſtle to the Reader was written by *Tho. Sampſon*. That of *Repentance* was printed before by *Bradford* himſelf. That of the *Lord's Supper* never printed before: Now both theſe were ſet forth with a long Preface of the ſaid *Sampſon*. Who was a Man of Learning and Note under Queen *Mary*; and an Exile for Religion. It may be worth ſetting down this Preface from ſo eminent a Man; and one that knew *Bradford*, and ſo was able to give ſome Account of that holy Man: And which Mr. *Fox* is ſilent of in his Life and Martyrdom. He tells us, That he knew him familiarly: And adds, that he muſt give God that Praiſe for him, that among Men he ſcarcely knew one like him. And that as he knew him, ſo he knew how it pleaſed God, by effectual calling to turn his Heart unto the true Knowledge of the Goſpel. But I will rather leave the reſt of theſe remarkable Memorials of this heavenly Confeſſor and Martyr, tranſcribed in the *Appendix*. Num. X.

A brief Examination of divers Complaints.

A compendious and brief Examination of certain ordinary Complaints of divers our Country-men, in theſe our Days. "Which "although they be in ſome unjuſt and frivolous, yet are they all "by way of Dialogue, thoroughly debated and diſcuſſed." Imprinted 1581. A Book in *Octavo*, written by *W. S.* Gent. Which he dedicated in an Epiſtle, *To the vertuous and learned Lady, Queen* Elizabeth. In which Epiſtle he thus writes, "That being enforced by her Majeſty's late ſingular Clemency, in pardoning certain his undutiful Miſdemeanors, he ſought to acknowledge her "gracious Goodneſs and Bounty towards him, by exhibiting to her "this ſmall and ſimple Preſent. Wherein he had endeavoured to "anſwer certain Quarrels and Objections, daily and ordinarily occurrent in the Talk of ſundry Men, *&c.* Alledging ſuch Probabilities as he could, to ſtop the Mouths of certain evil affected "Perſons. Which in their Curioſity required further Satisfaction "in theſe Matters, than could well ſtand with good Modeſty.

'Tis a Dialogue between a Knight, and a Merchant-man, a Doctor, a Husbandman, and a Craftſman. And conſiſteth of divers Complaints. As the Complaint of the Husbandman by Reaſon of

ANNO 1581.

Encloſures. Complaint of Dearth of Victuals, by *Artificers.* Complaint of the Decay of Towns by *Merchant-men.* Complaint of Craftſmen againſt *Gentlemen*, for taking of Farms. The *Gentleman* complains, that he cannot keep Countenance as he was wont to do. The Doctor's Complaint was, for want of Men of his Art. And another Complaint was againſt learned Men. And here the Author enters into Diſcourſe in Behalf of Learning: Whether a Commonwealth may be well governed without Learning. That the Learned have always had the Sovereignty over the Unlearned. Whether a Man may be wiſe without Learning. That Learning ſupplies the lack of Experience. That Experience is the Father of Wiſdom. The wonderful Gifts that we have by Learning. That there is no Faculty but is made more conſummate by Learning. That Knowledge in moral Philoſophy is moſt neceſſary for a Counſellor. What makes learned Men to be ſo few?

In ſhort, this Author laid down his Deſign in the firſt Page of his Diſcourſe, *viz.* What Things Men are moſt grieved with. Then, what ſhould be the Occaſion of the ſame. And that known, how ſuch Griefs may be taken away, and the State of the Commonweal reformed again.

Poſitions for Education.

Now came forth alſo an excellent Book for the Education of Youth, ſet forth by *Richard Mulcaſter*, Maſter of the School erected *Anno* 1561. in the Pariſh of St. *Lawrence Pountney*, by the worſhipful Company of *Merchant Taylors* in *London.* The Book was called *Poſitions. Wherein thoſe poſitive Circumſtances be examined; which are neceſſary for the Training up of Children, for Skill in Books or Health in their Bodies.* In his Epiſtle which is writ to Queen *Elizabeth*, he gives the Reaſon, why he calleth his Book *Poſitions*; “Becauſe intending to go on further for the advancement of Learning, he thought it good at the firſt to put down certain Grounds very needful for his Purpoſe. For that they be the common Circumſtances that belong to Teaching, and are to be reſolved on ere we begin to teach. The End, he ſaith, of his whole Labour (thus beſpeaking her Majeſty) was to help to bring the general Teaching in her Majeſty's Dominions to ſome good and profitable Uniformity: Which then, in the midſt of great variety, did either hinder much, or profit little. Or at the leaſt nothing ſo much as it were like to do, if it were reduced to one certain Form. This he recommended to the Queen; which would bring great Honour to her Majeſty's Perſon, and Profit to the whole Realm. That as King *Henry* her Father vouchſafed to bring all *Grammar* into one Form; the Multitude whereof being come Impediment to School Learning in his Time, and thereby purchaſed himſelf great Honour, and procured his Subjects a marvelous Eaſe: So he exhorted her Majeſty, by that Royal Example, to further that Book [The *Grammar*] to a refining, but alſo the reducing of all other School-Books to ſome better Choice; and all manner of Teaching to ſome readier Form. Can ſo great a Good but ſound to your Majeſty's moſt endleſs Renown? as he concluded. The next Year we ſhall hear of another Book of his concerning Education, publiſhed, called, *The Elementary*; wherein we may ſee more of this Argument.

ANNO 1581.

A Diſcourſe of Royal Monarchy.

Now alſo was printed a Book, called, *A Diſcourſe of Royal Monarchy*. Writ by *Charles Merbury*, Gent. I take Notice of it as well for the Author, as the Subject of it. He was a Traveller, Scholar and Courtier, and much eſteemed by the Gentry of the Nation. And whoſe Book was, by the Biſhop of *London*'s deſire, peruſed by *Thomas Norton*, one of the City Counſil, and their Sollicitor. Whoſe Allowance and Approbation is given to it. In this Book is ſhewn the Opinion of *Monarchy* in Queen *Elizabeth*'s Time. Thus he writeth: " Whereas he [*i. e.* the Prince that go-" verneth this Kingdom] is not to receive his Power from any, ſo " is he neither to be ſubject unto any higher Power, either at Home " or Abroad. Though ſome did maintain, that a Prince is ſubject " unto the States and Peers of the Realm, as the Kings of *Lace-" dæmon* were to the *Ephori*: An Opinion (if it were not well tem-" pered and conveniently limited) moſt prejudicial unto the State of " a Monarchy; perverting and converting the ſame into a meer " *Ariſtocracy*. Much leſs is he ſubject in any Thing unto the Mul-" titude of the Common People. Who, as they have more Autho-" rity, are for the moſt Part moſt inſolent, and more diſpoſed unto " Rebellion. Wherefore in all well ordained Kingdoms, theſe have " no other than a *Voice Supplicative*.

" But ſome will ask, if this great Monarch of ours ſhall not be " ſubject unto the Laws, Cuſtoms and Privileges of the Country, " where he governs; unto the Oath, which he taketh at the En-" trance; unto ſuch Covenants and Promiſes as he maketh unto his " People. Unto whom we anſwer, That our Prince is ſubject un-" to Laws, both Civil and Common, to Cuſtoms, Privileges, Cove-" nants, and all kind of Promiſes; ſo far forth as they are agree-" able to the Law of God. Otherwiſe we think that he is not " bound to obſerve them. Wherein we neither diminiſh the Liber-" ty of the Subject, ſuppoſing all Laws to be good, or ought to be " good. Neither do we enlarge too much the Power of the Prince, " as to make him Lawleſs, ſubject neither to God his Law, nor " Man's Law. As ſome Flatterers perſuade the Pope and Emperor, " that they are above all Laws, and may uſe the Bodies and Lives " of their Subjects at their Luſt and Pleaſure; taking from them " their Lands, Goods and Liberties without Right or Reaſon. A " Thing expreſly contrary to the Word of God (*Thou ſhalt not " covet thy Neighbour's Houſe*, &c.) And a Doctrine moſt perni-" cious unto Princes: Who puft up with ſuch Opinions, ſhould " take their Courſe unto a Tyrannical kind of Puiſſance, making " their Covetouſneſs, Confiſcation, their Love, Adultery, their " Hatred, Murther. And as the Lightning goeth before the Thun-" der, ſo they, depraved with ſuch corrupted Counſellors, ſhould " make the Accuſation to go before the Fault, and the Condemna-" tion before the Trial.

Merbury *the Author. Who.*

This *Merbury* was a very accompliſhed Gentleman, bred up under Dr. *Humfrey* at *Oxford*, who was his Tutor, in the Studies of Humanity. Afterwards, at Court, a Servant to the Lord Chamberlain [Earl of *Suſſex*.] He and his Father Dependents on the

ANNO 1581.

Dutcheſs of *Suffolk*, and the Duke of *Suffolk:* And had a Revenue and Penſion from them.

The Path to Martial Diſcipline.

A Book of *Martial Diſcipline* now alſo came forth in *Quarto*, intitled, *The Path to Martial Diſcipline.* The Author *Thomas Styward.* Who, (as he wrote in his Epiſtle) as in Nature he delighted in martial Studies, ſo by Practice had atchieved ſome Experience therein. And indeed it was needful now for the *Engliſh* People to underſtand War; having ſo ſpightful, threatning, and withal powerful Adverſary, as *Philip* King of *Spain.* And this the Author makes the Reaſon of his publiſhing a Book of this Argument, *viz.* To teach the *Engliſh* Arms, in order to defend their Native Country and Liberties: "That whereas by the prudent Go-"vernment of our moſt bleſſed and vertuous Princeſs, we have the "happy Quiet that no Realm ever taſted of, the which he be-"ſeeched the living God long to continue, yet weighing the Con-"dition of the World, it was a Thing impoſſible for any Realm or "Dominion always to live in Peace, without the uſe of the Sword: "Wiſhing with his Heart, that the Subverſion of divers States, "through idleneſs, and contempt of theſe Warlike Orders, might "be ſo imprinted in our Hearts, as we might with moſt willing "Minds proſecute the antient Order of the *Romans.* The which in "Peace were not Sluggards, or delighted in idle and wanton Pa-"ſtimes; but in every City and Town the Noble Senators and "Captains, appointed ſuch as had Experience, that at certain Times "of the Year they ſhould not only train them that were ignorant, "but uſed ſuch Warlike Games, as to the furthering of thoſe Af-"fairs was thought moſt meet. This Martial Diſcipline was now "judged very neceſſary.

A Treatiſe De Re militari.

The ſame Year I find, another Book of the Art of War was writ, and printed in *Quarto*, intitled, *A compendious Treatiſe De Re Militari.* Concerning principal Orders to be obſerved in Martial Affairs. Written in the *Spaniſh* Tongue, by that worthy Captain, *Luis Gutierres de La Vega.* And newly tranſlated into *Engliſh* by *Nich. Litchfield.* This he Dedicated to the Worſhipful Mr. *Philip Sydney.* And the Reaſon of it he added; "Becauſe he found none more for-"ward to further and favour Martial Knowledge: Being of himſelf "moſt ready and adventurous in all Exerciſes of Feats of War "and Chivalry. And therefore he preſumed to dedicate the Tract "unto him. Dated from *London*, *Dec.* 9. 1581.

Dedicated to Philip Sydney.

Found in a Fort in Ireland.

And he added this Remark of it, That it was lately found in a Fort in *Ireland*, where the *Italians* and *Spaniards* had fortified themſelves. Which by Fortune came into his Hands by a Soldier of good Experience, who lately ſerved there. Which after this Gentleman, the Tranſlator, had peruſed, and taken the Advice of ſome better in Underſtanding than himſelf in thoſe Affairs, (which very much liked and allowed the Work) he was greatly boldened and encouraged to enterprize the Tranſlation thereof, partly, becauſe theſe principal Orders were always to be obſerved in Warlike Government; and chiefly, becauſe in our *Engliſh* Tongue he found not the like extant, for the neceſſary Inſtruction, and general Commodity of our common Soldiers.

ANNO 1581.

The Exerciſe of Arms, needful.

And how undiſciplined and raw in Matters of War, our *Engliſh* now were, and what juſt Apprehenſions of Danger ariſing hence from Foreign Arms, *Styward*, the Author of the former Book, ſhewed in an elegant Copy of Verſes ſet before it: Suggeſting how very ſuſpicious their preſent Condition was, and exciting them to take warning by other Neighbouring Countries that were fallen under Miſeries and Calamities from ſuch as by ſuperior Force invaded them: Theſe Verſes began,

As Wiſdom wills us to regard, what Plagues in Time do hap,
On ſuch as ſeek for to be rockt always in Pleaſure's Lap, &c.

But I chuſe rather to lay this Piece of old *Engliſh* Poetry in the *Appendix*, which will both entertain and inſtruct.

Num. XII.

An Examination of divers Complaints.

Another Political Book came forth this Year, upon occaſion of the Dearth of Victuals, and the high Prices of all other Things; which now were become much dearer than ever before. Which cauſed Murmurings and Diſcontents among the People. The Author undertook to look into the Reaſons thereof, in order to pacify and quiet the Queen's Subjects. The Book was called, *A compendious or brief Examination of certain ordinary Complaints of divers our Countrymen, in theſe our Days*, &c. By *W. S.* Gent. The running Title was, *A brief Conceipt of Engliſh Policy*. It is writ by way of Dialogue, between a Knight, a Merchant, a Doctor, a Capper, [or a Tradeſman] and an Huſbandman. Where thus one of them is brought in ſpeaking: "Such Poverty reigneth every where, as few "Men have ſo much to ſpare, as they may give any Thing to the "Reparation of Ways, Bridges, *&c.* And albeit there be many "Things laid down now, which before time were occaſion of much "Expences, as Maygames, Wakes, Revels, Wagers at Shooting, "Wreſtling, Running, and throwing the Stone or Bar; and beſides, "the Pardons, Pilgrimages, Offerings, and many ſuch other Things: "Yet I perceive we be never the wealthier, or rather poorer, *&c.* "That there was ſuch a general Dearth of all Things, as before "xx or xxx Years had not been, not only of Things growing within the Realm, but alſo of all other Merchandize, *&c.*" The Author, ſome learned Man, dedicated this his Book to the Queen: Becauſe thoſe popular Quarrels and Objections reached unto her Majeſty in daily and ordinary Occurrents. That upon his Zeal and good Meaning towards her Eſtate, he was earneſtly moved to undertake this Enterprize.

Eirenarcha.

Dedicated to Bromley, *Lord Chancellor.*

In this Year, Mr. *W. Lambard* of *Lincoln's-Inn*, Gent. a learned Lawyer and Hiſtorian, ſet forth a Book, called *Eirenarcha*, concerning the Office of ſuch as were Juſtices of the Peace, which he dedicated to Sir *Tho. Bromley*, Lord Chancellor of *England*. In that Epiſtle he ſpoke of his great Learning in the Laws of *England*, in theſe Words: "You, who do go beyond them all (in the perfect "Knowledge of our Law) that have gone before you in that honourable Place, which you now hold. And praying him, that "according to the Rule of Law (in his own Hands) he would "rectify the Commiſſion of the Peace, and ſome other Crookedneſs, "whereof that Book [of his] ſhould bring Complaint before "him.

The Occaſion of his Writing this Book.

And in the ſame Epiſtle he gives us the occaſion of his engaging himſelf in the Study of our Laws concerning *Juſtices*. Which was the Command of the ſaid Lord Chancellor, that his Name ſhould be put into the Commiſſion of the Peace for *Kent*, where the ſaid *Lambard* lived. “ At which Time he thought it his Part, as well
“ for ſaving his good Lordſhip blameleſs in the Choice, as alſo for
“ his own Information and Diſcharge in the Service itſelf, to look
“ diligently in that Portion of our Law which concerneth the Office
“ of the *Peace*; wherewith he had before that Time very little or
“ no Acquaintance. And therefore in greedy Appetite, he began
“ firſt with *M. Fitzherbert*'s Treatiſe of the *Juſtices of Peace*.
“ Then went he to another antient Book of the ſame Argument, but
“ of an Author unknown to him; and Thirdly, he came to *M.*
“ *Marrow*'s Reading. All which when he had peruſed, he ſeemed
“ to himſelf, as he added, to have taken ſome ſuch Taſte of the
“ Thing that he ſought, as did rather incenſe than ſatisfy his Thirſt
“ and Deſire. And calling to Mind that it was truly ſaid,

Gratius ex ipſo fonte bibuntur aquæ,

“ he betook himſelf to the old and new Books of the *Common Laws*,
“ and to the Volumes of the *Acts* and *Statutes*; and from his Collections
“ thence, framed a *Model* thereof in that Book.

There was another Edition of this Book in the forty fourth Year of Queen *Elizabeth*, 1602. Reviſed, corrected, and enlarged. Where, in the Proheme, he declared that his Purpoſe was to compare the Writings of ſome others that before had wrote of the Duties of Juſtices [*viz. Marrow* and *Fitzherbert*] with the Book Caſes and Statutes that had riſen of latter Times. And out of them all to collect ſome Body of Diſcourſe, that might ſerve for the preſent Age, and ſomewhat further the good Endeavour of ſuch Gentlemen as were not trained up to the continual Study of the Laws.

Collections of the Prophets, &c. concerning the Converſion of Iſrael.

In this Year alſo, or the Year before, I meet with a *MS.* (whether printed afterwards or no, I know not) intitled, *Certain Collections out of the Prophets and the New Teſtament*; concerning the Converſion and Reſtitution of *Iſrael*. Whereupon doth depend the general Judgment, and the general Reſtitution alſo of Heaven and Earth. By *R. E. Anno* 1580. This Author, whoſe Name was *Roger Edwards* of *London*, dedicated his Book to the Lord *Burghley*, Lord High-Treaſurer, Lord *Francis Ruſſel* of *Bedford*, Lord *Rob. Dudley*, Earl of *Leiceſter*, to Dr. *Elmer*, Biſhop of *London*, and many more.

Pentateuch, *by* Beza.

To all the reſt I add *Beza*'s valuable Gift, preſented this Year towards the furniſhing of the new Library at *Cambridge*; being an antient Copy of the *Pentateuch* in ſix Languages: With his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, Chancellor of that Univerſity, when he ſent it. Which it ſeems his Nephew *Anthony Bacon* brought along with him from *Geneva*, where he had been and viſited that learned Man in his Travails. Upon whoſe Motion and Encouragement *Beza* preſumed to write a Letter to him: Eſpecially upon that Occaſion that offered itſelf, namely, the preſenting him with ſomething that he believed would not be unacceptable to him. That he had got a Copy of the five Books of *Moſes*; Printed either at *Conſtantine* in *Africa*, or at *Conſtantinople* many Years ago: Which he aſked Leave to call *The Hexaglott*, *viz.* the *Arabick*, *Perſian*, barbarous

Greek,

ANNO 1581.

Greek, and ancient *Spaniſh*: Set forth for the Uſe of the *Jewiſh* Synagogues; beſides the *Hebrew* and *Chaldee*. Which for the Rarity and antique Novelty (as he might call it) he thought chiefly ought to be ſent to his Honour. Which might ſerve as a Monument worthy his Wiſdom and Excellency, to be repoſited in a Library, then a preparing by him in the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, the chief Care and Government whereof was committed to him.

And ſo concluded his Letter, praying him to take in good Part his Boldneſs, as a Teſtimony and Pledge of that high Eſteem he had for his Lordſhip, Dated from *Geneva*. 8. *Id. December* 1581. But the whole Letter in elegant *Latin* ought to be preſerved in grateful Memory of the Donor. Num. XIII. Which ancient Book, I ſuppoſe ſtill remains in that Library: As it hath been often made Uſe of by our Commentators. And in another Letter to that Lord the next Year he perſuaded him to procure the Printing of the ſaid *Pentateuch*, which he had ſent him the Year before: At leaſt the *Perſian*, *Arabick*, and vulgar *Greek* Verſions, with the *Hebrew* Verſes added. Which might, he ſaid, be done at no great Charge, by *Plantin* at *Antwerp*. And that ſuch an Edition would be highly profitable to the whole Chriſtian World, and procure to himſelf an immortal Name. And ſo prayed him to think again, and again upon it. This Letter of *Beza* will not be improper to be joined to the Former in the *Appendix*. Num. XIV.

Moves the Lord Treaſurer to get it Printed by Plantin.

CHAP. VIII.

ANNO 1582.

The French *Match like to ſucceed. And a* League *with* France. *Treaty with* Mary, *Queen of* Scots, *fruſtrate. Parties in* Scotland. Ireland *chargeable. Plots.* Parry *in* Venice *and* Lyons: *His Intelligence: Writes in Favour of the good Knight. A Proclamation againſt harbouring* Jeſuits *and* Prieſts: *And going to the Colleges at* Rheims *and* Rome: *Seſſions at* London. *Maſsmongers*, &c. *The Queen aſſiſts the Proteſtant Churches.* Duke *of* Bipont, *Prince* Palatine *comes into* England. Wierus *his Agent. Letters of the Queen's Ambaſſador in* France, *concerning the Duke of* Savoy. Beza*'s Letter to the Lord Treaſurer in Behalf of* Geneva. *Prince of* Orange*'s Death foretold by the Pope's* Nuncio.

The French *King yields to Terms about Monſieur's Match.*

AS to the Match with *France*, which ſtill ſtuck upon Terms required on the Part of the *French* King; he ſeemed now to encline. So the Queen's Ambaſſador wrote to the Lord Chamberlain in a Letter Dated *September* 26. 1582. Advertiſing his Lordſhip, how they in that Court gave him to underſtand,

ſtand, that the King had the laſt Week written into *England*, and to his Brother, the Duke, that his Majeſty was willing to grant to all Demands made (on the *Engliſh* ſide) for the effecting of the Marriage. And that he further heard tell, that the King was enclined to enter into League with her Majeſty; about which Commiſſioners from both Princes, were buſy the laſt Year, as hath been related. And then the ſaid Ambaſſador made this Obſervation hence; “That ſuch were the Occaſions of the World, as they perſuaded more in Princes, than any Perſon could do.” Adding, “That the King was at that Time very weak, and at *Moulins*, and intended to repair eaſily to S. *Germaines on Leye*.” But that Diſeaſe of the King proved not mortal, being reſerved ſome Years longer for a more violent Death, as their Hiſtories ſhew.

A fine Coach ſent to the Queen by the French King.

The Queen had ſent the *French* King a Preſent of *Engliſh* Dogs. And he was now preparing a very ſplendid Chariot, to preſent again to her. And ſo the Ambaſſador ſignified in his Letter to her Majeſty, *viz.* “The *French* King hath commanded to be made for your Majeſty an exceeding, marvailous, princely Coach. And to be provided four of the faireſt Moiles which are to be had, for to carry your Highneſs's Litter. The King hath been moved to ſhew himſelf in this Sort grateful to your Majeſty on the receiving thoſe Dogs, and other Singularities you were lately pleaſed to ſend unto him, for his Falconer.

Treaties with the Scots Queen broke off. And why.

Something I have to inſert here of *Mary* the *Scotch* Queen, taken from certain Notes of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*'s Hand. It hath been ſhewed before concerning ſeveral Treaties with her by honourable Agents from Queen *Elizabeth*. Beſides which, a fourth Treaty began, *Anno* 1582. Wherein Sir *Walter Mildmay*, a chief Privy Counſillor, was employed. And while the Proceeding therein was a little ſuſpended upon a Practice of an Anſwer from *Scotland*, touching the *Scotch* Kings Diſpoſition; her Majeſty diſcovered, that the Duke of *Guiſe* was preparing ſome Attempt againſt *England* for the *Scottiſh* Queen. For whoſe Enlargement alſo *Francis Throgmorton* at the ſame Time practiſed an Invaſion to be made into this Land; and other Traitors to be accepted. Which being diſcovered, and he apprehended, gave Cauſe that this Treaty proceeded no farther. To which I will ſubjoin what follows in the ſame *MS.* concerning other Treaties the two next enſuing Years. *viz.*

In *Anno* 1583. the Earl of *Shrewsbury* and Mr. *Beal* were appointed by her Majeſty to deal with the *Scotch* Queen in another Treaty, with Promiſe to return Sir *Walter Mildmay*; if ſhe would diſcover certain Practices againſt her Majeſty, which ſhe pretended to know. While this Treaty was in Hand, by the *Scotch* Queen's Pro---- [Procurement] and Direction, the Duke *D'Aubignie* [*Lenox*] the Lord *Fenhurſt*, and Sir *James Bafford*, all mortal Enemies to the State of *England*, were brought into *Scotland*. And ſo the Treaty was broke off by that Occaſion.

Laſt, in *Anno* 1584. Another Treaty was entered into with *Nau*, the *French* Secretary. At which Time the Treaſons and Practices of *Parry* were diſcovered. And ſo the Treaty ceaſed. By all which it is evident, that the *Scotch* Queen hath never entred into any Treaty,

ANNO 1582.

ty, but only of Purpoſe to abuſe her Majeſty with ſome treacherous Attempts or other: As the Writer of theſe Notes concluded.

Factions in Scotland.

Camb. Eliz. ſub Ann. 1582.

In that Kingdom of *Scotland* were great Diſturbances this Year raiſed by two Factions there; whereof one of them, that pretended to be of the Proteſtant Side, *viz.* Earl *Goury*, *Mar*, and others, by a Wile ſeized the King's Perſon in a Caſtle, and there detained him, till he ſhould have removed the Duke of *Lenox*, from him, whom they eſteemed to be of the Popiſh Faction; and ſhould do other Things, as they thought good, as our Hiſtorian relates. And to ſmooth over the better this their Exploit, in thus handling their King, they publiſhed a Declaration, which bore this Title: *Ane Declaratioun of the juſt and neceſſary Cauſes, moving us of the Nobility of* Scotland *and uthers, the now King's faithful Subjects, to repair to his Highneſs Preſence, and to remain with him: For reſiſting the preſent Daungers appearing to God's true Religion, and Profeſſors thereof, and to his Highneſs own Perſon, State and Crown, and his faithful Subjects that hes conſtantly continued in his Obedience; and to ſeek Redreſs and Reformation of the Abuſe and Confuſion of the Commonwealth; removing from his Majeſty the chief Authors thereof,* &c. *Directed from* Striveling *with ſpecial Command, and Licence to be printed.* 1582. This remarkable Declaration is ſtill remaining in *Lambeth* Library. This Party Queen *Elizabeth* favoured, becauſe they oppoſed the *Guiſian* Faction there, very buſy, implacable Enemies to her, and were at this Time intent upon an Invaſion by the Way of *Scotland*.

The King of Scots *detained in a Caſtle.*

Lamb. *Libr.* XVIII. *6.*

The ill State of Ireland.

As for *Ireland*, it was oppreſt with Wars and Commotions, and the ill Management of the Queen's Officers there. Inſomuch that the Lord Treaſurer, who knew well how expenſive that Kingdom was, had theſe Words in a Letter of his to Sir *Nic. White*, Maſter of the Rolls there, "That he knew not how to relieve that miſerable Country, and lamented the State thereof: As finding it to take "as much Harm by Phyſicians and Surgeons. I mean, ſaid he, Captains and their Bands, as it did by Rebels." It was written from the Court at *Oatlands*, *September* 11. 1582.

Parry's *Intelligence from abroad.*

From Venice.

Plots were carrying on every where againſt the Queen and Government by Papiſts: And *Parry* (not yet diſcovered to be ſuch a Traitor) among the reſt very buſy abroad in ſuch Work: Though he cunningly made the Lord *Burghley* believe at firſt, that he was a very diligent Spy for the Queen in divers Parts abroad. And often writ his Letters of Intelligence concerning them to that Lord, and to the Secretary. Take ſome Minutes of a ſecret Letter or two of his, wrote in *March* 1582. from *Venice*, of News and Reports abroad of the Queen, and of her Perſecution of the *Romaniſts*. Where he took Occaſion to mix his Thoughts about the *French* King, and the King of *Spain*, and the Queen's Concerns with each. Whereby might appear how his Inclination ſtood: That is, favourably to *Spain*, and that Intereſt. "That the late Enterprize in *Flanders*, reported there [at *Venice*] to the great Diſhonour of the "*French*, had filled thoſe Parts full of Expectation, what the "Queen's Majeſty would do:" [Meaning, whether ſhe would aſſiſt

ANNO 1582.

and protect thoſe of the *Low Countries* againſt King *Philip*, ſhe having countenanced and granted Men and Money to the *French* King's Brother for that Purpoſe, but was gone away lately in ſome Diſgrace home.] “ And that as her Government had hitherto been “ thought to exceed all the Princes of her Time, ſo it was looked, “ that her Majeſty ſhould now ſerve herſelf on all good Occaſions “ pretended for her Quietneſs and better Aſſurance.” [No longer to ſtir up ſo great a Prince as the King of *Spain*, who muſt needs create her and her Kingdoms great Diſturbance.] He added, “ That the “ *French* King, and his Mother did find themſelves grieved for ſome “ liberal Speeches, uſed of them in that Town, [*viz. Venice.*] But “ that that Common-wealth had the Honour of Princes in great Re- “ gard, and could not abide to have them touched by Word or “ Writing. ——— That it had been told him in great Secreſy “ (though he ſaid, he might not avow it) that the Queen Mother “ lieth in the Wind, and watcheth to give our Queen [*Elizabeth*] “ a Mate, and would undoubtedly do it, if her Majeſty did not “ look well to her Game.” [Meaning, by the crafty Inſinuations of that Queen to bring about the Match between the Queen and her Son, the Duke *D'Anjou*, a Perſon looſe enough, and with whom ſhe was not like to live with Comfort.]

He went on with his Intelligence. “ We hear of great and daily “ Preparations for the Sea in *Naples*, *Spain*, and *Portugal.* But not “ that Don *Antonio*'s Fortune [whom Queen *Elizabeth* favoured “ againſt *Spain*] can ſerve him, to offend the King *Catholio.* It is “ judged a very ſlender Policy, that we having no Ambaſſador in “ *Spain*, do ſtill entertain the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *England:* “ Where I fear me there is too much to be done by Money: [*viz.* “ Money diſtributed by that Ambaſſador to carry on his Deſigns.] “ That many were of Opinion, that it was a Matter of leſs Difficul- “ ty for us to confirm that ancient League with *Burgundy*, [another “ favourable Word for *Spain*] than to continue our Intelligence “ with *France.* With whom for five hundred Years I do not find “ that we have had any long Peace. And out of Doubt I am, that “ we have very mighty Enemies in *France* to our Quietneſs. Our “ Traffick in the *Levant* cannot but be dangerous, and full of Ad- “ venture for our Merchants, ſo long as we ſtand upon doubtful “ Terms with *Spain.* The Prince of *Orange*, is thought now to “ live in more Danger than ever; and that he ſhall not long eſcape, “ if Practice may prevail. [This ſhews *Parry* to be acquainted with “ the Intrigues of *Spain*, that Prince being baſely ſhot by a *Bur-* “ *gundian* ſome Time after.] The new Book at *Rome*, dedicated to “ the Cardinal *S. Sixti*, and intitled *De Perſecutione Anglicanâ*, “ hath raiſed a barbarous Opinion of our Cruelty. I could wiſh, “ added he, that in thoſe Caſes it might pleaſe her Majeſty to par- “ don the diſmembering and quartering.” And in the End of his Letter he gives a Hint of *Shelley*, (a Fugitive who was made Lord Prior of S. *John*'s of *Jeruſalem* by Q. *Mary*, and now as it ſeems at *Venice.*) “ Sir *Richard Shelley* is very deſirous to return, and pro- “ miſeth very great Services, if he be not diſquieted for his Con-

“ ſcience.” This Letter was dated from *Venice* the 4th of *March*, 1582, without any Name ſubſcribed.

His Letter from Venice, *a Place fit for Intelligence.*

In another Letter from *Venice*, dated *Jan.* 28. he ſuggeſted to the ſame Stateſman, to whom he addreſſed before, how he was placed in that City, a Place fit for Intelligence; “ That if he ſhould write to his Lordſhip, that either that Place was ſo barren, or himſelf ſo ſlothful, that he could not honour and ſerve his Lordſhip as he was wont, he ſhould greatly err. But being firſt deſirous to underſtand from his Lordſhip, in what Kind his Service might beſt like him, he had purpoſely forborn to be too buſy in writing. And being greatly looked upon, [as a Spy] it might greatly import him to look, how and what he wrote. He found it a Matter very unpleaſant, to be troubled or tied to the Advertiſements of ordinary Occurrents, [which was then chiefly required of him.] And that yet if any thing happened, that he ſhould think to be of Importance, he would not fail to advertiſe his Lordſhip. That that Place [*Venice*] was very plentiful of good and bad [News:] But the beſt was hardly to be had without Charge: [an Argument uſed to encreaſe his Salary.] Which he could think well beſtowed, to look into three Men's Proceedings in that Town.” Who were Agents perhaps of ſome foreign Princes: Whoſe Servants he might corrupt by Money.

Traffick into the Levant.

The Writer then turned to the *Engliſh* Merchants Trade there. *viz.* “ That our Traffick into the *Levant* did, and would more and more offend many. And that there was nothing undevized that might tend to the Diſcredit of our Merchants, or Increaſe of their Danger. [Out of Hatred and Malice to the *Engliſh* Nation.] But that if our Wool were wrought at home, and our Cloaths (almoſt out of Price) well made, it could not but marvailouſly enrich our State.

He adds, “ That he had ſent to his Lordſhip two *Italian* Books by Sea: And that he would ſend him many mo, if he were as able as he was willing.

Sir Rich. Shelley, *the good Knight.*

Another Buſineſs of his Letter was concerning a *good Knight*: Whoſe Name he mentioned not. It was undoubtedly Sir *Richard Shelley*, abovementioned, who departed out of *England* for his Religion: But of better Principles of Loyalty than the *Jeſuits* and *Seminaries*. This Gentleman *Parry* met at *Venice* and fell into Acquaintance with him: And being known to the Lord Treaſurer, took the Opportunity, in his Correſpondence with that Lord, to move him in his Behalf. “ That in his Letters he had writ to his Lordſhip how willing the good Knight, mentioned in his Honour's Letters, was to come home, ſo as he might be warranted by Paſport to come and go ſafely. For, as his Intent was (as it had been always) honourable and dutiful to his Prince and Country, ſo he was loth that his coming, only to diſcharge his Duty to her Majeſty in Matters that he might not write, or commit to any Man, ſhould turn or be wreſted to his Harm or Diſhonour. Neither did he think, that any Man could work this Readineſs in him, but that he had a ſingular good Opinion, and Hope of her Majeſty's gracious, and his Lordſhip's real Dealing and Proceeding. And

ANNO 1582.

“ ſo hoping to hear from his Lordſhip concerning the *good Knight*, “ he committed the ſame to God, *&c.*” Of this Sir *Rich. Shelley* we ſhall hear from his own Letters afterwards.

Another Letter of Parry's *from* Venice *to Lord Treaſurer.*

Would be thought a true Man.

Parry's great Drift was to conceal his Treachery and Falſhood, and to make the *Engliſh* Court believe him a *true* Man. Thus in another Letter of his to the Lord Treaſurer a few Days after, *viz. March* the 10th, from the City: “ That he would forbear Writing “ of Trifles, [Matter of leſs Concern] not troubling his Lordſhip “ with them: And would reſerve himſelf wholly for ſuch ſpecial “ Service as he ſhould think fit for the Queen's Majeſty, and grate- “ ful to his Lordſhip, and Mr. S. [Secretary.] He knew his “ Lordſhip could not lack any ordinary Occurrences out of all “ Parts, nor ſuch as were of greateſt Importance from great Perſo- “ nages, *&c.* I have preſumed, that your Lordſhip hath ever “ eſteemed me for a *true Man* to my Prince and Country: So much “ that whatſoever do come to their Ears, I beſeech you to promiſe “ for me; and I will not fail to perform it, God willing.” [This laſt Period hath a Line drawn under it, by the Lord Treaſurer's Pen, as his Cuſtom was in Paſſages of Letters ſent him of more Remark.]

“ I pray you tell Mr. Secretary, that here is ſuch a Speech of “ the Perſecution and Cruelty, that your Lordſhip, ſometime in the “ ſame Predicament, is almoſt forgotten, [that is, in reſpect of other “ of the Queen's Counſillors for theſe Proceedings.] My Lords of “ *Huntington* and *Leiceſter*, and Mr. Secretary, are the Men moſt “ wondred at.

Another Letter of his from Lions, 1583.

His pretended Services at Rheims *and* Rome.

Let me ſubjoin ſome more of this falſe Man's Intelligences the next Year: When he was now rambled to *Lions* in *France.* Whence he wrote to the ſame Lord a Letter, dated *May* the 10th, to this Import: “ That his great Liking to live in the State of *Venice* was “ over-ruled by the Neceſſity of his Departure,” [whether by being ſuſpected to be a Spy for the Queen, or rather for his running in Debt, more than he could pay, as he was a riotous and great Spender in *England*] “ though I have not perhaps fully ſatisfied the Expe- “ ctation had of me, yet have I done the beſt to ſerve the Queen's “ Majeſty. If I be not miſtaken, I have ſhaken the Foundation of “ the *Engliſh* Seminary, that at *Rheims*; and utterly overthrown the “ Credit of the *Engliſh* Penſioners in *Rome.* My Inſtruments were “ ſuch as paſt for Great, Honourable, and Grave. The Courſe was “ extraordinary and ſtrange: Reaſonably well deviſed, ſoundly “ followed, and ſubſtantially executed; without the Aſſiſtance of any “ one of the *Engliſh* Nation. Your honourable Favour and Mr. Secre- “ tary's, hath overthrown my Credit with our Countrymen on this “ Side. Yet if I were well warranted and allowed, I would either “ prevent and diſcover all *Roman* and *Spaniſh* Practices againſt our “ State, or loſe my Life, in Teſtimony of my Loyalty to the “ Queen's Majeſty, and Duty to my honourable Friends, that have “ protected me.” [All this craftily by him inſinuated to create a firm Truſt and Confidence in him and his Service.] He goes on. “ If it pleaſe your Lordſhip to confer with Mr. Secretary, touching “ my Letters herewith ſent, to adviſe and direct me, I am ready

" to do all I ſhall be able and am commanded. Whatſoever I have " already ſpent, I do think well beſtowed. But it is neither my " poor State, nor any trifling Allowance that will ſerve to do that " is to be done; the meaneſt Man that is to be followed and court" ed [Abroad where he was] being a Secretary." [Thus hoping to get a liberal Salary from thoſe, againſt whom he was all this while practiſing.]

" I have taken my Leave of ordinary Occurrences long ago, as " little worth, and leſs availing our State. I am promiſed very good " Intelligence from *Venice*. If it be performed, your good Lord" ſhip ſhall be well ſerved.

" I came from *Baden* [in *Switzerland*,] where the Dyet is holden. " The Ambaſſadors of *France*, *Savoy*, and the Cantons and Confe" derates were aſſembled. The Ambaſſadors of *Zurick*, *Bern* and " *Geneva* [Proteſtant States] told me they had ſmall Hopes of any " Accord. They mean to urge the Matter to ſome ſound Reſolution. " I find the *French* King greatly miſtruſted. *Geneva* is in good Hope " to be relieved out of *England*. I ſpake with Mr. *Beza*. I think " the Man greatly decayed, and not long laſting." [But he was miſtaken, *Beza* lived many a Year after, to 1605.] " I was alſo " with Mr. *Gualter*, [an eminent Miniſter of *Zurick*] a good Man, " and well affected to our Nation. I was very well entertained, " and preſented in *Zurick* and *Geneva*." This was the Sum of his Letter from *Lyons*. Thus *Parry* went in a Mask hitherto, and fared well by that Means. We ſhall hear more of him and his Intelligence the Year enſuing, from *Lyons* and *Paris*, ſtill cloaking his Malice.

A Proclamation againſt Jeſuits and Seminaries, and their Harbourers.

A large Proclamation came forth in *April* this Year, againſt *Jeſuits* and Seminary Prieſts, and againſt the Harbourers of them, and ſuch as ſent their Children to the Colleges abroad, for the better Security of the Queen's Life and Reign, and the Government and Religion eſtabliſhed; which I ſhall here ſet down, the rather, ſince our Hiſtorians are ſilent of it, and may ſerve conſiderably to enlighten that Part of the Hiſtory of thoſe Times, and of that Popiſh, buſy, dangerous Faction.

It ſet forth, " How the Queen's Majeſty had heretofore been " given to underſtand, that certain Societies and Conventicles, ſome " under the Name of *Seminaries*, and ſome of *Jeſuits*, had been of " late Years erected by the Biſhop of *Rome*, as well in the City of " *Rome*, as in the Dominion of other Princes; Namely, and eſpe" cially, for the Natural born Subjects of her Majeſty's Kingdoms " and Dominions; with Intent and Purpoſe to train them up in " falſe and erroneous Doctrine: By Means whereof divers of her " Majeſty's Natural born Subjects had not only been perverted in " Matters of Religion, but alſo ſought, drawn, and perſuaded from " the acknowledgment of their Natural Duties and Allegiance unto " her Majeſty, as their Natural Prince, and only Sovereign; and " by ſpecial Direction from the Pope and his Delegates, had been " made Inſtruments of ſundry wicked, traiterous Practices; tend" ing not only to the moving and ſtirring up of Rebellion within " their natural Countries, (which through the Goodneſs of Al" mighty God, and her Majeſty's provident Government, had al-

ANNO 1582.

" ways been foreſeen and prevented) but alſo to the endangering of " her Majeſty's moſt Royal Perſon. That her Highneſs hereupon " foreſeeing the great Miſchief that might enſue ſuch traiterous " and wicked Inſtruments, did therefore, by her Proclamation, bear- " ing Date at her Palace at *Weſtminſter*, the 10th Day of *January*, " in the 23d Year of her moſt proſperous Reign, notify unto her " Subjects, That if any of them, or any other within her Highneſs's " Dominions, after the publiſhing of that her Proclamation, ſhould " receive, maintain, ſuccour, or relieve any *Jeſuit*, Seminary Man, " Maſſing Prieſts, or other like Perſons aforeſaid, which ſhould " come, or ſhould be ſent into this Realm, or into any other her " Dominions, or ſhould not diſcover the receiving or harbouring of " the ſame Perſons, or any ſuch vagrant, counterfeit Perſons, as " might juſtly by their Behaviour be ſuſpected to be of ſuch Qua- " lity and ill Condition: As alſo, (in Caſe they ſhould remain with " them at the Time of the ſaid Proclamation, or afterwards) ſhould " not bring them before the next Juſtice, or before ſome other pub- " lick Officer, to the End they might be in like Sort committed, " and forthcoming to be examined; and to receive ſuch Puniſhment " as by her Highneſs ſhould be thought meet according to their De- " ſerts; That then they ſhould be reputed as Maintainers and Abet- " tors of ſuch rebellious and ſeditious Perſons; and receive for the " ſame their Contempt, ſuch ſevere Puniſhment as by the Laws of " the Realm, and her Majeſty's Princely Authority, might be in- " flicted upon them.

" That ſithence which Time ſome Example having been made for " the condign Puniſhment of ſuch as have contemptuouſly broken " her Highneſs's expreſs Commandment, in that Behalf given by the " ſaid Proclamation; and ſome of the ſaid traiterous Perſons, as " namely, *Edmund Campion*, Jeſuit, *Raulphe Sherwine*, and *John* " *Briant*, Seminary Prieſts, having diſguiſedly and very ſecretly " wandred in the Realm, and at length apprehended; and ſo there- " upon juſtly, lawfully, publickly, and orderly indicted, arraigned, " condemned and executed for divers Treaſons; and ſome others " their Complices, having been likewiſe juſtly and lawfully con- " demned for the like Crimes: Her Majeſty finding, what through " the Obſtinacy and Malice of ſome, and the wilful Ignorance of " many others, that neither the ſaid Proclamation, nor the ſaid " Examples have wrought ſuch Effect of Reformation, as upon good " Hope conceived of this her Forewarning, her Highneſs had ex- " pected and deſired; and perceiving withal, that ſome traiterouſly " affected, have of late by Letters, Libels, Pamphlets and Books " both written and printed, falſly, ſeditiouſly and traiterouſly given " out, that the ſaid moſt horrible Traitors, were without juſt Cauſe " condemned and executed; had therefore thought good to make " known unto her good and faithful Subjects, and generally to all " others within her Dominions; whereby they might not be abuſed, " nor enveigled by thoſe and ſuch like moſt wicked, falſe and dange- " rous Traitors and Seducers, that it had manifeſtly and plainly ap- " peared unto her Highneſs and her Council, as well by many Ex- " aminations, as by ſundry of their own Letters and Confeſſions;

" Beſides the late manifeſt Attempts of the like Companions, di-
" rected by the Pope out of Number, of the ſaid Seminaries and
" *Jeſuits*, broken out to actual Rebellion in *Ireland*; that the very
" End and Purpoſe of theſe *Jeſuits* and Seminary Men, and ſuch
" like Prieſts ſent, or to be ſent over into this Realm, and other
" her Majeſty's Dominions, from the Parts beyond the Seas, was
" not only to prepare ſundry her Majeſty's Subjects, inclinable to
" Diſloyalty, to be up, to give Aid to Foreign Invaſion, and to ſtir
" up Rebellion within the ſame: But alſo (that moſt perilous is) to
" deprive her Majeſty, (under whom, and by whoſe provident
" Government, with God's Aſſiſtance, theſe Realms have been ſo long
" and ſo happily kept and continued in great Plenty, Peace and Se-
" curity) of her Life, Crown and Dignity.

" That ſeeing the great Miſchief that otherwiſe might enſue un-
" to the whole Eſtate of her Majeſty's Realms and Countries, if
" theſe Attempts were not more ſeverely lookt unto and puniſhed;
" and to the Intent none ſhould, after the Publication hereof, ex-
" cuſe themſelves by Pretence of any Ignorance; her Majeſty did
" therefore hereby ſignify to all her loving Subjects, and all other
" within her Dominions, That all the ſaid *Jeſuits*, Seminary Men
" and Prieſts aforeſaid, coming into theſe her Dominions in ſuch ſe-
" cret Manner, were, and ſo, of all her Subjects aforeſaid, ought to
" be holden, eſteemed and taken for Traitors to her Majeſty, her
" Crown and Realm. And that all ſuch as, after the publiſhing of
" this Proclamation, ſhould wittingly and willingly receive, har-
" bour, aid, comfort, relieve and maintain any ſuch *Jeſuit*, Semi-
" nary Man, or Prieſt, as was aforeſaid, ſhould be, and ought to be
" dealt with, uſed, and proceeded on, as willing and witting Aid-
" ers, Comforters, Relievers, and Maintainers of Traitors, com-
" mitting High Treaſon to her Majeſty's Perſon: and that every
" ſuch Perſon, as ſhall have any ſuch *Jeſuit*, Seminary Man or
" Prieſt, in his or her Houſe or Company, at the Time of the Pub-
" lication hereof; or after, knowing him to be ſuch, and ſhall not
" forthwith himſelf, do his or her beſt endeavour to bring him, or
" cauſe him to be brought, before the next Juſtice of the Peace, or
" other publick Officer, to be committed to Priſon; whereby he
" might be forth coming to anſwer his Offence, according to her
" Highneſs's Laws; That then every ſuch Perſon ſhall be deemed,
" taken and dealt with, as a maintainer and aider of Traitors, as
" aforeſaid. And that every Perſon, wittingly concealing any ſuch
" *Jeſuit*, Seminary Man or Prieſt, or any their Practices aforeſaid,
" ſhall be deemed and taken to be in Caſe of miſpriſion of Treaſon.

" And moreover, her Highneſs's Pleaſure and expreſs Command-
" ment was, That none of her Subjects, nor any other under her
" Obeiſance, ſhall ſuffer their Children, or any other, being under
" Charge or Government, except lawful Merchants, and ſuch as
" without Covin ſhall be Agents or Factors for lawful Merchants,
" in their Trades of Merchandize beyond the Seas, and Mariners
" for their Voyages, to depart out of this Realm without her High-
" neſs's ſpecial Licence firſt had and obtained; upon pain of her
" Highneſs's Diſpleaſure, and ſuch further Puniſhment as may be
" impoſed

“ impoſed upon the Offenders in that Behalf, for ſuch their Offence and Contempt. And that as well all ſuch of her Majeſty's Subjects as were at that preſent of the ſaid Seminaries and *Jeſuits*, erected beyond the Seas as aforeſaid, and ſhall not return within one Quarter of a Year after ſuch Proclamation made; as all other which after the Proclamation hereof, ſhall paſs over the Seas, and be of any of the Seminaries or Societies erected as aforeſaid, ſhall be *ipſo facto* taken, reputed and eſteemed to be Traitors to her Highneſs's Perſon, her Crown and Realm: And that all Maintainers, Aiders, Relievers and Comforters of ſuch Perſons, ſhall be eſteemed, taken and dealt with, as Maintainers, Aiders, Relievers and Comforters of ſuch Traitors. Given at our Manor of *Greenwich*, the firſt Day of *April*, in the 24th Year of our Reign.

This was a ſecond Proclamation againſt the Harbourers and Maintainers of theſe *Jeſuits* and Seminaries; and was thought neceſſary to be ſet forth, to vindicate the Queen and State in the late Execution of ſome of them; many Letters being writ, and Libels ſcattered about, to defame her Majeſty, as though thoſe Traitors were put to Death unjuſtly: And to declare to all her Subjects, their due deſerts as Traitors; and how apparent their Purpoſes were to raiſe Rebellions in her Kingdom, nay, and ſought her Life and Crown: And therefore how neceſſary this her Care was for the Prevention thereof.

Seminary Prieſts, Maſs-mongers, &c. *at the Seſſions at* London.

Osborn, *a Prieſt and* Franciſcan *Friar.*

Et ſunt undiq; obruti pediculis.

Of theſe buſy Factors for Popery at this Time, came a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer from *Fleetwood* the Recorder of *London*: Informing him of what was done at one of their Seſſions, to this Tenor: “ That they had been every Day occupied with Seminary Prieſts, Maſs-mongers, Libellers, and ſuch like. And that in the firſt Week of Lent, it fell out, that there was a Book caſt abroad in commending *Campion* [the *Jeſuit* that was lately executed] and his Fellows; and of their Death. That he [the Recorder] purſued the Matter ſo cloſe, that he found the Preſs, the Letters, the Figures, and a Number of the Books. And that being in this Search, one *Oſborn*, a Seminary Prieſt, came drooping into a Chamber, where Mr. *Topcliff*, of the Court and himſelf were. Him they examined. And it appeared, that he was a Seminary Prieſt, and had dwelt at the Hoſpital [for the *Engliſh*] at *Rome* four Years. And after, he was profeſſed into a Houſe of the *Franciſcans*, being barefoot Friers, that lived by Begging. And that he laboured, as he ſaid, by cutting of Wood, and bearing of it upon his Back. That they alſo [of that Order] lay upon no Beds, but tumbled in the Straw, like Swine. That they uſed no Shirt: That they had no more Garments, but ſuch as they daily wore. The which were ſlender, thin and extreme cold. Their Diet ſlender; and they eat but once a Day. They drank Water. They might touch no Money.

“ He [this Frier] added further, That being of this Order but ſeven Weeks, it being ſo ſtrait, he was driven to flee, and come into *England*. And in *Chriſtmas* he ſaid *Sunday* Maſſes at Mr. *Browne*'s Houſe, the Lord Viſcount's Brother, before the

“ Lady *Vaux* and certain others: And that *in Craſtino Epiphaniæ*, he
“ ſaid Maſs in the Fleet [where many Recuſants were committed]
“ in the Lord *Vaux*'s Chamber, [to whom he was related] before that
“ Lord, Mr. *Treſham*, Mr. *Tyrwhit* and others. For the which Of-
“ fence theſe three were upon *Wedneſday* after convicted in *Guild-*
“ *Hall*, at an *Oyer and Determiner*. Where the ſaid *Osborn* gave
“ lively Evidence: Although they before Judgment did ſtoutly deny
“ the ſame. Yet after they did moſt humbly ſubmit themſelves unto
“ her Majeſty; and ſo departed to Priſon again.

At this Court of *Oyer and Determiner* were others arraigned, for hearing Maſs at a Houſe of Mrs. *Alford*'s in *Salisbury Court*, *viz.* Mrs. *Rogers*, ſometime Wife of *Bernard*, Steward of *Gray*'s-*Inn*, Mrs. *Alford*, the Wife of *Fr. Alford*, Mr. *Rogers*, a Gentleman, and one *Hyde*, Mrs. *Alford*'s Man. The Seminary Prieſt was one *Dean*. The ſaid *Hyde* (who was reconciled by *Dean*) and *Dean* himſelf gave the Evidence. And for that Cauſe Mr. Secretary's Pleaſure was, that they ſhould be ſpared. Mrs. *Alford* was alſo ſpared, becauſe Mr. *Francis* is bound for her; and ſhe promiſed to go to the Church. This favourable Dealing was by Mr. Secretary's Order.

The Queen aſſiſts the Netherlands.

All the buſy Managery of Affairs at Home and Abroad now turned upon the Hinge of Religion. And as the Queen ſaw, how little Safety there was for her from *Spain* or *France*, being ſo vigorouſly ſet to extinguiſh the Reformed Religion, ſhe ſhewed herſelf a Friend to the *Netherlands*, who were now defending themſelves and their Liberties againſt *Spain* with their Arms.

Duke of Bipont *comes into* England.

So with the other Reformed Churches, and Proteſtant Princes in *Germany*, ſhe kept a Correſpondence: And namely, with the Prince Palatine of the *Rhine*; one of which Houſe was Duke of *Bipont*, or *Deuxpontz:* Who divers Years paſt came into *France* with a ſtrong Army of *Germains*, to aid the Prince of *Navarre*, in the Civil Wars there upon the Account of Religion. To which Duke the Queen ſent a great Sum of Money into *France*, by Sir *Thomas Greſham* the Queen's Factor then at *Antwerp*; out of her good Will to thoſe poor oppreſſed Churches: This was in the Year 1569. when one *Wierus*, a learned Man, was his Agent here. Where he was tranſacting his Prince's Buſineſs with the Queen: And received great Reſpects from *Cecil*, the Secretary, and afterwards from the ſame when Lord Treaſurer. The Son of this Duke, and Prince *Palatine*, whoſe Name and Title was, *George Guſtavus*, *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Duke of *Bavaria*, Count *Veldent*, &c. was now coming into *England*, attended with *Wierus* his Brother. With whom he ſent a Letter to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer: The Contents whereof ſhew the high Eſteem that Stateſman had of that Agent; and that Agent's Character of him; in theſe Words: “ That by Reaſon of thoſe not
“ only admirable, but alſo moſt amiable Qualities which he ſaw and
“ experienced in him twelve Years ago, [1569] when he was Agent
“ for his Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine*; he could not, nor ought to
“ omit, that his Brother, with his Prince, ſhould repair to his Lord-
“ ſhip without his Letters, as Witneſſes of his moſt humble Ob-
“ ſervance of him. And that wherein he might, either in the leaſt

Wierus *his Agent here.*

ANNO 1582.

" or greateſt Matters, any Ways ſerve him, he would endeavour to " prove before all Men, as long as he ſhould live, that he " ſhould never repent of his Favour and Protection; [*Clientele*] " which he deſired to receive of him; or rather to be continued to " him. And of the Favours, which he [the Lord Treaſurer] " ſhould, according to his ſingular Humanity, ſhew to that Prince " and his Brother, both of them his Admirers; and which he was " able to do in that great Place wherein he was. And ſo he ſhould " oblige all that illuſtrious Family, heretofore moſt addicted to him " in many Reſpects." Written from *Veldent: July 26.* Subſcribed, *Tuæ generoſiſſimæ Excellentiæ humiliter addictiſſimus*, Theod. Wierus, Dr. *Archiſatrapa Comitat. Veldentiæ.*

The Duke *of* Savoy; *the* Queen*'s Ambaſſador in* France, *his Letters about him.*

As thoſe Proteſtant *German* Princes *Palatine* had all Reſpects at the *Engliſh* Court, ſo to another foreign Prince the Qeeen ſhewed as little Affection; namely, the Duke of *Savoy*. Who laboured all he could to ſwallow up the Neighbour City, *Geneva:* And that chiefly out of his pretended Zeal to deſtroy the Religion there profeſſed. The Citizens this Year are applying themſelves, (as they had done before) by their Agent, *Monſieur Mallet*, to her Majeſty for her Aſſiſtance, and now in their great Danger from that Duke, to grant them a Supply of Money. And out of Compaſſion to them ſhe appointed a voluntary Collection to be made in all the Dioceſes for that City; and the Privy Council directed their Letters to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, for his ſetting it on Foot by his Letters to the Biſhops of his Province. The Succeſs whereof may be read in Archbiſhop *Grindal*'s Life under this Year 1582.

Book II. Chap. 14.

The City *of* Geneva*'s Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, ſhewing their Condition.*

There was a Letter (not mentioned there) of the *Syndics* and Council of *Geneva*, then addreſſed to the Lord Treaſurer, laying open their preſent diſtreſſed Condition; and thereby to uſe his Intereſt to move the Queen to favour their Requeſt. And that backed with another from *Beza*, their chief Miniſter, to the ſame Lord, to this Tenor:

Beza *to the ſame to favour their City in their preſent Neceſſity.*

" That he depending on his Benignity, ſo much ſpoke of by all " Foreigners; Which though he might ſeem thereby too confident; " Yet partly his Equity, and partly their Neceſſity would eaſily be " hoped, excuſe.

" That no doubt, it had been told him, what Snares had been laid " for their City of *Geneva*; and with what Force it had been aſſaulted: And how wonderfully God had delivered it that preſent " Year. That he knew very well, how greedily it was deſired " by the Enemies of the Goſpel: And that beſide thoſe that had " declared an irreconcileable War againſt the Goſpel, it had other Enemies, whatſoever was pretended to the contrary, in reſpect of " the Opportunity that the Situation of that City afforded. And " how much the Defence of that City imported, he [the Lord " *Burghley*] ſufficiently perceived. And that moſt aſſuredly in this " State of Things, as long as that *Propugnaculum*, that Fortreſs of " the *Helvetian* Churches, and that moſt ſeaſonable Refuge of the " *French* Churches, ſtood, they muſt deſpair of executing the Council of *Trent*, was the true Scope of all thoſe Warlike Attempts, " either in *France*, or in thoſe their Countries. And he hoped, that

ANNO 1582.

that theſe *Pontificians*, leaving them [of *Geneva*] behind, whatſoever Succeſs openly they might have againſt *Holland*, (which he prayed God to avert) they might paſs over the Sea and make other Attempts——[he meant upon *England*.]

“ On theſe Accounts he beſeeched that Lord, to whom he writ, that by his Power with the Queen, in that their ſcarcity of Money, to obtain of her Money, for the Aſſiſtance of that City and Church; that had not illy deſerved of others; and alſo ſometime Hoſpitable to this Nation.” This Letter, Dated *Octob.* 10. proceedeth further; To take off a Prejudice that might remain in the Queen's Mind againſt *Geneva*, he endeavoured to clear that Church and City of it; Namely, “ That it was a Receptacle of certain wicked Perſons: Which he affirmed was a ſhameleſs Slander, ſince there was no City under Heaven, that received Strangers with more careful and accurate Examination of them, and where right Judgment was more ſeverely done. And for this he appealed to the *Engliſh* themſelves; ſome whereof of all Ranks and Qualities, had honoured their State and School with their Preſence.

And whereas there was another Thing that might give a Diſguſt againſt *Geneva*; That alſo he thus took off; “ That he remembred, there was a Book ſet forth there [at *Geneva*] by a certain *Engliſhman*, in the unhappy Times of Queen *Mary*, which gave the Queen's Majeſty Offence: [This Book ſeems to be *Goodman*'s, againſt Women's Government] but that as ſoon as it was known there, it was evident, that it was condemned and ſuppreſt, by the Judgment of that Church, and by the Authority of their Magiſtrates. And that as for the Diverſity of ſome indifferent Rites, and of the different Manner of the Government of their Churches; far be it, that the Minds of thoſe that plainly agreed in Conſent of the ſame Doctrine, ſhould be divided. And he appealed to his Lordſhip, how moderately they always ſpoke and ing required, of thoſe Matters.

Theſe Particulars and ſeveral others, mentioned in the aboveſaid Letter of *Beza*, makes me reckon it worth reading over, and preſerving in the *Appendix*, exemplified from the Original. This Letter was accompanied and brought with the beforementioned from the Council of *Geneva*, to the ſame Stateſman. Which is alſo added in the *Appendix*, written in *French*. And what good Succeſs theſe Applications had in the *Engliſh* Court and Church, may be found in the Life of Archbiſhop *Grindal* before ſhewn.

Numb. XV.

Numb. XVI.

The Engliſh *Ambaſſador in* France *to Secretary* Walſingham.

Concerning this Duke of *Savoy*, *Brook*, the Queen's Ambaſſador in *France*, in a Letter to Secretary *Walſingham*, gave this Notice privately; “ That it was given him to underſtand, how that Duke had given Order to win *Chevalier Briton* [who was a Servant of *Monſieur* the *French* King's Brother] to become at his Devotion; and to repair unto his Court: Where he promiſed to do him much Honour. Upon which he thought good to put the Secretary in Mind, that if the ſaid *Chevalier* ſhould depart from *Monſieur*'s Service, and be entertained by the Duke, if he would, he might do her Majeſty ſecret Service in that Court, and might

ANNO 1582.

" come by Intelligence to many Matters intended againſt her Ma-" jeſty and thoſe of this Religion; now that the ſaid Duke had " ſhewed himſelf ſo great an Enterprizer againſt thoſe of the Reli-" gion. That he [the Ambaſſador] thought he had ſome of his " Acquaintance which would aſſure him that the ſaid *Chevalier* " *Briton* ſhould do her Majeſty ſecret Service.

The ſaid Ambaſſador propounded another Project to the Secretary againſt the Duke of *Savoy*: " I know not, whether your Honour " may think it good, that by *Monſieur*'s Means, the Prince of *Ge-*" *neva*, Son to Madam *De La Granache*, may be gotten out of " Priſon, where he lieth in *Paris*. Who might be raiſed up, as an " oppoſite Inſtrument unto the Duke of *Savoy*, and thoſe of the " Houſe of *De Nemours*.

The Prince of Orange *to die within a Month.*

In the ſame Letter he informeth, " That he had been adviſed " by a Perſon of great Quality, who had Converſation with the " *Nuncio* and *Spaniſh* Agent, that they were aſſured, the Prince of " *Orange* had ſuch an Indiſpoſition of Health [as though he were " poiſoned] that he could not live above a Month or ſix Weeks. And upon this the Ambaſſador gave his probable Conjecture, " That " the Report concerning that Prince might be ſo given out, in re-" ſpect of his Indiſpoſition of Health, that he could not live beyond " ſuch a Time, to cover a wicked Deſign about this Time againſt " his Life." And indeed ſo it proved: For he was ſhot by a young deſperate Fellow at *Antwerp*, in the Hall, cloſe by the Door of his withdrawing Chamber, the Bullet entring in at his Throat under the right Chap, being ſo near that the Fire entred with the Bullet into the Wound, burning his Ruff and his Beard, and pierced his jugular Vein; and came out at the left Cheek, hard by his Noſe. The Surgeon being called, found, that the Fire which had entred into the Wound, had cauterized the jugular Vein, and done him much good: Wherefore the Wound was not mortal. But it proved otherwiſe. The Villain was immediately thruſt through with an Halberd. That which moved him to do the Villany, as the Hiſtorian relates, was the Temptation of a great Sum of Money promiſed by King *Philip*, to any who ſhould kill that Prince. In his preparation for that Act, he was confeſſed by a *Jacobine* Frier: Who fortified him in his Reſolution; perſuading him, and making him believe, that he ſhould go inviſible; and gave him ſome Characts in Paper, and certain little Bones. [Of ſome Saints perhaps.] Which they found in his Pockets, with many Conjurations written. And ſo he was accompanied with the Monk to his Enterprize. And this I relate, the rather, upon occaſion of the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador's Intelligence of the Reports at *Paris*, of the ſhortneſs of the Prince of *Orange*'s Life.

He is ſhot.

General Hiſtory of the Netherlands, *by* Ed. Grimſton.

CHAP. IX.

A Conteſt with the Biſhop of Coventry *and* Litchfield *about* the Chancellorſhip. *The Caſe, referred to Civilians and Judges. A Petition about it to the Privy Council. This Biſhop's Troubles in his Dioceſs. Vexed with Law Suits. The Earl of* Leiceſter *his Enemy. Lord Treaſurer his Friend. Deſires a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. Names of* Recuſants convict, *ſent up. The ill State of his Dioceſs by Papiſts, and exempt Juriſdictions. His Letter to the Lords. A wicked Scandal, laid to the Charge of the Archbiſhop of* York, *diſcovered. Judgment in the* Star Chamber *upon the Actors. The Archbiſhop's earneſt Letters to the Lord Treaſurer: His Letters of Thanks to the Queen; and Treaſurer. They make open Confeſſion at* York, *of their Treachery.*

NOW for ſome Collections of Remark concerning ſome of the Biſhops falling within this Year.

A Conteſt with the Biſhop of Coventry *and* Litchfield.

There happened a ſharp Conteſt between *Overton* Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, and one Dr. *Beacon*, about the Chancellorſhip of that Dioceſs, the Biſhop having granted it to him, and afterward with his Conſent joined *Babington, M. A.* with him, granting the Place to them both, *conjunctim & diviſim*, and to the longer Liver. And laſtly, upon Pretence of *Non uſer*, excluding *Beacon* wholly, and granting the whole Office to the Latter. This occaſioned a Reſiſtance and Diſturbance in the Cathedral Church which amounted to a Riot. The Biſhop then adjourns the Court to his own Palace, to be holden there; *Beacon* reſorting thither alſo to offer his Service and Duty, that no Advantage might be taken againſt him for *Non uſer*. But the Gates were ſhut upon him. The Caſe came into the Star Chamber. And ſo thence to the Privy Council: And they referred it to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. And he by a Commiſſion of Viſitation of that Dioceſs, to the Biſhop of *Wigorn*, to examine and decide this Controverſy. And how far this Matter proceeded under both Archbiſhops, may be read in their Lives; to which I refer the Reader. But I have ſtill ſome other Things to relate concerning this notable Caſe, that had been carried into ſo many Courts, brought before ſo many Judges, and the eminenteſt Civilians, then in the Land, ſhewing their Learning, and giving their Judgments therein.

Life of Archbiſhop Grindal, *p.* 272.
Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. *p.* 104.

ANNO 1582.

Babington was now conſtituted ſole Chancellor by the Biſhop. The Archbiſhop committed this Matter to the Judgment of Dr. *Aubrey*, and Dr. *Hammond*. And the Caſe, as drawn up by *Beacon*, they thought fit to put to ſome of the learnedeſt of the Common Law, *viz.*

The Caſe put to learned Lawyers.

" *Quæritur*, Whether theſe Circumſtances may not excuſe Dr. " *Beacon* by Law from the Danger of *Non uſer*; attending neither " by himſelf, nor his Deputy afterward; until full Order to eſta- " bliſh Right and Quietneſs concluded and taken.

" *Anſwer of Lawyers.* Theſe Circumſtances amount to a *Diſſei-* " *ſin*: And Dr. *Beacon* diſſeized of his Office. Wherefore during " the Time he is ſo wrongfully kept from the Exerciſe of his Office, " *Non uſer* cannot prejudice him. For *Non uſer* is not a Cauſe of For- " feiture; but in Caſe where it is voluntary.

Tho. Egerton. *Yelverton.*
Fra. Beaumont. *Johnſon.*

" Secondly, Whether the Grant paſſed by the Biſhop, as before, " his Lordſhip in his own Perſon, or by any other, may intermed- " dle in the Exerciſe of Juriſdiction, or exclude the Patentees, ſo " that his Lordſhip allow them the Fees and Profits growing by " the Office. And whether one Patentee may exclude another. If " both, or either a Wrong, how the Patentee may remedy himſelf.

" *Anſwer.* Where the Fees be caſual and uncertain, growing by " the Exerciſe of the Office, the Biſhop cannot lawfully exclude or " remove the Grantee. But if the Fee be a certain Sum of Mo- " ney, the Grantor may diſcharge the Grantee of the Exerciſe of " his Office, allowing him his Fee.

Tho. Egerton. *Yelverton.*
Fra. Beaumont. *Johnſon.*

The Caſe drawn up by the Biſhop, as the Former was drawn up by *Beacon*, was thus.

The Caſe drawn up by the Biſhop.

" The Office of a Chancellorſhip within the Dioceſs is granted " to one for Term of Life. The Biſhop by the Procurement and " Conſent of the ſame Grant, doth ſell and deliver as his Act and " Deed another Patent, of the ſame Office to the Former Grantee, " and to *A. B.* jointly and ſeverally to the longer Liver of them. " Which was delivered into the Hands of a third Perſon: Upon Con- " dition *A. B.* ſhall aſſure unto the other a certain yearly Annuity, " during Life. *A. B.* refuſeth to make ſuch Aſſurance.

" *Quære*, Whether the firſt Patent be void by the making of the " Second. And whether the Second be alſo void, by the Non- " performance of the Condition.

" *Anſwer.* The ſecond Grant being delivered by the Biſhop, as " his Deed, and not as an *Eſcrowe*, taketh preſently Effect, as an " abſolute Grant to the joint Patentees: And the Condition void. " But if it were delivered as an *Eſcrowe*, then the firſt Grant ſtand- " eth in Form, till the ſecond performed.

Tho. Edgerton. *Fra. Beaumont.*
Yelverton. *Johnſon.*

Upon this Judgment of theſe learned Lawyers Dr. *Aubrey* and Dr. *Hammond*, decided this Controverſy. But, Dr. *Babington* would not ſtand thereto; but put up a Petition to the Lords in this Conteſt between him and Dr. *Beacon*. Which was as follows.

"To the Right Honourable, the Lords of her Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council.

Babington's *Petitions to the Privy Council.*

"The Order made by Dr. *Aubrey* and Dr. *Hammond* in the "Cauſe committed unto them between *Beacon* and *Babington* ſeemeth "inſufficient and uncertain. For the ſame is in Part referred, "and doth in Truth wholly depend upon the Allowance, or Diſallowance "of the Lord Biſhop, who is in no Sort or Condition "tied to the ſame Order. But at good Liberty to fruſtrate and "make void the ſaid joint Patent, in Caſe it ſhall by Law be voidable. "Wherefore *Babington* moſt humbly beſeecheth your Honours, "that the Conſent to be given to the ſaid Order may be reſpited "him, until the Lord Biſhop ſhall either have yielded his Conſent, "or otherwiſe do ſhew ſome lawful Cauſe before your Honours, "as touching the Inſufficiency of his ſaid joint Patent. For "*Babington* in Truth would be very loth to contend with the Lord "Biſhop, his Maſter, in, and about the ſaid joint Patent, except "the ſame ſhall appear and be found good and ſufficient; or otherwiſe "to give over his Intereſt he hath or may have in, or to the "ſaid Office, by Reaſon of any other more aſſured Grant made unto "him from the ſaid Lord Biſhop of the ſame.

"Where it was likewiſe thought good and determined by your "Honours, that all Suits and Controverſies between *Beacon* and "*Babington* ſhould be compromitted and compounded; the ſaid Doctors "have only made Order, as touching the Intereſt in, and to "the ſaid Office; leaving *Beacon* and *Babington* at full Liberty to "proſecute the ſaid Suit againſt each other. Whereupon *Beacon*, "even ſithence the Order made doth proceed in his Suit againſt "*Babington*. Wherefore *Babington* being very loth to dwell in Controverſy "with the ſaid *Beacon*, in Caſe they be appointed to join "together in Execution of the ſaid Office, humbly deſireth your "Honours, that either all Cauſes and Controverſies between them "may be ordered and concluded: Or otherwiſe, that the ſaid *Beacon* "and *Babington* may be at Liberty to try likewiſe, by due "Courſe of Law, their Right and Title in and to the ſaid Office.

"Alſo where it is ordered by the ſaid Doctors, that Mr. *Weſton*, Regiſter, "ſhould collect the Fees indifferently for the ſaid Parties; "and to anſwer Monthly to either an Account of the ſame, *Babington* "humbly beſeecheth your Honours, that he may have the "Collections of ſuch Fees and Profits as are due, unto himſelf. "For that he would be very loth to expect the Account or Allowance "of any other in that which is his Benefit, Living, and Maintenance. "And doth offer to become bound, not to intermeddle "with any Fee or Commodity, due to the ſaid *Beacon*.

Your Honours humble and moſt obedient Orator,

Z. Babington.

ANNO 1582.

Num. XVII.

I have other Papers before me concerning this Contention, which created ſo much Trouble to the good Biſhop: As namely, his Reaſons propounded againſt admitting *Beacon* to the Chancellorſhip: And *Beacon*'s tedious Anſwers to theſe Reaſons. Which being long, I will not exemplify them here, but chuſe rather to repoſit them in the *Appendix*. But the Biſhop's Reaſons, which he offered to the Council, or to thoſe to whom the Matter was committed, I will here ſubjoin, for his Vindication.

Reaſon why the Biſhop refuſed Beacon.

"Firſt, Becauſe the ſaid *Beacon* hath no Patent of Validity. And therefore the Biſhop doth not think good to bind himſelf to a Man being free from him, and from all Men. The Reaſon is proved thus. *Beacon* had two ſole Patents, and one joint Patent. The firſt made void by the Acceptance of the Second. And the Second by the Acceptance of the Third. And the Third is void, becauſe it is ſealed and delivered to a third Perſon, to the Uſe of the Patentees. But upon Condition. And the Condition is not performed. And beſides this, though all or any of the Patents were good, yet for the Defect of due Execution, they be forfeited, as by publick Inſtruments teſtifying the ſame it may appear.

"Secondly, becauſe the ſaid *Beacon*, though he had a good Patent, yet is not a fit Man to exerciſe the Office. The Reaſon is proved thus. *Beacon* is very unſkilful in the Law. And, for lack of Knowledge, not able to give a Sentence, nor to judge of Cauſes aright. *B.* is very corrupt, and hunteth after Bribes: Whereby Juſtice may be perverted. *B.* is a great Favourer of ſuch as are Enemies to the Queen's Laws, and Diſturbers of the State. As namely, of one *Marbery*. Who, for his *Anabaptiſm*, or ſuch like ſchiſmatical or heretical Opinions, hath been committed, and is ſtill put to Silence, and deprived of his Miniſtry.

"Thirdly, though he were fit, yet is he the Biſhop's deadly Enemy. And therefore not to be truſted. The Reaſon is proved thus. *B.* defaceth the Biſhop in all Places, where he cometh. *B.* calleth the Biſhop *Beaſtly Knave*, *Horſon Knave*, *Perjured Man*, *Simoniacal Biſhop*, &c. *B.* entereth into Conſpiracies with others, to deprive the Biſhop of his Biſhoprick; and hath divers Ways ſought to entrap him, and bring him in Danger of the Law. *B.* hath ſtood in open Accuſation of the Biſhop at the Council-Table; and hath procured the Dean of *Litchfield* to do the like. *B.* hath joined himſelf with the Biſhop's Enemies in all Matters. *B.* hath been a treacherous and perfidious Fellow to all his Maſters, the Biſhops, whom he hath ſerved heretofore. And therefore *B.* is no wiſe to be truſted." What Anſwer *Beacon* framed to theſe Articles in his own Behalf, conſult the *Appendix*, Number as above.

The Ground of the Biſhop's Troubles from his Church.

This Biſhop had the Misfortune to be oppoſed by the Dean and Chapter of his Church from his firſt Entrance almoſt into his Biſhoprick, which was in *December* 1580. And the abovesaid *Beacon* the chief Manager of the Quarrel on their Side. The main Ground of it was, that the Biſhop had demanded ſome Aſſiſtance from them and the wealthier of his Clergy, under his great Charges, too burthenſome

Subſidium charitativum.

thenſome for him, in his Entrance upon the Biſhoprick: Which was their *Subſidium Charitativum*, as it was called: And for which there had been ſome Precedent in that Epiſcopal See. But they of his Church denied to give it. And that which added to the Biſhop's Trouble was, that the great Earl of *Leiceſter*, who was formerly his Patron and Friend, had relinquiſht him, and countenanced him not in this Affair. Of this and other Things he made his Complaint at large in a ſecret Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, his other Friend and Patron.

Vexed with Law Suits in all Courts by his Enemies.

“ That that Earl fell off from him, and rather took the other Side. The Cauſe whereof, he ſaid, he knew not, unleſs it were for *Apoſtaſy*. [Which what the Biſhop meant by it, ſeems to be, that he had applied himſelf to the Lord Treaſurer, and took him alſo for his Patron, and depended not upon *Leiceſter* alone.] His preſent troubleſome Condition he unfolded to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, in the Month of *February*. “ Which he called, his laying forth his Griefs and Oppreſſions, ſought to be brought upon him by his Adverſaries. Whereof one *Boughton* was one of them: Who had brought many Suits againſt him, both at Quarter Seſſions and Aſſizes; and preferred Bills againſt him in the *Star chamber*, and in the *Common Pleas*. And all from the Countenance of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and from private Letters. That he [the *Biſhop*] had writ to him: Which that Earl had communicated to his Enemy. So that hereby his own Counſil, for Fear of Diſpleaſure, dared ſcarcely to encounter him in his Cauſes. So that, as he added, he might almoſt ſay, he was denyed that which every common Subject might claim, *viz.* The Court of Juſtice, and Benefit of her Majeſty's Laws. That *Beacon* alſo, [of whom ſo much hath been related already] who before feared him, did now triumph over him, by Means of the Countenance of ſuch who had ſet him on; and made bold to ſue and trouble him every where at his Pleaſure; in the *Star chamber*, in the Chancery, at the Council-Table, before the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, in the Common Pleas, at the Aſſizes and Seſſions; yea, and in his own Conſiſtory. And brought Action upon Action againſt him, almoſt for every thing he did, and for every Word he ſpake. Inſomuch that, as he added, theſe Suits put him behind Hand, and ſo conſumed him, that he ſhould hardly be able to recover it of a long Time.

A Reaſon of the Actions brought againſt him.

One Ground of theſe vexatious Actions commenced againſt him, was, that being a ſtirring Man, and obſerving the ancient Juriſdictions and Privileges of the See encroached upon, both by the City and the Church, he claimed them, and endeavoured to recover them, and to overthrow thoſe pretended *Exemptions*, which obſtructed his Viſitations. Concerning which he gave the Lords of the Council an Account; and laid the Juſtneſs of his Courſe before them, in a Letter writ in *May* following. Which is hereafter exemplified in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XVIII. XIX.

Theſe were ſome of the Complaints, with many more the poor Biſhop made to that Lord. Whoſe Letter I had rather to be read alſo at large in the *Appendix*. It is not unlikely he had the more Enemies and ill Willers, his Dioceſs (eſpecially *Staffordſhire*) abounding with

ANNO 1582.

with Papiſts, and other diſſaffected: Which he was no Friend to. And had called this Year upon the Court, for a narrower Search after ſuch by a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical.

The Biſhop's Troubles ended by a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical.

But this Biſhop's Troubles came to ſome Concluſion this Year, by Means of a Commiſſion. And however they repreſented the Biſhop as covetous and contentious among his Clergy, yet they were not without Fault towards their Biſhop: Which thoſe in the Commiſſion took Notice of, and ſhewed him ſo much Juſtice and Favour, that he might not be hindred, nor diſcouraged in the Diſcharge of his Epiſcopal Office. This with the Deſigns of his *Prebendaries* upon his firſt coming among them, he acknowledgeth in another Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, dated from *Eccleſhal*, *Apr.* 8. to this Tenor.

Signified by him to the Lord Treaſurer.

“That the Prebendaries of *Litchfield*, which had ſo miſuſed him, had received Judgment from the High Commiſſioners, due to their Deſerts. For which he was in great Part to thank his Honourable Lordſhip. And that there had been marvellous Plats [Plots] laid then, in the Beginning of his Government, to have *dawed* him, [as he expreſſed their Purpoſes upon him.] And ſurely, added he, they would have done it indeed, but for ſuch Honourable Countenance and Backing. And that if any Body ſhould be able to charge him with Wrong, or Willfulneſs in any of his Doings, (the Caſe on both Parts indifferently heard) he would leaſe his Credit for all. But that he truſted he ſo tempered himſelf in all his Affairs, both Eccleſiaſtical and Temporal, that till manifeſt Fault and Obſtinacy appeared in the Offenders, he never ſought any Remedy by Law; but compounded and ended all Matters at Home. And ſo would do, if he were not forced to the Contrary.

And then to take off any Surmiſes that he was contentious, as ſome had laid to his Charge, he proceeded in theſe Words. “My Honourable good Lord, it is a Country full of Quarrels; and they will join together notably to lade me with Troubles and Griefs: And if I ſhould not repreſs them in the Beginning, they would overcome me for ever. And therefore I follow that old Rule, *Principiis obſta*, though to my great Travel and Charge. If any ſhall inform your Lordſhip againſt me, (as I know they have done already, and will do ſtill,) I refer myſelf wholly to your own Honourable Judgment and Order: Only I deſire to be heard, as well as they. The firſt Tale is good, till the ſecond be told. And thus preſuming overmuch upon your Honourable Patience, to trouble you with ſo tedious Letters, I humbly take my Leave.

Your Honour's moſt bounden,

W. Coventry and *Litchfield.*

This Biſhop deſires a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical for Papiſts.

This careful and active Biſhop obſerving the Popiſh Faction at this Time ſo great in his Dioceſs; for the Diſcovery and ſupreſſing of that Sort, earneſtly required a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical to be granted from the Court: Applying himſelf for that Purpoſe to the Lord

Treaſurer, and acquainting him with a Speech he had lately made to the Queen, (as it ſeems, in a Sermon) concerning her Danger from Papiſts. In his Letter, he ſhewed him, "That he had "ſent up Mr. *Plaiſted* to attend upon him and the Earl of *Leiceſter*; "And Mr. Secretary, for their Furtherance in the High Commiſſion. "That the Time now was ſomewhat quiet, and the Opportunity good to make the Motion. And the rather becauſe of late "he had been held, as he ſaid, before her Majeſty (and with her "good liking, as it ſeemed) to move her to the earneſt repreſſing of the Papiſts, and furthering of God's Cauſe, and the Goſpel, as ſhe had already graciouſly begun. That he told her "Highneſs in theſe plain Words, *That full little did ſhe think,* "*when ſhe was in the Lion's Den, to live to be Queen of* England, "*ſuch were the Practices of the Papiſts to cut her off from that* "*Expectation, and to cut off themſelves alſo from that Danger and* "*Fear, which they had of her, if ſhe ſhould reign. And yet God* "*had mightily and miraculouſly preſerved her, as we ſaw, from* "*the Hands of her Enemies; only, or chiefly for that Purpoſe, to* "*re-erect his Kingdom, to advance his Glory, and to reſtore and* "*eſtabliſh his Goſpel, and the true Chriſtian Religion among us.* "*And therefore as God, even God alone, beyond the Expectation of* "*Man, had ſettled her in her Royal Seat for that Purpoſe, and ſhe* "*alſo had moſt honourably and graciouſly performed that good Purpoſe of God in her, ſo ſhe might think that the ſame God for the* "*ſame Purpoſe had maintained hitherto, and would ſtill maintain* "*and defend her in her State, Maugre the Heads of all her evil* "*Willers, though the Devil himſelf, and his Vice-Devil, the Pope,* "*and all the Popiſh Enemies ſhe had in the World, conſpired never* "*ſo much againſt her.* Theſe, he ſaid, with much more it pleaſed "her Majeſty to take graciouſly at his Mouth, declaring then God's "Meſſage unto her. And therefore, as he concluded, he truſted her "Highneſs would as graciouſly accept of his Lordſhip's Suit now "in his Behalf, tending to the ſame Purpoſe and Effect.

This Biſhop's Speech to the Queen concerning the Papiſts.

The News of Papiſts convict, ſent up by the Biſhop.

This Commiſſion which he ſaw ſuch great Need of in his Dioceſs, I ſuppoſe he ſoon after obtained; becauſe the next News we hear from the Council to the Biſhop was, to return up the Names of all the Papiſts Convict there. Which in the Month of *May*, he did; together with his Letter at large to the Council; deſiring ſuch a Commiſſion, as neceſſary; diſcovering therein alſo the ill State of that Dioceſs, and Country, in many other Reſpects: As concerning the City of *Litchfield*; and concerning the Prebendaries of that Church: Who had their peculiar Juriſdictions by themſelves; and ſo, as Exempts, out of his Reach: Concerning the Softneſs of Biſhop *Bentham* his Predeceſſor: Concerning the Civil Government of the City; and the Charters and Liberties granted to the Biſhops by former Princes infringed: and the dividing of the City from the See; the ill Government of it: (ſaying, that *in ſhort they lived as they liſted, both in the City and in the Church.*) Further, that Biſhop gave the Council to underſtand, how the ancient Privileges and Liberties of the Biſhoprick were conveyed from him, or encroached

ANNO 1582.

croached upon; the ill State of *Staffordſhire:* Diſturbances by Papiſts in ſome Churches; and arreſting of ſome Perſons in the Church, even at the Time of the Communion; particularly by ſome Officers of the Lord *Paget*. All this the zealous Biſhop writ at large to the Privy Council. See the Letter in the *Appendix*, ſet before. A Copy of which he thought fit to ſend to his Friend, the Lord Treaſurer, with this Letter following.

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, ſhewing the State of his Dioceſs.

“Right Honourable, I have written up at this preſent to the whole Body of the Council, partly for Anſwer to your Honourable Letters, lately ſent to me for the certifying of the *Convicted Recuſants* in my Dioceſs: partly for other Matters occurrent, as in Need and Duty I thought requiſite. I am bold to ſend your Honour a Copy thereof here encloſed; to the End, if it pleaſe you, you may aforehand be acquainted with the Point. I humbly beſeech your good Lordſhip, as you were always wont in theſe and other my Suits, to give me your honourable Countenance: Whereby my Want, or Exceſs, if I ſhall be found therein, may by your good Means, either be pardoned or excuſed. Certes, my honourable Lord, I am here in a very perilous Country; and if I may ſpeak it without Offence, the very Sink of the whole Realm, both for corrupt Religion and Life. And therefore would glady have ſuch reaſonable Aſſiſtance and Backing, as might be to the better Furtherance of my Service. I am ſtill ready to trouble your Lordſhip, as one of thoſe, whom I think to have great Care of the publick Cauſes. I truſt therefore you will not be offended with my often and tedious Leters unto you. Touching mine own Matters, both for that I have already in Experience of your Lordſhip's honourable Friendſhip towards me; and alſo for that of late, I heard from Mr. *Plaiſted*, of your Lordſhip's Countenance there, I acknowledge myſelf moſt bounden to you, *&c.* Dated from *Eccleſhal* the 20th of *May*, 1582.

A horrible Scandal plotted againſt the Biſhop of York.

Now we proceed to relate an Injury of no common Size done to another eminent Perſon of the epiſcopal Order, *viz.* To *Sandys*, Archbiſhop of *York*; by a wicked Slander, and vile artificial Proſecution of it: So baſe, that the like was ſcarce ever heard of before. And that created that good Biſhop the greateſt Trouble that ever he met with in his Life. Sir *Robert Stapleton*, a Knight of *Yorkſhire*, being the great Contriver of it. The End whereof was to get a good Leaſe of the Lands, and great Sum of Money from the Archbiſhop. The Buſineſs was acted in the Month of *May*, 1581, at *Doncaſter*, where the Archbiſhop in his Journey lodged. Here *Syſſon*, the Hoſt, cauſed his Wife to go by Night into the Archbiſhop's Bed to him. And he preſently after followed with his Dagger in his Hand into the Chamber; which he put to the Archbiſhop's Breaſt, his Man *Alexander* being in Company with him: And *Maude*, that had been the Archbiſhop's Servant, preſent too, and in the Plot. The Words that *Syſſon* uſed, when he came into the Chamber, and ſaw his Wife in Bed with the Archbiſhop, was, *God's precious Life, I will mark a Whore and a Thief.* Sir *Robert Stapleton* was then in the Inn, though he pretended not to be there at that Time, or privy to any ſuch Thing, and to be the Archbiſhop's Friend. But that he was there, it was juſtly preſumed: For *Syſſon* ſending his Man for him, he preſently came in in his Apparel; (ſo that he had not undreſt himſelf, however late it was) expecting to be called in, according to the Plot laid. And *Syſſon* requiring 800 *l.* of the Archbiſhop, *Stapleton* brought it down to 600 *l.*

In this Diſtreſs the poor Archbiſhop was fain to comply with *Syſſon*, and the reſt of the Conſpirators.. And to conceal this Abuſe done him, and the Shame that would attend it: Which he perceived would reflect not only upon his own Reputation, but the Church too; in this Diſtreſs he yielded in ſome Meaſure to a Leaſe of ſome Lands of the Biſhoprick to *Stapleton*. But after, when the Knight would further make his own Terms with the Archbiſhop; and require ſtill more Lands, Manors and Benefits, to the utter impoveriſhing of the See, the good Archbiſhop reſolved then no longer to conceal the Matter. But to ſend up the whole Cauſe, and the Truth of their horrible Dealings with him, in a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; and he to acquaint the Queen with it.

The Queen requires a Leaſe of Southwel *of the Archbiſhop.*

But firſt I muſt relate by what Means it came to this Iſſue. Sir *Robert Stapleton*, beſides what he had obtained already of the Archbiſhop, ſtill intended to make a greater Benefit of him, and having ſome Intereſt with the Queen, petitioned her to get the rich Manors of *Southwel* and *Scrowby* for him. And having the Archbiſhop thus, as he thought, in awe, threatned him to diſcover all, unleſs he would comply with the Queen's Letters to him, to grant long and unreaſonable Leaſes for the ſame. But notwithſtanding, the Archbiſhop was at a Point, whatever came of it, not to yield in a Demand, ſo deſtructive to the See; and intending to come up himſelf, but prevented by Sickneſs, wrote his Letter to the Queen, offering to lay down and quit the Biſhoprick; and all rather than to do it. With which Letter, he ſent another to the Lord Treaſurer: Shewing the Hardſhips required of him, and the great Damage that he ſhould do, not only to himſelf, but to all that there ſhould ſucceed him, and his own Steadineſs in ſo good a Cauſe; deſerving, for the honourable Memory of this Archbiſhop, to be exemplified here from the very Original: And was as followeth.

Which the Archbiſhop refuſeth to grant. And why. His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.

“ My honourable good Lord: Of late I received a Letter from
“ her Majeſty, earneſtly requiring me to grant unto her Highneſs
“ one Manor in Leaſe, according to a Leaſe conceived and ſent
“ withal. In the Letter one Manor is required without Name:
“ But in the Leaſe two of the greateſt Manors I have be comprized,
“ to wit, *Southwel* and *Scrowby*, with all their Manors, Houſes,
“ Woods, Parks, Rents, Reverſions, Liberties, Privileges, and all
“ other Commodities whatſoever can be named, belonging unto the
“ ſame, to be granted for LXX Years, a certain Rent reſerved. The
“ Rent for *Scrowby* reſerved in this new Leaſe is, xl Pound by
“ Year. But in Truth by all ancient Records, and in my yearly
“ Accompts at this Day, *Scrowby* with its Members amounted to
“ clxx *l.* by Year. And ſo is anſwered. This Leaſe excludeth the
“ Biſhop of *York* out of *Nottinghamſhire*, from all Houſes, Lands
“ and Livings; and will grow in Time to be a Loſs to the See of

ANNO 1582.

" *York*, of as many Thouſand Pounds as it is now required to be " let for Years.

" I am fully perſuaded her Majeſty was never made acquainted " with the Contents of this Leaſe, the Inconveniencies whereof are " ſo great, that with a good Conſcience towards God, I can never " conſent unto it.

" I was fully purpoſed to anſwer this Perſon; but after three " Days Journey, I fell ſo weak and ſo ſick, and ſo ſtill remain, that " I could travel no further. And therefore forced by my Letter to " anſwer her Majeſty. Which Thing I have done in ſuch Sort, as " I hope her Majeſty will be fully ſatisfied therewithal. But whatſoever " ſhall fall out, I truſt your Lordſhip will favour this honeſt " Cauſe: No Wight upon the Earth more loth to diſpleaſe her Majeſty " than I, as one moſt bound unto her Highneſs; if the granting " of this Leaſe would not highly diſpleaſe God, kill my Conſcience, " and ſpoil the Church of *York*. My good Lord, extend " your wonted Friendſhip. And if her Majeſty cannot be ſatisfied " with my Anſwer, and ſo ſhall diſlike of my Service, then to offer " unto her Highneſs in my Name, the Reſignation of the Archbiſhoprick. " That one may be placed that can better ſerve. And " my Reſignation ſhall be abſolute, and it ſhall ſtand in her Majeſty's " Pleaſure to give me ought, or nought to live on, during " theſe few evil Days which I have to live, I will hope in God, " that he will make an end of all my Travels before I depart out of " this Place. Thus, my good Lord, commending me and this good " Cauſe unto your honourable Conſideration, I commend you to " the good Direction of God's holy Spirit. *Southwel*, this xxivth " of *November*, 1582.

All this while the Knight was labouring to get ſome good Leaſe of the Archbiſhop by the Queen's Means, if not that which was formerly requeſted. And ſo far at length her Letters prevailed, that a Leaſe was by him ſent up made to her Majeſty; and ſo to be conveyed over to him. Nor was that acceptable to *Stapleton*. Who came therefore to the Archbiſhop at *Biſhopthorp*; and urged him about the ſame Buſineſs. " And there with vain, and proud Speeches, " he lying ſick in his Bed, (as the Archbiſhop related it to the " Lord *Burghley* in another Letter to him) wonderfully moleſting " him: Saying, he was the Queen's Meſſenger to him, and might " ſay what he would. The Archbiſhop ſaid, That he was ready " to follow the Tenor of her Majeſty's Letters, and grant whatſoever " her Majeſty required of him. But his Commiſſion by Word " of Mouth had no End: Putting in and out, altering and augmenting " at Pleaſure. That he ſurveyed all his Lands: Picked " out what liked him, to ſee what the Farmers would give. So " that he, ſaid the Archbiſhop, is the Lord of my Livings, and " the Leaſor of my Lands. That his Letters to her Majeſty, " wherein he willingly granted her Highneſs's whole Requeſt, he " would not receive at his [the Archbiſhop's] Hands, but needs " he muſt have the conveying of the Leaſe. But that he minded " not ſo to gratify his Enemy. That to prevent him, he preſently " ſent up by Poſt, his Letter of his Reſolution of Grant unto her " Majeſty.

Words of Sir Robert Stapleton, *to the Archbiſhop.*

ANNO 1582.

“ Majeſty. And that he would within fourteen Days next, ſend up the Leaſe ſealed and confirmed accordingly. So that there ſhould be no Fault in him, except it were a Fault to beat down his Pride.

The Archbiſhop further added concerning this Adverſary of his, “ That he reported of him to a Perſon of great Honour, that he had him on the Hip: That one *Rawley* would prove him an Uſurer: And that he himſelf would make him [the Archbiſhop] glad ere it were long, to pray her Majeſty to take in Leaſe *Southwel* and *Scrowby*. And that yet it was not four Days before he wrote this Letter, the ſame Perſon (as the Archbiſhop added) deeply ſware unto him, in the Preſence of Mr. *Cheeke* [*viz. Henry Cheeke*, Secretary to the Council in the *North*] that he never had, neither ever would ſpeak evil by him.

The Archbiſhop reveals the Villany uſed towards him.

But the Knight little knew at this Time, that the Archbiſhop had a little before diſcovered all his Practice. For being no longer able to bear his Dealings with him, and that he ſhould have him thus *upon the Hip*, (to uſe the Knight's Phraſe) he had about a Fortnight before by a Letter to his Friend, the foreſaid Lord, opened the whole Work of Darkneſs. And by his Means the Queen herſelf was fully acquainted with it. Which affected her with exceeding Indignation againſt the Actors, as we ſhall hear in the Sequel. But take his firſt Letter in this Diſcovery of Iniquity: Thus addreſſing to that Lord.

“ My good Lord: *In rebus adverſis Amicus certus cernitur.* I find myſelf more bound unto you, than to any Man living. At a dead Lift you are my moſt faithful Friend. I have need of your preſent Help. Otherwiſe, like to be oppreſſed with great and ſhameful Wrong. Falſe Informers have prevented me. I was upon the Way fully purpoſed to have opened unto you their Treachery, and to have prayed your Aid for their condign Puniſhment. My only Fault is, that I have concealed the Thing ſo long, I was drawn thereunto by their deep Oaths, that my good Name ſhould never come into Queſtion. In reſpect of the Goſpel, I have ſuffered myſelf thus ſhamefully to be abuſed. But hereof, my Lord, aſſure yourſelf, I am in this Matter, wherewith they chiefly charge me, moſt innocent from all criminal Fact. And that I ſwear unto you by the Living God, and as I ſhall be ſaved by Jeſus Chriſt. So that you need not fear to defend my juſt Cauſe, which Thing cannot be diſhonourable unto you.

The Archbiſhop ſent his Chancellor *Went*, with this to his Lordſhip; “ Who he ſaid, ſhould impart unto him the whole Practice and Treachery, contrived againſt him: Praying him to hear his ſaid Chancellor. That he was a Man of Integrity and Fidelity, and would tell him nothing but the Truth.” He added, “ That he put his whole Truſt in his Lordſhip. That he would uſe the Means according to his Wiſdom and wonted Favour, to deliver him from this great Wrong offered him. That he had a great while languiſhed, and been almoſt ſwallowed up with Sorrow, leſt the Word of God ſhould hear evil by him. But now when

ANNO 1582.

“ the falſe Informers had diſcloſed themſelves, and done their worſt, he, as he concluded, encouraged himſelf to this Battel, as well truſting in his own Innocence, as in the Lord Treaſurer's old, wonted aſſured Favour. Thus with his Prayers, *&c.* Dated from *Biſhopthorp* the 6th of *Jan.* 1582. Subſcribing

Your Lordſhip's moſt aſſured,

And ſo bound,

E. Ebor.

The Archbiſhop requires ſevere Puniſhment.

And this Letter was backed to the ſame Lord by a Second: Styling Sir *Robert* and *Syſſon*, the two Contrivers of this Michief, “ Evil Men, and who had deſerved ſevere Puniſhment. For monſtrous (he wrote) had been their Treachery and Cozenage againſt him.” Adding, “ I know your Lordſhip in reſpect of God's Cauſe, and in reſpect of Innocence, and ſomewhat of me, your old poor Well-willer, will not ſuffer theſe wicked Men to eſcape condign Puniſhment.

The Queen incenſed, when ſhe heard it.

They are ſummoned up.

Num. XX.

When the Queen was informed of this vile and baſe Combination againſt the Archbiſhop, ſhe was highly incenſed at ſo notorious a Crime. And forthwith Letters from the Court were ſent down; one to *Syſſon*, and another to *Stapleton*; to ſummon them up to anſwer certain Accuſations to be laid againſt them. In ſhort, they were brought under ſtrict Examination of their Doings. And Interrogatories were adminiſtred to them, and the reſt engaged in the Fact. Which may be read at large in the *Appendix*. And the Matter, by the Care and Diligence of the Lord Treaſurer, was brought to ſuch an Iſſue, that all was diſcovered, and the Shame and Wickedneſs appeared to all.

And the Queen commanded Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, her Vice-Chamberlain, to ſignify the Content ſhe took in the Proceedings. Who thus wrote to the ſaid Treaſurer her Majeſty's Mind therein; together with his own Joy and Satiſfaction on the ſame Account.

Hatton *to the Treaſurer upon the Diſcovery.*

“ My very Good Lord, I thank God from my Heart, that your Trouble in this great Cauſe hath brought forth ſo bleſſed an Effect. Innocency is delivered. Truth hath prevailed, to God's Glory, and due Commendation of your Wiſdom and Goodneſs. Her Majeſty rejoiceth exceedingly in it, and yieldeth her moſt gracious Thanks to your Lordſhip for your ſo grave and wiſe proceeding in it.

“ My Lord of *Leiceſter* hath her Majeſty's Direction, to ſignify thus much of her Pleaſure, with ſome further Matter unto your Lordſhip. Dated the 24th of *February*.

And ſo likewiſe on this Occaſion the Archbiſhop was not behind Hand in returning his Thanks, for clearing his Innocency, and diſcovering the Treachery againſt him. Whoſe Letter neither can I omit; writ from his Seat near *York*, and was as followeth,

The Archbiſhop's Letter to him.

“ My Honourable good Lord, I cannot requite your great Goodneſs towards me, but by my earneſt Prayer. All the reſt that is in me is not able to anſwer *unum pro mille*, without your conſtant Fa-

" vour and preſent Help, doubtleſs mine Innocence ſhould have been condemned, and the Wicked juſtified. But my God hath raiſed you up to ſtand in the Gap, for the trying further of this Treachery and the clearing of mine Innocency. As herein you have ſerved the Lord *Jeſus*, in removing this great Offence from his Spouſe, the Church; ſo will he, no doubt, requite you for the ſame, ſeven fold in your Boſom,

" I hear the Knight [Sir *Robert Stapleton*] hath confeſt his Treachery; not penitently, but threatningly. My Lord, after he hath anſwered and ſatisfied the Church, by this his vile Practice mightily offended; then let him do to me what he can. I fear not his worſt. I know in what ſafe State I ſtand. My Conſcience will not accuſe me. *Et Veritas liberabit.* If they had not invented, that the Strumpet ſhould ſay, I ſollicited her, they ſhould have had nothing wherewith to colour their Treachery. But God doth know, and my Conſcience doth ever record with me mine Innocency. Yet can I never ſtand clear in the Sight of a great Sort; neither can God have his Glory; except, as the Church hath been publickly offended, ſo it may be publickly ſatisfied. I know your Lordſhip, as well for the Zeal you have to God, as alſo for the Love you bear to Juſtice, will ſee this vile Treachery openly puniſhed, and ſtoutly finiſh that you have ſo ſtoutly begun. The Cauſe is God's; the Praiſe will be yours. And I moſt bound ever to pray for you. God ſend you Health, and the Spirit of Fortitude, to ſuppreſs all Falſhood. And thus I humbly take my Leave, commending your good Lordſhip to the good Direction of God's Holy Spirit. *Biſhopthorp*, this 28th of *February*, 1582.

Your Lordſhip's moſt bounden,

E. Ebor.

Stapleton's Behaviour informed of to the Lord Treaſurer.

Upon this Courſe taken, *Stapleton* ſeemed, at firſt, to be penitent, and ſorrowful, and willing to make his Acknowledgment to the Archbiſhop. But it was but in Appearance. For he ſoon grew cold and remiſs; and threatning the Archbiſhop ſome ill Turn: As the Archbiſhop's Letter above hinted. Inſomuch that Information thereof was given to the Lord Treaſurer, then abſent from Court: Who forthwith ſent his Servant, Secretary *Maynard*, to the Earl of *Leiceſter*, to let him know as much, and to acquaint the Queen with it. And what the Effect of this Meſſage was, and how the good Queen had reſented it, and her Order thereupon, will appear by the Earl's Letter in anſwer to that of the Treaſurer. *Viz.*

The Earl of Leiceſter *acquaints the Queen with it.*

" That he had declared to her Majeſty the Advertiſement, that his Servant *Maynard* had brought him that Afternoon, touching Sir *Robert Stapleton*'s Coldneſs again, or rather Cholerickneſs, towards the Archbiſhop; as had appeared by his late Words and Speeches. That her Majeſty had willed him to ſignify to him, [the Lord Treaſurer] that her Pleaſure was, for that ſhe doubted, that Mr. *Stapleton* had too much Intelligence where he then was

ANNO 1582.

"was [under ſome favourable Reſtraint] that he ſo ſuddenly ſeemed "to change his Manner of Dealing. That he ſhould be forthwith "committed to the *Fleet*, to cloſe Priſon: And that he [the Trea-"ſurer] ſhould ſend for the Warden of the *Fleet*; and give him "Charge upon his Duty to her Majeſty, for his ſtrait and cloſe "Keeping of Sir *Robert*, till he had further Order from her Maje-"ſty. That *Maude* likewiſe, if he dealt not plainly, be committed "to ſome ſharper and ſtraiter Place. And ſuch other as were touch-"ed with this Cauſe, *Syſſon* excepted, who ſeemed to juſtify his "Confeſſion. And that her Majeſty would have Sir *Robert*'s An-"ſwer under his Hand, as he confeſſed any Matter worthy ſetting "down; and would know, if that he hath already confeſſed, were "not under his Hand.

"That her Majeſty was very earneſt in this Cauſe: That it be "not now handled to her Diſhonour, and the Blot of the Biſhop: "And that ſhe found him like to prove innocent in this Accuſation: "And feared his Lordſhip's Sickneſs, and other weak Handling, "might hinder it; which his Lordſhip's Travail had brought to ſo "good Paſs. That thus much more her Majeſty ſaid, that if the "Impriſonment of the *Fleet* were not ſufficient, ſhe would be con-"tent, that his Lordſhip, and he [the Earl] and they [the reſt of "the Star Chamber] ſhould commit him to what Place they "ſhould think moſt fit. So earneſt, added the Earl, was ſhe, to "have the Matter truly well handled, for the Tryal of the Truth "and Purgation of the Biſhop.

"Thus have I done, (as he concluded) her Majeſty's Command-"ment touching this Matter; being loth and ſorry to trouble your "Lordſhip, knowing, how much troubled you are otherwiſe. But "her Majeſty repoſeth great Confidence in your Lordſhip's Direction. "And ſo praying to God to ſend your Lordſhip as good Health as I "wiſh myſelf, I end. At the Court this 28th of *February*, "1582.

Your Lordſhip's aſſured Friend,

R. Leyceſter.

A Commiſſion ſent down to examine Witneſſes.

This Command of the Queen brought on a further Trial of theſe Men; in order to a more perfect Knowledge and Diſcovery of the whole Matter. And a Commiſſion was ſent down to thoſe Parts where the Villany was acted, for the ſtricter Examination of the Parties and the Cauſes, in order to the exemplary Puniſhments of the Delinquents. Of this Commiſſion, in another Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, the Archbiſhop ſeemed to be the chief Inſtrument; that ſo his Innocence might the more evidently appear in thoſe Parts where he lived: And that chiefly by the juſt and open Puniſhment of the Guilty: And adviſing, that the Knight, being the chief Contriver, might chiefly be puniſhed. And this Letter (though ſomewhat long) I will alſo inſert, the rather, as containing ſeveral Things more particularly, as the afflicted Biſhop related his own Caſe and Circumſtances: Upon a new Commiſſion now ſent down into thoſe Parts to examine Witneſſes.

The Archbiſhop to Lord Treaſurer; requiring publick Puniſhment.

"I fear that I trouble your Lordſhip too much with my many Letters: But the Neceſſity of my Caſe forceth me, and the Perſuaſion that I conceive of your approved Friendſhip, and your moſt firm Favour towards me, emboldeneth me ſo to do. Your Lordſhip's laſt private Letter maketh the Commiſſioners here to retire. And this new Commiſſion warranteth them fully to receive Witneſſes for the better Trial of this Treachery. So that I doubt not, but that I ſhall be cleared here in all Reſpects. God ſhall have the Glory: And after her Majeſty, you deſerve the chief Praiſe. For if your Lordſhip had not ſtood ſtoutly at this Stern, to break the violent Charges of the Sea, doubtleſs, e're this, I had ſuffered Shipwreck. Herein you have ſerved God, who can and doth requite it. But truly, my Lord, except publick Puniſhment follow upon this publick Offence, neither can my good Name be repaired; neither can the Church of *Chriſt* be ſatisfied. For it is here given out, as well by the Knight's Friends, as alſo by the Papiſts, that theſe Parties now troubled, muſt needs confeſs ſomewhat, as alſo be lightly puniſhed, to cover the Biſhop's Fault. If they may eſcape as is lookt for, they will inſult more than hitherto they have done.

The Captain of the Conſpiracy.

Star Chamber.

"I think your Lordſhip ſomewhat perceiveth, how they labour already to fall from their former Confeſſion. And I aſſure my ſelf, that your Lordſhip, if it were but only in reſpect of God's Cauſe, will be the Means to ſee this foul Fact throughly puniſhed: And eſpecially the Captain of this Conſpiracy. He in this Action is *Cauſa ſine qua non.* For never durſt the others, his Confederates, have enterprized this vile Practice, but in ſure Perſuaſion, that he would bear out this Matter. So that it is the Knight which in Right ſhould bear the great Burthen; or rather, anſwer for them all. His Sacrifice muſt make the Satisfaction. I ſeek not private Revenge, God is my Judge. And without the publick Puniſhing of him, neither ſhall I, nor any other of the Clergy, be able to live in Countenance, or Safety. And for my Part I will never live a Biſhop with ſo great Diſgrace. But it maketh ſmall Matter of me; the common Cauſe is to be conſidered; nay, the Church of *Chriſt* muſt be ſatisfied. This is not my Fancy, but the Judgment of the Wiſe; the common Cry of the World. And for clearing of your Lordſhip, as alſo of others, my honourable good Lords, from Suſpicion of Affection, or Partiality towards me in this Cauſe; it is thought moſt convenient, it ſhould receive Judgment in the *Star Chamber*, a Court of great Equity, and void of all Suſpicion of Partiality.

"But I fear this Thing will be hardly brought to paſs without your Lordſhip's ſpecial Favour and Furtherance. Neither mind I to move the Matter to any other. For as yet it ſeemeth to be ſcant ripe, before I know your Lordſhip's Pleaſure therein. For in this, as in all other, I will wholly rely upon your Lordſhip, and follow your Direction. Yet can I ſee no other Way, how I may eſcape perpetual Infamy, neither the Church of *Chriſt* an

ANNO 1582.

" incurable Wound of Offence. And better a Millſtone about my
" Neck, and I hurled into the Sea. I truſt therefore your Lordſhip will not miſlike hereof: But rather adviſe me, when the Time ſhall be convenient to lay my Suit that Way. And I ſhall humbly pray your Lordſhip to acquaint my Chancellor with your Opinion herein: That he may ſpeedily impart the ſame unto me. There be ſome of the Council that require my Preſence in *London*. Truly, my Lord, my Weakneſs will not ſuffer me, as yet, to travel. For Grief hath ſo overgrown me, and this Vexation hath ſo feebled me, that I am forced as yet to keep my Chamber, againſt my following this Matter in Perſon.

" An Opinion of ſome would argue in me an earneſt and a revengful Mind: Others would travail with me for a Mitigation of their Puniſhment. And that were to procure Shame to myſelf, and Slander to God's Goſpel. And a great Sort would ſay, that I were commanded to come up to anſwer for myſelf. Neither do I think it fit for my Age and Calling, to trudge up and down about this Matter, or to ſtand at the Bar for my Defence. All theſe Things notwithſtanding, if her Majeſty ſhall not diſlike of it, and if it ſhall pleaſe your Lordſhip ſo to adviſe me; I will ſoon after *Eaſter* adventure upon the Journey, if it ſhould be to the Loſs of my Life.

" And ſtark tired with the writing this long Letter, (I wrote not ſo much theſe four Months paſt) I take my Leave of your good Lordſhip, commending the ſame to the good Direction of God's Holy Spirit. *Biſhopthorp, March* the 23. 1582.

Your Lordſhip's moſt bounden,

E. Ebor.

The Judgment given in the Star Chamber *in Behalf of the Archbiſhop.*

In ſhort, the Caſe was heard in the *Star Chamber*, Witneſſes examined; and at laſt Judgment was given, That the Knight and the reſt ſhould go down to *York*; and there before all in a publick Manner at the Aſſizes, declare and confeſs this their vile Practice, with other Penalties; for the Vindication of the Archbiſhop's Innocency, and for the giving Satisfaction to the Church. Theſe their Confeſſions were made before the Archbiſhop, then alſo preſent. Who, after they had ended, gravely and piouſly ſpake to each of them; yet ſmartly now and then, laying this Buſineſs cloſe to them, in order to make them ſenſible of their Impiety, and to bring them to Repentance, and alſo forgiving them. This Confeſſion of Sir *R. Stapleton*, and the reſt, and the Archbiſhop's Anſwers to them, (which will ſhew more Particulars of this Treachery) are well worthy reading. And therefore, being ſomewhat long, I have preſerved them in the *Appendix*. Numb. XXI.

Their Miſbehaviour at their Confeſſions.

One would have thought that the Judgment of the Lords thus diſpatched and performed, ſhould have put an End to this Buſineſs. But it did not. For the Knight made but a Mock-buſineſs of his Confeſſion, and of his asking the Archbiſhop Forgiveneſs; and his Behaviour appearing ſo confident. And he and *Maude* coming to the Bar to read their

Confeſſions and make their Submiſſions, both wore white Ribbands about them: The Knight appeared with a white Ribband caſt about his Body; and *Maude* the like tied about his Arm. And the Knight told one of his Friends that ſhewed himſelf dejected for him, and ſaid, " That there was no Cauſe, why this ſhould breed any Sor-" row in him. For he came now but to ſerve her Majeſty, as he " had done in weightier Affairs heretofore; and doubted not to do " hereafter. " So that the Voice of the People in that Shire and the next, ran eſpecially upon two Points, obſerved by all Men in their Submiſſions: Firſt, their *white Ribbands*, an unuſual, or rather new Faſhion: Yet having a certain Signification. Secondly, Their Saying by them often iterated, of their *coming but to ſerve her Majeſty*; to *filfil her Majeſty's Commandment:* Which were ſo taken and interpreted: As, in the firſt profeſſing their unſpotted Innocency. In the Second they declared, That notwithſtanding the former, for her Majeſty's Pleaſure they were thus puniſhed, and thus diſgraced. Which Words ſeemed to divers wiſe Men, moſt peſtilent and hainous; and to the Queen's Majeſty moſt injurious.

The Archbiſhop informs the Lord Treaſurer thereof.

This diſorderly Behaviour even at their Submiſſions, compelled the Archbiſhop, not only upon his own Account, but chiefly for the Queen's Honour, to ſend another Letter to the Lord Treaſurer: In the Entrance whereof, he ſhewed him, " That he had followed his " good Advice and Counſel: And that he had followed the Example " of his Maſter Chriſt, and forgiven his Perſecutors and Enemies, " who had many ways crucified him. Inwardly, he had done it at " the Command of God; outwardly, becauſe his Lordſhip ſo moved " him. " Informing him, " That in the Parties themſelves there " appeared neither any Humility, neither any Spark of Repentance: " Saving only in the *Scot*, [*viz. Alexander*, *Syſſon*'s Man, who " was in his Confeſſion very penitent.]

" That the Knight came to the Bar in great Bravery, with proud " Looks and diſdainful Countenance and Geſture: Having a great " white Ribband in Baudrick Sort, caſt upon a black Sattin Doub-" let. That he read his Submiſſion with ſo low a Voice, and ſo " running, as one reading a Letter, as faſt as he could. Of the " Preſence he could not be heard, nor underſtood. And that it was " moſt ſcornfully done, without any Token of Repentance. And " that when he had made an End he ſaid thus: Now I have read it " *Verbatim*, and fulfilled her Majeſty's Commandment.

" That *Mallory* read more ſoberly; yet without any Token of " Repentance. That *Maude* abuſed the Judgment of the *Star* " *Chamber*, and the whole Preſence moſt lewdly. That he came in " with a black Sattin Doublet, with a white Ribband faſt about his " right Arm. That he ſpoke ſo low, and read ſo diſorderly and diſ-" dainfully, that the Juſtices of Aſſize rebuked him ſharply; he al-" ledging, that he could not well ſee, nor hear, neither ſpeak. And " ſo derided the Order, and laboured to deface him, [the Archbi-" ſhop.] That the *Scot* [*Alexander*] was the only Man, that hum-" bled himſelf, and with Tokens of Repentance prayed Mercy.

And then the Archbiſhop ſubjoined, and ſhewed that Lord to whom he writ, " That he conſidering what was fit for him to do, “and not what they deſerved, forgave them all ſo far as became a Chriſtian, and as God required of him: Yet with Proteſtation, that he left the Order of the *Star Chamber* in its full Form. And requeſted the Juſtices of Aſſize to ſpare *Maude* the Pillory, and the *Scot* his Ear. Which Things, notwithſtanding, added the Archbiſhop, he would never have done, but in reſpect to his Lordſhip's Letter. For, he aſſured him, more proud, impenitent, ſcornful Men never came in publick Place, to aſk Forgiveneſs.

The Archbiſhop told more of their wicked Practices againſt him, even after their publick Confeſſions, to blot him and clear themſelves. Inſomuch that he wrote, “That the Caſe had ſtood far better with him, if they had not come down at all. And that he doubted not, but that his Lordſhip would conſider of theſe diſorderly Doings, even as might beſt ſerve to God's Glory, and for the Honour of the Lords of the *Star Chamber*: Whoſe Judgment they diſcredited, and whoſe Order they utterly contemned. And that for himſelf he ſaw, that while he lived there, he ſhould live both in great Miſery and in great Danger; and ſhould labour unprofitably, hurling Pearls before Swine, and beſtow all his Labours upon an unthankful People. This writ from *Biſhopthorp*, the 2d of *Auguſt*, 1583.

One only of them ſhewed Repentance, and begged Forgiveneſs.

Nor was there any of this Company that ſhewed true Repentance at their Confeſſions, but *Alexander Farly*, the *Scot*, their Servant. Who before he began to make his Confeſſion, voluntarily acknowledged his Fault, and craved Pardon of the Archbiſhop, and that he would grant him a Releaſe of the Loſs of his other Ear, one having been cut off before his coming down to *York*. And ſtanding upon the Pillory, he prayed for my Lord Archbiſhop: At whoſe Hands, he ſaid, he found more Favour, than at any Man's elſe. And being demanded concerning his Obſtinacy, why he never confeſſed his Lewdneſs before the Sentence was ready to be given; he anſwered, It was to keep his Oath taken for the Concealment of it. When this Man came to *York*, to receive Judgment, he willed all ſerving Men to take heed of Gentlemen, and not to truſt them, for their flattering Promiſes had provoked him to that Wickedneſs: And then they left him in that Miſery.

This unadviſed Behaviour brought thoſe Men into new Troubles. For they ſoon were ſummoned up again, and committed to the *Fleet*; and came into Examination in the *Star Chamber* about the *white Ribband*, and a Whetſtone alſo that hung at it, when the Knight was at *York*, reading his Confeſſion. I am ſenſible I have been ſomewhat long in my Relation of this Accident, happening to Archbiſhop *Sandys*: My Purpoſe being to retrieve and preſerve, as much as I can, the Memory of theſe firſt Biſhops under Queen *Elizabeth*, the great Directors and Inſtruments of our Reformation. Whereof this learned, pious Exile, and Confeſſor, as well as Prelate, was one of the Chief.

Stapleton *fined, and committed to the* Tower.

But this Buſineſs ended not yet. For I find Sir *Robert Stapleton* was proceeded againſt ſharply for his Miſdemeanour. For he was deeply fined, and committed a Priſoner to the *Tower*. And remained there, and in the *Fleet* in the Years 1583 and 1584. Which Affliction ſeemed to humble him, and bring him to Repentance. For thus I find a Letter of his to the Lord Treaſurer, importing, as I take it from the Original: *viz.* "That as my great Follies and Offences deſerve the Puniſhment that willingly and with Contentment I do endure, ſo I humbly crave upon my true Repentance, "that your Lordſhip would pleaſe, for the Relief of my weak Body, moſt deeply decayed with long Reſtraint in Priſons, cloſe "and unwholſome, to be a Mean unto her Majeſty for my Liberty "of this Houſe: Whereby in taking Air, and convenient Exerciſe "by walking I muſt hope for the Remedy, that by Phyſick is denied, both for the unfit Seaſon of the Year, being intemperately "cold; and his Feebleneſs and Inability of Stomach, unapt to receive Medicine. He added, that he dared not trouble his Lordſhip with long Letters, but did beſeech him for God his Cauſe "to mitigate his Diſpleaſure, which he confeſſed he had largely deſerved. That the Higheſt knew he was right woe for it, and did "purpoſe to become a new Man in Lowlineſs and Integrity of Life. "That this was the ſame Duty that he offered to God for his Sins: "And he verily hoped his moſt Gracious Sovereign would not refuſe it: Neither that his Lordſhip would reject that juſt Petition "of him that was in Miſery. Even ſo he humbly took his Leave, "beſeeching God to preſerve him in all Honour and Happineſs. "From the *Tower*, the 24th of *December*, 1583.

His Letter thence.

And I find the ſaid Knight in the *Fleet* in *May*, 1584, petitioning the ſaid Lord, to procure the Releaſe of his Impriſonment and Fine: All writ with his own Hand, to this Tenor: "That as one moſt "heartily ſorry for his great Offences, he did lay himſelf at his "Lordſhip's Feet; craving his Mercy and honourable Favour towards the Relief of his poor Eſtate by Releaſe of his grievous Impriſonment and heavy Fine. He acknowledgeth, that his Lordſhip had of late been pleaſed to mitigate his Extremities in more "honourable Sort, than he was able to deſerve; he humbly craved "that for God's Cauſe he would continue his Goodneſs, eſpecially "at the preſent, ſithence upon ſome ready Help conſiſted his great "Good or Harm, to the Eſtabliſhment or utter Overthrow of his "poor Houſe and Children. All which he committed to his honourable Conſideration, *&c.* Dated from the *Fleet* the 27th of "*May* 1584. Subſcribing,

Another penitent Letter of the ſame.

Your good Lordſhip's in all Duty and Service.

R. Stapleton.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Biſhop of Peterburgh *addreſſeth to the Queen for Confirmation of their Statutes, for Reſidence. Commiſſion for Concealments oppreſs the Clergy in the Dioceſs of* Lincoln. *The Biſhop's Complaint thereof to the Lord Treaſurer. Enſnaring Interrogatories, put to the Miniſters and Churchwardens. The ſaid Biſhop's Letters in Behalf of his Clergy, and his own Juriſdiction, encroached upon. The Biſhop of* Lincoln *in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion upon* Mackworth, *for having two Wives. The Troubles of* Scory *Biſhop of* Hereford, *from Sir* H. Sidney, *Lord Preſident of* Wales. *His rigorous Government. The State and Revenues of the Biſhoprick of St.* David's.

The Biſhop of Peterburgh *endeavours the Confirmation of the Statutes.*

TRANSACTIONS of Remark of ſome other Biſhops, happening this Year, follow.

Edmund Biſhop of *Peterburgh* had now ſome Buſineſs with her Majeſty: Which was, to have the Statutes of the Cathedral Church confirmed: Chiefly to oblige the Prebendaries thereof to Reſidence. The Want of which he made Complaint of to her, in a long Letter, Dated, *June* the 19th, from *Peterburgh:* Introduced with this humble apologizing Preface: "That he knew not, whether he ſhould begin to crave Pardon for his Boldneſs in preſuming after his ſimple Manner, to write to her moſt Excellent Majeſty, or to make his Excuſe, that he had deferred until that Day to ſignify unto her a Matter of ſo great Neceſſity as that which he was to declare. Wherefore touching both thoſe Points, determining to reſt upon her accuſtomed Favour and Royal Virtue, he proceeded to his Purpoſe. Letting her underſtand;

Addreſſed to the Queen for that Purpoſe.

"That her good and gracious Father, King *Henry* VIII. had erected in *Peterburgh* a Cathedral Church. And that kind of Foundation implied always a Society of learned Men, ſtayed and grounded in all Parts of Religion, apt to preach the Goſpel, and convince Errors and Hereſies; which in the Singleneſs of Opinions (where particular Men over particular Churches, as Paſtors, are ſet, within the Dioceſs, where it is chief) may happen to ariſe; and further to aſſiſt the Biſhop, the Head of the Dioceſs, in all godly and wholſome Conſultations. Inſomuch that the Cathedral Church ought to be as it were the *Oracle* of the whole Dioceſs; and a Light unto all Places lying near it. And that after this Houſe [of God] was erected, there came to the ſame, certain Statutes for the Government thereof under his Majeſty's Name:

The Cathedral Church the Oracle.

ANNO 1582.

Name: And ſo had continued; not without Regard, the rather through a Confirmation made of them by her Majeſty's Viſitors, appointed for that Place and Country adjacent *Anno Primo* of her moſt happy Reign. Inſomuch that a long Time after his coming to that Biſhoprick, he did (he ſaid) as well he might, contain the Prebendaries of the ſaid Church in the Duties of Reſidence, Hoſpitality, and preaching the Word, indifferently well.

“ But that (as he went on) of late Years theſe good Offices were diminiſhed; and at the laſt in a Manner, he ſpake it not without deep Sighs, almoſt clean vaniſhed. Inſomuch, as he ſaid, he dared not expreſs unto her, how little Reſidence was there: Being loth in any wiſe to trouble her Majeſty therewith, if he had been able to reform it of himſelf. That he had extended his Authority and Force of Juriſdiction to the uttermoſt, and followed the Severity of Laws in higher Courts, pretermitting no Means under her Majeſty, to redreſs that which was, and ſtill remained, amiſs: And had not found either very good Succeſs, or mean Charges, Expences and Trouble. That the chief and ſole Cauſe, in a manner, of all this Matter, beſides the Perverſeneſs of Men's Natures, being the Uncertainty of the Authority of the Statutes of the ſaid Church: The Froward and Diſobedient always pretending for their Defence, that the ſame were and are of no Force; and that they ſtand at Liberty to do, or not to do, the Premiſſes at their Pleaſure. Becauſe they were not extant under the great Seal, and indented.

And thus having ſhewed the Cauſe of his Complaint to the Queen, he proceeded to make his Requeſt: “ Wherefore he, ſtyling himſelf her Majeſty's moſt faithful and poor Subject, appointed under her to that Church and Government, moſt humbly proſtrated himſelf before her in this Matter, as of great Importance, both in reſpect of God's Glory, and of her Father's, and her own Renown, for this his Majeſty's moſt famous Work of erecting Cathedral Churches, inſtead of Monkiſh and ſuperſtitious Houſes was, and ſo ſtill remained the Beauty of the Reformation of Religion, and the greateſt Benefit next to the Doctrine of the Goſpel itſelf; that the Church of God in his Realm received at his moſt Royal Hands, far exceeding all other Acts that were done by any of his Progenitors before him; and ſurmounting all that was like to be done in any Time to come: If that which his Will founded might likewiſe be well governed.

And then further to preſs his Motion he uſed theſe Words to her. “ Let not then, I moſt humbly beſeech you, the Matter of Government of theſe Houſes, (for they all that are of your Father's Foundation be in like Uncertainty of the Authority of their Statutes, and eſpecially this Church where I am) ſtand any longer doubtful; but let it be by your moſt ſacred Majeſty decided and determined, under what Rules and Orders they ſhall live. And ſo ſhall the holy Plant of your Father's Hand be by you well nouriſhed and cheriſhed; and you ſhall be rightly Heir, as well of his Glory, as you are of his imperial Crown and Dignity. And the Lord ſhall bleſs, proſper and multiply your Days and Years;

ANNO 1582.

“ to the great Comfort of the Church, and all your moſt faithful Subjects.

And ſtill to excite the Queen to a diſpatch of this Buſineſs, he added: “ That this Thing, until it be perfectly finiſhed, being a Matter that needed no long Delay for the Difficulty, nor would be deferred for the great Utility, all Celerity would ſeem little to him, being an old Man, deſirous to leave his Church in good Order, before he died: And knowing that it was now more than Ten Years, ſince it was moved by him and others to their Archbiſhop, that was dead; and by him to her Majeſty, as he ſaid, to be reformed: Concluding, that he that was loth to begin to write, now found Difficulty to make an End, becauſe of the Weight of this Matter, that he was entred into. But becauſe he was grown to more Length than he purpoſed, he muſt of neceſſity make an End: Moſt humbly beſeeching her Majeſty to pardon him in that he dared to preſent, after his rude Manner, this, or any Cauſe unto Her. Subſcribing,

Your Majeſty's moſt faithful Subject,

Edmund Petriburg.

Commiſſion of Concealments in the Dioceſs of Lincoln, *complained of.*

The Commiſſion for concealed Lands and Eſtates, granted out by the Queen, created great Perplexities and Wrongs to the Clergy, as at other Times before, ſo this Year; the Queen gratifying ſome of her Dependents, and particularly the Gentlemen Penſioners, with theſe Commiſſions. Whereof one of them was *Edward Stafford.* Whoſe Deputies extreme Dealing with the Clergy in the large Dioceſs of *Lincoln*, was at length complained of by *Cooper* the Biſhop, to the Lord Treaſurer: Who was the Clergy's chief Patron, to whom they uſually applied in their Diſtreſſes and Hardſhips, often now a-Days put upon them.

Theſe Deputies of *Stafford*, that the poor Clergy in this Dioceſs might be ſure to be well ſqueezed, were inſtructed to adminiſter to the Miniſters and Churchwardens *Articles of Enquiry*; and which they would deliver no Copies of. The Sum of which Articles the Biſhop ſent up to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, encloſed in his own Letter to him, for ſome Redreſs of his Clergy. I ſhall firſt ſet down the Articles, and then his Letter, which will give us a plainer Diſcovery of this Matter.

The Articles had this Title: *A Note of certain Articles offered by Mr.* Stafford*'s Deputies to all the Clergy generally, ſo far as they to them have been offered, and can be remembred.* For Copies, they themſelves would deliver none.

Articles of Enquiry put to Parſons, &c. by the Concealers.

“ *Imprimis*, Where you are Parſon, Vicar or Curate. And to whom the Gift of that Parſonage or Vicarage doth belong. And how long have you been poſſeſſed of it. And whether you be Incumbent upon it.

“ 2. *Item*, Of what Age you were, at the firſt taking of it.

“ 3. *Item*, Whether you have any more Benefices than one: And how you are qualified. And by whom. Whether under the Hand

“ and

ANNO
1582.

“ and Seal of any Nobleman. And whether you be diſpenſed withal according to Law.

“ 4. *Item*, Whether you have read the Articles within two Months next after your Admiſſion to any Parſonage or Vicarage. And every Year after, once. And whether you have ſubſcribed thereunto.

“ 5. *Item*, Of what Degree you are. And whether you be Preacher; Yea, or no. And whether you are Licenſed thereunto.

“ 6. *Item*, Whether you obſerve the Order of Prayer, and do adminiſter the Sacrament, in ſuch Sort as is appointed and commanded by her Majeſty, in the Book of *Common Prayer*.

“ 7. *Item*, Whether you have married in ſuch Sort, as is appointed by her Majeſty's Injunctions: Having the Hands and Seals of two Juſtices of Peace allowing thereof.

“ 8. *Item*, Whether you do uſe the Church Ornaments and Rites, as are appointed by Authority.

“ 9. *Item*, Whether you have paid your Yearly Tithes and Subſidies; yea, or no. If not, how long is it ſince you made Default. And how much is behind.

“ 10. *Item*, Whether you have uſed any Simony, or other unto lawful Means, to come by any ſuch Parſonage or Vicarage, *&c.*” With a great many mo, more dangerou sa great deal of Anſwers unto directly, upon a Man's Oath. Which the Miniſters were not hable to bear away. And all this by Force, they ſay, of *Viis & Modis*, [a Term that ran in their Commiſſion] as the Biſhop added at the End of theſe Articles..

“ II. Articles, or Interrogatories to be miniſtred to the Churchwardens and ſworn Men, touching their Miniſters.

“ *Imprimis*, Whether is your Parſonage impropriate: Yea, or no. If it be, to what Abby, *&c.* did it belong. Who is the Farmer thereof. And from whom hath he his Leaſe. At whoſe Hands purchaſed he it.

“ 2. *Item*, Who is the Vicar of the ſame. How long hath he been Vicar there. By whom was he preſented. And what is the Value of the ſaid Vicarage.

“ 3. *Item*, Whether is your ſaid Parſon Reſident upon the ſame. And what Hoſpitality doth he keep.

“ 4. *Item*, What your Parſon's or Vicar's Name is, not being impropriate. And how long he hath been Parſon or Vicar there.

“ 5. *Item*, Whether the Parſon or Vicar hath any more Benefices or Eccleſiaſtical Promotions: Yea, or No. What are the Names thereof. And how many he hath. Who be the Patrons; and within what Dioceſs lie they. And how long hath he enjoyed, or occupied them.

“ 6. *Item*, How long hath he been inſtituted, and had his Induction for the Second, Third or Fourth Benefice or Spiritual Promotion. And what Day to your Knowledge took he Poſſeſſion of the ſame.

ANNO 1582.

“ to the great Comfort of the Church, and all your moſt faithful
“ Subjects.

And ſtill to excite the Queen to a diſpatch of this Buſineſs, he added: “ That this Thing, until it be perfectly finiſhed, being a Matter that needed no long Delay for the Difficulty, nor would be deferred for the great Utility, all Celerity would ſeem little to him, being an old Man, deſirous to leave his Church in good Order, before he died: And knowing that it was now more than Ten Years, ſince it was moved by him and others to their Archbiſhop, that was dead; and by him to her Majeſty, as he ſaid, to be reformed: Concluding, that he that was loth to begin to write, now found Difficulty to make an End, becauſe of the Weight of this Matter, that he was entred into. But becauſe he was grown to more Length than he purpoſed, he muſt of neceſſity make an End: Moſt humbly beſeeching her Majeſty to pardon him in that he dared to preſent, after his rude Manner, this, or any Cauſe unto Her. Subſcribing,

Your Majeſty's moſt faithful Subject,

Edmund Petriburg.

Commiſſion of Concealments in the Dioceſs of Lincoln, *complained of.*

The Commiſſion for concealed Lands and Eſtates, granted out by the Queen, created great Perplexities and Wrongs to the Clergy, as at other Times before, ſo this Year; the Queen gratifying ſome of her Dependents, and particularly the Gentlemen Penſioners, with theſe Commiſſions. Whereof one of them was *Edward Stafford.* Whoſe Deputies extreme Dealing with the Clergy in the large Dioceſs of *Lincoln,* was at length complained of by *Cooper* the Biſhop, to the Lord Treaſurer: Who was the Clergy's chief Patron, to whom they uſually applied in their Diſtreſſes and Hardſhips, often now a-Days put upon them.

Theſe Deputies of *Stafford,* that the poor Clergy in this Dioceſs might be ſure to be well ſqueezed, were inſtructed to adminiſter to the Miniſters and Churchwardens *Articles of Enquiry*; and which they would deliver no Copies of. The Sum of which Articles the Biſhop ſent up to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, encloſed in his own Letter to him, for ſome Redreſs of his Clergy. I ſhall firſt ſet down the Articles, and then his Letter, which will give us a plainer Diſcovery of this Matter.

The Articles had this Title: *A Note of certain Articles offered by Mr.* Stafford*'s Deputies to all the Clergy generally, ſo far as they to them have been offered, and can be remembred.* For Copies, they themſelves would deliver none.

Articles of Enquiry put to Parſons, &c. by the Concealers.

“ *Imprimis,* Where you are Parſon, Vicar or Curate. And to whom the Gift of that Parſonage or Vicarage doth belong. And how long have you been poſſeſſed of it. And whether you be Incumbent upon it.

“ 2. *Item,* Of what Age you were, at the firſt taking of it.

“ 3. *Item,* Whether you have any more Benefices than one: And how you are qualified. And by whom. Whether under the Hand

“ and Seal of any Nobleman. And whether you be diſpenſed withal according to Law.

“ 4. *Item*, Whether you have read the Articles within two Months next after your Admiſſion to any Parſonage or Vicarage. And every Year after, once. And whether you have ſubſcribed thereunto.

“ 5. *Item*, Of what Degree you are. And whether you be Preacher; Yea, or no. And whether you are Licenſed thereunto.

“ 6. *Item*, Whether you obſerve the Order of Prayer, and do adminiſter the Sacrament, in ſuch Sort as is appointed and commanded by her Majeſty, in the Book of *Common Prayer*.

“ 7. *Item*, Whether you have married in ſuch Sort, as is appointed by her Majeſty's Injunctions: Having the Hands and Seals of two Juſtices of Peace allowing thereof.

“ 8. *Item*, Whether you do uſe the Church Ornaments and Rites, as are appointed by Authority.

“ 9. *Item*, Whether you have paid your Yearly Tithes and Subſidies; yea, or no. If not, how long is it ſince you made Default. And how much is behind.

“ 10. *Item*, Whether you have uſed any Simony, or other unto lawful Means, to come by any ſuch Parſonage or Vicarage, *&c.*”

With a great many mo, more dangerou sa great deal of Anſwers unto directly, upon a Man's Oath. Which the Miniſters were not hable to bear away. And all this by Force, they ſay, of *Viis & Modis*, [a Term that ran in their Commiſſion] as the Biſhop added at the End of theſe Articles..

“ II. Articles, or Interrogatories to be miniſtred to the Churchwardens and ſworn Men, touching their Miniſters.

“ *Imprimis*, Whether is your Parſonage impropriate: Yea, or no. If it be, to what Abby, *&c.* did it belong. Who is the Farmer thereof. And from whom hath he his Leaſe. At whoſe Hands purchaſed he it.

“ 2. *Item*, Who is the Vicar of the ſame. How long hath he been Vicar there. By whom was he preſented. And what is the Value of the ſaid Vicarage.

“ 3. *Item*, Whether is your ſaid Parſon Reſident upon the ſame. And what Hoſpitality doth he keep.

“ 4. *Item*, What your Parſon's or Vicar's Name is, not being impropriate. And how long he hath been Parſon or Vicar there.

“ 5. *Item*, Whether the Parſon or Vicar hath any more Benefices or Eccleſiaſtical Promotions: Yea, or No. What are the Names thereof. And how many he hath. Who be the Patrons; and within what Dioceſs lie they. And how long hath he enjoyed, or occupied them.

“ 6. *Item*, How long hath he been inſtituted, and had his Induction for the Second, Third or Fourth Benefice or Spiritual Promotion. And what Day to your Knowledge took he Poſſeſſion of the ſame.

ANNO 1582.

" 7. *Item*, Whether hath he a Licence, or Diſpenſation, to keep " ſo many Benefices: Yea, or no. And by whom he is Qualified.

" 8. *Item*, Whether hath he compounded for his ſaid Benefice: " Yea, or no, in the Office of the *Firſt Fruits*.

" 9. *Item*, What Profit hath he received of his firſt Benefice, " ſince he was admitted to the Second, having no Diſpenſation.

" 10. *Item*, Of what Age was your Parſon at the Time of the " admitting him to the ſaid Benefice.

" 11. *Item*, Whether was your Parſon made Deacon before his " Admiſſion to the ſaid Benefice.

" 12. *Item*, Whether did your Parſon, within two Months after " his Induction, publickly read the Articles in the Church, where" of he hath Cure, in Time of Common Prayer. And therewith " at ſuch Days, and Times, as yearly they be appointed, accord" ing to a Statute made the 13th *Eliz.* that now is. If not, when, " and how long it is ſince he made Default.

" 13. *Item*, What Reward, or Sums of Money, or other Conſi" deration, or Thing, did your Parſon give Promiſe, yield or pay, " for, or in reſpect of having, or obtaining your ſaid Benefice. And " by whom.

" 14. *Item*, How many Benefices hath your Parſon at this pre" ſent: Or how many hath he had at one Time, ſince he was an " Eccleſiaſtical Perſon. And which of them had he firſt. What be " the Numbers thereof. Where lie they. How many Miles di" ſtant the one from the other.

" 15. *Item*, What Faculty, Licence or Diſpenſation hath your Par" ſon to enjoy mo Benefices than one. If he have a Licence, what " Date beareth it, or under what Seal obtained he the ſame.

" 16. *Item*, Whether your Parſon be Chaplain to any Nobleman: " By Colour whereof he doth enjoy a Plurality. Of what Calling is " his ſaid Lord and Maſter. And whether did he obtain under his " Lord and Maſter's Hand and Seal, a ſufficient Teſtimonial into a " Court, when he obtained his Licence where he then ſerved, ac" cording to a Statute in that Caſe provided.

" 17. *Item*, Of what clear yearly Value be the ſaid Benefices, " according to the Valuation in her Majeſty's Books.

" 18. *Item*, Whether he have paid his Subſidies and yearly Tenths " due for his ſaid Benefices. If not, when and how long is it, ſince " he made Default.

" 19. *Item*, Of what Degree in School is your Parſon. And " whether uſeth he to preach. Or if he do, whether he be ſuffici" ently authorized thereto.

" 20. *Item*, Whether hath your Parſon ſubſcribed to the Arti" cles: If not, how long is it ſince he made Default ſo to do.

" 21. *Item*, Whether hath your Parſon married in ſuch Sort as " he ought to do, having two Juſtices of Peace's Hands, for the al" lowing thereof.

" 22. *Item*, Whether your Parſon have, or do miniſter the Sa" craments, ſay Service in the Church, and Chapels; uſing ſuch " Rites and Ceremonies, as the Laws of this Realm, Book of Com-

ANNO 1582.

“ mon Prayer, and Injunctions do permit: And how long he hath done contrary.

“ 23. *Item*, Whether your Parſon have been Reſident upon his Benefice, ſince the Time of his Poſſeſſion. If not, how long hath he been abſent in one Year. And the Cauſe thereof.

“ 24. *Item*, Whether your Parſon have ſpoken at any Time in the Church, or otherwiſe, in the Derogation of the Book of Common Prayer, or in miniſtring the Sacraments in ſuch Manner and Form, as in the ſaid Book is ſet forth.

In regard of theſe Deputy Commiſſioners, and theſe their enſnaring Enquiries, to get Money out of the poor Clergy, or to impriſon, or deprive them, and to get the Benefices into their Hands or Patronages, and likewiſe their encroaching upon the Juriſdiction of Biſhops herein; the good Biſhop of *Lincoln* wrote an earneſt Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, (as was mentioned before) dated *Sept.* 23. And giving further Light into ſome of the Grievances of theſe Commiſſions, I ſhall give the Tenor of it from the Original, *viz.*

The Biſhop of Lincoln *to the Lord Treaſurer, for Advice concerning this Commiſſion.*

“ That it might pleaſe his Honour to underſtand, that at that preſent he was forced in Behalf of the poor Preachers and Miniſters of his Dioceſs, to deſire his Lordſhip's Advice and Direction in a Matter very nighly touching them, and wherein, in his poor Judgment, (he ſaid) they were offered very hard Dealing by the Deputies of Mr. *Stafford*. That they entred not into his Dioceſs till that preſent Time. And now they brought down with them a Commiſſion out of the Exchequer to certain Gentlemen of every Shire, to inquire for the Lapſe of ſuch Benefices, as were granted to Mr. *Stafford*. Which, as he took it, were only thoſe that fell to her Majeſty's Gift, by Diſſolution of Abbies, and none other. That the Manner of the Enquiry mentioned in the Commiſſion, was only this, *Vel per Sacramentum proborum, & legalium hominum; vel aliis viis & modis, quibus melius poterint.* And that by this latter Claim of *Viis & Modis*, they took upon them, without Conſent or Knowledge of the Ordinary, by the Bailiff of their Hundred, to Summon all the Clergy, even Curates and Readers; and to offer them an Oath to anſwer to certain Articles. Which Articles comprehended all manner of Faults, either by Law or by Statute, or by Injunction, or by Order appointed in the Communion Book: Whereby any Miniſter might looſe his Living, or come into any Puniſhment by ſuch Faults committed.

“ Which, as he proceeded, in his Opinion, was more than the Meaning of the Queen's Majeſty in her Commiſſion, or more than the Words in Law could carry. For that this was more, added he, than Epiſcopal Juriſdiction. And that if her Majeſty had granted this Authority to Mr. *Stafford*, or to his Deputies, eſpecially to ſuch Deputies as they were, Biſhops or other Eccleſiaſtical Officers in this Realm ſhould have little to do. And yet the Miniſters very ſimply reformed, if they would give any Money. And that this Authority uſed they, not only to ſuch Miniſters as had Eccleſiaſtical Livings of the Patronage from the Queen, but (as he had written) to all other.

“ Wherefore he deſired his Honour even for God's ſake, moſt humbly, in the Behalf of the poor Preachers, that his Lordſhip would vouchſafe to help him with his Directions in this Caſe; and to ſignify, whether the Miniſters ought to obey this Manner of Dealing, and to be their own Accuſers, to their utter undoing. That the better Sort undoubtedly were greatly diſcouraged and diſmayed; ſeeing themſelves more extremely dealt withal, than the Reſidue of the Queen's Majeſty's Subjects. For in the Enquiry for concealed Lands and other Things contained in her Majeſty's Grant to Mr. *Stafford*, there were none ſuch extraordinary Means uſed; but only Juries impannelled, by Inſtruction to enquire of ſuch Things, as were thought to be wrongfully detained from her Majeſty. Which Manner of Dealing, if it were uſed toward the Miniſtry, no Complaint ſhould be made. Herein he moſt humbly and earneſtly deſired his Honour's Direction: For that he knew, he [the Lord Treaſurer] had examined the Value and Force of their Commiſſion. And both he, and the poor Miniſters of his Dioceſs, ſhould be bound to pray for the Continuance of his Honour. Which God, he prayed, would proſper to his Glory.

And then by way of Poſtſcript, he heartily deſired his Lordſhip's Anſwer with ſome ſpeed. For that the Matter was hotly and haſtily followed. No delays of Time, or Conſultation would be granted.

A Superſedeas *to* Stafford's *Commiſſion.*

For which the Biſhop returns Thanks.

The Effect of this ſeaſonable Interceſſion of the good Biſhop to a good Friend at Court in ſuch Straits, was, that a Stop was immediately put to *Stafford*'s Commiſſion. For a *Superſedeas* came down to his Deputies, againſt the unlawful Methods taken by theſe Men, in managing their Commiſſion. Whereupon the ſaid Biſhop wrote a Letter of Thanks to the Stateſman, that procured the Stay thereof ſo ſpeedily. For his Letter bore Date but ſix Days after his former; wherein he gave the Treaſurer Information of theſe Doings in his Dioceſs: Yielding moſt humble and hearty Thanks to his Lordſhip for his honourable Favour, in ſtaying by *Superſedeas*, the diſordered Proceedings of *Stafford*'s Deputies againſt the Clergy of ſome Part of his Dioceſs.

But becauſe there was no Doubt, ſome fair and plauſible Account would be given of the Courſe taken in proſecuting this Commiſſion; and ſo ſome Crime might be laid to the Biſhop, in what he had ſaid or done in the repreſenting thereof: Therefore he proceeded in his Letter, for prevention, to open their Doings more at large. Uſing theſe Words:

Diſorders in executing this Commiſſion.

“ For that I know not what Information they will make unto your Honour upon this Stay, I am bold to ſignify unto your Lordſhip ſuch Diſorders, to the Proof whereof I will ſtand. Firſt, That they ſummoned the Clergy by the Bailiffs and Conſtables, without any Notice given to me, or to my Chancellor, or to any other Eccleſiaſtical Officer; although we were all preſent in the Country, when it was done. Secondly, That they ſummoned the whole Clergy, Parſons, Vicars, Curates and Readers: Whereas her Majeſty's Grant to Mr. *Stafford*, as I take it, touched only thoſe Benefices that came to the Queen's Diſpoſition by the Diſſolution of Abbies, Chauntries, *&c.* only. And therefore, as I think he cannot meddle

“ with thoſe Miniſters that have their Benefices of other Patrons. Thirdly, that they offered a Number of Articles to the Miniſters upon their Oaths, very captious and dangerous to anſwer unto, againſt themſelves. And this alſo was generally offered to all. Fourthly, They enquire upon theſe Miniſters by the Oath of their Pariſhioners, in a great many Articles. A Number whereof appertain nothing to the Queen's Majeſty's Grant. For they ſee there-by certain Words in her Majeſty's Commiſſion out of the Exchequer: By Force whereof they may not enquire of penal Statutes or Injunctions, which appertain unto the Miniſtry. And ſo at this preſent they affirm unto me, that their learned Counſil did tell them.

He farther informed the Lord Treaſurer, what ſort of Men the Parties were, that hitherto were Aſſigns for Mr. *Stafford* within his Dioceſs: Namely, for *Huntingtonſhire*, two, one of them a Collar-maker: for *Buckinghamſhire*, two others; all of them very mean Perſons. And that there were with them ſome common Promoters, and other ordinary and buſy Men, to be as they ſaid, their Sollicitors and Followers of the Cauſe. That there was not one of them tolerably affected in Religion; and ſome of them known to be backward. And therefore their Proceeding againſt the Clergy the more to be ſuſpected. Who were, or ſhould be for the other Shires of his Dioceſs, he knew not. For that in *Lincolnſhire*, *Leiceſterſhire*, *Bedfordſhire*, *Hertfordſhire*, he did not yet hear that any had begun. Wherefore in Concluſion the Biſhop humbly deſired his Lordſhip, when thoſe Commiſſions ſhould come forth, to have Conſideration of the Things beforementioned.

The Biſhop acts in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion againſt Mackworth.

Annals, Vol. II. Ch. 13.

The ſame Biſhop of *Lincoln* I find, acting this Year in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion againſt one Mr. *Mackworth*, for Wickedneſs and Hereſy, two groſs Crimes; namely, for lying with another Woman, his Wife being alive, and affirming the Lawfulneſs of having two Wives. He was alſo very unkind to his Wife. So that there was Mention of a Separation. This Cauſe, (which had been before the Lords in the *Star Chamber*) was ſet upon by ſeveral Perſons in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. And an Account of which, and what Judgment was paſt upon him, thus the Biſhop gave to the Lord Treaſurer, in the Month of *January*.

The Proceedings and Judgment upon him.

“ That it would pleaſe him to be advertiſed, that on the 18th and 19th Days he was at *Stamford*, to deal with Mr. *Mackworth*. Where after a Sermon, to the Reproof of his Wickedneſs and Confuſion of his Hereſy, in a very great Aſſembly, as well of the Gentlemen, as of the Common People of the Country round about, he was convented before him, [the Biſhop] and other of the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, *viz.* Sir *Tho. Cecille*, Mr. *Haulle*, Mr. *Wowrlich* and others, ſitting with him. And that at the Time he behaved himſelf very rudely. But that in the End he was contented to ſubmit himſelf to ſuch ſort of acknowledging his Fault openly, as they ſhould appoint him. Which was, that on two ſeveral *Sundays* in two ſeveral Churches after a Sermon made in each Place, he ſhould particularly acknowledge his Faults and

“ Errors,

ANNO 1582.

“Errors, in ſuch Manner as they [the Commiſſioners] ſhould lay them down in Articles.

Mackworth's *Wife moves for a Separation.*

“That in the Afternoon his Wife's Proctor moved for a *Separation*; and Order to be taken for his giving Security of Living for her and her Children. That after much Waywardneſs in chalenging his Wife's Brother, as the Cauſe and Follower of all his Trouble, he earneſtly deſired, that the Matter might not proceed to *Separation:* Offering the Commiſſioners to put in a Bond, as they ſhould deſire, to his Wife's Friends for her Security, to have an honeſt and quiet Life with him, as with a loving and Chriſtian Huſband: Adding further, that if Sentence of Separation ſhould be given, it would be an Occaſion of great Grudge between them; ſo that they ſhould not at any Time hereafter live together ſo quietly, as now they might.

“That they went forward and prepared the Matter to Sentence, taking Conſultation, until the next Day in the Afternoon. At which Time he earneſtly, and with ſome Tears, renewed his former Motion. And they underſtood that the Gentlewoman was not unwilling thereto; but left herſelf to the Commiſſioners Directions, if they did think it ſafe for her ſo to do: Nevertheleſs they thought it not to ſtand with their Duties to accept any ſuch Reconciliation, before they had imparted the ſame unto their Honours [of the Privy Council, in the *Star Chamber*, as it ſeems; from whom the Cauſe might have been ſent to the Biſhop and the reſt.] That therefore they deferred the Sentence to the 30th Day of *January*, to *Bugden*. Where Mr. *Mackworth* muſt appear, to hear the reſolute Order, the one Way or the other.

And ſo depending upon their Order, the Biſhop concluded, “That they heartily deſire their Honours Direction therein: That if he would yield to ſuch Conditions as the Gentlewoman and her Brother ſhould think reaſonable, whether it be their Honour's Pleaſure, that they ſhould accept that Reconciliation, and proceed no farther to Divorce. And that they might know it, if it might be, by the 30th of that Month.” My Intelligence reacheth no further in this Matter. But theſe few Memorials are enough to ſhew the Paternal Cares, and Concerns of this and other Biſhops in theſe Times.

Trouble of Scory, *Biſhop of* Hereford. *Life of* Whitg. *p.* 109.

But I go on now to a Remark or too of another Biſhop, falling out this Year. The Biſhop of *Hereford* had very hard Dealing; and perhaps chiefly upon the like Commiſſion of *Concealments*, as that abovementioned in another Dioceſs. And I the rather take Notice of this Biſhop, whoſe Name was *Scory*, having been one of King *Edward*'s Biſhops, and returned from Exile upon Queen *Elizabeth*'s Acceſs to the Throne, and one of the Biſhops that aſſiſted at the Conſecration of Archbiſhop *Parker*, the firſt Archbiſhop upon the Reformation. This ancient Venerable Biſhop was vexed by the Council of the Marches of *Wales*, whereof Sir *Henry Sidney* was Preſident. By whom the reſt of the Council were led, in Effect as he pleaſed. I have briefly taken Notice of this Biſhop's Caſe elſewhere; but now ſhall relate it more at large. To the common Patron of the

ANNO 1582.

the Biſhops and Clergy this Biſhop appealed in a Letter, written to him in the Month of *November:* Thus ſhewing his Condition.

His Letter of Complaint to the Lord Treaſurer and Council.

“That he was now in his old Age compelled to ſeek Refuge and Aid of him [the Lord Treaſurer] and others her Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council, as the only Help next her Majeſty, to ſee Juſtice and Equity to be given unto her Highneſs's good Subjects. Therefore his humble Petition unto his Honour now was, that by his good and favourable Means he might be heard before the ſaid Lords. To whoſe Juſtice he appealed from the ſtrait Doings and Inquiſitions of the Lord Preſident and others there: Calling in queſtion his [the Biſhop's] Name, by examining Thouſands to his great Diſcredit and Injury. And that if in their great Inquiſitions they could charge him worthy of Diſcredit, he appealed to their Honours for the Hearing: And to ſuffer Shame and Puniſhment, if they found him worthy of the ſame. And that he had good Cauſe to appeal from the ſaid Lord Preſident, and ſome of the Council there (*viz.* Whom he uſed to pleaſure him, when he would.) For that except Mr. *Juſtice* there were none, he ſaid, but whom it was his Pleaſure to have: And he all thoſe Times abſent. That it might appear plainly by their Examinations and Inquiſitions of the Country, on all and every Interrogatory, as ſhould pleaſe certain baſe Commiſſioners, without calling him firſt to anſwer the ſame; or to know what he could ſay therein. Beſides divers other Dealings, not uſed to any Biſhop of this Realm, ſince the Conqueſt, he was ſure.

“That he had referred the Relation hereof to his Son, the Bearer: And humbly prayed his Lordſhip that he might be heard. And that the ſaid Lord Preſident, and Mr. *Fabian Philips*, the Executioner, and Practiſer of the ſaid Commiſſions and Enquiries, might certify their Doings againſt him, [the ſaid Biſhop.] Whereby their Honours ſhould the better ſee and judge the Injury and Diſcredit he had by their Doings received. This was dated the 20th of *November*, 1582: And ſubſcribed,

Your good Lordſhip's to command in the Lord,

Jo. Heref.

The Preſident rigorous in Wales.

The abovesaid Lord Preſident was very rigorous in theſe Parts of the Principality of *Wales*, by Commiſſions which he got for ſqueezing Money out of the poor People, upon Pretence to ſave the Queen's Charges for the maintaining of her Council there: As by Virtue of a Commiſſion to require twenty Pounds monthly upon Recuſants for not coming to Church: And by Colour of this and other Commiſſions he preſt the Inhabitants, and the Clergy, and chiefly this Biſhop in large and arbitrary Payments. Which therefore *Whitgift* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and one, I think of the Council there, freely informed the Lord Treaſurer of in a Letter: How inconvenient thoſe Commiſſioners were; and their burthening the Queen's Subjects there, for their own Gain. See the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. Book II. Chap 2.

ANNO 1582.

Sir Henry Sidney's rigorous Government of the Principality.

But ſtill the next Year I find, the ſame Biſhop of *Hereford*'s Complaints continued againſt the Arbitrarineſs of the ſaid Lord Preſident, in reſpect of his Abuſes and Outrages offered in his Government. Of which he, being now come up, thought to have ſpoken to the Lord Treaſurer in Perſon; but being gone from his Houſe without *Temple Bar* into the Country, he acquainted him with it by a private Letter, wrote in *June*, 1583. eſpecially that Lord being deſirous to underſtand further touching the Government of that Principality: Of which the Biſhop in his ſaid Letter gave him this Account: *viz.*

" How the ſame for the four Years laſt paſt had been governed " by the Lord Preſident, and ſuch as he had for the more Part, attendant about him, that were at his Devotion and Commandment, " his Lordſhip might require the ſame of the Biſhop of *Worceſter* " [*Whitgift*] and ſome other of the moſt Worſhipful of the ſaid " Principality; whom he [the Lord Treaſurer] knew to be beſt " affected. For the Fame commonly was, that there were never " ſuch Devices to get Money, as had been lately practiſed. Which " he thought would appear, if but half the Inquiſitions were orderly made thereof, as his Lordſhip had lately untowardly made " againſt him [the Biſhop.] He added, that there was a Gentleman " of Worſhip ſaid at his [the Biſhop's] Table about the beginning of " *April* laſt, that the ſaid Lord Preſident had received within two " Years laſt paſt thirty thouſand Pounds. But what was anſwered to her Majeſty, ſaid the Biſhop, his Lordſhip [as Lord " Treaſurer] beſt knew. And that notwithſtanding, they ſaid that " the Queen's Houſe there was in Debt. Whether it were ſo much, " he doubted (as the Biſhop went on) but a principal Attorney and " one that had ſomething to do in the Fines, ſaid to a Man of the " Biſhop's, (as he told him) that none were there rewarded any longer, than they could bring in Money.

" That for his own Part, he did not intend to accuſe his Lordſhip " of any Matter, were it ever ſo evident, that touched not her Majeſty, her State, Crown or Dignity: Yet for that he was ſworn " one of the Council there, it was, he ſaid, his Part, either to her " Majeſty, or to his Lordſhip [the Treaſurer,] (who above others " took Care of the good Government of her Subjects) to intimate " ſome Occaſions to enquire further: If he ſo thought good.

The Biſhop's Requeſt to the L. Treaſurer.

This poor perſecuted Biſhop, having ſtayed in Town thus long 'till the Summer of the next Year, 1583, now upon his Departure gives his Friend, the Lord Treaſurer, the melancholy Account, how uncomfortably he was like to ſpend the Remainder of his Days in his Dioceſs by Reaſon of the hard Uſage he was like to meet with, by Means of the Preſident; in theſe Words. " And now I humbly " take my Leave of your good Lordſhip, and intend to return to " my Charge, where I am perſuaded I ſhall live in ſmall Security of " Life, Goods or Fame. Of the laſt whereof, he adds, his Lordſhip [the Preſident] and his, had already utterly ſpoiled him. " For now in the ſaid Principality among ſome of his Friends, I am " committed to the *Fleet* among others [of the Clergy] deprived. " [Meaning as it would be given out there.] And among the Law-

“ yers, the Tempters here, I muſt with ſix Biſhops make a Pur-
“ gation.

ANNO 1582.

And then in Concluſion he requeſted, “ That if his good Lord-
“ ſhip, in Conſideration of the Lord Preſident's Greatneſs, by Allies,
“ Friends, and Authority, and of his own Littleneſs by wanting
“ the Premiſſes; of his Deſire of Revenge: And Hability to perform
“ the ſame; and of his [the Biſhop's] Weakneſs the ſame to defend
“ or avoid; would be a Means to her Majeſty, that he and his
“ might be either exempted from his Lordſhip's Authority, to an-
“ ſwer in the Courts there at *Weſtminſter*, as other Biſhops out of
“ the ſaid Principality did uſe to anſwer: Or elſe to be removed to
“ ſome other Place; where he might be in ſome Safety out of his
“ Lordſhip's Reach. And by obtaining this for him, he ſhould be
“ bound with a grateful Mind to aſcribe to his Lordſhip's Goodneſs
“ the Security and Quietneſs he ſhould thereby enjoy, the few Days
“ he had to live. Which the three and twenty Years laſt paſt [du-
“ ring which Time he had been Biſhop there] he could never find
“ in the ſaid Principality.

An Account of the Biſhoprick of St. David's.

Richard Davies, Biſhop of St. *David*'s, dying in the Month of *October* the laſt Year paſt, an Account was taken of the Revenues of that Biſhoprick, by Order, as it ſeems, of the Lord Treaſurer, and ſent up this Year to him by ſome Officer or Steward of that Dioceſs. Whereby it may appear, how much Wrong that Biſhoprick received, and was diminiſhed in its Revenues, by Means of a Commiſſion of *Concealment*, granted to one *Carey*, a Groom of the Queen's Privy Chamber, his rigorous Proceedings by Virtue thereof; and how impoveriſhed it was now at that Biſhop's Death: Being reduced from Four hundred and fifty ſeven Pounds odd Money, *de claro*, (as it was given in 27. *Henry* VIII.) unto Two hundred and ſixty three Pounds. This Record, tranſcribed from the Original, is preſerved in the *Appendix*. And hereby may be gathered alſo, how much the Revenues of the Church in this Reign ſuffered by theſe Commiſſions of *Concealments*, granted now and then: And what a little Gainer the Crown was by them.

Num. XXII.

CHAP. XI.

Puritans. An Inſcription about the Queen's Arms in a Church in Bury; *abuſive of the Queen.* Wright, *Chaplain to the Lord* Rich. *His Troubles. Informations concerning Him. And his Anſwers. Papiſts: Lord* Vaux; *and Sir* Tho. Treſham. *Their Examinations. Lord* Vaux*'s Confeſſion. Sir* Richard Shelly *abroad. He offers to make Diſcoveries to the Queen. A ſafe Conduct granted to him. His Loyalty. Some Accounts of him and his Family.* Bourn *late in the Inquiſition. One* Gower, *a Fugitive comes to the* Engliſh *Ambaſſador at* Paris; *Deſires Conference with ſome Learned about Religion. Is caſt into the Biſhop of* Paris *his Priſon. Seminary Prieſts, and Maſs-Hearers brought to the Seſſions at* London. *A Box of Stamps for Popiſh Libels taken.*

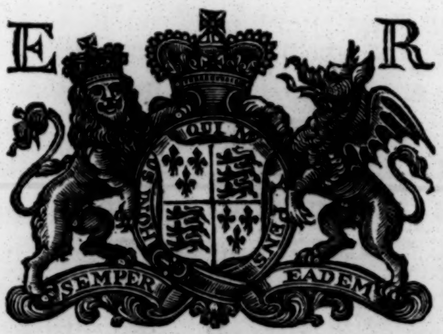
NOW to gather up ſome things concerning the Illwillers to the Church eſtabliſhed, and its Conſtitution; *viz.* Thoſe called *Puritans* and *Papiſts.*

How the Town of St. *Edmunds Bury* in *Suffolk* ſtood affected to *Puritaniſm,* hath been ſhewn ſomewhat largely before. I ſhall relate one Remark more of an Act of ſome of this Sort; which ſhewed they had no good Opinion of the Queen, for her maintaining the Church in the preſent Service, Doctrine and Rites thereof. And that appeared by certain Words ſome of them cauſed to be ſet on either Side of the Queen's Arms in the Church there, *viz.* After this Manner.

A ſpightful Inſcription on the Queen's Arms in Bury *Church.*

The Queen's Arms.

I know thy Works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would thou wert cold or hot.



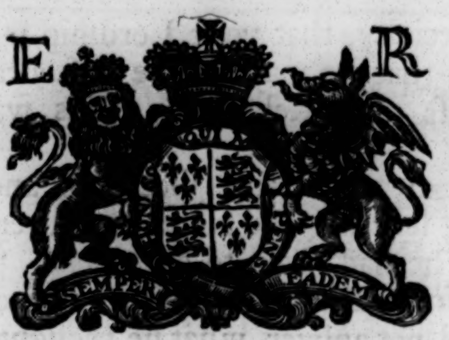
Therefore becauſe thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, it will come to paſs, I will ſpew thee out of my Mouth.

Four or five Words of theſe Verſes were painted by the Painter. And then by Advice the reſt was ſtaid. And theſe Words following put in the room, *viz.*

I know

ANNO 1582.

I know thy Works, and thy Love, and Service and Faith, And



thy Patience and thy Works; and that they are more at the laſt than at the firſt.

And then this Sentence next after: *Notwithſtanding I have a few Things againſt thee, that thou ſuffereſt the Woman* Jezebel, *which maketh herſelf a Propheteſs, to teach and to deceive my Servants; to make them commit Fornication, and to eat Meat ſacrificed unto Idols.*

Thus bold and ſeditious ſome of this Faction were. But it was ſoon reported up to Court: And the Matter reſolved to be ſtrictly examined. And on the Backſide of this Information, was writ by the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*'s own Hand, in order to the finding out the Authors, the Names of ſuch as were to be called up. *viz.* 1. *The Miniſter.* [He probably in whoſe Church this Inſcription was ſet, and who permitted it to be done.] 2. *The Bookbinder.* Whoſe Name was found to be *Tho. Gybſon*, a Bookbinder in *Bury*; who had cauſed the firſt Sentence to be put up. This Man had printed *Browne*'s Books. 3. *The Painter's Name.* What the further Diſcovery of this was, and the Concluſion, I find not.

Information thereof ſent up.

Matters charged upon Wright, *a* Puritan.

Life of Biſhop Aylmer.

I meet with one *Robert Wright*, a *Puritan* Preacher, now in the *Gatehouſe* in *Weſtminſter*. He had been Domeſtick Chaplain to the Lord *Rich*'s Houſhold at *Rochford*. Proceedings of *Elmer*, Biſhop of *London*, with him in the Commiſſion, have been ſhewn in the Life of that Biſhop. Articles were laid to his Charge, containing divers Matters relating to his Principles and Practices in thoſe Parts of *Eſſex*, where that Lord's Seat was. The Particulars whereof I ſhall now ſhew more at large from the Original Papers. The Beginning of his Troubles, was, that he had ſpoke ſome Time ago againſt keeping the Queen's Day. Which, he ſaid, was, *To make her an Idol.* Which ſhe heard of, and was very angry. Upon this he was brought before the Biſhop and the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners. Then the Biſhop charged him openly in the Conſiſtory, that he had ſlandered the Queen, and was worthy to lie ſeven Years in Priſon. And that for *Wright*'s ſaying, that the Queen's Majeſty knew, what was done in the Lord *Rich*'s Houſe [when they had their Exerciſes.] But *Wright* anſwered only Μὴ Γένοιτο.

He is brought before the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical.

Addreſſeth a Letter to the Lord Burghley *for Favour.*

His Keeper being a Man that favoured *Puritaniſm*, having ſome ſecret Word from the Secretary, let him go home into *Eſſex* to ſee his Wife lying in, and a Child he had of about twelve Weeks old. But he could not be ſo ſecret, but Dr. *Ford*, the Civilian, Advocate againſt him in Court, ſaw him going to *Tooby* in that County to his Wife's Brother, one Mr. *Butler*; and told the Biſhop: Who thereupon threatned to complain to the Queen of the Keeper. Upon this, *Wright* writeth to the Lord *Burghley*, acquainting him with it in theſe Words: "O my Lord, I moſt humbly crave your Lordſhip's Favour, that both I may be delivered from ſuch unpitiful Minds;

ANNO 1582. "Minds; and eſpecially, that your Lordſhip will ſtand good Lord "unto my Keeper, that he may not be diſcouraged from favouring "thoſe that profeſs true Religion." This was written in *May*, 1582.

But that Stateſman upon this Occaſion, and the Informations given in againſt him, ſent him the Notes of Matters laid to his Charge: And what Anſwers he had given to each, *viz.* "Being examined of "the Book of Common Prayer; whether it were good and godly: "He ſaid, he could not anſwer, what he thought of every Particular. "Becauſe he had not read the ſame. Again, What he thought of "the Rites and Ceremonies uſed publickly in the Church; he refuſed to make Anſwer thereunto. Being examined touching the "Form of ordaining Miniſters in the *Church of England*; he anſwered, that he did not know of any Form appointed for the ordaining "of Miniſters of this Church, but by Hear-ſay. Confeſſeth, that being "a Layman, he hath preached and catechized in the Houſes of the "Lord *Rich*, and Mr. *Butler* of *Tooby:* Alſo in the Houſe of the "Lord *Gray*, and Lord *St. John*'s of *Bletſo*, at ſeveral Times, "within two, three, or four Years paſt. That in Preaching he uſed to "ſay Prayers of his own deviſing: Never uſed to pray as in the Book "of Common Prayer: Never prayed for Archbiſhops and Biſhops. "That he catechized the Servants of the Lord *Rich*, and others that "had been there, at eight and nine at Night. Confeſſed, that he is "not licenced to Preach: And that he needed not any Licence, becauſe the Preaching and Catechiſing was private. He was charged "to have ſpoken againſt the Authority of Archbiſhops and Biſhops: "And to have ſaid, that they are Clogs of *Antichriſt*; and might "not be called *Lords*. This he neither denied, nor confeſſed. "That the Election of Miniſters ought to be by the Flock and "Congregation. He confeſſed, that he was choſen in this Sort in "the Houſe of the Lord *Rich*. And he ſaid in honourable Preſence, "that he was Paſtor of that Houſe, and had Cure of their Souls.

Articles of Enquiry put to him: With his Anſwers.

"Confeſſeth, that he had gone over the Seas to receive Orders: "And that he received Orders of *Villers*, and other Miniſters at "*Antwerp.*" [As *Cartwright:* And here *Travers* was ordained. This *Villers* was a *Frenchman* and Preacher. He had been in *England*, and read a Divinity Lecture; And Chaplain afterwards to the Prince of *Orange:* But an Enemy to *England*, as our Hiſtorian tells us.] But to go on with this Man's Confeſſion. "He affirmeth, that every "Miniſter is a Biſhop. The Manner of his admitting to the Miniſtry, "he doth not anſwer, being charged by his Oath. He hath uſed "one *Greenwood* to ſay Service in the Houſe of the Lord *Rich:* "Not following the Order of the Book of Common Prayer. This "*Greenwood* was a Man known to have given over the Miniſtry: "And to leave his Function for diſliking he had of the Orders preſcribed by the Book of Common Prayers.

Cambd. Eliz p. 209.

Together with theſe Articles and his Anſwers ſent to him by the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, he ſent alſo another Paper of Depoſitions againſt him: Which bare this Title:

Matters proved againſt Wright, *by Depoſition of ſworn Witneſſes, by Vertue of a Commiſſion ſent down.*

“ He called the Preachers that followed the Book of Common “ Prayer, *Dumb Dogs*. That the Miniſters were Thieves and Mur-“ therers. And that there are no lawful Miniſters in *England*.

“ That the People were drawn away from a Sermon at the Church “ at *Rochford*, by the tolling of a Bell, to a Sermon preached by “ *Wright*, in the Hall at *Rochford*.

“ Being examined by what Authority he preached; he anſwered, “ he was called by the Reformed Church.

“ He affirmed, that the Lords of the Council did know of him, “ and alſo of his Preaching.

“ That the Preachers and Miniſters called to the Lord *Rich*’s “ Houſe, were taunted and rebuked by *R*. and *Wri*. [Lord *Rich* and “ *Wright*.] Found Fault with the Laws Eccleſiaſtical, and depraved “ the Miniſtry.

“ That Preachers were openly examined and rebuked for their “ Sermons in a great Audience in the Hall of the Lord *R*. by Pro-“ curement of *Wright*.

The Witneſſes againſt him, (whoſe Names are ſet down at the Bottom) were *Nicolſon*, Rector of *South-Church: Bernard Turner*, Vicar of *Shopland: Bowden*, Rector of *Leigh: Berriman*, Clerk: *Arthur Dent*, Preacher: *Edward Barker*, Clerk, and others.

To theſe Notes ſent him by the Lord Treaſurer, he gave a long Anſwer; and uſed theſe Words, in good Aſſurance of his own Opinion: “ That if his Lordſhip would vouchſafe to read his long and “ tedious Anſwer, he muſt needs lift up his Hands, and thank the “ Father of Lights, as S. *James* ſpeaks, for his excellent and right “ noble Humanity.

Now here ſhould follow a modeſt and wary Anſwer of *Wright*, given in by him, and ſent as it ſeems to the ſame Lord; mollifying and excuſing all his Words, Aſſertions and Doings, laid to his Charge, as aboveſaid. But it being ſomewhat long, I chuſe to leave it tranſcribed in the *Appendix*. As alſo his Anſwers in Vindication of himſelf, to thoſe Depoſitions againſt him, mentioned above; and clearing himſelf as well as he could, of them.

Numb. XXIII.

Numb. XXIV.

Papiſts.

Now to caſt our Eyes upon the Malecontents and Enemies to our Church and Eſtabliſhment, I mean the *Papiſts*: To diſcover a few Things concerning ſome of them, and their Actions under this Year.

Lord Vaux, *and Sir* Thomas Treſham, *Entertainers of* Campion.

Lord Treaſurer's Memorials.

Among ſeveral who had entertained *Campion* the *Jeſuit*, executed a Year or two before, and that were privy to his treaſonous Purpoſes, the Lord *Vaux*, and Sir *Thomas Treſham*, were found, committed and fined. To examine and deal further with them, the Lord Treaſurer and Sir *Walter Mildmay* were appointed Commiſſioners from the Queen. I meet with theſe brief Memorials; and the Subſtance of what was ſpoke by them, being by the Queen’s Authority brought before the two ſaid Perſons. Lord *Vaux* firſt deſired the Queen’s Favour. Secondly, Confeſſed his Fault, in refuſing before to anſwer upon his Oath, whether to his Knowledge *Campion* was within his Houſe. Thirdly, he deſired to be ſpared from coming to Church, until he may be otherwiſe reſolved in his Conſcience. And yet he is content to be inſtructed by any that ſhall be appointed thereto. That he hath no other Houſe neat *London*, but one that he hath hired of the Lord *Mordaunt*.

Sir *Thomas Treſham* anſwereth in Subſtance to all, as the Lord *Vaux* had done. He hath no other Houſe near *London*, but one in *Tuthill-ſtreet*.

Soon after the Lord *Vaux* (upon whom a heavy Fine was laid) relenteth, whoſe Confeſſion was as followeth:

Lord Vaux's *Confeſſion.*

" Whereas I *William Vaux*, Lord *Harawden*, was called before " the Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and Sir *Walter* " *Mildmay*, Knt. Chancellor of the *Exchequer*; and in the Queen's " Majeſty's Name willed to declare, what I had to ſay by Word of " Mouth for myſelf; agreeable to my ſundry Writings of Submiſ-" ſions, ſent to the Council; I did then humbly declare, that I did " moſt heartily, and above all worldly Things, deſire to be reſtored " to her Majeſty's Favour, as a moſt obedient Subject to my Sove-" reign Lady and Queen: And ſo I did acknowledge my moſt " bounden Duty to be; and for whoſe Health I did alſo daily pray, " and would during my Life.

" Secondly, Being demanded what I thought of my Offence, for " which I was firſt committed to Priſon, I did humbly confeſs, that " I do now know, that I did grievouſly offend, that I did refuſe to " anſwer upon my Oath, do now know upon better Inſtruction, that " in that Refuſal I did grievouſly offend; and if it were to be done, " I would not ſo offend, nor will hereafter ever offend in any like " Caſe; beſeeching her Majeſty to be my gracious Lady, and to for-" give and pardon me for the ſame: And to have Compaſſion for me " for the great Fine ſet upon me for the ſaid Offence.

" Thirdly, being demanded, whether I would, as I am bound " by the Laws of the Realm, come to the Church: Being alſo ad-" moniſhed, that I ſhould not be moleſted to anſwer to Matters of " Opinion and Controverſies of Religion; but ſhould therein be dealt " withal by Inſtruction; I deſired moſt humbly to be forborn to be " compelled to come to the Church. Not for that I ſhould ſo do in " contempt of her Majeſty, or of her Laws; but that my Conſci-" ence only, and nothing elſe, as not thereto well perſuaded, did " ſtay me. And yet I did, and do offer willingly to hear any In-" ſtruction, whereby my Conſcience may be better informed and ſa-" tisfied; and will admit any Conference with any learned Perſons " to inform me herein; ſo as it ſhall appear, not to come to the " Church upon any contemptuous Meaning, but only for Offence " of my Conſcience.

" And in this Sort, as I did in Speech anſwer and declare at more " length in my moſt humble Sort to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer and " Mr. Chancellor, ſo in Teſtimony hereof I have in this Writing re-" peated the Subſtance thereof; and do confirm the ſame by my " Hand Writing.

ANNO 1582.

This was drawn up by the Hand of the Lord Treaſurer, being the Sum of what the Lord *Vaux* had verbally confeſſed, and was now to ſubſcribe, in order for Favour to be ſhewn him. There was one of this Name, *viz.* *Vaux*, Secretary to *Don John* of *Auſtria*, (but whether this Lord *Vaux*, or his Relation, I know not) who recommended *Thomas Copley*, a Fugitive, to the *French* King to be made a Baron.

Camd. Eliz. Sub ann. 1577

More Laws made by the Parliament againſt the Papiſts.

More ſtrict Laws were made by the Parliament that ſate this Year, againſt the Papiſts. Which was found neceſſary to be done, thoſe Recuſants increaſing by Means of Seminary *Prieſts* and *Jeſuits*, great Numbers of them ſecretly coming from their Colleges abroad into the Kingdom, to pervert the Queen's Subjects. And what Diſturbances were made by ſome of the Popiſh Gentry, even in the Churches in *Staffordſhire* (which abounded with Papiſts) even at the Time of Divine Service and Communion, may be ſeen in a Letter of the Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, written to the Council, ſpecified in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XIX.

Among ſuch *Romaniſts*, as lived abroad and withdrew themſelves for their Security from the Laws of the Land againſt Popery, Dr. *Shelly* was one, of the antient Family of the *Shellies* of *Michel Grove* in *Suſſex*, called Sir *Richard Shelly*, being Lord Prior of St. *John*'s of *Jeruſalem*. A Man he was of Learning: And had removed himſelf to *Malta*; where the *Engliſh* of this Order had Privilege. He was one that profeſſed all Loyalty to the Queen, and diſowned thoſe Methods that the *Jeſuits* and Prieſts acted by in Obedience to the Biſhop of *Rome*, and making Diſturbance in the Queen's Dominions. He now earneſtly deſired to return to his Native Country: And by a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, (who was his Acquaintance and Alliance) made that his Requeſt to come home; having only the Favour of a Grant of his own Religion to enjoy to himſelf, without incurring Danger for that Cauſe.

Sir Richard Shelly, *Lord Prior of* St. John's, *deſires to come home.*

And to make Diſcoveries to the Queen.

In his Letters to that Lord he deſireth to ſee the Queen, and have Leave to come over, to diſcover to her for her own Safety, ſuch Matters, as to Letters was not to be committed. And that the late Tragedies committed by Papiſts, as the Wars in *Ireland*, were by a Generation [*Jeſuits*] that he never liked. He deſired a Paſſport for him and his Folk, to come and go without any further Examination, (as upon occaſion miniſtred of juſt Jealouſy had been taken of others,) and without any manner of Communication to be held with him, ſaving of Matters of State, and for the Queen's Safety, and of his Country. This was the Subſtance of ſuch a Paſſport as he deſired. And to the ſame Import he had written to Secretary *Walſingham*, for this End, that he might confer with her Majeſty and their Honours *De Summa rerum*. His Circumſtances were now become more ſtrait, which enclined his Return into *England*, ſince, as he wrote to the foreſaid Lord plainly, “ That *Jacomo di Bardi*, a Merchant “ in *Venice*, where he reſided, had failed with his Stock; that he “ had lived upon, ever ſince he forbore the King of *Spain*'s Penſion “ and Wages. So he was now driven to ſtreights. He hoped that “ Lord would ſee that he ſhould not be brought to *Turpis egeſtas.*

ANNO 1582.

His ſecret Intelligence.

Yet again this ſame Year, the Lord Treaſurer received from *Shelly* another Letter. Where within a ſmall Piece of Paper of his own Hand (whereas moſt of the reſt was of another's Hand) he gave him Intelligence of the Danger of *England* from the *Spaniard*, and other Matters. And ſo it ſeems probable he did often before give private Information to that Lord of foreign Matters, wherein the Queen might be concerned: In theſe Words, "Albeit I truſt it be not needful to put your Lordſhip in remembrance, that you have a good Eye to the *Spaniſh* Army; which is here thought to be of XI. m [eleven thouſand] Men. Yet for that is here whiſpered (and that *Res eſt ſolliciti plena Timoris Amor*) I thought it my Duty alſo to write you thus much. And further, to beſeech you, that kiſſing the Queen's Hands with all dutiful Reverence, in my Behalf, you aſſure her Majeſty, that Father *Poſſovino*, the *Jeſuit*, now here [at *Venice*] towards *Rome*, with an Ambaſſador from *Muſcovia*, hath Commiſſion, from what other Princes of *Germany* I wot not, but certainly from the Elector of *Saxony* to the ſaid Pope, in Matters of Religion.

Is employed to the State of Venice.

He was called in *Venice Illuſtriſſimo Seignor, Il conte Conchilio* [from *Concha a Shell.*] And under that Title he inſtructed the foreſaid Lord to direct his Letters to him. Here he held a Correſpondence with that Lord and Secretary *Walſingham*. Who now employed him in a Buſineſs depending between the Queen's Merchants and the State of *Venice*. In which he took ſuch Pains, that though it proved unſucceſsful, yet the reporting of his Diligence therein to the Queen, ſhe took it in very good Part. And this Lord took this Opportunity to intercede to her for him; repreſenting him as a Loyal Subject to her; and for her Allowance of his Return home. Which *Shelly* took gratefully. For ſo he declared himſelf to that Lord in another Letter, "That he was bounden to his Lordſhip for the Teſtimony it pleaſed him to give to her of his perpetual Fidelity; which had been, he added, always accompanied with a particular and partial Affection to her Royal Perſon. But the Queen's Terms, it ſeems, were, That he ſhould turn to the Church of *England*." To which he anſwered, "That he beſeeched her Wiſdom in no wiſe, to procure or wiſh him to change his Religion; which taught him the Reverence he owed, and the Obedience that he was bound to obſerve to her Royal State. And that he made Loyalty and Obedience to Princes, to depend upon his Catholick Profeſſion.

The Profeſſion of his Fidelity.

And concerning his Loyalty to the Queen, (which this Year was called in Queſtion, the *Engliſh* Fugitives having given ſuch Reaſon by their Plots againſt her, to doubt of it) he appealed to a Letter which he had wrote divers Years before [*Anno.* 1575.] whereof he ſent the ſaid Lord Treaſurer a Copy, for the Vindication of his conſtant Affection to her Majeſty. The Intent whereof, as he ſaid, was, "That it might pleaſe his Honour to conſider, that he had been, and always was, one Man: And whatſoever his Religion had been, he had always reſpect to the Duty of Allegiance: And that he had always tendred the Queen's Safety, and that of his Country, ſo much as any of them that enjoyed moſt Wealth at home.

Always Loyal, required ſo to be by his Religion.

“ home. That he was employed by King *Henry* VIII. and King *Edward* VI. and by them eſteemed Loyal, and Faithful too: Appealing to that Lord, as knowing it.

Why he ſtaid abroad.

Further, “ He called God to witneſs, that he departed not from the Realm, with Determination to forſake the Queen's Service; no, nor then to abide and live abroad neither. But that he went to *Antwerp* to ſuit of Three Thouſand Crowns, that one *Francis*, a *Milaner*, had failed with all of his. But that it ſtopped his coming home again, and made him reſolve to retire ſome where, till Things were better ſettled, when he heard that the *Crucifix* was in *Smithfield* broken and burnt in Bonfire. And though he was encouraged to come home with remembrance of that Service done to her Majeſty in the Time of her Adverſity, whereof the King of *Spain* was his Witneſs; and of her Majeſty's gracious accepting of him at his coming out of *Flanders*, and the Kindneſs that he [the Lord *Burghley*] then and always ſhewed him; yet he feared at the Fury of the People.

His Conſcience and Patience.

Again, I find him thus avowing his Loyalty in another Letter: Making Loyalty and Obedience to Princes to depend upon his Religion. And the contrary, Diſobedience, flowed from leaving the Catholick Religion: In theſe Words: “ Whereas in place of this Conſcience and this Patience [both which he had ſhewed, being taught it by his Catholick Religion] whereſoever our Diſcipline is neglected, there follow ſtrait contrary Effects of licentious Liberty and Diſobedience, directly againſt the abſolute Authority, and inviolable Majeſty of the Prince's State; and all is applied to a Popularity: That being let looſe.

Qua data Porta ruit, & terras turbine perflat.

“ Which he talked not as a Clerk, or diſputed, as a Scholar, but ſimply reported that he had ſeen, and wiſhed to be weighed.

Though I have related ſo much of this Gentleman, I cannot but add a few more Remarks of him, to revive his Memory, which is in effect loſt, however a great Courtier he was, and employed in Matters of State, and of an antient worſhipful Family.

For his free Profeſſion of Loyalty, and Loſſes ſuſtained, he was reduced by this Time to narrow Circumſtances: And ſo he ſaid, that the Schiſm [meaning the *Reformation* of *Religion*] had driven him to *Nulloſque lares*, *inopemque Senectam*. And made him addreſs thus for Favour of the Queen.

Recommends his Deſerts to the Queen: His Faith and Honour.

“ That ſhe would once reward him, as God did *Job*, *omnia duplicia*; ſeeing ſhe had ſeen that he was a Man of ſuch Faith and Honour, as voluntarily had choſen to endure Three and twenty Years Exile and Poverty, rather than to prevaricate any way, either in the Cauſe, or of my Princeſs; and rather than to dally either with my Conſcience, or my Allegiance; which conſtantly coſt him full dear, for one reſpect in *England*, and for another in *Italy*, [where he met with Hardſhips, becauſe he would not aſſiſt or approve the Plots of other Fugitives againſt the Queen.] That in regard of his Lack, he hoped the Queen would ſupply it from

“ home. As for that he could obtain abroad, he would not buy it “ ſo dear:” Subjoining, “I will rather ſtarve, than remedy my Neceſſity with any Deſign upon me to be made, for the Dommage of “ my Prince or Country.

Informs concerning the Engliſh *Fugitives.*

In another Letter he informed the Lord Treaſurer concerning the diſloyal Fugitives of *England*, in theſe Words: “The buſy Heads of “ the *Engliſhmen*, that ſeemed to be abroad only to hinder each “ other both there, and at home: And all to diſcredit their Nation, “ and to undo, for ſo much as in them did lie, our noble natural “ Country. Upon theſe Accounts of his Principles they diſcredited him at *Rome* with the Name of a *Spy* for the dutiful Affection that he ſhewed her Majeſty.

The Queen permits Sir Richard Shelly *to come home.*

In Danger of the Inquiſition.

In ſhort, the Queen the next Year granted him Leave to come Home; and allowed him [which till now ſhe would not grant] the Liberty of his Conſcience. But the *Engliſh* Papiſts (whom he called, *The baſe buſy Generation of our Promoters*) went about to abaſe him, as a *Spy*; and to diſgrace his going home, as though it were only for fear, and that he dared not abide any longer abroad. And 'tis likely, the Queen was the more inclined to *Shelly*'s Return, for his avoiding the *Inquiſition*, which he was in great Danger of. For he was enquired after in the *Inquiſition* at *Rome*, by the Information of divers *Engliſh* Zealots, as in one of his Letters he ſignified; “That every “ Varlet might make him to be enquired for in the *Inquiſition*. “ But that the proudeſt of the Prieſts dared not adventure to accuſe “ him.” Adding, “That he would write to the Cardinal of that “ Office, who, as he ſaid had complained to him of the Perverſeneſs of our Nation, when he cauſed to be delivered Mr. *Poynes* “ and Mr. *Bouſer* [Perſons it ſeems that had been in the Inquiſition, “ whom he got delivered.] And that he would write to thoſe “ Cardinals, to beſeech them that theſe might themſelves be laid “ faſt and bear the Pain, that the accuſed ſhould byde that were not “ convicted.

the Queen ſatisfied with Shelly'*s Faithfulneſs.*

In the Correſpondence between them, the Lord Treaſurer had aſſured him, (at which he rejoiced, as he wrote) that her Majeſty had no worſe, but rather better Opinion of his Faithfulneſs and Zeal to her Royal State, than of many, being better warranted by her Licence to be abroad, than he was. “By which Words of his “ Lordſhip, he ſaid, he gathered his Lordſhip's grounded Opinion “ and Knowledge of his loyal Proceeding alway, and alſo the particular Intelligence that his Lordſhip had (very meet for a Man of “ his Calling) of our Countrymen's Behaviour, that were abroad. “ Whereby, added he, hanged not a Tale but a great Talk, to “ be had with his Lordſhip at his coming home. This was writ in *May*, 1583.

Her Letter to him

With his Paſſport the Queen granted him the Favour of a Letter, ſignifying the ſame: And declaring therein her natural Abhorrence “ of Bloodſhed, and thoſe Executions; [which about this Time “ were done in *England*] which ſhe avowed to be driven to by the “ deep Malice of her Enemies: Seeking the Way to make her odious, and to put her in Hazard of her State, as ſhe wrote.” The Queen alſo granted the like Favour to his Nephew, *Shelly*, of *Mi-*

ANNO 1582.

chel Grove, whom ſhe ſtiled *her loving Subject*; notwithſtanding their Conſcience in Religion, ſince they were true and loyal to her. This Nephew had been in thoſe Parts [in the *Inquiſition*, as it ſeems] and releaſed.

Upon this Grant of the Queen, he kiſſed her Majeſty's gracious Hands: And would make uſe of as ſoon as he had diſpatched the Matter concerning her Merchants, to get the Impoſt laid upon them taken off, hinted before.

His ſafe Conduct.

The *Safe Conduct* the Queen granted him was, to come into the Realm without Examination, or other kind of Moleſtation for his Conſcience in Religion. He took up a thouſand Crowns of Gold, for to defray the Charges of his Return home, there in *Venice*, to be paid by Exchange by his Nephew here in *England*. But I find he returned not yet into *England*. But kept his Correſpondence with the Lord Treaſurer.

Let me add a few more Memorials of this *Engliſh* Gentleman, that made ſuch a Figure abroad for his Zeal to his *Roman Catholick* Religion, and yet firm Allegiance to his Sovereign: It being my Intent in theſe Collections to retrieve, as much as I can, the Memory of eminent Perſons in theſe Times, by this Time almoſt ſunk into Oblivion.

King Henry's *Talk with him about his Father.*

He reporteth in one of his Letters, how King *Henry* VIII. ſpake once kindly to him of his Father. And that he loved him very well. But that by the Lord *Crumwel*'s Means his Father had lain under much Trouble: Saying, "That in the Lord *Crumwel*'s Time he paſt "Storms and ſuffered great Loſs." Yet it was after recompenced very liberally. The King told Sir *Richard* at *Deptford*, where Sir *Edward Rogers* carved, and he attended, concerning the great good Cheer he received at *Michel Grove* [in *Suſſex* his Father's Houſe] at Supper. The King then ſpake much of his Father's Uprightneſs in the Diſcharge of the Law, who was a Judge. And that the King forced him to be ſo, much againſt his Will. For that his Father's Father put him, being his eldeſt Son into the Inns of Court, but to learn to underſtand his own *Evidences*. And ſo he came to the Knowledge of the Law: Never thinking at firſt to practiſe, but that the King, much againſt his Will, made him both Sergeant and Judge.

Family of the Shellies, *loyal.*

He gave this further particular Account of his Family and of himſelf. "That all the Family of the *Shellies* in her Majeſty's "Reign, both Men and Women, the Queen knew to be her affectionate and aſſured Subjects, and ſuch as would rather die than do, "or conſent to any thing againſt their Duty of Allegiance. And "that for himſelf, he was a moral and religious, but no way a partial nor a factious, Catholick." And as for the other ſort of Catholicks, that were for ſowing Seditions, and changing the Government, whereof there are many where he was, he gives this Account of them.

The Malice of the Engliſh *at* Rome *againſt him.*

"The Practice of our peeviſh, perverſe Countrymen was firſt to get "him out of *Rome*; and ſince, with no leſs Envy and Malice, to "prevent the Service that he might do his Country at home: To "ſpread abroad that he was in Diſgrace with the Pope and with the "King of *Spain*; and ere long that he was or ſhould be in the *Inqui-*

“*ſition.* But that, added he, neither is, nor ever was ſo; and ſo but a Slander. For in *Rome* and *Spain* (for ſo are his Words) nothing doubting of my Religion, they do not only tolerate, but allow and like of my due and true Affection to my Prince and Country, and acknowledge me for ſuch a kind of Subject as they wiſh their own State to be peopled with. Though this is without Shew. But alleviating the Fact which *per regione di ſtato* they are found to maintain.

Great with the Pope, and King of Spain.

He was very great with the Pope and the *Spaniſh* King. “I may and dare ſpeak with theſe two Princes more confidently than any other Man not armed with the Circumſtances, that accompany my Perſon.” And concerning his Merits and Sufferings for the Safety and the Good of his Country, in oppoſing and diſcovering the deſtructive Purpoſes and Plots of the *Jeſuits* and their Party, thus he writes to the foreſaid Lord. “It is ſeldom ſeen that a Man ſhould loſe that I have loſt, not only with Patience, but without any Grudge; yea, and with continuing ſuch Carefulneſs and Forwardneſs to ſerve and ſave my Country, as though I had been hired thereto with more than hath been taken from me: Yea, and forbore Entertainment to avoid Jealouſy at home. And that he had given in, and his Lordſhip would ſee them, the *ſtout* and *ſterling* Memorials, as he termed them, in *Flanders*, in *Spain*, and in *Rome*; whereby, I trow, I have diſcovered the very Way of our Safety and Salvation, *&c.* to the End our Safety may be grounded upon the Faith of honourable Princes; that have Need, and will be glad of us; and not hang upon the Infidelity of hired Soldiers, failed Merchants, and ſeditious Commoners.

His Memorials for the Safty of his Country.

One Bourn *ſhews* Shelly *a ſeditious Book.*

I have yet one remarkable Paſſage more to relate concerning him. About the Year 1583, there came to him one *Gilbert Bourn*, a Relation perhaps of the Popiſh Biſhop of that Name, under Queen *Mary*, and like enough the Son of Sir *John Bourn*, Secretary of State to that Queen. This Gentleman, a *Romaniſt by Religion*, but of Principles more loyal than the reſt, got Acquaintance with *Shelly* in his Travels; liking his Temper, and expreſſing ſo much Diſlike of the diſloyal Carriage and Practices of many of thoſe *Roman Catholicks* of the *Engliſh* Nation, and their unnatural Dealing againſt their Sovereign and Country. This Man having got a written Book, that was ſecretly conveyed about in *Rome*, and other Parts among Catholicks, brought it to the Knowledge, and laſtly, to the Hands of Sir *Richard*. For which they hated this *Bourn*. A Book, as the ſaid Sir *Richard* ſtyled it in his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, (whom he acquainted with it) *of ſlanderous and falſe Infamy*, touching the firſt Cauſe of our Schiſm, and of the Queen's Majeſty's Mother. This muſt be *Sanders*'s Book, (that was handed about in divers Copies, before it was printed) that made the Queen's Mother to have been King *Henry* VIII's natural Daughter, and afterwards his Strumpet, and afterwards his Queen. This vile Book Sir *Richard* anſwered to the Honour of his Queen and Country. And it came ſoon to the Sight of the Pope: And was allowed both of himſelf and of all the greateſt Cardinals in *Rome*, if we may believe him.

His own Words are theſe: "For the defacing and aboliſhing " whereof, I penned a little Treatiſe, that came to the Pope's Sight, " *&c.* I ſay, for the handling and true telling of that Story. But " for my Readineſs to deal in the Matter; and my being ſo forward in the Queen's Defence, it is by our *Engliſh* Promoters " Whiſperings, ſo ſcanned, and ſo commented upon, by a baſer and " a more factious Sort of Cardinals; that it was concluded I was the " Queen's fed Man. Which Opinion being ſo falſe, as your Lordſhip knows, is yet ſo nouriſhed by their Malice, that Mr. *Bourn*, " being after impriſoned in the Inquiſition, was among other Things " touching me thereof examined ſpecially. Not that the Pope, or the " Cardinals of the Inquiſition, nor none of them all, ſaving the " *French* Cardinal of *Sens*, Biſhop *Roſs*, and Dr. *Lewis*, that were " *Stewkley*'s Counſillors, but none of the College [at *Rome*] that I " know of, had any miſliking of my Dealing. But rather indeed " ſo well like of my Faithfulneſs in Allegiance, as her Majeſty doth " moſt graciouſly bear with my Conſcience in Religion.

Bourn *in the Inquiſition.*

This *Bourn* had been kept three Years in the Inquiſition; and no Manner of Fault could be proved againſt him. Sir *Richard Shelly* got him releaſed: And withal wrote to ſome of the Cardinals, beſeeching that ſuch *Promoters* which cauſed ſo many *Engliſh* to be clapt up without any Cauſe, (unleſs mere Suſpicion) might themſelves be laid faſt, and bear the Pain that the accuſed ſhould abide, that were not convicted. And in another Letter of *Shelly*'s to the ſaid Lord, by *Bourn*, now going into *England*, telling that Lord therein, " That this his Puniſhment, however undeſerved, was all for the " beſt; to bring him home the ſooner to ſerve his own Country, " bearing ſo true a Heart to her Majeſty as he hath ſhewed: And " coming abroad but for to learn, hath well profited both in Learning and Experience. Which good Qualities he truſted, would " recommend him to his Lordſhip's Favour in all Occurrences; and " the ſooner at his [*Shelly*'s] Interceſſion.

Engliſh *clapt into the Inquiſition by Promoters.*

Bourn.

But I ſhall add no more of this Catholick loyal Gentleman at preſent: of whom other Notices may occur hereafter. There is but little of him in our publiſhed Hiſtories of theſe Times. And thereſore I have writ the more of him; only in *Hollingſhed*'s Chronicle, where the Trial of *Campion*, and other *Jeſuits* and Seminaries are ſet down at large, it is told how there was one *Cradoc* a Merchant then at *Rome*, who related, that there was one Dr. *Shelly*, the *Engliſh* Prior, who was a Knight of the *Rhodes*, for that he ſomewhat ſpake againſt Cruelties that were uſed to his native Country [as was now done in the Inquiſition] was ſomewhat miſliked of, and had almoſt been turned out of his Office.

Hollingſhed's *Chron. p.* 1325.

I meet with another *Engliſh Romaniſt*, living abroad for his Religion, or rather fled abroad for his Life, being one concerned in the Rebellion in the *North*; whoſe Name was *John Gower*, now at *Paris*. This Man comes to *Brook*, the Queen's Ambaſſador there: And ſhewed himſelf willing to become of the Reformed Religion, as profeſſed in *England*. The whole Buſineſs, and the hard Meaſure he met with by that Account, I had rather leave to be underſtood by the

J. Gower *a Fugitive minded to turn Proteſtant.*

ANNO 1582.

Comes to the Queen's Ambaſſador in Paris.

Cotton *Library. Otho D.* 4.

the Letter which the ſaid Ambaſſador writ to Secretary *Walſingham* about him, and what Diſcourſe he had with him, and the Event.

“ I have thought it convenient, Right Honourable Sir, to inform you now, how about the latter End of *May*, there came unto me one, who named himſelf *John Gower*, apparelled after the Manner of a *Jeſuit*, when they diſguiſe themſelves to paſs abroad, ſomewhat unknown. Giving me to underſtand, that he was one of them that took Arms in the *North* with the two Earls of *Weſtmerland* and *Northumberland*. The which he did then, provoked, as he ſaid, only for the Affection in his Conſcience he bare unto the Pope's Religion; and not unto any unloyal, malicious Intent towards her Majeſty. So as he then eſcaping out of the Realm had ſought ever ſince in the moſt Part of his Time by reading, for the further Knowledge of the Papiſts Religion, the which he profeſſed; ſaying, he had notwithſtanding ever abſtained from thoſe that were factious and Seminary Men. And how a Year paſt through the Means of his Friends, eſpecially my Lord Chief Juſtice *Wrey*, he had recovered her Majeſty's Pardon: Having while he continued the ſame Converſation among the Catholick Prieſts, through reading and ſtudying the Scriptures, grown to doubt of ſome Points which they held for Religion. Whereon lately he came to this Town [*Paris*] with a Letter from Dr. *Allen*, addreſſing him to Dr. *Darbiſhire* [ſometime Chaplain to Biſhop *Bonner*] and other *Jeſuits*, for a Supply of Money to carry him into *England*; and reporting to thoſe *Jeſuits*, according to their accuſtomed Order in the like Caſe, they demanded his Opinion of certain Articles; to the which, he ſaid, he anſwered ſomewhat contrary to their Expectation; rendring them doubtful of his Opinion. Whereby he at that Time failed to receive Relief at their Hands: And thereon began with himſelf to think good for to repair unto me, [the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador] beſeeching me, he may have Means to go into *England:* Whereby he may enjoy the Benefit of her Majeſty's gracious Pardon.

“ After the ſaid *Gower* had uttered this much unto him, he aſked him, What Points they were he found in reading of the Scripture, wherein he varied from thoſe of the Papiſt's Profeſſion, he ſhewed him, [the Ambaſſador] he thought not well of their having of Candles, Lights, Bells, and their Images in Churches. Then the Ambaſſador told him, he was glad the reading of the Scriptures had in any Sort benefited him. And demanding further, What he thought of the Pope's Authority, he anſwered, that he eſteemed his Power was as other Biſhops. Then he enquired what his Opinion was of the *Maſs*. He told the Ambaſſador, he thought it a high Point to anſwer reſolutely: But deſired, that through Conference and Diſputation he might grow to ſome ſettled Opinion. He thereupon further ſaid, ſince he was coming to God, and ſhewing alſo to have a Mind to be reſtored unto her Majeſty's Favour, he was right welcome to him: Exhorting him to be of good Courage; for that he would not only ſeek he ſhould have Conference with ſome well informed, and learned in the Scriptures;

tures; but he would likewiſe give him Means to paſs into *England.*

“*Gower* then declared, how he ſuſpected, thoſe *Jeſuits* would ſeek the Means in ſome Sort, to trouble him. The Ambaſſador willed him not to fear. So he parted. And reſorted to the Ambaſſador again in the Afternoon. Where, whenas he [the Ambaſſador] went with him apart into his Garden, taking with him the New Teſtament, both in *Engliſh* and *French*, and turned to the Places concerning the Lord's Supper; beginning with St. *Matthew*, until they came unto the Place of St. *John*, the ſixth Chap. where it is read, how *it was Spirit that quickeneth, the Fleſh profiteth nothing, &c.* Upon the ſhewing of which Words, he grew vehement and obſtinate. Whereupon the Ambaſſador left dealing with him concerning the Supper of the Lord. And entered into Enquiry of him his Opinion, what he thought of the Authority of the Biſhop of *Rome*. He told him, that the ſaid Biſhop had been taken, of long Time by the antient Fathers, to be the Head of the Church. Wherewith he alledged theſe Words of Scripture, *Tu es* Petrus, *& ſuper hanc petram ædificabo Eccleſiam mean.* Then he ſhewed him, that it was only to be underſtood of the Confeſſion of *Peter*'s Faith; upon the Queſtion afore aſked of all the Apoſtles. So it was no particular Grace to *Peter*, more than to the reſt. Becauſe *Chriſt* gave them all the Holy Ghoſt. Notwithſtanding the ſaid *Gower* remained appaſſionated in the Opinion of the Pope's Supremacy. Through the which the Ambaſſador added, he was moved to ſay unto him, that he varied from the ſame Speech, which he had at the firſt Meeting delivered unto him. Wherefore now finding him wavering in his Sayings, he made him to doubt of a diſſembled Meaning. So as he could not deal, he ſaid, any further with him: Until he reſolved to ſpeak more overtly; and that with Truth.

“He did then very earneſtly perſuade the Ambaſſador to have ſome learned Perſon to Diſpute with him, in the Points of Controverſy in Religion. The which the Ambaſſador ſhewed, he could not yield then unto; becauſe it appeared, he came not with a clear Mind unto him, nor reſolved in the principal Points; which concerned her Majeſty's high Authority, and his due Obedience unto his natural Prince. And in this Sort, he writes, they parted.

The Ambaſſador ſhews further in his Letter, “That he had been informed, how afterwards upon Complaint of the *Jeſuits*, this *Gower* was ſent to the Biſhop of *Paris* his Priſon; where he had been kept ſo ſecretly in that manner, as he [the Ambaſſador] could not have him ſpoken with: And lately had been removed unto the *Conſergerie*. But at length the Ambaſſador, recovering the Copy of his Examination, thought good to ſend it unto his Honour, [the Queen's Secretary] to the Intent that upon the Sight thereof, he might direct him, whether he ſhould by the way of Complaint to the King, or otherwiſe under Hand procure his Liberty: And ſo ſend him into *England*; or elſe leave the ſaid *John Gower* to himſelf: Thus attending the Secretary's Pleaſure: And that he

“ had cauſed him to be enquired for at the Priſons, but they would not be known of any *Engliſh* Man to be there. He had deferred to write any Thing of this, until he had underſtood thus much of their manner of proceeding with him. The rather, becauſe the ſaid *Gower*, and his Diſpoſition was altogether unknown to him; referring the ſame to his Honour's wiſe Conſideration. This was writ from *Paris*, *July* the 11th. 1582.

Mr. Paget's *Letter to the Secretary:* Cam. Eliz. p. 295.

The ſaid Ambaſſador, *Brook*, was addreſſed to a few Months after, by a Letter of Mr. *Paget*; the ſame, I ſuppoſe, with *Charles Paget:* Of whom our Hiſtorian makes mention, for his buſy Letters to do Service to the Queen of *Scots*, and of his being engaged in *Babington*'s Treaſon; as his Brother or Relation, the Lord *Paget*, (who fled abroad) was deeply devoted to her: And of whoſe Averſion to the Religion eſtabliſhed, ſomething hath been ſaid before. In his ſaid Letter to the Ambaſſador he made Profeſſion of much Loyalty to his Queen and Country, and, as it ſeems, an offer of ſhewing his Fidelity, by ſome Diſcoveries of the Practices of the Fugitives. But the Ambaſſador was not very ready to give Credit to him, as being not unacquainted with his Principles. At the ſame Time *Paget* ſent another Letter, which he intreated the Ambaſſador might be conveyed to Secretary *Walſingham*. Which according to his Requeſt was ſent with his own. “ Therein wiſhing he might mean ſincerely, and deal uprightly as I think your Honour [as he proceeded] ſhould be glad he ſhould do. That which I pray God he may perform: Being as willing to do for him good Offices towards your Honour, as he is ready to require the ſame; if otherwiſe he do not give all Satisfaction to her Majeſty: Referring the Conſideration of this to your Judgment. Thus I humbly take my Leave ” From *Paris* this was dated, *Octob.* the 24th. But how falſe he was, and how deeply engaged for the *Scots* Queen ſome Years after, *Babington*'s Trial will diſcover, under the Year 1586.

The Recorder his Account of Seminary Prieſts in London.

Many Popiſh Prieſts had of late flocked hither from the *Engliſh* Seminaries abroad, to pervert the Queen's Subjects from her to the Pope; and many Maſſes were ſaid in private Houſes by them: And diſloyal Principles inſtilled into the People's Minds; inſomuch, that as ſevere Laws were the laſt Year made againſt them: So now a more watchful Eye was over them: And many of theſe Prieſts and *Jeſuits* were diſcovered, taken up, and ſome executed, as our Hiſtories ſhew. And in the City of *London*, at the Seſſions held in the Month of *May*, ſome of the Maſſmongers, and ſuch as were preſent at the Maſſes, were brought out of Priſon, and examined, in order to Judgment. The Account whereof, who they were, and what was diſcovered, I take from a *Diary* of *Fleetwood*'s, the Recorder, ſent up to the Lord Treaſurer; according to his Cuſtom. The Contents whereof were, “ That he and his Officers in the City had been every Day occupied with Seminary Prieſts, Maſſmongers, Libellers, and ſuch like. And that in the firſt Week of Lent a Book was caſt abroad, commending of *Campion* and his Fellows, [executed for Treaſon] and of their Death. And that he [the Recorder] purſued the Matter ſo near, that he found the Prieſt, the Letters, the Figures, and a Number of the Books. And be-

His Diary of the Seſſions.

“ ing in the Search of one *Osborn*, a Seminary Prieſt, and profeſſed “ *Franciſcan*, being taken, was now examined.” The Deſcription of the Man, and the Confeſſion he made; and what elſe was now done with others taken at Maſs, I refer to what was related before, Chap. VIII. being all favourably diſmiſt at that Time; and not dealt withal according to the Rigour of the Law againſt the Sayers and Hearers of Maſs; and that undoubtedly by private Order of the Queen, who was merciful and declared againſt perſecuting only for Religion. This Order Secretary *Walſingham* ſent to the Recorder and the Court, then ſitting.

A Box of Popiſh Stamps for Printing taken.

At this Time the ſaid Recorder ſent to the Lord Treaſurer a Box of Popiſh Stamps, which he took in his Search. Concerning which he thus writ to him. “ I have ſent unto your Honour a Box of ſuch “ Stuff as theſe Libellers uſe for their Print. Adding, that there “ were certain *Iriſhmen*, that were Utterers of the laſt leud Book, “ writ in Vindication of *Campion*, and the other *Jeſuits*, executed “ for Treaſon.

Some Catholics of loyal Principles.

Sir Richard Shelly, *one of theſe.*

But ſome there were in theſe Times, Profeſſors of the *Romiſh* Religion, but of different Judgment, as to their Loyalty and Obedience to the Queen, as being their Sovereign; and utterly diſapproving thoſe Methods uſed againſt the Prince, and Quiet of her Realm, upon Pretence of Religion. One of theſe of more Remark was Sir *Richard Shelly*, intitled *Lord Prior of S.* Johns *of* Jeruſalem: Of whom we have more to ſay afterwards. He was a zealous Papiſt, and lived abroad for the free Exerciſe of his Religion. Who when ſome of theſe more peaceable *Roman* Catholics were impriſoned and troubled for hearing *Maſs*, had theſe Words in a private Letter to his Nephew *Shelly* of *Michael Grove*, “ Great Jealouſy and Suſpicion, of late Years “ eſpecially, given by the Heads of ſome Seminaries and unnatural “ Subjects, that are abroad, hath been Cauſe, that the faithful, and “ her Majeſties true Servants have ſuffered divers Ways. Which “ for a common Quietneſs we are bound to take in Patience; and “ to attribute this Adverſity rather to another Cauſe, than to her “ Majeſty, both of Nature and of Judgment, unfeignedly pitiful “ and compaſſionable.” He meant the *Jeſuits*, and the Purpoſe of their Miſſion hither. As he wrote to the Lord *Burghley* in a Letter near this Time, *An.* 1583. “ That the Miſery that all *Chri*“ *ſtendom* then ſuffered for, was by the ſending of theſe *Jeſuits* “ into *England*, after ſuch a Sort as it was and had been uſed.

CHAP. XII.

Anderſon *made Lord Chief Juſtice of the Common Place: The Manner thereof. An Endeavour to get the Place by Bribery. Riots in* Finſbury *by ſome of the Inns of Chancery: Indicted. The Recorder of* London *informs the Lord Treaſurer thereof. The Slaughter at* Paris Garden *on the Sabbath. The Lord Mayors Letter about it. A pretended Conſpiracy in* Ireland. Mirfin, *the Diſcoverer thereof. Falſe, proves a notorious Forgery. Earl of* Embden *to the Lord Treaſurer. Mr.* William Wentworth, *Lord Treaſurers Son in Law, dies. The Queen, and ſome Lords by Letters, condole with him. The Lord Treaſurers Daughter, the Widow of Mr.* Wentworth, *dies: The Queens Meſſage thereupon to him by her Secretary.*

Anderſon *made Lord Chief Juſtice of the Common Place: The Manner of it.*

SErjeant *Anderſon* was this Year in the Month of *May*, advanced to be Lord Chief Juſtice of the *Common Place*. The Manner and Ceremony of admitting him to that Office, I take from the Intelligence the foreſaid Recorder *Fleetwood*, ſent thereof to the Lord Treaſurer. Which was as follows: “ On *Saturday* in the Morning my Lord Chancellor did a while ſtand at “ the Chancery Bar on the Side of the Hall. And ſoon after that “ the Juſtices of the Common Place were ſet, his Lordſhip came “ to the *Common Place*, and there ſat down, and all the Serjeants “ ſtanding at the Bar. My Lord Chancellor called Serjeant *Anderſon* by Name: Declared unto him her Majeſties good Liking and “ Opinion of him, and of the Place and Dignity that her Majeſty “ had called him unto. And then my Lord Chancellor made a “ ſhort Diſcourſe, what the Duty and Office of a good Juſtice was. “ And in the End his Lordſhip called him up into the midſt of the “ Court, and then Mr. *Anderſon* kneeling, his Commiſſion was “ read. And that done, his Lordſhip took the Patent into his Hand; “ and then the Clerk of the Crown, *Powle*, did read him his Oath. “ And after, he himſelf read the Oath of *Supremacy:* and ſo kiſſed “ the Book. And my Lord Chancellor took him by the Hand, and “ placed him upon the Bench. And then Father *Benloos*, becauſe “ he was *Antient*, did put a ſhort Caſe. And then Serjeant *Fleetwood* put the next. To the Firſt my new Lord Chief Juſtice “ did himſelf only argue. But to the next that *Fleetwood* put, “ both he and the Reſidue of the Bench did argue. And I aſſure “ your good Lordſhip, [added the Recorder] he argued very learn-

“ edly; and with great Facility delivered his Mind. And this one Thing he noted in him, that he diſpatched more Orders, and anſwered more difficult Caſes in that one Forenoon, than were diſpatched in a whole Week in his Predeceſſors Time.

The Place endeavoured to be obtained by Bribery.

But ſome Body, it ſeems, there was, belonging to the Exchequer, that by large Bribery would have gotten into this Place himſelf, had not the juſt Lord Treaſurer ſtopt it. For thus did the Recorder privately hint the Report thereof to the ſaid Lord.

The Recorder to the Lord Treaſurer, of the Report.

“ My Lord, under *Benedicite*, there runneth a marvellous Speech over all *London*, that greater Sums of Money were offered (to whom I know not) than I may well write of, by one of the Exchequer. And all was for this Office [of Lord Chief Juſtice.] If it were true, the Party did not well: If it were not true, the firſt Reporters were much to blame to ſcandalize ſuch an Officer of her Majeſty. By which Means he is grown into a greater diſcredit than may be in a ſhort Time eaſily forgotten.” Adding, (to the Lord Treaſurer's Honour) “ That it was almoſt in every Mans Mouth, that his Lordſhip, after that he had underſtanding of the offering of ſuch a Maſs of Money, was the Means of keeping him from that Cuſhion. Concluding, “ Truly, my Lord, it was well done.

Riots in Finſbury, by ſome of the Inns of Chancery.

To add here a few more private and domeſtick Matters. Notwithſtanding the dreadful Judgment of God, the Plague that this Winter lay upon the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, it reſtrained not the looſer Sort here, from open and notorious Wickedneſs. One particular Paſſage, in *Chriſtmas* Holidays, or ſoon after, was this. A Number of looſe young Men of the Inns of *Chancery*, committed Riots and great Diſturbances in *Finsbury*. The Inhabitants made their Complaints; and the Blades were taken up, and brought before *Fleetwood* the Recorder and others. And after Examination, what was found of their Miſdemeanors, was ſent to the Lord Treaſurer. But the Crimes were by him found to be ſuch, that that good and circumſpect Lord, reckoning the Wickedneſs not fit ſo to paſs, eſpecially the dreadful Hand of God at preſent ſo heavy upon the City, ordered the Recorder to take ſeveral grave Juſtices of the Peace with him, and to re-examine this Diſorder. Which he did with *Seckford* of the Court of *Wards*, Mr. *Harris*, Mr. *Smith* and Mr. *Toung*, Juſtices. Who did it moſt exactly, and ſwore Witneſſes upon the ſame: And the Chief of the two Liberties there exclaiming upon theſe Youths, the Juſtices would needs have them indicted.

Indicted.

And ſo they were, “ for common Diſturbers of the Peax, for Nightwalkers, for Breakers of Glaſs Windows, Lanthorns, and ſuch like. And principally for the great Riot they had committed the Second of *January*. And one of them, named *Light*, was eſpecially indicted for Singing in the Church, upon *Childermas* Day, *Fallantida dilli*, &c. [an idle Song then uſed.] The Biſhop of *London* was preſent at his Arraignment; who confeſſed all that he was charged with. The Reſidue not arraigned then, but they were indicted. This and what follows, I tranſcribe from the Recorders Account thereof to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer. “ That the Earl of *Leiceſter*

ANNO 1582.

“had been ſued unto by the *Principals* of *New Inn*, and *Lion's Inn*, for the ſetting at Liberty of theſe young Gentlemen. He beſeeched his Lordſhip to be good unto them for his good Lord of *Leiceſters* ſake. But looking through into their Miſdemeanors, he thought the Inhabitants would cry out, if *Kniveton* and *Light* were not bound to their good Behaviour. And that if the other were ſet at Liberty, he perceived they did intend to lead a new Life. That the Bench at the Goal Delivery of *Newgate*, took Order, that *Light*, who was convicted, ſhould be bound to his good Behaviour. He did not ſee, he added, how he could well be diſcharged from that Bond.

And of theſe two Sparks the Recorder beſtowed theſe Words, “I do ſuppoſe that *Li.* and *Kniveton*, are deſcended of the Blood of *Nero* the Tyrant. I never knew of two ſuch Tyrannical Youths: The Elder not being twenty Years old.” Adding his Prayer for them: “I beſeech God to make them his Servants.

That which he further added concerning this Diſorder was, “That the Lord Chancellor by Mr. *Harris*, the Juſtice, ſent Word unto them, that they ſhould proceed at the Seſſions againſt them, for the ſatisfying of the People. And that if the *Principals* were looked unto, and eſpecially of *New Inn*, all would be well. And ſo concluding, beſeeched his good Lordſhip to be good unto the Reſidue of them. For ſurely they are moſt penitent for their Miſbehaviour. But for *Light* and *Kniveton*, he ſaw no Grace in them. And ſo humbly took his Leave of his good Lordſhip.

The Deſtruction in Paris Garden: *A Divine Judgment.*

In the *Diary* of the ſaid Recorder, of Tranſactions in the City, cuſtomarily ſent to the Lord Treaſurer, he mentioned “The Puniſhment of the Violaters of the Sabbath by God's Providence at *Paris Garden* in *Southwark*: Where were Sports on that Day for Entertainment of great Confluences of People to ſee them, mounted upon Scaffolds, which fell down. The Day after this dreadful Fall of them, Sir *Tho. Blank*, Maior ſent Notice of it to Lord *Burghley*, the Treaſurer. Whoſe Letter ran in this Tenor. “May it pleaſe your Lordſhip to be advertiſed (which I think you have already heard) of a great Miſhap at *Paris Garden*. Where, by Ruin of all the Scaffold at once yeſterday [being the Lords Day] a great Number of People are, ſome preſently ſlain, and ſome maimed and grievouſly hurt.” He addeth piouſly, “It gives great Occaſion to acknowledge the Hand of God, for ſuch Abuſe of his Sabbath Day; and moveth me in Conſcience to beſeech your Lordſhip to give Order for Redreſs of ſuch Contempt of Gods Service.” Adding, “That he had to that End, treated with ſome Juſtices of Peace of that County [of *Surrey*] who ſignified themſelves to have very good Zeal; but alledged Want of Commiſſion. Which he and they humbly referred to the Conſideration of his Honourable Wiſdom. And ſo he left to trouble his Lordſhip. At *London*, the 14th of *January*, 1582. Subſcribing

Lord Maior's Letter thereof to the Court.

Your Lordſhips humble

Tho. Blank.

A Con-

A pretended Conſpiracy againſt the Queen in Ireland.

A Conſpiracy in *Ireland* againſt the Queen was now diſcovered by one *Mirfin:* Entred into by himſelf and divers Confederates, with the Earl of *Deſmond* and *Weſtmorland, viz.* Sir *George Haſtings,* [the Earl of *Huntington*'s Brother] *Walter Haſtings, William Agard* and others. But it was reckoned, and ſo proved, an Accuſation, falſe, fooliſh, improbable and impoſſible, conſidering the Circumſtances; and diſcovered at length to be a notorious Forgery. The Paper containing the Confeſſion of the ſaid *Mirfin,* or *Murfin,* was found among the *MSS.* of the Lord Treaſurer, and therefore I ſhall ſet it down, though ſomewhat large. And is as follows:

Information thereof by Mirfin.

" *Murfin* informeth of heinous Treaſons conceived againſt her Majeſtys Perſon and Government, by Sir *George Haſtings, Walter Haſtings,* and *William Agard*; affirming them to be Confederates with the Earls of *Deſmond,* and *Weſtmorland,* and many Noblemen and Gentlemen, and others in *England,* to a very great Number. I. This Conſpiracy, he ſaith, to have been three Years paſt: " [About which Time indeed, the Pope and the King of *Spain* had prepared a great Fleet to invade and conquer *Ireland*; and aſſiſt the Rebels there.] " II. He affirmeth the Manner of executing thereof to have been agreed, that *Mirfin* ſhould have been conveyed into *Ireland,* to make *Dollers* and *Portagues,* to bear the Charges of an Army, and to make poiſoned Balls of Fire, to burn Stones, and to kill with Savour. Which he ſaith, he can do. III. That an Army ſhould have been raiſed in *Ireland,* and conveyed over into the *North* of *England* about *Durham*: And to take Caſtles; and to deliver the *Scotch* Queen. And to ſtay at *Nottingham,* till Sir *George Haſtings,* and his Confederates ſhould come to them with another Army. IV. That then theſe Armies ſhould march to *London.* Where the City ſhould be in readineſs to aſſiſt them; being raiſed by *William Webb,* late Sheriff of *London, Hugh Offley, Giles Garton, Richard Staniherſt,* and others. VI. That from thence they ſhould go to the Court, and take the Queen and her Council, and put them to Death, and ſet up the *Scottiſh* Queen, and marry her to Sir *George Haſtings,* and Crown him King. VII. That Sir *George Haſtings* uſed Conjurations with *Mirfin* and others, to know whether Sir *George* ſhould outlive his Brother, and be King. And to the ſame Intent had ſundry old Prophecies. VIII. That Sir *George Haſtings, Walter Haſtings,* and *Agard,* did ſwear to *Mirfin,* and did cauſe *Mirfin* mutually to ſwear to them, faithfully to execute, and truly to keep ſecret the Premiſſes. And for aſſurance of their Oaths did drink together Wine mingled with their own Blood. IX. He exhibiteth certain Papers, indented under his own Hand, containing his own Oath to the Effect aboveſaid: And one under the Hand, as he ſaith, of Sir *George Haſtings, Walter Haſtings,* and *Agard.* All ſealed with ſtrange Seals like Croſſes; and ſubſcribed, as he ſaith, with red Ink, made of Wine and their own Blood. X. He exhibiteth alſo a Paper, containing a Prophecy, which, as he ſaith, Sir *Geo. Haſtings* did ſhew him three Years ſince, antiently written in an old Book; containing horrible Treaſon; the Deſtruction of the Queen, the rooting out the Race of *HENRY*: Which is, *Henry, Edward,*

ANNO 1582.

“ *Mary*, *Philip*, and *Elizabeth*: The ſetting up of the Houſe of *Poles* [from a Lady of which Family he was derived:] His avauncing of the *Scottiſh* Queen, marrying her to Sir *George Haſtings*: Crowning Sir *George*; the defaming of the Queens Counſellors by ſpecial Names of Murtherers, Uſurers, Extortioners, Thieves, Epicures, Bauds, *&c.* and ſuch other ſlanderous Matter. XI. He exhibiteth alſo another Paper ſealed with a Heart, containing a Bond to him of 10,000 *l.* made by Sir *George Haſtings*. All theſe Writings are of *Mirſins* own Hand. XII. He exhibiteth alſo other Papers lately written by himſelf, containing the Diſcovery of another Treaſon, about three Years ago; conſpired to murther her Majeſty and her Council in her Court, in moſt monſtrous, horrible and incredible manner. Wherein he chargeth for Conſpirators a great Number of the Nobility, and ſome of her Majeſty's Council, and many Knights, Gentlemen and others, both in the Court and elſewhere. XIII. Sheweth, that to have found out the Bottom of the ſaid Treaſons, he purpoſed to come, near three Years paſt, to *London*, to diſcloſe the ſaid Treaſons. XIV. That Sir *George Haſtings*, and *Walter Haſtings*, and *Agard*, fearing the ſame, did ſeek his Life in *Leiceſterſhire*. For which Cauſe he came haſtily to *London*. XV. That they purſued him and ſought his Life at *London*; and ſuborned falſe Witneſſes againſt him. Whereby he was indicted and arraigned at *London* for ſlanderous Speeches againſt the Queen. XVI. That being in Priſon in the Counter, he fell acquainted with *Richard Staniherſt*, and one *Perpoint*, under pretence of teaching them Secrets in alteration of Metals. Where they being of the *Haſtings* Conſpiracy, did practiſe with him to join again with them. For Proof whereof, he ſheweth a Letter of plain Conſpiracy under their Hands, as he ſaith. XVII. Being removed to the *Kings Bench* about *March* laſt was Twelve-month, he did in *September* following, fall in Acquaintance there with one *Clement Draper*, Priſoner in the ſame Place, by means of one *Thomas Lodge*, alſo Priſoner. XVIII. That there came to him to the *Bench*, *Walter Haſtings*, and *Agard*, with tempting either to draw him again into the Conſpiracy, or to kill him. And he called them *Rebels*; and eſcaped them. XIX. That *Clement Draper*, being one of this Conſpiracy, did make Suit to have *Mirſin* to lie with him in *Drapers* Chamber. Which was in the End of *September*, 1581. And was the firſt Time of his Acquaintance with *Draper*, or his Wife. XX. That he meaning to find *Drapers* Conſpiracy, did diſcloſe the ſaid Treaſons to *Draper*; and among others, how *Webb*, *Offley* and others, being of *Drapers* Alliance, ſhould in *London*, join in the Treaſon. XXI. That *Draper* ſollicited *Mirſin*, to teach him to alter Metal into Silver and Gold. And that he told *Draper* he could ſo do: And promiſed *Draper* to teach him. XXII. That *Draper*, *Webb*, and *Clitherow*, and others of *Draper*'s Friends, practiſe with *Mirſin*, to go forward with the ſaid Treaſons. XXIII. That it was deviſed among them, that *Mirſin* ſhould go over Sea, to make Gold and Silver, and to coin Dollers and *Portugueze*. XXIV. That he uſed ſundry Shews and Conjurations with and

“ upon *Draper*; and took the Parings of *Draper*'s Nails, and the Hairs of his Beard, and other Follies, to make *Draper* truſt in him; and ſo to ſee the Bottom of *Drapers* Treaſons. XXV. That it was agreed, that *Mirſin* ſhould be conveyed over Sea, as *Draper*'s Factor: And there execute * the Treaſon of Sir *George Haſtings*, and the reſt. And that to this Conveyance, *Webb*, *Offley*, *Garton*, and others of *Draper*'s Friends were privy, and had promiſed him Shipping and Lodging. XXVI. That to this Intent *Draper* had delivered *Mirſin* 700 *l.* in Part of Payment of 2000 *l.* XXVII. That to make *Mirſin* aſſured of him, *Draper* had conveyed to *Mirſin* a Deed of Gift of all his Goods, an Aſſignment of all his Debts, and a Bond of 2000 *l.* XXVIII. That *Draper*, *Clitherow*, and *Draper*'s Wife, had ſigned with their Hands, and ſealed one Deed, and ſigned with their Hands one other Deed; declaring at large his ſaid Treaſons, and the whole Manner thereof: And naming *Webb* and the reſt, to be Conſpirators there. And for Proof thereof, he ſheweth the ſaid two Deeds, ſo ſubſcribed and ſealed by *Draper*, *Drapers* Wife and *Clitherow*, as he ſaith. XXIX. To draw him the more into the ſame Treaſon, he ſheweth alſo, that *Draper* and his Wife had given by their Deed, under their Hands and Seals to *Mirſin*, the Body of *Drapers* Wife, *&c.*” With other Articles of this *Mirſin*, ſo vile and looſe, and improbable, that I omit the mention of them.

“ There are alſo found in the Cuſtody of *Mirſin*, ſundry Blanks or Sheets of white Paper; having written in the lower Part of thoſe Blanks, the Name of *Clement Draper*, *Elizabeth Draper*, *Fra. Corkow*, *Drapers* Servant, and others: Over which were to be written whatſoever *Mirſin* would. There are found alſo the Seals wherewith the ſaid Papers of Oaths of Sir *George Haſtings*, *Walter Haſtings*, and *Agard* were ſealed. There are alſo found certain ſmall Pieces of Paper, wherein are oftentimes written as it were, Aſſays of the Names of *Clement Draper*, and others: And among the reſt, of the Lord Treaſurer, by the Name of *W. Burghley*; very like unto their own Hands. And many other Papers of Letters, Hands and Names of other Perſons; containing Matters of expreſs Treaſon.” He was charged by *Draper*, that he ſhewed to him a Grant under the Queens Hand, for Letters Patents to be made to him and *Draper*, about Regiſtring Bonds and Aſſurances. Which Grant or Warrant, he ſaid, was brought unto him by *Moukl* my Lord Treaſurer's Servant: Which cannot be without forging her Majeſtys Sign Manual, which is High Treaſon.

After this followeth a Confutation of *Mirſins* Informations. And a great deal of it himſelf confeſſed. And all that concerning the *Londoners* [*Webb*, *Clitherow*, *Draper*, &c.] were but Imaginations, and falſe, upon vain Suſpicions, drinking of Wine and Blood; and the Subſcribing Paper with Wine and Blood, he confeſſed to be falſe. The Papers were all of his own Hand Writing; and he acknowledged he forged them; as the Hands of Sir *George Haſtings*, &c. The red Ink, which he called Wine and Blood, wherewith the Papers were ſigned, were found in a Glaſs in his Chamber, and confeſſed by his Servant that he bought it lately: In ſhort, he was found a moſt

* *For his Part of the Treaſon, See Art.* XXIII.

a moſt notorious Villain, a notable Forger, and a moſt wicked Rogue. This Buſineſs came before the Council, and he was examined by certain Perſons by their Order. And they charged him with Treaſon. And *Draper*'s Wife was found a vertuous and good Woman.

The Earl of Embden *ready to ſerve the Queen. His Letter to the Treaſurer.*

The Lord Treaſurer's Anſwer.

What Paſſages of Remark I meet with concerning that great and wiſe Stateſman, the Lord *Burghley*, I frequently enter, to preſerve his Memory to grateful Poſterity. Among which a Letter may deſerve a Remembrance here, ſent to him from a *German* Prince, *viz.* the Earl of *Embden:* To ſhew both the Honour he had with Foreign Princes of the Religion, but chiefly what Favour and Regard his Royal Miſtreſs had with them abroad. This *German* had ſent his Agent, and profeſſed all readineſs to ſerve her Majeſty, and ſtill deſired ſhe might be aſſured thereof. He alſo communicated the great and happy Endeavour of a Reformation of Religion in another Part of *Germany*, namely, that of *Colein*, by *Herman*, the good Elector and Archbiſhop thereof: Beſides ſome more private Matters contained in that Counts Letters. In his Anſwer he wrote, "That he was but newly recovered of his Chronical Diſtemper, the Gout: Which he called, *his familiar Diſeaſe*, when thoſe Honourable Letters were delivered him: And that they came ſeaſonable to him, and adminiſtred Refreſhment, by ſo Illuſtrious a Heroes Remembrance of him, to reſtore his diminiſhed Strength. He proceeded, that they had various Reports of what had been done by the Archbiſhop of *Colein*. That nothing had been attempted many Years paſt, more to encreaſe the Strength of the Goſpel in *Germany*, than that Notion of the Archbiſhop, if it ſucceeded well. And he hoped, the Chriſtian Religion, profeſſed by that Proteſtant Elector of the Empire, and other Princes, would very much prevail againſt the *Roman* Antichriſt throughout all *Germany*. And whereas he deſired him [the Lord Treaſurer] ſhould recommend his Pains and Service to the Queen, he ſaid, he would do what his Excellency required. But that there was no need to recommend that to her, ſince ſhe was fully perſuaded, that his Service was always ready, whenſoever Occaſion required" In the ſame Letter he took Notice of two more private Matters. The one was concerning a Pair of fine Horſes the Count had preſented him; and the other of a great Sum of Dollers, that *Stafford*, when he was the Queens Ambaſſador in thoſe Parts, had borrowed of him; and not yet payed back.

Mr. Wentworth, *the Lord Treaſurer's Son in Law, dies.*

To this worthy Lord happened this Year a Loſs, which afflicted him much: Namely, the Death of his Son in Law, *William Wentworth*, eldeſt Son of the Lord of that Name, a Perſon of great Vertue. Who had but the Year before married his Daughter *Elizabeth*. And the Surprize of it aggravated his Grief. For coming home from the City (where the Plague now was) to *Tybalds*, his Country Seat, found him newly dead there. He was to have met with the Queen at *Hartford*; but his Son in Law being dead, he ſent to the Secretary *Walſingham* to excuſe him to the Queen. *Walſingham* incloſeth his Lordſhips Letter in one of his own, to the Vice-

ANNO 1582.

Vicechamberlain, Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, to the End he might acquaint the Queen with the Reaſon of the Treaſurers Abſence.

Secretary Walſingham *to that Lord upon this Occaſion.*

The Secretary by way of Condole addreſs'd a Letter to his Lordſhip; where ſpeaking of the Queen, wrote, " That ſhe had as juſt " Cauſe to be grieved, for the Publick, as his Lordſhip for his Part. " He added, that the taking away a Man of his Vertue and Hope in " this corrupted Age, was an Argument of God's Diſpleaſure to- " wards us:" Concluding with this Prayer, " The Lord give us " Grace to make our own Profit thereof; and ſend your Lordſhip " Patience to bear this Croſs laid upon you in that Chriſtian Courſe " that becometh you.

The Queen condoles with him.

The Queen alſo ſent Mr. *Mannours*, the Earl of *Rutland*'s Son, to the Lord Treaſurer, under great Sorrow, to comfort him from herſelf: And a Letter alſo with him from the Vicechamberlain, importing as much. Letters alſo of Condolence were ſent him from divers others of the Nobility on this ſad Providence, as the Lord Chamberlain, Earl of *Suſſex*, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*.

The Vicechamberlain's Letter to him.

Hatton, the Vicechamberlain's Letter ſignified not only the Queens Concern for him, but he likewiſe expreſs'd therein his own great Sorrow; and endeavoured by pious Arguments to mitigate that Lord's Trouble. The Letter deſerveth to be inſerted. Which was as follows: " My ſingular good Lord, her Majeſty ſtandeth ſo " much moved with your ſorrowful Letters, as ſhe findeth herſelf " much more fit to accompany you in your Griefs, than to comfort " you in this your irrecoverable Loſs. Your Lordſhip, ſo well and " holily inſtructed in Gods Fear, and ſo well exerciſed with the mu- " table Accidents of this wretched World, will call Reaſon to your " Relief, with thankfulneſs, that God the Creator of us all, hath " called this his vertuous and zealous Creature to the Participation " of his heavenly Inheritance. We ſhould lack of Duty towards " our Redeemer in reſiſting this his Will, and ſhew a kind of Envy " in lamenting this his glorious Exchange, out of a frail and ſinful " Life, to an everlaſting Manſion and Heaven of Joys.

" My very good Lord, caſt off this Woe, let it not touch your " Heart, in which the Wiſdom of this our World and State hath " found him ſent for many Years, to Gods Glory, the Realms " Safety, and your immortal Renown. Her Majeſty ſendeth your " good, noble Friend, my Lord *Mannours* to you: Who will more " largely impart her Pleaſure unto you. And ſo with my humble " Prayers to God for your long Life and comfortable Being, I moſt " humbly take my Leave, in haſt, this 8th of *Novemb.* 1582.

Your good Lordſhips

Moſt bounden poor Friend,

Chr. Hatton.

Lord Wentworth *to the Lord Treaſurer upon the ſaid Loſs.*

The Grief on his Father the Lord *Wentworths* Side, produced this Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, " Praying his Lordſhip to bear " with him, that he had not written to him before. That the Loſs

ANNO 1582.

" common to them both was ſuch, as would have ſtaid a wiſer Man " than he was. And that although many Croſſes had fallen upon " him, yet none ſo great as this. But he thanked his God, that he " had made the Burthen ſomewhat the lighter, that he had left his " Daughter with Child. Whom if it pleaſed God to bleſs them, as " his Prayer was, they both ſhould have ſome Comfort after this " Sorrow. Praying his good Lordſhip to continue that good Will " and Favour towards him, that he would have done, if his Son " had lived, until he had deſerved the contrary. And leaving his " Lordſhip, he had ſent that Bearer to declare unto him his Opinion, as concerning the Will, and other Things. Whom he " beſeeched his Lordſhip favourably to hear; and look, what his " Lordſhip ſhould do in theſe Matters, he ſhould willingly agree to. This Letter was dated from *Mile End* the 10th of *November.*

Lord Treaſurer's Daughter, Relict of Mr. Wentworth, *dies.*

But what became of this great Belly, we may ſoon conclude from the Death of the Widow, the Relict of the ſaid Mr. *Wentworth:* She died within five Months after him, *viz.* in *April* 1583. repeating a freſh Grief to the Lord Treaſurer, which cauſed his cloſe Retirement. As the Queen could not want his Advice, ſo ſhe ſent again a gracious Meſſage of Condolement to him; and withal required his Preſence by her Secretary *Walſingham*, to divert him from his Sorrow: To this import; " That as ſhe was pleaſed for a " Time to permit him to wreſtle with Nature: Not doubting, but " that Wiſdom and Religion had wrought in him ere this, that Reſolution that appertained to a Man of his Place and Calling; ſo " now ſhe thought, that if the Health of his Body might ſo permit, " he ſhould do better to occupy himſelf in dealing in publick Cauſes, " than by ſecluding himſelf from Acceſs, to give himſelf over a Prey " unto Grief. And particularly, that ſhe would be glad of his Advice in a Matter of Weight, concerning an Offer lately made unto " her by the *Scots* Queen, ſent to Court from the Earl of *Shrewſbury*, [who was her Keeper.]

The Queen's Meſſage to him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Blank, *Lord Maior of* London, *preſented to the Queen. The Recorders Speech to her. Encreaſe of Buildings in the City: The Inconvenience thereof.* Mr. Rich *in the* Fleet; *his Crime: Sues for his Liberty: His Proteſtation: His Letter from* Leigh, *to the Lord Treaſurers Secretary.* John Stubbs *(whoſe Right Hand had been cut off) his Letters of good Counſel.* Fleetwood, *Recorder of* London. *Controverſy in* Chriſts College, Cambridge, *about a Fellowſhip of King* Edwards *Foundation. A Diſpenſation for a Fellowſhip in* Peter Houſe, *complained of. Books publiſhed this Year. The* Elementary. Ἐιρηναρχία, Sive Elizabetha: *Appointed to be read in Schools. The Holy Bible: Printed in* Quarto, *with a* Catechiſm *about* Predeſtination. Golden Epiſtles.

BUT to gather up a few more Hiſtorical Notices: Which may inform us of particular Perſons.

Blank, *the Maior, preſented to the Queen.*

Blank, elected Lord Maior of the City of *London*, was on the 6th of *May*, being *Sunday*, preſented before the Queen, then being at *Richmond.* How it came to paſs that the Maior was not preſented before, (ſince the common Time of preſenting the new Maior at *Weſtminſter*, is about the Feſtival of St. *Simon* and *Jude*) I know not upon what Occaſion. The Queen graciouſly accepted of him. And the Lord Chamberlain made him Knight: And he kiſſed her Majeſty's Hand. The Recorder then made her a Speech: All tending then to the great Comfort of the Maior and all his Brethren, the Aldermen. And that chiefly the Queen ſhewing herſelf wonderfully well pleaſed in all Things: Saving, for that ſome young Gentlemen, being more bold than well Mannered, ſtood upon the Carpet of the Cloth of Eſtate, and did almoſt bear upon the Cuſhion. Inſomuch that her Highneſs found Fault with the Lord Chamberlain, and Mr. Vicechamberlain, and with the Gentlemen Uſhers, for ſuffering ſuch Diſorders.

This is the Relation the Recorder ſent to the Lord Treaſurer, of this Affair: And withal adding, that ſhe found Fault with him, (which muſt be attributed to her Modeſty) for giving more Praiſes unto her Highneſs, as particularly touching the Advancement of Religion, than, as ſhe ſaid, ſhe deſerved. But, ſaid the Recorder, "My good Lord, I ſaid nothing, but truly and juſtly, as it was "indeed. And ſo they all departed.

And now we are fallen into the City of *London*, it may not be uot of the Way to make a particular Remark of it. Which the ſaid Recorder noted in another Letter this Year to the ſaid Lord. *London* now was daily increaſing by new Buildings. By Means whereof as the Inhabitants greatly multiplied, ſo they were, for the moſt Part, of the more ordinary and poorer Sort, which among other Inconveniencies brought in this, that Cheats, and Thieves, and Pick-pockets encreaſed much. Of this the Recorder gave that Lord ſome Account, in relating what occurred in a Seſſions this Summer.

New Buildings in London. *The Encreaſe of looſe Perſons thereby.* Fleetw. *Record. Lett.*

" That among other Things here happening, there were none " worth writing of: Save this one Thing, that here are forty Brab- " bles and Pickeries done about this Town more in any one Day, " than, when I came firſt to ſerve, was done in a Month. The " Reaſon thereof is theſe Multitudes of Buildings; being ſtuffed " with poor, needy, and of the worſt Sort of People. Truly, my " ſingular good Lord, I have not Leiſure to eat my Meat, I am ſo " called upon. I am, at the leaſt, the beſt Part of an hundred " Nights in a Year abroad in Searches, *&c.*

Rich, *a Priſoner in the* Fleet; *his Supplication to the Lords.*

A Supplicatory Letter next comes to my Hands, to be mentioned, wrote to the Lords of the Council by *Richard Rich*, related to the Lord *Rich*. This Gentleman had been a Priſonner in the *Fleet* for three Years. And his Crime was, as it ſeems, for favouring *Stubbes*, (of whoſe terrible Puniſhment we heard before) and for keeping his Book in his Poſſeſſion, after the Proclamation to bring it in; being levelled againſt the Queens matching with *Monſieur*: And ſo he became obnoxious to the Law, and under the Queens Diſpleaſure. He humbly begged of the Lord Treaſurer to obtain his Liberty. " He ſpake of his reverend Fear that flowed from a moſt " loyal Heart, which both in Liberty and Reſtraint, he ever " had born to his Liege and moſt gracious Sovereign: His duti- " ful Mind ſtill kept to conform himſelf to her Highneſs's Laws; " and his ſettled Purpoſe and Endeavour, which daily reſted in him, " to advance by all Means the Religion of God, now eſtabliſhed in " her Highneſs's Dominions; which he prayed might be continued " down, and enlarged for ever. Then he ſpake of the hard Por- " tion that was then allotted him; and in what Sort, and with " whom he ſuffered: That it bred in him Aſtoniſhment. He heard " of the ſharp Threatnings which his known Enemies breathed " forth againſt him. That he ſuſtained undeſerved Reproach: " Found few Friends that would regard the Innocence of his Soul. " That he was well nigh clean diſcomforted, and ready to faint un- " der the Burthen thereof. And that it would pleaſe God to ſtir " up his Honour, in Conſideration of his long Impriſonment, im- " poveriſhed Eſtate, Charge of Wife and Children, and her Majeſty's " conceived Diſpleaſure towards him; to reſpect his great Diſtreſs, " and to become his ſpecial Patron, and by his honourable Means to " procure his Releaſe." This was writ the 14. of *April*, 1582.

Matters charged upon him.

But now to know more particularly, wherein this Gentleman had offended, behold! the Matters charged upon him by *Tho. Chambers*, his own Servant, in his Letters to the Lords, dated *Primo Martij*, 1579. In the Margin thereof is ſet by the Lord *Burghleys* own

Hand, *what was found in the Examination of the ſeveral Heads and Articles of the Accuſation:* Wherein the Lord *Rich* himſelf was touched. Take all thus exemplified from the Original:

“ Right Honourable, and my very good Lords: The Matters to “ be objected againſt Mr. *Richard Rich*, the Elder, are,

His Crimes.

“ Firſt, That he had a Book ſet forth by Mr. *Stubbs*, ſince the “ Proclamation made againſt the ſame. And that the ſame was “ ſeen in my Lords Houſe, is to be proved by Dr. *Mullins*, Arch- “ deacon of *London:* Who ſaw the ſame, and advertiſed my Lord, “ that his Place was not fit for that Book.

My Lord Rich *took it from his Nephew*, P. Pygot, *and burnt it immediately after the Proclamation.*

“ That he is a great Favourer of one *Dyke*. Who in his Sermon “ inveighed againſt Statute-Proteſtants, Injunction-Men, and ſuch as “ love to jump with the Law. The Witneſſes of theſe Words are “ a Number preſent at the hearing of the ſame.

About Chriſtmas. *In a Sermon in my Lords Gallery: My Lord* Rich *ſaith, he was not at the Sermon.*

“ That he adviſed my Lord to go to *Geneva*, when the Report of “ *Monſieur* his Coming was rife. And this is to be proved by a “ Letter about the 12. of the Queen under the Queens Majeſtys “ Hand, before granted by her Majeſty to my Lord, and one Mr. “ *Sullyard*. Which Letter my Lord cauſed me to ſearch for, and “ ſhew unto him; which he ſaid, would not ſerve the Turn: For “ that the Date thereof was expired.

My Lord denieth this utterly. But he ſaith, that he hath ſuch a Licence. And ſo in ſome Speech of late he told the Company thereof.

At laſt this Gentleman was releaſed out of Priſon, partly by Means of the Sollicitations of his Friend, Mr. *Michael Hicks*, to the Lord Treaſurer, to whom he was Secretary. And being now at *Leigh*, the Lord *Rich*'s Houſe, he ſent him a Letter, acknowledging thankfully the Favour he had received. “ Thanking him again and again “ for his Furtherance of his Releaſe; and the more for the Speed “ which he procured, in the quick Diſpatch thereof.” Mr. *Rich* takes this Occaſion to mention a former Acquaintance and Friendſhip between them, (perhaps at the Inns of Court) but diſcontinued by long and far Diſtance of Time and Place: Saying, “ That he “ [Mr. *Hicks*] had gained the Start of him in this Race of their “ Friendſhip, by the Opportunity which his Suit had offered to his “ Hand; and wherein with Love and Faithfulneſs he had approved “ himſelf towards him. But for himſelf, he was as one caſt behind “ to buckle up his feeble Strength, and endeavour himſelf to overtake, or at leaſt to follow ſo faſt as he might reach him, without “ Hope for Want of Breath, to overgo him. That yet, God willing, his Deſire ſhould ſtrive, and his Heart thirſt for Mr. *Hicks*'s “ Good. And that he ſhould in better Colours find, if his Country “ Life might happily yield him any good Fruit or Effect thereof.

Mr. Rich *ſet at Liberty.*

His Letter to Hicks, *Lord Treaſurers Secretary.*

And to ſhew the good Temper of this Gentleman, and his religious Diſpoſition, and his Counſil to a Courtier, I ſhall continue his Letter: “ In the mean Time, as my beſt Service, and Good that I “ can do you, I will, as it ſhall pleaſe God to aſſiſt me, offer ſome “ Sacrifice for you, that you may retain and encreaſe your old “ Love, and hold out to walk in the Integrity and Uprightneſs of “ your Heart in that Place, where you are called to ſerve. Where “ his Gifts that the Lord hath entruſted you withal, may glorioſly “ ſhine, and happily be employed to the Comfort and Benefit of “ many: And yet not without ſome Uſe and lawful Intereſt to your ſelf.

ANNO 1582.

“ ſelf. That when it ſhall pleaſe God to ſingle you out to another Eſtate and Condition of Life, you may depart thence with the Spoil of thoſe Riches and Vertues, which the Place and People where you are may yield you: And wholly ſhake off from your Feet that Corruption and Droſs, which without Grace and great Heed and Watchfulneſs might eaſily creep upon you; and by Degrees wax bolder to encounter with you: And at the laſt Hazard to choak or captivate that cheerful Liberty and Freedom of Heart which to retain and cheriſh is (as I know you feel and taſte) the welcomeſt Gueſt in our Life, and the ſweeteſt Perſuader, and the ſtrongeſt Comforter in Death, *&c.* And ſo in Concluſion recommended him to the good Providence of the Lord.

Stubbs's *Letter of good Counſil to the Treaſurer's Secretary.*

As we heard of Mr. *Stubbs* before, and of his Book, ſo I find him now after his Reſtraint retired to *Catton* near *Norwich.* Where he ſtill held his Correſpondence with his former Friends and Society of ingenious Men, and chiefly of ſuch as had been of *Lincoln*'s Inn. One of whom was the forementioned Mr. *Hicks*, the Lord Treaſurer's Secretary. The Contents of a Letter to him, ſhew him to have been a pious Man, and endued with a Quality of taking all Opportunities of giving good Counſil. For ſuch was the Purport of his ſaid Letter. Thus upon Occaſion of the preſent Infirmity of Mrs. *Hicks*'s Mother, a vertuous good Woman, “He wiſhed her with a ſound and ſtrong Mind, to bear the Infirmities of her diſeaſed Body: Adding, That it was not the bodily Affliction [whereof he had Experience] could vex the free Mind of a full perſuaded Chriſtian. As on the Contrary, no Soundneſs of Body could hold out againſt a diſcontented and impatient Spirit.

Another Occaſion he took of writing his good Counſil to this his Friend, was upon the Reflexion that he made upon their former looſer Converſation, when they were Students of *Lincoln*'s Inn. “I might, as he writeth, find Matter to deplore the Folly and Idleneſs of our miſpent Youth, together with ſome warm Exhortations to the redeeming of Time, paſt in Paſtime: The *Redeeming* of it, I ſay, by ſpending the reſt with more Conſcience, to our building up in Faith, and faithful Converſation, whereby we may in ſome godly Vocation glorify our God, and benefit our Brethren; and withal, live like *Adams* Children, as we are, upon our own Sweat, let us pray for one another, that we may thus live to the comforting and Joy one of another.

And ſo concluded with a little Strain of his Wit: “Commend me to my old good Friends: And let me hear ſometimes how you and they do, and how this World goeth: Whether it ſtandeth ſtill, as the old *Philoſophers* ſay; or elſe, whether it turneth about, and the Heaven ſtandeth ſtill, as the *Neoſophiſters* affirm. Farewel, and ſay ſo for me. The Lord *Jeſus* keep you ever his. *Catton* by *Norwich* the 30. of *July*, 1582.

Your own loving and aſſured, *John Stubb Sceva.*

Fleetwood, *Recorder of* London, *deſires a Releaſe.*

Fleetwood, Recorder of *London*, (of whom before) a very learned and deſerving Man, and not leſs diligent in his Office, being now quite weary of this Place, by Reaſon of the Toil and Fatigue of it, and withal diſcouraged too; earneſtly applyed himſelf to his good Friend, the Lord Treaſurer, to be releaſed, and to be made one of the Queens

Sergeants. I will give his own Caſe and Deſire, in his own Words.
“ My ſingular good Lord, *&c.* I never reſt. And when I ſerve her
“ Majeſty the beſt, then I am, for the moſt Part, the worſt ſpoken
“ of; and that many Times in the Court. I have no Man to de-
“ fend me. And as for my Lord Maior, my chief Head, I am
“ driven every Day, to back him, and his Doings. My good Lord,
“ for *Chriſts* ſake, be ſuch a Mean for me, as that with Credit I
“ may be removed by her Majeſty from this intolerable Toil. Cer-
“ tainly I ſerve in a thankleſs Soil. There is, as I learn, like to fall
“ a Room of the Queen's Sergeant. If your Lordſhip pleaſe to help
“ me to one of thoſe Rooms, aſſure your Honour that I will do
“ her Majeſty as painful Service, as ſix of them ſhall do: Help me,
“ my good Lord, in my humble Suit; and I will, God willing, ſet
“ down for your Lordſhip ſuch a Book of the Law, as your Lord-
“ ſhip will like of.” This *Eaſter* Even, 1582. *Bacon Houſe.*

Now to paſs to the State of Learning. Something occurred this Year in two Colleges in *Cambridge* about Fellowſhips, *viz. Chriſts* College and *Peter* Houſe, that gave Diſturbance.

Conteſt about King Edward's *Fellowſhip in* Chriſt's *College,* Cambridge.

Thomas Osborn had been for ſome Years Fellow of *Chriſts* College, elected to that commonly called King *Edwards* Fellowſhip, as founded by him in that College. Whereby he reckoned himſelf exempted from ſome Statutes of the College concerning the Qualifications of ſuch as were to be admitted Fellows: As that there be not more than one of the ſame County Fellows at the ſame Time; and to be bound to take Orders, or profeſs ſome Science within ſuch a Time. *Osborn* had been Fellow three Years or more, by Virtue of a Diſpenſation from the Queen, to eſtabliſh him the firmer againſt College Statutes. But now the Maſter and Fellows were minded to out him of his Fellowſhip, as unqualified, and to elect another Perſon in his Room: Urging, that the ſaid Fellowſhip was tied to the Statutes and Ordinances of that ſaid College, and that by Order of the Foundation, which ſhew the ſame. This grew into a great Debate between *Osborn* and the College, on Plea that his Fellowſhip was exempted from the ordinary College Statutes. And he appealed to the Lord *Burghley*, Lord High Chancellor of that Univerſity. By whom a Viſitation of the College was inſtituted: To enquire into the true Eſtate of this Controverſy by the Statutes, and report it accordingly unto him to decide. He appointed the ordinary Viſitors of that College; who were the Vice-Chancellor, Dr. *Howland*, and two of the ſenior Doctors. *viz. Pern* and *Bell.* And they determined the Cauſe on *Osborns* Side. There was alſo before this another Viſitation of the College about this Matter, appointed by the High Chancellor, his Vice-Chancellor, Viſitor, and two other Doctors his Aſſiſtants: Who alſo gave the Interpretation of the Statute in favour of *Osborn.*

But notwithſtanding this Determination of the Caſe, the Maſter and Fellows were reſolved to proceed to the Election of another Fellow. And their Chancellor commanded them to forbear, and to bring the Caſe up before himſelf, to judge of the Arguments on both Sides. The Minutes of which Letter follow.

Their Chancellor calls the Cauſe up before himſelf.

“ After my hearty Commendations. I have received your Letter, and I find by you, the Maſter, and certain of the Fellows of the College, touching your Proceedings, tending to the removing of Mr. *Osborn*, one of your Fellows, and to the placing of another: Thereto moved, as you write, as well by my Letters, as that the Time was expired, which the ſaid *Osborn* had claimed to enjoy his Fellowſhip by her Majeſty's Prerogative. On the other Part, I have alſo received Letters from Dr. *Howland*, my Vice-chancellor, and Dr. *Pern*, and Dr. *Bell*, two of your ſenior Doctors, by which they informed me, that notwithſtanding, that by the Acts of Maſter Dr. *Pern*, being Vice-chancellor, and two ſenior Doctors, and now in this Vice-chancellors Time, with two like ſenior Doctors, your Viſitors, the Interpretations of your Statutes, for the *Country* and *Profeſſion* of the Fellowſhip that Mr. *Osborn* hath of King *Edward*'s Foundation, was otherwiſe expounded, than you would have the ſame. And alſo where they, at the Time of this your Proceeding to chooſe another Fellow, enjoined you to ſtay the Proceeding therein. Beſides, as they inform me, my Letters were kept from them ſo long; and that on Purpoſe, as that you might have full Advantage againſt Mr. *Osborn* for not being Miniſter.

“ For theſe Informations of theſe whom I have more Cauſe to credit, than Yours, I cannot allow of this your Manner of Proceedings therein. And yet neverthele ſs, for that I will not condemn you before you be heard, I require you, the Maſter, with two of your Fellows to be with me the   Day of next Month. At which Time, I mean to call unto mine Aſſiſtance ſome Perſons of Judgment and Learning, to hear the Matter of Queſtion between you. And in the mean Time I ſtraitly command and enjoin you, the Maſter, in as ſtrait Manner as I may, being your Chancellor, and ſo your Viſitor, and as you will anſwer to the contrary at your utmoſt Peril, to continue the ſaid *Osborn* in his Place, with ſuch Privileges and Profits as belong to the ſame.

The Caſe referred to the Archbiſhop and three others.

This Conteſt between *Osborn* and the College, notwithſtanding it was brought thus far, yet continued two Years longer, before it came to a final Deciſion. Their High Chancellor thinking it ſcarcely reconcileable with Juſtice, to violate the fundamental Statutes of the College, referred at laſt the Conſideration of the whole Caſe, the Examination of Witneſſes, and the Judgment and Concluſion, to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, *Goodman*, Dean of *Weſtminſter*, and two chief learned Civilians, Dr. *Aubrey*, and Dr. *Ri. Coſin*. And now ſhall follow what the Judgment was of the Viſitors of the College, that is, the Vice-chancellor, and the two Doctors his Aſſiſtants: And then the final Decree made by the Archbiſhop, and the other three, as I take them from the Originals.

The Queſtion ſtated.

The Queſtion brought before the Viſitors was, *Utrum, qui ad illud ſodalitium electus & admiſſus, teneatur ad aliquam Sacri ordinis vel Profeſſionis rationem, in ſtatutis illius Collegii præſcriptam, ſervandum*; *ſive, &c.* “ Or whether ſuch a Fellow might lawfully, being elected and admitted as beforeſaid, enjoy the Rights and Emoluments of the Fellowſhip; although he be not entred into

ANNO 1582.

" ſacred Orders, and ſtudy any Profeſſion. Which Queſtion they thus " reſolved, and declared, "That it was lawful for the Maſter and " Fellows to chuſe a Fellow into that Place, *Nullâ Sacri Ordinis vel* " *Profeſſionis ratione habitâ*. And being admitted and elected into " the Fellowſhip, he ought not to be compelled by the Statutes of the " College to take Holy Orders; but freely may ſtudy what Profeſ- ſion he pleaſe; and enjoy all Rights and Profits of that Fellowſhip.

The final Decree made by the Archbiſhop, and the other three, in the Month of *October*, 1584. appeared by an Inſtrument ſigned by their Hands, declaring their Judgment in this Controverſy. *viz.*

Firſt, That whoſoever enjoyed King *Edwards* Fellowſhip was bound, according to the true Force of the Foundation of the ſame College, to all the Statutes, Laws, Ordinances, and Conſtitutions and Cuſtoms thereof, and to the Obſervance of them, as well as any other Fellow. The Contrary to which they ſaid ſeemed hard to them, as well becauſe it tended to declare the Foundation of the ſaid Fellowſhip, rather than any Part of the Statutes. As alſo, becauſe it was contrary to the Words of the Statute. Wherein that Caution is had, that within the Year of Admiſſion every Fellow be Ordained Prieſt. And that never at one and the ſame Time, there be two choſen to be Fellows of the ſame County. In which reſpect they think, that they [the Viſitors] had exceeded the Bounds of that Authority that was committed to them.

Secondly, Although *Tho. Osborn*, a *Northamptonſhire* Man, from which Shire another of the Fellows came, againſt the genuine Senſe of the Statutes; and the ſaid *Osborn* firſt elected, and by the Royal Diſpenſation he was diſpenſed with for three Years from his Admiſſion Fellow not to take Prieſt's Orders; and thereby brak and violated the Meaning of the Statute: Yet becauſe it was not equal that he ſhould be puniſhed for the Error of them who thought they lawfully elected him; and that it ſhould be thought as a Fraud upon him, in that he followed the Sentence of them, on whom the Interpretation of the Statute was incumbent: And ſo took their Sentence, Interpretation and Matter judged by them as true: And becauſe there was no Reaſon why the adverſe Party ſhould go ſo haſtily to a new Election, before the former Interpretation had been rightly revoked and declared null, or unjuſt: Nor equal that this ſhould be to his Prejudice: Therefore they decreed that the ſaid *Osborn* ſhould be admitted into his Fellowſhip. Yet ſo, that he ſhould within two Months at leaſt be ordained Prieſt; otherwiſe his Place to be actually void in the ſaid College. And *John Powel*, who was choſen into *Osborns* Place, was to come Fellow into the next Vacation of a Fellowſhip; that ſeeming agreeable to Equity and Juſtice. And that in the mean Time the ſaid *Powel* to be maintained in Fellows Commons, by the Maſter and Fellows, at their common Charge, and Expence. This was ſigned by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and the three others: And withal is added the Lord *Burghley*, their Chancellors own Hand: Confirming and eſtabliſhing what they had declared, as their Judgment and Determination.

A Mandamus for one to be Fellow of Peter Houſe *complained of.*

This ſame Year another Trouble aroſe to *Peter Houſe* in the ſame Univerſity, upon a Letter obtained from the Queen to that College, to receive one Sir *Ruſhbrook* to be Fellow: Such Letters coming often,

ANNO 1582.

Their Litter to Court.

ten, to the Diſcouragement of the Students there, the preferring of unfit Perſons, and laying the College under Burthens unneceſſary. This occaſioned the Maſter and Fellows to addreſs a Letter to their Patron, Lord *Burghley*, and Chancellor of that Univerſity; ſignifying, what great Inconveniences they ſhould draw upon their College, if Letters ſhould be ſo frequently obtained for Fellowſhips. “That it would cumber them with more Fellows than their poor Revenues could maintain. And ſo burthen the College: And by this Means alſo of a ſudden overthrown by unfit and unmeet Perſons to be preferred by thoſe Letters: And the antient Liberty impugned, when Statutes were ſo ordinarily diſpenſed with; Oath and Conſcience neglected; unworthy Men placed; the worthy diſcouraged; the Church and Commonwealth hindred.” For within three Years at the Queens Commandment were choſen three Fellows there, by Letters procured from their Friends.

And one but the laſt *Lent* was admitted Fellow, that would not for a conſiderable Time yet come into Profits, for want of Avoidance of a Place. And beſides, they urged, that they had divers Bible-Clark, very toward Scholars, as well for Deſerts ſufficient, as by Statute of Foundation qualified every Way, in many Degrees to be preferred before Sir *Ruſhbrook*, and that to ſpeak the Truth of him, he was not anſwerable in many Reſpects to the Commendation given of him to her Majeſty.

Another procures a Diſpenſation for a Fellowſhip in Peter Houſe, *contrary to divers Statutes.*

And a Year or two before, I find one *Richard Betts* got a Diſpenſation from the Queen to the ſame College to be admitted Fellow, though he was Maſter of Arts: Which was contrary to the Statutes. Who were to be choſen, while Batchelors, or not at all. For by an old Statute, none that is Maſter of Art may be admitted to the Society. And by another old Statute he could not be Fellow, becauſe he was born in the South Parts of *England*. The Queen diſpenſed with both Statutes.

Books.

Books muſt come under this Head of *Learning*. Some that were ſet forth this Year, were theſe as follow.

The Elementary.

The *Elementary*. As the laſt Year *Mulcaſter*, a learned and accurate Schoolmaſter in theſe Times, had ſet forth a Book called *Poſitions*; therein beginning to lay down a more exact Method of educating and bringing up of Youth: So he went on with his Method in publiſhing this Year his *Elementary*, the firſt Part. Which treated of the right writing of our *Engliſh* Tongue. And as the Former was dedicated to the Queen with high *Elogiums* of her Learning, ſo this he dedicated to her great Counſillor, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, with high Strains of Praiſe given him, as a great Patron of Learning, and of both the Univerſities: “Praying God to preſerve his Honour, as a Counſillor of moſt Truſt to a Prince of moſt Wiſdom, to beautify Nobility, to avaunce Knowledge, and to aſſiſt his Country both in true Religion and, Politick Rule.” In this his *Elementary* Inſtitution, his Purpoſe was “to handle all thoſe Things which young Children were to learn of right, and might learn of Eaſe, if their Parents would be careful a little more than ordinary. Theſe were five in Number, all infinite in Uſe, Principles in Place, *viz.* Reading, Writing, Drawing, Singing and Playing. And that in the right Courſe of beſt Education to Learning and Knowledge, all theſe,

ANNO 1582.

“ and only theſe be Elementary Principles, and moſt neceſſary to be “ dealt withal. And then he proceeded to ſhew, how they were warranted by general Authority of all the graveſt Writers, and all the beſt Commonweals. In another Chapter he gave his Opinion of the beſt Writers concerning the Choice of Wits, fit for Learning. And the Subject of another is, how his *Elementary* makes the Child capable of moſt commendable Qualities: With many other Matters of Education ingeniouſly and learnedly diſcourſed. And in the End of the Book is added, A *Peroration* to the gentle Reader: Wherein many Things are handled concerning Learning in general, concerning the Nature of the *Engliſh* and foreign Tongues, *&c.*

ELIZABETHA, *by* Ockland.

There was alſo publiſhed this Year another Book in elegant *Latin*, Heroick Verſe, by *Chriſtopher Ockland*, Schoolmaſter alſo, ſome time of the Free-School in *Southwark*, afterwards of *Cheltenham* School: intitled Ἐιρηναρχία, *ſive* ELIZABETHA. *De pacatiſſimo Angliæ ſtatu, imperante* Elizabethâ, *compendioſa Narratio. Huc accedit Illuſtriſſimorum virorum, qui aut jam mortui, fuerunt, aut hodie ſunt* Elizabethæ *Reginæ a Conſiliis perbrevis Catalogus.*

It is printed in *Octavo:* And conſiſteth of two Books, the former is intitled *Anglorum Prælia*; beginning at the Year 1327. and ending at the Year 1558. the Year of Queen *Elizabeths* Acceſs to the Throne. Where beginneth the ſecond Book, intitled ELIZABETHA: Deſcribing her Life and happy Reign unto the Year 1582. The Dedication of it was to *Mildred*, the learned Lady, and Conſort to the Lord *Burghley*, in a handſome Poem. The Title of the Dedication ran; *Ad prænobilem & in primis, eruditam fœminam, utriuſque literaturæ &* Græcæ *&* Latinæ, *peritiſſimam, Dominam* MILDREDAM, *Dynaſtæ* BURGHLÆI, *magni* Angliæ *Theſaurarij, conjugem laudatiſſimam.*

In this Book the Author gave Characters of all that Queens great Miniſters. I ſhall exemplify one of them in the *Appendix*; *viz.* The Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, and the rather he being a Man of great Figure and Worth. I cannot but hint one of the firſt hiſtorical Paſſages of the Book: Deſcribing that Queens firſt Entrance on the Government of the Kingdom: Taking Care that Religion ſhould firſt be reformed, and then the State; in theſe Verſes;

Num. XXV.

Relligio ante alias Res; Dein Reſpublica, curæ,
*Omnibus extemplo pateſit Divina * Voluntas,*
Antè latens, &c.

* i. e. Biblia Sacra.

And in the Margin are theſe Names ſet, as chief Promoters then of this pious Purpoſe: *viz. Aſſertores hujus Propoſitionis, Edm. Gryndal* Ep. *Cant.* D. *Sandys*, Ep. *Ebor. Rob. Horn.* Ep. *Wint. Jo. Scory*, Ep. *Heref. R. Cox*, Ep. *Ely*, *J. Jewel*, *Jo. Elmer*, *D. Whithed*, *E. Geſt.*

This Tract was of ſuch Eſteem, that it was printed and reprinted in Half a Years Time: And the Book poſſeſſed by Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, the Queens Vicechamberlain (and who afterwards was Lord Chancellor of *England*) hath his Name written by himſelf, both at the Beginning and End thereof; as I have ſeen it, ſhewing

ANNO 1582.

his Value thereof. Of whom the Writer gives this Character in the ſame Book.

Splendidus HATTON.
Ille Satellitii regalis Ductor, ovanti
Pectore, Mæcenas Studioſis, maximus Altor
Et fautor veræ Virtutis, munificuſque.

Appointed to be read in Schools.

I have one Thing more to add concerning this Poem; that it was ſo acceptable and approved, that the Lords of the Queen's Privy Council, ſent their Letters to the Commiſſioners for Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes, ordering the publick receiving and teaching of theſe Books in all Grammar and Free Schools within the Realm. The Contents of what the Lords writ was, "That the Subject Matter of the ſaid "Book was worthy to be read of all Men, and eſpecially in common Schools, where divers Heathen Poets were ordinarily read "and taught; from the which the Youth of the Realm did rather "receive Infection in Manners, than Attainment in Vertue. In "place of which Poets, they thought this Book fit to be read and "taught in the Grammar Schools." Then the Order followed in theſe Words: "Therefore we require you upon Sight hereof, as by "our Special Order, to write your Letters unto the Biſhops throughout this Realm; requiring them to give Commandment, that in "all the Grammar and Free Schools within their ſeveral Dioceſſes, "the ſaid Book may be in Place of ſome of the Heathen Poets, "[ſuch probably they meant, as were laſcivious and immodeſt] received and publickly read and taught by the Schoolmaſters, *&c.* This was Dated from *Greenwich*, from the Court, the 21ſt of *April*, 1582. and ſigned with all theſe Names; *Edw. Linc. Ambr. Warwick, Rob. Leiceſter, James Croft, Fra. Knollys, Chr. Hatton, Fra. Walſingham.*

And as this was directed to the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners, ſo they ſignified the ſame to the Biſhops, *May* the 7th following, under their Hands, *viz. Joh. London, Da. Lewis, Bar. Clerk, W. Lewin, Owen Hopton, W. Fleetwood, Pet. Osborn, Tho. Fanſhaw.*

A Treatiſe of Reformation.

Alſo another good Treatiſe appeared in Print, intitled, *A Treatiſe of Reformation of Religion.* Divided into ſeven Sermons, preached in *Oxford*, by *Herbert Weſtphaling*, D. D. who was a Canon of *Chriſt Church*, and after Biſhop of *Hereford.* To which were added two Sermons *of the Supper of the Lord:* The firſt preached at *Oxford*, the other at *Pauls Croſs.* Theſe Seven Sermons are about Reformation of our Church from Popery; from that Text, St. *Matth.* XXI. *And Jeſus went into the Temple, and caſt out thoſe that bought and ſold,* &c. The general Queſtion handled in theſe Sermons, follow in the Page after, *viz.* I. Whether Religion ought to be reformed, where God is not rightly ſerved. II. To whom it pertaineth to reform that which is amiſs in Religion. III. By what Rule the Reformation is to be made. The Reaſon of his publiſhing this Treatiſe, the Author gives in his Epiſtle to the Reader, dated from *Chriſts Church.* "That being moved by ſome to publiſh "what he ſpake of that Text of Scripture, he thought good to have "it in ſome readineſs, and to lay it by him for a Time. And con-

" ſidering, how buiſy the Adverſary was; and many among us re-
" mained unreformed in Religion; he could not but condeſcend to
" the Motion, which long before was made unto him. For the
" more deſirous the Enemy ſhewed himſelf to ſow Tares, the more
" carefully ought the Husbandman to ſee, that there be ſowed good
" Corn: And the more need our weak Brethren have of Help, the
" more Ways ſhould we uſe to do them good. The Sum of the
Diſcourſe is, that the Reformation of Religion muſt be made by the
Scriptures only.

The Bible printed in 4to. with a Catechiſm.

This Year was alſo printed at *London*, the Old and New Teſtament in *Quarto*, Black Letter. Where 'tis remarkable at the End of the New Teſtament is added a *Catechiſm*, that was framed by ſome Perſon unknown, (whether *Cartwright*, *Travers*, or ſome others) intitled, *Certain Queſtions and Anſwers touching the Doctrine of Predeſtination, and the Uſe of God's Word and Sacraments.* Wherein the Doctrine of *Abſolute Election* and *Reprobation* is aſſerted. And this Catechiſm joined to the Bible without any publick Licence and Authority (as it ſeems) remained in After-Editions of the Holy Scripture for divers Years. For ſo, as I have it from *Prin*, that theſe Queſtions and Anſwers were always printed at the End of the Old Teſtament, and bound up and ſold *Cum privilegio*, with the authorized Tranſlation of the Bible, till the Year 1615. Since which no Bibles of this Sort, he ſays, were printed. " Therefore, " addeth he, uſe it as a pregnant Teſtimony, a punctual Declara-" tion of the Doctrine of our Church in thoſe particular Points of " Controverſy. " But if it were ſo, it would ſurely have been put into the former Editions of the Bible in *Folio:* And would have had ſome Countenance from the Biſhops and Clergy in Convocation, or from the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. But becauſe this Catechiſm is now ſomewhat ſtrange and unknown, I have given it a Place in the *Appendix*.

Anti-Arminianiſm. *p.* 54.

Numb. XXVI.

This Year alſo was printed an *Engliſh* Tranſlation of a Book called, *The Hiſtory of the Diſcovery and Conqueſt of the* Eaſt Indies; *Enterprized by the* Portingals, *in their dangerous Navigation in the Time of King* Don John, *the Second of that Name.* Set forth in the *Portingal* Language: By *Hernan Lopes de Caſtaneda*, [who lived in theſe *Indies* many Years: His Father having been Judge there, appointed by the King.] And now tranſlated into *Engliſh* by *Nicolas Litchfield*, Gent. Imprinted at *London* 1582. The firſt Book; there being two more. The Epiſtle Dedicatory is to Sir *Francis Drake*. This *Portugal* Author was, when he wrote this Book, of the College of *Coimbro*; and as it ſeems, a *Jeſuit*.

Golden Epiſtles.

To the reſt I add a Book, called *Golden Epiſtles*, as well out of the Remainder of *Guevarras* Works, as other antient *Latin*, *French* and *Italian*. Set forth by *Geffrey Fenton*; and Dedicated to *Anne*, Counteſs of *Oxenford*, *Ann.* 1582. In the ſame Volume are added, *Familiar Epiſtles* of Sir *Anthony de Guavarra*, Preacher, Chronicler and Counſellor to the Emperor *Charles* V. Tranſlated out of the *Spaniſh* Tongue by *Edward Hellows*, Groom of the Leaſh. Imprinted and corrected *Ann.* 1584. Dedicated to Sir *Henry Lee*, Knt. Maſter of the Leaſh.

ANNO
1583.

CHAP. XIV.

The Queens Declaration upon ſending away the Spaniſh *Ambaſſador. Motion for Peace between the Queen, and King of* Spain. *An* Italian *propounded for a Mediator. The Queen againſt it. And why. She protects thoſe of the* Netherlands: *Relieves* Geneva. *Complaints of* Mary *Queen of* Scots: *With Anſwers to them. The Queens expoſtulatory Letter to King* James. *The Exceſs of* Retainers *checked. The Queens kind Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, under ſome Diſcontent.*

Dangerous Conſpiracies againſt the Queen and Kingdom.

The Spaniſh *Ambaſſador concerned in it.*

THE State of the Kingdom, and the Queens own Life and Safety, were now in imminent Hazzard, by means of ſecret Conſpiracies entred into, and carried on at Home, by many of her Popiſhly affected Subjects, and by the King of *Spain*, and his *Engliſh* Penſioners abroad: The detaining the Queen of *Scots*, being the great Pretence: *Mendoza*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador here, zealouſly carried on the Deſign, deeply concerned herein. So that upon ſome Diſcovery hereof, he was called before the Queens Council, to be examined of his Doings; and ſuch Matters evidently proved againſt him, that the Queen charged him to be gone out of her Dominions. And ſo to *Paris* he privately conveyed himſelf. And then, with many *Engliſh* Fugitives there, went on more ſecurely with his Buſineſs. But this being ſuch an unuſual way of treating a Princes Ambaſſador, without ſtaying for his Princes recalling him home, the Queen thought fit, to have a Declaration drawn up at large, vindicating herſelf to the King of *Spain*, and all other Princes, in ſending away that Ambaſſador in that Manner. For ſhe knew the proud King *Philip* would reſent it.

The Queen's Declaration upon ſending him away.

[Numb. XXVI.]

This notable *Declaration*, I find not in any of our Hiſtorians; and giving ſuch Light in our Hiſtory, in reſpect of the Plot aboveſaid, I think worthy to be preſerved: Which I found among the Papers of the Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer, and believe it to be of his own drawing up. See it exemplified in the *Appendix*. The Title was, *Declaratio eorum quæ circa* Mendozæ *Catholici Regis Legati miſſionem acciderunt; unà cum Reſponſo ad ejuſdem objecta contra ſuam Majeſtatem.* It was endorſed on the Backſide thus: *A Declaration of ſundry Unkindneſſes, offered her Majeſty by the King of* Spain. *Jan.* 15. 1583.

Conſultation of Peace between the Queen and Spain.

There were ſome Overtures now in Hand of entring into Communication concerning Terms of Peace between the Queen, and *Philip* King of *Spain*; and ſome fit Mediator was conſulted of, for that Purpoſe. Some propounded an *Italian* Prince; who ſeemed to be the Prince of *Parma*. But him the Queen would not allow of, as no proper Perſon in this Affair, both in reſpect of the contrariety of Religion, and of opening the State of the more ſecret Concerns of the Realm, to ſuch a Foreigner as an *Italian.* There is a Paper of State (which I have before me) containing, *A Diſcourſe againſt admitting an* Italian *to be a Mediator of Peace* between the ſaid Queen and King. It is all drawn up in the Name of the Queen, as though it were for Inſtruction to her Ambaſſador, or Agent. And it ran to this Tenor:

Deliberation about compounding Matters with that Prince.

“ That to deal with a Foreign Prince for the compounding of Matters with *Spain*; and making an *Italian* Inſtrument, conſidering what hath paſt heretofore, with alſo our preſent Eſtate, is one of the moſt diſhonourable Courſes, that may be taken for theſe Cauſes underwritten:

“ Firſt, an *Italian*, being not ſubject to the Crown of this Realm, is no ways bound, neither by Love nor Fear, to keep ſecret Matters, committed to his Charge to deal in. And they being as they are, in a Manner all vain glorious, and chiefly ſuch as are to take ſuch Matters in Hand, will make known by divers Means to their Kindred, and to their ſpecial Friends in their Country, the important Affairs, committed to their Charge; procuring the Glory thereof, firſt under Hand, to themſelves, whether they proſper therein, or no. But in Caſe they proſper, and bring theſe Matters to paſs, then ſhortly after will Books and Pamphlets come forth of the Ways and Means that were uſed. But ſuch an Inſtrument or Inſtruments, as were in thoſe Affairs, implied greatly to the Diſhonour of ſuch as took that Courſe.

The Queen againſt an Italian, *to be a Mediator of Peace between them.*

“ And by making a Foreigner a Second Inſtrument, being of Religion different from us, it is doubtful of the ſincere Dealing of ſuch a Prince, that rather willeth peradventure our Ruin, than our Honour and Proſperity, how good Shew ſoever he maketh, in taking the ſame Matter in Hand, and for the keeping ſecret of the ſaid Affair committed to the ſame ſecond Mean or Inſtrument, it is impoſſible. For there is no Prince, that will deal in any Foreign Matter of Importance, and chiefly of this Nature, but that he will communicate the ſame with his Council, to conſider of the Ways and Means, how, and with what Honour he may take ſuch an Affair in Hand. Which when he hath concluded, then he muſt deal for the bringing the ſame to paſs by a third Inſtrument. Which muſt be an Ambaſſador, ſpecially inſtructed and ſent into *Spain* for the Purpoſe aforeſaid. Who being there arrived, he ſhall not ſo ſoon have dealt with the King in thoſe Affairs, but that the Ways and Means that have been uſed for the compounding of thoſe Matters, will enter into the Ears of all Ambaſſadors there Reſident; in ſuch Sort as the News thereof, will be ſpread both far and near, greatly to our Shame and Diſhonour. For thereby will be diſcovered our Weakneſs every ways. Whereof it is likely to come to paſs, that the moſt Princes and States of *Chriſtendom*, as well our Friends, as our Foes, that have ſeen, how bravely and reſolutely we have entred, and taken theſe Wars in Hand; and thereby have entred into an Opinion of the ſtrong Situation of our Country, as alſo of our Riches and

“ Strength both by Sea and Land, to annoy ſuch as will become “ our Enemies, will bring them into a contrary Opinion, either of “ lack of Power, Sufficiency and Judgment, every Ways to proceed “ and maintain thoſe Wars, which we have ſo bravely taken in “ Hand: Or elſe, that we are afraid without Cauſe; or not at “ Unity among ourſelves.

“ Which Opinion, if it ſhould be conceived, among our Friends, “ will bring Us to a great Diſabling and Abaſing in their Account; “ and may cauſe them of Friends, as they were before, to become “ our diſdainful Enemies; when they ſhall perceive no Certainty, “ nor aſſured Strength in Us, to defend their weak Eſtates, nor our “ own Honour. And peradventure alſo the ſame Conceit may cauſe “ with the King of *Spain*, and his Aſſociates, a contrary Event; “ that inſtead of Peace, which we do expect by a Courſe before “ taken in Hand, may be an Occaſion to make ſuch Princes, to aſſociate, unite and combine themſelves, to make upon Us ſuch a “ War, to tear Us as hath not been heretofore intended.

“ But whatſoever ſhall come to paſs by this foreſaid Manner of “ Proceeding, I come to conclude, that no Honour nor Surety can “ any ways grow or redound unto Us, or thoſe that we protect, “ [perhaps thoſe of the *Low Countries*] but moſt aſſured Danger to “ our Friends, and our Eſtate: For admit, that all Matters, as well “ for ſuch as we protect, as for ourſelves, were compounded in a “ Manner to our deſire; yet neither can they, nor we, ſtand in “ longer Surety, than until that the ſaid King of *Spain*, and his Aſſociates ſhall not be able to annoy Us. For it is not to be believed, “ that a Prince of ſo great Reſolution as he is, and that doth take “ Matters ſo at the Heart, as his Nature is to do, will any longer “ forbear the taking of any Advantage either of them or Us, than “ until Time ſhall preſent, unto him or them, Opportunity to our “ Danger or Miſchief.

This wiſe and wary Conſultation ſhews the Ground of the Queens Inclination to aſſiſt and protect the *Netherlands*, well knowing what an Enemy King *Philip* was to her.

She ſupplies Geneva *with Money.*

And to this alſo muſt be attributed the Care of her own Concerns, as well as the Aſſiſtance ſhe gave this Year (both before and after) to the City of *Geneva*, with ſeaſonable Supplies in their preſent Danger. That City was now in great Diſtreſs by the Duke of *Savoy*. Who out of pretended Zeal againſt thoſe Profeſſors of the Goſpel (termed, by the *Roman* Church, *Hereticks*) but chiefly to enlarge his own Dominions, was come with his Arms againſt them. Whereupon the City was driven to crave Aid and Contribution from the Queen and her Subjects, that profeſſed the ſame Reformed Religion. And for the better forwarding their Buſineſs, as they had ſent their Letters the laſt Year to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, their Friend, to intercede for them to the Queen, ſo now they addreſs another to him, conſidering their imminent Danger. It was writ in *French* from the *Syndics* and *Council* of *Geneva*. And imported;

Their Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.

“ That by the Lord *Maillet*, their beloved Counſillor (who was the “ laſt Year in *England* about their Affairs) they underſtood the Affection that Lord [*viz.* Lord Treaſurer] had for them, and how

" he had been the principal Inſtrument with the Queen of her Benefaction and Liberality towards them. That they would never " omit to acknowledge their Obligation towards him, and would " preſerve and perpetuate the Memorial thereof towards them. " Which ſhould always be a juſt Occaſion for them to thank God, " who had raiſed up ſuch a *Seigneur de Merite*, [*Lord of Merit*] as " he, to favour their Eſtate on ſuch a needful Occaſion. And that " hence they gathered Hope that God would continue to them an " Aſſurance of him, according to the Beginning which he had ſhewn " them, and would not ſuffer ſuch to perſecute them for the Cauſe " of the Religion, which they made Profeſſion of, nor to triumph " over them; and would take his own Cauſe into his own Hand, " and would make his Strength and Power appear in their " Weakneſs.

" But that it had pleaſed God at that preſent Time to exerciſe " them with divers Threatnings of their Enemies: And had now " brought their ill Wills to a Head, which for a long Time they " had conceived againſt them: That they had brought Garriſons " near their Town, and entertained Soldiers near about them; and " that they had hindred them from bringing Corn for their Proviſion. " That there was a Report of the paſſing, of 12000 *Spaniards* through " *Savoy* and *Burgundy:* Which they feared were coming againſt " them. Whereby they of *Geneva* could enjoy but little Reſt, but " that they ſet againſt theſe humane Conſiderations, that the Power " of God (by the which they ſubſiſted,) would guard and preſerve " them for his Glory.

" And as for humane Means, whereof it pleaſeth God to ſerve " himſelf for the Deliverance of his, they aſſured themſelves, that " he and other Lords, that had ſhewed themſelves affectionate towards them, would continue more and more to favour them, according to ſuch Occaſions as ſhould preſent. But the whole Letter muſt be read in the *Appendix:* Where I have exemplified it " from the Original. It was dated in *December*; and ſubſcribed, " *Les Syndiques & Conſeil de Geneve, Vos bien voluntaires & affectionez amis.*

Num. XXVII.

It doth not plainly appear what Relief or Money was ſent them of *Geneva* the laſt Year, or before. But I find on the Backſide of this Letter, by the Lord Treaſurer's own Hand, theſe Sums mentioned, ſent as it ſeems, at this Time.

Monies ſent to Geneva.

4000 Nobles	300 Nobles.	100 £.
4000 Nobles	300 Nobles.	100 £.
	200 Nobles.	66 £. 13 ſh.

And as we have already mentioned ſome of the Letters and Meſſages of the Syndics and Council of *Geneva* to this Kingdom; and namely, to the Lord Treaſurer, in their Neceſſity ready to be ſwallowed up by Popiſh Zeal; and the worldly Ambition together of the Duke of *Savoy*; *viz.* in the Years of 1582. and 1583: So other Letters I meet with addreſſed hither afterwards for Favour and Aſſiſtance in the Years 1586. 1589. and 1590. with their Seal; which

Divers Meſſages to England from thence.

ANNO 1583.

was large; being the half Spread Eagle, the Head crowned, looking towards the Left: impaling a Key erected. The Shield lying upon a Roundlet. Round which is written, *Poſt tenebras Lux.*

Scots *Queens Complaint againſt Queen* Elizabeth. *And her Ambaſſadors Anſwers.*

MARY Queen of *Scots* (a Priſoner in *England*) had made divers Complaints of her hard Uſage by the Queen: Which were drawn up. And it lay now on her Majeſty to vindicate herſelf; and to retort them back upon that Queen. Which was *Randolph*, Queen *Elizabeth*'s Ambaſſadors, Part to do. Which becauſe it will illuſtrate this Part of our Hiſtory, I ſhall ſet down both the Complaints and Anſwers, as I find them in one of the *Cotton MSS.* with this Title, *Extracts of the Queen of* Scots *Griefs; with the Anſwers made to the ſame, Nov.* 2. 1582. And *Apr.* 6. 1583.

Cott. Librar. Julius, *F.* 6.

Object. Her Majeſties Miniſters have practiſed Troubles in her Realm and ſtirred up her Subjects to Rebellion. Proved by the Depoſition of Witneſſes; confronted with one Nameleſs. Whom ſhe charged to have been a principal Actor therein.

Reſponſ. Randolph, who ſeems to be the *nameleſs Man*, whom ſhe meaneth, being charged by *Johnſon*, (infamous and a condemned Man) to have delivered unto him, the ſaid *Johnſon*, certain Money for the Lord of *Pataro*, did clear himſelf ſufficiently of that Imputation: And in reſpect of the good Offices done by him, was after required by herſelf to be contented therein.

The intended Alteration of Government. The ſudden Death at *Deep* of the *Scotch* Nobleman that miſliked of that Place. Her breeding of Diviſions among her Nobility. Her perſecuting of *Murray*. Her ſetting *Huntley* on Work to overthrow the State of Religion. Her Practices with *David* againſt the State. The Murther of her Huſband, and other Diſorders were the Cauſe of her own.... Troubles.

Object. Her Rebels ſupported and relieved by her Majeſty.

Object. Frogmorton by her Majeſty's Direction, perſuaded her to ſubſcribe the *Demiſſion* [of the Crown to her Son.]

Reſponſ. Throgmorton had no ſuch Direction. Yet could not his Advice be Prejudicial unto her; conſidering, that in Law an Act done by ſuch as were in Durance is of no Validity. And beſides her Subjects being.... from her, ſhe was in Danger if ſhe had not conſented to the *Demiſſion.*

Object. A Diamond received by her, as a Token from her Majeſty: With a Promiſe that her Majeſty would aſſiſt her againſt her Rebels. Upon which Aſſurance ſhe adventured after her Defeat, to caſt herſelf into the Armes of her Majeſties Protection.

Reſponſ. That friendly Promiſe was made before her Huſbands Death; when ſhe carried herſelf well. Promiſes, and the Bond of Friendſhip are ſubject to different Interpretation, and grounded upon Vertue. By her Miſcarriage of herſelf afterward, this ground failed. And therefore her Majeſty was conſequently no more tyed to ſuch Promiſe.

Object. But in the Way ſhe was ſuddenly ſtayed and committed. If her Majeſty charge her with the Matter of her intended Match with the Duke of *Norfolk*, ſhe anſwered, that the ſame was allowed and ſubſcribed by the principal Counſillers of this Realm.

Reſponſ. The Treaty of that Marriage tended ſecretly to her Majeſties Overthrow. Whoſe Counſillors were abuſed with falſe Services and Pretences. The Rebellion in the North, *&c.* do ſufficiently prove the ſame.

Object. She mought not be ſuffered to ſend to her Son, while ſhe was at Liberty.

Reſponſ. The King at that Time denyed the Acceſs of any Miniſter of her Majeſty into his Realm. And delayed four Months the anſwering of her Letters written to him about the intended Seinge.

Object. She hath made many Overtures, and large Offers, for the eſtabliſhing of ſome Amity between the two Crowns. The Purpoſe thereof then did . . . the laſt Winter. But ſhe hath ſince been . . . . to ſend them before. [The Senſe imperfect.]

Offereth to ſtand to her Juſtification. Her Right to this Crown is the Cauſe of the Practices of her Enemies againſt her. Chargeth my Lord of *Huntingdon* with practiſing in *Scotland.* Her Majeſty ſending ſuddenly to him without her Privity. Her Majeſty ſendeth ſuddenly to her Son without her Privity.

Reſponſ. She had without her Majeſties Privity, contrary to her Promiſe made to *Beal*, given her Aſſent to the Aſſociation between her and her Son. And it was found by Experience, that ſhe had always practiſed the diſquieting of the Realm.

Object. Chargeth Mr. *Bowes* with practiſing in *Scotland.* An Army ſent to the Borders, to impeach the Execution of *Morton.* Required, that none of her Majeſties Miniſters intermeddle any longer in the Affairs of *Scotland* without free Liberty, or the Aſſiſtance of ſome of the *French* Miniſters.

Reſponſ. Her Majeſty hath found in her a Diſpoſition to trouble both *England* and *Scotland.*

Object. Complaineth of the hard Uſage that ſhe receiveth.

Reſponſ. Her Practices againſt the State, and abuſing of her Majeſties former Favours extended towards her, do deſerve worſe Uſage.

Object. Whereas ſhe hath been charged by my Lord of *Shrewsbury*, to have dealt with her Son, for releaſing unto her of her Title to the Crown, without her Majeſties Privity; contrary to her Promiſe made unto *Beal*; ſhe anſwereth, that ſhe made unto *Beal* certain Overtures, tyed unto Conditions. Which Conditions being not performed, ſhe was again at Liberty.

Object. Denyeth, that ever ſhe was content to follow her Majeſties Advice; being uncertain what the ſame would be: Or that her Miniſters ſhould be at the Direction of her Majeſty.

Object. Her Enemies here hold Intelligence with the Rebels in *Scotland*, for the Overthrow of her Son.

Reſponſ. Her Sons own Letters and Speeches, delivered to the *French* Kings Miniſter, and her Miniſters, do witneſs the Contrary. Her Majeſty hath ſettled his Eſtate, and protected him from apparent Ruine and Overthrow: Which he was likely to have run into, by following the violent Courſe, whereunto he was led.

Divers of theſe Complaints, ſo ſharply objected by the *Scots* Queen, may be read in her own Letter, (the Contents briefly here abſtracted) written to Queen *Elizabeth*: Which is extant in her

ANNO 1583.

Hiſtory by *Camden.* And the Anſwers are ſome brief Heads in Vindication of the Queen to each Objection, uſed by *Randolph*, her Ambaſſador.

Camd. Eliz. p. 276. ſub An. 1582.

In the midſt of theſe her Troubles and Afflictions, a Conſolatory Letter at good Length was ſent her from an eminent Perſon, unnamed, who had formerly been her Ambaſſador in *England* (the Biſhop of *Roſs*, no doubt) her buſy Agent, now at *Paris.* At whoſe Deſire and Inſtruction it was drawn up and indited in an elegant *Latin* Stile, by one *Rob. Turner*, an *Engliſh* zealous Fugitive there, and ſometime Scholar to *Campion* the *Jeſuit.* Beginning, *Cum permulti (Sereniſſima Regina) me narrante, cognoviſſent, quibus miſeriis implicita, &c.* The Purport of which Letter in *Engliſh* was, "That when he had related to many, in what Miſeries ſhe was ſunk, "and with what Frauds ſhe was enſnared; and compaſſed about "with ſuch various Calamities, it very inwardly affected them. "But that when they underſtood, that all this befel her upon the "Account of the Catholick Religion; how conſtant ſhe was in "keeping it, how magnanimous always in defending it; they did "not then ſo much lament her Misfortunes, as laying aſide all "their Grief for her, congratulated her Piety, Conſtancy, and "Greatneſs of Mind. And who could call her Miſerable, added "he, whom *Chriſt* called *Happy?* For if they, who for Religion "ſuffered Impriſonment for *Chriſt*, underwent Danger of their "Lives, for Righteouſneſs entered into Storms of Perſecution, were "to be called *Bleſſed*; on what Account might ſhe be called, or "thought to be miſerable? That the Evenneſs of her Mind, where-"with ſhe bore all her Sufferings, ſprang from nothing but that Vir-"tue itſelf, had fallen down from Heaven into her Mind, and oc-"cupied all her Thoughts. And that ſhe meaſured the Matter, "not with *Humane* Senſe, but with a *Divine* Mind. That it ſeem-"ed to be above humane Nature, or at leaſt above the Virtue of this "Age; that her Mind was fortified with Patience, joyful in the ſharpeſt "Afflictions, free in the ſtraiteſt Cuſtody, happy in the greateſt "Miſeries, &c. Which Things, as he proceeded, gave him Cauſe to "believe, that in a ſhort Time thoſe Miſeries would be ſeaſoned to "her with Sweetneſs; while ſhe, perhaps, neither hoped, nor thought "any ſuch Thing; and her Impriſonment and Dangers recompenced "with the higheſt Felicity: ſince God delivereth his People out of "Danger, when they are judged to be paſt all Hope." By this the Writer ſeems to hint at, and to be privy to that Plot that was ſetting on Foot by *Babbington*, for this Queens Eſcape, or before that by *Throgmorton*, *Paget*, and others.

A conſolatory Letter ſent to the Scots *Queen*

Telling her farther, "That as God delivered *David* from the "grievous Vexation of *Saul*, and the Apoſtle *Paul* from the cruel "Fury of *Nero*, that Lion; ſo he could reſtore her to the Common-"wealth, and the Commonwealth to her; and the Church to both. "He propoſed to her Thoughts ſome of the *Scots* Kings, *Malcolme*, "and the *Bruces*; ſome whereof were kept in Cuſtody in *England.* "And God reſtored them to their Liberties: And heaped up upon "them afterwards more ample Honours than they had before. He "bade her be of good Heart by their Examples, and hope for

“ greater Things. And that Almighty God, moved by the Prayers “ of many for her, would free her from her Dangers, and would “ adorn her with far greater Honours, would encreaſe the Sweetneſs “ of her Liberty, enlarge the Borders of her Kingdom.” [This indeed would have proved true, if the Plots that were now carrying on could have ſucceeded, to have dethroned Queen *Elizabeth*, and advanced her into her Place.] Adding, “That God would never “ fail to be a Father to her, if ſhe would go on to be a Daughter to “ him.

He ſent her alſo with this Letter an Hiſtory of the Kings of *Scotland*; which he had compiled in *Engliſh*, when he was a Reſident in *England:* And now at his Leiſure had improved it by the Hiſtory of their Country. The Reading of which might ſerve her in her Afflictions. And likewiſe to make Uſe of for the Benefit of her Son: To excite him to follow his Anceſtors in their Virtues. I ſhall repeat no more of this Letter to this captive Queen, but leave it in the *Appendix*, to be peruſed.

[Num. XXVII.]

The Queens expoſtulatory Letter to King James.

And now we are engaged in *Scottiſh* Matters, it may not be out of the Way to relate a Diſguſt that Queen *Elizabeth* took to King *James*, the *Scots* Queens Son: Who had it ſeems demeaned himſelf about this Time in that ingrateful Manner, which ſhe reckoned he ought not to have done towards her, who had done many good Offices in his Kingdom for him. He had ſided with thoſe of his Nation that were Papiſts, and Ill-willers to her Majeſty. This gave Occaſion to the Queen to write to him this Letter following:

Cott. Libr. Julius *F. 6.*

“ Among your many Studies, my dear Brother and Couſin, I “ would *Iſocrates* his noble Leſſon were not forgot, that wiſhes the “ Emperor his Sovereign, to make his Words of more Account than “ other Men their Oaths; as meeteſt Signs to ſhew the trueſt Badge “ of a Princes Arms. It moveth me much to moan you, when I behold, how diverſely ſundry wicked Paths, and like alſo evil Illuſions wrapt under the Cloak of your beſt Safety, endanger your “ State and beſt Good. How may it be, that you can ſuppoſe an “ honourable Anſwer may be made me, when all your Doings “ gainſay your former Vows? You deal not with one, whoſe Experience can take Droſs for good Payment, nor one that eaſily will be “ beguiled. No, no, I mind to ſet to School your chiefeſt Counſillor, and am ſorry to ſee you bent to wrong others: Yea thoſe “ which if they had not even then taken Opportunity to let a Ruine “ that was newly begun, the Plot would have perilled the more, “ than a thouſand of ſuch Mens Lives be worth, that perſuade you “ to avouch ſuch Deeds, to deſerve a *Sawles* Pardon. Why do you “ forget what you writ to myſelf with your own Hand, ſhewing “ how dangerous a Courſe the Duke [*viz. Lenox*] was entred in; “ though you excuſed yourſelf to think no Harm therein. And yet “ they that with your Safety preſerved you from it, you muſt ſeem “ to give them Reproach of guilty Folk.

“ I hope you more eſteem your Honour, than to give it ſuch a “ Stain, ſince you have proteſted ſo often to have taken theſe “ Lords for your moſt affectionate Subjects, and to have done all for “ your beſt. To conclude, I beſeech you, paſs no further in this

ANNO 1583.

" Cauſe, till you receive an expreſs Meſſenger, a truſty Servant " of mine: By whom I mean to deal like an affectionate Siſter " with you; as of whom you ſhall ſee plainly, you may receive " more Honour and Contentment, with your Surety to your Reſt " and State, than all this diſſembling will, or can bring you to. As " knoweth the Lord, to whoſe moſt ſafely keeping, I do commit " you, with my many Commendations to your Perſon. The 7. *Auguſt*, 1583.

The Exceſs of Retainers checked, by a ſevere Proclamation.

By a Proclamation the Queen now ſet forth, it appeareth, how the Gentry in theſe Days were addicted to make great Shews of Servants and *Retainers*, with coſtly Badges, and Liveries, to attend on them in their Houſes, or Journeys, or Appearances at Court, or elſewhere. And this oftentimes beyond their Quality, and to their great Expences. Inſomuch as it was called in the ſaid Proclamation, *A pernicious Sore* in the Commonwealth. Nor was this the firſt Time it received a Check, and was forbid by Act of Parliament and her Proclamation: Stinting theſe Retainers under certain Rules and Limits, as far backwards as the Year 1572. But the whole State of this Evil will be underſtood by the Proclamation. And this I the rather mention, becauſe our Hiſtorians are ſilent of it. The Cauſe of the ſetting it forth is ſhewed in the Preamble, *viz.* " The Inconveniences and Enormities that had univerſally grown in the Realm by " unlawful retaining of Multitudes of unorderly Servants by Liveries " and otherwiſe contrary to the antient Statutes of the Realm. I leave " this Proclamation to be read in the *Appendix*.

Camd. Eliz. *p.* 189.

Num. XXVIII.

I meet with another Letter of Queen *Elizabeth*, wrote to the Lord *Burghley*, her Treaſurer; ſhewing her high Eſteem of him, and his Abilities for her Service. That which gave the Occaſion ſeems to be, that he had petitioned her Majeſty, that he might lay down his Office, and leave the Court, and retire to a private Life: Whether this proceeded from ſome Diſcontent, or upon ſome Diſpleaſure he conceived the Queen had taken againſt him, or more probable ſome hard Words that ſome of the Council had uſed towards him, (perhaps it was the Earl of *Leiceſter*) and other Miſreports given out concerning him, which he reſented. But the Queen could not part with ſuch an uſeful Counſillor, and ſuch a faithful Treaſurer: And knew his Merits and Wiſdom too well to yield to his Petition. And with her own Hand wrote him a ſhort comfortable Letter, between Jeſt and Earneſt, ſtiling him *Sir Spirit:* The Reaſon whereof I leave to others to Conjecture.

The Queens Letter to her Treaſurer.

" *Sir Spirit.* I doubt I do nick-name you. For thoſe of your " Kind (they ſay) have no Senſe. But I have of late ſeen an " *Ecce Signum*, that if an Aſs kick you, you feel it ſo ſoon. I will " recant you from being *Spirit*, if ever I perceive that you diſdain not " ſuch a Feeling. Serve God, fear the King, and be a good Fellow " to the reſt. Let never Care appear in you for ſuch a Rumour: " But let them well know, that you rather deſire the Righting of " ſuch Wrong, by making known their Error, than you to be ſo " ſilly a Soul, as to foreſlow that you ought to do, or not freely de" liver what you think meeteſt, and paſs of no Man, ſo much, as " not to regard her Truſt, who putteth it in you.

God bleſs you, and long may you laſt, *Omnino*, *E. R.*

Anno 1583.

On this Letter (wherein the Queen expreſt ſo much Kindneſs and Value for him) the Lord Treaſurer endorſed, *Received the* 8th *of May,* 1583.

CHAP. XV.

Apprehenſions from Papiſts. The Archbiſhop of Yorks *Letter to the Biſhop of* Cheſter: *Exciting to Diligence. The Biſhop and the Earl of* Darby, *acting in the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. Biſhop of* St. Davids *viſits his Dioceſs. The corrupt State thereof. The Biſhop of* Norwich *weary of his Dioceſs. And why. Deſires a Remove. Two of this Biſhops Servants taken at Maſs. A Divinity Lecture ſettled at* Litchfield. *The Deans Account of it. The Biſhop of* Lincoln *removed to* Winton. *The Biſhop of* Meath *moves for* Schools *in* Ireland. Matthew *made Dean of* Durham.

Affairs of the Church.

NOW we ſhall apply ourſelves to take Notice of Matters more nearly relating to Religion, and to the Labours of the Biſhops in Behalf of the Reformed Church eſtabliſhed, with reſpect both to Papiſts and Innovators and Schiſmaticks.

The Archbiſhop of York *to the Biſhops of his Province, to watch the Common Enemy.*

Librar. Gonv. and Caius *Coll.*

The Kingdom was at this Time in great Apprehenſions from the Papiſts, and their Seminary Prieſts, ſculking about every where; eſpecially in the *North* Parts. On which Occaſion *Sandys*, the good Archbiſhop of *York*, laying to Heart the great Impiety of the Age, and what Tares the Enemy had ſown in the Lords Field, compoſed a Monitory Letter (as it ſeems) to the Biſhops of his Province, to exert and ſtir themſelves up with more Vigilancy in their Stations. In his Letter to Dr. *Chaderton*, Biſhop of *Cheſter* (which is ſtill extant in one of our Univerſity Libraries) he thus delivered his Mind: “ That being ſtirred up by a pious Charity, and Bro-
“ therly Good-will, he thought it his Duty to exhort him, that as
“ the ſame Burthen lay upon them, and the ſame Account was to be
“ given of the Diſcharge of their Office, ſo they ſhould weigh unani-
“ mouſly, what kind of Perſons they ought to be; to ſhake off Se-
“ curity and Drowſineſs, redeem the Time, make themſelves ready
“ to Battle, to take the Sword and Armour of the Spirit, to defeat
“ the Common Enemy, and to defend the Faith even to Blood and
“ Death.

Then he proceeded to ſhew him, “ How God had ſet them over
“ Nations and People, to extirpate and root out, to deſtroy and
“ throw

" throw down, and to build up and plant, [in Alluſion to God's Commiſſion to his Prophet *Jeremiah.*] That therefore it was their Parts, by the ſharp Sickle of God's Word, to cut away the Fibres of Superſtition, and the Roots of Idolatry; and by the Propagation of the Goſpel, to plant good Fruit in the Minds of Men, and to build up the Walls of *Jeruſalem*, and the Holy Temple, as much as lay in them; and with all earneſtneſs to ſhake down the Cruelty and Tyranny of *Antichriſt*; and by diligent Preaching, to eſtabliſh the Kingdom and Empire of the Son of God. And that God did not only require their Labour in feeding the Flock, but alſo expected that Sin might not go free of Puniſhment; that Luſt, Wickedneſs, and diſſolute Manners, ſhould be checked and reſtrained, by executing ſevere Law and Puniſhment. And ſo they might conſult better for the Safety of their ſinking Country; and more ſucceſsfully diſappoint their Rage, who deſired to ſee it afflicted and diſtreſſed. And that neither Wealth nor Power, nor Friendſhip nor Profit, might ſo ſway them, as to obſtruct them from doing the Lord's Work ſtrenuouſly. And that the ſtubborn and contentious Enemies were to be checked with a Rod of Iron; at leaſt to be reſtrained from infecting the Sound with their Leproſy. That the little Foxes were to be caught that deſtroyed the Vines: And that eſpecially, that Nets ſhould be laid for the Papal Stragglers, thoſe Brands of Sedition, and Peſts of the Church. Adding, how this was the worſt Sort of Men, and the Calamity of our Land. Who, by too much Licence were made worſe: And now becoming fierce by Impunity, waxed bolder, to the very great Danger of all good Men.

Jer. I. 10.

And for the better execution of this, he exhorted the Biſhops, " That according to the Authority committed to them, they ſhould call to their Aſſiſtance thoſe, whom they knew endued with Piety, and that were ſound in the Faith; and to require their diligent Labour under thoſe ſo uncertain and dubious Concerns of the Church and Common Wealth: And conſidering, how many Enemies they had, and in what Difficulties they were, to omit nothing that might conduce to the common Safety." Theſe are ſome brief Contents of the foreſaid Archbiſhop's excellent Letter to this Biſhop of his Province, all in *Latin*. The which is worthy preſerving. And therefore I have exemplified it in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XXIX.

For in *Cheſhire* and *Lancaſhire*, that Biſhops Dioceſs, Popiſh Prieſts and Seminaries chiefly took up their Reſidence, being harboured with Popiſh Gentlemen and others of that Religion, that lived there; and there making Proſelytes. But many of them were diſcovered and taken; and committed to the Caſtle at *Cheſter*; till within a Year or two paſt; when by Order of the Council theſe Recuſants, that for their obſtinacy were detained in that Caſtle, were conveyed to *Mancheſter*, to a Place there provided, and named the *New Fleet*: The ſaid Council giving the Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical their Reaſons for this Removal of them: *Viz.* They conſidered, that the Place was more fit and convenient for that Purpoſe than the Caſtle of *Cheſter*. For that the Inhabitants of *Mancheſter* were found to be generally well affected to Religion; and that the Caſtle ſtood

New Fleet, *a Priſon in* Mancheſter *for Popiſh Recuſants.*

ſtood too near unto the Sea-coaſt. And as many of that Sort as were taken up, were thenceforth committed to that new Priſon in *Mancheſter*.

And one was appointed that might be faithful to the Queen, to be Keeper of that Priſon, and to overſee and take care of thoſe that were, or ſhould be committed there; and for the Maintenance and Diet of thoſe among them that were poor. This Perſon was *Robert Worſely*, Eſq; And for the neceſſary Supply of this Charge, the Council appointed a Collection of 8 *d. per* Week from every Pariſh in the Dioceſs, by Authority of ſome Statute for the Relief of Priſoners in the County Goals. Though this produced great Murmurings, and Oppoſition, as we ſhall ſhew by and by.

A Collection for theſe Priſoners.

This Year Mr. *Worſely* ſent up to the Council an Account of his Charges for the Diet of the Priſoners; which amounted to 650 *l.* Sixteen Recuſants were there committed; whereof ſix were Prieſts, and the reſt Perſons of ſuch poor Eſtate, as they were not able to anſwer the Charges of their ſaid Diet. This was certified by *Worſely* to the Lords. And thereupon they ſent their Letters to the Council in the *North*, to examine his Accounts, and to ſee him ſatisfied out of the Fines laid, by Authority of the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, upon Recuſants: And likewiſe from the Collections, appointed by the Statute of the 14th of the Queen, towards the Relief of Priſoners: Which of itſelf would not ſuffice to reimburſe the ſaid *Worſely*. And therefore to receive his full Payment from the Fines at the Hands of the ſaid Commiſſioners.

Worſelies *Diſburſements for their Diet.*

For this Parochial Collection (which was thought meet by the Council now more eſpecially to be made) met with great Oppoſition. And ſo ſome of the Juſtices in thoſe Parts informed the Privy Council; as being a Benevolence rather for other poor Priſoners, and for the ſetting of Vagabonds on work, than for ſupplying ſuch Recuſants. There was alſo a Petition to this Purpoſe, drawn up and ſubſcribed by many in thoſe Parts, the better to countenance the Buſineſs. And among the Subſcribers were divers who were Foreigners, and lived not there, and counterfeit Names, and of Gentlemens Servants: That the Number of Names might make the Complaint the more plauſible. And among the reſt they had prevailed with the Lord *Strange*, the Earl of *Darbies* Son, to Subſcribe.

Upon this the Council writ their Letters to the Earl of *Darby* and the Biſhop of *Cheſter* (who were the Chief of the Council in the *North*, and who had adviſed the Lords to this Method of raiſing Money for the aboveſaid Uſe) directing them ſtill to go on therein; as thinking it very convenient to have the ſame Collection continued: Yet deſired to have their Anſwer and Opinion therein; and till then to make ſome Stop. The Councils ſaid Letter I have repoſited in the *Appendix*, where the Matter may be underſtood more perfectly.

The Council to the Earl of Darby *and Biſhop of* Cheſter *about the Collections.*

Numb. XXX.

The Earl and Biſhop ſoon gave their Anſwer accordingly to the Council. Whereupon by another Letter, they ſignified, "That "they thought it very requiſite and convenient their Lordſhips ſhould "proceed in the ſaid Collection according to their former Determina-"tion: Seeing by their Lordſhips, and moſt of the Juſtices of Peace "and Gentlemen well affected to the Service, it was thought to be

Some diſaffected in thoſe Parts ſent for up.

ANNO 1583.

“ very beneficial for the Country, as their Supplication and Let-
“ ters to their Lordſhips, they [the Council] ſaid, they had ſeen.
“ And that as for ſuch Gentlemen, as had laboured to the contrary,
“ ſeeing they had not only abuſed their Lordſhips [the Earl of *Dar-*
“ *by*, Biſhop of *Cheſter*, and others of that Council] but alſo them
“ [the Queen's Privy Council] pretending that the Country was
“ therewith much aggrieved, they thought fit that ſome of them
“ ſhould be ſent for thither [to the Court] to attend upon them, to
“ render an Account of their Dealings in that Behalf. And they
“ prayed their Lordſhips, as ſo required and authorized by them
“ [the Council] to ſend for ſome of the Principaliſts of them (as
“ they ſhould think meet) that did impugne the ſaid Contribution;
“ and eſpecially *Richard Bold*: And to take Bonds of them, unto
“ her Majeſties Uſe, in good Sums for their Appearance before the
“ Council, by ſuch a Day; and of ſuch of them that ſubſcribed
“ on both Sides, or promiſed in Words to join with them [the Earl
“ and the Biſhop] in the Action, and afterwards left it.

“ The Council alſo were deſirous to be truly and particularly in-
“ formed, whoſe Names were ſubſcribed in a counterfeit Hand,
“ and by whom, and what they were, that to abaſe them [the
“ Council] with abundance of Names, had cauſed the Names of
“ their Servants to be ſet to the ſaid Petition; and eſpecially what
“ they were, that had allured any that belonged to his Lordſhip
“ [the Earl] and his Son the Lord *Strange*, to ſubſcribe to the ſaid
“ Supplication: Alledging, although untruly, that their Lord-
“ ſhips [the Earl and Biſhop] favoured their Actions. And to ſend
“ them up alſo, that were charged with ſome leud Miſdemeanor.
This Letter was Dated from St. *James*'s the 2d of *Decemb.* 1583.

Fines ariſing from the Recuſants.

Information was alſo given to the Council by thoſe Petitioners againſt the Parochial Collection, that the Fines ceſſed upon the Recuſants in that Dioceſs of *Cheſter*, would amount to 3000 *l.* as though the Earl of *Darby* and ſome others of the Council there in the *North*, had put a good Part thereof into their Pockets. But it appeared by the Letters of that Earl and Council, and a Certificate returned into the Exchequer, that the Total Sum of all the Fines impoſed, came but to 757 *l.* 13 *s.* 8 *d.* Whereof 40 *l.* 14 *s.* had been only received. And for the levying of the Remainder, further Order ſhould be taken by the Council there. And the Perſon that thus had miſinformed the Council concerning the Fines, the Council in thoſe *North* Parts meant to ſend for him; and take ſuch further Order with him, according to the Councils Letter to them, as ſhould be to their Satisfaction.

A kind Letter of the Council to the Earl.

But the Earl of *Darby*, who bare a very ſincere and honeſt Heart to the Queen and Government, was ſomewhat diſcouraged at thoſe Rumours and Reports that were carried up of him, as well as of the Biſhop. But it could not but ſpeak Comfort to them both, that the Council thought fit at this Juncture, by a kind Letter, to thank him for his Labour in this Cauſe, and that he ſhould acquieſce in their exceeding good Thoughts of him. And ſignified to him,
“ That her Majeſty was ſo far from conceiving any ill Opinion of
“ him for his Doings, that her Highneſs, having been by one of the
“ Council,

“ Council, from Time to Time, made acquainted with the ſame, “ did ſo accept of his Lordſhip's Service in that Country, that next “ unto Gods Goodneſs, ſhe thought his Lordſhip to have been the “ principal Cauſe of the ſtaying his Country from falling into Popery, by the good Aſſiſtance of the Biſhop, and great Pains in “ the Execution of the Commiſſion directed unto him. And in “ which good Courſe her Majeſty (as they wrote) prayed his Lordſhip to continue, and to aſſure himſelf, that he ſhould want no “ Countenance, nor Backing that might be deſired from thence, for “ the Furtherance of that Service.

“ And that herein, as the Council added, his Lordſhip might account of them, as of his good Friends: Who would not fail at “ all Times to do that which ſhould be moſt convenient for the Advantage and Maintenance of his Lordſhips Honour, and good “ Name: Whereof they had as great a Care, as of their own.” This Letter, dated *Decemb.* the 2d 1583. ſigned by *Bromely* Lord Chancellor, *Burghley* Lord Treaſurer, Earls of *Lincoln*, *Bedford*, *Leiceſter*; *Crofts*, *Knolles*, *Hatton*, Knights, and *Walſingham* Secretary. Under the next Year we ſhall underſtand more of this Biſhop, and of thoſe Tranſactions with the Papiſts in thoſe Parts.

Biſhop of St. Davids *viſiteth his Dioceſs.*

But now we proceed to take ſome Notice of another Biſhop, *viz.* *Marmaduke*, Biſhop of St. *Davids*, (Confirmed *Decemb.* 6. 1582.) who this Year viſited his Dioceſs, the Year after his Preferment to it; which he found in a very woful Condition, both as to the Clergy and People, and the Revenues and Benefits of the Biſhoprick. A particular Account whereof, after he had finiſhed his Viſitation, he gave in his Letter to Secretary *Walſingham*. Which was as follows.

“ *Salutem & Pacem in Chriſto Jeſu.*

Epiſt. Epiſcop. penes me.

“ Having, Right Honourable, peruſed my Dioceſs, as well in *Clero* “ as *Populo*, I find great Wants, both in the one and the other. In “ the *Clergy*, very few ſufficient Men. Their Benefices poor; and “ yet many of them hardly obtained, as with Money, or granting “ for Leaſe; and they not having the third Penny.

“ In the *People* ſmall Popery, but greatly infected (by want of “ Preaching) with Atheiſm; and wonderfully given over to vitious “ Life, &c.

Life of Archbiſhop Grindal. p. 270.

But the reſt of his Letter I omit, having given an Account of it elſewhere. It was dated from *Brecon*, the 16th of *Septemb.* 1583. and ſubſcribed, *Humbly at your Honours Command, M. Meneven.* This Letter will ſerve to give Light into the corrupt State of that Part of the Kingdom; And particularly in what a Caſe the former Biſhop left his Dioceſs.

The Biſhop of Norwich *uneaſy; deſires a Remove.*

We heard ſomething before of the Diſturbances made in the Dioceſs of *Norwich*, by the Affecters of Innovation; and particularly at St. *Edmunds Bury*; and how the Biſhops Officers in their Viſitation were oppoſed, and the Diſcouragement they met with, and the Countenance that ſome Juſtices of the Peace there gave to theſe Diſobediences; the *Puritans* ſpreading their Principles alſo in other Parts in *Suffolk*. Whereupon the Biſhop, finding, how little he could correct and remedy theſe Diſorders, became uneaſy in his Dioceſs. So that he earneſtly deſired a Remove; deſpairing of enjoying any Peace

ANNO 1583. or Quiet there; rather than to abide there to ſo little Purpoſe of working any Reformation, but ſure of continual Vexation and Trouble. Whereupon he addreſſed to the Lord Treaſurer, to ſtand his Friend to the Queen, either for his Remove to another Dioceſs, or to retire to a private Life; Dr. *Dale* having before ſhewed him ſome Comfort in reſpect thereof from the Endeavour the ſaid Lord had uſed with the Queen in that Behalf: Which occaſioned him to back a former Addreſs with another. His Letter Dated from *Ludham*, the Place of his preſent Retirement, will make his Caſe much plainer. Which ran to this Tenor.

" That he underſtood by Mr. Dr. *Dale*, Maſter of *Requeſts*, how " myche he was bound unto his Lordſhip for furtherance of his Re" move from that troubleſome and unquiet Place where he was, un" to ſome Place of more Quiet. And that as he was moſt bound " unto his Lordſhip for his good Favour therein, ſo he humbly be" ſought the Continuance thereof." And then uſing theſe Words. " No Comfort, God knows, have I here, but continual croſſing " and overthwarting, to my great Grief and Unquietneſs: Neither " look I for any better. And that if it pleaſed not her Majeſty ſo " graciouſly to deal with him, as to beſtow upon him ſome more " peaceable and better Place, where he might ſerve God in his Cal" ling, in Quietneſs of Mind, he would then be a moſt humble " Suiter unto his good Lordſhip, to be a Means for him to diſ" charged of all together. That he might lead a private Life; " where during his Life he might pray for her Majeſtys continual " Preſervation; and for his good Lordſhip long in Honour to con" tinue: And as one having been long and dangerouſly ſick, and one " now newly recovered, he prayed God long to preſerve his Lord" ſhip in Health." Dated from *Ludham* the XXIXth of *Aug.* 1583. Subſcribing,

Your good Lordſhips humbly at Commandment,

Edmund Norwich.

I find this Biſhop obtained his Requeſt, being tranſlated the next Year to *Worceſter*.

Two of this Biſhops Family taken at Maſs.

But a Matter, not many Months after, happened in this Biſhops Family, that was in danger to expoſe him to Cenſure, and which, his Enemies were likely to make uſe of to his Prejudice: Namely, that two of them were taken at Maſs. Which as ſoon after the Biſhop underſtood, forthwith he made another Application to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer; to prevent an Enemies Information, and ſo to take an Advantage againſt him on that Account; which they would be apt enough to do. Therefore he thought it beſt to give the firſt Intelligence thereof to the Court, before it might be miſrepreſented by his Ill-willers. Theſe ſaid two Perſons of the Biſhops Family, one his Butler, and the other, his Calling was the Practice of the Law, did frequent the publick Service and Sermons in the Biſhops Houſe, as the reſt did. But when theſe were at a Seſſions brought before the Juſtices to be examined, they would not ſuffer the Biſhop to be preſent, though he were in Commiſſion, as well as they. Now what Reports they might make, the Biſhop was jealous of. And therefore diſpatched a faithful Servant of his own, plainly and truly to relate the Thing, with his own Letter from *Norwich*, to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer. Of which Letter this was the Purport, which will more fully relate the Caſe.

ANNO 1583.

His Letter to the Treaſurer about it.

" That there had been of late certain Perſons detected for repairing to Maſs there in *Norwich*. Among which Company two of his Retinue were diſcovered: The one being his Butler, the other a Lawyer; a Man of ſmall Reckoning; and before this Detection, ſuch as did frequent Divine Service, both in his [the Biſhops] Houſe, and at Church. That in them he had been notably deceived, by reaſon of their Conformity. And therefore leaſt of all feared any ſuch Sequel as was fallen out. That this Accident, as it did not a little diſquiet him, in that it had been his Chance to retain ſome evil affected Perſons; ſo conſidering the ſtrange Dealing of ſome Juſtices there, (who had laboured in the ſifting out of this Matter) he was moved to think, that they ſought to pervert the Actions of thoſe Men to his Reproach. And ſo conſequently thereby to confirm the untrue Reports, given out of his Supportation of Papiſts. For, as he obſerved, after ſuch Time as one of the ſaid Parties was ſent for, being deſirous himſelf to have been admitted to hear his Examination, in that he was their Aſſociate in the Commiſſion of Peace; and that he would very willingly have beſtowed his Travail with them in the Service of her Majeſty: That he was notwithſtanding excluded.

" He humbly therefore prayed his Lordſhip to ſuſpend his Cenſure of him in reſpect of his Miſhap. And to give the Bearer Audience and Credit, in that he ſhould ſay for his [the Biſhops] Innocence and Defence, for any Preſumptions that were, or might be urged againſt him: Meaning not herein to trouble his Lordſhip with any long Apology, the Bearer being inſtructed to anſwer all Objections. Only he hoped, that his Lordſhip, knowing partly his Adverſaries in thoſe Parts, would accept their Informations accordingly; who with vigilant Eyes watched all Opportunities to diſcredit him: Being ready to wreſt every Event to the worſe Senſe. And thus being bold to write to his Honour upon all urgent Occaſions, perſuading himſelf of his beſt Interpretation of this Chance, he ſo left his Lordſhip to Gods Protection, with the Remembrance of his humble Duty. Dated from *Norwich* the XIIII. of *Jan.* 1583. Subſcribed,

Your Lordſhips humbly at Commandment,

Edmund Norwich.

A Divinity Lecture in Litchfield *Cathedral.*

And now let us look over to the Cathedral Church of *Litchfield*: And there we ſhall find a Divinity Lecture, wanting to be read in that Church, notwithſtanding the learned Men belonging to it. Archbiſhop *Whitgift* had been appointed their Viſitor the laſt Year; (being then Biſhop of *Worceſter*) upon occaſion of great Differences ariſen

ANNO 1583.

Book II. Ch. 3.

ariſen between the Biſhop of the Dioceſs, and the Dean and Chapter, as may be ſeen more largely in that Archbiſhops Life. And among other Things he found wanting there, one was a Divinity Lecture. Which he informed the Lord Treaſurer of. This moved the Council to ſend their Letters to the ſaid Dean (Dr. *George Boleyn*) and Chapter for that Purpoſe, in the Month of *January* the laſt Year. Which Letter is inſerted in the Life of the ſaid Archbiſhop. But it was ſo repreſented by one of that Church, no good Friend to the Dean, as if he had ſlackened ſo good a Purpoſe. The Reaſon of ſome Delay was in Truth, becauſe the Dean was then at his Reſidence in *Canterbury*. But when he returned to *Litchfield*; he and the Chapter ſoon came to a chearful Reſolution and Concluſion of that neceſſary Affair. Yet the Delay cauſed a Letter from the Lord Treaſurer to him. At which he was ſomewhat nettled. As appeared in his Anſwer, *viz.* “ That his Lordſhip wrote on a falſe Suggeſtion. And he marvailed that his Lordſhip [the Biſhop of “ *Worceſter*] ſhould write unto his Honour any Thing that ſhould “ concern their Eſtate, and chiefly himſelf, [the Dean] upon any “ one Mans Information, before his Lordſhip [the Biſhop their Viſitor] had ſpoke with him; whom he knew to be no Diſſembler, “ but one that would ſpeak the Truth, were it good or bad, well or “ ill: But were Matters otherwiſe than they ſhould be, they might “ eaſily have been reformed by good Advice, and diligent Performing the ſame: Which well, I wot, (added the Dean) his Lordſhip “ would have given me, becauſe he had ever been his very good “ Friend and Tutor in *Cambridge*, and was ſtill his good Lord. “ And if all Things were well, (as he proceeded in his and the “ Chapters Vindication) then it were good with good Counſel to “ keep them well, while they had them well.

The Deans Letter to the Lord Treaſurer in excuſe of himſelf.

And upon this, he, the Dean, went to the Biſhop, their Viſitor, to tell him the Truth of this Matter, that he ſhould not hereafter be deceived. The which at his Return, in the Chapter General (which was *June* the 24th) fell out according to his [the Deans] Saying. For at the Chapter it was concluded, that there ſhould be a Stipend of 40 *l.* a Year; whereunto every Prebendary and Dignitary muſt give a Tenth. And look what there wanted by a Tenth, the Chapter ſhould ſupply it of their Commons. And becauſe there were many of the Prebends very ſmall; ſo that if this ſhould be continually exacted of them (as the Lecture muſt be continual) divers of the Prebendaries which were to ſucceed, ſhould not in two or three Years Space enjoy any Part of the Prebend, by reaſon of their Duties to her Majeſty, the Biſhop and the Chapter at their firſt Entrance: It was agreed, that every Prebendary coming hereafter into a Prebend of 10 *l.* or under, ſhould pay nothing to the Reader for his firſt Year. But that which ſhould be due by any ſuch Prebendary, to pay for that firſt Year, ſhould be ſupplied by the Commons of the *Reſidentiaries*. All theſe Particulars of the Settlement of that Lecture, the Dean thought fit to acquaint the aforeſaid Stateſman with, and the reſt of the Queens Council; to rectify a falſe Suggeſtion of *Beacon*, one of their Church, given in: And then ſubjoining theſe Words in his own Vindication:

“ According to my Duty I have informed your Honours of no-
“ thing but the Truth; and endeavoured, as much as in me lay, to
“ accompliſh the Motion made by your Honours Letters for the E-
“ ſtabliſhment of a Lecture in the Church; the which I have ever
“ thought neceſſary: And was therefore a Suitor for your Honours
“ Letters; becauſe I could do nothing of myſelf. This Letter was dated at *Litchfield*, the 28. Day of *Auguſt* 1583. And ſubſcribed *Your Honours humble Orator*, George Boleyn. And by Poſtſcript is added, “ The Lecture ſhall be read twice every Week, *viz.* Every
“ *Wedneſday* and *Friday*.

Biſhop of Lincoln *tranſlated to* Winton.

In the latter End of this Year the Queen caſt her Eye upon *Cowper*, the Biſhop of *Lincoln*, a Man of excellent Abilities and known Worth, to remove him from thence to the See of *Winton*, void by the Death of *Watſon*, the laſt Biſhop. Of which Purpoſe of the Queen when Archbiſhop *Whitgift* acquainted him with, he thankfully acknowledged in a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, who had been inſtrumental therein; piouſly expreſſing his low Conceit of himſelf for ſuch a Preferment, and imploring the Aſſiſtance of Gods Spirit in the Diſcharge of his Duty in the Service of the Church; and direct him with his Grace. But take the Letter from his own Pen.

His Letter to the Treaſurer thereupon.

“ My Duty conſidered, Right Honourable, I underſtand by my
“ Lord of *Canterbury*, that her Majeſty hath ſhewed her gracious
“ Liking, to have me placed in the See of *Wincheſter*: As the Place
“ is of Dignity and Value of Living, much better than I am in, ſo
“ the Lord God that ſeeth mine Heart, knoweth, that it is five
“ Times more Comfort unto me, that it hath pleaſed God to have
“ ſo favourable Opinion of me. And I moſt humbly and heartily
“ beſeech him, ſo to comfort me, and ſtrengthen me with his Spirit,
“ that I may do that Service in the Church, that may moſt redound
“ to his Glory.

“ I am alſo to yield unto your Honour moſt hearty Thanks for
“ your Lordſhips great Favour and Furtherance in the Cauſe. But
“ the Recompence that I muſt yield to your Lordſhip muſt be only
“ to ſtudy to ſatisfy your Expectation in that Room: Whereunto
“ I beſeech Almighty God to direct me with his Grace. Unto
“ whoſe Tuition and Bleſſing I commit your Lordſhip at this Time.
“ This 3d of *March* 1583.

Your Honours in Chriſt *to Command*,

Thom. Lincoln.

This Biſhop ſlandered to be covetous.

It was not long after he came to the Biſhoprick, that a Report was carried about, that he was covetous. And this Charge of *Covetouſneſs* upon one that enjoyed ſo wealthy a Biſhoprick was like to render him odious among the People of that Dioceſs, that expected, as was cuſtomary, ſo much Hoſpitality. Which Accuſation was ſtudiouſly ſpread by one Sir *Richard Norton*, an Officer of that Biſhop: And who threatned alſo to carry this Information to Court. The Cauſe was, it ſeems, becauſe the Biſhop had refuſed to advance his Salary, and

ANNO 1583.

and the Benefit of his Place. But this was a Crime very unjuſtly laid againſt the Biſhop; and which he was of all Things leaſt guilty of. And therefore to preſerve a Reputation in the Dioceſs and to vindicate himſelf from ſuch Slander, ſo unworthily laid upon him, (and that by one under him) he thought it his beſt Way, (in order that the Court might be truly acquainted with his Circumſtances) to apply himſelf to the Lord Treaſurer; and to lay before him at large, his neceſſary Expences and Payments, as Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and what at moſt his own Income amounted to; eſpecially now, at his firſt Entry upon that See. His Letter will unfold all this; and withal give ſome Knowledge of the Defalcations of the Revenues of the other Prelates.

His Letter in Vindication of himſelf.

He wrote, “ That his Credit had ever been more dear unto him, “ than either Living or other worldly Benefits; eſpecially to them “ whom he knew to be Honourable and wiſe. Wherefore he deſired “ his Lordſhips favourable Interpretation, if at this Time he ſhewed “ himſelf ſomewhat more jealous than needed in that Reſpect, *&c.* For the whole Letter tranſcribed from the Original, I refer the Reader to the *Appendix:* For ſome further Remembrance of that excellent and learned Biſhop. And to the Letter he added an exact Scedule of the whole Value of the Biſhoprick, and the Charges payable out of it. That laying it before that Stateſman, he might the more perfectly underſtand his Circumſtances, and prevent any Miſrepreſentations of him, and clear himſelf of that unjuſt Calumny of being covetous. Which Scedule follows in the Tranſcript of the Letter.

[Num. XXX.]

The Biſhop of Meath *moves for an Univerſity.*

The Biſhop of *Meath* in *Ireland* ſent this Year a Letter of Importance to the Court. In which Kingdom one Cauſe of the tedious and chargeable Wars there was owing to the Ignorance of the Inhabitants, bred up in blind Superſtition, and having no Opportunity of Inſtruction in the Truth. For an Univerſity and Schools they were deſtitute of: Where the younger Sort, eſpecially Gentlemen, might come to good Learning, Civility, and right Knowledge of Religion. This the ſaid Biſhop of *Meath* took the Opportunity, when he was in *England*, in a Sermon or two before the Queen, earneſtly to inculcate: Moving her Majeſty to erect an Univerſity in that Kingdom; ſetting forth ſo effectually the excellent Uſe thereof to extinguiſh thoſe ſad Wars, and tending ſo much to their Loyalty and Subjection to their Prince; that it moved much the Queen and all the Nobility preſent; and particularly the Lord Treaſurer: Who ſaw well, and was ſenſible of the grievous Charge of that War, and the Tumults there.

Moves the Queen for a Free School.

And upon this, all the Court were in earneſt Conſultation of the Method and Way to bring this about. But all cooled within a little Time, and came to no Effect. But that good Biſhop being returned to his Dioceſs, and ſome Years paſt, and nothing done, gives a gentle Reproach to the Court for this Neglect in a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, and moves now for a leſſer Matter, but of the ſame Nature, and for the ſame End: Namely, That the Queen would grant him Liberty and Aſſiſtance, to build a Free Grammar School in a certain convenient Place in that Kingdom, in a Town wherein he was born (according to an Act paſt in that Parliament for erecting Free Schools in that Kingdom,) and that it ſhould be called, *Her Majeſties School.* And that he, the Biſhop,

would

ANNO 1583.

would himſelf take Care for the building and finiſhing of it. And doubted not, but that there would be many well diſpoſed Gentlemen and others that would aſſiſt and contribute. This excellent Letter of the Biſhop of *Meath*, written from *Dublin* in the Month of *October*, deſerveth to be preſerved. See it exemplified in the *Appendix*. Num. XXXI.

The Time of the Biſhop's Motion for founding the Univerſity abovementioned, was at leaſt ſeven Years ago. Which may be conjectured from a Diſcourſe the Lord Treaſurer held with that Biſhop about it, when he was in *England*; who then adviſed, that Mr. *Elmer* was the fitteſt Man to be Provoſt and Overſeer of it: the ſame that was afterward Biſhop of *London* in the Year 1576. And let me add on this Occaſion, that ſome Years before that, the Want of Schools and an Univerſity was felt in that Kingdom of *Ireland*; and propounded to the *Engliſh* Court to eſtabliſh. For I meet with a Tract in *Manuſcript* framed about the Year 1570. by one *Rowland Whyte*, *For the Reformation of* Ireland. Dedicated to *Will. Cecill* Secretary. Wherein, among other Things, he propounded the Foundation of twelve Free Schools, and one Univerſity: "Both to be maintained "in her Majeſties Name continually: That the godly Order of virtuous Diſcipline in the Schools might faſhion the *Iriſh* Race towards "good and perfect Subjection; in ſuch Sort, that by the open Light "thereof, in Time they might forget what their Aunceſters old Diſpoſitions had been to the Contrary. And that as the Inſtitution "of the Free Schools was for the entering of young Children in "good Principles and Rules in the *Engliſh* Tongue; ſo for their "more perfect Learning and Knowledge and Judgment, it would be "a profitable Foundation, to ordain an Univerſity in ſome Place "of the Realm, where her Highneſs ſhould think moſt expedient. "By the Appointment whereof moſt Men would be allured to ſet "their Children to School, conſidering the Perfection of Learning "within the Realm ſo ordained: Cauſing alſo Men of Years to become ſtudious, of whoſe Profit the common People ſhould participate. And by them being Favourers and Furtherers of the "Truth, would be defaced, the wicked Wants of old Orders, lawleſs Lives, ſalvage Ways and Enormities: The very natural Men "of the Country through their Wiſdoms (thus won in ſuch an "Univerſity) reproving the vitious Affections thereof, and provoking "by their Examples and ſkilful Perſuaſions, the contrary. And ſo "would prove a good Help to ſubdue Sin. And the rather prevailable, becauſe of the inward Repugnance, that by this Means ſhall "be wrought between the well taught and virtuouſly diſpoſed, and "the wilfully ignorant, frowardly given, of one Religion; yea peradventure of one Kindred or Family. So that thus Contention and "Diſcord might bring Commodity, and do good. Where now the "raw Realm leaneth one Way for the moſt Part, without Instruction, "true Teaching or Diſſuaſion from wilful Demeanour; rather than "to thoſe that with Humility be willing to learn. The Credit of "their own Countrymen ſhall profit much for the Eſtabliſhment of "their Faith, Fear and Obedience toward God and their Prince, "with Love to their Neighbours as Chriſten Men be bound to do.

Schools and an Univerſity for Ireland *recommended*, Anno 1570.

ANNO 1583.

All this I have added, to ſhew how this was propounded by ſome eminent Hand many Years before this Advice of the Biſhop of *Meath*, as the beſt Method to civilize that rude Country, by imbruing the Minds of the *Iriſh* with good Learning, to be obtained by Means of an Univerſity and Schools among them.

TobieMatthew made *Dean of* Durham.

This Year *Tobie Matthew*, Dean of *Chriſt Church*, *Oxon*, and who had other Preferments, a worthy Man and an eloquent Preacher, was preferred to the Deanry of *Durham*, chiefly by the Intereſt of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, his great Patron. To which Place he was nominated a Year before, by the Recommendation of the ſaid Lord to the Queen. But it had a pretty long Delay before it was finiſhed. As appears by his Letter to that Lord, dated in *May*, 1582. Thus beſpeaking him to forward his Buſineſs with the Queen: "That by "his good Word, which it pleaſed his Lordſhip to afford him unto "her Highneſs towards the Deanry of *Durham*, to his great Fur"therance, and greater Credit, he was encouraged to move her "Highneſs again for her Reſolution and his Diſpatch. And that "he was nothing ſo importune with his Honour, as many good Men "of that Church and Country were earneſt with him, to do what "in him lay for Expedition. And the Reaſon he gave thereof follows: *viz.* The miſerable Condition of the Deanry. "For "that he was credibly informed, that many Things there went to "wrack. The Houſes decayed: The Game ſpoiled: The Woods "waſted: The Grounds unlet; yet not uneaten, *&c.*

He ſollicites the Lord Teaſurer for his Diſpatch.

Nor had the Queen paſt the Grant in *Auguſt* following: When I find another Letter of Dr. *Matthew* to the ſame Lord, "That he "would be his good Lord, as he had hitherto been, in the Diſpatch "of the Deanry: And that eſpecially at that Inſtant, the State and "Condition thereof being ſuch, as unleſs the Dean that next ſhould "be, might be inducted, and keep his Reſidence there, by the Space "of one and twenty Days together, before *Michaelmas* next, the "whole Crop, as well of Hay, as Corn, as all other Fruits, belong"ing to the Tithes and Glebe Land, (which was valued two Parts "of three in that Living) muſt by a local Statute of that Church "accrue to the Prebendaries Reſident there this Year paſt. So as "the next Dean ſhould for the Year to come, have no Manner of "Proviſion, wherewith to keep Houſe: And ſo be the leſs hable to "do good in Preaching or Government. Where, they ſaid, many "regarded Hoſpitality very much; who being loſt at the firſt, would "hardly be won a good while after.

The ill State of that Deanry, now void.

A local Statute.

He proceeded further, "To remember his Lordſhip withal, in "what Decay and Dilapidations the Deans Manſion Houſes were "fallen; what Spoil and Waſte, as well of Woods as of other Com"modities, belonging to their Dignity, had been, and would be, "during the Vacation: And in how great Need the divided Church "did ſtand of ſome indifferent Governour. How incommodious the "Seaſon of the Year would hereafter be, to remove ſo far from theſe "Parts, *&c.* Conſideration whereof he moſt humbly referred un"to his Lordſhips great Wiſdom and favourable Furtherance. "That as he was already much bounden to her Majeſties good In"clination towards him, ſo for her gracious Expedition of his Suit,

“ he might be more indebted to his Honour. For the Continuance “ and Increaſe whereof, he ſhould daily pray to Almighty God. This was dated the 25 *Auguſt*, 1582.

Dr. Matthew *inducted.*

Well, notwithſtanding all this Supplication, it was not before *Auguſt* this Year 1583. he was inducted. And in *September* following he ſent a Letter of Gratitude to his Patron and Friend, the foreſaid Lord *Burghley*, thanking him for his grave Counſil he gave him upon his going down to *Durham*, and in another Letter ſent him ſince his coming there. On Occaſion of which Counſil, the Dean in his Reply ſaid, “ That he truſted the Grace of God would enable him to follow it, to the Diſcharge of his Calling; as it had “ perſuaded him to like thereof, to the Contentation of his Mind. “ And promiſed to be reformed by his Authority, and directed by “ his Wiſdom; even as by the *Socrates* or *Solomon* of this Age. And then upon Occaſion of that Lords moving him for a Leaſe of *Pittington*; which it ſeems was double leaſed out before, the Dean informed him of it, and that there had been ſixty Leaſes, nay, and ſeventy more, made in the Times of his two former Predeceſſors, *viz.* *Whittingham* and *Wylſon*. But I refer the Reader to the Deans whole Letter repoſited in the *Appendix*. Num. XXXII.

This learned Dean was afterwards ſucceſſively Biſhop of *Durham*, and Archbiſhop of *York*. He was born in *Briſtol*, but of *Welch* Extraction. Dyed *March* the 29. 1628. Aged 82. As appeareth by the Inſcription on his Monument in *York* Cathedral.

ANNO 1583.

CHAP. XVI.

The Queen grants a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. The Letters Patents. Cawdry *deprived.* Wither *of* Danbury *writes to the Lord Treaſurer, in Behalf of the* Puritans. *Their Caſe recommended to the Council, in a Letter from the Gentlemen of* Suffolk: *The Lords Inſtructions to the Judges of Aſſize thereupon. Proceedings againſt the Diſperſers of* Browns *Books at* Bury St. Edmunds: *And againſt Papiſts. The Judges Account of the Aſſizes held there. Popiſh Books ſet forth.* Theſes Anglorum Rhemenſium: Dr. *Allens* Defence of the *Engliſh* Catholics. Parries *Letter from* Lions *and* Paris. *One* Touker, *late in the Inquiſition at* Rome, *comes home. Makes Diſcoveries. The Biſhop of* Roſs. *Dr.* Lewis *in* Rome. *Dr.* Oxenbridge *at* Wisbich; *his Submiſſion and Subſcription to the Supremacy.*

An Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. THE Queen ſet forth a *Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical* this Year, according to an Act of Parliament in the firſt Year of her Reign: finding it in theſe Times ſo very neceſſary to preſerve Obedience to the Laws framed for the Reformation of Religion, and keeping the Queen's Subjects in true Obedience, and Conformity to what was eſtabliſhed upon very wiſe and mature Deliberation; for the Security and Quiet of Religion, and due and firm Loyalty and Fidelity to the Prince. And that we may ſee the Nature and Power of ſuch a Commiſſion I ſhall here ſet it down, as it was confirmed by the Queens Letters Patent, Dated *Decemb.* 9. 26. Regin. Authorizing the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, the *Biſhop* of *London*, and divers others, or any three or more of them, to enquire, among other Things, of the Statute of the firſt of her Reign, concerning the Book of Common Prayer; with this Clauſe alſo contained in the ſame Letters Patents; "And we give and grant to them
" full Power and Authority, to reform, redreſs, order, correct and
The Matter of it. " amend in all Places of this Realm, all Errors, Hereſies, Schiſms,
" Abuſes, Contempts, and Enormities, Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical,
" whatſoever; which by Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical Power and Au-
" thority or Juriſdiction, can or may lawfully be reformed, order-
" ed, redreſſed, corrected, reſtrained, or amended by the Cenſures
" Eccleſiaſtical, Deprivation or otherwiſe, *&c.*

" And upon Proof whereof had, and the Offences aforeſaid, or any
" of them ſufficiently proved againſt any Perſon or Perſons, by Con-
" feſſion, lawful Witneſs, or by any due Manner, *&c.* That then
" You, or three of you, ſhall have full Power and Authority to order
" and award ſuch Puniſhment to every ſuch Offender by Fine, Impri-

“ ſonment, Cenſure of the Church, or otherwiſe, or by all or any the ſaid Ways; and to take ſuch Order for the Redreſs of the ſame by your Wiſdom and Diſcretion, as ſhall be thought meet and convenient; as by the ſame Letters Patent more at large appeared.

“ And further, as they found in that Statute of the firſt of the Reign of the ſaid Queen: By which it is enacted, That the Offender againſt the Act concerning the *Uniformity of Common Prayer*, and being thereof lawfully convicted according to the Laws of the Realm, by Virtue of twelve Men, or by his own Confeſſion, or by the notorious Evidence of the Fact, ſhould forfeit for the firſt Offence the Value of his ſpiritual Living, for one whole Year, and ſhould ſuffer ſix Months Impriſonment. For the ſecond Offence to be committed, after ſuch Conviction, he ſhould be deprived *Ipſo Facto*, of all his Spiritual Livings. And for the third Offence, to be committed after two Convictions, as is aforeſaid, he ſhould be deprived of all his Eccleſiaſtical Living, and being impriſoned during his Life.

What the Queens Power Eccleſiaſtical is.

This I take from a Book, printed in the black Letter, in two Columns, *Latin* and *Engliſh*, intitled *De Jure Regis Eccleſiaſtico*. Wherein is ſhewn briefly, what this Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction and Power granted to the Queen was by the foreſaid Statute, *viz.* By which it was enacted, “ That ſuch Juriſdiction Eccleſiaſtical, as by any Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical Power hath heretofore been, or may lawfully be exerciſed for the Viſitation of the Eccleſiaſtical State, and Perſons, and for Reformation and Correction of the ſame, and of all Manner of Errors, Hereſies, Schiſms, Abuſes, Offences, *&c.* within this Realm, ſhould for ever be united and annexed to the Imperial Crown of this Realm. And that her Highneſs, her Heirs, and Succeſſors, ſhould have full Power and Authority by Vertue of that Act, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of *England*, to aſſign, nominate, and authorize ſuch Perſons, being natural born Subjects, as her Highneſs, her Heirs and Succeſſors, ſhould think meet to exerciſe and execute, under her Highneſs, her Heirs and Succeſſors, all and all Manner of Juriſdictions, Privileges, and Preeminences in any wiſe, touching or concerning any Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction within theſe Realms of *England* and *Ireland*; and to viſit, reform, redreſs, order, correct and amend all ſuch Errors, Hereſies, Schiſms, Abuſes, *&c.* which by any Manner Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical Power, Authority, or Juriſdiction, can or may lawfully be reformed, ordered, redreſſed, corrected, *&c.* to the Pleaſure of Almighty God, the Increaſe of Virtue, and the Conſervation of Peace and Unity of this Realm. This I ſet down thus at large, to ſhew that ſpecial Power by which the Queen acted in thoſe Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſions ſhe ſo often ſent forth. See more of this Commiſſion, and the Archbiſhops acting in it, in his Life.

Cawdry *deprived by the Commiſſioners.*

By the abovementioned Commiſſion, *Robert Cawdry* was deprived of his Benefice of *Luſſenham*, before thoſe High Commiſſioners there named; as well for that he had preached againſt the Book of Common Prayer; as alſo for that he had refuſed to celebrate Divine Service according to the ſaid Book: And ſhewed particularly wherein. Which Sentence of *Deprivation* was given by the Biſhop of *London*, *cum Aſſenſu* A. B. C. D. *Collegarum*. This Caſe of *Cawdries* was ſolemnly,

ANNO 1583.

ſolemnly, and oftentimes debated at Bar, by the Counſil of either Part, and at the Bench of the Judges. See this Controverſy more at large, taken from authentick Papers, in the Life of Biſhop *Aylmer*.

Life of Biſhop Aylmer, ch 8.

Withers *a Puritan his Addreſs to the L. Treaſurer.*

This Commiſſion proceeding from the Queens Care of Religion, leadeth us to take ſome View of ſuch as were diſaffected either to our Churches Liturgy or Government. A large Addreſs was made about this Time to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, in Behalf of theſe, by one *Withers*, Rector of *Danbury* in *Eſſex*. The Cauſe thereof was, his great Concern for the Differences that were among the Queens Subjects about Matters of Religion; the Loſs of Peace and Love, and the Sufferings of ſuch as complied not in all the Articles required.

Upon theſe Reaſons he was by ſome Perſons perſuaded (eſpecially when Subſcription to the Common Prayer was required) to make the ſaid Addreſs: And was the more inclined ſo to do, having Knowledge of this Lords great Concern and Care for Religion, and the Experience he himſelf had of his Kindneſs towards him.

His Judgment of the Controverſies in the Church.

Withers was a Man of Account, and had been abroad among the learned Reformers in *Helvetia*, and was himſelf conformable to the Orders of the Church. And therefore I the rather give ſome brief Account of his ſaid Letter. Therein he ſhewed, “How he had long wiſhed with all his Heart, that in theſe outward Things Contentions were laid apart; and that Men would conform themſelves to her Majeſties Laws and Pleaſure. But that herein there had been Faults on both Sides. For that as in the one there had been an over earneſt ſtanding in Trifles; ſo on the other too ſevere and ſharp Puniſhment of the ſame. That he thought reverently of the Book [of Common Prayer] and the Authors thereof; and yet notwithſtanding he thought with *Auguſtin*, that it was a Reverence due only and alone to the Canonical Books of Scripture to think, that the Authors of them, in their writing of them, erred in nothing; and to none other Books of Men, of what Learning or Holineſs ſoever.

“But two Sorts of Things there were particularly that might hinder many from ſubſcribing to the Common Prayer Book, and which he wiſhed might be amended: *viz.* Firſt, Such as could not be defended: And Secondly, Such as with a favourable Interpretation might ſtand, yet gave the Adverſary ſhrewd Advantage.

“The which Things with ſome others, (as *Private Baptiſm* by any preſent, and *Communicating* the Sick with the Miniſter only) in the Beginning of her Majeſties Reign, when ſome of the Biſhops were charged with by the Learned of foreign Churches; they in this wiſe excuſed themſelves; as I myſelf (added *Withers*) ſaw in their Letters of Anſwer; which by Mr. *Bullinger* and *Gualter* were ſhewed me at *Zurick*, in the Year 1567. Namely, that they, nor none of them were of the Parliament Houſe at paſſing of the Book, and that they had therefore no Voice in making of the Law. But that after it was paſt, they being choſen to be Biſhops, muſt either content themſelves to take their Place, as Things were, or elſe leave them to Papiſts, or to them which were not much better, that is, to *Lutherans*. But that in the mean Time they both profeſſed not to urge their Brethren to thoſe Things, and alſo when Opportunity ſhould ſerve, to ſeek Refor-

“ mation of them. Divers other Scruples and Objections are in that Letter enumerated againſt the Common Prayer. But I chuſe rather to leave them to be read at large in the Letter. See the *Appendix*. This *Withers* was formerly a Miniſter in St. *Edmunds Bury*, and one that refuſed wearing the Habits; but upon Suſpenſion, complied, in a Letter writ by him to Archbiſhop *Parker*, in the Year 1565.

Num. XXXIII.

Life of Archbiſhop Parker, *Book* III. *Ch.* 1.

Divers of theſe ſcrupulous Miniſters that had Livings in the County of *Suffolk*, were proſecuted for divers Neglects or Variations in the Performance of the Publick Service: As not wearing the Surplice in their Miniſtration, omitting the Sign of the Croſs in Baptiſm, and the Ring in Marriage; altering ſome Words in the ſolemnization of Matrimony: and the Non-obſerving of Ceremonies. For theſe Things they were informed againſt, and ſome of them indicted and arreined. Upon this, ſome of the Gentlemen and Juſtices of the Peace in thoſe Parts made a Supplication and Complaint to the Queens Privy Council. Aggravating the Matter, and praying a Redreſs of certain ignominious Injuries offered to them, and to certain godly Miniſters, by divers and ſundry in the ſame County, not favouring the true Reformation of Religion, as they informed. And thus they declared their Grievance:

Puritan *Miniſters in* Suffolk, *proſecuted.*

Addreſs hereupon of ſome Gentlemen to the Council.

“ We ſee, Right Honourable, by too long and lamentable Experience, that the State of the Church (eſpecially in our Parts) groweth every Day more ſick than other; and they, whom it moſt concerneth, have been ſo careleſs in providing the Means, as the Hope of her Recovery waxeth almoſt deſperate. Which enforceth us, as in all former Times, ſo now eſpecially to reſort unto your good Lordſhips, whoſe Hearts God hath ſeaſoned with a tender Care of his Glory, and the Beauty of his Place, whoſe Walls and Bulwarks you tell; and whom we know it would pity to ſee them in the Duſt.

“ Theſe Towers of *Sion*, the painful Paſtors and Miniſters of the Word, by what Malice we know not, they are marſhalled with the worſt Malefactors: Preſented, indicted arreined, and condemned for Matters, as we preſume, of very ſlender Moment. Some for leaving the Holy Days unbidden; ſome for ſinging the Pſalm, *Nunc Dimittis*, in the Morning; ſome for turning the Queſtions in Baptiſm concerning Faith from the Infants to the Godfathers. Which is but *You* for *Thou:* Some for leaving out the Croſs in Baptiſm: Some for leaving out the Ring in Marriage. Whereupon the Law, neither the Law-maker, in our Judgments had ever Regard, but meant indeed to bridle the Enemy. Yet now, (a moſt pitiful Thing to ſee) the Back of this Law turned to the Adverſary, and the Edge with all the Sharpneſs laid upon the ſound and true hearted Subject.

“ We grant Order to be the Rule of the Spirit of God. We deſire one Uniformity in all the Duties of the Church; the ſame being agreeable to the *Proportion of Faith*. But if theſe weak Ceremonies (and their like) be ſo indifferent, as their Uſe, or not Uſe, may be left to the Diſcretion of the Miniſters, we think it in Duty (and under your favourable Correction we ſpeak it) very hard

Ceremonies.

ANNO 1583.

“hard to have them go under ſo hard Handling, to the utter Diſcredit of the whole Miniſtry, and Profeſſion of Truth. And, which is more, we, that be Magiſtrates, and under her Majeſty, have, as we think, Equivalency of Voice; and know that Law and Juſtice is one, and may not be avoided, do forbear to ſpeak what we know, leſt by our ſevering in Opinion, Law ſhould be rent, and Juſtice cut in twain. And ſo the Minds of the People, which are ſo eaſily diſtracted, carried hither and thither, to the moving of further Inconvenience. And ſo by our Silence, Miniſtry and Magiſtracy brought into open Contempt.

The Law.

Family of Love, Anabaptiſts, &c.

“If therefore it may be lawful to ſpeak but Truth for ourſelves, this is our Courſe: We ſerve her Majeſty and the Country; not according to our Fantaſies, as the World falſly bears us in Hand, but according to the Law and Statutes of *England*. We reverence both the Law, and the Law-maker. Law ſpeaketh, and we keep ſilence. Law commandeth, and we obey. Without Law we know, that no Man can poſſeſs his own in Peace. By Law we proceed againſt all Offenders: We touch none that Law ſpareth, we ſpare none that Law toucheth. *Hinc illæ Lachrymæ.* We allow not of the Papiſts their treacherous Subtilties and Hypocriſies. We allow not of the *Family of Love*, an Egg of the ſame Neſt. We allow not of the *Anabaptiſts*, nor of their Community. We allow not of *Browne*, the overthrower of Church and Commonwealth. We abhor all theſe. No, [we] puniſh all theſe.

Puritaniſm.

Jeſuits.

“But now humbly upon our Knees, we pray your good Lordſhips to give us leave to advertiſe you, how the Adverſary very cunningly hath Chriſtened us with an odious Name, neither rightly applied, nor ſurely rightly underſtood: To the End, no doubt, that we being occupied in the Defence of our Innocence, they might have the greater Freedom to go about their hateful Treacheries. It is the Name of *Puritaniſm*. We deteſt both the Name and Hereſy. It is a Term compounded of all other Hereſies aforeſaid. The Papiſt is *pure* and immaculate. He hath Store of Goodneſs for himſelf, and Plenty for others. The *Family* cannot ſin. They be ſo *pure*, that God is *Hominified* in them, and they *Deified* in God. But we, Thanks be to God, do cry in the Bitterneſs of our Souls, *Peccavimus cum patribus noſtris*. We groan under the Burden of our Sins. We confeſs that there be none worſe before God. And yet before the World we labour to keep ourſelves, and our Profeſſion unblameable. This is our *Puritaniſm*. It pleaſeth them to uſe this Name to Miniſters, to Magiſtrates, and to others; eſpecially to ſuch as have an Eye to their Juggling. And the Name being odious many Times with the ignorant Sort, it maketh the Perſon odious. A ſhrewd Device; and herewith ſomewhat dangerous. For we know, that every ſimple Man in theſe Parts (Thanks be to God and her Majeſty) by hearing the Word of God read and preached, do condemn and contemn the groſs Errors and Trumpery of *Rome*. But the Subtilties of *Rome* are not ſo ſoon eſpied. *Jeſuits* and *Seminaries* are not odious Names with Papiſts. And if in Time ſuch might be lodged here by the Popes Harbingers, and

ANNO 1583.

“good Subjects cunningly wounded with lewd Titles and Names falſely applied, God ſave his Church, our Queen and Realm.

“We very humbly deſire, Right Honourable, not to become offenſive unto you, either in Length, or in ſo plain Delivery of this Matter. For were the Cauſe but ours only, we ſhould bear and forbear; but when it ſtretcheth even to the perilling of Church or Common-wealth, or both, (for they cannot, but as Twins live and die together) and unleſs we would forget all Duty to God and Man, and ſuffer an Invaſion of all Order, we cannot but unfold before your Honourable Judgments, the Particulars of that ſo great Diſcomfort. If your good Lordſhips ſhall pleaſe to call us to the Trial and Proof of theſe Matters, it is the Thing we moſt deſire. If otherwiſe you ſhall think good to diſpoſe another Courſe, as we are moſt bound, ſo moſt ready, to ſubmit all to your graver Wiſdom.

“Our God for his Chriſts Sake bleſs all your Studies and Labours, employed for the Preſervation of her Majeſties godly and peaceable Government of this Land, and the free Paſſage of the Goſpel, the Root of all the Reſt. That not we alone, but the Age to come, may ſpeak of your Praiſes in all the Streets and Corners of our City. So moſt humbly recommending ourſelves and our beſt Service to your continual Commandments, do take our Leave.

This earneſt Addreſs ſeems to have had ſome Succeſs with the Lords; eſpecially as to the rigorous Dealing with ſome of the Miniſters, for ſome Omiſſions or Variations in the Uſe of the Book; chiefly by Information of Inqueſts of ſome not well affected to Religion: As appeareth by ſome Inſtructions to the Judges in the Aſſizes of this Circuit about them. For there was, adjoining to the former Supplication, another Paper directed to the Judges, thus endorſed: *A Letter of the Council to the Judges of Aſſize:* Which ran in theſe Words:

Letters from the Council to the Judges of Aſſize about the Puritans.

“After our very harty Commendations. Whereas we are informed, that heretofore at the Aſſizes in your Circuit, divers good Preachers, and other godly diſpoſed have been indicted, (by Colour of Law) for Things not ſo much againſt the Matter and very Meaning of the Law, as in ſome Shew ſwerving from the Letter thereof. Namely, for not uſing the Surplice; reſorting to Sermons in other Pariſhes for Want at home; leaving out ſome Collects on the Days of Preaching; for uſing private Prayers in their Houſes, and ſuch like. All which we ſuppoſe cometh to paſs by the Practice of ſome Informers, not ſo well diſpoſed in Religion; as alſo, of Men returned upon great Inqueſts, many Times ſuch as be ſtill in Ignorance, and cannot brook the Goſpel; and being in love with the Licence of former Times, cannot ſo well endure the preſent plain Teachers: Who, by laying open their Faults, would draw them to a more preciſe and Goſpel-like Life.

“Theſe are therefore to deſire you, and heartily to pray you, that in every Sitting of your Circuit, you ſift and examine the Affection of ſuch Informers touching Religion; and thereafter

ANNO 1583.

“ give ear unto them. As alſo to have a ſpecial Regard, that the Inqueſt at large may be religious, wiſe and honeſt. And if notwithſtanding your Diligence in this Behalf, ſuch Juries nevertheleſs creep in, as by like Information moleſt good Men; that yet your Speech, and whole Proceedings againſt them, at the Bar, or elſewhere called before you, may be according to their Quality: Not matching them at Bar, or in the Judgment, with Rogues, Felons or Papiſts; but rather giving Appearance in the Face of the Country, what Difference you hold between Papiſts diſſenting from us in Subſtance of Faith to God, and Loyalty to our Prince, and theſe other Men; which making ſome Conſcience in theſe Ceremonies, do yet diligently and ſoundly preach true Religion, and Obedience to her Majeſty; maintaining the common Peace in themſelves, and in their Auditors. So ſhall the Country learn thereby, at the Aſſizes, better to reverence the Goſpel, and love the Miniſters and Profeſſors thereof. Thus promiſing our ſelves thus much at your Hands, we bid you heartily Farewel.

Browne *and other Sectariſts in* Bury.

As in *Suffolk*, ſo chiefly about *Bury* S. *Edmunds* were no ſmall Numbers of ſuch as were affected with groſs Errors and Hereſies; and that brake off all Communion with the Church. Some of the chief of theſe were *Robert Browne*, (of whom ſomewhat before) and *Harriſon*, Teachers. Who writ and diſperſed Books of very ill Principles. And *Copping* and *Fawker*, great Diſperſers of them. And one *Tho. Gibſon*, in a Church of the ſaid Town, had cauſed to be written an infamous Inſcription about the Queens Arms, ſtiling her *Jezebel*, as was ſhewn before.

Called at an Aſſizes there, and puniſhed.

Theſe Perſons laſt named, at an Aſſizes held at *Bury* this Year, were called into Queſtion; and ſeverely puniſhed; Sir *Chriſtopher Wray* going that Circuit. They were charged for denying the Queens Supremacy. The Trial of theſe, and their Judgment was declared in an Account given thereof by the ſame Judge to the Lord Treaſurer: “That *Elias Fawker* (ſo writ in the Judges Letter) *John Coppinge*, and *Tho. Gibſon*, were convicted for diſperſing *Brownes* Books, and *Harriſons* Books. The firſt two executed in the Time of the Aſſizes. The former on *Thurſday*, the other on *Friday*. The Book acknowledged her Majeſty *Civilly*. But ſo was their Terms and no further. And though Dr. *Stil* [the Archbiſhops Chaplain] and others, travailed and conferred with them, yet they were at that very Time of their Death unmoveably of the ſame Mind.

Browniſts, *their Charge and Crime.* Stows, *Anno* 4to. p. 1174.

Theſe *Browniſts* (for ſo was the Sect called) and the Cauſe of their Puniſhment, are thus given us in one of our Hiſtorians: “*Elias Thacker* was hanged at S. *Edm. Bury* in *Suffolk*, *June* the 4th. And *John Copping* on the 6th of the ſame: For ſpreading certain Books ſeditiouſly penned by *Rob. Browne*, againſt the Book of Common Prayer, eſtabliſhed by the Laws of this Realm.” Their Books, as many as could be found, were burnt before them. But here he that reads this muſt be cautious, how he underſtandeth the Cauſe of their Execution extending to Death. For it appears by the Judges Letter, that it was for their denial of the Queens Supremacy in all Cauſes. Which they allowed only in *Civil.* And this chiefly the Judges thought fit to take hold of in the Book.

Papiſts convicted at the Aſſizes at Bury.

And as there were brought into Judgment at this Aſſize divers of the *Puritan* Sect, ſo alſo there were convicted here ſeveral of the Popiſh Faction. From whence was apprehended great Danger at this Time. Whereof the ſaid Lord Chief Juſtice *Wray* informed the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, in the Beginning of his ſaid Letter, *viz.* "That he would pleaſe to be advertiſed of their Proceedings in that Aſſizes at *Bury*, and of the State of that Country. That there were convicted divers Gentlemen for Recuſancy and Papiſtry: Who were ſent in by the Biſhop [*i. e.* of the Dioceſs.] As Mr. *Hare*, Mr. *Sullyard*, and *Marten* and others, to the Number of Seven. Who all continued in their Obſtinacy. That there were ſome others, to the Number of Three, brought in by the Sheriff. All which did reform themſelves; and ſo were diſcharged. All the reſt appeared not, but *Non eſt inventus*, returned upon every of them.

"That theſe Gentlemen that were convicted, as the Biſhop ſaid, were committed to him by my Lords of the Council. And ſo were his Priſoners; deſiring after Conviction to have them again. But that becauſe after their Conviction this Time Twelve Month, he ſuffered them ever ſithence, for the moſt Part to be at large, we [*viz.* the Judges] have taken Bonds of them, either to pay the Money at the End of three Months, or elſe to render their Bodies to the Goal, according to the Statute." Adding, "Their Bonds we take by Diſcretion. For the Law is, they ſhould pay it within three Months, or elſe be impriſoned." And then leaving this Matter between the Biſhop and them [the Judges] to the Privy Council, they thus concluded, "That if their Lordſhips Pleaſure were, that they ſhould continue the Biſhop's Priſoners, and in Bonds to him there, it was Reaſon they ſhould be diſcharged of the Bonds, they [the Judges] had taken. But if their Lordſhips thought better of their Bonds, then they were to be diſcharged of the Biſhops Bonds.

The Popiſh Cauſe in the mean Time was earneſtly carried on by the *Engliſh Roman* Catholicks abroad; which did confirm the more the ſaid Faction at home. This the Learned did by their Books.

The Seminary at Rhemes *ſet forth Books.*

The *Engliſh* Seminary College at *Rhemes*, had laboured ſome few Years ago to promote their Cauſe, by making and publiſhing an *Engliſh* Tranſlation of the *New Teſtament*; thereby to expoſe our *Engliſh* Tranſlation, and to make the Scripture ſpeak favourably of their Church and Religion. Of which we ſhall relate other Particulars afterwards. Now this Year they ſet forth certain Diſputations called *Theſes*, of three of their learned Men, *viz. Gifford*, *Raynolds*, and *Foſter*. They were printed in three large Sheets of Paper. Each dedicated to ſome great Man, with an Epiſtle. Theſe Diſputations I found among the Lord *Burghleys* Papers: Which were thus endorſed by his own Hand, *Theſes Theologicæ Anglorum Rhemenſium.*

Theſes Anglorum Rhemenſium.

The firſt is made by *Will. Gifford* to *Lewis*, the Cardinal of *Lorain*, Archbiſhop and Duke of *Rhemes*. The *Theſes* are, *De Cultu externo, contra Hæreticos.* Beginning with *De Sacramentis in ge-*

ANNO 1583.

nere. And then treating of the ſeven Sacraments in particular. And after, *De Oratione & aliis Officiis, quibus extra Sacramenta colitur Deus.*

The ſecond Diſputant was *Will. Raynold*, of the ſame College of *Rhemes*. His *Theſes* were, *De Eccleſia, ejuſque Monarchia, & Hierarchia.* Dedicated in an Epiſtle to *John Baptiſt*, Biſhop of *Ariminum*, and Apoſtolical *Nuncio* to the moſt Chriſtian King. He hath a *Theſis*, after that of the Church, *De Conciliis.*

The Third Diſputant of the ſame College was *Seth Foſter*. Who dedicated his *Theſes* to *Philip Boncompagnoun*, Cardinal, and Protector of the *Engliſh* Colleges. His *Theſis* bore this Title: *Aſſertiones de vera Hominis juſtificatione; Contra Hæreticos hujus Temporis.*

A Book of Dr. Allen *in Behalf of the* Engliſh *Catholicks.*

About this Year another Book was written in Favour of the *Engliſh* Catholicks; the Author Dr. *Allen*, afterwards Cardinal *Allen*. Intitled, *A Defence of the Engliſh Catholicks:* And was in Anſwer to a Book called, *The Execution of Juſtice in* England; againſt thoſe Seminaries, *Campion* and other Popiſh Traitors lately executed. Of this Book of *Allens* take this Remark. That it was ſent to Dr. *Parry* (of whom before) out of *France*; or he met with it there: And he lent it unto *Edmund Nevyl*, to confirm him, as it had done *Parry* himſelf, to kill the Queen: How it confirmed *Parry*, his Confeſſion ſhewed. “That it redoubled his former Conceits: That every Word in it was a Warrant to a prepared Mind. It taught, that Kings might be excommunicated, deprived, and violently handled. It proved, that all Civil Wars, or Foreign, undertaken for Religion, were honourable.

Fowlis *Pop. Treaſ.* p. 340.

Parries Letters from France, *&c.*

And now we are fallen upon *Parry*, as we have expoſed ſome of his Hypocritical Letters before, and his Pretences of Loyalty, when nothing but vile Falſeneſs was at the Bottom; ſo now I ſhall preſent one or two more of his Letters from *Lions* and *Paris*. Where we ſhall ſee his pretended great Officiouſneſs to ſerve the Queen abroad, and to be a Spy upon her Enemies, and Informer of Occurrences on her Behalf. But his previous Concern was, that the Lord Treaſurer ſhould believe him a *True Man:* Thus he wrote from *Venice* the latter End of the former Year.

His Intelligence from Lions. *Recommends one for* Venice.

From *Lions* in *France* he addreſt a Letter, dated the 18th of *June* to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer. Therein he recommended a fit Perſon for the *Engliſh* Courts private Intelligencer in *Venice*, when he was gone. Whom he had before commended to Mr. Secretary; being a very ſufficient Man to be entertained there for her Majeſties Service. That he was beloved, well acquainted and eſteemed among the *Venetian* Gentlemen. And that he was greatly affected to our State, and very ready to ſerve, if his Lordſhip and Mr. Secretary ſhould think good to uſe him: And that he was Reſident, as he thought, for ſome of the greateſt Princes in *Germany*. And he added, that he could aſſure his Lordſhip, that he was a very honeſt, ſufficient Man.

Umpton.

His further Intelligence in this Letter was, “Concerning Mr. *Arundel*, [a buſy Man] that he was departed thence for *England*. And concerning Mr. *Umpton*, [the Queens Ambaſſador in *France*]

“ that he ſpake very great Honour of his Lordſhip, and confeſſed “ himſelf moſt deeply bound to the ſame; and vowed all Readineſs “ in him to ſerve his Lordſhip. That he was a very proper and “ thankful Gentleman, full of Devotion to his Prince and Country: Adding theſe Words, (ſhewing his pretended Loyalty) *I would to Chriſt* England *bred no other*. Concerning *Ireland* thus he informed, “ That the *Iriſh* Practice was never more hotly ſollicited: But all “ were deaf that ſhould hear, and began to deſpair of any Good to “ be ſeen in their Time in *England*. And ſo concludes with a Prayer, (that came not from his Heart.) “ Which [*i. e. England*] “ God will, I truſt, as he hath long, preſerve.

Ireland.

And from Paris.

Again, ſome Months after I find him at *Paris*. Whence in *October* he writ again a Letter to the Treaſurer to no great Import, but of the Coming of Sir *Edward Stafford* thither, to be the Queens Reſident: And in his Retinue Mr. *Will. Cecil* (the ſaid Lord Treaſurers Grandſon) whom he found there in his Travails. Of whom he gave a good Character, knowing how acceptable it muſt be to that Lord, his Grandfather, *viz.* “ That his good Nature and Towardneſs began to make a very good Shew already. That he [*Parry*] “ would do his beſt to make it appear, how much he was bound to “ his Lordſhip. And concerning one Mr. *Bird*, whom his Lordſhip had appointed to be his Governour, and to attend him in his Journey, he added, “ That his Lordſhip in his Opinion had made a very good “ Choice of him; Whoſe Government and Care of Mr. *Cecil* could “ not be amended. That he was very well lodged in good Air and “ Neighbourhood. And that Mr. *Pallavicini*, [an eminent *Italian* Merchant in *London*, now there as it ſeems in ſome of the Queens Buſineſs] had eſpecial Care of him; and ſo had my Lord Ambaſſador, and his Lady.

Will. Cecil *at* Paris.

I forbear to ſay any thing more of this Man, till next Year, when he was come home, and his Treaſon diſcovered.

One Touker *in the Inquiſition comes home.*

There was next, returning Home from *Rome* one *Francis Touker*, or *Tucker* a Merchant that had been in the *Inquiſition* there. And who afterwards was very inſtrumental to the Lord Treaſurer, in giving Information of ſuch ill-affected Perſons, whom he had known at *Rome*, or *Italy*: being recommended to that Lord by Sir *Richard Shelley*: telling him in one of his Letters that he was now coming home: And adviſed that Lord to talk at Length with him, and to take particular Information by him: Whom he took to be a very honeſt Man. And again in a Letter, (whereof this *Touker* was the Bearer) he ſhewed that Lord, how fit a Perſon he was to give Information and Intelligence; “ Who going and coming as a Merchant; and “ now ſo warranted in *Rome* and *Naples*, and being languaged and “ expert, and bearing ſo true a Heart to his Country, as he [*Shelly*] “ had conceived by his reſorting to him; ſhould be able to diſcover “ to him the Humour that then ran abroad towards our Country. “ Which he aſſured his Lordſhip had been lofty and threatning; “ and at that preſent Time more than ever, without Reſpect, [meaning perhaps of the Perſon of the Queen herſelf.] As he alſo mentioned to that Lord, for the ſame Purpoſe, another *Engliſhman*, named *Pyne*, lately alſo delivered out of the *Inquiſition*; to diſcourſe

Fit to give Intelligence.

with him, when he came into *England:* It being ſo neceſſary to know as much as might be of the *Engliſh*, and their Practices there at *Rome*.

Makes Diſcoveries of the Engliſh *at* Rome.

Of the former the ſaid Lord made uſe, and employed him when he came into *England:* And he became an uſeful Perſon in giving Information concerning divers dangerous Papiſts then in *England*, that came from abroad: Concealing himſelf, as though he were a Friend to the Fugitives, for the more Advantage of his Coverſation with them. He had been in the *Marſhalſea* by that Lords private Order, (where were committed divers of that Sort) to view thoſe Priſoners, and to talk with them: Some whereof were his Acquaintance at *Rome:* Whence he might get ſome more Knowledge of their Affairs. I have before me a Letter of this *Tucker* or *Touker*, to that Lord, informing him what he had done, and what Diſcoveries he had made, *viz.*

Informs concerning ſome in the Marſhalſea.

“ That he had been three Times at the *Marſhalſea:* And found there one *Tither*; with whom he was acquainted in *Rome*. And that upon his Requeſt *Tither* promiſed to ſend to *Rome*, to the Rector of the *Engliſh* Seminary there, to get one *Chr. Tater* delivered out of the Gallies, to which he had been condemned by the *Inquiſition*, with another *Engliſhman*. This *Taters* Wife had made her Intereſt with *Touker* to obtain this Favour of *Tither*. She alſo laboured by the Means of him and others in the *Marſhalſea*, to get a Letter from the Queen of *Scots* to the Pope, for the more effectual obtaining her Husbands Deliverance. And alſo to get a Letter from *Feckenham* (ſometime Abbot of *Weſtminſter*) to the Cardinal there. The ſame *Tither*, having a Correſpondence in *Rome*, proferred to convey *Toukers* Letters to *Fitz Herbord*, ſome great *Engliſhman* there. Alſo, he bade him beware of one *Woodward*; who had ſerved Dr. *Wendon* in *Rome*. Who now it ſeems diſcovered too much of the *Engliſh* Doings there.

The Pope creates a Biſhop of Roſs.

He added alſo, in his ſaid Letter to the Treaſurer, this Intelligence, “ That there came in *April* laſt from *Rome* to *Naples*, an *Iriſhman:* Whom the Pope created Biſhop of *Roſs*, in *Ireland*; and gave him Authority to make Prieſts. By which Authority he gave Orders to as many as came, and got much Money. And that the Archbiſhop of *Naples* forbad him; but the Pope's Nuncio maintained his Doings. And when he went from *Naples* he carried with him great Store of *Pardons* and *Agnos Dei*'s, to the Pope's Friends in *Ireland*. I forbear repeating other Informations in this Letter: Leaving the Whole to be read in the *Appendix*.

Num. XXXV.

An Enemy to England.

Concerning this Biſhop of *Roſs*, Sir *Richard Shelley* in his Correſpondence with the Lord Treaſurer, informed, that he was one of *Stewklies* great Counſillors; and addeth, That the Realm and his Lordſhip eſpecially, had a perilous and a ſpightful Enemy of him.

Dr. Lewis *come from* Rome.

Such another was Dr. *Lewis* in *Rome*. Whoſe Character the ſaid *Shelley* gave that Lord, and adviſing him of his being now come home from thence: Who was another of *Stewklies* Counſillors. And that he was here in good Repute: Which he wondered at. He adviſed that Lord to beware of him; and he eſpecially, of all Men living. And that he was the deepeſt and doubleſt Diſſembler, that ever he knew ſince he was born; who had now, (as he added) lived in the World threeſcore and four Years.

Among

ANNO 1583.

Dr. Oxenbridge *in* Wiſbich Caſtle, *ſubmits.*

Among the *Roman Catholicks* here at home, divers were taken up, and impriſoned in *Wisbich* Caſtle; for Refuſal to take the Oath of *Supremacy*. Among theſe was one *Oxenbridge*, LL. D. But this Year he ſubmitted; owning the Queen for ſupream on Earth. Which he did under his Hand in theſe Words following: Written *May* the 14. 1583. from *Wisbich* Caſtle. "I *Andrew Oxenbridge* Doctor of Laws, do frankly, and from my Heart acknowledge and avow her moſt gracious Lady *Elizabeth*, now Queen of *England*, to be moſt rightful and lawful Queen thereof *De jure*: As whereof ſhe is moſt juſtly poſſeſt from the firſt Day of her Reign, till now. And to her Majeſty alone, as to my moſt juſt and ſole Sovereign Magiſtrate, I owe all my Loyalty, Service, and whole Duty of Subjection, next under God. And even ſo will I repute her Majeſty during Life; againſt the Bull, if any, be it of *Pius* V. *Gregory*, or any other Pope, heretofore or hereafter.

Acknowledgeth the Queens Supremacy.

"Furthermore, if any Man pretending Catholick *Roman* Religion, be of Mind, that the Pope for one Cauſe or other, may depoſe her, or diſpenſe with her Subjects Oath and Loyalty; I hold it a traiterous Article: Such as I do not believe, but contrarily am ready, and vow to ſpend my Life and Goods, for the Peace and Quiet of Queen *Elizabeth*, and this preſent State, againſt whatſoever Invader, Diſturber, or Underminer, by what Authority and Bull, or Direction ſoever he ſhall do it, of Prince or Prieſt, Potentate or Prelate, namely, of the Pope himſelf: By what Juriſdiction, Power, or Name, be it ſoever he command.

"And as touching Matter of Religion, to avoid all Shew of obſtinate holding any thing by me once received; I promiſe, that if in Conference with any learned Man, (which being ſent by Authority, I will willingly admit) he can convince me, by the only Scriptures of the old and new Teſtament, to hold any Error, I will yield me to better Reaſon, and thank God.

"All this I proteſt ſimply and plainly, according to the plain Senſe of the Words; abhorring all hidden Sophiſtication, and diſſembled Reſervation of private Senſe, or ſecret Interpretation; which may never ſo little impeach, qualify or modify the Expreſſion moſt common and readieſt taking off the very Words, as they lie and offer themſelves without forced Underſtanding.

Per me Andream Oxenbrege.

CHAP.

ANNO 1583.

CHAP. XVII.

A Project *for Prevention of falling away in Religion. The Validity of Popes* Bulls *in* England, *for* Pluralities, &c. *Controverſy between the Stationers of* London *and the Univerſity. One of* Kings College *expelled the Univerſity. And why. Books printed this Year. Biſhop* Jewels *Sermons.* De Juſtificatione, *by* J. Fox. *Sermons of* Faith, Hope, *and* Charity, *by* Bern. Ochine. Defence of the *Engliſh* Tranſlation, *by Dr.* Fulk. *The* Engliſh Rhemiſts *Teſtament.* Cartwright *ſets upon the Confutation of it.* The Practice of Prelates. Jeſus Pſalter. Defenſative againſt the Poiſon of Prophecies, *by* L. Howard. Execution of Juſtice, for Maintenance of publick Peace. A Declaration of the favourable Dealing with certain Traitors. A Report of the Diſcovery of *New found Land. L.* Latymer *comes from* France. *Suſpected; and taken up. Dean* Wottons *Legations. L.* Wentworth *dies. Coiners.*

Reſolution of the Council againſt Papiſts.

THE Eyes of the Queen and her Friends were now open, and ſaw well the treacherous Deſigns of the *Engliſh* Papiſts, to overthrow her and her Government, and to place the *Scots* Queen in the *Engliſh* Throne: Aſſiſtance being alſo expected from *Spain* and other Popiſh Princes: And how buſy the *Seminaries* were every where, drawing away the Queens Subjects to Popery. And therefore it was the great Purpoſe of the Council to put the Laws of the Land more vigorouſly in Execution, and to proceed to the beſt and moſt effectual Methods to ſtop theſe evil Men, and to keep the Queens Subjects faithful to her, and the Religion eſtabliſhed. And Methods were thought of for this Purpoſe.

A Project propounded againſt falling away to Popery.

I find this Year among ſome Papers of State, a Paper intitled, *A Project for a Remedy, how to prevent the preſent falling away in Religion*; Namely, to that of *Rome*. This Paper ſeems to have been offered to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. For the Date is ſet on it by his own Hand: *viz. Nov.* 1583. Near after *Campions* Time. The Writing on this Paper followeth.

“ For the Stay of the preſent falling away, two Things are to
“ be provided. The one, that ſuch as are already become Recuſants,
“ may, with all Severity, abide and ſuſtain ſuch Puniſhment, as the
“ Law doth lay on them. That ſuch as be Ringleaders and

" Inſtructors in the Catholick Religion, may be kept ſo ſtraitly, as no " Acceſs may be had to them. And ſome Order taken, that they " may be in Chriſtian Sort conferred with by ſome learned Divines. " The other, how ſuch as are not already infected may be pre- " ſerved. Which is to be performed by theſe Ways following.

ANNO 1583.

I. " To provide, that there may be placed in all Paſtoral Charges " Men of that Zeal, that rather ſeek the Good than the Goods of " the Church.

II. " That ſuch Miniſters whoſe Life is Offenſive may be removed " out of the Church.

III. " That the People may be diligently catechiſed.

IV. " That Non-reſidents may be forced, either to continue upon " their Charges, or to contribute a Moyety of their Livings to ſuch " as ſhall ſupply their Places.

V. " That ſuch Books as are ſent out, impugning our Religion, " may be preſently anſwered.

" For the better Performance of theſe Points, the Remedies follow- " ing are to be put in Execution.

I. " For the Firſt, For that ſuch as be Patrons, and have the be- " ſtowing of Paſtoral Livings, have more Regard to their own par- " ticular Profit, than to the Benefit of the Church; and therefore " when the Biſhop miſliketh of their Choice, and refuſeth to admit " their Clerk, they bring a *Quare impedit* againſt the Biſhop: For " the Help thereof Order is to be taken by her Majeſty, that the " Proceedings therein may be ſtayed in all judicial Courts.

" It ſhall be alſo requiſite, that every Biſhop ſhall certify the ſe- " veral Cures throughout his Dioceſs; with what *Perſons* they are " now furniſhed: How many learned, and how many unlearned: " Who be the Patrons; and what Value the Livings be of.

" It is further to be provided, that the two Archbiſhops ſhall have " the Names of ſuch learned and ſufficient Miniſters, as are unplaced; " remaining as well in the Univerſities, as out of the Univerſities. " To the End, that when any Cures fall void, the Biſhop in whoſe " Dioceſs the ſame ſhall be, may advertiſe the Archbiſhop. And " ſo appoint ſome one of the Parties abovesaid, to ſupply the Place.

II. " For the Second, It ſhall be neceſſary, that a general Viſitation " may be had, and a Denuntiation may be made, that if any can " charge any Miniſter with offenſive Life, or that he is remiſs in " his Function, he ſhall be admitted to inform againſt him; whe- " ther he may be either reformed, or removed.

III. " For the due Execution of the Third, it ſhall be requiſite " in every Dioceſs, that certain of the beſt affected Preachers may " be appointed to ſee the ſame duly put in Practice. It ſhall be alſo " neceſſary, that a *Catechiſm* alſo may be made; that may contain " Anſwers to ſuch Objections as are made by the Adverſaries; to " ſerve the learned Sort.

IV. " For the Execution of the Fourth: Firſt, the Biſhops in their " Dioceſſes, where the ſaid Non-reſidents do remain, are to deal " with them by Perſuaſion to yield thereunto. Whereunto if they " cannot be induced, then are they to be referred over to the Lords " of the Privy Council.

V. “For the Fifth, Certain are to be appointed in the two Univerſities, to take upon them that Charge. Who for their better Encouragement are to receive ſome Reward, upon ſome Contribution to be levied for that Purpoſe.

“And whereas there is a kind of *Schiſm* grown in the Church for Matters held indifferent; which doth miniſter unto the Adverſary ſome Advantage; to the defacing of our Religion, it ſhall be very neceſſary, that ſome Way be taken, how this Schiſm may be helped

“For the better Execution thereof it is to be conſidered, that ſuch as are noted to be over-preciſe do not ſtand too much upon thoſe Things that are indifferent, as they do upon other great Abuſes in the Church: As followeth.

“That ignorant and unpreaching Miniſters ſhould be made: That *Non-reſidences* ſhould be tolerated. That *Excommunication*, which is the ſevereſt Cenſure of the Church, ſhould be abuſed, as it is. That the *Viſitation* of the Biſhops tend to the particular Profit of themſelves and their Chancellors; and none to the Redreſs of the Church. That divers Popiſh Canons continue ſtill in Uſe, to the Offence of the Godly. For the Redreſs whereof, no Care hath been had.

“And therefore if theſe and the like Abuſes might be removed, ſuch as ſtand upon ſome preciſe Points, being by the Biſhops in brotherly and charitable Sort deal withal, might be reduced to Conformity: And the Schiſm and Offence that now reigneth might be removed. Whereby they would all concur together in the Advancement of Religion, and withſtanding the common Enemy.

The Validity of Popes Bulls.

Abſtract of certain Acts of Parliament.

Pluralities and *Non-reſidences* formerly granted by *Bulls* from the Pope, occaſioned about this Year a notable Argument at Law, by two learned Lawyers, Sergeant *Fleetwood*, and Sergeant *Walmeſly*: the Latter, arguing for the Validity of a Bull from *Rome*: The Caſe was, “Whether a Bull, Brief, or any Faculty granted unto any Subject of this Realm from the See of *Rome* in the Time of Queen *Mary*, or elſe, &c. for the enjoying of many Benefices, or being Non-reſident, or ſuch like, be pleadable in any her Highneſſes Courts, or allowable within any of her Dominions. This Cauſe was argued at the Barr of *Common Pleas* between the two Sergeants; and paſſed by the Judgment of the whole Court, proved the contrary.

Controverſies at Cambridge *about a Printing Preſs there.*

If we look now towards the *Univerſities*, and the State of Learning; that of *Cambridge* reſented now an Injury done them by the *Stationers* Company of *London*. Who upon Pretence of their Privilege of Printing, would not allow a Printing Preſs at *Cambridge*; though it were a Privilege granted formerly to the Univerſity, and long enjoyed by them. The *Stationers* of *London* had now ſeized the Printing Preſs of *Thomas*, their Printer. Whereupon the Vice-Chancellor, Dr. *Bell*, and the reſt of their Heads apply to their High Chancellor, the Lord *Burghley*, to ſtop theſe Proceedings of this Company: Shewing the Injuries they had ſuſtained already, by hindering

ANNO 1583.

ing the Printing of Mr. *Whitakers* Book, [that, I ſuppoſe, writ againſt *Campions Ten Reaſons*] and others, ready for the Preſs; to the Prejudice of Learning. The *Stationers* Pretence was in reſpect of Schiſmatical Books in Danger to be publiſhed hence. And indeed there was ſuch an one printed the next Year: Which Archbiſhop *Whitgift* took notice of in one of his Letters. But to ſatisfy their Chancellor in that Point, they aſſured him, "That *Thomas* their Printer was "a godly and honeſt Man; and promiſed that their Preſs ſhould not "be abuſed, in publiſhing Things prohibited, or inconvenient for "the Church or State of the Realm. And this they promiſed the "rather, becauſe they had granted Liberty to him to uſe his Preſs, "upon Condition he ſhould ſtand bound to ſuch Articles as he, "their Chancellor, and the reſt of the Heads ſhould tye him to. "And as the Chancellor had made a Motion to them to come to a "Conference with the *Stationers* about this their Privilege, they "ſhewed themſelves willing thereunto, if they would ſend thither "ſome certain Man from them with ſufficient Authority for that "Purpoſe. But the whole Letter of the Vice-chancellor and Heads to their Chancellor concerning one of their Privileges, requires to be preſerved. *Vid. Appendix.* In Concluſion they prayed his Lordſhip that their Preſs might no longer be ſtopped.

Numb. [XXXV.]

The Stationers *Complaint to the Lord* Burghley *againſt the Univerſity.*

It may not be amiſs to give ſome further Account of this Univerſity Printing Preſs, from a Letter or two of the Lord *Burghley*, their Chancellor, in order to the ſettling this their Privilege, (which I received from a learned Member of that Univerſity) againſt the Company of *Stationers* of *London*, who had applied themſelves to the ſaid Chancellor: ſhewing him, beſides the Univerſities Encroachment upon their Privileges, certain Objections againſt their intender Printer, *Thomas*; and likewiſe the Danger of publiſhing ill and dangerous Books thence. Which occaſioned the ſaid Chancellor to ſend this grave Advice to Dr. *Bell*, the Vicechancellor, and the reſt of the Heads: *viz.*

His Letter to the Univerſity hereupon. T. Baker. S.Th.B.

"After his harty Commendations unto them; That whereas they "had been deſirous of late to put in Uſe a Privilege granted unto "them, among other Things, by King *Henry* VIII. for erecting of "Printing within that Univerſity, he found the ſame to be much "impugned by certain of the Company of *Stationers* there in *London*, having ſpecial Privileges from her Majeſty. Who beſides "ſeemed to caſt ſome Doubts, as well of the Prejudice that might "grow to them, as to the Party that ſhould enterprize to erect a "Print with them, as alſo of miſuſing of the ſame there; in publiſhing Things prohibited, or otherwiſe inconvenient; like as there "had been ſome like Abuſe by ſome evil diſpoſed Perſons of their "Company there. Though for Remedy thereof he thought it good, "and ſo were they very well contented therewith, that ſome Conference might be had by ſome to be choſen, as well of themſelves "[of the Univerſity] as of the Stationers there, or ſuch others, "to whom both ſhould think good to commit it, for ſome Proviſions to be had; and by Way of Articles to be accorded. That "therefore they ſhould do well to make Choice of ſome meet Perſons to be inſtructed, and authorized for that Purpoſe. Where-

“ upon the Party licenſed to be their Printer, might with the more
“ Security proceed to the erecting of his Print. And ſo he bad
“ them hartily farewel. From his Houſe in the *Strand*, the 11th of
“ *June*, 1583.

This Letter ſet the Vicechancellor and Heads on work, to deliberate, and proceed according to their Chancellors Directions. It was about eight Months after all Matters ſeemed to be accommodated; when the Vicechancellor and Heads ſent their Letters again to their Chancellor, and *Thomas*, their Printer, the Bearer: Of whom they gave a good Character. And the Chancellor ſoon replyed in another Letter; ſhewing them that he had conſulted with the Maſter of the *Rolls* of the Validity of their Charter. And therefore giving his Conſent, that *Thomas*, with ſome Conditions to be obſerved on his Part, ſhould be their Printer. For thus his Letter ran.

Lord Burghleys *Letter conſenting to a Printing Preſs at* Cambridge.

“ That he had received their Letters, dated the 12. of *March* by
“ the Bearer, Mr. *Thomas*, written in his Favour, being one of the
“ Univerſity, and deſirous to put in Uſe the Art of Printing there,
“ under the Privilege, granted by Charter. Wherein, beſides
“ his own Opinion, he thought good alſo to uſe the Advice of
“ the Maſter of the *Rolls*; who had conſidered likewiſe of their
“ Charter; whereof he [the Chancellor] had ſent him the Copy:
“ And that finding it in his Opinion concurring with his [the Chancellors]
“ a Grant of good Validity, he did aſſent to that which they
“ ſhould think fit, for the appointing Mr. *Thomas* to print by Virtue
“ thereof: Having Regard, that he be ſeen to be furniſhed with all
“ Things fit and requiſite for that Purpoſe: And that his Letters
“ and Paper were anſwerable with any the foreign Prints, and the
“ Prices likewiſe agreeable.

“ Of which Things, or any others to be thought of and conſidered
“ in this Matter, he added, that if they ſhould conceive ſome Inſtrument
“ by Way of Articles or Decree, he would be ready to give
“ his Aſſent and Furtherance, as ſhould be requiſite. And ſo he
“ bad them hartily Farewel. From his Houſe in the *Strand*, the
“ 18th of *March*, 1583.

And then by Way of Poſtſcript, this follows. “ I think it good,
“ that the Parties that ſhall be licenſed, or authoriſed to print, may
“ have their Authority with Condition, or otherwiſe bound, to ſtand
“ to the Order of the Chancellor, and the Heads, in Caſe of any
“ Cauſe of miſliking of the Uſe of the ſaid Authority.

One expelled for violating a Privilege of the Univerſity.

Another Privilege of this Univerſity was violated: And that by a Member of it. For which he was expelled this Year by Dr. *Bell* Vicechancellor: Namely, one *Robert Lileſs*, Fellow of *Kings* College; long Time a contentious, troubleſome Party-Man in that College, againſt Dr. *Roger Goad*, the Provoſt. His Crime was, for proſecuting an Infamy againſt one *Mounteford*, unjuſtly and maliciouſly, *Coram Extraneis Judicibus*. Thereby violating the Privileges of the Univerſity.

The Character of him and his Behaviour.

This *Lileſs* many Years after, (*viz. Anno* 1594) took the Opportunity of getting a Letter from the Lord *Burghley* to the Biſhop of *Lincoln*, Viſitor of that College, for his Reſtitution: Complaining

ANNO 1583.

to that Lord, that Univerſities Chancellor, how he was expelled the College by Dr. *Goad*, the Provoſt, unjuſtly. The Report of this coming to the ſaid Provoſt, he delayed not to addreſs his Letter to the ſaid Chancellor: Certifying him, that he was not expelled the College by any Act of the College; but by the Sentence of his Lordſhips Vicechancellor, with the Conſent of the Heads about eleven Years paſt, upon his notorious Violation of the Univerſities Privileges, baniſhed the Univerſity: And that not without his Lordſhips Privity: And ſo could no longer be a Member of their College. Then he ſignifyed ſomewhat of his Knowledge of this Man, and his troubleſome Courſe of Life formerly in the College. “How he
“ dealt from Time to Time ſince his Baniſhment in troubling the
“ Quiet of the College; and continually ſolliciting the younger
“ Sort to Diſcontentment and Faction. And that in a late Di-
“ ſtraction of that Company, he entred into a Plot concerning ſome
“ one, that ſhould ſucceed in his [the Provoſts] room.

It ſeems there was a Faction ſtill in the College againſt the Provoſt, Dr. *Goad*; and a ſecret Endeavour on foot, to turn him out, and get another in his Place: And *Lileſs* buſy in this Conſpiracy. And this Perſon that was to ſucceed was thought by himſelf and his Party, to have ſuch Authority and Strength by his Friends that he could not be withſtood. But the Provoſt ſtill maintained his Place.

With regard to *Learning* ſome Account may be given of divers Books that were this Year ſet forth. As,

Books ſet forth this Year.

An *Expoſition* upon the Second Epiſtle to the *Theſſalonians*: By the Reverend Father *John Jewel*, Biſhop of *Sarum*. Printed and publiſhed this Year by *J. Garbrand*. Which Book was printed again among that Biſhops Works in *Fol.* Alſo this Year the ſame Perſon ſet forth certain Sermons, preached before the Queen, and at *Pauls Croſs*. Whereunto was added a ſhort Treatiſe of the Sacrament; gathered out of other his Sermons made upon that Subject, in his Cathedral Church of *Salisbury*. And printed by *Chr. Barker*, the Queens Printer, in *Octavo*. Dedicated by *Garbrand* to the Lord *Burghley*, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*, Chancellors of the two Univerſities.

Sermons and Diſcourſes of Biſhop Jewel.

The firſt of thoſe Sermons was preached upon *Joſ.* VI. *Now* Jericho *was ſtraitly ſhut up*, &c. It was preached upon the 17th Day of *November*. Wherein were theſe remarkable Words, (and we of this Kingdom have a Concern herein to this Day.) “Upon this
“ Day, upon this Day, I ſay, the XVIIth of this Month, God ſent
“ his Handmaid, and delivered us. Let us be kind and thankful
“ unto God for ſo great Bleſſing. I ſay not, let us make it the firſt
“ Day of the Year; yet this, I ſay, let us have it in remembrance,
“ and let us ſing with the Prophet, *When the Lord brought again* Pſal. cxxvi.
“ *the Captivity of* Sion, *we were like them that dream. Then was*
“ *our Mouth filled with Laughter, and our Tongue with Joy*, &c.
“ *The Lord hath done great Things for us*. Let no Man be of-
“ fended herewith. It is only a *Remembrance* of the Mercy of God.
“ It behoveth us to remember it. It is good to bethink ourſelves of
“ it. For if we have Eyes to ſee, and neglect not our own Salva-

“ tion,

ANNO 1583. “tion, we have now much greater Cauſe to rejoyce, than *David* “had. Becauſe the Things which are this Day reſtored unto us by “the Goodneſs of our God, are far greater and worthy [namely, “the Bleſſing of the Goſpel] than thoſe which that People received “in their Deliverance of *Babylon.*

They are ſix Sermons: And beſide, at the End that Treatiſe of the Sacraments; is another, being the *Proteſtant Way* [in difference from the Popiſh Way] of *viſiting the Sick.*

Account of this Biſhops Sermons. *Garbrand* tells us in his Epiſtle before thoſe Sermons, That Biſhop *Jewel* did ſeldom or never deliver any Expoſition upon any Piece of Scripture, before any Congregation in the meaneſt Pariſh of the Country, but upon diligent Study, whereof he drew the Notes firſt: “And that in this his Care Gods Providence wrought mercifully for “his Church. That ſo the Fruits of his good Travails might be “delivered in common unto all; ——That if any ſhould be ſo curious to aſk why he [the Publiſher] choſe theſe among ſo many “excellent Sermons, let him, anſwered he, adviſedly conſider the “State of Gods Church among us in theſe Days, and beſtow the “Pains to read theſe that were offered to his Chriſtian Judgment, “[being ſo ſeaſonable for the Times] and then make to himſelf a “charitable Anſwer. That in theſe Sermons he moved his Petition “ſundry Times, before the Conſcience either of her Highneſs, or “of the Lords, or others under, in true Zeal for the Advancement “of Gods Glory; and like a wiſe Builder of the Houſe of God, *&c.* “And in this Rehearſal of theſe Sermons together, they would no “doubt work wholeſome Effect. They were ſuch as ſhewed, how “deſirous he was of the Peace and Proſperity of *Jeruſalem,* and “that the Kingdom of God might never again be taken from us. “And ſhewing what Things they were by which this Happineſs “might be brought to paſs; *viz.* that next to the high Means of “Princely Authority, the chiefeſt was, that all particular Churches “were furniſhed with ſufficiently learned and godly Miniſters. And “therefore that tender and due Care were had, to encreaſe the “Number of them.

Theſe Sermons were afterwards printed in the ſaid Biſhop *Jewels* Works in *Fol.* where there are divers other of his Sermons beſides theſe mentioned in the *Octavo.*

A Book concerning Juſtification, by John Fox. *John Fox,* the famous and laborious Martyrologiſt, ſet forth this Year a Book of *Juſtification,* writ in *Latin* againſt *Oſorius,* a *Portugal* Biſhop: Intitled, *De Chriſto gratis juſtificante; Contra* Oſorianam *Juſtitiam cæteroſque ejuſdem inhærentis juſtitiæ Patronos, &c. Contra univerſam denique turbam* Tridentinam *&* Jeſuiticam; *Amica & modeſta Defenſio* JOAN. FOXII, *Londini.* The Preface of the Author is, *Ad afflictas & perturbatas in Chriſto Conſcientias Epiſtola.* The Fourth and laſt Book conſiſted of a Sermon of Dr. *Fulkes,* intitled, *Erudita Concio eximii Doctris D.* Guil. Fulſii, *De duobus* Abrahæ *filiis, ex D.* Pauli *ad* Galat IV. Which was tranſlated out of *Engliſh* into *Latin,* by the ſaid *J. Fox:* as ſuitable to his Subject.

Certain godly and very profitable Sermons of Faith, Hope and Charity, ſet forth in *Latin* by *Bernardine Ochine,* a learned Foreigner;

reigner; and turned into *Engliſh* by *Will. Whiſton*, this Year was printed. The Epiſtle Dedicatory was made to *Edm. Grindal*, Lord Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*.

An Anſwer to the Rhemiſt *Teſtament by* Cartwright.

About this Year *Tho. Cartwright*, the chief Head of the *Diſciplinarian* Sect, being a Man of Learning, begun to turn his Thoughts to a learned Work, *viz.* to anſwer the New Teſtament, tranſlated into *Engliſh* by the *Engliſh* Seminary College at *Rhemes*. Wherein they uſed much Art in the Tranſlation, to cover Popiſh Errors, and to make Reflexions upon our *Engliſh* Tranſlation.

Papiſts offended at the Engliſh *Tranſlation.*

It made one great Part of the Happineſs of this Nation, that the Holy Bible was permitted the Common People to read, and inform themſelves thence in Matters of Religion, and to ſet themſelves right in the Knowledge of God and Jeſus Chriſt, (whoſe Profeſſion they had ſolemnly taken upon them) by conſulting the Holy Goſpel. And in order to that, it was permitted to be tranſlated into the vulgar Tongue, firſt in the Reign of *Henry* VIII. Which King made a good Step towards the Reformation. But thoſe of the *Romiſh* Religion took great Diſguſt at it: Knowing well, how the Errors and Superſtitions practiſed in their Church would be hereby expoſed, and brought more to Light. They ſhewed how offended they were at the *Engliſh* Tranſlation ſome Years before, when Dr. *Standiſh* and Dr. *Heskins* wrote Treatiſes; pretending to ſhew great Inconveniences, of having the Holy Scripture in the vulgar Tongue. And about the Year 1581. or 1582. *Gregory Martin*, a Reader of Divinity in the Seminary at *Rhemes*, the more to undervalue our *Engliſh* Tranſlation of the Scripture, ſet forth a Treatiſe to accuſe all the *Engliſh* Tranſlation of the Bible, not only of ſmall Imperfections and Overſights through Ignorance and Negligence, but no leſs than of foul Dealing, in partial and falſe Tranſlation, wilful and heretical Corruptions.

Defence of it by Dr. Fulk.

Will. Fulk, D. D. Maſter of *Pembroke* Hall in *Cambridge*, anſwered this Calumny this Year, in a Book in *Octavo*: Printed by *Binniman*, in the ſmall Character: And dedicated it to the Queen. Wherein he tells her, “That among the ineſtimable Benefits, wherewith “God had bleſſed her honourable and proſperous Government, it “was not to be numbered among the leaſt, that under her Protection “her People enjoyed the comfortable Reading of the Holy Scripture “in their Mother Tongue, and native Language, to the everlaſting “Benefit of many thouſand Souls. He intitled his Book, *A Defence of the ſincere and true Tranſlation of the Holy Scripture into the* Engliſh *Tongue; againſt the manifeſt Cavils, frivolous Quarrels, and impudent Falſhoods of* Gregory Martin, *one of the Readers of Popiſh Divinity in the traiterous Seminary of* Rhemes.

Againſt Greg. Martin.

The ſaid *Martin* makes his Preface to contain an Account of five ſundry Abuſes or Corruptions of the Holy Scriptures, common to all Hereticks, and agreeing eſpecially to theſe of our Times. And they were, Firſt, “Denying certain Books, or Part of Books. Secondly, “Doubting of the Authority of certain Books, and calling them in “Queſtion. Thirdly, Voluntary Expoſitions, according to every “ones Fancy, or Hereſy. Fourthly, changing ſome Words or Sentences of the very Original Text. Fifthly, Falſe and Heretical “Tranſlations.

But

ANNO 1583.

Faults charged upon the Rhemiſts *Teſtament.*

But Dr. *Fulk* in his ſaid Epiſtle to the Queen retorteth upon *Gregory Martins Charge*, the Faults of their *Rhemiſts Engliſh Teſtament.* “In which, Firſt they left the pure Fountain of the original Verity, to follow the crooked Stream of their barbarous Vulgar *Latin* Tranſlation; which (beſide other manifeſt Corruptions) was found defective in more than an hundred Places. Secondly, Their own tranſlation was peſtred with many Annotations, both falſe and undutiful. By which, under Colour of Authority of Holy Scriptures, they ſought to infect the Minds of credulous Readers, with hypocritical and ſuperſtitious Opinions; and to alienate their Hearts from yielding due Obedience to the Queen, and her Laws concerning true Religion eſtabliſhed. And that the Text of their Tranſlation was obſcured without any Neceſſity, or juſt Cauſe, with a Multitude of ſtrange unuſual Terms: To the ignorant, no leſs different to underſtand, than the *Latin* or *Greek* itſelf. And that they had not truly, nor preciſely tranſlated their own Vulgar *Latin.* And in ſhort, when *Martin* had noted how in our Tranſlation, ſome Words were turned, as inſtead of Church, *Congregation*, inſtead of Traditions, *Ordinances*, and for Prieſts, *Elders:* And ſo we of this Church were *Calviniſts:* Dr. *Fulk*, (among other Matters replyed) anſwered, *It ſhould ſuffice to proteſt once for all, that we acknowledged none other Name of our Profeſſion, but* Chriſtians, *and* Catholicks.

Cartwright *encouraged in his Work.*

But to return to *Cartwright*, who was now ſetting himſelf to conſider that *Rhemiſh* Tranſlation of the New Teſtament: The great End of which Work was to make the Errors of their Church plauſible, and to confute the Doctrine and Practices of this reformed Church: It was ſhewed before that theſe *Rhemiſts* tranſlated from the *Latin*, and not the *Greek* Original: Upon Pretence that that had been in many Places altered, by reaſon of thoſe many Hereſies and Heretics that were antiently in thoſe Parts of *Greece*, where it was uſed. And with their Tranſlation they placed large Annotations to the Text all along for their Purpoſe. So that both the Tranſlation and the Annotations was *Cartwrights* Task to examine.

Book III. Ch. 16.

But how he was moved to undertake this Work by Secretary *Walſingham*, and divers other learned Men in the Univerſity, and likewiſe in *Suffolk* and *London*, chiefly of the *Diſciplinarian* Sort, may be read more at large in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift.* And why, after three or four Years Pains in the compoſing, it was thought convenient to hinder the publiſhing thereof: As containing many things in it, reflecting upon the Practice and Uſages of the Church eſtabliſhed. Yet after thirty Years it came forth privately without Licence, and not before: And ſeems to have been printed abroad.

The Rhemiſts *Deſign.*

For as the *Rhemiſts* took this Occaſion to ſerve themſelves in Favour of their own Doctrine and Principles, againſt what was objected to them by Proteſtants; ſo this learned Man did alſo, not only confute the *Rhemiſts*, but, as Occaſion ſerved, inſert what was agreeable to the Principles of the *Puritans.* But to ſee briefly the Purpoſe of the *Rhemiſts*, and their Reaſons for this their *Engliſh* Tranſlation;

and withal to obſerve the ſharp Manner of the Style of the Author of the *Confutation*. Take it ſhortly in their own Words;

In the Preſs.

“ Which Tranſlation they did not publiſh upon erroneous Opinion of Neceſſity, that the Holy Scriptures ſhould always be in the Mother Tongue; or that they ought, and were ordained by God, to be read indifferently of all, or could be eaſily underſtood of every one that read or heard them in a known Language; or that they were not often, through Mens Malice or Infirmity, pernicious or much hurtful to many; or that they generally or abſolutely deemed it more conveniently in itſelf, and more agreeably to Gods Word, and Honour, or Edification of the Faithful, to have them turned into vulgar Tongues, than to be kept and ſtudied only in the Eccleſiaſtical learned Languages: Not for theſe, nor for any ſuch like Cauſes, did they tranſlate this ſacred Book: But upon ſpecial Time, State, and Condition of our Country. Unto which divers Things were either neceſſary or profitable, and medicinable now; which otherwiſe, in the Peace of the Church, were neither much requiſite, nor perchance wholly tolerable. . . . . . In this Matter to mark only the Wiſdom and Moderation of Holy Church, and the Governours thereof on one ſide, and the indiſcreet Zeal of the Popular and their factious Leaders on the other, was an high Point of Prudence.

Cartwrights *Anſwer.*

To which in Anſwer thus *Cartwright*, in pretty ſmart Manner, as he doth throughout the whole Book. “ The true Religion being like the Heavens, which never change; the *Popiſh* Religion reſembleth the Earth; which as the Potters Clay, is ready to receive any Form, according as the Wind and Weather, Times and Seaſons of the Year, Winter or Summer, Spring or Fall will ſet upon it. Hereof it is that they which ſometime did ſo deadly hate the Inſtruction of their Youth in the Grounds and Principles of Religon, that they could not hear the Word of *Catechiſm*, with patient Ears; now in Fear of a general Falling from them through Opinion, either of their blockiſh Ignorance, or ſluggiſh Negligence, were conſtrained both to write and teach their Catechiſms. That out of the ſame Fear it aroſe, that they which hitherto could not endure the Holy Scriptures to be read of the People in their Mother Tongue; now leſt they ſhould utterly fall from the Hope of their Gain, through a vehement Suſpicion of juggling, and playing under the Board with the People; and conſtrained to confeſs a Print of that which they ſometime burned, and pretend Allowance of that which in Times paſt they condemned. Howbeit the Evidence of the Truth having the Church-Robbers upon the Rack, ſee notwithſtanding, how hardly they were gotten to confeſs the Truth; and how they liſp it, rather than ſpeak it out, *&c.* I ſet down this to give ſome *Specimen* of the Books.

Practice of Prelates.

The Practice of Prelates came forth alſo about this Year. It was written by the Schiſmaticks, calling themſelves therein, The *Maintainers of the Diſcipline of God:* Therein highly charging the Articles ſet forth by the Biſhops for the Regulation of the Clergy. It bore this Title, *The unlawful Practices of Prelates againſt godly Mi-*

niſters, the Maintainers of the Diſcipline of God. It was writ about Parliament Time: Hoping for Favour thence: As appeareth by theſe Words near the Beginning: “Now, even now it ſeemeth, the “Diſcipline of *Chriſt* afreſh ſeeketh and beſeecheth the Favours of “Men. The Time of the worthy Aſſembly in Parliament craveth “it. The Place, the Eye of the Realm, challengeth it. See more of this Book in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgiſt.*

Book III. Chap. 3.

Jeſus Pſalter.

In this Year alſo came forth a Book of another Strain, called *Jeſus Pſalter:* Being a *Latin* Book of Popiſh Devotions, now tranſlated into *Engliſh.* Wherein the Devotion chiefly is the Repetition of *Jeſus, Jeſus,* numberleſs Times. In the Preface we are given to underſtand, that there be three Kinds of Pſalters. The firſt is *Davids* Pſalter: Which containeth thrice fifty Pſalms. The ſecond our *Ladies* Pſalter: Which containeth thrice fifty *Aves.* And the third is *Jeſus* Pſalter: Containing fifteen Petitions: Which being ten Times repeated, do make in all thrice Fifty. Where *Jeſus, Jeſus, Jeſus Mercy,* is ten Times, Word for Word, to be repeated, in the Beginnings of them, and if you fail in the Compt, thy Devotion is not perfect. Whereupon Dr. *George Abbot* (afterwards Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*) in his Lectures at *Oxford,* made this Obſervation; “What is it to put Superſtition in Numbers, if this be not? And “where are the People kept in Bondage, and Blindneſs of Darkneſs, “and groſs Error, if it be not in theſe Toys?

Dr. Abbots *Lectures. p.* 386.

A Defence *againſt the Poiſon of Prophecies. By Lord* H. Howard.

This Year alſo came abroad a Book intitled, *A Defence againſt the Poiſon of ſuppoſed Prophecies.* The Author, Lord *Henry Howard.* Who was Brother to the late Duke of *Norfolk:* And in theſe Times went in Danger of his Life: The Queen having a Jealouſy of him, either for his Religion, or his Favour towards the Queen of *Scots:* For whom his Brother loſt his Life. It was printed by *John Charlewood,* Servant to the Right Honourable *Philip* Earl of *Arundel:* Who was eldeſt Son to the ſaid Duke. It was a glorious Shew of that Lord's Readings; and deſigned to reconcile a better Opinion of the Queen towards him, who was inwardly a Papiſt: As ſhewing throughout his Book, how vain Prophecies of Things to come were: Which the zealous Papiſts at that Time, made great Talk of, and gathered mighty Hopes to themſelves from. But take the whole Title of the Book, as it ſtood in the ſecond Edition, printed *Anno* 1620. “*A Defenſative againſt the Poiſon of ſuppoſed Prophecies,* . . . Not hitherto confuted by the Pen of any Man. Which “being grounded either upon the Warrant or Authority of old painted Books, Expoſition of Dreams, Oracles, Revelations, Invocation of damned Spirits, Judicials of Aſtrology, or any other Kind “of pretended Knowledge, whatſoever *De futuris contingentibus;* “have been Cauſes of great Diſorder in the Commonwealth, among “the ſimple and unlearned People. Very neceſſary to be publiſhed, “conſidering the great Offence which grew by moſt palpable and “groſs Errors in *Aſtrology.* This Lord *Howard,* the noble Author, was afterward Earl of *Northampton,* and Lord Privy Seal to King *James* I.

His Reaſon of theſe Studies.

In theſe Studies that Lord, the Author, ſaid, he had employed himſelf, by obſerving in all the Books of the Antients, and Philoſophers, Chap. 26.

ſophers, as he was reading them, ſuch Paſſages as related to theſe Prophecies, and foretelling Things to come. And the rather, becauſe ſome of his Anceſtors, depending too much upon them, had drawn Miſchief upon themſelves. And again, in another Place of his Book, he hath theſe Words concerning himſelf, “ That he had himſelf collected theſe Notes in a Book, out of the full Courſe of all his Readings, from the fifteenth Year of his Age until that Day; upon a mortal Malice [taken up by him] againſt *Propheſies*, in reſpect of ſome Progenitors and Anceſtors of his; who ſmarted for preſuming over-much upon their Hopes [grounded thereon.] Adding, That his Book ſhould never have been recommended to the Print, if meer Neceſſity, and Care to ſatisfy the World herein, had not prevailed at the Length againſt his baſhful and retyrate Humour. And for his own Particular he always conceived them to be the Froth of Folly, the Scum of Pride, the Shipwreck of Honour, and the Poiſon of Nobility.

Examined about a painted Treatiſe prophetical.

And then having his Mind upon one particular Book of Propheſy: Which, it ſeems, he was charged with having ſeen; and privy to, that had perhaps ſome ill boding to the Queen: “ It was once my Hap, added he, to be examined upon the Sight of a certain painted Treatiſe of this Kind; garniſhed with ſundry Beaſts and Birds; and fitter for a childiſh Game, than ſober Judgment. It is certain, that I never was admitted to this *Sybillin* Oracle: But whether it be probable, that either I did ever ſee the ſame, make Account thereof, or would afford Expence or Waſte of Time, to Fancies of this Kind, let them conceive, that either are acquainted with myſelf, or will vouchſafe to read, and queſtion the Reaſons of this Book.

I cannot but continue this Lords Relation concerning theſe propheſying and foretelling Picture Books, ſecretly made and ſhewn in thoſe Times; and the Deceit of them. Thus then he went on. “ That for ſo much as he could gather by Report of ſome dear Friends of his, who ſaw the *Gewgaw* in the keeping of another, who eſteemed it too much, it ſhould appear either to have been over-flouriſhed in a Painters Shop, with Matters correſpondent to their Humours, which delighted in News; or elſe to have been drawn upon the Foreſight of one *Verdungus:* Who, during the Reign of King *Henry* VIII. ſeeking to content and pleaſe the Moods of certain Princes, which were then in dark and deep Unkindneſs with the King, gave out in Writing, That the Realm ſhould be given up *in prædam diverſis animantibus*, [that is, to divers Creatures for a Prey.] The Certainty [as to Time and Manner] he durſt not limit, nor ſet down, for fear of being taken with a groſs and ſhameleſs Ly: Neither durſt he publiſh or reveal the Points and Reaſons, whereupon the Judgment ſtood, becauſe the Man himſelf, being poſted forward with a Humour of Revenge, ſought rather by this Means to make his Voice a Trumpet of Encouragement [to the Princes that Kings Enemies, to invade or aſſault him] then a Meſſenger of Tribulation. For Proof whereof the End was to be noted. And chiefly, that the King was laid to reſt with his Fathers in convenient Time; when *Ver-*

ANNO 1583.

" *dungus*, having made a ſhameful Wreck, both of Conſcience and " Credit, was ſcorned and derided for his vain Preſumption without " Ground, and Malice without Moderation.

This Lords Book dedicated to Secretary Walſingham.

The Lord *Howard* thought fit to dedicate his ſaid Book to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, principal Secretary: Who he acknowledged, had been his great Friend, and brought him out of his Troubles he fell into on this Account: And to whom he had ſhewn theſe his Collections of *Propheſies*. In his Dedication he uſed theſe Words: " That he was forced to confeſs the Bond of his particular Affection, " nay Zeal, unto himſelf to be ſo much encreaſed by his ſteadfaſt " Friendſhip, in the Days of Proof. And that not his Hand only " ſhould be ever ready to ſubſcribe, and ſet on his Seal, but his " Heart withal, while it had any Spark of Life, to acknowledge " the great Merit of his [the Secretaries] undeſerved Favours: He " that once vouchſafed with a favourable Hand to waft him out of " the Surges of uncertain Chance . . . Who could judge better of his " [the Authors] Conceit, than he that had been beſt acquainted " with his Intent. . . . . That to him, as well as others of his Calling, he had engaged his aſſured Promiſe, if God ſpared Life, to " give Teſtimony to the World, what his Conceit had ever been of " *Propheſies:* Which wiſe Men valued as the Scum of Pride, and " Dreggs of Ignorance. In ſhort, this was his End in writing his Book, " That his Care and Study had been, only to do that which " might be conſonant to the Will and Pleaſure of Almighty God, " agreeable to the Circumſtances of the preſent Time, and his own " Diſcharge, and pleaſing in her Sight, [*viz.* the Queens] whoſe " peerleſs Virtues, planted in a Royal Stock, had exempted from " Compariſon.

And in fine, I cannot omit the Character he gives Sir *Francis Walſingham* in his Dedication: " That the Sweetneſs of his Diſpoſition, " the Frankneſs of his Mind, the Credit of his Place, the Level of " his long Experience, and the Depth of his Judgment; were Means " ſufficient and ſtrong enough, to draw the Minds of Perſons well " diſpoſed, both to love and honour him.

Execution of Juſtice.

It was found needful now, (to ſtop malicious falſe Reports of Perſecution for Religion) to declare the true Cauſe of the Puniſhment of ſeveral Popiſh Prieſts, and others, with Death, as Traitors. A State-Book therefore was now ſet forth, called, *The Execution of Juſtice, for Maintenance of Publick and Chriſtian Peace:* Againſt certain Stir-" ers of Sedition, and Adherents to the Traitors, and Enemies of " the Realm; without any Perſecution of them, as is falſely re-" ported and publiſhed by the Fautors and Foſterers of their Trea-" ſons, XVII. *December* 1583. The running Title is, *Execution for Treaſon, and not for Religion.*

Of theſe dangerous *Romaniſts* thus ſpeaks the Author in the Entrance to his Book, " That though natural born Subjects of the Realm of " *England* and *Ireland*; and who had for ſome good Time profeſſed " outwardly their Obedience to their Sovereign Lady Queen *Eliza-* " *beth*; had nevertheleſs afterwards been ſtirred up and ſeduced by " wicked Spirits, firſt in *England* ſundry Years paſt; and ſecondly, " of latter Times, in *Ireland*, to enter into open Rebellion, taking

“ Arms, and coming into the Field, againſt her Majeſty and her Lieutenants, with their Forces and Banners diſplayed: Inducing by notable Untruths many ſimple People, to follow and aſſiſt them in their traiterous Actions. And though it was very well known, that both their Intentions, and manifeſt Actions were bent to have depoſed the Queens Majeſty from her Crown, and to have traiterouſly ſet in her Place ſome other whom they liked: Whereby if they had not been ſpeedily reſiſted, they would have committed great Bloodſheds and Slaughters of her Majeſties faithful Subjects, and ruined their native Country. . . . . But theſe Rebels that remained, fled into foreign Countreys, and there falſly informed many Kings, Princes, and States, that the Cauſe of their fleeing from their Country was for Religion and Maintenance of the Popes Authority.

Declaration of favourable Dealing with certain Traytors.

This Book was backed with another of the ſame Import, which bare this Title. *A Declaration of the favourable Dealing of her Majeſties Commiſſioners,* “ appointed for the Examination of certain Traitors; and of Tortures unjuſtly reported to be done upon them for Matters of Religion. The Purport of this Tract will appear, by what the Writer tells his Reader. “ That though her Majeſties moſt mild and gracious Government were ſufficient to defend itſelf againſt moſt ſlanderous Reports of Heatheniſh and unnatural Tyranny, and cruel Tortures, pretended to have been executed upon certain Traitors, who lately ſuffered [*viz. Campion,* and *Alex. Briant*] for their Treaſon, and others; as well ſpread abroad by Runnagates, *Jeſuits*, and Seminary Men, in their ſeditious Books, Letters, and Libels in foreign Countries and Princes Courts, as alſo inſinuated into the Hearts of ſome of our own Countrymen, and her Majeſties Subjects. Yet for better Satisfaction of all, he [the Writer] had conferred with a very honeſt Gentleman, whom he knew to have good and ſufficient Means to deliver the Truth againſt ſuch Forgers of Lies and ſhameleſs Slanders in that Behalf. Which he, and others that knew and had affirmed the ſame, would at all Times juſtify. And for further Aſſurance and Satisfaction herein had ſet down to the View of all Men, ſome ſpecial Notes thereof.

In this Book it is aſſerted, and offered to be juſtified, “ That never thoſe Seminaries, or any other pretended Catholicks, which at any Time in her Majeſties Reign had been put to the Rack, were, upon the Rack, or in any other Torture, demanded any Queſtion of their ſuppoſed Conſcience: As what they believed in any Point of Doctrine or Faith, as the Maſs, Tranſubſtantiation, or ſuch like; but only with what Perſons at home or abroad, and touching what Plots, Practices, and Conferences they had dealt, about Attempts againſt her Majeſties Eſtate, or Perſon; or to alter the Laws of the Realm for Matters of Religion, by Treaſon, or by Force: And how they were perſuaded themſelves, and did perſuade others, touching the Popes *Bull*, and Pretence of Authority to depoſe Kings and Princes; and namely, for the Deprivation of her Majeſty, and to diſcharge Subjects from their Allegiance: Expreſſing the Kingly Powers and Eſtates, and the Subjects Allegiance *Ci-*

“*villy*, without mentioning or meaning therein any Right the Queen, as in the Right of the Crown, hath over Perſons *Eccleſiaſtical*, being her Subjects. In all which Caſes, *Campion* and the reſt never anſwered plainly, but ſophiſtically, deceitfully and traiterouſly reſtraining their Confeſſion of Allegiance only, to the permiſſive Form of the Popes Toleration.

Campion.

Campion aforeſaid was thus deſcribed. “That he was ſent and came from *Rome*, and continued here in ſundry Corners of the Realm; having ſecretly wandred in the greateſt Part of the Shires of *England*, in a diſguiſed Sort; to the Intent to make ſpecial Preparation of Treaſons: And to that End, and for Furtherance of thoſe his Labours, ſent over for more Help and Aſſiſtance; and cunningly and traiterouſly at *Rome*, before he came from thence, procured Toleration for ſuch prepared Rebels, to keep themſelves covert, under pretence of Temporary and permiſſive Obedience to her Majeſty, the State ſtanding as it did. But ſo ſoon as there were ſufficient Force, whereby the *Bull* of her Majeſties Deprivation might be publickly executed, they ſhould then join altogether with that Force, upon Pain of Curſe and Damnation.

Who ſuffered the Rack.

It was ſhewn further in this Tract, to juſtify this Courſe of uſing the Rack, “That none of them that had been put to the Rack or Torture, no, not for the Matter of Treaſon, or Partnerſhip of Treaſon, or ſuch like, but where it was firſt known, or evidently probable, by former Detections, Confeſſions, and otherwiſe that the Party ſo racked or tortured, was guilty, and did know, and could deliver the Truth of the Things wherewith he was charged. So as it was firſt aſſured, that no Innocent was at any Time tormented. And that the Rack was never uſed to wring out Confeſſions at adventure upon Uncertainties. In which doing it might be poſſible, that an Innocent in that Caſe might have unjuſtly ſuffered.

Theſe and many other Reaſons, for the Severity now ſometimes uſed, were thought fit to be publiſhed, to check the Clamours and ſlanderous Libels that were thrown about: And to juſtify this Manner of Inquiſition of Truth, in diſcovering Crimes, extending ſo much to the publick Danger, which thoſe ungracious Perſons had committed. Whoſe Conſpiracies, and the Particularities thereof it did ſo much import to have diſcloſed.

Diſcovery of the Newfound Land.

Now alſo came forth a Book of another Subject, upon the firſt Diſcovery of *Newfoundland* in the *Weſt Indies*; with this Title: *A true Report of the late Diſcoveries and Poſſeſſions taken in the Right of the Crown of* England, *of the* Newfound Lands: *By that valiant and worthy Gentleman,* Sir *Humfrey Gilbert, Knight*; “Wherein is alſo briefly ſet down her Highneſſes lawful Title thereunto, and the great and manifold Commodities, that is likely to grow thereby to the whole Realm in general, and to the Adventurers in particular. Together with the eaſineſs and ſhortneſs of the Voyage.” *Seen and Allowed*. An *Oxford* Scholar, *G. P.* was employed in the Writing of it; and Dedicated it to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, Principal Secretary to the Queen, and his Patron. The

Author of this Treatiſe had the Honour to have divers Copies of Verſes ſet before it, made by Perſons of Quality and Sea-Officers: As of Sir *William Pelham*, Sir *Francis Drake*, Capt. *John Hawkins*, Captain *Frobiſher*, Captain *Bing*, Captain *Cheſter*, *Achellie*, Citizen and Merchant of *London*, and ſome more. Only for a Taſt of this Poetry, thus Sir *William Pelham* began:

Like as the Fiſhes, breeding in the Deep,
Through all the Ocean are allow'd to raunge,
Not forſt in any certain Bounds to keep,
But as their Motions carry them to chaunge:
To Men like Liberty doth Reaſon give,
In Choiſe of Soil, through all the World to live, &c.

The Contents of this Book.

The Book begins with an Hiſtorical Account of this *Weſtern* Diſcovery. And proceeds to Diſcourſe of theſe particular Heads. 1. That it is lawful and neceſſary to Trade and Traffick with the Savages: And to Plant in their Countries. 2. The lawful Title which the Queen had unto thoſe Countries, which through the Aid of Almighty God were meant to be inhabited. 3. That the Trade, Traffick and Planting of thoſe Countries, were likely to prove very profitable to the whole Realm. 4. That the Trading and Planting in thoſe Countries, was likely to prove to the particular Profit of all the Adventurers. 5. That the Traffick and Planting in thoſe Countries, ſhould be unto the *Savages* themſelves, very beneficial and gainful. 6. That the Planting there was not ſuch a Matter of Charge or Difficulty, as many would make it ſeem to be. Laſtly, Articles of Aſſurance between the principal Aſſignees of Sir *Humfrey Gilbert*, Knight, and the four Sorts of Adventurers in the Voyage for the *Weſtern* Diſcoveries. And then towards the Concluſion of the Book, to encourage this Voyage, it is urged, "That her "Majeſties Dominions ſhould be enlarged: All odious Idleneſs "from this our Realm utterly baniſhed. Divers decayed Towns "repaired. Many poor and needy Perſons relieved. The ignorant "and barbarous Idolaters taught to know Chriſt. The Innocent "defended from their bloody tyrannical Neighbours. The Diabo"lical Cuſtom of Sacrificing humane Creatures, aboliſhed.

Now to proceed to a few Matters more private and Perſonal; that may deſerve a Remembrance.

Lord Latymer, *newly come from* France.

One, calling himſelf Lord *Latymer*, was not long come into *England*. Who having been converſant in *France* with one of the *Nortons*, (Rebels that had riſen in the *North*, *Anno* 1569. and fled abroad) was juſtly ſuſpected in theſe dangerous Times, to have come over upon ſome ill Deſign. Sir *Walter Mildmay* (who was Chancellor of the Exchequer) coming from Court to his Houſe in *London*, was informed of this Lord *Latymer*, by a Merchant that knew him in *Roan*, and had a Letter to come to him. Who thought fit preſently to ſend Knowledge hereof to the ſaid Sir *Walter*, to take him up to Examination; as many ſuſpicious Perſons now were, that came from abroad. This proved the Man named *Nevyle*, that was in the Combination with *Parry*, that came over from *France* to

ANNO 1583.

kill the Queen. The ſaid *Mildmay* without Delay, acquaints the Lord Treaſurer herewith by his Letter, Dated *Feb.* 1583. and being but ſhort, was as followeth:

Mildmays Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, informing him of it.

" It may pleaſe your Lordſhip. As I came homeward from *Weſtminſter* this Forenoon, one *Wight*, a Merchant of this Town, " ſhewed me a Letter written to him, from one that calleth himſelf Lord *Latymer*, to ſpeak with him this Day, as by this encloſed your Lordſhip may perceive. This young Man, having " known this *Latymer* in *Roan*; and there knowing him to have been " lodged in old *Norton*'s Houſe; and greatly converſant with ſuch as " he is; thought it his Duty to declare this much, to be directed " what to do therein. Whereupon I am bold to ſend him to your " Lordſhip to underſtand, what he ſhall further do; and how the " Party may be ſtayed, and examined, as may be fit, for her Majeſties Service: Which this Man is ready to perform, as your Lordſhip ſhall command.

Dean Wottons Writings of his Legations.

Mr. *Thomas Wotton*, a worthy, learned Gentleman in *Kent*, (to whom *Lambard*, dedicated his *Perambulation* of that County) was Nephew to Dr. *Wotton*, ſometime Dean of *Canterbury*, a Man famous for many Embaſſies hence to divers Foreign Princes. Whoſe *Legations* with other Writings of Matters of State relating thereto, on his Death, came into his Nephews Hands and Poſſeſſion. Which Papers, the great Stateſman, the Lord *Burghley*, deſired the Favour of the ſaid Mr. *Wotton*, that he might ſee, or ſome of them. Which with all readineſs he ſent, and all the Remainders of them by his Servant, and glad to oblige ſo excellent a Perſon. And therewith his Letter, dated *Jan.* 18. which was as followeth (for we muſt preſerve, as much as we can, the Letters, and therewithal the Memories, of ſuch eminent Men.)

" That if the reſt of ſuch Books or Notes, remaining yet in his " Hands, as of any other of his late Uncles late Legations, paſt under his Pen, might any wiſe ſtand his good Lordſhip in any ſtead, " he did by that Bearer, his Servant, ſend them wholly unto him. " For the preſent applying of one Part of them, he might find that " Part among them. We might eaſily ſay, added he, that happy was " her Majeſty that had ſuch a Counſellor: Happy was the Realm that " had ſuch a Member, as unto the one, and in th'other he [that " Lord] was well known to be. In which Courſe under her ſaid " Majeſty, he beſeeched the Almighty God to ſend a Courſe of many " joyful Years." Written from *Pykring Houſe* in *London*. Subſcribed,

Humbly at the Commandment of your good Lordſhip,

Thomas Wotton.

The Lord Thomas Wentworth died this Year.

As the Lord *Thomas Wentworth* buried his eldeſt Son the laſt Year, ſo this Year put an End to his own Life; who was the laſt *Engliſh* Governor of *Calais*. He lived at *Mile-End*, and was Lord of the great Manor of *Stebunheth*, now commonly called *Stepney*, in the Suburbs of *London*. There having been a great Friendſhip between that Lord and the Lord Treaſurer, the ſurviving Lord *Henry*

ANNO 1583.

Henry his Son, wrote to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, the ſad News of his Fathers Death; and begging the Continuance of his Favour to him; and to aſſiſt him in the Diſcharge of his Truſt and Duty to his deceaſed Father; whoſe Concerns were altogether uncertain to him. His Letter was in theſe Words.

“ Right Honourable and my very good Lord. It hath pleaſed
“ God to call unto his Mercy this Night, my Lord, my Father.
“ And for that I am well acquainted with the intyre Affection, and
“ honourable good Will, which your Lordſhip did bear unto him,
“ while he yet lived, (for the which I moſt humbly thank your
“ Lordſhip) and being as yet altogether uncertain in what State his
“ Lordſhip is departed; wherein both in Nature and Duty it moſt
“ nearly toucheth me, to ſee his Credit and Honour in all Points
“ moſt carefully maintained: It may pleaſe your good Lordſhip, in
“ reſpect as well of the Premiſſes, as alſo for the good Meaning I
“ have to diſcharge my Duty thereto appertaining, to ſtand my Honourable
“ good Lord, for the better accompliſhing thereof: Beſeeching
“ your Honour, that as I am wholly at your Lordſhips
“ Commandment, during Life, ſo it may pleaſe your good Lordſhip
“ to accept of my good Affections, and to ſhew your Lordſhips
“ Honourable Favour in all ſuch Matters, as ſhall concern my poor
“ Eſtate. And thus with my humble Commendations, I commit
“ your good Lordſhip to the Protection of the Almighty: Who
“ grant you all your Honourable Deſires. *Stebunheth*, the XIIIIth
“ of *January*, 1583.

Your good Lordſhips moſt aſſured, always to Command,

Henry Wentworth.

By the Way, an Error in *Camdens* Hiſtory of Queen *Elizabeth*, by the Date of this Letter may be corrected. Who placed this Lord, *Tho. Wentworths* Death under the Year 1590.

Cam. Eliz. p. 446.

A Coiner of falſe Money taken up.

A notable Coiner was this Year diſcovered and taken up in *Cheſhire*, at *Warrington*, whoſe Name was *Orrel:* Apprehended firſt upon Suſpicion; living with his Father in Law, one *Cartwright.* Sir *John Biron*, and two Juſtices more ſearching his Houſe, found divers ſecret Rooms; and in a dark Corner, between two Mud Walls, whereinto there was neither Light, nor Entry; but by breaking one of them. Among divers other Things, both of Mettals and Wood, as Cenſors, Bells, Crucifix, Chryſmatory, *&c.* and ſuch like Church Stuff, they found, ſewed up in a Canvas Cloth, certain Piercings, and Droppings or Droſs of Mettal, and a Pair of Gold Weights: We have mentioned ſome of theſe Coiners before, and ſhall add another, diſcovered two or three Years after, *viz. Anno* 1586.

Another Coiner diſcovered.

One *Chriſtopher Amyce*, formerly a Merchant of *London*, coined *Rials*, and other Coins. He acknowledged he had coined ſeven ſcore *Piſtolets*, and many *Spur-Rials* of a Foreign Coin. And that he made his Plates himſelf, and Stamped them alſo. And his Inſtrument or Mill was made in *France*, and all other his Inſtruments

ANNO 1584.

and Engins; and brought by him into *England*.... That he coined twenty Pieces of *Scotch* Coin; Braſs within, and blanched over with Silver: And his *Spur-Rials* were made of fine Silver and gilt. And that one *Nevil Reve* had of him ſixty double *Piſtolets* for ſix Shillings a-piece; ten *Spur-Rials* at five Shillings a-piece. And that he and another were preſent at the Stamping of them. And that he buried the Stamps and other Inſtruments near to *Croydon*, five Miles diſtant from *London*.

CHAP. XVIII.

Conſultation about annoying Spain. *Captain* Hawkins *his Advice therein:* viz. *to aſſiſt the King of* Portugal. *The Queens Tranſactions with the Agents of* Holland. *She is concerned for the Murther of the Prince of* Orange. *Her careful Letter to the Duke of* Monpenſier, *about that Princes Daughters. The Lord Treaſurer to the King of* Navarr. *Prince Palatine comes into* England. *A Scandal of the Earl of* Shrewſbury. *Popiſh Plots. An* Aſſociation *of the Nobility and Gentry.* Mendoza *the* Spaniſh *Ambaſſador ſent away.* Stafford, *the Queens Ambaſſador at* Paris: *His Intelligence of him, and* Engliſh *Fugitives there. The Faction of the* Guiſes. *A new Parliament: Uſage of Parliament. Supplication for learned and preaching Miniſters. Petitions for that End: And for Regulation of divers Things in the Church. Anſwers of the Archbiſhop and Biſhops.*

The Queen apprehenſive of the King of Spain.

THE Queen and Kingdom had the greateſt Apprehenſions from Abroad of the King of *Spain*: With whom ſhe could obtain no good Underſtanding: And of whom eſpecially it concerned her to beware, conſidering his Power: Which at that Time was formidable: And thus ſet forth by our Hiſtorian. “All the Princes of *Italy* were at his Beck; the Biſhop of *Rome* was wholly addicted and engaged to him: The Cardinals were as it were his Vaſſals: All the ableſt Perſons for Matters both of War and Peace, were his Penſioners. In *Germany* the Houſe of *Auſtria*, an Houſe extending and branching far and wide, and other Houſes allyed unto the ſame by Marriages, did as it were attend upon him and his Service. His Wealth alſo and Strength

Camd. Eliz. p. 305.

ANNO 1584.

“ were ſo much encreaſed both by Sea and Land, ſince the late Addition of *Portugal* and *Eaſt India*; that he was far more powerful and formidable than ever his Father *Charles* V. was. And if he ſhould once reduce the *Netherlands* under his Power, there was nothing to hinder, but that the reſt of the Princes of *Chriſtendom* muſt of neceſſity ſtoop to his Greatneſs, unleſs it were prevented.

The Queen deliberates about aſſiſting the Low Countries.

This powerful Prince then the Queen had to deal with. It was judged therefore the beſt Courſe to favour the *Netherlanders*, with whom he was now in War, and towards whom he had exerciſed great Barbarities. It was now under Deliberation concerning the doing of this weighty Matter. The Lord Treaſurer had conſulted with *Hawkins*, a brave Seaman, and Treaſurer of the Admiralty, upon this Affair: And what Means might be uſed in this Undertaking: Requiring to know his Thoughts thereof. He ſoon after ſhewed that Stateſman in Writing, the Means to offend that King, and the Reaſons to maintain that Faction. Take them from his own Pen: Beginning with his own Letter to the ſaid Lord. After which followed another Paper, intitled, *The beſt Means to annoy the King of* Spain *without Charge to her Majeſty*. And firſt take his Letter.

Hawkins *Advice for annoying the King of* Spain.

“ After his bounden Duty in right humble Manner preſented. That he had briefly conſidered upon a ſubſtantial Courſe, and the material Reaſons, that by his own Experience he knew, by Gods Aſſiſtance, would ſtrongly annoy and offend the King of *Spain*, the mortal Enemy of our Religion, and the preſent Government of the *Realm* of *England*.” And then proceeding in this ſerious Manner.

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.

“ And ſurely, my very good Lord, if I ſhould only conſider and look for mine own Life, my Quietneſs and Commodity, then truly mine own Nature and Diſpoſition doth prefer Peace before all Things. But when I conſider whereunto we are born: Not for ourſelves, but for the Defence of the Church of God, our Prince and our Country, I do then think, how this moſt happy Government might with good Providence prevent the Conſpiracies of our Enemies.

“ That he nothing at all doubted of our Ability in Wealth. For that he was perſuaded, that the Subſtance of this Realm was trebled: Adding, God be glorified for it. Neither did he think there wanted Proviſions, carefully provided, of Shipping, Ordnance, Powder, Armour and Munition: So as the People were exerciſed by ſome Means in the Courſe of War. For he read, that when *Mahomet*, the *Turk*, took the famous City, *Conſtantinople*, digging up in the Foundations and Bottoms of the Houſes, he found ſuch infinite Treaſure, as the ſaid *Mahomet*, condemning their Wretchedneſs, wondred, how that City could have been overcome, or taken, if they had in Time provided Men of War and Furniture for their Defence, as they were very well able. So ſaid he, there wanted no Ability in us, if we were not taken unprovided, and upon a ſudden.

“ And that this was the only Cauſe, that had moved him to ſay his Mind frankly in this Matter, and to ſet down thoſe Notes in-

ANNO 1584.

" cloſed. Praying the Almighty God, who directeth the Hearts of " all Governours, either to the Good and Benefit of the People, " for their Relief and Deliverance; or elſe doth alter and hinder " their Underſtanding, to the Puniſhment and Ruin of the People " for their Sins and Offences. Humbly beſeeching his good Lordſhip to bear with his Preſumption, in dealing with Matters ſo " high; and to judge of them by his great Wiſdom and Experience, " how they might in his Lordſhips Judgment be worthy the Conſideration. " And ſo humbly taking his Leave. " From *Deptford*, the 20th of *July*, 1584. Subſcribing,

Your Honourable Lordſhips ever aſſuredly bounden,

John Hawkyns.

His other Paper ſent with his Letter, was thus endorſed, *Reaſons to maintain the Faction.* The Title was, *The beſt Means, how to annoy the King of* Spain, *in my Opinion without Charge to her Majeſty. Which alſo ſhall bring great Profit to her Highneſs and Subjects.* And is as enſueth:

" Firſt, If it ſhall be thought meet, that the King of *Portugal*, " may in his Right make War with the King of *Spain*, then he " would be the beſt Means to be the Head of the Faction. There " would be obtained from the ſaid King of *Portugal*, an Authority " to ſome Perſon, that ſhould always give Leave to ſuch, as upon " their own Charge would ſerve to annoy the King of *Spain*, as " they might both by Sea and Land: And of their Booties to pay " unto the King of *Portugal* 5. or 10. of the Hundred.

" There would be alſo one Perſon authorized by her Majeſty to " take Notice of ſuch as do ſerve the King of *Portugal*. And ſo " that Party with her Majeſties Conſent, to give them Leave and " Allowance to retyre, Victual and Sell in ſome Port of the Weſt " Country. For which Liberty they ſhould pay unto her Majeſty 5. or 10. of the Hundred.

" None ſhould have leave to ſerve the ſaid King of *Portugal*, but " they ſhould put in Surety to offend no Perſon, but ſuch as the " ſaid King had War with: And ſhould be bound to break no Bulk, " but in the Port allowed. Where would be Commiſſioners appointed, to reſtore ſuch Goods as were belonging to Friends in " Amity with the King of *Portugal*; and to allow the reſt to the " Takers.

" There would be Martial Law for ſuch as committed Pyracy. " For now there can be no Excuſe, but all idle Seamen may be " employed.

" If theſe Conditions be allowed; and that Men may enjoy that " which they lawfully take in this Service, the beſt Owners and " Merchant Adventurers in the River, will put in Foot, and attempt great Things.

" The Gentlemen and Owners in the *Weſt* Partie, will enter " deeply into this Partie.

“ The *Fluſhingers* alſo will be a great Partie in this Matter.

“ The Proteſtants of *France* will be a great Company to help this Attempt.

“ The *Portugals* in the Iſlands in *Braſyl* and in *Geney*, for the moſt Part will continually revolt. Fiſhings in *Spain* and *Portugal*, which is their greateſt Relief, will hereby be utterly impeached and deſtroyed. The Iſlands will be ſacked; their Forts defaced; and their Braſs Ordnance brought away.

“ Our own People as Gunners, (whereof we have but few) would be made expert, and grow in Number. Our idle People would grow to be good Men of War, both by Land and Sea.

“ The Coaſt of *Spain* and *Portugal* in all Places, would be ſo annoyed, as to keep continual Armies; there would be no Poſſibility ſometimes. That of my Knowledge it is treble more tedious and chargeable to prepare Shipping and Men in thoſe Parts, than it is with us.

“ The Voyage offered by Sir *Francis Drake*, might beſt be made lawful, to go under this Licence alſo. Which would be ſecret, until the Time draw near of their Readineſs.

“ All this before rehearſed, ſhall not be any Means to draw the King of *Spain* to offer a War. For that this Partie will not only conſiſt of *Engliſh* Men, but rather of the *French*, *Flemins*, *Scots*, and ſuch like. So as King *Philip* ſhall be forced by great Entreaty to make her Majeſty a Means to withdraw the Forces of her Subjects, and the Aid of her Highneſſes Ports. For otherwiſe there will be ſuch Scarcity in *Spain*, and his Coaſt ſo annoyed, as *Spain* never endured ſo great Smart. The Reaſon is, for that the greateſt Traffics of all King *Philips* Dominions, muſt paſs to and fro by the Seas, which will hardly eſcape intercepting.

Matters tranſacted between the Queen and the Hollanders.

The Agents from *Holland*, Monſieur *De Gryſe* and *Ortel* were now here. And to theſe Points, the Affair betwixt the Queen and them, came digeſted in four Papers: An Abſtract whereof was drawn by the Pen of the Lord Treaſurer.

The firſt contained an Anſwer of the States to her Majeſties Propoſitions. That Count *Maurice* was the Chief over their Affairs. That her Majeſty would ſend them Aid ſpeedily. They offered her 330000 Florens Monthly. What Numbers of the Enemies Forces were beſides their Garriſons, Foot and Horſe, in *Guelders*, *Antwerp*, about *Gaunt*, &c. Then what their own Forces were, and what they looked for out of *Almain*.

The ſecond Paper was, That they required her Majeſty to receive in general all the Provinces united, into her Protection: Or particularly *Holland*, *Zealand*, and *Utrecht*. And that they would contribute both by Sea and Land two Millions yearly: Or elſe to accept theſe Countries to her Alliance. That the *French* King laboured to be accepted, as their Lord in general. And that the Queen would prevent it, by ſending 3 or 4000 under a good Conduct.

A third Paper was from *Zealand*, that the Hearts of the People would be the more inclined to her Majeſty, if ſhe would preſently aſſiſt them with four Thouſand Foot.

The fourth Paper contained private Inſtructions.

ANNO 1584.

Num. XXXIV.

Theſe notable Papers may all be read at large (whereof this is but an imperfect Account) in the *Appendix*. This Meſſage from theſe afflicted *Netherlanders* ſucceeded, and after ſome Years Addreſſes from them, to take the Protection of them upon her, they now at laſt obtained it.

The Prince of Orange *murthered. The Queens Concern for it.*

The Queen ſhewed her Eſteem for theſe *Netherlanders* by her great Concern for *William*, Prince of *Orange* barbarouſly murdered in *July* this Year; and gave a remarkable Sign thereof after ſhe heard of his Death. He was the great General for thoſe States in their Defence againſt the King of *Spain*. The Murderer was one *Balthazar Gerard*, a *Burgoindian*, by a Piſtol diſcharged at him in his own Hall, at *Delpht:* Encouraged thereto by that King: Who had given Sentence of Death againſt him, ſome two or three Years before, and given Liberty to any to kill him, whereſoever they could meet with him, and withal encouraged them to do it with the Reward of 25000 Duckats. This bloody Vilain, meditating this Murther had been with a *Jeſuit* at *Treves:* To whom he confeſſed himſelf, diſcovering to him his wretched Deſign. Who kept him in their College, taking the *Jeſuits* Counſil and Direction, as this Villain did confeſs boldly. The Prince of *Orange* was not unſenſible of the daily Danger he went in: And being apprehenſive of falling under ſome ſuch Treachery had before acquainted Queen *Elizabeth* therewith: And prayed her, that upon any ſuch ſudden Deceaſe of his, ſhe would take ſome Care of his Daughters; Whereof one was God-daughter to her Majeſty. Not long after this ſad News came to the Queen, ſhe remembred the Princes Requeſt; and (as it is likely,) her own Promiſe to him, which cauſed her to diſpatch a Letter in *French*, dated in *October*, ſigned by herſelf at the *Bottom*, to the Duke *Monpenſier*, to this Purport.

General Hiſt. of the Netherlands, *p.* 854.

The Queens Letter concerning his Daughters, one whereof ſhe was Godmother to.

“ That the Prince of *Orange*, foreſeeing the imminent Danger,
“ that he was always ſubject to, by the ſecret Methods and Snares
“ laid for him by his Enemies, had inſtantly prayed her to have his
“ Daughters recommended to her; and to take them under her
“ Protection, if he ſhould chance to leave them Fatherleſs. Repoſing
“ himſelf, (as by good Right he might do) under her Favour
“ and Affection; which ſhe had born towards him at all Times.
“ And that ſhe had Advice after this unfortunate Accident concerning
“ a Promiſe of hers to that Purpoſe. And then the Queen propoſed and appointed the diſpoſing of the young Princeſſes, his Daughters, to divers Proteſtant Princes, as follows: The eldeſt Daughter, whoſe Name is not inſerted, to Madam the Princeſs of *Bierne*, her Kinſwoman: where ſhe could not but be brought up vertuouſly. The ſecond who was [*noſtre Filloule*] the Queens God-daughter, the Queen would take. *Brabantim*, the third ſhe commended to the Dutcheſs of *Bouillon*, Siſter to the Duke of *Monpenſier*, to he bred up with *Madamoiſelle*, her Daughter. *Amolyne* to the Elector *Polatine: Katherine* to the Counteſs of *Swartzenburgh*; *Leur Marraines*. Laſtly, *Flandrine*. Whom the Queen recommended long ago to *La Dame du Paracly*. And ſo exhorting the Duke, to whom ſhe wrote to take particular Care of theſe young Princeſſes, to whom he was ſo nearly related on the Mothers Side.

But the whole Letter, in *French* as it came from the Queen, I refer to the *Appendix*: Where it deſerves to have a Place.

Num. XXXVII.

Lord Treaſurer writes to the King of Navar.

And as the Queen wrote a Letter this Year to the Duke of *Monpenſier*, a *French* Proteſtant Prince, ſo the great Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* now wrote his to another, *viz.* The King of *Navarr.* Such was the good Underſtanding and great Friendſhip between this Court and the Proteſtant Princes of *France.* That King had enough to do to preſerve himſelf and his Kingdom, and to defend the Religion againſt the *Leaguers*, *viz.* the Duke of *Guiſe* and his Party, ſworn Enemies to the *Reformed.* He had writ often to this Privy Counſillor upon Buſineſs: Highly commending his Zeal for Religion, as well as Service to his Miſtreſs, the Queen. Which Letters he did not think convenient to anſwer, as looking like a Piece of Preſumption. But *Weemes*, a *Scotch* Gentleman and Servant of that King, departing hence to that Court, and earneſtly deſiring a Letter from this Lord to that King; he at length yielded to do: The Letter may not be amiſs to inſert, to preſerve as much as may be, of the Memory of that worthy King as of that wiſe Stateſman, who writ it. Which I tranſcribe from the Minutes writ with his own Pen.

His Letter.

"Sir, I have received ſundry Letters of your Majeſty divers "Times: Wherein I confeſs myſelf greatly beholden unto your "Majeſty for the good Opinion expreſt therein, of me and my "Actions for the Cauſe of the Goſpel, more largely than my Power "can deſerve, though my Will according to my bounden Duty, is "not leſs than your Majeſty is pleaſed to expreſs. And though I "have not uſed to write to your Majeſty again in anſwer of your "Majeſties Letters, (which I have forborn, as judging it ſome kind "of Preſumption to trouble your Majeſty with my Writings, where "my Anſwer was not needful) yet at this Time the Tender of a "Gentleman of *Scotland*, named Mr. *Weemes*, now belonging unto "your Majeſty, hath very earneſtly required me for his Diſcharge, "to certify you, that he brought to me your Letters. Which in "Truth he did; and being a Gentleman worthy of great Commendation, I could not deny him ſo reaſonable a Requeſt. Which is "the Cauſe of my preſent Writing. Praying your Majeſty to accept the ſame, as from an humble devoted Servitor of your Majeſty. Not ſo much for your Kingdom, which I do honour greatly, "but for your Magnanimity and Conſtancy in the Maintenance of "the true Religion of Chriſt. Wherein I pray God to aſſiſt you "with his Graces, to the Confuſion of Antichriſt, and of his Members.

Prince Palatine *and his Brother viſits the Queen.*

The Queen kept always a fair Correſpondence with the Foreign Princes of the Proteſtant Profeſſion. And both ſhe and her great Counſillor, the Lord Treaſurer, ſhewed all reſpect to them. And ſo ſhe did particularly to Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine.* Who with his Brother, Duke *Caſimire*, came about this Time into *England.* The Humanity and Honour ſhewed them here, their Agent *Wierus* (of whom mention was made before) acknowledged, in a Letter of high Eſteem and Gratitude to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, wrote in *September*, after the Return of thoſe Princes: Importing, "That he "had

ANNO 1584.

" had been chief Inſtrument to them both, of taking their Journey
" into *England:* Where they had received exceeding Satisfaction
" for the Treatment they found, both from the Queen and him.
Wherein the Agent added, " That he was bound to him for ever;
" and was ready to ſerve him." He called that Prince, *George, Guſtavus, Palatine* of *Rhine*, Duke of *Bavaria*, Count *Veldent*, &c. And he took Notice how that Lord gave his Brother, who was *Præfectus*, chief Officer to the ſaid Prince *Palatine*, the Teſtimony of his Hand and Seal; which he had asked of him.

The Queen of Scots *writes to the Lord Treaſurer.*

The Lord Treaſurer had the Honour now to receive a Letter from *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, dated from *Sheffield*, where ſhe was in Cuſtody of the Earl of *Shrewſbury*. For this Year an earneſt Treaty was in Hand betwixt her, and Queen *Elizabeth*, for her Liberty: With whom ſhe, the ſaid Queen *Mary*, profeſſing to enter into a ſtrict Amity; and Queen *Elizabeth* being inclinable to releaſe her. But the wiſe Men about her knew there could be no Security in ſuch an Act. In the mean Time the *French* Ambaſſador was much employed in this Affair. And to move the Queen towards her, ſhe now wrote herſelf an earneſt Letter to him, the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, in *French*, deſiring him to ſecond *Mauveſier*, the ſaid *French* Ambaſſador, on her Behalf: Beginning, *Monſieur, le grand Theſaurier. Ayant ecrit ces jours paſſees a la Royne Ma Dame, ma bonne Sœur*, &c. The Import whereof was, " That ſhe had lately writ-
" ten to my Lady, the Queen her good Siſter, to declare the Since-
" rity of her Intention towards her, and the great neceſſity which
" ſhe had of her Majeſties granting her Requeſts, ſhe thought fit by
" the ſame Meſſenger to pray him to be favourable in this Affair,
" *&c.* and that ſhe had prayed *Mauveſier*, the Ambaſſador of the
" *French* King, her Couſin, to communicate all to him; and be-
" ſeeching his Aid and Support towards her ſaid Siſter; and to have
" Regard to her long Captivity, and to the Truth of all that they
" would propound concerning her, *&c.* But the whole Letter, as
" I tranſcribed it from the Original, I have thought worthy of a
" Place in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XLI.

A Scandal of the Earl of Shrewsbury.

I muſt not omit, among the publick Occurrences this Year, an Information that was brought before the Lords, of a vile Report raiſed of the Earl of *Shrewſbury, viz.* That he had a Child by the Queen. The Scandal was ſo great and enormous, that it was brought from thence to the Quarter Seſſions; that the Party that related it might come to ſome due ſignal Puniſhment. One of the Seat of the Juſtices for *London* and *Weſtminſter*, was Serjeant *Fleetwood*, Recorder of the City of *London*. The Complaint beforeſaid take from his own Pen, written to the Lord Treaſurer, according as his Cuſtom was, to give him in writing, an Account of ſuch Proceedings in their Seſſions. It was by way of Diary about *Michaelmas*, when the ſaid *Fleetwood* and other Juſtices ſate upon the general Seſſions in *Weſtminſter-Hall*, for *Middleſex*; and the next Day at *Finſbury*.
" At this Seſſion one *Cople* and one *Baldwyn*, my Lord of *Shrewſ-*
" *buries* Gentlemen, required me [*viz. Fleetwood*] that they might
" be ſuffered to indict one *Walmeſly* of *Iſlyngton*, an Innholder, for
" Scandalization of my Lord their Maſter. They ſhewed me two
" Papers:

“ Papers: The firſt was under the Clerk of the Councils Hand, of “ my Lords Purgation. In the which your good Lordſhips Speeches “ are eſpecially ſate down. The ſecond Paper was the Examinations of divers Witneſſes, taken by Mr. *Harris*. The Effect of all “ which was, That *Walmeſley* ſhould tell his Gueſts openly at the “ Table, that the Earl of *Shrewſbury* had got the Queen with Child; “ and that he knew where the Child was Chriſtened. And it was “ alledged, that he ſhould further add, That my Lord ſhould never “ go home again, with like Words. An Indictment was drawn by “ the Clerk of the Peace. The which I thought not good to have “ publiſhed, or that the Evidence ſhould be given openly. And “ therefore I cauſed the Jury to go to a Chamber. Where I was, “ and heard the Evidence given.

Dr. Meredith Hanmer.

“ Among whom (added the Recorder) one *Meredith Hanmer*, a “ Doctor of Divinity and Vicar of *Iſlyngton*, was a Witneſs: Who “ had dealt as leudly towards my Lord in Speeches, as did the other, *viz. Walmeſley*. This Doctor regardeth not an Oath. Surely he is a very bad Man. But in the End the Indictment was “ endorſed, *Billa vera*.

Many Papiſts employed in Plots.

The *Popiſh* Party was very buſy here unto this Year; and now more and more. Many *Engliſhmen* of that Religion became Bigots, and were employed in Plots for the Deliverance of the *Scots* Queen, though it were with the Aſſaſſination of their natural Queen *Elizabeth:* Acted and encouraged alſo by Foreign Princes too. Such were *Throgmorton*, Lord *Paget*, his Brother *Charles*, under the Name of *Mope*, Lord *Arundel*, and among the reſt the falſe *Welchman*, *Parry:* And beſides, a great many Prieſts and Seminaries had been diſcovered, and taken up; and remained now in divers Priſons; as the *Marſhalſea*, the *Kings Bench*, the *Gate-Houſe*, in *London* and *Weſtminſter:* Beſides other Priſons of the Kingdom, as *Mancheſter*, and *Wiſbich:* Whom yet the Queen would not put to Death, (as many had been already for Examples) but now choſe rather to rid the Land of them, and baniſh them.

The true Subjects enter into an Aſſociation.

De Mendoza, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador here, was a great and buſy Inſtrument in theſe miſchievous Deſigns. So he was diſcharged and ſent away: But remained in *France*, following his Practices there againſt *England*. The Duke of *Guiſe* and his Party were ſworn in an inveterate League againſt the Reformed Religion in general; and particularly againſt the Queen. This dangerous Condition wherein *England* now ſtood, eſpecially, if the Queen were taken away, cauſed an *Aſſociation:* Which this Year all the well affected in the Kingdom voluntarily entred into: The Purport whereof was, by mutual Vows and Subſcriptions to proſecute to Death, as far as lay in their Power, all thoſe that ſhould attempt any Thing againſt the Queen. Theſe Matters I leave to our Hiſtorians to relate; I ſhall only ſhew ſome more ſecret Paſſages concerning them, from a Letter of Sir *Edward Stafford*, now Ambaſſador Reſident in *France*, to the Lord *Burghley* and Sir *Francis Walſingham*, importing, “ That the “ Lord *Paget*, upon a great ſudden was departed thence [*viz.* “ *Paris.*] And that in ſo great a ſudden, that his Companions that “ came over with him, (all deep in the *Scots* Queens Intereſt) were,

Strafford, *Ambaſſador in* France, *his Informations of* Engliſh *Romaniſts there.*

ANNO 1584.

Lord Paget. Throgmorton.

" or at leaſt ſeemed, greatly offended at it; and all the reſt that " were there, ſaving only his Brother and *Throgmorton*, who ſeemed only to be acquainted with it. The reſt gave out that they " knew not of his Departure, only the Night before he went. Whereat they Stomacked at *Charles Paget*, and ſeemed to grow in a great " Miſlike of him; calling him, a *glorious Fool*, and ſtanding in his " own Conceit more than there was Cauſe." But perhaps that Lord *Paget* had ſecret Orders from the *French* Court to depart for a while, to prevent the *French* Kings ſurrendring him upon the Queens Requeſt; and ſo after a Time to return again. " But " *Charles Paget* told them that his Brother, the Lord *Paget*, went " to *Molain* to avoid Charges: Where he meant to live more privately.

His Intelligence of the Lord Paget.

But the Ambaſſador (Part of whoſe Office was to trace as much as he could ſuch dangerous Perſons) added this further Intelligence in his ſaid Letter, " That that Lord being gone out of Town, he " aſſured them, That between the 2d and 3d Poſt towards *Lions*, " he had a Man met him with three Horſes; one that he rid on, " that brought the other two for the Lord *Paget* and his Man. " Which (as the Ambaſſador added) made him ſuſpect, that he had " taken ſome other Courſe. For giving out, that he went Poſt, he " went but two Poſts and an half. And from thence returned " back his Poſt Horſes; and took thoſe Horſes that ſtayed there for " him." And then ſubjoining his Conjecture: " That he might " perhaps have ſome ſuch diſguiſed Matter, that his Brother had " under the Name of *Mope*, when he came ſecretly into *England*, [and in *Suſſex* waited for the Duke of *Guiſe*, who was to Land there upon his intended Invaſion.] " This he thought good in " Time to advertiſe their Honours of. And that ere long he ſhould " learn more of him; and with Time advertiſe them what he knew.

A Book printed of the Nobility and Havens in England.

In the ſame Letter he let his Correſpondents underſtand, " That " there was, as he heard, a Book new printed, and very ſecretly " kept; and delivered out by himſelf who was the Doer of it. " Whom the Party as yet either would not, or could not name to " him. But he gueſſed by the Matter and other Cauſes; that it " ſhould be *Throgmorton*. Becauſe that it contained at large, that " which in Subſtance he [the Ambaſſador] had heard was found in " *Throgmorton*'s Hands, that was executed. Which contained the " Names of the Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Men of any Account " in all Shires in *England*; with their Abilities, Affections and " Diſpoſitions: The meaſured Depths of all the Havens in *England*, " at every kind of Tide. He added, that he thought he ſhould come " by it, as ſecret ſoever as it was kept. They reported it was bigger than the Anſwer to the Book, called, *The Execution of Juſtice*, almoſt once again. And that it was Dedicated to the Popes " Son.

Mendozas *unwelcome coming to* France.

The Ambaſſador proceeded next to *Mendoza*, and his coming to *Paris* from *England*: " That the Queen Mother ſtormed marvailouſly at *Bernardines* [*Vid. de Mendozas*] ſending thither, [to " *France*.] And that ſhe had told the King the dangerous Diſpoſition of the Man. And that both of them would fain be rid of “him, if they could. But the Ambaſſadors Thought was, that he ſhould remain there; and that they would not ſtrive, when it came to the Point, to refuſe him whom the King of *Spain* ſent. And that he was credibly informed, that Yeſternight, a Currier came to him with his full Diſpatch from the King of *Spain*, to ſtay there. And *Taſis* [who was the other Ambaſſador] to prepare to go either to *Flanders* or *Spain*, as by the next Diſpatch he ſhould have Order.

Walſingham, the Secretary, had acquainted the Ambaſſador with the aboveſaid *Aſſociation* of the Gentlemen of *England*, for the Queens Safety, and for revenging of any Miſhap befalling her by the Treachery of her Enemies. Concerning which this was the Ambaſſadors Opinion: “That having communicated it to ſome there, [in *Paris*] they told him, they would dare, what they could, to make the King there to take a Liking, to have it followed in that Realm. Into the which they that were *Englands* beſt Friends in *France*, if he [*Walſingham*] liked of it, would be content to give the firſt Example. Which he [the Ambaſſador] thought, if it might be brought to paſs, would divert any Conceits, that any evil diſpoſed People would conceive of the good Meaning of the *Engliſh* Nation.

The Engliſh *Ambaſſadors Thoughts of the* Aſſociation.

And then the Ambaſſador, to ſhew his good Zeal for his Royal Miſtreſs, the Queen, humbly offered to come into the ſaid Aſſociation, if it might be accepted, with Expreſſions of high Loyalty towards her. Uſing theſe Words: “I think, and whether it will be thought a Preſumption in ſo poor a Man without Means to help much in ſuch a Matter, as I am, to offer to enter into ſo good a Society. Or whether it be a Thing that Men of Greatneſs, and much Ability, only do enter into. But I have a Life and Bloud. Which in other Places I will keep and defend as charily as any Man. But in this Caſe no Body ſhall ſpend it with a better Will, nor more frankly than myſelf; nor any Man that lives in Heaven ſhall be more irreconcileable with any, that ſhall have a Thought to attempt it, than I. And therefore he beſeeched his Honour to know, whether his good Will might be accepted among the reſt of ſo honourable a Company; and what Order others that were not preſent ſhould ratify their Meaning among the reſt: And he would not fail preſently to ſend that which he ſhould command him.

The Ambaſſador deſires to come into the Aſſociation.

And then concerning that *French* Faction of the *Guiſes*, (wherein *Englands* Danger alſo was concerned) he wrote thus: “That the Houſe of the *Guiſes*, their Meetings and great Aſſemblies of the Nobility with them, had raiſed a Suſpicion in many Mens Minds of ſome Trouble: Which would be better diſcovered ere long. And that Word was brought him even then, that the Duke of *Guiſe* had agreed to come to the Court, [which was lookt upon as ſtrange News in reſpect of that fatal Diſcord between that King, *Henry* III. and that Dukes Party: Which ſome Years after ended in the Murther of them both.] “but none of the reſt: Having determined never to come at all once.” This was writ in *November*, 1584.

Fears of the Houſe of the Guiſes.

ANNO 1584.

A Parliament. The Lord Treaſurers Directions.

Now began a new Parliament in *November*; there having not been one in ſome Years before. And that it might begin with all the Solemnity and antient Uſages of Parliament, the Lord Treaſurer, an antient Member of Parliaments in former Reigns, as well as this, ſeems to have given this particular Direction; about regular reading of Bills; which I find under his own Hand, intitled, *Uſage of Parliaments:* And withal how conformable thereunto the ſaid Parliament began. Which was as followeth.

Uſage of Parliaments.

“ The antient Cuſtom of Parliaments hath been, that the Cauſes of Summons of Parliament have been the firſt Day of Parliament by the Lord Chancellor declared. And at the ſame Time alſo Notice given, that if any Perſon had any Suits or Petitions to the Parliament, to be heard there; where were certain Perſons ſelected to receive the ſaid Petitions within ſix Days following. And certain Lords of Parliament, both Spiritual and Temporal, were alſo ſelected to be the Tryers of thoſe Petitions. And ſo allowing of them, to be heard and treated of in Parliament, the ſame ſhould be received in convenient Time.

“ *Nota*, That the firſt Day of Parliament, on *Monday* the 23d of *Novemb.* [1584.] there were openly read the Names of five Receivers of Petitions, for *England*, *Ireland*, *Wales* and *Scotland*. And ten other Lords of Parliament, whereof four Biſhops, three Earls, three Barons; to hear and try the ſaid Petitions. And ſo to allow or diſallow the ſame, ſo as no private Petition ought to be allowed to be treated in Parliament, but ſuch as ſhall be in ſuch Manner tryed.

“ *Item*, The Cuſtom alſo is, That in the Common Houſe, the Speaker ſhould firſt prefer to be read all Bills that are brought to him, either from the Higher Houſe of Parliament, as Bills there paſt, or otherwiſe ſigned by the Kings own Hand, or brought from the King, or his Council, containing Matters offered to be treated on, for the Kings Behalf, or for the State of the Realm. And until theſe Bills ſhould be read, treated and debated, the Speaker ought not to ſpend the Time in reading of any other Bills. Whereby neither the publick Cauſes, for the which the Parliament was called, nor ſuch others as ſhould be ſent from the King and his Council, ſhould be delayed. The Reaſon of which Inſtruction for this Parliament given by that wiſe Stateſman, ſeems to be, to put ſome Stop to thoſe divers Petitions, Bills and Complaints, which were then earneſtly brought in chiefly by the *Puritan* Party againſt the Clergy, their Pluralities, Non-reſidences and Inſufficiency. Into which Matters of Controverſy ſome conſiderable Light is let in, by what is writ in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift* under this Year.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitgift. *B.* III. *Chap.* 10.

A Petition to the Parliament for want of able Miniſters.

To which I add, that in the Parliament two Years after, among the Petitions of this Sort, was one or more brought in for the redreſſing of the Peoples want of able Miniſters in the Nation; (many Defects in the Clergy being mightily complained of,) and for more conſtant Preaching of the Goſpel, and Reſidence of the reſpective Incumbents; to be ready to perform Spiritual Offices among them, eſpecially Preaching. There was one Petition alſo brought in for a learned

A lamentable Complaint.

Vid. Part of a Regiſt. p. 201.

learned Miniſtry, intitled, *A lamentable Complaint of the Commonalty*, by way of Supplication to the High Court of Parliament. Which it ſeems had been brought in once before; and now reviewed and augmented. It began, "In moſt humble Manner that we may, moſt gracious Sovereign, and Right Honourable Aſſembly, we fall down at your Feet, even in the Duſt, preſenting before you a moſt weighty Petition. It is not unlike that Petition that *Heſter* made to King *Aſſuerus*, ſaying, If I have found Favour in thy Sight, and it ſeem good unto the King, let my Life be given me at my Petition, and my People at my Requeſt. For we are ſold, I and my People, to be deſtroyed, to be ſlain and to periſh. And when the King demanded, Who had done that Deed, the Queen anſwered, That wicked *Haman*. In likewiſe ſo many Congregations of us to be in this Land deſtitute of a godly Miniſter, to preach unto us the Word of Salvation (as there be exceeding many) do entreat for our Lives, and the Life of our Neighbours. For we are ſold to be deſtroyed, to be ſlain and periſh eternally, if by your gracious Help, ſpeedy Remedy be not had. If Queſtion be made, who hath done the Deed, we anſwer, The blind Guides and unlearned Curates, that are ſet over us." This is enough to ſhew the Strain of the Compoſers of this *Supplication*.

A Supplication to the Queen, Council and Parliament.

This Petition was anſwered in a Speech in the Parliament, *Anno* 1586. by a Perſon unknown, perhaps Sir *Chr. Hatton*. But before this there was a notable Supplicatory Book prepared, ſtyled, *A Supplication; to be exhibited to our Sovereign Lady, Queen* Elizabeth, *to the Honourable Lords of her moſt Honourable Privy Council; and to the High Court of Parliament*. By what is written on the Backſide of this *Supplication*, by the Pen of the Lord Treaſurer, it appears to have been drawn up by *Tho. Sampſon*, *viz.* Mr. *Sampſons Book to the Parliament*. See two Letters of his to that Lord on that Occaſion in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*, under this Year: *Pag.* 183. The Articles of the Petition, by him framed in the ſaid Book, for a Regulation in the Church, are to the Number of Thirty four: "And all profeſſed to be for the Help of the poor untaught People of this Realm, and for the reforming of ſome other Diſorders. As Firſt, That there might be a Review taken of all the Market Towns, and other Towns of moſt Inhabitants, to ſee what able preaching Paſtor is now Reſident among them, and in every of them. And alſo to know, what Sufficiency of Living there was then provided in them. Secondly, That there might be Conſideration had of other little Towns and Pariſhes; that there might, by ſome Union of two or three Pariſhes together, be made ſufficient Congregations. Thirdly, That if in this View there were found a want of able Perſons, fit to ſupply the Office of preaching Paſtors in every Congregation, this Want might be helped by ſome certain Ways, there ſet down. Fourthly, That every Dean and Chapter of every Cathedral and Collegiate Church, that did pay yearly Wages to Singing Men and Choriſters, and Muſicians in their Churches, to pay the ſame in yearly Penſions to ſuch Paſtors as were Reſident on their Benefices, which ſhould be found

“ to want ſufficient Suſtentation of Living. That all Archbiſhops “ and Biſhops ſhould have aſſigned and appointed to them 8. 10. 12. “ or more preaching Paſtors, Doctors and Deacons, together with “ other grave and godly Men of Worſhip, or Juſtices of the Peace; “ to be Aſſiſtant to them in their Government in Cauſes Eccleſiaſti- “ cal: Which at preſent thoſe Archbiſhops and Biſhops, with their “ Chancellors and Archdeacons, did hear and determine alone. “ And that ſo likewiſe every Paſtor ſhould have appointed him four “ or ſix Aſſociates and *Seniors*, Inhabitants of the Pariſh, to and “ with the ſaid Paſtor; to govern the ſaid Pariſh with him. Since “ all Pariſhes and Paſtors had need of the Help of a godly *Seignorie:* “ A *holy League* with the Living God was alſo propounded to be “ entred into, both by Prince and People: That the Religion of “ Chriſt *Jeſus* might remain ſtable among us. And thereby to “ give open Defiance to *Rome*. The reſt would be too long to in- “ ſert here. But the whole thirty four Articles may be read in the *Appendix*. Out of which (it may be) the Commons drew up their Petitions, reducing them to the Number of Sixteen; offered to the Conſideration of the Lords; as they are ſet down in *D'Ews Journal* of Parliaments, but very imperfectly. Which were all conſidered and anſwered by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and other Biſhops. But they were thereby, and by the Queens Command, quickened to a Reformation of ſome Things amiſs; as may be ſeen in that Archbiſhops Life.

Numb. XXXVIII.

Pag. 357.

But I will ſet down *Sampſons* Prefatory Supplication to the Petitions aforeſaid: Intitled, *A Supplication made in the Name of certain true Subjects; to be in moſt humble wiſe preſented to our Sovereign Lady Queen* Elizabeth, *to the Lords of her moſt Honourable Privy Council, and to the High Court of Parliament.*

Supplication to be preſented to the Parliament for learned preaching Miniſters.

“ In moſt humble wiſe complaining; we which are Thouſands of “ the poor untaught People of *England*, your true Subjects, moſt “ gracious Sovereign Lady and Queen, and daily Orators to the “ Majeſty of God for your Highneſs, do ſhew to your Clemency; “ and to your Honours alſo, you, Honourable Lords of her moſt “ Honourable Privy Council; and to you, ye Honourable and Wor- “ ſhipful, you Lords, Biſhops, Knights, Eſquires, Burgeſſes of the “ High Court of Parliament;

“ That where, in this bleſſed Time of this moſt happy Govern- “ ment, there is and hath been now many Years a bleſſed Liberty “ given to preach and hear the Goſpel of *Jeſus Chriſt*, the Word of “ our Salvation, in Peace and Safety among us: A Thing which “ our Forefathers might deſire, but did not enjoy in ſuch Sort as we “ do: A Thing alſo, to which few of our Neighbours in other Do- “ minions at this Day can attain; and a Thing, for which we ac- “ knowledge ourſelves all manner of Ways moſt dutifully bounden “ to the Goodneſs of God, and to our moſt gracious Sovereign Lady “ and Queen. Yet ſo it is, that we your ſaid Suppliants in this “ great Plenty, are ſore pinched with a great Scarcity. For ſo it is, “ moſt Gracious Sovereign, and Honourable Lords, that in very “ many of our Congregations, we have none who do break the “ Bread of Life unto us; we have none that do diligently teach us

“ the holy Word of God; as by Gods Law we know, and as by your godly Laws we do think, we ought to have; nor, as we do ſee, ſome of our Neighbours have under your gracious Protection. We have not the comfortable Preaching of the Kingdom of God, joined with the Miniſtry of the Sacraments of Chriſt, in our Congregations and Pariſhes among our own, where we do dwell. And therefore ſome of us are driven to ſeek for the ſame from our own, in other Congregations and Pariſhes, where we do not dwell. We have not vigilant, hable, and painful preaching Paſtors reſident among us, to teach us by preaching the Word of God; and by Catechizing to inſtruct us and our Families in the Way of the Lord. We have ſome Paſtors which have a kind of Calling to the Paſtoral Office. But many of them be not reſident on their Benefices. Some of them are licenſed to be double, if not treble beneficed Men. Some of them are occupied in other Affairs, which they do apply. So that they neither can, nor do they the Office required of a diligent preaching Paſtor, reſident on his Flock.

“ If our Biſhops heretofore had, or yet did provide a Remedy fit for *Biſhops.* this Grief, we would not have made this Complaint now: But our Biſhops are ſo far from giving a meet Remedy for theſe our Griefs, that they do rather daily encreaſe them: For theſe be ſome of them, which do daily make Numbers of Miniſters or Prieſts (as they be called) which are ſo dumb, that they neither can do, nor will ſpeak any Thing in the Congregation, where they be reſident, more than they are compelled to read out of a printed Book. With which Reading, and ſome other Conformity (as it is termed) our Biſhops and their Officers, contenting themſelves ſufficiently, do give us ſimple Readers, not skilled, nor ſufficiently preaching Paſtors. The Lord hath not given to theſe Men, of whom we do complain, the Tongue of which the Prophet doth ſpeak, when he ſpeaketh of profitable Preachers, thus: *The Lord hath given me a Tongue of the* Iſaiah 50. *Learned, that I ſhould know to miniſter a Word in Time to him that is weary.* Though they be ſuch Men as do want the Gift, yet they do boldly ſeek to have the Place of a Teacher, though they cannot teach. Seeing Paſtors are commanded to feed the Flock of the Lord, it may be thought to be a very preſumptuous and prepoſterous Thing, to ordain ſuch Men to be Paſtors as cannot feed it dutifully: And yet our Biſhops dare boldly confer that to them which they do blindly ſeek.

“ The Paſtors which the Lord doth like and allow to be the Paſtors of his People, are ſuch as do feed his People with *Knowledge and* Jerem. 3. 15. *Underſtanding.* Our Lord and Saviour *Jeſus* did ſend forth his Apoſtles to preach the Goſpel. The Paſtors which are to be allowed by the Rule of the Holy Apoſtle *Paul*, muſt be able to perſuade by ſound Doctrine, and to convince the Gainſayers; muſt be apt to teach, and hable rightly to divide the Word of God. *Paul* commandeth *Timothy* to be inſtant in Time and out of Time. Which Things they regard not, which do give their People but bare Readings, and appoint them to hear but Quarter Sermons. To be thus hable to teach, and to do it, is more than to be a ſimple Teacher: And is much more than our reading Miniſters do, or can do. If

“ Men contend to ſet up a Reading Miniſtry in Place of Preaching,
“ they do not regard, how the Lord hath ordained a Preaching Miniſtry,
“ for the profitable edifying of his Church. And ſo they do
Readers. “ dangerouſly depart from the Ordinance of the Lord *Jeſus Chriſt*,
“ and do draw very nigh to the Abuſe of *Antichriſt*; who is content
“ to feed his own Church with ſuch a dumb and unprofitable Miniſtry
“ as ſerveth in reading or ſinging, and that in a ſtrange Tongue
“ moſt unprofitably.

“ The Perſons among us, which are unable to teach, do both ſatisfy
“ themſelves and ſome ſuch Officers as have Rule over them, with
“ a ſimple reading of that which is preſcribed to them; though a
“ Number of them do read in no better Sort, than ſome young Scholars
“ could do, which were newly taken out of ſome *Engliſh* School.
“ Truly, this their reading is ſo rude in ſome Places among us, that
“ they ſeem themſelves ſcarce to underſtand that which they do read.
“ We know and confeſs that publick and ſolemn Reading of Gods
“ Law is commanded. The beſt Practice of which is ſet forth in the
Deutr. xxxii. 11. “ Book of *Nehemiah*. Where it is ſaid, *The* Levites *did read in the*
Nehem. viii. 8. “ *Book of the Law of God diſtinctly, and gave the Senſe, and cauſed*
“ *them to* underſtand the Reading. If we heard this kind of Reading
“ at the Mouths of our Miniſters, we neither would, nor could complain
“ of their unprofitable Reading, as now we do.

“ We might encreaſe this our Complaint with ſhewing this Grief
“ alſo; that whereas by Gods Grace there are in ſome Places good
“ Teachers among us (which are in Number, and in Compariſon of
“ them which do occupy the teaching Place, and yet are no Teachers
“ at all, but very few) theſe few do receive great Diſcouragement and
“ Diſcredit: Yea, and ſome of them are diſplaced, not becauſe they do
“ not teach us painfully and truly, but for an old continued Quarrel
Teachers nonconformable. “ of *Conformity* in ſuch Ceremonies as Men have deviſed; which have
“ not in them any Power to edify us. We do moſt humbly beſeech
“ your Highneſs and Honours, to call to your good Remembrance,
“ that they which do well ſhould receive Praiſe and Comfort of the
Rom. xiii. “ Powers, which do bear the Sword of God. And we do humbly
“ beſeech you likewiſe to underſtand, that this hard handling of our
“ good Paſtors doth caſt us into hard Diſtreſſes. And alſo that it
“ may pleaſe you to receive Information of our own poor Eſtate herein;
“ of us, who do feel the Sore and Smart hereof. For when our Biſhops
Deprived. “ do deprive our Preaching Paſtors of their Livings, and do ſtop
“ their Mouths; ſo that they cannot teach us the Will of the Lord
Biſhops. “ God Almighty, they take upon them to do that for which they ſhall
“ give an Account to the Lord God; whoſe Miniſters they do forbid
“ to ſerve his Divine Majeſty. And while they think hereby to
“ puniſh our good Paſtors, they do indeed ſtick us with a Dart of
“ Death. For they take from us the Bread of Life, and leave us deſtitute
“ of Inſtruction and Comfort in God. And we do humbly beſeech
“ the Lord God to judge this Cauſe at his good Pleaſure.

Ceremonies. “ Verily we have great Need of ſuch Paſtors, as will, can, and do
“ painfully and truly teach us the Way of the Lord. We have no
“ Need at all of ſuch idle Ceremonies, as do not edify us in true Godlineſs.
“ And it is very requiſite that the godly Rulers take Heed,
“ how

ANNO
1584.

“ how they do burthen the Church of *Chriſt* with the Things that are called *Indifferent*. For in Continuance of Time, they may grow to be intolerable Burthens to it. For Things indifferent preſt upon the Church by the Authority of Man, do oftentimes breed much Hurt. We have by Experience proved, that ſuch cold Ceremonies in the Church do weaken the Power of the Doctrine of the Croſs of *Chriſt*. Becauſe in them is neither Life nor Spirit. The obſerving of ſuch dead and unprofitable Ceremonies is no Piece of that Sacrifice which is made of Man to God, by the preaching of the Goſpel. Of which the Apoſtle ſpeaketh in his Epiſtle to the *Romans*. To take Preachings from us, and to give us inſtead thereof a bare Reading, furniſhed with a ſort of idle and unprofitable Ceremonies, is to take from us the Bread of Life, which God hath prepared for us; and to feed us after the Device of Man, with an unprofitable Hearing and Looking. We call it *unprofitable*; becauſe our Dulneſs is not thereby quickeed, our Minds ſtirred up to attain unto the Underſtanding of the Mind of God, nor to embrace that which is contained in his Word. It is our great Grief to have our comfortable and profitable preaching Paſtors taken from us for ſuch unprofitable Ceremonies. By this kind of diſcouraging of the good Labourers, we which are ſimple People are greatly hindred, and caſt back in the Way of the Lord.

Rom. xv.

“ We might likewiſe in complaining ſhew, how that ſome of ourſelves, in whom God by his Grace hath wrought a Hunger to hear his Word, and do offer ourſelves to ſeek it in ſuch Places where it is to be heard; and do labour quietly [to reſort] to thoſe Congregations, where the Preaching of the Word is comfortably joined with the Miniſtry of the Sacraments, to be Partakers of the ſame; we are for this our doing moleſted and troubled by our Idol Shepherds, and ſuch Officers, as do favour them: As though it grieved them, that we ſhould be taught at the Hand of any other Man, than at theirs, which neither can, will, nor do teach us at all: And as though they would have our hungry Souls contented with their dumb and unprofitable Miniſtry. By theſe, and the like to theſe, Occaſion is given now to renew that old Complaint of him that ſaid, *Multi Sacerdotes, pauci Sacerdotes; multi nomine, pauci opere*. To which Kind of Paſtors, in Title only, and not in Work, we think that the Things which God ſpeaketh by his Prophet, may be applied; where he ſaith, *The Paſtors are become Beaſts; and have not ſought the Lord. Therefore have they none Underſtanding; and all the Flocks of their Paſtures are ſcattered.* We fear that ſome of our Men, which are called to receive the Charge of a Church, do think more, that they are called to receive the Commodity of a Houſe, Glebe Lands, Tithes, and of their *Eaſter* Book, than to take the Care and Charge of Souls. Such Paſtors we have. We do neither envy nor deny to pay that which is due to them; but we deſire that they may be commanded to give to us our Due; which now in their Idleneſs and Worldlineſs they do with-hold from us. And if the true Chriſtian Diſcipline Eccleſiaſtical did bear ſuch juſt and right Dominion in this Church of *England*, as it ought to do, and we humbly deſire that it may do, then Paſtors would do the Duty of good Paſtors, and we, the People, ſhould be by our Pa-

Some moleſted. And why.

Jer. x. 21.

Paſtors deſcribed.

ANNO
1584.

“ ſtors, fed by the Word of God in Underſtanding and Godlineſs:
“ Which now we do want. But we mind not to trouble your noble
“ Honours with ſo long an Enumeration of our Griefs, as we might
“ make juſtly in this Behalf.

Viſitors.

“ The Truth of theſe our Griefs touched, or others by us not touched,
“ if it pleaſe you, be made fully known to you by the Relations of
“ ſome ſuch godly Viſitors, as may take a View and Trial of theſe
“ Cauſes: It ſhall ſuffice us at this Time to have declared thus much to
“ your Honours, that we are as ſheep ſcattered without a Shepherd:
“ On whom the Lord *Jeſus* did take pity. We are left without Teaching
“ in theſe abundant Days of Teaching. They on whom we do
“ complain do feed themſelves; but we do famiſh. They will be in
“ Place of our Paſtors; but they do bereave us of the Fruit of the Paſtoral
“ Office. This they do; and this they ſuffer, to the great Diſhonour
“ of God, to our great Diſcomfort, and to the no ſmall Danger
“ of the Loſs of our Souls. Remember, you noble and honourable,
“ we do humbly beſeech you, that the Loſs but of one Soul cannot
“ but be ſtraitly required by the living God, in that dreadful Day
“ of Account at their Hands; to whoſe Government his Divine Majeſty
“ hath committed us.

Matth. xi.

The Paſtors charged.

“ We do now complain of the Danger of the Loſs of our Souls and of
“ our Salvation, thro' this Want of teaching, which we now do ſuffer.
“ There are whole Thouſands of us left untaught. Yea, by Trial, it
“ will be found, that there are in *England*, whole Thouſands of Pariſhes
“ deſtitute of this neceſſary Help to Salvation; that is, of diligent
“ Preaching and Teaching. Salvation is promiſed to them only which
“ do believe: But we cannot believe on him, of whom we do not hear.
“ We cannot hear without a Preacher, as the Apoſtle doth ſay. It is
“ preaching, and not ſimply reading, that is required for having of
“ Faith. The Reader may himſelf read without Underſtanding; as
“ the Eunuch did. And likewiſe may the Hearer hear the Thing read,
“ and not underſtand it. That Eunuch had not full Faith wrought in
“ him, but by hearing *Philips* Preaching to him, and opening to him
“ the Meaning of the Scripture, which he had read before. For then
“ the Holy Ghoſt did work Faith in his Heart. So when in Preaching,
“ the Holy Scripture is ſo well handled, that it is both truly
“ opened; and alſo applied fitly to the Minds and Underſtandings of
“ the Hearers, then doth the Spirit of God teach the Hearts of the
“ Hearers to underſtand; and doth work that Faith in them by it.
“ Which is the Underſtanding of Life and Salvation. We muſt hear
“ and underſtand, before we receive and retain the Seed of Life, to
“ bring forth the Fruits of it. Neither can we underſtand it, unleſs
“ we be rightly taught, both what it is, and how it is to be underſtood
“ of us.

Thouſands untaught.

Rom. x.

Acts viii.

Want of Preaching.

“ So of this Want of Preaching we do complain. This Penury of
“ Preaching breedeth in us a Penury of Faith. Which doth both
“ greatly pinch us, and put us in Danger. It doth alſo conſtrain us
“ at this Time to make this our humble Complaint.

“ In tender Conſideration whereof, and for Redreſs of theſe Griefs,
“ and of ſome other Things, which do need Reformation, we do moſt
“ humbly beſeech your Highneſs, our moſt Gracious Sovereign Lady

“ and Queen, your Lordſhips, our moſt Honourable good Lords of her Majeſties Privy Council, and your Wiſdoms, which are of the High Court of Parliament, not only graciouſly to conſider of the Premiſſes, but alſo of theſe our humble Petitions hereunto annexed, and now following. Which we do humbly preſent to your godly Wiſdoms: Not as Preſcribers of that which is to be done by you, but as moſt humble Suitors, moſt humbly beſeeching you to be moved by your own good Conſideration of the Things which we do deſire in them, yourſelves to think on: To deviſe and eſtabliſh ſome ſuch Remedy for our Miſeries, and the Diſorders; which do hinder godly Order among us; as to your godly Wiſdoms ſhall be thought good and neceſſary. And we ſhall pray God, our heavenly Father, even in the Name of *Jeſus Chriſt*, both to pardon all former Faults and Negligences; and to work in your Hearts the right and full Underſtanding and Care of true Godlineſs, which is to be had.

“ We do confeſs, that when God did firſt call you to take the Affairs of the Church in Hand, you did find in it many Ruines, and great Gaps. He hath directed you by his Grace to do much good, to the repairing of the ſame, we do humbly praiſe him for it. And even ſo we pray him ſtill to lead you by his principal Spirit to do all that which remaineth, and is yet to be done in the Buſineſs of his Holy Majeſty. That you may beſtow yourſelves, and the Power which he hath given to you, wholly in his Service. And that both you may govern us, and we obey you, according to his bleſſed Will, thoroughly.” The *Petitions* that are ſaid to follow are ſet in the *Appendix*.

Which remain to be done.

Num. XXXVIII

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. Book III. ch. 10.

But as for the *Petition* conſiſting of ſixteen Articles brought into the Houſe of Parliament, for Reformation or Alteration of the Cuſtoms and Practices of the Church eſtabliſhed, and ſent up to the Houſe of Lords, they are ſet down elſewhere at large; with the Anſwers to them by both the Archbiſhops, and alſo by *Cowper*, Biſhop of *Winton*. But beſides, I meet with another Anſwer at good Length, to thoſe 16 Petitions, given in by the Biſhops in general: And ſeem to have been done at their Convocation. Which having not as yet ſeen the Light, I cannot omit to inſert this *Manuſcript*; being an important Matter of the Hiſtory of our Church at that Time, when there was ſuch a joint Endeavour of many, eager for another Diſcipline to be brought in, and the Former with the Publick Prayers and Offices to be laid aſide. Firſt, the Articles are ſet down, and then the Anſwers of the Biſhops to each Article diſtinctly follow. But this Paper being ſomewhat large, I refer the Reader to the *Appendix*; where I have exemplified it.

Anſwer of the Biſhops to the 16 Articles.

Numb. XXXIX.

A Call of the Clergy at St. Pauls.

As the Year before [*viz.* 1583.] the Biſhop of *London* viſited his Clergy at St. *Pauls*, Dr. *Walker* preaching before them, and then all the Miniſters ſubſcribed anew to the two Books; [that is, I ſuppoſe, the Book of Common Prayer, and the 39 Articles,] ſo now this Year there was another Call of the City Clergy again, to elect Clerks for the Convocation. When alſo a general Subſcription was made to the Queens Supremacy. And certain *Scotch* Miniſters exiled out of *Scotland*, were forbidden to preach, except they had lawful Licences thereunto. There was alſo then a Call to relieve a Biſhops Widow of

ANNO 1584.

Ireland; who was there killed: And likewiſe to gather Money, to redeem one Mr. *Rogers*, a Captive in the Duke of *Parmas* Hands. This I ſuppoſe was *Daniel Rogers*, that tranſacted the Queens Buſineſs in *Flanders.*

CHAP. XIX.

A Convocation. Articuli pro Clero. *The Archbiſhops Cares. Comforted by Sir* Chriſtopher Hatton. James Diggs, *ordinary Servant to the Archbiſhop. Dr.* Druries *Advices to him about a* Melius Inquirendum. *Dr.* Howland *made Biſhop of* Peterborough. *The Biſhop of* Lincolns *Admonition. A Book called, The* Abſtract, *for bringing in another Diſcipline. Anſwered. The* Counterpoiſon. *Dr.* Copcots *Sermon at* Pauls *Croſs. A brotherly and friendly Counſil to the Miniſters, for Peace and Concord.*

A Convocation.

A *Convocation* now ſat, *Novemb.* 24. Of which Synods and Meetings of the Biſhops and Clergy there was a great Uſe under Queen *Elizabeth:* Both for the maintaining of themſelves and their Privileges, and providing for Religion and regulating Abuſes, and offering good Bills to the Parliament: as they uſed to be full of Buſineſs in various and ſundry ſuch like Matters.

Articuli pro Clero

In this Convocation the *Articuli pro Clero*, were framed by the Archbiſhop, Biſhops, and the reſt of the Clergy of the Province of *Canterbury*, and eſtabliſhed by the Queen, and approved and confirmed by Royal Authority. Theſe Articles in *Latin* may be found in the *Collection* of Articles, Injunctions, Canons, *&c.* Collected by Biſhop *Sparrow*. Which Articles were digeſted under theſe Heads. I. That fit Men be admitted to Holy Orders and Eccleſiaſtical Benefices. II. For the moderating the ſolemn Commutation of Penance. III. Concerning moderating certain Indulgences for the Celebration of Matrimony, without thrice denouncing the Banns. IV. Concerning reſtraining or reforming ſome Exceſſes about Excommunication. V. Concerning the Pluralities of Benefices. VI. Of Fees due to Eccleſiaſtical Officers, and their Servants. Laſtly, Concerning Enquiries to be made by Biſhops. The making of which Articles were no doubt occaſioned by the Bills put up this Parliament for the Reformation of many Eccleſiaſtical Abuſes complained of.

The Original of theſe Articles I have ſeen among the Lord Treaſurer *Burghleys* Papers. Out of which I muſt note ſome Lines; which are not in the printed Articles, as we have them in Bp. *Sparrows* Collection.

Sparr. Collect. p. 194.

lection. Where immediately after Line the 10th, this Paragraph follows. *Quod ſi Patronus quiſpiam Clericum aliquem ad Beneficium aliquod præſentaverit, qui prædictis Qualitatibus non fuerit imbutus, licebit etiam Epiſcopo ejuſmodi Præſentatum rejicere: Nec brevi illo de* Quare impedit, *nec ullâ aliâ ratione cogetur eundem inſtituere, aut eâdem Cauſâ ullum legis Periculum ſubire.* But this indeed had a X ſet againſt it. But I find alſo the ſame Period in the ſame Book of Articles in *Engliſh* without any X there.

The Archbiſhops Cares and Concerns for the Clergy.

Whitgift Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* was aware of theſe Bills and Petitions that were preparing by the Innovators, and their Out-crys againſt the State of the Clergy, and againſt Non-reſidences, Pluralities, *&c.* Nor was his Diligence wanting to provide Anſwers, where Complaints were ungrounded, and Redreſs where Need was. And in this weighty Buſineſs he had the Encouragement and cordial Friendſhip of Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, Vicechamberlain to the Queen, and one of her Privy Council. Who had ſent to the Archbiſhop a Paper of Notes containing, as it ſeems, the Sum of thoſe Petitions for Reformation that were to be brought into the Parliament-Houſe, now ere long to ſit: That ſo the Archbiſhop might the better underſtand the Import of them, and get Replyes ready upon Occaſion. The Archbiſhop made Uſe of Mr. *Bancroft*, his faithful Chaplain, as his Meſſenger to Sir *Chriſtopher*. From whom he repaired back with his Advice and Comfort. Which was ſeaſonable to the Archbiſhop in this troubleſome Interval. And that the ſaid Knight might be certified hereof, he forthwith gave ſome Inſtructions to the ſaid *Bancroft* to ſignify as much to him, which he accordingly did by his Letter. *viz.*

Bancrofts Letter.

" That he had been with his Grace, as his [Mr. Vicechamberlains] Pleaſure was, and had returned his Notes according to his " Commandment." And then proceeding in theſe Words concerning the Archbiſhop; " Your moſt honourable Friendſhip (as I was willed " to ſignify) by me in your Name imparted, is and ſhall be, his " Graces continual Comfort: I am perſuaded, he never received Meſ" ſage more to his good liking.

" My Lords Grace commanded me to make thus bold with your " Honour by a Poſtſcript. He certifieth you, that he is very glad " the Notes do prove ſo frivolous. And touching the other " which were moved the laſt Parliament, your Honour ſhall have " the Anſwers unto them, with their Inconveniences before the Be" ginning of the Parliament next. They had been ſent now, but " that they could not be written out ſo ſpeedily. And thus by my " harty Prayer unto the Lord for your Honour, committing to " his moſt ſacred Protection, in all Humility I take my Leave. From *Lambeth* the 6 of *Novemb.* 1584.

Your Honours moſt bounden and dutiful Chaplain.

Richard Bancroft.

This *Bancroft* was he who was afterwards Biſhop of *London*, and ſucceeded *Whitgift* in the Archbiſhoprick; and recommended this Year by the Archbiſhop for the Deanry of *Glouceſter* now void. He

ANNO 1584.

P. 224.

wrote a Book called, *A Survey of the pretended Holy Diſcipline*, and other Books againſt the *Puritans*. And how cordial a Friend Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton* was to the Archbiſhop, and the Cauſe of the Church in this Parliamentary Controverſy, may be ſeen in that Archbiſhops Life, printed *Anno* 1718. And there is a notable Speech of his in Parliament concerning this Affair, preſerved in *D'Ews Journal*.

Book III. *Ch.* 10, 11.

Theſe Particulars before ſet down in this and the former Chapter, concerning this earneſt Endeavour of Reformation of ſuppoſed Defects in the eſtabliſhed Church, will ſerve as a further Addition to what hath already been related of it in Archbiſhop *Whitgifts* Life.

A Servant of the Archbiſhops committed to the Fleet.

D'Ews *Journal, p.* 314. b.

A Paſſage or two more concerning this Archbiſhop, happening this Year, follows. Upon an Occaſion offered to one of his Servants, he vindicated an antient Privilege of ſuch as were advanced to the See of *Canterbury*. The Occaſion was this. *James Diggs*, one of his Gentlemen in Ordinary, was ſince the preſent Parliament began to ſit, committed to the *Fleet* upon a *Reddit ſe* in the Exchequer. But upon the Motion of the ſaid Archbiſhop, claiming the antient Privilege of this High Court, the Lords gave Commandment to the Gentleman Uſher, that the ſaid *James* ſhould be brought before them: And the Lords openly hearing Sir *Roger Manwood*, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer in this Cauſe, and the ſame *James Diggs*, ordered him by Vertue of the Privilege of the Court, to be enlarged and ſet at Liberty. And further ordered, that the Appearance of the ſaid *J. D.* by rendring himſelf into the Exchequer, was and ſhould be a ſufficient Diſcharge of his Sureties and their Bonds; and that the Bonds ſhould be re-delivered.

Dr. Druries *Advices to the Archbiſhop concerning a* Melius inquirendum.

Book III. *Ch.* 12. *p.* 212.

The Archbiſhop was alſo now concerned about another conſiderable Danger the Clergy were in, about their Revenues: Which was laboured now to get them diſpoiled of, or greatly diminiſhed, by a Commiſſion of *Melius inquirendum*, to be obtained from the Queen. For the preventing whereof, how the Archbiſhop uſed his Endeavour, and what Courſe he took; and the Arguments deviſed to ſtop it, have been ſhewn in that Archbiſhops Life. To which I add a Paper, ſince coming to my Hand; containing ſome Advices given him by Dr. *Drury*, a learned Civilian; ſhewing the evil Conſequences of this to many of the Laity: (as well as the Clergy, that were chiefly hereby ſtruck at) Thoſe of the Laity alſo enjoying Impropriations and Rectories, and other Eccleſiaſtical Rents and Revenues: And what Courſe was to be taken for the better Knowledge of theſe Things, that on Occaſion might be ſhewed and declared to the Queen, or her Council, or her Parliament. This curious Paper was endorſed, *Dr. Druries Notes for the Church to the Archbiſhop*. They were as follow:

“ *Particulars*, for every Biſhop within his Dioceſs, to be colle-
“ cted, and certified unto your Grace. *Viz.*

“ I. The Names and Numbers of all and every Impropriation in
“ the Poſſeſſion of the Prince, or any Layman. The uſual Fines,
“ and the Rent reſerved: And alſo the true yearly Value thereof.
“ Whence may be gathered, whether the Fine received be greater
“ than

" than the Firſt-fruits; and the Rent than the Tenths and Subſidies. " And ſo whether it be greater Profit for her Majeſty to have them " reſtored to the Clergy, or to reſt where they be. Which being " declared to her Majeſty will cauſe Reſtitution; or at the leaſt hinder the Attempt of them that ſeek to impropriate all; and put the " Clergy to ſingle Penſions. And upon Knowledge of the true " Value, Order will be taken for a better Stipend for the Curates.

" II. The Names and Numbers of Eccleſiaſtical Livings of every " Sort, now leaſed to Laymen, and the Value and Rent reſerved. " And what Lands in every Pariſh diſcharged or freed from Payment of all or any Part of Tiths by Privilege, Compoſition, Cuſtom or Preſcription. So it will appear, how far the Laity is entred into the Livings, ordained for the Relief of the Miniſters; " and how many Places are, by Means thereof, deſtitute of Preachers. And foraſmuch as in 21 *H.* VIII. it was enacted, That no " Spiritual Perſon ſhould take any Farm, no, not a Parſonage, nor " any Thing, to ſell again. And further, the Leaſes which they " then had ſhould be merely void, unleſs by a certain Day they did " aſſign them into Lay Hands; it is a moſt equal and reaſonable " Courſe, if the like Act in the next Parliament be procured againſt " Leaſes taken, or to be taken by Laymen, of any Thing belonging " to the Clergy.

" III. A true Copy of every *Prohibition* for Seven Years laſt paſt. " Whence may be gathered the rough Violence and Abſurdities " therein uſed; and good Cauſes to obtain her Majeſties Conſent " for an Act of Parliament againſt *Prohibitions.*

" IV. Out of all the Premiſſes may be gathered a ſufficient Anſwer to the untrue Objection, that the tenth Part of the Fruits of " the Land is poſſeſt by the Clergy. And if it can be juſtified, " that her Majeſty ſhould have more Profit out of the Eccleſiaſtical " Livings in Firſt-fruits, Tenths and Subſidies, if they were reſtored, than ſhe hath now from the Laity in Fines and Rents; the " *Melius inquirendum*, and every other Plot to pinch the Clergy, " (which may juſtly be ſuſpected to be in Deliberation) will be prevented and met with.

Then follow, *General Propoſitions* to be ſupplied with Proofs by ſuch as his Grace ſhould appoint, and other Particulars to be gathered. Which may be read in the *Appendix.* By which we may gather, what Apprehenſions now were of the Ruin of the Church to be brought to paſs this Parliament; and that the taking away the Livings of Churchmen, and the Diſſolution of Biſhopricks and Cathedral Churches were drawing on: Inſomuch that that Civilian propounded it to the Archbiſhop, as adviſable that the whole State of the Clergy ſhould be exhibited in a Petition to the Queen, or to the whole Parliament, and their Caſe repreſented: And that not faintly and fearfully purſued: And that then it could not be, but that Reſtitution of the State and Perſons Eccleſiaſtical to their former Dignity and Eſtimation would follow; or at leaſt no further Depreſſion of them. And that it was further to be conſidered, whether long forbearing to complain of the rough Dealings with them, and concealing what Difference there was between the Advancement and

Numb. XL.

The dangerous State of the Eccleſiaſtical Revenues.

ANNO 1584.

Service of the Laity and the Clergy, were not far more dangerous: And that it would bring all down, as hitherto it hath done by Piecemeal full one Half.

Howland *made Biſhop of* Peterborough.

This Year was *Richard Howland*, D. D. Head of St. *Johns* College in *Cambridge*, made Biſhop of *Peterborough*. It was but a Year before, happened the Death of Dr. *Latymer*, Dean of that Church. Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer, who was *Howlands* great Friend, ſought to get him to ſucceed in that Deanry: And being abſent from Court, wrote to *Beal*, Clark of the Council, to move the Queen for him. Who anſwered, that ſhe thought him worthy of a better Place. And that in the mean Time ſhe would not beſtow that Deanry without Conſideration had of him. So that as *Beal* ſent Word back again to that Lord, he doubted not but that his Lordſhip would obtain it for him. Dr. *Fletcher* her Chaplain, ſued for it now. But ſhe told him, that upon a Motion made by the Lord Treaſurer, ſhe had beſtowed it upon Mr. *Howland*. But though he failed of it (for *Fletcher* indeed had it) the next Year ſhe preferred him to the Biſhoprick. This Biſhop was ſprung from a Citizen of *London*; being the eldeſt Son of *John Howland* of *London*, Gentleman, and *Anne*, the Daughter of —— *Greenway* of *Clay* in *Norfolk*. This *Richard* was baptized the 26th of *Septemb. Anno Dom.* 1540. He had a younger Brother named *Giles:* Who was called *Giles Howland* of *Stretham*, in the County of *Surrey*, Knight. This *Giles* married *Anna*, Daughter of *John Hare*, of *London*, Knight. His ſecond Wife was *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Rivers*, Knight. By whom he had *John Howland*, of *Stretham*, Knight, Juſtice of Peace in the ſame County, *Anno* 1623. whoſe Poſterity continued. Meeting in the Heralds Books with the Family of ſo memorable a Perſon as this Biſhop, I thought it not amiſs to inſert it.

Biſhop of Lincolns Admonition *concerning the Church of* England.

A Catechiſm, *and an* Apology.

The learned Men of this Church of *England*, made it now a Part of their Buſineſs and Study to maintain and vindicate the Church as it was firſt reformed and eſtabliſhed, in reſpect of its Doctrine and Government: And both thoſe of the Clergy, and thoſe of the Civil Law bore their Parts therein: Such Endeavours being now made by a diſaffected Party, (called *Puritans*) to overthrow this excellent Conſtitution, and to bring in a new. *Cowper*, the learned Biſhop of *Lincoln*, (afterwards of *Wincheſter*) took Pains in this Behalf. And in a Book which he publiſhed, called, *An Admonition to the People of* England, particularly recommended a *Catechiſm* for the Doctrine of this Church, and an *Apology* for the Reformation of it, as abundantly ſufficient to eſtabliſh all Chriſtians in a cheerful Submiſſion unto, and Agreement in the Worſhip and Service obſerved in it. For theſe are his Words:

"I think it very ſuperfluous and needleſs to make a new Catechiſm, or pen a new *Confeſſion* of the Church of *England* [which it ſeems ſome now endeavoured to bring to paſs] ſeeing they both are ſo ſufficiently performed, that without Envy be it ſpoken, there is none better in any Reformed Church in *Europe*. For a *Catechiſm* I refer them to that which was made by the learned and godly Man, Mr. *Nowel*, Dean of *Pauls*; received and allowed by the Church of *England*; and very fully grounded and eſta-

" bliſhed upon the Word of God. There may you ſee all the Parts " of true Religion received, the Difficulties expounded, the Truth " declared, the Corruptions of the Church of *Rome* rejected.... " But this I like not (added the Biſhop) in our Church, that it is " lawful for every Man to ſet forth a new Catechiſm at his Pleaſure, " *&c.* whereby it is made a principal Inſtrument to maintain and " encreaſe Diſcord and Diſſenſion in the Church.

The Apology.

And then for the *Apology* thus he proceeds: " For a ſound and " true *Confeſſion*, acknowledged by this our Church, I refer them " to that notable *Apology* of the *Engliſh* Church, written not many " Years ſince by the *Jewel* of *England*, late Biſhop of *Salisbury*. " Wherein they ſhall find all Parts of Chriſtian Religion confeſſed, " and proved both by the Teſtimony of the Canonical Scripture, and " alſo by the Conſent of all learned and godly Antiquity, for the " Space of certain Hundred Years after Chriſt. For the integrity " and ſoundneſs of his Learning and Eloquence, ſhewed in the ſame " *Apology*, they that contemn that notable learned Man, becauſe he " was a Biſhop, may have very good Teſtimony in a little Epiſtle " written by *Peter Martyr*, unto the ſaid Biſhop, and now printed, " and in the latter Edition ſet before the ſame *Apology*. Where " they ſhall find, that he ſpeaketh not for himſelf only, but for " many other learned Men of the Church of *Tygure* [in *Helvetia*] " and other Places.

Rites and Ceremonies of the Church, vindicated;

As for the Laws, *Cuſtoms* and *Government* of this Church, they were very learnedly proved and maintained by ſome Civilian; (Dr. *Coſin* perhaps, or Dr. *Bancroft*) taking now in Hand the Examination of a noted Book, written by ſome Adverſaries, called an *Abſtract*, (which was a Collection made out of the Laws, Acts of Parliament, Canons of the Church) in Favour of the *Diſciplinarians*; and endeavouring to prove the Deviations of the preſent Biſhops in their Exerciſe and Government. The Book was called, *An Abſtract of certain Acts of Parliament, and of certain of her Majeſties Injunctions and Canons*, &c. The Anſwer to this *Abſtract* (coming forth this Year) was intitled, *An Anſwer to the two firſt & principal Treaties of a certain factious Libel, put forth lately without Name of Author or Printer, and without Approbation by Authority, and with the Title of an* Abſtract, *&c.* In the ſecond Page of this Anſwer, the Writer hath theſe Words.

An Abſtract.

Anſwer to the Abſtract.

" That ſurely looking into the preſent Time and Occaſion, he " could not be otherwiſe led to think, but that this Proctor of Perverſeneſs, being nettled, that his Clients were then, by Force of " her Majeſties godly Laws ſet forth, to be recalled back from their " fantaſtical Breaches of the lawful Unity and Uniformity of this " Church, (too long by them uſed, to the great animating of Papiſts) and that none of his private hot Apologies for them, do " give any ſufficient Colour of Law or Equity, to protect them; " doth now think he ſhall be ſufficiently revenged by beating back " one Nail with another; and by objecting Breach of Law alſo to " thoſe grave Fathers, whom her Majeſty hath put in Authority " for reducing of others to Conformity of her Laws Eccleſiaſtical; " whoſe Faults and Overſights (if any ſuch be ſuppoſed) as they

“ are not by themſelves defended, or by others to be excuſed; ſo “ in Chriſtian Charity ought they not in this manner to be laid “ open; as *Cham* did his Fathers Nakedneſs—to the thruſting “ through of Religion by the Sides of [the Biſhops] the antienteſt, “ learnedeſt, and moſt godly Profeſſors thereof. Neither doth it “ become every Triobolar Mate thus covertly to carp, either at her “ Majeſties ſingular Wiſdom; who with the Advice and Aſſiſtance “ of her renowned, wiſe Council, hath made Choice of thoſe Fa- “ thers, as having more Integrity and Sufficiency, than he is willing “ by any Means to agnize; or at the Laws of the Land by the “ Parliament heretofore eſtabliſhed, *&c.* And ſo dangerous to en- “ force ſo great Innovation; and yet ſo ſpightfully to ſow Seeds of “ Diſſenſion among the great Men of the Land.

“ And as to the End of writing this *Abſtract*, the Author pre- “ tended theſe Pains of his chiefly to have been undertaken, that by “ the better Execution of theſe Laws, many and notable Points of “ ſuch Controverſies as had been a long Time among us, might “ more eaſily and ſpeedily by the ſame Laws be diſperſed: By “ which Controverſies and Contentions about Reformation of Ec- “ cleſiaſtical Diſcipline and Popiſh Ceremonies, he ſaid, the quiet “ and peaceable State both of the Church and Commonwealth, have “ been ſhreudly troubled and brought in hazard, *&c.* But ſaith the “ Anſwerer, Their Drift was, the obtaining of Sovereignty of *Se-* “ *niors* in every Pariſh. The want whereof bred theſe Threats of “ Hazard to the Common Wealth; and which was the only Thing “ they meant by Reformation of Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline, and the “ *Helena* which they contended for; nay, the Popedom which “ they gaped after.

The Scope of this Book.

And again, “ That the principal Scope of the Author of this “ Book [the *Abſtract*] was covertly to bring the Governours and Go- “ vernment Eccleſiaſtical of this Church of *England*, into Contempt, “ Hatred and Obloquie, eſpecially with their prejudicate and un- “ wary Readers of it: As though the ſaid Governours were either “ groſly ignorant, or wilful Breakers of Laws, Canons, *&c.* in “ Force, touched in that Book; yet in other Points ready enough “ to put in ure other Canons, Conſtitutions, Synodals, Provincials “ of like Nature, which ſerved better for their Purpoſe. If this “ were not his Drift and Mark whereat he aimeth, he would not “ have ſet his Articles of *A learned Miniſtry by Law commanded*, “ in the Vaward; and therein have ſpent almoſt half his Book. “ Whereby, by like, he thought ſimple and affectionate Readers would “ eaſily be lead to imagine, that the chief Governours in our “ Church Matters, did hold ſome Opinion to the contrary thereof, “ tending to the upholding of ignorant Miniſters. Wherein let the “ Wiſe conſider what Injury and Indignity underhand he offered to “ this Church, to fain that to be holden and maintained; which is “ not: And by joining herein with the common Enemy, the Pa- “ piſts; in ſtrengthning their Hands: Who alſo in ſeditious Books “ do harp much upon the Ignorance and Diſſoluteneſs of our Clergy.

To which Objection of an ignorant Clergy, much inſiſted upon, it was anſwered, “ That howſoever ſome Biſhops peradventure in-

“ conſiderately heretofore had laid their Hands upon ſome ignorant “ Miniſters, (which Thing neither other godly Men, nor they “ themſelves did afterwards well like of) the Objecters own Con- “ ſcience, he dared to ſay, was witneſs unto him, that this Church “ and the godly Governours therein, did diſallow an ignorant Mi- “ niſtry, and did with all their Hearts wiſh it poſſible, that *Rebus* “ *ſic ſtantibus*, every Pariſh had a ſufficient Miniſter. And that in “ theſe Reſpects it had been more convenient for him, to have ten- “ dred another Iſſue upon ſome Points in Practice in our Church; “ Namely, to this or the like Effect; Whether it be ſimply unlawful, “ that one ſhould be admitted to miniſter the Sacraments, which is “ not ſufficiently enabled to divide the Word of God aright, Ὀρθοτομεῖν, “ and to correct Sin, and to inſtruct in Vertue and good Life; or “ elſe whether it be expedient, that all the Pariſhes in *England*, ei- “ ther not able to ſuſtain ſuch a learned Miniſter, or for the Scarci- “ ty of ſuch, ſo well qualified, not able to procure one ſuch, be “ deſtitute of publick Prayers, and Adminiſtration of Sacraments, “ till ſuch a Preacher be procured unto them, or no?

Ignorant Miniſters no Miniſters.

Anſwer to the Abſt. *p.* 169.

For to give a Taſt of this *Abſtract*. In a Section thereof it is handled, Whether the Sacraments adminiſtred by ſuch ignorant Miniſters, and other Parts of the Execution of the Officers, incident to the Function, ſhould be accounted duly and rightly done: In Effect he anſwered, That the Actions and publick Execution of their Function by them done, ſhould be of none Effect. For he made them to be no Miniſters, that were ignorant and defective in ſome reſpect or other, when they were Ordained by the Biſhop. But the Author, perceiving the great Inconvenience of this Aſſertion, thus warily ſolved the Matter: “ That ſince no Controverſy had been “ moved touching the Validity of their Calling, State and Condi- “ tion, and for common Utility and a general Errors ſake, therefore “ the Things heretofore done by them were rightly and duly done. But to this the Anſwerer very well ſaith. “ That ſince the Con- “ troverſy is now moved, with the Actions done by ſuch Miniſters, “ which after this Time ſhall not be available and of Force; what “ Confuſion and Danger this Doctrine might bring to this Common- “ wealth, about the Marriages and Baptizings of infinite Numbers “ by ſuch Miniſters: Whereby by the Laws of this Land, the In- “ heritances, Dowers, and Tenancies by Courteſy do greatly de- “ pend; I leave to be weighed by deep Stateſmen and wiſe Coun- “ ſellors, *&c.*” He addeth, “ Whereupon it reſteth ſtill firm and “ inviolable, that if we have ſo many, (as he inforceth) only pre- “ tended Miniſters in this Church of *England*, and being ſo in “ Deed and Truth, then ſhall the Actions and Functions of the Mi- “ niſtry executed by them, be of no other Force [notwithſtanding “ the common Error which the Writer of the *Abſtract* would ex- “ cuſe it by] than if they had been done by meer Laymen, both “ in Deed and common Reputation.

“ Nay, by this Man's Platform the Prieſts made in Times of Po- “ pery, being not ſo much as capable of the Miniſtery, and the Mi- “ niſters ordered in the Time of King *Edward*, and of her Majeſties “ Reign that now is, being no Miniſters indeed, becauſe they were not “ choſen

ANNO 1583.

"choſen by the People, which the Book and Law required, [as that Author aſſerted] it will follow, that we have no Miniſters, in Deed and by Law, in this Realm of *England*. For the Anſwer ſhewed, how it was a Piece of new Church Model (and quoteth *T. C.* Reply for it) to affirm, that not only the Dignity, but alſo the Being of the Sacrament of Baptiſm depended upon this, whether he were a Miniſter, or no, that doth miniſter it. And then ſubjoineth the Conſequence. *viz.* That the Common Law of the Land maketh Eſpouſals void, to the Intent of Legitimation, or Inheritance of the Children, where the Matrimony was not celebrated by a Prieſt or Miniſter; and none to be capable of any Benefit of a Subject in this Land, which is not baptized. So that, as he concludeth, We ſee, a more peſtilent Platform than this Man hath laid againſt the particular Intereſt of every Subject in this Church and Commonwealth, cannot be deviſed by the moſt ſeditious Traitor in *Rome* or in *Rhemes*; nor by the moſt ſtirring and tumultuous Devil, if all that were true, when he and his Complices do deliver unto us, as undoubted Truths here, and elſewhere in their peremptory and perillous Aſſertions.

p. 518.

Anſw. to the Abſtracter, *p.* 238.

In ſhort, however this *Abſtracter* of our Laws maketh uſe of them to countenance and favour his Aſſertions and Reprimands of our Biſhops and Churchmen, yet in Truth he had little Regard or Eſteem for either. For thus the Anſwerer unvaileth his good Will and Judgment of them, in one Place of his Book. Where he calleth her Majeſties Laws, and all the Eccleſiaſtical Laws, "Popiſh, and to be abandoned, and as a Froth and Filth, to be ſpewed out of the Commonweal. And that her Majeſty cannot gratify her capital Enemy ſo much, as by authorizing and practiſing his Laws. And it were not a Dodkin Matter, if all the Books thereof were laid on a Heap in *Smithfield*, and ſacrificed in the Fire to the Lord, *&c.*

Beſides this *Abſtract* there came forth another Book of the like Strain about this Time, called, *The Counterpoiſon:* Which conſiſted of Reaſons for the *Elderſhip*. For the Controverſies raiſed by the *Puritans* were now very hot, and divers Tracts were written and diſperſed by ſuch; accuſing many Things in the eſtabliſhed Church, in reſpect of the Worſhip and Diſcipline of it. And the Churchmen took their Opportunities to vindicate the Practice and Uſages of it, and anſwer the Objections made againſt it. And ſo did Dr. *Copcote*, Maſter of *Bennet* College in *Cambridge*, to his Auditory, in a Sermon preached at St. *Pauls* Croſs. Therein taking Occaſion to give ſome Anſwer to the aforeſaid Book, ſeverely written by ſome of theſe *Diſciplinarians*. A Part of this Sermon they printed, and a *Defence*, by Way of Reply, of the Reaſons ſet down in the *Counterpoiſon*, in Maintenance of the *Elderſhip*, againſt a Sermon made by *Copquot*, as they either ignorantly or abuſively named him. Who had laid to their Charge, that they ſaid, (as I tranſcribe it from the Book) "That *the Church of* England *was no Church, but after a Sort*. And why? Becauſe it lacked Diſcipline. As the Papiſts ſaid of it, (ſaith the Preacher) that it is no Church, but *Secundum quid*. And that a City cannot ſtand without Walls, neither could a Church without Diſcipline. The Preacher confuted this from the

Dr. Copcots *Sermon at the Croſs, againſt the* Counter-poiſon.

Part of a Regiſt. p.

“Holy Father, Mr. *Gualter*, [as he calleth that learned worthy Miniſter of *Zuric*] upon the Epiſtle to the *Corinthians*: Who writ there; That for lack of Diſcipline, no Man ought to depart from the Church. And upon the *Galatians*, I do think, ſaith the ſame Father, that if any Man do ask of the Form of Diſcipline, that the ſame cannot be appointed in all Countries and Nations thro' the World.

A Scots Catechiſm, aſſerting an Elderſhip.

1 Tim. v. 17.

The Preacher alſo confuted their ruling *Elderſhip*, or *Presbyteries*; taking Occaſion from a *Catechiſm*, printed at *London* not long before, being the *Scots* Catechiſm. Wherein one of the Queſtions asked was, *What may the Elderſhip do in the Church?* The Anſwer is, *Admit unto the Sacraments, and exclude from them, according to God his Word.* And then the Preacher ſhewed the two Places in Scripture about *Elders*, by which the *Diſciplinarians* proved their Elderſhip. The one was, where it was ſaid, *That the Elders that rule well, are worthy of double Honour; chiefly, they that labour in the Word and Doctrine.* To which Dr. *Copcote* thus, We ſay, this is underſtood of the Preachers of the Word. And ſo, ſaid he, *Peter Viret*, and *Nicolas Hemyngius* (learned foreign Divines of the Reformed Religion) affirmed it of ſuch Prieſts to be worthy of double Honour. And whereas that Book of the *Counterpoiſon* had ſaid, that that Underſtanding of the foreſaid Place of St. *Paul*, to be meant of Prieſts and Miniſters, was taken from the Interpretation of the *Rhemiſt* Teſtament; *Copcote* made this Reply, That it was not ſo underſtood by the Authority of the *Rhemiſts*, but the Authority of the Holy Fathers. And then quoteth S. *Auguſtin:* Who asking the Queſtion, Who are they that do and govern well, but they that do and labour well in their Calling. And S. *Cyprian, Boni & fideles Diſpenſatores; i. e. Good and faithful Diſpenſers of the Word*, they are they, that are worthy of double Honour. And St. *Ambroſe, Presbyteri, i. e. Prieſts*, or *Elders who govern well in Life and Doctrine, deſerve double Honour, from them, over whom they are ſet.* And then he confuted another Argument of theirs for *Presbyteries*, from 1 *Cor.* xii. *God hath ordained ſome in the Churches; firſt Apoſtles, &c. Helps, Governments.* Therefore, ſay they, there muſt be Presbyteries in the Church. But ſaid the Preacher, I do not allow of this their Argument, *viz.* That as they had ſuch Elders in the Church then, ſo it muſt be now. For the learned Mr. *Gualter* ſaith [upon the Place I ſuppoſe.] “That where there were certain, that would erect a Presbytery hence, they muſt prove, they have the ſame Gifts that the Presbytery had then; *viz.* Propheſy, working of Miracles, and other Gifts, written there. The ſaid Preacher concludes, They that do theſe Things are thought to trouble the Order of the Church of God, and to bring in Contention. The Civil Magiſtrates went to get unto themſelves Eccleſiaſtical Authority; but this turned into the Popiſh Tyranny.

I have been the larger in giving ſome Account of this learned Divines Sermon, preached in that ſolemn Auditory, the rather, becauſe the Church was at this Time ſo fiercely aſſaulted by this ſort of Adverſaries: And it is likely, he had ſome Inſtructions from the Archbiſhop, *ANNO* 1584. Archbiſhop, or ſome other Superiors, to take this Opportunity to vindicate the preſent ſettled Conſtitution of the Church.

Yet that I may not be ſilent of what theſe Friends of the *Counterpoiſon* anſwered to this Preacher, in Plea for their Party; I add theſe Words, taken from the *Defence of the* Reaſons of the *Counterpoiſon.*

Defence of the Counterpoiſon. "Where he, [Dr. *Copcote*] ſlandereth us, in ſaying we ſlander the "Church, *&c.* our Words, our Preachings, our Writings, have al-"ways witneſſed, that we hold the Church for a true Church of "*Chriſt.* From which no Member may ſeparate himſelf: Although "he [the Anſwerer] muſt diſallow the Wants in her..... Have "we not, (yea, when we were unjuſtly deprived for not ſubſcrib-"ing) adjoined ourſelves to the Church, in all the Actions of the "Miniſtry, of the Word preached, of Prayer, and of the Sacra-"ment? Have we not by Perſuaſion continued many in the Boſom "of the Church? Yea, when through Weakneſs, becauſe of many "Abuſes, they would have departed.

A Paper of good Counſil of Peace in theſe Differences. In the Midſt of theſe ſharp Contentions, which greatly broke the Peace of the Church, and that between both, Profeſſors of the ſame Reformed Religion, I meet with a Paper, written in *Latin* by ſome pious learned Foreigner, (as it ſeems) interpoſing his ſeaſonable good Counſil, (whether written this Year, or near it) being well worthy to be taken Notice of, and preſerved: Tending ſo much to Unity, Peace, and Concord; and to the healing theſe Diviſions among the Clergy, and for the begetting a better Underſtanding and Chriſtian Forbearance. The Title it bore was, *Fraternum & Amicum de reſartienda inter Eccleſiæ* Anglicanæ *Doctores & Miniſtros pace, Conſilium.* Int. Foxij MSS. That is, a brotherly and friendly Counſil of reſtoring Peace among the Teachers and Miniſters of the Church of *England.* The Writer of it ſeems to have been ſome Perſon of great Gravity, Wiſdom and Authority too: Warning both Parties by the moſt Holy Name of God; and ſhewing them how theſe Differences, were ready to create a plain and open Schiſm in the *Engliſh* Church. It beginneth with theſe ſeaſonable Words of the Apoſtle, *Si alios mordetis & devoratis (ait* Paulus) *videte, ne viciſſim alij ab alijs conſummamini.* It is endorſed, *A Project for a Reconciliation in the Church of* England.

He ſhewed, "How the *Greek* Church firſt of all contending con-"cerning Rites and Ceremonies, and ſoon after quarelling about "the firſt Article of our Faith, on a ſudden, as it were, fell oppreſt "under the miſerable Slavery of the *Turks.* Dear Brethren, added "he, Take heed, leſt not ſufficiently taught by the Dangers of others, "ye be at laſt compelled to grow wiſe by your own Misfortunes. "Nor let it deceive you, I beſeech you, that ye agree among your-"ſelves in the Sum of the Apoſtles Doctrine, which to all good "Men ought to be the ſtricteſt Bond; and that ye ſeem to differ "in Matters of leſs Moment, *&c.* But I recommend this grave and "Chriſtian Counſil to the Reader: Who ſhall find it in the *Appendix,* preſerved there at length. Num. XLII.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

The Biſhop of Wincheſter *goes down to his Dioceſs. Deſires a Commiſſion for Recuſants in* Hampſhire. *Subſcription required by the Archbiſhop, of the Clergy of* Lincoln *Dioceſs, void. Account thereof from the Archdeacon. Their Backwardneſs. Conteſt about ſettling a Maſter of the* Temple. Hooker *appointed.* Travers *his Supplication. A Note of* Chriſtopher Goodman. *The Popiſh Faction. Their* Great Plot. *The Queen of* Scots *privy to it. Her Letter. Sir* Fra. Englefields *Letters to the Pope and* Spain.

TO gather up now ſome Matters of Remark concerning ſome of our Biſhops, and their Care in the Government of their Dioceſſes about this Time.

The Biſhop of Winton *going down to his Dioceſs.*

Cowper Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, lately tranſlated from *Lincoln*, was now going down from *London* to his Dioceſs. Where underſtanding what conſiderable Numbers there were in thoſe Parts under his Inſpection, eſpecially in *Hampſhire*, that were Recuſants, chiefly Popiſh, he thought it very neceſſary to take an *Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion* along with him: And that ſuch Men might be put into that Commiſſion as might be depended upon; that is, ſuch as were no ſecret Favourers of them. And ſome ſuch he mentioned to the Lord Treaſurer, to whom he wrote his Deſire in this Affair, and the preſſing Occaſion thereof: His firſt Care was to inform himſelf of the State of the Dioceſs. And for better Knowledge of the ſame, as his Letter to the ſaid Lord imported, " That he had ordered the " Archdeacon of *Hampſhire* to make Enquiry particularly of ſuch as " were obſtinate Recuſants. And he was certified, that there were " already preſented by the Churchwardens, to the Number of four " hundred: and in ſome one Pariſh forty or fifty. And yet it was " thought that by the Slackneſs of the Churchwardens, a great Number more were omitted. Whereupon he thought fit to arm him" ſelf with a Commiſſion, either Eccleſiaſtical, or of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, or both. For that the Country being in ſuch a Caſe, he " was of Opinion, that there would need extraordinary Authority. " And that to be committed not to many. For he underſtood, there " were divers of great Countenance would ſpeak very well, but dealt " very hollowly. And then recommending the Lord *De la Ware* and ſome others, both of the Laity and Clergy, that he might be ſure were ſound and hearty. But the whole Letter of this Biſhop in this weighty Cauſe, muſt be preſerved. See it in the *Appendix*. Num. XLIII.

Nor was this all the Pains he took in this Affair, ſo important to Church and State, againſt theſe Underminers of both. For I find, that

ANNO 1584.

Petition of that Biſhop againſt Popiſh Recuſants.

that being now reſident on his Biſhoprick, he had a careful Regard of the ſaid County: Which he found greatly addicted to Popery; and that Religion increaſing; many being perverted by Prieſts and Seminaries creeping in among them. Inſomuch that there was apprehended great Danger from them, and of an Invaſion that Way, lying upon the Sea Coaſt. This cauſed the Biſhop either this Year, or ſoon after, to preſent the State of that Place; and withal, to give his Advice to the Rulers, for the better Security of Religion and the Kingdom, in a Petition to the Privy Council. Which was thus entitled: *The humble Petition of the Biſhop of* Winchester, *the better to ſuppreſs the Boldneſs and Waywardneſs of the Recuſants in the County of* Southampton. The Petition follows, which I tranſcribe from the Biſhops own Hand-writing.

"Firſt, That it may pleaſe your Honours to renew the Charge of "diligently looking to the Sea ſide, and Creeks, for the coming in, "or paſſing forth of ill diſpoſed Perſons.

"Secondly, That it may pleaſe you to give in Charge to the Sheriff, and ſome other of the moſt forward Gentlemen, once in a "Month or three Weeks, upon the ſudden to have a privy Search "in ſundry ſuſpected Places; where it is thought the *Jeſuits* or Seminary Men have their Recourſe and Refuge; to ſeduce her Majeſties Subjects.

"Thirdly, That an hundred or two of obſtinate Recuſants, luſty Men, "well able to labour, may by ſome convenient Commiſſion be taken "up and ſent into *Flanders*, as Pyoners and Labourers. Whereby the "Country ſhall be diſburthened of a Company of dangerous People. "And the Reſidue that remain be put in ſome Fear, that they may "not ſo faſt revolt, as now they do.

"Fourthly, If it ſhall pleaſe your Honours to grant Liberty to "any of thoſe Gentlemen, that ſhall compound with her Majeſty, "according to your Lordſhips late Letters; that the ſame may not "be ſuffered to remain in the ſame Shire; but to be aſſigned to ſome "other Place, where they may do leſs Harm. For undoubtedly "they that have remained there have ſtolen away the Peoples Hearts "mightily; and daily do continue ſo to do. For even this laſt "*Eaſter*, upon ſome ſecret Fact purpoſely wrought, five hundred "Perſons have refuſed to communicate more than before, did in..... "will fall out to further Inconvenience, *&c.* The reſt is defaced.

The Archbiſhop ſends into the Dioceſs of Lincoln, *to require Subſcription.*

Subſcription to the Articles for Conformity were now preſt upon all Perſons that had Curacies and Benefices in the Church, and Cure of Souls. But many that ſcrupled Subſcription had great Friends at Court: and they were put in Hopes to be diſpenſed with, or at leaſt the Time of their Sequeſtration put off. Many ſuch were in the Dioceſs of *Lincoln*, now vacant of a Biſhop; and had made their Addreſs to the Lords of the Council for their Favour. In this Vacancy the Archbiſhop took the Care of it in that particular Reſpect of Subſcription. And for that Purpoſe ſent ſpecial Order and Direction to one Mr. *Barfoot*, Archdeacon of *Lincoln*, leaving the Care thereof to him: And to give him, [the Archbiſhop] Account what he had done therein. To which he accordingly did at large in a particular

His Order to the Archdeacon of Lincoln *therein.*

lar Letter from *Lincoln*. A ſhort Mention hereof was given in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. But here I ſhall give the whole Letter at Length, which will open ſeveral Particulars of the Management of that Affair, with thoſe ſcrupulous Miniſters. And that related ſo fully, that the ſaid Archbiſhop thought fit to ſend the Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, for him to peruſe: That the Court might be the better acquainted with the State of the Clergy in thoſe Parts, and how they ſtood affected: "That according to his Graces Di-" rection ſent unto him by Mr. *Randes*, he had exhorted the Mini-" ſters there, Recuſants, to ſubſcribe. That they would leave off" their Fantaſies, conceived without any Ground of Learning, and" liſten unto his Grace, and other Fathers and learned Counſil:" Signifying alſo unto them, that his Graces Pleaſure was, that they" ſtill ſhould remain in the State of Suſpenſion; but that the Se-" queſtration of the Fruits of their Benefices ſhould be ſtayed for a" Seaſon; ſo that they would in the mean Time provide ſufficient" and conformable Men, to ſerve in their ſeveral Cures. That ſo" many as were with him, with one Conſent anſwered, that they" looked for other News from his Grace: Some of them affirming," that they had already informed ſome of the Council, (he knew not," he ſaid, upon what Preſumption) that they ſhould be reſtored to" their Preaching and Miniſtring, in their own Cures at the" leaſt. And indeed certain of them affirmed that my Lord [Biſhop]" of *Winton* [lately their Biſhop of *Lincoln*] had ſaid in their Hear-" ing, that he could wiſh it were ſo for a Seaſon, till they might" the better bethink themſelves of their Conformity: Always re-" ferring himſelf, as they themſelves reported, unto his Grace of" *Canterburies* good liking thereof.

ANNO 1584.

Book III. Ch. 7.

To this "He told them, that they had very ſmall Cauſe given" them by theſe Speeches [of their late Biſhop] to deliver any ſuch" Information unto their Honours [of the Counſil.] Notwithſtand-" ing they found very great Fault with Mr. *Randes*, that he know-" ing his Graces Mind fully, would not reſolve them thereof, before" their coming to *London*, but ſuffered them to return with ſuch" vain Hope. *Barefoot* anſwered them, that it was not meet that" Mr. *Randes* having a Meſſage from his Grace unto him, [the Arch-" deacon] ſhould publiſh the ſame unto any private Perſons, before" that he had delivered it unto him.

"Finally, That he appointed them the laſt Day of the laſt" Month, to conform themſelves to ſubſcribe; ſtill advertiſing them," that they ſtood ſuſpended, as before; and ſignifying unto them," that if by that Day they did not conform themſelves, he muſt" preſently ſend Certificate thereof unto his Grace. They anſwered," They would to *London* again, and renew their Suit: And ſo de-" parted. But upon what heartning he knows not. And that, as" he was informed, they did preſently, the next *Sunday*, betake" themſelves unto Preaching and miniſtring in their ſeveral Charges," as before. In other Places than their own Pariſhes he did not as" yet hear, that they meddled.

And then he added theſe Words as the Effect of Incompliance of theſe Miniſters: "But truly, my Lord, the conformable Miniſtry" is very much grieved thereat. And divers ſaid plainly, that if

ANNO 1584.

" they had thought this would have been the End, they would have " joined with the other in their Recuſancy, rather than have offered " themſelves to ſuch reproachful Speeches, as were given out of " them by ſome of that Faction. For they told him, that there was " a Letter there in the Country ſent from Mr. *Field* of *London* [a " great *Puritan*] to the Miniſters in thoſe Parts, Recuſants, exhort" ing them to ſtand ſtoutly to the Cauſe; affirming the ſame not to " be theirs, but the Lords: Boldly aſſuring, that ſuch as had ſub" ſcribed had made a *Breach*, as he was informed, *Field* termed it. " And therefore raſhly judging of them, that they never would do " good hereafter, and ſlanderouſly terming them by the Name of " *Branded Menne*. He aſſured his Grace, there was great Grief " conceived hereat: And that yet the Matter was ſo cloſely kept " among the Recuſants, that albeit they had many Copies of that " Letter in their Hands, and were contented to ſhew the ſame unto " divers, to the wounding of their Conſciences, yet would they not " part with any Copy, but unto ſuch as were of that Side. He " proceeded further about this Letter, how he was informed, that " if his Grace dealt roundly with one of thoſe, whom now by Vir" tue of the high Commiſſion, he [the Archbiſhop] had before him, " namely, Mr. *Huddleſton*, Vicar of *Saxelby*, he might happily at" tain the Sight of the Original. For that they were of good Cre" dit that told him, that he [*Huddleſton*] had it; and, as they ſup" poſed, had it ſtill.

Field *the Puritans Letter.*

He added, " That he was emboldened to import this Matter ſo " largely unto his Grace; for that he perceived there was very great " Muttering of theſe Matters among the Laity, as well as among " the Clergy: And as he heard, ſuch as were backward enough in " Religion, and more than half Papiſts, were great Commenders of " the Conſcience of thoſe Men. So that the wiſer, godlier Sort " were ſomewhat in Doubt, whereunto this Matter would come at " the End. And then concluded with theſe Words.

" Thus humbly craving Pardon for my rude Boldneſs with your " Grace, I beſeeeh Almighty God to encreaſe all his good Bleſſings " in you more and more, to the Honour and Glory of his Holy " Name, and to the edifying of his Church. From *Lincoln* the firſt of *June* 1584.

Your Graces moſt humble at Commandment.

Jo. Barefoot.

Theſe Intelligences from *Lincoln* concerning the Clergy in that Dioceſs, were ſo material that the Archbiſhop thought fit to ſend this Letter to be peruſed by the Lord Treaſurer; who Endorſed it with his own Hand, as ſent him by the Archbiſhop.

This Refractarineſs of theſe Recuſants, and their Perſiſtance therein, ſeemed to haſten more ſevere Dealings with them: And ſome were deprived. There were Letters of the Council in this Aſſair, and of the Archbiſhop to them: Which may be read in the Life and Acts of that Archbiſhop.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitgift.

It

ANNO 1584.

It falleth in my Way here to mention ſome Occurrences of certain of theſe *Puritan* Miniſters.

Conteſt about ſettling a Maſter of the Temple.

Travers *and* Hooker.

Book III. *Ch.* 9.

Eccleſiaſt. Polit. Edit. 1705.

A great Controverſy happened this Year about the ſettling of a Maſter of the *Temple:* To preach and miniſter Holy Things to the Society there. Great Endeavours were made for Mr. *Travers*, that had been Reader there before. And now upon the Death of Mr. *Alvey*, the former Maſter, much Endeavour was made by ſome of the Gentlemen of the *Temple*, for him to ſucceed. But Objections were made againſt him by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, on Account of his taking Orders from a Presbytery at *Antwerp*, and want of Conformity to the Church of *England.* The Letters that paſt about it betwixt the Archbiſhop and the Lord Treaſurer, will ſhew the Matter at large: To which I refer the Reader in that Archbiſhops Life. The learned Mr. *Richard Hooker*, (who writ the *Eccleſiaſtical Polity*) recommended by the Biſhop of *London*, obtained it. But *Travers* made great Objections againſt him, and his Doctrines, preached in the *Temple:* For the particular Knowledge whereof, recourſe may be had to the Additions, made to the Life of Mr. *Hooker* before his ſaid Book of the *Eccleſiaſtical Polity:* Where his Anſwers to thoſe Objections are alſo ſet down by me from an Original Paper.

Travers *his* Supplication.

I add to what hath been related already, that *Travers* wrote a *Supplication* to the Council. Wherein he vindicated his *Ordination.* To which Mr. *Hooker* alſo gave an Anſwer: Which remains among his Works. Out of which *Supplication* and *Anſwer*, I ſhall only take up a few Remarks. Now for his *Ordination* at *Antwerp*, he took Advantage of the *Canon*; which he allowed to be among the antient and beſt Canons, *viz.* that none be made Miniſters *Sine Titulo.* And he had none; and ſo could not, by the Order of this Church, have entred into the Miniſtry. (Though in Truth he went over to take Orders there, becauſe he would not take them according to the Form of our Ordination.) And that when he was at *Antwerp*, and was to take a Place of *Miniſtry* among the *Engliſh* People of that Nation; he ſaw no Cauſe, why he ſhould return again over the Seas for Orders; or how he could have done it, without diſallowing the *Orders* provided in that Country, where he was to live; namely, to miniſter to an *Engliſh* Congregation there.

Conference between them.

In *Hookers* Anſwer to his *Supplication* it appears, there was a Conference between them at his firſt coming to the Temple; wherein *Travers* took the Freedom to tell him ſome of his Faults: As, his Praying in the Entrance of his Sermon only; and not in the End: Likewiſe, naming *Biſhops* in his Prayer: Alſo, Kneeling, when he prayed: And, Kneeling, when he received the Communion, and ſuch like.

Whence we may obſerve the Practice of the *Puritans* then. For it was a Cuſtom in the *Temple* in Mr. *Alveys* Time, to receive the Sacrament ſitting. Which *Travers* would have altered, and would have been done ſtanding; and then walking away after the Reception. For thus he tells us, "There was an Order tendred, that "Communicants ſhould neither kneel, as in moſt Places in the "Realm, nor ſit, as in this Place [*viz.* the *Temple*] the Cuſtom "was; but to walk to one ſide of the Table; and there ſtanding, till

Travers *endeavours to bring in new Cuſtoms for the Sacrament.*

" they had received, paſt afterwards away round about by the other " Side. Which being on a ſudden begun to be practiſed in that " Church, ſome ſate, wondering, what it ſhould mean: Others, de- " liberating, what to do. Till ſuch Time, as at length by Name, one of them, being called openly thereunto, requeſted that they might do it, as they had been accuſtomed. Which was granted: And as Mr. *Travers* had miniſtred his Way, ſo a Curate was ſent to miniſter to them after their Way. Whereupon this unproſperous Beginning did ſo diſgrace the Order, that it took no Place. And *Travers* ſo much offended, who ſuppoſed it to be the beſt, that ſince that Time he contented himſelf to receive it, as they did, at the Hand of others, but thought it not meet they ſhould ever receive it out of his. And in my Time, added *Hooker*, he hath always been preſent, not to miniſter, but only to be miniſtred unto.

Travers *would bring in another new Order into the* Temple.

Collectors and Side-men.

This new Order *Travers* brought into the *Temple*, but it would not be received; namely, that of ſtanding and walking away at the Sacrament. Another Order was deviſed: *Viz.* to bring *Collectors* and *Side-men* in the *Temple:* Which he attempted in *Alveys* Time: For which there was a Requeſt made to her Majeſties Privy Council; ſignifying, that this Place did much want it, and that it would pleaſe their Honours to motion ſuch a Thing to the *Antients* of the *Temple.* They accordingly wrote their Letters to that Effect. Whereupon, although theſe Houſes [of both *Temples*] never had Uſe of ſuch *Collectors* and *Side-men*, as were appointed in other Places: Yet they erected a Box to receive Mens Devotions for the Poor: Appointing the Treaſurers of both Houſes to take Care for beſtowing it, where Need was. And granting further, [with reſpect to Side-men, as Cenſors of Mens Behaviours] that if any could be entreated (as in the End ſome were) to undertake the Labour, to obſerve the ſlackneſs of Men, they ſhould be allowed; their Complaints heard at all Times, and the Faults they complained of; if Mr. *Alvey*'s private Admonitions did not ſerve; then by ſome other Means ordered: But according to the old received Orders of both Houſes: Whereby the Subſtance of their Honours Letters were fully ſatisfied. But Mr. *Travers* intended not this, but as it ſeemed another Thing, more agreeable to the Diſcipline. Whereupon he complained, that good Orders were withſtood.

Two Miniſters in the Dioceſs of London *ſuſpended.*

Life of Biſhop Ælmer, *p.* 104.

Giffard, Miniſter of *Maulden*, was ſuſpended this Year for refuſal to Subſcribe, and ſo was one *Huckle*, a buiſy diſorderly Man, and that kept Night-Conventicles, and a Diſputer againſt *Athanaſius*'s Creed. Of both, Accounts are given in the Life of *Ælmer*, then Biſhop of *London.*

Miniſter of Boughton *ſequeſtred.*

The Pariſhioners petition for him.

The Miniſter of *Boughton Mountchenſey* was another of thoſe that were ſequeſtred this Year: However he was acceptable to his Pariſhioners. Inſomuch that they applied themſelves by Petition to the Lord Treaſurer, to reſtore to them their Miniſter; with their Names under-written, to the Number of Fifty ſeven; but not writ with their own Hands. Which Petition ran to this Tenor, " We, the " Inhabitants of the Pariſh of *Boughton Mountchenſey* in the Coun- " ty of *Kent*, whoſe Names are here under-written, moſt humbly " deſire your Honour of your accuſtomed Clemency, to be a Mean

" for us, that we may have our Miniſter reſtored unto his Paſtoral " Charge; from the which he was deprived the 20th of *June* laſt. " Who ſithence his coming unto us hath continued very diligent " and faithful in preaching the Word of Truth ſincerely; whoſe " Travail herein the Lord hath greatly bleſſed. And ſo often as " Occaſion ſerve, (which was divers Times) he taught us all dutiful Obedience unto her Highneſs, and unto all her godly Proceedings. And at no Time, unto our Knowledges, hath he in his Sermons, or otherwiſe, inveyed, or ſpoken againſt the Book of *Common Prayer*. And for his Converſation, it hath been very wiſe " and good.

" Wherefore we beſeech your Honour, in the Bowels of *Jeſus* " Chriſt, that we may have him again. Herein we are enforced to " be ſo much the more earneſt, as we have leſs Hope to enjoy the " like again, in regard of the very ſmall Maintenance, which Law " hath provided for ſuch an one among us. Thus hoping, that " your Honour will pity the deſolate State of us, who have loſt our " natural and loving Paſtor, and withal are utterly deſtitute of the " Miniſtry of the Word; we commit the ſame, with all your " Actions, unto the Protection of our good God: Deſiring him ſo to " govern it, and direct them, that whatſoever you do, it may tend " to the Glory of his Name, the Good of his Church, and the proſperous Eſtate of her Majeſty, *&c.*

Your Lordſhips moſt humble Orators,

The poor Pariſhioners of Boughton Montchenſey.

Why deprived.

But what the Faults and Failings of this Miniſter were, for which he was Sequeſtred and Deprived, will appear by a Paper encloſed in this Petition; with theſe Words: *The Breach of the Book of Common Prayer in divers Places. The* Marriage *according to the Book of* Scotland. *And his utter Denyal, to accept the Submiſſion for the ſame enjoined him. A contentious and factious Sermon, preached by him at* Aſhford, *ſince* Eaſter, *as appeareth alſo by his own Confeſſion.*

Chriſtopher Goodman in Cheſhire.

Chriſtopher Goodman, a Man of Note of this Party, (who had wrote a Book in Queen *Maries* Reign, of the lawfulneſs of taking up Arms againſt her, on Account of her falſe Religion) was yet alive; and we hear of him now dwelling in *Cheſhire*; and upon this Occaſion. When Archbiſhop *Whitgift* was preſſing Subſcription to the Three Articles, which made great Heats about this Time, *Goodman* wrote to a certain Lord, [the Earl of *Leiceſter*, I ſuppoſe] that the Papiſts in *Cheſhire* and elſewhere, rejoyced at theſe Proceedings of the Archbiſhop. This the Lord Treaſurer communicated to the Archbiſhop. Whoſe Anſwer was this, " *Goodman* was a Man for " his Perverſeneſs ſufficiently known, and ſome other ill diſpoſed " Chriſtians; who inſtilled theſe Things into his Lordſhips Head.

Writes to a certain Lord.

But added the Archbiſhop; " How can that pleaſe the Papiſts, " when they ſubſcribe that in our Book of Common Prayer, there " is nothing contrary to the Word of God? This cannot pleaſe the

“ Papiſts, which wholly condemn it. They likewiſe ſubſcribed to the Book of *Articles:* Which the Papiſts count for Hereſy. There is therefore no likelihood, that the Papiſts can receive any Encouragement by this Subſcription. But if he be encouraged at all, it is becauſe this Subſcription is refuſed. And thereby the Opinion of our Service and Religion, by ſome of ourſelves, verified.

Papiſts are carrying on a Plot. The Scots Queen privy to it.

The Popiſh Faction, the other Enemy to the Church, were now playing their Game, for the diſpoſſeſſing the Queen of her Throne, and for the reſcuing *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, and to ſet her in Queen *Elizabeths* Place, if they could. For the compaſſing of which Purpoſes, were combined together the Pope, the *Guiſes* in *France*, and *Philip* King of *Spain*; (which was called *The Holy League*) and the ſaid Queen of *Scots* privately holding a Correſpondence with them. Which was diſcovered by Letters ſeized. For Letters paſſed between Sir *Francis Englefield*, a Penſioner in *Spain*, and her; *viz.* of him to her and of her to him. There was at this very Time Letters between that Queen and the Queens Majeſty. But what Thoughts ſhe had of any good Succeſs of it, with other Matters, by her ſaid Letters to that Fugitive Gentleman, may appear. A Copy of which was endorſed thus by the Lord Treaſurers own Hand (and ſo the more certain Credit to be given to it) *viz. The Queen of* Scots *to Sir* Francis Englefield, *Octob.* 9. 1584. And ſeems to be copied from the Cipher. It ran in this Tenor:

Her Letter to Englefield *in* Spain.

“ Of the Treaty between the Queen of *England* and me, I may neither hope, nor look for good Iſſue. Whatſoever ſhall become of me, by whatſoever Change of my State and Condition; let the Execution of the *Great Plot* go forward, without any reſpect of Peril or Danger to me. For I will account my Life very happily beſtowed, if I may, with the ſame, help and relieve ſo great a Number of the oppreſſed Children of the Church. And this I give you as my laſt and final Reſolution. For [I] doubt, I ſhall not have the Commodity to write it hereafter: To the End, you ſhould impart the ſame to whomſoever you think convenient.

“ And further, I pray you, uſe all poſſible Diligence and Endeavour to purſue, and promote at the Popes and other Kings Hand, ſuch a ſpeedy Execution of their former Deſignments, that the ſame may be effectuated ſome Time this next Spring: Which is the longeſt Time the ſame can be expected. And failing then, it cannot be avoided or prevented, but that we ſhall ſee forthwith an extreme and general Overthrow of our whole Cauſe; never again to be repaired, and ſet a Foot in our Days.

“ Of the 12000 Duckets, long ſince promiſed to myſelf, I have yet received no Penny; nor my Son: But 6000, of 10000 promiſed unto him. Wherewith he is not a little grieved and diſcontent: And yet as well inclined to our Deſignment as before; and in the reſt of his Doings and Proceedings, to direct his Courſe, as I will adviſe him. He is now diſpatching a Gentleman of his, called *Gray*, to the Court of *England*; chiefly, to have occaſion to viſit me: And by Mouth to impart unto me his Reſolution in all our Affairs. The Gentleman is Catholick. God grant, he may

ANNO 1584.

“ be permitted to come to me. Sollicit with all Diligence, that the “ 12000 Duckets for myſelf be ſent with all ſpeed. *Octob.* 9. “ 1584.

A horrid Popiſh Plot againſt the Queens Life.

Camd. Eliz. p. 295.

This Letter will receive Light by what our Hiſtorian writes under this Year, of Sir *Francis Throgmorton*, being taken up for Treaſon; and the Lord *Paget* and others fleeing thereupon into *France:* And that it was certain at this Time a horrid Piece of Popiſh Malice againſt the Queen, diſcovered itſelf by a Book ſet forth, wherein the Queens Gentlewomen were exhorted to lay violent Hands upon the Queen, after the Example of *Judith*. *Quere*, Whether the *Scots* Queen was not privy to this Treachery by what ſhe called the *Great Plot*, and *Deſignment* in her Letter.

Englefield *to the Pope and King of* Spain.

She came now under a new Keeper, from the Earl of *Shrewſbury* to Sir *Amyas Paulet:* Wherein ſhe ſuſpected more ſtrait looking to. Whereupon her aboveſaid Agent, *Englefield*, thought it of Moment to acquaint both the Pope and King of *Spain* with it. Which he in another Letter let her know: And withal ſent a Copy to her of what he writ to them both, dated *January* the 8th, 1585. *Mutatis mutandis*; as followeth: “ The Queen of *Scots* preſſing; that by “ the Change of her Keepers, and Place of Abode, the great Appearance “ that ſhe ſhall not longer have Liberty, nor Commodity “ of receiving, nor ſending Letters, hath therefore written as followeth, the 9th of *Octob.* 84. *Of the Treaty of the Queen of* England *and me for my Liberty*, &c. The whole Letter before ſet down, Whereunto Sir *Francis Englefield* adjoined this which enſueth.

“ Beſides this written by the Queen of *Scotland* herſelf, it is to be “ conſidered, that the Queen of *England* and her Council, having “ firſt, by printed Libels publiſhed the Queen of *Scotland* to be “ a confederate Practiſer with *Don Bernardino de Mendoza*, [the “ *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, now commanded to depart from *England*] “ and *Francis Throgmorton* againſt the Queen and Realm of *England:* “ Having alſo contrived and ſet forth a New Form of *Aſſociation*, “ and *Confederacy*; whereby all Men ſhall ſwear and ſubſcribe “ to reſiſt and purſue all that ſhall pretend a Right in Succeſſion “ in the Crown of *England*. And now laſtly, having changed “ the Place of her Abode and Keepers, by removing her from the “ Cuſtody of the Earl of *Shrewſbury*, and putting her into the “ Hand of baſe and obſcure Hereticks; whole affectionate, and at “ the Devotion of her Competitors: It is by theſe Doings very probable, “ and in Effect manifeſt to ſuch as have had Experience of “ the *Engliſh* Government, that the Queen and Council of *England* “ have made a ſecret Reſolution, not only to deprive and diſinherit “ the ſaid Queen of *Scotland*, but alſo to ruin her Perſon, “ and take away her Life, if the Pope and the King of *Spain* ſhall “ not within the Time preſcribed, find ſome Means, either to deliver “ her; or at leaſt ſo to occupy and moleſt the Queen of *England*, “ that ſhe ſhall conceive and find, as hitherto ſhe hath done, “ till of late, that the Life and Safety of the Queen of *Scots* is, “ and hath been her own principal Security and Aſſurance.

ANNO 1584.

“ And by this it is made evident, how vain and weakly founded thoſe Arguments and Reaſons were, which in the Spring paſt “ did perſuade, that the Succours expected by the Queen and Catholicks of the Realm, might without prejudice be delayed and “ deferred, till either the *Low Countries* could be recovered, the “ Queen of *England* dead, or ſome notable Mutation occurred in “ that Realm.

“ And admitting, that the ſaid Queen of *Scots* ſhould eſcape this “ Plunge and Ruin intended, yet ſince her paſſing through the ſame “ cannot be without the Favour and Friendſhip of Heretical Authority, it were neither Wiſdom nor Policy, but apparently prejudicial to the Catholick Church, to acknowledge the Safety of “ her Life, and enjoying of her Eſtate, to the Favour of Hereticks. “ As alſo if ſhe periſh (which is now moſt likely) it cannot be but “ very ſcandalous and infamous to his Catholick Majeſty. Becauſe “ he, being after the Queen of *Scotland*, the neareſt Catholick that “ is to be found of that Bloud Royal, ſhall ever be ſubject to the “ falſe Suſpicion and Calumniation of leaving and abandoning that “ good Queen to be devoured by her Competitors, for making the “ Way more open to his Claim and Intereſt.

The Sum of the intercepted Letters.

Theſe ſecret intercepted Letters make it evident, how privy this Queen of *Scots* was to this Conſpiracy againſt the State, and how fierce for overthrowing the whole Government thereof by violent Methods to be uſed by the Pope and *Spain*, whatſoever became of her. And we learn the Title that King pretended to this Crown, as next Heir Catholick to that Queen. And how earneſt theſe *Engliſh* Fugitives were, forthwith to ſet upon this Enterprize: And that Queen alſo of the ſame Mind; (guided as it ſeems by ſome Prognoſticators) confidently averring, that unleſs they made haſt, and began their Buſineſs againſt *England* the next Spring, *they ſhould ſee an extreme and general Overthrow of their whole Cauſe, never again to be repaired and ſet on Foot in their Days:* As in her Letter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Parry, *Executed for Treaſon. A Cardinals Letter to him. His Speech at his Execution. His Account of his Condition and Quality, by himſelf given. Falſe. Solicits to be Maſter of St.* Katharines: *Or for a Deanry*, &c. *Some Account of him for ſome Years paſt. Lives abroad. His Letters from* Paris, Venice, *and* Lyons. *His Intelligences from Abroad to the Lord* Burghley. *Comes home. He ſlies abroad again. And why. Prayers appointed upon* Parries *Treaſon, to be uſed in the Queens Chapel; and in Parliament: Order of Prayers for* Wincheſter *Dioceſs.* Parries *bold Letter to the Queen from the* Tower. *A Nephew of* Parries *executed.*

Parries *Treaſon and Execution.*

THE notorious Treaſon of *William Parry*, a Doctor of the Civil Law (of whom ſomething before) was now diſcovered, and Execution deſervedly done upon him. Our Hiſtorians ſhew us, What it was; namely, to kill the Queen, as ſhe was riding abroad: And how he had Encouragement for doing the Fact from the Pope; one of the Cardinals, named Cardinal *di Como*, aſſuring him of the Popes Allowance and Abſolution, as of a highly meritorious Act, in his Letter dated from *Rome, January* the 30th, 1584. The very Original whereof in *Italian*, I have ſeen among the Papers of the Lord *Burghley*, then Lord Treaſurer: Being the Popes plenary Indulgence and Pardon of all his Sins. And it being ſo remarkable a Piece of Hiſtory, I might ſet it down from thence: It was ſuperſcribed, *Al Signore Guglielmo Parri.* Beginning, *Mon Signore, La Santita, &c.* The Cardinals whole Letter ran thus in *Engliſh*, as I find it tranſlated in one of our Hiſtorians; which I cannot but ſet down, being ſo inſtructive of what I have afterwards to add of this Matter.

Cardinal Di Como's *Letter to him, from the Pope.*

“ Sir, His Holineſs hath ſeen your Letter of the Firſt, with the
“ Certificate included, and cannot but commend the good Diſpoſiti-
“ on and Reſolution which you write to hold toward the Service
“ and Benefit publick. Wherein his Holineſs doth exhort you to
“ perſevere, and to bring to Effect that which you have promiſed.
“ And to the End you may be ſo much the more holpen by that
“ good Spirit, which hath moved you thereunto, he granteth unto
“ you his Bleſſing, plenary Indulgence, and Remiſſion of all your
“ Sins, according to your Requeſt. Aſſuring you, that beſide the
“ Merit, that you ſhall receive therefore in Heaven, his Holineſs
“ will further make himſelf Debtor, to acknowledge your Deſerv-

ANNO 1584.

" ings in the beſt Manner that he can; and ſo much the more, in " that you uſe the greater Modeſty, in not pretending any Thing.

" Put therefore your moſt holy and honourable Purpoſes in Exe- " cution, and attend your Safety. And to conclude, I offer myſelf " unto you heartily, and do deſire all good and happy Succeſs. " From *Rome*, the 30th of *January* 1584.

At the Pleaſure of your Signorie

N. Cardinal of Como.

Hollingſhed in his Chronicle hath preſerved divers particulars concerning this Wretch and his Treaſons; taken from a Book printed ſoon after his Death. As, 1. *A true and plain Declaration* of the horrid Treaſon practiſed by him againſt the Queens Majeſty: And of his Conviction, and Execution for the ſame, the 2d of *March*, 1584. 2. *Edmund Nevyl* (his ſworn Fellow Conſpirator) his *Declaration*, ſubſcribed by his own Hand. 3. The *voluntary Confeſſion of* Parry. 4. A *Letter of his* to her Majeſty after his Condemnation. 5. Another to the Lord Treaſurer, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*. 6. A Letter of *Will. Creichton*, a *Jeſuit*, to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, concerning *Parries* Application to him, with this Caſe of Conſcience, *Whether it were lawful to kill the Queen*. 7. Cardinal *Como*'s Letter to *Parry:* certifying him of the Popes Pardon and Indulgence, and Encouragement to do the Fact. 8. The Manner of his Arraignment. But leaving the Reader to the Hiſtorian for theſe, I ſhall relate divers other remarkable Paſſages out of this Mans Letters, or otherwiſe.

Notwithſtanding his Crime was ſo notorious, and evident, this Traitor had the Confidence at the Place of his Execution to deny it, and to boaſt his Loyalty. A Report of whoſe Speech at that Time, I have ſeen among the Lord Treaſurers Papers, endorſed by his own Hand. And is as follows:

Parries Speech *at his Execution.*

" That he was brought hither not to preach but to die; and to " avow his own Innocency, which he had declared at the Bar after " his Judgment, and would there Seal it with his Bloud. His Of- " fence he confeſſed was twofold. The one in being reconciled to " the Church of *Rome*, (whereof he was a Member) both at *Milain* " and *Paris*; contrary to a poſitive Law only. The other in entring " Conference with his Kinſman and Friend, (as he took him) Mr. " *Nevyl*, and in concealing what paſt between them. Which he did " upon Confidence of her Majeſty. To whom he had before be- " wrayed, what he had been ſolicited to do. Being charged with " Cardinal *Como*'s Letter by Mr. *Topcliff* [one employed in thoſe Days in diſcovering and proſecuting Papiſts:] " And that therein he had " promiſed to deſtroy her Majeſty; and was from him as from the " Pope animated thereunto: O! Mr. *Topcliff*, ſaid he, you clean " miſtake it. I deny any ſuch Matter to be in the Letter: And I " wiſh it might be truly examined and conſidered of.

" The Sheriff requiring him to ceaſe to purge himſelf, ſince the " Law had paſt againſt him; O! Mr. Sheriff, ſaid he, give me

" leave to ſpeak; for this is my laſt Farewel to you all, I die a true " Servant to Queen *Elizabeth*: For any evil Thought that ever I " had to harm her, it never came into my Mind; ſhe knoweth it, " and her own Conſcience can tell her ſo. God ſave Queen *Elizabeth*; for a more gracious Princeſs and Sovereign was never any. " I avow it before you all, and ſeal it here with my Bloud. I die " guiltleſs and free in Mind from ever thinking Hurt to her Majeſty. " And I know her to be the anointed of God; not lawful for any " Subject to touch her Royal Perſon. If I might have my Life; " nay, if I might be made Duke of *Lancaſter*, and have all the " Poſſeſſions belonging thereunto, yet I could never conſent to ſhed " the leaſt Drop of Bloud out of the Top of any of her Fingers.

" Mr. Treaſurer [Sir *Francis Knowles*] demanding of him, what " he could ſay of the Proceedings in Law againſt him; he anſwered him, the ſame to be moſt juſt and honourable, pleading ſtill " his own Innocence of Mind; and charged Mr. Treaſurer to tell " her Majeſty, as he was a true Counſillor, that he died her faithful Servant; and prayed for her Safety. I know her, ſaid he, " to be the *Anointed* of God: And therefore not lawful for any " Man to lay violent Hands on her. She is a moſt gracious Lady, " full of Goodneſs, full of Mercy. And therefore to you, *Catholicks*, I ſpeak it, ſerve her, obey her, honour her, and reverence " her. She will never harm you. She hath ſaid it, ſhe hath vowed it: Nay, ſhe hath ſworn it to myſelf, that while you continue " her dutiful Subjects, ſhe will never trouble any of you for your " Conſcience. It is true, it is true, I tell you all for your Comfort.

" His Guiltineſs being urged by Mr. Treaſurer, Oh! ſaid he, " I pray God, Queen *Elizabeth* do not find, that in taking away " my Life, ſhe hath killed one of the beſt Keepers in her Park.

" Being exhorted by a Preacher ſtanding by, to be ſorry for his " Sins, to pray to God for his Mercy: I will, ſaid he: And ſo ſaid " the Lords Prayer in Latin, with other private Prayers by himſelf. " The People there cryed, Away with him, Away with him: The " Preacher again called on him to believe in the Merits of Chriſt. " Oh! ſaid he, I do acknowledge, there is no Salvation but only in " the free Mercy of Chriſt.

" After this, a Pauſe being made of his Execution, he ſaid, he had " written to the Queen and Council, who was lawful Succeſſor to the " Crown of *England*. That Place was not fit to name the Party. [*Mary* " Queen of *Scots* he meant, no doubt.] It ſufficeth her Majeſty, " and the Council knoweth it; and their Title, whom he had named " to them, was juſt and lawful.

" Some more Time he ſpent in excuſe of himſelf, to the Effect " aforeſaid: And ſo was turned from the Ladder. And after one " ſwing was cut down; when his Bowels were taken out, he gave " a great Groan." There is a Letter extant of *Parries* to the Queen; but the Letter he here ſpake of to the Queen and Council concerning the lawful and right Heir to the Crown, I do not meet with it.

Parries *Family and Quality given by himſelf.*

The Condition and Quality of this unhappy Man may be better known, by what Account he gave of himſelf to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley:* Who had asked ſome Queſtions of one *Lewis*, his Countryman, concerning him. Which *Parry* coming to the Knowledge of, was ready enough to give Anſwer thereto himſelf in a Letter to that Lord, dated *Aug.* the 2d. Which he writ for very Truth, and upon his poor Credit, as his Words were. His Letter was in this Tenor:

His Letter thereof.

“ It may be, your Lordſhip, deſirous to know me throughly, or willing to anſwer for me upon ſome Occaſion, may be contented to ſee this much. Howſoever it be, I will not looſe this Advantage to trouble your Lordſhip. Our Surname of *Parry* is but as it were Yeſterday. The Family known in *Flintſhire* by the Name of *Bethels*. We bear for Arms, Ar. a Chevron between three Boars Heads, Sable, Tusked, Or. For Antiquity there is no *Flintiſh* Man can ſay more. The Vths Anceſter beſt remembred, and next (above my Father) was *Ithel Vaughan*, and was one of thoſe that did Homage to the Prince at *Cheſter*, 29 *E.* 1. as appeareth in D. *Powels* Book, f. 383. And ſo of theſe Trifles ſufficient.

In a Paper encloſed was as followeth: “ I was born at *North-hope*, within the Lordſhip of *Ingleſield*, and County of *Flint*. My Father, without Queſtion, a poor Gentleman, was of no greater Fortune than to be, (as many Gentlemen of that Country were) of King *Henries* Guard, and appointed to attend upon Queen *Mary*, while ſhe was Princeſs. My Mother was a *Conway*, deſcended of the Houſe of *Bodrythan* in *Flintſhire*. My Father had 30 Children: Whereof 14 by his firſt Wife, and 16 by my Mother. He died about the 8th of the Queen; of the Age of 108 Years. His Land was very ſmall; his beſt Living was a Leaſe of his Parſonage of *Northope*. Wherewith he commonly maintained ſeven or eight at that School.

“ My firſt Fortune was to marry in *Carmarthenſhire*, one Mrs. *Powel*, Widow, Daughter to Sir *William Thomas*. My ſecond Fortune was to marry the Widow of Mr. *Ri. Heywood*, an Officer in the Kings Bench, of good Wealth. My State at this Time by my ill Husbandry and Liberality, is no better than theſe. I have 20 *l.* Land in *Flintſhire*, of my own Purchaſe. My Wife hath 80 *l.* yearly: Whereof I have not handled Penny for ſome Years paſt. For unthriftineſs I can truly ſay, that Diceing, Carding, Hawking or Hunting, did never coſt me 20 *l.* The greateſt Cauſe of my Charge hath been theſe, beſide my Trouble and Travail: I do maintain at *Oxford* two of my Nephews. Whereof one is, or within few Days will be, of the Miniſtry. I do maintain one in *France*, one in *London*; and two at a Country School in *Flintſhire*. I have alſo maintained wholly for theſe ten Years at leaſt, a poor Brother, his Wife and a fifth Son. What I have given, and do give weekly, to the Relief of 12 poor Folks in *Northope*, let other Men report.

And hence he took his Opportunity to ſolicit this Lord in this Manner: “ All this, my beſt Lord, is as true as the Lord liveth.

“ Help therefore, I beſeech you, or elſe you ſhall ſhortly ſee me “ and all theſe to fall at once. For truly they ſhall not lack, while “ I have. God bleſs you, and ſend us his Grace.

This is the Character he gives of himſelf unto the Lord *Burghley:* But there was another Account given of him ſoon after his Death; printed by C. *Barker*, the Queens Printer: Which his vain Boaſts of himſelf, and his Pedigree gave Occaſion to. For ſo that Tract was prefaced. “ That foraſmuch as *Parry*, in the Abundance “ of his proud and arrogant Humours, had often both in his Con- “ feſſion and Letters, pretended ſome great and grievous Cauſes of “ Diſcontentment againſt her Majeſty, and the preſent State; it ſhall “ not be impertinent, for better Satisfaction of all Perſons, to ſet “ forth, ſimply and truly, the Condition and Quality of the Man; “ what he was by Birth and Education, and in what Courſe of Life “ he had lived.

A true Account ſet forth of what Parry *was.*

And then the Relation of him begins, That he was one of the younger Sons of a poor Man, called *Harry ap David*, that dwelled in *North Wales*, in a little Village called *Northope*; and kept a common Alehouſe: Which was the beſt and greateſt Stay of his Living. That his Mother was the reputed Daughter of one *Conway*, a Prieſt, Parſon of a poor Pariſh called *Halkyn*, &c. That in his Childhood he was noted by ſuch as beſt knew him, to be of a moſt villanous and dangerous Nature and Diſpoſition. That he often ran away from his Maſter, one *Fiſher* in *Cheſter*, that had ſome ſmall Knowledge in the Law. Who was often taken and brought to him again: That his Maſter cauſed him many Times to be chained, locked and clogged, to ſtay his running away. Yet all was in vain; for at laſt he ran away quite from his poor Maſter, and came to *London* to ſeek his Fortune. That his good Hap was, after his Service in ſeveral Places, to be entertained in a Service above his Deſerts; where he ſtayed not long, but ſhifted himſelf divers Times from Maſter to Maſter. And then began to forget his old Home, his Birth and Education, and aſpired to great Matters, and challenged the Name and Title of a great Gentleman, and vaunted himſelf to be of Kin, and allyed to Noble and Worſhipful; and left his old Name, *Ap Harry*, and took upon him the Name of *Parry*, the Surname of divers Gentlemen of great Worſhip. And becauſe his Mothers Name by her Father, a ſimple Prieſt, was *Conway*, he pretended Kindred to Sir *John Conway:* And ſo thereby made himſelf of Kin to *Edmund Nevyl.* What he had with his Wives he ſoon conſumed, with his diſſolute and waſtful Manner of Life. And when he had poſſeſſed himſelf of his ſecond Wife's Wealth, he omitted nothing that might ſerve for a prodigal, diſſolute and moſt ungodly Courſe of Life. His Riot and Exceſs was unmeaſurable. He did moſt wickedly deflower his Wives own Daughter, and ſundry Ways pitifully abuſed the old Mother. But this laſted not long, his proud Heart and waſtful Hand had ſoon poured out old *Heywoods* Wealth. And then he fell again to his wonted Shifts, *&c.* This and much more is related there of him.

And in theſe Shifts that he made to help his Neceſſities, one was his Application to the Queen and ſome Friends at Court. And

St.

ANNO 1584.

Laboureth to get the Maſterſhip of St. Katharines.

St. *Katharines* by the *Tower* being now void of a Maſter, he put in ſtrongly for it. And thus I find him addreſſing to his ſuppoſed Friend, the Lord Treaſurer (to whom he had given ſuch a good Character of himſelf, in a Letter, written in *May* this Year. "Good "my Lord, Pardon my Importunity, ſo much warranted by the "Hardneſs of the Time, and my ſecret Contraries. The Particu-"lars encloſed, [*viz.* the Account of himſelf mentioned above] "favourably delivered by your Lordſhip or Maſter Secretary to the "Queen, would undoubtedly remove all doubtful Conceits of me "in Religion and Duty. That were a ſmall Matter with the Queen "to avow my Service with the Credit of an Hoſpital. Your earneſt "Requeſt to Mr. Secretary to further it, for your Sake, to the "Queens Majeſty at this Inſtant, will ſurely ſerve the Turn." And whereas another ſtood Candidate for this Maſterſhip at this Time, thus he added, "That he could not think it poſſible for Mr. *Rouk-"by*, or any of his Coat, to adventure more than he had done in "her Service. I would to Chriſt her Majeſty would command any "further poſſible Tryal of me." He proceeded, "That Mr. Se-"cretary told him, that he thought the Queen meant to give him "a Penſion: That St. *Katharines* was in Truth no other upon the "Reckoning: And yet, God knows, added he, there is a marvail-"lous Difference between the one and the other, in Opinion and "Credit.

Concluding, "Remember me, my deareſt Lord, and think it not "enough for a Man of my Fortune paſt, to live by Meat and Drink. "Juſtice itſelf willeth, it ſhould be Credit and Reward. [Such was his vain-glorious Value of himſelf.]

Your Lordſhips faithfulleſt and moſt bounden

W. Pa.

But in ſhort, he obtained neither Penſion nor St. *Katharines*; this being given to another. Which Neglect he reſented.

I find him yet at *London* in *September*, undiſcovered; ſoliciting Buſineſs with the Lord Treaſurer, for others as well as for himſelf. Particularly, for Sir *Philip Hoby*, Governor of the *Iſle of Wight*, under ſome Trouble at Court: Whoſe Loyal Manner of Proceeding, as he wrote, gave him good Hope, that all ſhould go well with him, by that Lords Honourable Means and Furtherance: That he was fully acquainted with his State, and daily occupied in ſettling ſuch Matters for him, as might moſt import him in Profit and Credit. And that he would attend his Lordſhips Return from the Court, to know his Pleaſure. And then concluded in a Word for himſelf, "That in the mean Time it ſhould pleaſe his Lordſhip to "commend him as a fit Man for a Deanry, Provoſtſhip, or Maſter-"ſhip of *Requeſt*; it was all he craved. And ſo he prayed God "to preſerve his good Lordſhip." Dated from *London*, the 3d of *September*. For the reſt of his Story and End, I refer the Reader to our Hiſtorians.

It may not be amiſs to look back ſome Years upon this falſe Man, and his Courſe of Life, in his Travails abroad; in the Correſpondence he held with the Lord Treaſurer. Which I ſhall do from divers of his Letters, written by Way of Intelligence to the ſaid Lord, pretending great Loyalty.

Parry *leaves* England.

After the Queen had given *Parry* his Life, condemned for an Act of *Burglary*, (committed on Mr. *Hugh Hare* of the *Inner Temple*, breaking into his Chamber, with Intent to rob him) he went abroad out of *England*; his great Debts by his Extravagancy growing heavy upon him. He had obtained ſome Favour of the Lord Treaſurer. To whom he mightily addreſſes himſelf. And that Lord, upon the Proteſtation of his Loyalty to the Queen, and Promiſes made of Information from Time to Time, of what the Queens rebellious Subjects abroad were doing; and who, and where they were. So that the Treaſurer gave him ſome Countenance, and, as it ſeems, ſome Penſion. But he was falſe all the while, notwithſtanding divers Letters which he ſent from foreign Parts to that Lord, and while he was beyond Seas, at *Venice*, at *Siena*, and *Rome*, and *Paris* and *Lyons:* Yet once or twice returning home for a Time. And in thoſe Parts he played his Tricks, in Correſpondence with *Jeſuits* and *Engliſh* Fugitives: And conſulting with them in Behalf of Catholics, and for reſtoring the *Romiſh* Religion in *England:* And ſtill keeping in with his Lord here at Court, by his frequent fraudulent Letters of Intelligence; and always as Opportunity ſerved, recommending the Queens Popiſh Subjects abroad to Favour.

Comes home from abroad Ann. 1577. *Applies to the Lord Treaſurer.*

He had been at *Rome* and *Siena:* And was returned into *England*, *Anno* 1577. And newly now come home, he gave the Lord Treaſurer Notice that he was ready to give him Information according to certain Inſtructions given him by the ſaid Lord. And now being in *London*, writ him a ſhort Letter, "That being wearied with his "long Journey, he deferred his Attendance upon him until his com"ing to Court: And ſpake of his having in his Letters, both from "*Rome* and *Siena*, advertiſed his Lordſhip of ſome ſuch Matters as "he had heard and ſeen in thoſe Parts: [that is probably, the trea"cherous Practices of the *Engliſh* Fugitives, and others againſt the "Queen and State of *England.*] And how moſt deſirous he was of "his Lordſhips good Favour; upon Hope to be able to do him ſome "ſuch Service as he never intended to do, or offered to any before "that Time.

Fled to Paris. *Thence writes to the ſame.*

In the Year 1579. I find him again fled hence, into *France*. And from *Paris* he writes to the Lord Treaſurer, in Excuſe of his ſudden Departure; (to avoid as it ſeems, his Creditors) "That as the Man"ner of his Departure out of *England*, might in Reaſon leave Cauſe "of Offence behind him, ſo Neceſſity, and his Demeanour on that "ſide the Sea, might, and he truſted would, crave Pardon for him. "The rather, as it might pleaſe his Lordſhip, for his dutiful Mind, "and poor good Will, long Favour and Protection. And having ſince "the Death of his late good Lord and Maſter, the Earl of *Pembroke*, "never ſerved or followed any beſides her Majeſty, whoſe faithful "Servant and Subject he would ever be found to be; he hoped his "Lordſhip would not reſiſt his humble Suit, grounded upon no

“ greater Warrant, than his Deſire to deſerve well of him by ſuch “ Service as he ſhould be able to do his Lordſhip hereafter.

And then goeth on in theſe flattering, hollow Words, “ Good my “ Lord, pardon my plain Nature, if I ſeem at any Time leſs cere- “ monious than your Greatneſs or my Duty do require. And be “ aſſured to find in me all Plainneſs and Truth.

His Letters to the ſaid Lord, Anno 1580.

And no leſs than ſix other Letters he wrote to the abovesaid Lord in the next Year from *Paris*, (where he was privately reconciled to the Church of *Rome*) ſtill requeſting that Lords Favour, and offering his Service for Intelligence: Writing thus, “ That he was em- “ boldened to lay before his Lordſhip the Service of ſuch an one “ [meaning himſelf] as ſtudied daily how, and in what Sort he might “ beſt and moſt acceptably diſcover his Readineſs to honour and ſerve “ him, *&c.* And that it added to his Croſſes, that it was told him, “ that his Departure, and Demeanour there [at *Paris*] had bred “ ſome Offence at home. And in another Letter thence, put into the Queens Ambaſſadors Pocket, he ſignified, how his long or ſhort Abode there depended upon his good or ill Speed in the Service intended and mentioned in his Letter.

The Title of a true Subject always dear to him.

And becauſe there were Suſpicions and Jealouſies of his Integrity, and Proteſtations of his Loyalty; therefore in the Month of *May* the ſaid Year, 1580. he addreſſeth another Letter to this Tenour: “ That the Name and Title of a *true Subject* had always been ſo “ dear unto him, that he could not but hold him and his Religion “ for ſuſpected, that practiſed any thing againſt her Majeſty. “ Whoſe Government and Fortune had been no leſs comfortable to “ all good Men at Home, than ſtrange and fearful to her Enemies “ abroad. And that backed with his Prayer, God preſerve her from “ the one, and defend her from the other.

Adding, “ That he had heretofore purpoſely written ſome ordinary “ Letters to his Lordſhip, that thereby he might without Suſpicion, “ write to him ſtill. And thus long deferred to look carefully into “ any thing, until he might be ſettled, and better acquainted with “ ſome Mens Proceedings on that Side: And choſe this Way of “ ſending, as beſt aſſured, and would continue it, if he might un- “ derſtand his Service to be acceptable to her Majeſty, and pleaſing “ to his Lordſhip. And that he found his Credit and Favour to be “ ſuch with the beſt of the *Engliſh* and *Scottiſh* Nations in *Rome* “ and *Paris*, (by the Hope conceived of his Readineſs and Ability “ to ſerve them) that he doubted not in few Months to be well “ able to diſcover their deepeſt Practices, if the ſame may be nou- “ riſhed with her Majeſties Charge, to be beſtowed, as Occaſion “ ſhould ſerve, in trifling Gifts (rather of Pleaſure than Price) and “ friendly Entertainment: The true Manner whereof, ſhould al- “ ways appear to his Lordſhip. That ſome in Court had hereto- “ fore ſought to draw him into this Courſe. Which as he refuſed “ then, ſo making a Shew of his pretended Purpoſe to move that “ Lords Belief, would forſwear to follow, if it were not his Plea- “ ſure to embrace of, and like it, in him. And then ſolicits his “ Favour again, Good my Lord, begin to look favourably upon me, “ and I will end in doing you Service.

He was frequently in his Letters to that Lord a Solicitor for the *Engliſh* Papiſts beyond Sea, Fugitives, and ſome of them Penſioners of the *Spaniard:* Pretending for them their true Loyalty to the Queen. And therefore that they might have Favour ſhewn them, ſuch were the *Ropers, John* and *Thomas.* Whom he recommended to the Treaſurer; "For their Readineſs and Ability to ſerve his Lordſhip: Well worthy his good Opinion and Countenance. In another Letter he writ very favourably of *Thomas Copply*, commonly called Lord *Copply:* Who had that Title given him by the *French* King; and was Penſioner to the King of *Spain.* This Man had promiſed great Service to the Queen in thoſe Parts. And a ſecond Letter addreſſed to that Lord in his Behalf, imported, "That if his former Letter touching that Lord *Copply* proved ſerviceable unto her Majeſty, and profitable without Offence to him, he ſhould think himſelf very happy to have adventured thus far for ſuch an one, as was very likely to be found by his Deſerts hereafter, worthy her Grace's and his honourable Favour; the Neceſſity of the Time; his Credit heretofore in *England*, his long Services well entertained abroad; joined to the earneſt and conſtant Speeches of his dutiful Deſire to ſerve her Majeſty, if the ſame were taken in Time, did put him out of Doubt, that her Majeſty ſhould have good Cauſe to thank your Lordſhip for ſo ſeaſonable Recovery, of ſo neceſſary a Subject. And that he ſued for no greater Privilege than many a true and faithful Subject did daily enjoy. Land, Liberty, and Reputation ſhould undertake for his good Demeanour. This *Copply* was a buiſy Man abroad under the King of *Spain*, who had alſo given him an honourable Title, *viz. Grand Maſter of the Maes, &c.* And had ſent him out a Commander at Sea, to make Prize both of the *Engliſh* and *Netherlands* Ships. And ſo very obnoxious to the Queen. And this was the Man *Parry* now recommended.

A Solicitor for the Fugitives. *The* Ropers.

Lord Copply.

Camd. Eliz. p. 208.

In the Month of *July* 1580: I find another of his Letters to the ſame Lord in Behalf of the Rebel, the Earl of *Weſtmorland*, to this Purport: "That if the moſt humble Submiſſion of the infortunate Earl of *Weſtmorland* might by his Lordſhips Means be made plauſible to her Majeſty, (his Life and Liberty once reſerved) he was ready with great Repentance of his Error and Fault committed in his Youth, to fall at her Majeſties Feet. And then adds his Argument for the ſame Favour to be ſhewed the Earl, "I know not, as he ſubjoined, whether the reclaiming of deſperate Men doth agree with our State and Policy. And yet it is daily ſeen, that the King, *Chriſtian* and *Catholick*, do it: Yea, ſometimes with Advancement.

His Letter in behalf of the Earl of Weſtmorland.

I find him returned into *England* in the Year 1580. And having had the Favour to be the Queens ſworn Servant, he writ another Letter to his preſumed Patron, the ſaid Lord Treaſurer in *September.* And therein brings Commendations from *Cavalcanti*, (whom he calls Sir *Guido Cavalcanti*) an *Italian* Merchant, trading in *London* in the Reign of King *Edward*; and who by his Diligence and Abilities was made uſe of in Meſſages from that King to *France*; and was ſo ſerviceable an Inſtrument in good Offices to the Kingdom, that a

Brings Commendations from Cavalcanti.

ANNO 1584.

His Merits, and Services.

Penſion was ſettled upon him for Life, as our Hiſtorians relate. *Parry* comes acquainted with him in *Paris*. Now concerning ſo memorable a Man in our *Engliſh* Hiſtory we may have Leave to inſert what we find of him in *Parries* Letter; *Viz.* “That he was deſired by Sir *Guido Cavalcanti* to deliver his Lordſhip his very humble Commendations, and to tell him, that his Gout and other Griefs greatly increaſing, he was adviſed to remove to ſome warmer Climate, for the Recovery of his Health. And therefore deſirous to depart in the Grace and good Favour of his Majeſty, he meant to come over into *England* for the Winter: And ſo to depart in the Spring for *Venice:* If he thought it in this buſy Time might ſtand with his Lorſhips Advice and liking. Of whom always and very often he had a very thankful and honourable Mention. That he did miſtruſt that he had ſome Hinderers of his Credit with her Majeſty, and did not ſtick to name whom he ſuſpected. That he thought his Penſion inferior to his Deſerts and Service to this Crown: Having ſpent ſo many Years in Journeys to and fro, much more than might have bought ſuch a Living. But that as he, and his Name had lived under and ſerved this State above eighty Years; ſo howſoever his Fortune ſerved him, he would die a faithful Servant unto her Majeſty: And in the mean Time, bring up another *Cavalcanti* to ſucceed him in Devotion to this Country.

And then the Writer proceeded to other Matters. “That Diſcretion willed him not to be too buſy with his Pen, leſt at Length it proved loathſome. But, as he hoped, it would not diſlike his Lordſhip that he moved the ſame for ſo honourable a Gentleman, ſo would he take Heed how he troubled his Lordſhip with any Trifles. And ſo to ſhew his Loyalty, he informed what he underſtood in *Paris. viz.* Firſt, “That *Julio Buſini*, an *Italian*, known to his Lordſhip, now living in *Paris*, and following *Cavalier Giraldo*, late Ambaſſador in *England*, for *Portugal*, was, as he had great Cauſe to ſuſpect, a buſy Dealer in *Engliſh* Practices. That he writ very often to the *Curſini*'s. And that coming one Day to his Chamber, he found him deciphering of a Letter, which that Morning he had received out of *England*. That by Chance he [*Parry*] fell upon a Paper incloſed [by him in his Letter] which he ſaid he knew to be his Hand; and believed that it did ſerve to decipher the other, being very cloſe, well writ, and of that very kind. And then added, It may be ſuch a Cypher might come to his Lordſhips Hands. And therefore he thought good to ſend him this for Tryal.

Further, “That he had divers Speeches with the *French* Ambaſſador: Who ſeemed to deal plainly with him in whatſoever was greateſt, and moſt important. And comparing his Diſcourſe with ſome ſuch as he [*Parry*] had had with the Archbiſhop of *Glaſco*, the Biſhop of *Roſſe*, and *Thomas Morgan* of late, he found them (for the Queen of *Scots*) very like, and in effect the ſame: And that yet he knew the Archbiſhop of *Glaſco* to be made a Stranger to many Things, whereunto ſome others were privy. That he had

" rather, that his ſimple Opinion of theſe Matters ſhould grow to " his Lordſhip upon Queſtion at his Pleaſure, than trouble the " ſame with all he had heard.

And then he falls in with his Flatteries of the Lord to whom he writ all this. " That he did receive no ſmall Comfort and Contentation, " that it was his good Fortune to honour and love his Lordſhip, of " whom both Catholic and Proteſtant on this ſide, and that ſide, had " in this latter Time (for the beſt and greateſt Part) ſpoken much Honour and Good. And then addreſſeth in theſe Words. " Truly, my " Lord, it cannot be, that you do know in what Eſtimation you live, " *&c.* I would be very glad that it might pleaſe you Lordſhip to give " me leave to wait upon the ſame at your next going to the Court, that " I may do my Duty to her Majeſty, ſithence I am her poor Ser- " vant ſworn. In the mean Time, and ever, I will honour, love " and ſerve your Lordſhip, as my beſt Friend, Father, and Lord.

His Debts owing

But *Parries* Creditors, when he came home, were ſo ſharp upon him, and eſpecially *Hare*, (the ſame that he had once robbed by breaking into his Chamber) that he was glad to flee again out of *England*. But before he went, he tryed his Friends to be bound with him for that Debt to *Hare*, which was 600 *l.* But the former Sureties thought fit to withdraw themſelves out of Danger. But he found other Sureties for that Debt: And likewiſe for the Peace, at to be bound with him in the *Kings Bench*, for 1000 *l.* Who were Sir *John Conwey*, and Sir *George Peckham*, Knights. In theſe Straits he again earneſtly applyed to the Lord Treaſurer. To whom he laid open his Circumſtances.

At Venice, *whence he writes.*

In the Year 1582 I find him in *Venice*, writing to the abovesaid Lord Informations and Intelligences. Such as theſe. " That it had " been told him in great Secret, (though he might not avow it) " that the Queen Mother [of *France*] lay in the Wind, and watch- " ed to give our Queen a Mate, [*i. e.* her Son, the Duke of *Anjou*] " and would undoubtedly do it, if her Majeſty did not look well to " her Game. That they heard of great and daily Preparations for " the Sea, in *Naples*, *Spain*, and *Portugal*. But not that Don *Antonios* Fortunes could ſerve him to offend the King Catholic. That " it was judged but a very ſlender Policy, that we having no Am- " baſſador in *Spain*, did ſtill entertain the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, [*viz.* " *Mendoza*] in *England*. Where, he feared there was ſo much to be " done for Money. That many were of Opinion, that it were a " Matter of leſs Difficulty for us to continue the antient League with " *Burgundy*, than to continue our Intelligence with *France*. With " whom for five hundred Years he did not find that we had any long " Peace. And out of Doubt he was, that we had very mighty Ene- " mies in *France* to our Peace. That our Traffic to the *Levant* could " not but be dangerous, and full of Adventure for our Merchants, " ſo long as we ſtood upon doubtful Terms with *Spain*, *&c.* That " the Prince of *Orange* was thought now to lye in more Danger than " ever; and that he ſhall not long eſcape, if Practice may prevail. [But it was not before two Years after that this bloody Practice took Effect, that is in the Year 1584. ſo long and implacable was the Malice of this good Princes Enemies.]

Prince of Orange.

ANNO 1584.

A Book De Perſecut. Anglicana.

In the ſame Letter he mentioned a Book printed at *Rome*, and dedicated to the Cardinal *S. Sixti*, Intitled, *De Perſecutione Anglicanâ*. “That it had raiſed a barbarous Opinion of our Cruelty. “Adding, That he could wiſh, that in thoſe Caſes it might pleaſe “Her Majeſty to pardon the diſmembring and drawing.

Sir Rich. Shelly.

And concerning Sir *Richard Shelly*, formerly Lord Prior of St. *Johns*, now a Fugitive in *Venice*, he added, “That he was deſirous “to return, and profeſſed very great Services; if he were not diſquieted for his Conſcience. This was written from *Venice* the 4. of May 1582. No Name ſubſcribed.

In the Year 1583. we find him at *Lions*, and then at *Paris*. His Letters writ thence, we have given ſome Account of before. In 1584. he returned again into *England*, when and where he ended his wretched Life, after he had the Honour once to ſit in the Parliament Houſe.

Prayers appointed now to be uſed.

Upon the Diſcovery of this ſo horrid Treaſon againſt the Queens Life, and the preſent Apprehenſion of Danger from that implacable Faction of Papiſts at home as well as abroad, ſuitable Prayers were compoſed, printed, and appointed to be uſed. Whereof one was uſed in the Queens Chapel, intitled “*A Prayer for all Kings*, “*Princes, Countries and People; which do profeſs the Goſpel: And* “*eſpecially, for our Sovereign Lady, Queen* Elizabeth. Uſed in “her Majeſties Chapel, and meet to be uſed of all Perſons within “her Majeſties Dominions. Another Prayer compoſed now, and uſed in the Parliament Houſe upon this Occaſion, had this Title, “*A Prayer and Thankſgiving for the Queen: Uſed of all the Knights* “*and Burgeſſes in the High Court of Parliament.* And very *requiſite* to be uſed and continued of all her Majeſties loving Subjects. There was alſo a third Prayer framed, and uſed in the Parliament Houſe only. Which Prayers being ſcarce now to be met with, I think worthy to be preſerved; and therefore may be found in the *Appendix*.

Num. XLIV.

A Form of Prayer for Winton *Dioceſs.*

There was an Order likewiſe of Prayer and Thankſgiving, to be uſed in the Dioceſs of *Wincheſter*: Which was called, *An Order of Prayer and Thankſgiving for the Preſervation of the Queens Majeſties Life and Safety: To be uſed of the Preachers and Miniſters of the Dioceſs of* Wincheſter, *upon the Diſcovery of* Dr. Parries *Treaſon.* Which, I ſuppoſe, was compiled and ſet forth by *Cowper*, the Biſhop. Firſt is ſet down the Direction, how the Miniſter was to uſe the Order: *viz.* The next *Sunday* after his receiving it, he was to make a Sermon of the Authority and Majeſty of Princes. And in the end of the Sermon he ſhall ſet forth, and declare, the brief Notes of the Confeſſion and wicked Purpoſe, conceived by *Parry* to have murthered the Queen: Animated thereto by the Pope and Cardinals. And then the Extract of *Parries* Treaſon follows, being his voluntary Confeſſion. And laſtly, he was to ſay a Prayer for that Purpoſe. And then to be ſung or ſaid the xxi Pſalm.

And thus one of the good Biſhops thought fit to call his Clergy and Dioceſs to a due and publick Acknowledgment of God's Goodneſs in this great Deliverance. The Prayer having ſeveral hiſtorical Remarks, as well as a devout Spirit in it, I inſert, and was as follows.

“O! Eter-

The Prayer.

“O! Eternal God and Merciful Father, with humble Hearts we confeſs, that we are not able either by Tongue to utter, or in Mind to conceive, the exceeding Meaſure of thy infinite Goodneſs and Mercy towards us, wretched Sinners, and towards this our noble Realm and natural Country, not many Years ſince. When for our unthankful receiving of the heavenly Light and Truth of thy Goſpel, we were juſtly caſt into Thraldome and Miſery, and thruſt again under the Kingdom of Darkneſs. So that our Conſciences lay groaning under the heavy Burthen of Error, Superſtition and Idolatry: Even then, even then, O Lord, thou didſt vouchſafe of thy great Goodneſs, not only without our Deſert, but far beyond our Hope, and Expectation, to preſerve for us thy faithful Servant, our Gracious Prince and Sovereign Queen *ELIZABETH*; and to ſave her from the Jaws of the cruel Tigres, that then ſought to ſuck her Blood, and to work to us perpetual Tyranny and Bondage of Conſcience. Thus thou didſt, O! Gracious Lord, undoubtedly, that ſhe might be to this thy Church of *England*, a ſweet and tender Nurſe; and that this Realm under her happy Government, might be a bleſſed Sanctuary and Place of Refuge for thy poor afflicted Saints in theſe dangerous Days, perſecuted and troubled in many Countries for the Profeſſion of thy Goſpel. Yea, and that our Benefit, and their Comfort might be the more aſſured, thy Divine Providence, from Time to Time, hath many Ways mightily and miraculouſly preſerved, and kept her from the crafty, cruel and traiterous Devices of her bloody Adverſaries, and the deadly Enemies of thy Goſpel: Which with barbarous Cruelty had ſought to extinguiſh the Light thereof by ſhedding her Majeſties moſt innocent Blood.

“But this thy gracious Goodneſs and mighty Providence never ſo apparently ſhewed itſelf at any one Time, as even within theſe few Days; when a traiterous Subject, never injured, nor grieved by her, but ſundry Times holpen, relieved and countenanced, far above his State and Worthineſs, had of a long Time retained a wicked and deviliſh Purpoſe; and often ſought Occaſion and Opportunity to lay violent Hands upon her Royal Perſon, and to have murthered her. But ſtill the vigilant Eye of this bleſſed Providence did either prevent him by ſome ſudden Interruption of his Endeavour, or by the Majeſty of her Perſon, and Princely Behaviour towards him did ſtrike him, ſo abaſhed, that he could not perform his concealed bloody Purpoſe. And at the laſt this wretched Vilain was by thy Means diſcloſed; and his own Tongue opened to confeſs his deteſtable and wicked Intent. For this thine ineſtimable Goodneſs towards us, O! Heavenly Father, with humble Hearts and Minds we thank thee, and bleſs thy Name for ever and ever. For aſſuredly, if thou hadſt not been now on our Side, as the Prophet ſaith, the whole Flouds and Waves of Wickedneſs had overwhelmed us, and we had been ſunk into the bottomleſs Pit of infinite and unſpeakable Miſery.

“We beſeech thee therefore, O Lord, that thou wilt bleſs us ſo with thy Grace, that we may be rightly and truly thankful to

ANNO 1584.

“ thee, that is, not in Word only, but in Deed alſo; daily ſtudying “ to frame our Lives according to the Direction of thy Holy Word, “ which thou haſt ſent among us. And that her Majeſty, thus feeling “ the mighty Hand of thy Providence, fighting for her Safety, may “ more boldly and conſtantly with an heroical Spirit ſtand in the “ Protection and Defence of thy bleſſed Church, which by thy “ Word thou haſt planted amongſt us. And laſtly, that the cruel “ Spirits of *Antichriſt* that ſeek the Subverſion of the Goſpel, may by “ the Hand of thy Juſtice feel, what it is to ſet to Sale for Money, “ the infinite Bloud of thine Anointed Princeſs; which thou haſt “ prepared and ſet up to be the Nurſe and Protector of thy Truth. “ Grant this, O Heavenly Father! for *Jeſus Chriſts* ſake, thine only Son, our Saviour. To whom with thee and the Holy Ghoſt “ be given all Honour and Glory, World without End.

Another Prayer.

There was alſo another Prayer compoſed upon this Occaſion, to be uſed as it ſeems in the Churches. The Copy whereof in Manuſcript was ſent to the Lord Treaſurer for his Review; and having ſome Inſertions of his Pen in ſome Places: It is large; and containing a grateful Senſe and Acknowledgment to Almighty God for his wonderful Favours to the Queen, and therein to the whole Kingdom, I have preſerved in the *Appendix.* It bore this Title; *A Prayer of Thankſgiving for the Deliverance of her Majeſty from the murtherous Intention of Dr.* Parry.

Numb. XLV.

What the Thoughts of the Court were upon the Queens Eſcape of this intended Aſſaſſination of her, may appear by what the great Stateſman, Lord *Burghley* writ to Sir *Nic. White*, his Correſpondent in *Ireland*; who had been inquiſitive of that Lord about it.

A Paſſage in the Lord Burghleys *Letter concerning* Parry.

His Words in his Letter, dated in *May*, were theſe: “ The “ Matter whereof you writ, which as it ſeemeth hath ſtirred upon “ your Spirits, is, I doubt not but by publick Writing, better “ known afore this Time, than I think it was at the Time of your “ Writing: I mean the Attempt of that unfortunate Wretch, *Parry*. “ God therein, (as in many more, both known and unknown) hath “ ſhewed his ſingular Favour and Privilege to the Perſon of our “ Sovereign Gracious Lady. For Continuance whereof we all “ that enjoy the Benefits, which he denieth to the moſt Part of all “ other Nations round about us, are moſt bound to obtain of his “ Mercy by Prayer and pleaſing of him. This was dated from the Court at *Greenwich*.

Parries Confeſſion to the Queen.

But before I have quite done with *Parry*, I cannot but make Mention of his voluntary Confeſſion, writ to the Queen herſelf from the Tower, a little before his Execution. Which though it be ſet down in a Tract, called *A true and plain Declaration of* Parries *Treaſon, &c.* and from thence entered in *Hollingſheds* Chronicle, yet being much curtailed there, and ſhortened ſomewhere in Sentences, and ſomewhere in whole Periods, I think the whole Letter may deſerve to be preſerved. Which I have done in the *Appendix:* As I tranſcribed it from *Parries* own Minutes. I will give here an Inſtance of a Sentence or two, omitted in the printed Letter: “ Give ſome Eaſe to your Catholick Subjects. Remember the reſt

Num. XLVI.

"of my Letter, and you ſhall find, that God will bleſs you, Foreign Princes eſteem you, and your Subjects obey you. The Indignities paſt between your Majeſty and the King Catholick, are many, you have diſquieted his State, maintained his Rebels, and do bear with ſuch as have robbed him and his Subjects. Many Merchants are undone. Some bad Humours pleaſed, and your ſelf diſhonoured, *&c.*" Many ſuch Sentences, and Inſtructions therein given to the Queen, containing his Judgment in State Matters occurring at that Time wherein ſhe was concerned, and his Advice and Counſil, ſuggeſted to her with ſuch Authority, as though he had been her Law-giver, or at leaſt one of her chief Privy Counſillors: Namely, Inſtructions and Counſils concerning the Kings of *Spain* and *France*, and the Queen of *Scots*; and the *Roman* Catholicks, her Subjects. For whom he interceded in a kind of threatning Way, if ſhe favoured them not. For her glorious Title of *Supreme Governour*, he bad her forget it, as vain and falſe; Which neither *Luther* nor *Calvin*, nor the Catholick World allowed her; and even the *Puritans* ſmiled at. For all theſe and divers other his confident Expreſſions uſed to her Majeſty, I refer the peruſing thereof to his Letter in the *Appendix*, as above directed.

A Kinſman of Parries, *executed.*

To all this that I have collected concerning this *Parry*, I ſubjoin the mention of another Villain of that Name, and his Relation, who was a Robber and Murtherer: And at length taken and executed at *Oxford*, about the latter Part of Queen *Elizabeths* Reign. Of whom Dr. *George Abbot*, (afterwards Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*) in his Book againſt Dr. *Hill*, gives us this remarkable Account: That he was taken and convicted with one *Richardſon* for a Murther. And beſides many other Villanies done in *England*, and beyond the Seas, he once robbed upon the Highway, and murthered a Drover, carrying with him ſome good Store of Money. He with his ſaid Fellow were afterwards taken, and Priſoners in *Oxford*; where the ſaid Dr. *Abbot* was with them, to viſit and inſtruct them. When he obſerved, that it much grieved his Fellow *Richardſon*, then being in Company, that *Parry* had ſlain the Man; and his Conſcience, as he reported to *Abbot* and others, could in no Sort be appeaſed about the Fright and Remorſe thereof. But *Parry* bade him not to diſmay himſelf; but prepare as ſoon as he could to fly after him into *Ireland*. For thither the principal Murtherer was haſtening. And from thence they would travail to *Rome*; where he had been with his Uncle, Dr. *Parry*, before; and knowing the Faſhion of the Place. And there he undertook to get a Pardon of his Holineſs; and all ſhould be as well, as if it had never been. This *Parry* told *Abbot*, that he had been a Page to a Cardinal in *Rome*, an Attendant on the Duke of *Guize*, who was ſlain by the Commandment of *Henry* III. of *France*, and of Guard to the Duke of *Parma*. And therefore, as *Abbot* concluded, he might well be ſuppoſed to have known Popiſh Faſhions. And for certain he lived a *Romaniſt*, and ſo profeſſed himſelf at the Time of his Execution.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Dangers from Papiſts in Cheſhire *and* Lancaſhire. Creiton *a* Scotch Jeſuit *from* Rome: *Taken. And mined. Popiſh Books; writ upon the Execution of* Jeſuits. *Books in Anſwer thereto. Proved, that they were* Traitors *by the Statute of King* Edward III. *Dr.* Whitakers *Application to the Lord Treaſurer, for the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge. *His Letters. Letter of Lord* Burghley *to* Kings *College, in Behalf of Mr.* Cowel. Wincheſter *College in danger, by means of forged Writings. Dr.* Bilſon *the Wardens good Service. Remarks on ſeveral Perſons.* Richard, *Suffragan of* Dover. Manwood, *Lord Chief Baron.* Daniel Rogers. John Foxes *Requeſt for his Prebend.* Hurleſton *of* Cheſhire. *Sir* Edward Stradling. John, *Lord* Ruſſel. *Sir* Philip Sydney. Emanuel Demetrius.

Papiſts in Lancaſhire *and* Cheſhire.

WHAT Reaſon there was now to have a ſtrict Hand over Papiſts at Home, as well as a watchful Eye on thoſe Abroad, that which hath been related above will ſhew; and this Hint will in Part ſuggeſt; taken from a Letter of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, being now in *Cheſter*, to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; relating the Inſolency of the Papiſts in *Cheſhire* and *Lancaſhire*. (Who had been favourably handled of late) in theſe Words "There is great need to hold the favourable Hand to-"ward the Papiſts of this Country [as ſome had unſeaſonably moved "there might be.] You will not believe, what Harm it hath done, "and how bold they be, I have written ſomewhat to Mr. Secretary; "but at my coming [home] I will tell your Lordſhip more." And then mentioned one *Barlow*, whom ſome Proteſtants of *Lancaſhire* had wrote their Letters for, becauſe of his Age and Infirmities, that he might be removed to ſome more Liberty. And then adds, "My Lord, He is the moſt arrogant that lives, not only in his Re-"ligion, but in his lewd and naughty Speeches openly, whenſo-"ever he is called [*i. e.* before the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners.] I "am ſorry to write it, but there is great cooling of Proteſtants in "thoſe Parts. And it is moſt true, and no marvail, [meaning, "while ſo many Seminaries were harboured there.]

Creiton, *a Jeſuit taken, with Letters.*

The Danger of the Kingdom appeared further by *Creiton*, a *Scotch* Man, and Jeſuit. Who had been at *Rome*, and tranſacted for a great Sum of Money to be procured and ſent into *England*, for the

Scots Queen; And had Dealing with *Morgan*, the *Scots* Queens Agent, and the *Guizes* in *France*. But he was taken by the Diligence of Secretary *Walſingham*, with divers Letters alſo, diſcovering what they were doing. From which, and the Knowledge obtained thereby, and the Informations therein, the Secretary drew up divers Queſtions to be put to the ſaid *Creiton*. Which will ſerve to open his Treaſon.

Articles to be miniſtred to him. *Paper Office.*

Vid. the Scots *Queens Letter. Ch.* 20.

The Queſtions, as I tranſcribed them from *Walſinghams* own Hand, ſhall follow. The Title to the Paper is this; *Articles to be miniſtred to* Creyton *the* Jeſuit, the 3d of *Jan.* 1584. Firſt, for what Cauſe he repaired laſt to *Rome*. And by whom he was directed thither. Secondly, Whether he was ſent thither to procure a certain Sum of Money of 12000 *Duckats*. What Succeſs he had therein. And how the ſame was intended to be employed. And to whoſe Hand it was delivered. Thirdly, Whether the ſaid Sum was not delivered to one *Cleude*, a *Jeſuit*, born in *Lorain*. Fourthly, Whether Complaint was not made to the Duke of *Guiſe* by one *Morgan*, the *Scots* Queens Agent, of the ſaid Examinant, for that the Money was not delivered unto him. Fifthly, Whether he did not write into *Scotland* to certain of his Aſſociates, touching the Employment of the ſaid Sum of Money: As alſo to Dr. *Bernard*, being here in *England*. Sixthly, Whether he did not deſire the Brethren at *Rome* to make fervent Prayers for his Furtherance of an Enterprize to be done: As alſo the *Jeſuits* at *Lions*. Seventhly, Whether he had not Commiſſion from the Duke of *Guiſe* and others, to impart unto certain in *Scotland*, an Enterprize intended againſt this Realm in *September* laſt. All this the Secretary was enabled to inquire into, by means of certain Letters from *Scotland*, that were ſeized, or came ſome other Way to his Hand.

Books ſet forth, upon the Execution of Papiſts. And Anſwers to them.

By reaſon of theſe Dangers too evident both to the Queen and the Quiet of the whole Kingdom, divers Perſons were executed. But great Clamours aroſe againſt the Government on this Account, and Popiſh Books were written; ſhewing what direful Executions and Cruelties were done here in *England*. For the ſtopping of which Calumnies, and for ſatisfying of the World in the Juſtice and Neceſſity of the Methods taken, ſome Books alſo, as Anſwers, were publiſhed. One was intitled, *The Execution of Juſtice in* England, *for Maintenance of publick and Chriſtian Peace, againſt certain Stirrers of Sedition, and adherence to the Traitors and Enemies of the Realm: Without any Perſecution of them for Queſtions of Religion, as is falſely reported and publiſhed by the Factors and Foſterers of their Treaſon.* Beginning: "It hath been in all Ages and in all "Countries, a common Uſage of all Offenders,—— to make a De-"fence of their lewd and unlawful Facts, *&c.*

A Declaration of favourable Dealings, &c.

Another Book came forth this Year of the like Import, called, *A Declaration of the favourable Dealings of her Majeſties Commiſſioners, appointed for the Examination of certain Traitors, and of Tortures unjuſtly reported to be done upon them for Matters of Religion.* Beginning thus: "Good Reader, although her Majeſties moſt mild "and gracious Government be ſufficient to defend itſelf againſt thoſe "moſt ſlanderous Reports, *&c.*" [It came forth ſoon after the Execu-

Holl. *Chron. p.* 1357.

Execution of ſome Traiterous *Jeſuits.*] "And againſt ſlanderous "Reports ſpread abroad in ſeditious Books, Letters and Libels; "thereby to inflame the Hearts of our Countrymen and her Maje-"ſties Subjects, *&c.* This Book is entred in *Hollingſheds* Chronicle, under the Year. 1584. where it may be read.

Papiſts executed, Traitors by Statute.

There came out alſo this Year, after the Execution of ſome Papiſts, who were adjudged to Death for Treaſon, a Treatiſe to prove, that thoſe lately executed were Traitors; and that ſuch other Papiſts as had of late been executed, were by a Statute of *Edward* III. lawfully executed as Traitors. It began with that Statute: "That "if any Man ſhall compaſs or imagine the King's Death, or ſhall "levy War againſt him, or ſhall probably be attainted to have been "an Adherent to the Kings Enemies; he ſhall be adjudged a Traitor. "Then the Author proceeded to conſider the Papiſts Dealings. "That *Pius* V. the Father in his Time of them all, called her Ma-"jeſties Intereſt in the Crown *Prætenſum jus*, and declared her de-"prived, by his Authority, of the Kingdom. He abſolved her "Subjects from their Oath of Obedience. He curſed all that ſhould "yield her any Princely Duty. And yet not herewith content, he "ſent of his Miniſters into this Land to ſignify, by his Authority "Apoſtolick, to certain illuſtrious Perſons, what was done at *Rome*; "how *Elizabeth* was a Heretick; how ſhe had loſt her Crown; and "that they owed her no kind of Obedience. And hereupon began the Rebellion in the *North* by the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmorland.* But the Tract being ſomewhat long, and done by ſome able Pen, I recommend the Whole to the Reader in the *Appendix*, where it is preſerved. It was occaſioned by a Popiſh Book lately ſet forth, intitled, *Hiſtoria Martyrum in Anglia.*

Numb. XLVII.

Under the next Year we ſhall hear more of theſe *Romiſh* Zealots, and their Practices: Now we ſhall proceed to Matters more Private and Perſonal.

I begin with an Univerſity Affair, Dr. *Howland*, Maſter of St. *Johns* College in *Cambridge*, was this Year preferred to the Biſhoprick of *Peterburgh.* On which Occaſion the Place of Maſter of that College, was like ere long to become vacant. The Election of a Succeſſor being in the Fellows of the College, ſeveral Perſons made their Intereſts with them for it; as *Watſon*, *Stanton*, and *William Whitaker:* Who was publick Profeſſor of Divinity in that Univerſity, a learned Writer; and particularly, againſt *Campion* the *Jeſuit*, his *Challenge.* Who thinking his Intereſt not ſtrong enough amongſt the Fellows, making ſome Exceptions againſt him, thought fit to apply himſelf to the Lord Treaſurer, the High Chancellor of that Univerſity, (who was alſo himſelf once of that College) in a Letter or two compoſed in elegant *Latin:* therein ſhewing his Caſe and his Plea, which I chooſe to repreſent in his own Words tranſlated.

Whitaker *endeavours for the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College.*

The former Letter bearing Date the laſt Day of *November*, was to this Tenor: "That he could not then wait upon his Lordſhip, "the Buſineſs of his Scholaſtical Profeſſion hindring him. And "therefore prayed him to take in good Part his ſending of that Let-"ter. That he underſtood, that he had been recommended long "ſince *Certo nomine*, to his Honour by others: Who thought better

His Letter to the High Chancellor.

“ of him, than perhaps deſerved, (as he modeſtly ſaid.) For how
“ ſmall his Abilities were, and how unworthy he was to ſucceed a
“ Man ſo excellent and accompliſhed, he eaſily acknowledged. But
“ added he, By the Grace of God I am what I am: And his Grace
“ in me, I hope, hath not been in vain. That he had performed
“ in his Lordſhips Univerſity the Office of the Profeſſion of *Theology*,
“ in which then he had been employed five Years, and deſired
“ ſo to ſpend all the other Part of his Life, if the Lord had ſo appointed.
“ Which that it might moſt conveniently be, there was
“ no need to admoniſh his excellent Wiſdom; for he knew the State
“ of their Univerſity and the Church. To which if his Labours
“ heretofore had not been, as he hoped, unprofitable, they might
“ be more profitable hereafter by his Lordſhips Benefit. And, that
“ if any raiſed any Suſpicions of him (too diſingenuouſly perhaps)
“ he beſought him, his moſt Honourable Lord, *de me mihi potius,*
“ *quàm aliis credas:* That he would believe him concerning himſelf,
“ rather than others. That he dared not longer to detain his
“ Honour. Wherefore he commended him and all this Affair to the
“ Divine Clemency.

It was but two Months after I find this learned Profeſſor apologizing for himſelf to the ſame Lord, againſt certain, who ſeemed to have accuſed him, as not to have deſerved well of the Church eſtabliſhed; and would have had the Chancellor to decline his good Opinion of him for that Maſterſhip. It was Time now to give a truer Repreſentation of himſelf and his Principles to his Patron. Which he did thus at large; and I the rather ſhew here, to give us, his Poſterity, a true Light of one of the learned Divines and Writers in that Age: Beginning, “ *Obteſtor Humanitatem tuam, &c.* Beſeeching
“ his courteous, obliging Diſpoſition, ſurpaſſing even his Honour
“ (and that very great too) that he would pardon him the Diſturbance
“ he gave him by his Letter, being urged by the Neceſſity
“ of thus writing. Which he wiſhed had not happened, that he
“ neither might have been troubleſome to his Honour, and that none
“ had been injurious to him. That indeed he was grieved, that
“ ſome Suſpicion concerning him ſhould be given to his Honour.
“ Which Grief would have vexed him bitterly; but that he was
“ perſuaded of his Benevolence towards him, that by a true Apology
“ he might hope, that he ſhould be able to ſatisfy him, and to
“ take all Scruple out of his Mind. And that unleſs he reſolved
“ with himſelf to perform thoſe Things which belonged to the Office
“ of that Place, [the Government, as it ſeems, of that College]
“ he would refuſe it indeed, however offered. But he doubted not
“ in this Matter abundantly to ſatisfy his Honour, and all good
“ Men.

Dr. Whitaker *to the Lord* Burghley, *in Vindication of himſelf.*

He proceeded then to give a Character of himſelf. “ That he was
“ not ignorant of how great Prudence and Moderation there was
“ need in ſuch various Wits and Manners. That he would endeavour
“ to ſeem to be, though not the beſt, yet far removed from the
“ worſt. That he would be the Author of Peace, of Concord, of
“ Agreement. That he would cut off the occaſions of Factions; as
“ much as he could. That he would not do any Thing, that might

His Promiſe.

ANNO 1584.

"give Cauſe to any deſervedly, to judge him a Favourer of Parties. "That he would moſt diligently obſerve the Laws. Laſtly, That "if he ſhould not be ſuch as the Place required, as the Law pre"ſcribed, as Authority ſhould approve; he might be removed; "and he would not think it much to be removed out of his Place. "He demanded therefore, "What is there that any one Man re"quireth in me, which he may ſuſpect of me, to judge me unwor"thy of that Place? If I am not worthy of that Place, I cannot "think myſelf worthy of that which I now hold [*Regius Profeſ*"*ſor* of Divinity] and have held ſome Years; and which hereafter "I ſhall gladly and willingly hold, though I ſuffer the Shame of "this Repulſe.

His Character. And then applying to his Lordſhip, "That it was not unknown "to his Honour, what he had done; how he had lived; what "Labour he had taken for the ſake of the Church. That thoſe "that accuſed him, not to deſerve well of our Church might be re"futed by Deeds rather than Words. That indeed he had conſe"crated his whole ſelf, and all his Life, to thoſe Academical Stu"dies: For this Purpoſe, that he might do his Endeavour in the "Behalf of our Church, in thoſe neceſſary Conteſts with the Ad"verſaries. That if he received any Blow in this Cauſe, if he "were now compaſſed and oppreſt with Accuſations, he knew not, "which; if he there ſhould looſe all his Lordſhips Favour beſides; "which alone he had always eſteemed, and whom he had always "hopes would be his Patron; he ſhould lament his Cauſe, and "ſhould comfort himſelf, as he ſhould be able, with the Teſtimony "of a good Conſcience. That indeed nothing now happened to "him, beſide his Expectation. For he did not doubt there would "be ſuch who would deſire to eſtrange his Lordſhips Mind from "him: Not for that Cauſe that they really thought thoſe Things "were true that were laid to his Charge, but that they might by "ſome Means or other ſnatch away his Place from him. Which if "they could perform and obtain, to perſuade his Lordſhip concern"ing him in that which they deſired; he truly would reſt quiet: "And would better meditate of that of the Prophet. *It is good to* "*truſt in God, rather than in Man; it is good to hope in the Lord,* "*rather than in Princes.*" And then concluded with his Prayer, "The Lord *Jeſus* preſerve and encreaſe your Honour. *Cambridge.* "Cal. Febr. 1584.

But notwithſtanding this his Fear of the loſs of the Lord Treaſurers Friendſhip, he continued his Friend and Patron. But he obtained not the Maſterſhip of St. *Johns*, till two Years after, when the preſent Maſter, Dr. *Howland*, now Biſhop, ſurrendred it. And had uſed his Intereſt in the College for him, as that Lord had required of him. Whoſe Letter to the ſaid Lord we ſhall take Notice of, when we come to the Year 1586. And ſhall ſee there in what State he left that College.

Lord Burghley *to* Kings *College, in Behalf of Mr.* Cowel. There was another College, *viz. Kings:* Wherein a particular Affair of one of the Members obliged the ſaid Lord *Burghley* to interpoſe, addreſſing his Letter to the Provoſt and Fellows in Favour of Mr. *Cowel*, (another learned Man of that Univerſity) to elect him their Proctor. He was a very learned Civilian, well known afterwards for his Book called the *Interpreter* of the Terms in the Civil Law: For which he came into Trouble. In Memory of him, as well as to retrieve what Memorials I can of the Univerſities, and the Tranſactions there, I ſhall here tranſcribe the Chancellors earneſt Letter to the ſaid College, in *Cowels* behalf, with the Eſteem he then had, from the original Minutes thereof in his own Hand.

His Letter to the Provoſt and Fellows.

" After my harty Commendations. I hear there is now for this " next Year the Room of one of the Procters for that Univerſity " to be choſen out of your College; and that one Mr. *Cowel*, one of " Your Company, a Man of great Commendation for his Learning, " and no leſs for his Wiſdom and Diſcretion, is thought to be a meet " Man for that Room. Wherefore I do require you, that beſide the " Conſiderations, that I hope ſhall prove yourſelves for the good " liking of the Party, that upon this my Requeſt and Commenda- " tion, (a Manner not much uſed by me to trouble you with any " Requeſt) this Mr. *Cowel* may find you the more ready to prefer " him to this Place. And that if any other ſhall ſeek by any extra- " ordinary Means to procure the Voices to the contrary, I require " you moſt earneſtly, that you will appear now, before any ſuch " Attempts to divert the ſame, by Demonſtration of your former " Diſpoſitions towards Mr. *Cowel*. And for the Favours herein, " I ſhall think myſelf much beholden unto you. From the Court " at *Oatlands*, the 25 of *September*, 1584.

A Forgery againſt Wincheſter College.

From theſe Colleges in the Univerſity I am carried to another College, *viz.* that of *Wincheſter*, where Dr. *Bilſon*, was now Warden, (as he was afterward the worthy Biſhop of that Dioceſs) well known for his learned Writings. The Revenues of which College had been like to have been ſwallowed up by a notorious Forgery; that yet hardly diſverable: Namely, by an antient pretended Right and Title to the Lands thereof. The Diſcovery whereof, and the Reſcue of the College was owing chiefly to the elaborate Pains and Diligence of the ſaid Warden. A Relation whereof he giveth us himſelf, in an Epiſtle to the Reader before a Book of his, that came out near about this Year: *viz.* " That there happened an Injury to be offered to the In- " heritance of his College by a falſe Title derived from before the " Foundation of the Houſe: and ſo ſtrengthened on every ſide with " antient Deeds and Evidence, that the Forgery was hard to be " diſcerned, and harder to be convinced; but by infinite Searching " into Munuments of many Churches and Biſhopricks, as well as in " their own, [of *Wincheſter*] and their examining ſundry large and " laborious Commiſſions, which they had taken out before Dr. *Bil-* " *ſons* Time, to teſtify the keeping, and juſtify the delivering of " theſe ſuſpected Deeds, and Ligiers: To the detecting and impugning of which no Perſon was (he ſaith) or would be uſed (he ſpake it for the Pains, and not for the Skill) but himſelf. The Cauſe was ſo huge, the comparing of the Circumſtances, and Contrarieties both of Deeds and Witneſſes ſo tedious, the Proof ſo perplexed and intricate, and the Danger ſo nearly touched the whole State of the Houſe, that he tells us he was forced two Years to lay all Studies aſide,

The Difference between Chriſtian Subjection and Antichriſtian Rebellion.

aſide, and addicted himſelf wholly, firſt to the deeper handling, and then to the purſuing of this Falſhood.

I proceed now to ſome Remarks of divers particular Perſons of Note, falling out within this Year.

A Remark of Richard, *Suffragan of* Dover.

And Firſt, Something occurred this Year in *Canterbury* that beſpake *Richard*, Suffragan Biſhop of *Dover*, to have been a pious, upright and juſt Man. There happened to be a foul Murther committed in that City by a Gentlemans Son there; ſo barbarous, that when it came to *Manwood* the Lord Chief Barons Ears, that lived hard by, he was reſolved the Murtherer, as he deſerved, ſhould die for it. But notwithſtanding afterwards it was put up; and the Malefactor walked confidently about the Streets, to the Indignation of the People. Which the ſaid *Suffragan* related to *Tho. Diggs*, Eſq; a Gentleman of good Quality in thoſe Parts, in a Letter to this Purport: "One notable Matter hath the *Chief Baron* done of late in the Knowledge of all Men, which is this. The Son of one *Collard* of *Canterbury*, did lately, in the open Streets there, moſt wilfully kill a poorer Man. Whereat the Chief Baron was ſo moved at the firſt, that he earneſtly vowed the hanging of the Murtherer. But after the Father, being a rich Man, had dealt with him in Behalf of his Son, he brake his Vow; and contrary to all Expectation, procured, (as it muſt needs be, of ſome wrong Suggeſtion) a Pardon for the ſaid Murtherer. Who then walked up and down the Streets in *Canterbury*, as it were in deſpight of all his Enemies, to the great Grief of all the honeſt Inhabitants there. But ſuch Parts as theſe were, were not, as he [the *Suffragan*] thought, ſtrange unto him [unto whom he wrote] in this Party, [meaning the Chief Baron.] He added upon this, that he hoped a Day would come, when they ſhould ſee him a better Man; or elſe he was perſuaded his Confuſion would not tarry long. *For the Lord is a righteous Judge, ſtrong and Patient: And God is provoked every Day. If a Man will not turn, he will whet his Sword. He hath bent his Bow; and made it ready. He hath prepared for him the Inſtruments of Death*, [By theſe Words of the Pſalm glancing at that Chief Baron, corrupt.] It was dated from *Sutton*, 27 *Octob.* 1584. Subſcribed,

Lord Chief Baron Manwood.

Pſalm vii.

Your moſt aſſured,

Ri. Dover.

In a Catalogue of Articles drawn up afterwards againſt this aforeſaid Lord Chief Baron (the Paper endorſed *Abuſes committed by him*) this was one: "*Collards* Son of *Canterbury* killed a poor Man coming from his Work, in the open Street at *Canterbury*. For which the Chief Baron threatning at the firſt to hang him: But by Means of 240*l.* paid by his Father, the Son had his Pardon by the Chief Barons Means. And ever after the Offender wore the Chief Barons Livery. His Father was a Brewer in *Canterbury*, who ſaid and ſwore, that it coſt him 240*l.* to appeaſe the Matter by ſoliciting the Chief Baron.

Daniel Rogers (who had been employed in the *Netherlands* by the Queen, and earneſt in her Cauſes) was treacherouſly ſeized by the *Spaniard* for ſome Pretence of a Debt, and caſt into the Priſon about four Years ago: And detained till this Year, when he got his Liberty, after much Danger of his Life: He was ſent to the Prince of *Orange*, in the Year 1575, as our Hiſtorian tells us, when the Queen had declined to aſſiſt him and the *Netherlands* againſt the Violences of *Spain*, and thereupon was conſulting to apply to the *French* King. His Buſineſs with that Prince now was to diſſuade him from that Purpoſe. This *Rogers* had long lived, and been a Travailer in thoſe Parts, and an Intelligencer of the Lord Treaſurer: between whom paſſed many Letters.

Daniel Rogers, *the Queens Agent in the* Netherlands.

Camd. Eliz.

He was now at *Buckholt*, a Town of the Biſhop of *Munſters* Juriſdiction. From whence in *November* he ſignified to the ſaid Lord his Deliverance, with Particulars of his Caſe and Circumſtances, and his Proteſtations of his true Concerns for the Queen and her Intereſt. And withal requireth that he may be ſupplied with a Sum of Money for his compleat Liberty of coming away from thence. And conſidering the Qualities and Condition of this Gentleman, for a Remembrance of him, I will relate the Contents of this Letter. He mentioned, "How his Lordſhip had bore it in his "Mind, that he had travailed to deſerve well of her Majeſty and the "Commonwealth. That he never travailed to pleaſure the Multitude: "But judged it would ſtand him in ſtead, if his Studies and Services "might be approved by his Lordſhip. That there were that had "not travailed ſo long, neither in the like Dangers, as he had done; "and yet had been better conſidered: Whom, as he ſaid, he envied not." And then uſing theſe Words of himſelf: "My Conſcience giveth me Teſtimony, that the Travail I have followed, "I never undertook, as puft up with Vain-glory, or Ambition; but "ſtirred up by a ſingular Deſire which I always had, to ſeek the "Advancement of Gods Glory, her Majeſties Aſſurance, and the "Eſtabliſhment of the Realm.

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer concerning his Troubles.

"That if beſides there were any Skill, or Experience in him, "which would ſtand his Lordſhip in ſtead, he would think himſelf happy to be commanded by his Lordſhip: Who might be "(as he truſted, his Lordſhip was already well perſuaded) aſſured of "him. That he ſhould be over tedious, if he here diſcourſed to "his Lordſhip, after what Sort he was taken: By what detained ſo "long Time. That it might ſuffice for this preſent to advertiſe his "Lordſhip, that as he was, for his own Reſpect, right glad that he "was at Liberty, delivered out of ſuch ſtrange Captivity; ſo becauſe "it might have happened, if he had died in Priſon, that her Majeſty "might have been intereſted according as *Spaniſh* Humours were inclined. He thanked God, he was at Liberty, not only to convince "all Fraud, which might have prejudiced her Majeſty, but ready, "and peradventure fitter to do greater Service unto her Highneſs, "than ever before he had, or could have done.

In ſhort, the Queen had granted him 160 *l.* for his Deliverance. And he requeſted 160 *l.* more, to carry on a Law-Suit againſt his Adverſaries, to convince their barbarous Covetouſneſs and Practices: Who had ſtudied for further Gain to prolong his Captivity, as he ſignified

fied to the Lord Treaſurer. And then adding, “That he dared aſſure “his Lordſhip by the Aid of Almighty God, that it ſhould never “repent him: meaning to employ himſelf in ſuch a Manner for “his Lordſhips Advantage and Honour, as that his Lordſhip ſhould “think his Liberty well beſtowed. And that he would confer “with the Earl of *Leiceſter* and the Secretary, to both whom he “had written, for the relieving of him.

Some Account of Rogers.

This *Daniel Rogers* was the more remarkable, being the Son of *John Rogers*, Prebendary and Reader of Divinity, in St. *Pauls, London*, and the Proto-Martyr in Queen *Maries* cruel Reign. He ſtudied at *Wittenburgh*, and was a Scholar under *Melancthon*; (as he mentioned in one of his Letters:) and underſtanding the *German, Dutch* and other Languages, as well as *Latin*, was Secretary to an Ambaſſador of Queen *Elizabeths* divers Years paſt, and particularly in the Year 1569. And having that Opportunity and Advantage, gave Intelligence to Secretary *Cecyl* of the Acts and Occurrences (that Year) of Princes and Kingdoms, with Reſpect to Queen *Elizabeth*, and the Affair of Religion eſpecially; by Information and State Letters, received from *Rome*, from *Venice, Paris, Bruſſels, Antwerp, Strasbugh, Leipſich, Vienna, Lyons, Geneva, Angsburgh, Barcelona, Frankfort, Norinberg:* All containing Matters of Moment, Tranſactions and Reports of Affairs, Wars, Leagues, and the Popes Interpoſitions, in the ſeveral States and Dominions in that Year: Tranſcribed by him out of Letters from thoſe ſeveral Parts, and Places; and digeſted by him into a Book: Which I once ſaw among the *Burghleian* Papers: Intitled, *A Book of all ſuch Letters and Advertiſements, as were written to the moſt Part of the Princes in* Germany, *and as come to my Hands ſince my laſt Departure from* Hamburgh: *Which was the* 28. *Day of* May *laſt, unto this preſent* Auguſt, 1569. Well worthy to be entred, to give Light to the Affairs of Religion Reformed, ſpightfully ſtruck at by the Princes of the Earth at that Time, and laboured to be utterly rooted out. But it would take up too much room here: Only for a Taſte, I will ſet down in the *Appendix*, ſome of the Intelligences from *Rome* and *Venice*, wherein *England* and Queen *Elizabeth* are touched.

Numb. XLVIII.

But all this ſhews what a conſiderable Man he was in theſe Times, and how he deſerved the great Character that the Writer of the *Athenæ Oxonienſes* gives him, That *he was the moſt accompliſhed Gentleman of that Time, and a very good Man, and excellently learned.* See ſomewhat more of him in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*, when in the Year 1585. Court Intereſt was made for him to be made Treaſurer of S. *Pauls, London.*

Pa. 199.

Book III. *Ch.* 14

John Fox, *his Prebend in the Church of* Sarum.

John Fox, the great Martyrologiſt, that had merited ſo well for his laborious Writings of the State of Religion, and the Sufferers for it in this Kingdom, from Century to Century, (but more largely in the Reigns of King *Henry* VIII. King *Edward* VI. and Queen *Mary*) was in the Times of Queen *Elizabeth* much reverenced. Whom I find this Year, requeſting the Lord Treaſurer, to obtain the Queen's Hand for his Prebend of *Sarum* (called *Shipton Underwich Wood* in *Oxfordſhire*) to be renewed and confirmed to him and his Son after him: The Biſhop and Chapter of that Church having

ANNO 1584.

having granted the ſame. This Requeſt he made in a well-penned Epiſtle, ſome Part in *Latin*, and ſome in *Greek*, to the ſaid Lord, his old and known Patron, eſpecially his Circumſtances being now but narrow: Beginning *Ornatiſſime*, *Illuſtriſſime*, γενναιότατε *in Chriſto Patrone.* Therein ſhewing, that the Biſhop of *Sarum*, and the whole Society of the Church had ſubſcribed, and that nothing was now wanting, but the ψῆφος of her Gracious Majeſty: Which he left to that Lords Piety to obtain for him. He wrote, that he well knew how unſeaſonable it was for him to interpoſe in that Lords very weighty Buſineſs. But could he not in ſuch a Neceſſity, or whom could he ſue to, but him? But the whole Letter of ſo memorable a Man, and that ſo elegantly compos'd, I have laid in the *Appendix*.

Num. XLIX.

But it ſeems this Matter was not ſo thorowly fixed by ſome Defect in the Leaſe, or whatever was the Cauſe, *Piers* the Biſhop in the Year 1586. intended to beſtow this Prebend upon his Chaplain, had not Archbiſhop *Whitgiſt*, wrote to that Biſhop in Behalf of *Samuel*, *John Foxes* Son: Upon whoſe Letter it was readily obtained for him: As was ſhewn in that Archbiſhops Life.

Archbiſhop Whitgifts *Life* Book III. *Ch.* 16.

Hurleſton *of* Cheſhire, *his Services.*

I meet with one *Richard Hurleſton*, an active Gentleman of *Cheſhire*, and of long Employment and Truſt, and an active Juſtice of Peace in that County: And for his Merits and *Feodarſhip* in that County, a Place under the Treaſurer there, granted him. This Gentleman was now cited into the *Star Chamber*, as one that had not been faithful in that Office. Into which Trouble he ſeemed to have been brought out of ſome Spight to him, for his Zeal for Religion and the Queens Government. I have his Letter this Year to the Lord Treaſurer in Vindication of himſelf, written from *Picton* in *Cheſhire*. Which I the rather enter here; as giving ſome Light into the Hiſtory of Religion in the Times paſt of King *Edward* and Queen *Mary*, and ſo onward in the next through many paſt Years of his Life, and his Quality and Condition.

"That he was Servant firſt to Sir *Thomas Seimour*, (he who af-
" terwards was Lord Admiral of *England*) ſerving him in the Place
" of a Gentleman during his Life; and accounted one of the beſt
" Sort of his Gentlemen. After whoſe Death he became Servant to
" the Earl of *Pembroke*, then Sir *William Herbert* and Maſter of the
" Horſe: With whom during King *Edwards* Time, he gave often
" Attendance, and was often uſed in Matters of Importance; and
" aſſociated with the beſt Sort of his Servants. In which Time he
" ſerved the King as Marſhal in his Country, in the Time of
" the Lieutenantſhips. And was without his Deſire or thinking of
" it, made a Juſtice of Peace in his Country. In which Place he
" continued. And then Biſhop *Scot* [Biſhop of *Cheſter*] calling him
" into Queſtion for Religion, he was diſplaced. And in that Time
" he was called by his Maſter [Earl of *Pembroke*] out of the Coun-
" try: Where he remained abſent from the Court from the Death of
" King *Edward* till he went to S. *Quintins*. [where *Anno* 1557. a Bat-
" tle was fought with the *French*, the Earl of *Pembroke* being General.]
" And from thence was ſent with the Charge and Government of
" the Lord *Herbert* [Son and Heir of the ſaid Earl] to *Doway*.

ANNO 1584.

“ Where they remained, till the Lord, his Father, came thither. And ſo they went home. And then he [*Hurleſtone*] went into his own Country, where he remained till the Death of Queen *Mary*.

“ Upon whoſe Death, (as he went on with the Relation of himſelf) he repaired to the Court, to rejoice with ſuch of his Familiars, which had paſt the dangerous Gulph of her Reign: Which had ſwallowed very many of them. That he might truly affirm, and would prove, that during the Government of King *Edward* and Queen *Mary*, he never had Lewdneſs any way laid to his Charge, but by Biſhop *Scot*; who nevertheleſs diſmiſſed him without any Manner of Reproach, and with Silence after he had charged him, that he and two other of his Friends had marred the Country in King *Edwards* Time: Meaning, for Religion.

“ That at the beginning of Queen *Elizabeths* bleſſed Reign perceiving that the Authority of *Rome* had been ſet up, maintained and continued by Power and Force, he, being appointed a Juſtice of Peace without his ſeeking, as he proteſted, endeavoured to bring *Preachers*, whereof the Store was then ſmall, to repair *Abrahams* Wells, that were digged in King *Edwards* Time, and ſtopped up in Queen *Maries*; to the ſhortening of the ſaid *Romiſh* Power. And that by his Means, and his Travail, the Gentlemen of the Country were contented to contribute to their Maintenance 2000 *Mark* by Year. By reaſon whereof there came into the Country Dr. *Piers*, Mr. *Dun*, Mr. *Lane*, and others. Who all were by his Means entertained. And thereby, and by their diligent Travail, the ſaid Power [*Romiſh*] in that Place declined. And afterwards for the better combining of the Minds of the Country in their Duty to God and her Majeſty, I provoked, as much as in me was, to bring the *Chamberlainſhip* of *Cheſter* into the Hands of the Earl of *Leiceſter*; being the Perſon moſt bounden to her Majeſty, as I then thought, and furtheſt from declining from his Duty.

“ And not long after followed the Rebellion, [in the North] the Thing whereby the *Romiſh* Authority might be brought into *England* again, in which Time of Rebellion he drew a Manner of Proclamation. Which was by the Juſtices of the Peace, being met together at the *Northwich*, ſent to be publiſhed in all the Churches in that Shire [*viz. Cheſhire*] to the appalling of many ill-diſpoſed, and to the Comfort of all well-minded Perſons. And that the Copy of it was ready to be ſhewed.

“ He related alſo, how he was ſent by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, about Matters concerning her Majeſty. For which Matters he received that Earls Letters to come to the Court. That he alſo received his Lordſhips Letters; whereby he attended him at *Buxtons* [Well.] And that he advertiſed the Earl of *Pembroke* then of the *Lancaſhire* Conſpiracy. And afterward diſcovered ſome Part of Sir *Thomas Stanley*'s Intention. And that in which he laboured upon his own Charge; and got Enemies, and had his Life ſought.

All

ANNO 1584.

All this concerning himſelf and his Merits: And then he comes cloſer to what he was then accuſed for in the *Star Chamber*. “That “ the Lord *Burghley* gave him the Office of the *Feodarſhip* by his “ good Favour. And in ſuch good Manner, as he acknowledged “ himſelf bounded unto him for the ſame: An Office under the “ Treaſurer. But he [the ſaid Treaſurer] had charged him to deceive the Queen. And ſo put him out of the ſame, being trou- “ bled with him. For ſo the Lord *Burghley* had written to *Hurleſton*. But he thus in his own Behalf: “That it was moſt true, “ that the Exerciſe thereof was a yearly Charge unto him, and ne- “ ver any Way profitable. And that he was able to make appear, “ the Queen was better ſerved in the ſame, than ever ſhe was before, “ or ſince.

“ And for deceiving the Queen, he anſwered, That to his Know- “ ledge he never by Colour of that Office, did willingly deceive her “ of the Value of one Penny. That it might be, that ignorantly, “ and by Negligence he might commit ſomething which in Duty he “ ought to have anſwered more certainly: But that he was never “ thereof any Way accuſed. This Gentleman ſo much employed in publick Services, and ſo juſt, may deſerve a Remembrance in Hiſtory.

An Heireſs ſeized, and her Lands.

Here follows a Gentleman brought into another of theſe Courts, *viz.* The Court of *Wards* and *Liveries*, but hardly, and innocent. The Caſe was this. Sir *Edward Stradling*, Kt. had ſeized a young Lady, Heireſs to one *Gamage* Eſq; and detained her in his Houſe: Being now come to Age, and ſo no longer the Queen's Ward. Which he reckoned would ſecure him in what he did, or intended to do, in his taking Poſſeſſion alſo of her Houſes and Lands. When the Lord *Burghley* was informed of this, who was Maſter of the Queens *Wards* and *Liveries*, he ſeaſonably interpoſed; and put a Stop to *Stradlings* Proceedings, who thought to ſwallow up all, now he had gotten the Heireſs: But ſhe had not ſued out her *Livery* from the Queen. Without doing which the Right of her Eſtate ſtill lay in the Queens Hands. Therefore the ſaid Lord *Burghley* iſſued out his Letters to *Stradling*, to forewarn him from meddling with the ſaid Heireſſes Lands, and the Writings, and Evidences thereof. For that by his Office he was concerned in them in Behalf of the Queen, though ſhe were no longer a *Ward*. And withal he ſent another to *Karn* a Knight in thoſe Parts: Whom he ordered to take Poſſeſſion of the ſaid Houſe and Lands for the Queen, and to keep the Evidences of her Eſtate for her good. But it is worth peruſing the whole Letter; wherein will appear what Power and Check this great Officer had in thoſe Times againſt the wronging of young Heirs and Heireſſes. It ran in this Tenor.

Lord Burghley, *Maſter of the Wards and Liveries his Letter to* Stradling.

“ That although he had not to do by his Office to intermeddle “ with the State of the Marriage of the Daughter and Heir of Mr. “ *John Gamage* late deceaſed, becauſe he credibly was informed, “ that ſhe was in full Age, and at her own Liberty to marry, where “ ſhe ſhould beſt like, with the Advice of her near Kinſfolks. “ Yet becauſe ſhe was not to have the Poſſeſſion of her Lands, but “ by Compoſition with her Majeſty for her *Livery*; and that by his “ Direction, as Maſter of the Queens Liveries, he took himſelf bound

ANNO 1584.

“ by his Oath and Office to have Care, that ſhe and all others, before they ſue their Livery, may have their Lands and Poſſeſſions preſerved from Waſte, or from an Intruſion by any Stranger: And eſpecially from all Entries of Perſons, that may have any Pretence or Colour of Title to any Part of the ſame Lands.

“ And upon theſe Conſiderations, and his hearing, that he [Sir *Edward Stradling*] had ſeized upon her Perſon, and did keep her in his Houſe, without any Colour of Reaſon, as a Priſoner. With which his Doings he [the Lord *Burghley*] meant not to meddle, but referred to her next Kinsfolks: But eſpecially to the Lord Chamberlain and others in the Court. But hearing that he had preſumed without any leful Authority to enter into her Houſe, and to ſecure into his Hands all Things there: Where alſo the Evidences of her Lands remained; unfit for any to deal withal, until the Inquiſition be made by his [that Lords] Direction; and an Office found after the Death of her Father, who was the Queens Majeſties Tenant *in Capite:* Whereby ſhe might, according to the Law of the Realm, ſue her *Livery*.

And then he came to a Reſolution in theſe Words. “ Finding this Manner your Proceeding, (if I be truly informed) unjuſt, unleful and unhoneſt, I do therefore in her Majeſties Name charge you, that you forbear to continue any ſuch unleful Actions; being dangerous to the Gentlewomans Inheritance. And that you permit ſome other Perſons more indifferent, to take the Charge of the Houſe, and to cauſe all Places, where the Evidences are, to be ſealed, until I ſhall cauſe the Queens Majeſties Writ to be ſent, to enquire after her Fathers Death. And becauſe I think Sir —— *Karn*, (who was a Neighbour to her principal Houſe) to be a meet Perſon to take this Charge as a Perſon indifferent, to whom I have written to that Effect; and therefore I require you, that he may have Acceſs to the Gentlewoman; and to inform her of this Care for her Benefit. And yet if he ſhall, for any Cauſe to me unknown, miſlike of him to take this Charge, I require you that ſhe may at her good Liberty, (without Conſtraint of Fear of you, or the Lady, your Wife, or of any other) Name, any other diſcreet Perſon, to take the ſame Charge, for her after-weal. And that to be pronounced in the Preſence of the ſaid Sir —— *Karn*. And he alſo may aſſent thereto; as I doubt not, but he will, if the Perſon be a meet Perſon for that Purpoſe. And ſo to end this my Letter, being ſomewhat at Length, I require you to let me be anſwered otherwiſe, than for ought I underſtand, you have anſwered my former next afore this. Which was not unreaſonable to have been well interpreted, and ſo anſwered.

To which I will ſubjoin the ſaid Maſter of the Wards and Liveries his Letter to *Karn*, being but ſhort: wherein the conſcientious Care of this Officer towards the Fatherleſs appeared.

And to Karn *a Knight, to guard the Heireſſes Eſtate.*

“ After my harty Commendations. Underſtanding, that ſince the Death of *John Gamage*, Eſq; Sir *Edward Stradling*, and his Wife have ſeized upon the Perſon of his Daughter and Heir, who is the Queens Tenant *in Chief*, and is to ſue her Livery; and her doth keep, as a Priſoner: And doth alſo enter upon her Houſes

“ and Lands; which ought to be in the Queens Majeſties Hands until Livery be made from the Queens Majeſty by me, the Maſter of the Queens *Wards* and *Liveries:* And in the ſame Houſe the Evidences do remain, ſubject to Danger of her Inheritance, by the intermeddling thereof by Sir *Edward Stradling:* I have for theſe Conſiderations, made Choice of you at this Time, as a Perſon indifferent, to ſee to the Guard of her Houſes and Evidences. And have for that End written my Letters to Mr. *Stradling*, (the Copy whereof I ſend to you to be ſeen.) Which Letters, I pray you, to deliver; and to require, that you may have the Cuſtody of her Houſe, where the Evidences are: And ſo to do I authoriſe you in her Majeſties Name, by Virtue of my ſaid Office: Moſt hartily requiring you not to forbear to do this Service, being agreeable to Juſtice; a neighbouring Part for you, and a charitable Deed, for the ſaving of the Gentlewomans Inheritance. And if ſhe ſhall for a Cauſe unknown to us, name any other either to join with you, or otherwiſe to do the ſame alone, I pray you take Care that the ſame may be done.

John *Lord* Ruſſel *dies.*

This Year died *John* Lord *Ruſſel*, Son and Heir of the Earl of *Bedford*. Which Lord married *Elizabeth*, one of the Daughters of Sir *Anthony Cook*, Kt. an excellent, well accompliſhed, and learned Lady. This Lord was buried in *Weſtminſter* Abby. His Lady ſhewed both Love and Learning in ſeveral Copies of Verſes in *Engliſh*, *Latin*, and *Greek*, very elegantly compoſed by her upon his Death: Thoſe in *Engliſh* were as follow.

Right Noble twice, by Vertue and by Birth:
Of Heaven lov'd, and honour'd on the Earth:
His Countries Hope, his Kindreds chief Delight.
My Husband dear, more dear than this Worlds Light.
Death hath me reft: But I from Death will take
His Memory. To whom this Tomb I make.
JOHN *was his Name. Ah!* was; *Wretch muſt I ſay,*
Lord Ruſſel *once, now my Tears thirſty Clay.*

To which I add theſe following *Latin* Verſes, by the ſame Lady to her Daughters Survivours; which are ſet upon his Monument.

Carmina ærumnoſa matris in ſuperſtites Filias.

Plangite nunc Natæ, nunc flebile fundite Carmen.
Occidit, heu! veſtræ Gloria ſola Domus.
Mors rapit immitis florentem ſtemmate claro,
Preſignem literis, tum Pietate, Patrem.
Hæredi Comitis quin vos ſuccreſcite, tali
Ortu qui nituit, ſed Bonitate magis.

On which ſad Occaſion alſo ſhe compiled a Copy of elegant Verſes in *Greek*.

ANNO 1584.

Sir Philip Sydney.

I muſt enter here a Memorial of the brave and good Sir *Philip Sidney*: One of the fineſt Gentlemen in this Reign. To whom Dr. *David Powel* dedicated his Book of Hiſtory of *Cambria* or *Wales*, ſet forth this Year. Where inſtead of extolling his noble Birth, and virtuous Qualities, (the ordinary Practice of thoſe that write Epiſtles dedicatory before their Books) 'tis to be remarked, how this Author choſe to play the Part of a grave Divine, *&c.* to direct his Style, "To "admoniſh him, to employ and uſe his Parts and Accompliſhments, "to thoſe Ends, for which they were beſtowed upon him from "above, rather than otherwiſe vainly with Suſpicion of Flattery, "to ſpeak of them, after this Manner.

"Firſt, I would have you conſider with yourſelf, that you have "received all the good Gifts you have, at the Hand of Almighty "God; who is the Giver of all Goodneſs. For the which your "Duty is to render moſt humble and hearty Thanks unto his Divine Majeſty. The End alſo for the which they are given unto "you, is at no Time to be forgotten: That is, the ſetting forth the "Glory of God, and for the Benefit of your Country. He exhorted him, that he ſhould alſo call to Remembrance, that they were "Talents delivered unto him of Credit, to uſe for a Time. For "the which he muſt render an Account, when it ſhould pleaſe the "Owner to call him to it. That the more he had, the greater his "Account would be. And then added, Uſe them therefore, and "hide them not in a Napkin: For they are the better for the Wearing. The more you uſe them, the more they will increaſe. The "more you lay out, the Richer you ſhall be. Have always before "your Eyes the Glory of God. Never forget the ſame in any thing "you do, ſeek the Weal-publick of your Country. Labour to do "it good in any thing you may, while you have Time ſo to do. "For you have but a While to remain here *. Away you muſt go "after the common Courſe of Nature. Let the Remembrance of "your Account when the Stewardſhip is ended, never out of your "Mind.

**This was as it were Prophetically ſpoken. For Sir* Philip *was ſlain at* Zutphen, *not much above a Year after.*

He added: "Theſe be the chief Points, leading the right Path to "true Nobility. Theſe Things you ſhall find ſet out at large in that "Book, wherewithal you [ſpeaking to Sir *Philip*] are moſt delighted. "[meaning ſurely the *Holy Scriptures.*]

Further, for the backing his grave and godly Counſil to this young Gentleman, he excites him by illuſtrious Patterns, After this Manner. "For the putting theſe Things in Practice, I am to lay down "two Examples to you to imitate. The which becauſe they are Domeſtic, ought to move you to be the more willing to follow them. "The one in your own noble Father: [Sir *Henry Sidney*] Who always "hath been, and yet is more inclined and bent to do good to his Country, than to benefit or enrich himſelf: As *Wales* and *Ireland*, beſides "his own, can bear him Witneſs. The other is, your Honourable Father in Law, Sir *Francis Walſingham*, her Majeſties chief Secretary: A Man for his Zeal of God's Glory and Love towards them "that fear God unfainedly, well known to the World: Follow their "Steps with the Remembrance of the noble Houſe, out of the which

Secretary Walſingham.

" you are deſcended by your Honourable Mother, [Daughter of *John* " Duke of *Northumberland*,] and then you cannot do amiſs.

" Labour by the Example of your Father, to diſcover and bring " to Light the Actions of the famous Men of elder Times. Who " with Conference of the State and Government of all Ages will " bring you to the perfect Experience of the Things which you " have learned out of *Ariſtotle*, *Plato*, and *Cicero*, by your Travail " in Philoſophy.

Emanuel Demetrius.

I muſt add the Mention of one Perſon more of Note, *viz.* *Emanuel Demetrius*, or *De Meteren*, a *Dutchman* by Nation, born at *Antwerp*, but lived in *England*, and was a Member of the *Dutch* Church, *London*. A worthy Perſon, and excellent Hiſtorian, who writ the Hiſtory of the *Netherlands*, called *Belgica Hiſtoria*; and whoſe Name and Family remained long afterwards here, Merchants of good Repute, even to theſe Times. He was dear to our Hiſtorian *Camden*. The Cuſtom in thoſe Times, and ſince too, was that learned Men commonly kept an *Album*, as they called it, being a Pocket Paper Book. In which their Friends wrote their Names, with the Addition of ſome *Motto* or other, or Sentence, in Token of Friendſhip, and loving Remembrance: This Gentlemans *Album* is ſtill preſerved (or lately was there) in the Strangers Church in St. *Auſtin Friers*. And therein *Camden* writ, dated this Year 1584 (any Thing of *Camden* being worth recording) theſe Verſes, and what followed.

Juſſit Amor; *Scribam: Sed amorem claudere verſu*
Neſcio: Scribo tamen, quod mihi dictat Amor.
Demetri, *tuus eſt* Camdenus *amicus amico.*
Nec magis eſſe ſuus, quàm tuus eſſe poteſt.

τὸ μηδὲν, ἄγαν, ἄγαν με τέρπει.

On the Page facing the other Page, is a Pair of Scales, held by a Hand out of the Clouds, with this *Motto*,

Pondere non Numero.

And theſe Words by him written underneath:

Amicitiæ Sacrum,
Domino Emanueli Demetrio, *Viro cum Virtute, tum Eruditione ornatiſſimo, Amico optimo & benè merentiſſimo, in perpetuum Amicitiæ inchoatæ Monumentum.*
Guilielmus Camdenus Londinenſis.
L. M.
Poſſuit.
LONDINI KALENDIS SEPTEMBI.
M. D. LXXXIIII.

This I tranſcribed from the ſaid *MS.* many Years ago, ſhewn me by the *Dutch* Miniſter, and an Elder of that Church.

ANNO
1584.

CHAP. XXIII.

Account of the Quarter Seſſions at London. *Books.* A Defence of the *Engliſh* Catholicks Execution of Juſtice in the Land. A Declaration of *Parries* Treaſons. *Bullingers* Decads in *Engliſh. An Anſwer to the* Abſtract. A Declaration of Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline. The antient Hiſtory of *Wales:* By *David Powel,* D. D. Deſcription of *Lincoln*; By *Lambard. Guavara's* Epiſtles; *Tranſlated out of* Spaniſh. A Sermon of *Wimbeldon, Anno* 1388.

Quarter Seſſions at London. *Criminals.*

THIS Paper following was ſent in to the Lord Treaſurer by Mr. *Fleetwood,* Recorder of *London,* being a ſhort Account of their Seſſions about *Michaelmas.* Which may ſerve for a *Specimen,* what Wickedneſs and Crimes were committed, even in thoſe Days; and that there were Criminals then of all Sorts, as well as afterwards; Clergy as well as Laity; and of both Sexes. A Tranſcript of the Paper follows.

“ At *Bridewell* on *Saturday,* [the Recorder ſitting there] We had a Miniſters Wife of *Cardiganſhire:* Who confeſſed, that ſhe was greatly ſought unto by young Women, (Maid Servants ſhe meant) when they were gotten with Child. She confeſſed, that ſhe gave them *Saven,* &c.

“ One *Higham,* an old Fellow, that is both an Excommunicate for putting away his Wife; and alſo for ſuch other like Part: He hath this Year gotten three of the Laundry Maids with Child in the *Fleet,* being there a Priſoner. He ſtowteth out the Matter with us, and will not find the Children; but writteth lewd Letters unto us.

“ *Seſſions of Goale, were of Livery the* Monday after:

“ Mr. *Dockwrays* Son of *Chamber-houſe* in *Barkſhire* was arraigned for ſtealing of a Portmanton with 84 *l.* in the ſame: Taken out of an Inn in *London.* But he was acquitted.

“ There was one *Heton,* a Preacher, who contended to be Parſon of St. *Andrews, Holbourn,* (being maintained by ſome of the Pariſh) did confront Mr. Vicechamberlain, [Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*] therein: Was brought to us for *Sodomy*; a leud Vice; which he hath been often accuſed of before this Time. We bailed him. For my Part, I was loth to have that Vice openly ſpoken of, until further Conſideration were had thereof. This *Hetons* Father was at *Newgate* arraigned and convicted for Inceſt with his own Daughter: And ſtood upon the Pillory for the ſame.

Now laſtly, for the Books that came forth this Year, theſe that follow are ſome of them.

ANNO 1584.

Books ſet forth this Year.

A Defence of Engliſh *Catholics that ſuffer for their Faith.* Made by Dr. *Allen*, called *Cardinal Allen*; in Favour of thoſe Papiſts, Jeſuits, and Seminary Prieſts, that had been executed for Treaſon. This Book was anſwered by Dr. *Bilſon*, as we ſhall hear the next Year.

There came forth alſo, *A Declaration* of the *favourable Dealings of her Majeſties Commiſſioners, &c.* This Book was publiſhed againſt ſlanderous Reports and Libels, to defame her Majeſty and her Subjects: This *Declaration* is extant in *Hollingſheds* Chronicle. In this Tract it is ſaid, that *Campion* the *Jeſuit* affirmed at the Bench where he was tried, ſaying, *This Place hath no Power to enquire or judge of the Holy Fathers Authority.* And other Anſwer he and other *Seminaries* would not make.

This was occaſioned by a Popiſh Book, ſet forth the Year before, *viz.* 1583, called, *A Treatiſe of Schiſm.* And was printed by *Will. Carter* of the City of *London:* Being a ſeditious and traiterous Book in *Engliſh.* For which he was indited, and condemned of High Treaſon, and executed at *Tyburn, Jan.* the 10. This Book was written by *Gregory Martin*, ſome time of St. *Johns* College, *Oxon*, and Contemporary with *Campion.* In that Book the Women at Court were exhorted to act the ſame againſt the Queen, as *Judith* had done with Commendation, againſt *Holophernes.*

Commiſſioners for Examination of Traitors.

Theſe aforeſaid Commiſſioners were appointed for the Examination of certain Traitors; and of *Tortures*, unjuſtly reported to have been done upon them for Matters of Religion. The Reports were, that *Heatheniſh and unnatural Tyranny, and cruel Tortures were executed upon them* that lately ſuffered for their Treaſon; who were *Campion, Alex. Briant*, and ſome more.

A Book called, Execution of Juſtice.

Another Book came forth about this Time, which likewiſe is preſerved in *Stows Annals*; intituled, *Execution of Juſtice in the Land, for Maintenance of Publick and Chriſtian Peace; againſt certain Stirrers of Sedition, and Adherents to the Traitors and Enemies of the Realm; without any Perſecution of them for Queſtions of Religion, as is falſely reported and publiſhed by their Fautors, and Foſterers of Treaſon.* Beginning, "It hath been in all Ages and in "all Countries, *&c.* This whole Tract is preſerved alſo in *Hollingſheds* Chronicle. This Diſcourſe is the more to be regarded, becauſe I eſteem it to have been compoſed by the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley.* The Minutes whereof, being his own Hand, I have ſeen among his Papers. Wherein, among other Things, Remarks were made of two of the Queens great Rebels: One was *Charles Nevyl*, Earl of *Weſtmerland*, the Traitor, who after the Rebellion in the North fled abroad. "That he was a Perſon utterly waſted by "Looſneſs of Life, and by Gods Puniſhment, even in the Time of "his Rebellion, bereaved of his Children, that ſhould have ſucceeded him in the Earldom; and his Body now eaten with Ulcers "of lewd Cauſes, as his Companions did ſay. The other was *Tho.* "*Steukley:* Who ran out of *Ireland:* A defamed Perſon almoſt "throughout all *Chriſtendom*: A faithleſs Beaſt, rather than a Man: "Fleeing firſt out of *England* for notable Pyracies, and then out "of *Ireland* for Treachery not pardonable. Which two were the

Nevil, *Earl of* Weſtmerland.

Tho. Stewkley

ANNO 1584.

" Ring-leaders of the reſt of the Rebels: the one for *England*, the " other for *Ireland*.

A Declaration of Parries Treaſon.

Another Book was now publiſhed in Vindication of *Engliſh* Juſtice; executed againſt *Parry*; which bore this Title, *A true and plain Declaration of the horrible Treaſons, practiſed by* William Parry, *the Traitor, againſt the Queens Majeſty: The Manner of his Arraignment, Conviction and Execution. Together with the Copies of ſundry Letters of his and others, tending to divers Purpoſes, for the Proofs of his Treaſons. Alſo an Addition not impertinent thereunto*; containing *a ſhort Collection of his Birth, Education, and Courſe of Life. Moreover, a few Obſervations, gathered out of his own Words and Writings, for the further Manifeſtation of his moſt diſloyal, deviliſh, and deſperate Purpoſe.*

Bullingers *Decads.*

This Year alſo *The Decads of Bullinger*, chief Miniſter of *Zuric*, or *Tigur* in *Switzerland*, being tranſlated into the *Engliſh* Tongue, was printed: *For the Uſe of Miniſters to inſtruct them, and to read, as Occaſion ſerved, in the Church, for the better Edification of the People. Being that Reverend Mans Sermons in five Decads:* a bulky large *Quarto*: Intitled, *Fifty godly and learned Sermons, divided into five Decads: Containing the chief and principal Points of Chriſtian Religion.* In which Volume are contained Explications of the *Apoſtles Creed*, and *Ten Commandments*, and the *Lords Prayer*, and the *Sacraments*. This was, as it ſeems, a Second Edition. The Writer of the Preface obſerved, " That many dedicated to the Service of God in the Miniſtry were far behind in thoſe Gifts, which " were neceſſary for their Function. And ſmall Likelihood there was " as yet, that the Church ſhould be ſerved with better, but rather " with worſe. For it ſeemed not that *Patrons* [of Livings] hereafter would bate one Penny; but rather more raiſe the Market: " [and ſo Ability not in Parts but in Purſe, procured the Preferments.] The Caſe ſtanding thus, their Labour ſurely is not " worſt beſtowed; neither do they promote the Glory of God, " or profit the Church leaſt, who to that End employ their Endeavours, that the Miniſtry which now is in Place may come forward, " and be better able to do their Duty. He meant either ſuch as ſet " godly and learned Treatiſes, or Expoſitions of the Holy Scriptures, " by themſelves in our Mother Tongue; or elſe ſuch as tranſlated " the worthy Works of the famous Divines of our Time. That " both theſe no doubt did much edify the Godly, and did greatly " help forward all thoſe Miniſters, which either not at all, or very " meanly underſtood the *Latin* Tongue.

The Uſefulneſs of theſe Decads.

And whereas the Works of many of the learnedeſt foreign Divines were already tranſlated into the *Engliſh* Tongue for the Supply of the Ignorance and Inability of many in Holy Orders, and that had Cures; this Work had much the Advantage, as the Writer of the Preface proceeded: " In as much as *Bullinger* in thoſe his *Decads* " amended much of *Calvins* Obſcurity [in his *Inſtitutions*] by his " ſingular Perſpicuity, or Clearneſs: and *Muſculus* his ſcholaſtical Subtilties, [in his *Common Places*] by his great Plainneſs, " and even popular Facility. All thoſe Points of Chriſtian Doctrine " which were not to be found in one, but handled in all, *Bullinger*

" packed up all, and that in good Order, in this one Book, but of " ſmall Bulk. And whereas divers of the Miniſters which lacked " Knowledge, and ſome alſo who had Knowledge, but lacked Order, Diſcretion, Memory, or Audacity, could not by Reaſon of " theſe Wants, either expound, or exhort, or otherwiſe preach, but " only read the Order of Service, Mr. *Bullingers* Decads might do " more good in this Reſpect, than perhaps at the firſt could be conceived. For in very Deed this Book is a Book of *Sermons*; *Sermons* " in Number, and in Nature; fit to be read out of a Pulpit unto " the ſimpleſt and rudeſt People of this Land. The Doctrine of " them very plain, without Oſtentation, Curioſity, Perplexity, Vanity or Superfluity; [the Qualities of ſome Sermons] very ſound " alſo. In Number Fifty: Every *Decad* containing, as the Word " ſignifies, Ten. So that they eaſily may be divided, as there may " be every *Sunday* in the Year, one of them read. For that it would " not yet be (as he added) that every Pariſh ſhould have a learned " Preacher, reſident and abiding in it. And in the mean Time it " could not be denied, but that a Homily or Sermon, penned by ſome " excellent Clerk, being read plainly, orderly, and diſtinctly, did, " much move the Hearers; teach, confirm, confute, comfort, *&c.* " Even as the ſame pronounced without our Book.

Other Books in Latin *ſet forth in* Engliſh.

For theſe good Ends, in this Deficiency of able and learned Miniſters, Care was take that there were already (before this Book) tranſlated into *Engliſh*, the *Latin* Works of divers foreign Divines, for the Uſe of our unlearned or learned Miniſters: As *Calvins Inſtitutions*, *Muſculus* his *Common Places*, the *Comment* of *Marlorate* upon St. *Johns* Goſpel; *Peter Martyr* upon the Book of *Judges*; *Gualter* upon the *ſmall Prophets*. " All which (as the abovesaid " Prefacer writes) handled moſt Points of Chriſtian Doctrine excellently well. But no Writer yet, in the Hands of Men, could " fit them better than theſe *Decads* of *Bullinger*.

In this Book alſo Knowledge is given of the four General Counſels; and of the firſt Creeds in the primitive Ages of the Church. Of this Book Notice is taken in Vol. II.

Anſwer to the Abſtract.

An Anſwer to a Book called *An Abſtract*, now came forth, namely, to the two firſt and principal Treatiſes (as the Title ran) *of a certain factious Libel, put forth without Name of the Author or Printer; and without Approbation of Authority:* Under the Title of an *Abſtract of certain Acts of Parliament, of certain her Majeſties Injunctions, of certain Canons*, &c. And this Sentence of St. *Hieron* in the Title Page, *Ep. ad Pammochium* (to countenance the Subject of the Book) *Facile abjicitur quod hæret extrinſecus, inteſtinum bellum periculoſius eſt. Conjuncta diſglutinamus: Unita diſſuimus.* Printed by *Henry Denham*, 1584. in *Quarto*. An Account whereof, and the Anſwer is given before. It begins with the Title of the Book, *viz. The Abſtract.* Then takes into Conſideration the Epiſtle: And then proceeds to the Book itſelf: The main Scope of this *Abſtract* was to bring the Governours, and Government Eccleſiaſtical of this Church into Contempt and Hatred.

Chap. xix.

the Pretence of The Abſtract.

But the Authors fair Pretence (as the Anſwerer ſhews) was " To " have advertiſed the Governours of this Church of ſome whole-

ANNO 1584.

“ ſome Laws in force, to them, as he pretended, *unknown:* And therefore neceſſarily by them *unpractiſed.* to the Intent his Admonition might have been profitable hereafter *for the Peaceable Government of the Church.* But that whatſoever was pretended, it was not of good Zeal and Conſcience (whereof in every Page he gave evident Proof to the Contrary) ſavouring ſo ſtrongly of Rancour and Contention.

Noels *Catechiſm vindicated.*

In this *Abſtract*, the excellent Catechiſm of *Noel* Dean of St. *Pauls*, in *Greek* and *Latin*, printed 1573. is brought in, in one Place, to prove their Diſcipline: Where it is ſaid; “ In well ordered Churches a certain Form of Government was inſtituted and obſerved. Certain Elders, that is to ſay, Eccleſiaſtical Magiſtrates, were choſen; Which ſhould retain, and practiſe Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline. But, ſaith the Anſwerer, doth our Author think, that this Man here doth mean their *Lay-Presbyteries*, never heard, nor read of from the Beginning of the World, till within theſe forty Years, or little more. Becauſe he [*Noel*] nameth them *Eccleſiaſtical Magiſtrates*; A Fool thinks that Bells do ring, and almoſt ſpeak any thing, wherewith he is delighted. Or could he gather, that Maſter *Noel* here condemneth our Churches Diſcipline, as not agreeable to that which *Chriſt* hath commanded? If he had directly ſaid, that in ſome well ordered Churches, an Order of Diſcipline differing from ours, is obſerved, doth this follow, ſome well ordered Churches differ in ſome Points of external Diſcipline from our Church, *Ergo*, Ours is not the Diſcipline of *Chriſt*? then by this Reaſon ſhould no reformed Churches be ſaid to retain the Diſcipline of *Chriſt*, or be well ordered: Many of them upon Diverſity of Occaſions, differing even from themſelves; and every one in ſome Point or other differing among themſelves, *&c.* And then concluding concerning that Reverend Dean; “ I do verily perſuade myſelf, that he being a Man yet living, and well known to be far from any unreverend Opinion of the State and Policy of the Church, whereof he is no inferior Member himſelf, and being beſt able to interpret his own Meaning, would, if he were demanded, quickly convince this Man of factious and ſlanderous wreſting, and wrecking of his Words.

No Form of Diſcipline preſcribed.

And thus I have given a Taſte of this applauded *Abſtract*, which anſwers to ſeveral Poſitions of it. To which I add only one more, that it was urged againſt them, that no *Forms were ever preſcribed*, in theſe Words: “ It cannot be proved, that any ſet and exact particular Form of Diſcipline is recommended to us from the Word of God, *&c.* The contrary to which they aſſerted. The Anſwer given was this. “ Are all the Churches of *Denmark*, *Swedeland*, *Poland*, *Germany*, *Rhetia*, *Vallis*, *Telina*, the nine Cantons of *Switzerland* Reformed, with their Confederates of *Geneva*, of *France*, of the *Low Countries*, and of *Scotland*, in all Points, either of Subſtance or Circumſtance, diſciplined alike? Nay, they neither are, can be, neither yet need ſo to be, *&c.* Seeing he objecteth to us the Precedent of the Reformed Churches in Matter of Diſcipline, let him firſt by ſome Proof out of Scripture, or antient Writers, approve unto us, if he can, the debarring of the Civil Ma-

“ giſtrate

ANNO 1584.

“ giſtrate from all Government in Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes; and a Presbytery or Seigniory, conſiſting moſt of Lay Perſons. Yet both of them practiſed by ſome Churches, which he and his Clients moſt admire.

Theſe Collections I have made from theſe Books, as they occur; to let in ſome Knowledge of the Matters argued and debated in them. And to give ſome Light into the Books of theſe Times.

A brief and plain Declaration *of Diſcipline.*

Another Book, that ſeemed to condemn the Government of the Church, came out this Year 1584. Called, *A brief and plain Declaration of the Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline.* Now to ſhew ſome Account of this Book; becauſe it was highly eſteemed by many, and printed firſt in the Year 1574. in *Latin,* and now reprinted in *Engliſh.* And being one of the chief Stays the *Diſciplinarians* built their Doctrine of Church Government upon, I will give ſome ſhort Notes of it. It bore this Title, *A full and plain Declaration of Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline out of the Word of God, and of the declining of the Church of* England *from the ſame.* It ſeemed to be printed beyond Sea, by the Character. *Travers,* I think was the Author. The Epiſtle to the Reader will give ſome farther Account of the Book and Author.

Account of the Author and Book.

The Author is ſaid to be one, who executed ſome Time the publick Miniſtry; and afterwards was laid aſide. That the Book was tranſlated out of *Latin.* In which Language it was firſt writ. The Writer of the Epiſtle gave the Reaſon: Namely, “ It being conceived, the Queen would be the readier to read it, becauſe it was writ in that Language. Who, according to her excellent Learning was delighted with Things that were written in *Latin.* And that they conceived great Hopes, that this Cauſe which hitherto ſhe had taſted here and there, out of the falſe Rumours of thoſe that dealt unjuſtly with them [of the *Diſcipline*] ſhould be more fully drawn out of their own Books, as it were out of the Fountains.

And concerning the Author the Writer of the Epiſtle, “ Gives this comfortable Hope, that the *Diſcipline* would at Length take Place in that our merciful Father had provided a notable Workman. Whoſe Breaſt he had filled with all kind of Treaſures, both of Arts and Tongues: And that he had framed a *Bezaleel* for them; to make the Veſſels and the Inſtruments of the Tabernacle, *&c.* For *Diſcipline* here ſhewed herſelf, and came forth openly in Sight of all Men; not only with good Words and excellent Sentences, as it were arrayed with coſtly Garments, but alſo the ſame as it were with Method comely and ſeemly girded.

He added, “ That *Diſcipline* had been twice repulſed before, and now came the third Time [now at a Parliament] the ſame that ſhe was before; but with greater Train and Ornaments, as was meet for a moſt beautiful Daughter of the nobleſt King.

Tho. Cartwright *the Publiſher.*

The Writer of this Commendatory Epiſtle appears to be *Thomas Cartwright,* the head *Puritan*: Who, as he ſaid, had done his Endeavour to bring to Light ſo excellent a Jewel, committed to his Cuſtody, being perſuaded, that he could not without the heinous Sin of Sacrilege have buried in Silence, as it were in the Grave, ſo notable a Treaſure.

The Book began with a Table or ſhort View of all Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline, ordained by the Word of God. The firſt running Title is, *The Neceſſity of Diſcipline.*

I have ſet down all this gathered from that Book, ſhewing the high Eſtimation the Party had of it. But ſome Years after it received an Anſwer by Dr. *Bridges*, Dean of *Sarum*; (which provoked the Party exceedingly) intitled, *A Defence of the Government eſtabliſhed in the Church of* England. But this Defence would not be endured without a Reply, nay and abuſive Replies too, as will be ſhewed under the Year 1588.

The Hiſtory of Cambria.

There came out alſo this Year a Book concerning the antient Hiſtory of *Wales*: Collected out of ſome old *Welch MSS.* tranſlated into the *Engliſh* Tongue: The Hiſtory reaching from *Cadwallader*, *Anno* 680, to *Llewellyn ap Gruffith*; contemporary with King *Edward* I. of *England.* And Accounts are given of the Princes of *Wales*, of the Blood Royal of *England*; and of the Lords Preſident of *Wales*, from *Rowland Lee*, Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, the Firſt. There is alſo contained in this Book a Deſcription of *Wales*, drawn by Sir *John Price*, Kt. It is intitled, *The Hiſtory of* Cambria, *now called* Wales. It was writ in the *Britiſh* Language about 200 Years paſt. And tranſlated into *Engliſh* by *Humphrey Lloyd*, Gent. Corrected and augmented, and continued out of Records, and the beſt approved Authors. By *David Powel*, D.D. who dedicated his Book to Sir *Philip Sydney*, Kt. The remarkable Contents of which Dedication are ſhewed before.

William Lambard of *Lincolns Inn*, that learned Antiquarian (who ſet forth divers Pieces, ſavouring of antient Learning, as among the reſt, the *Perambulation of* Kent, Anno 1576.) had alſo collected a Deſcription of the City of *Lincoln*, and the Town of *Stamford.* Which the Lord Treaſurer hearing of, deſired to ſee, eſpecially that being his native Country. I think however this Deſcription was never printed. But I find *Lambard* ſent it to that Lord with a Letter; which coming from ſo eminent a Perſon deſerves to be tranſcribed and preſerved. It ran to this Tenor.

Deſcription of Lincoln *by* Lambard.

His Letter concerning it.

" Where it pleaſed you, Right Honourable, this laſt Term to de-
" mand of me, Whether I had written a *Deſcription* of *Lincoln*, by
" Occaſion that you had found ſomewhat of mine vouched by ano-
" ther touching that Town; I anſwered, that I had not much
" travailed therein: But had, as I thought, collected ſome few Notes
" out of Hiſtory concerning it. Which alſo I promiſed to ſearch
" out, and to ſend you. Upon my Return therefore from *London*,
" I found among my Papers theſe few Things of *Lincoln*, which I
" had obſerved in Hiſtory; ſo rudely tumbled together, as if my
" Promiſe had not bound me, and your Honourable Acceptation (of
" Things ſavouring of Learning) emboldened me, I durſt not have
" directed them towards you. Notwithſtanding, ſuch as they be,
" I ſend them together; with a few others concerning *Stanford*,
" your Lordſhips own Town, forged in the ſame Shop, as by the
" Workmanſhip it will appear. Moſt humbly beſeeching your good
" Lordſhip to receive them and to pardon me, and ſo with unfeigned
" Prayer to God for the long and proſperous Health of your good
" Lordſhip,

Stanford.

“ Lordſhip, I take my Leave. From the Biſhops Place at *Halling* “ in *Kent* the 2. of *Decemb.* 1584.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble,

W. Lambard.

Guevara's Epiſtles.

Familiar Epiſtles of Sir *Anthony de Guevara*, Preacher, Chronicler and Counſillor to the Emperor *Charles* V. Tranſlated out of the *Spaniſh* Tongue, by *Edward Hellows*, Groom of the Leaſh: And now newly imprinted and corrected, 1584. Dedicated to Sir *Henry Lee*, Kt. Maſter of the Leaſh.

A Sermon of Wimbleton, An. 1388.

A Sermon preached by *R. Wimbleton*, at *Pauls Croſs*, in the Reign of King *Henry* IV. 1388. and found out hid in a Wall. Which Sermon was ſet forth by the old Copy, without adding or diminiſhing; ſave the old and rude *Engliſh* here and there amended. Printed by *J. Charlewood*, 1584. The Text *Luke* 16. *Redde rationem villicationis tuæ.* This Sermon I once ſaw in a Volume of Sermons in the *Lambeth* Library. This Sermon long before *John Fox* had entered in his Book of *Martyrs*, Vol. I. which he found in an old Parchment Book, with other Writings, and tranſcribed: Which was intitled, *A godly and moſt fruitful Sermon, preached by a certain learned Clerk*, at St. *Pauls Croſs*. *Fox* had alſo ſeen another old worn Copy of it in the Regiſter and Record of the Archbiſhops of *Canterbury*: The Sermon having afterwards been exhibited to an Archbiſhop of that Province; of ſuch Fame in thoſe Times it was. In which Sermon in Purſuance of the Text, (*Give an Account of thy Stewardſhip*) was a Conjecture of the Worlds End drawing near, and an Interpretation to that Purpoſe of *Daniel* and the *Apocalypſe*. A Period of the Preachers Sermon ran in this Tenor. “ If thou ſee “ the Sun ſo low, that Darkneſs is upon the Hills, thou wilt ſay, “ doubtleſs, that it is Night: Right ſo, if thou ſee firſt in the *Se*“ *culars*, and the lewd Chriſten Men, beginneth Darkneſs of Sins, “ and to have Myſtery, it is Token that the World endeth. But “ when thou ſeeſt in Prieſts, that be put on the higheſt Top of “ ſpiritual Dignities, which ſhoulden be aboven the common People “ in perfect Learning, that Darkneſs of Sin hath taken them, who “ doubteth that the World is at the End.

CHAP. XXIV.

The Queen moved to aſſiſt the Netherlanders. Saravia's *Letter. The Earl of* Leiceſter *goes over. Orders to the Vice-Admirals of the Queens Fleet, with Reſpect to the King of* Spain; *ſeizing* Engliſh *Ships: For* Repriſals. *A Parliament. They enter into an* Aſſociation *for the Queens Safety. Laws made againſt* Seminaries *and Papiſts. The Speakers Speech to the Queen. A Book of Petitions from the Papiſts.* Shelly *the Preſenter of it. His Examination. The Parliament conſult concerning the* Scots *Queen. Her Caſe propounded. The Queens Concern at the yielding up of* Antwerp. *She takes the Protection of the* Netherlands *hereupon. Her Inſtructions to her Ambaſſador.*

ANNO 1585.

Matters now in Conſultation.

TWO main political Points were upon the Wheel this Year, 1585. One was concerning Aſſiſtance of the *Low Countries*, oppreſt by the King of *Spain*, and his Officers placed there. The other concerning *Mary* the *Scots* Queen, there being Apprehenſions and new Fears ariſing of no Safety for *England*, while ſhe lived. And therefore to put her to Death: Which howſoever, Queen *Elizabeth* could not be brought to.

Deliberation about aſſiſting the Netherlanders.

Concerning the former of theſe, there was a ſerious Deliberation about aſſiſting them: As a People grievouſly perſecuted for their Religion; and alſo their Privileges (being a free People) violated. Great Application had been made to the Queen to afford them Aid on both Accounts: And for her own Intereſt and Safety of her Kingdom likewiſe. This was urged by a notable Letter from *Adrian Saravia*, writ from *Leyden* in *Holland* to the Lord Treaſurer, brought by ſome Ambaſſadors then coming to the Queen: Exhorting, from the Danger of *England*, to ſtand by the *Hollanders*: And uſing Arguments to perſuade the Queen to take the Government of that People. The Letter was dated *June* the 9. 1585.

Saravias *Letter to the Treaſurer.*

" That he was now the more moved to write to him, ſince he
" always had a Compaſſion for the Affliction of that People, which
" then ſuffered for the Cauſe of Religion. And at that Time was
" more Need of his [that Lords] Favour, ſince the Queens Safety and
" Life, and the Security of this Kingdom of *England* ſeemed to be
" joined with their Danger. That their Enemies were no Friends to
" us. That the Counſils of the common Enemies were daily more and
" more manifeſt; and that we might ſee whether they tended: And
" from what they were about we ought to Judge, what we were to
" expect. For the Misfortune of theſe Provinces would draw with
" it

“ it the Ruine of *England*. We muſt not expect and wait, till they “ were loſt. That if we ſave them, we ſhould confirm our own “ Peace and Safety. And therefore that it was neceſſary to enter “ into a Society with all who profeſſed the Goſpel of *Chriſt*; unleſs “ we would reſolve certainly to periſh. And as thoſe Provinces “ were nearer to us, ſo to be the ſtraighter joyned with us. Which “ might be done two Ways; either by receiving them into a moſt “ ſtrict League of Society, or of Rule and Dominion. The latter “ whereof would be ſafeſt and moſt profitable to both. And then “ he went on to prove what he had propounded. All this and the reſt of this well penned *Latin* Epiſtle is worth preſerving. And (as I tranſcribed it from the Original) may be read in the *Appendix*.

Num. L.

A great Sum offered the Queen, if ſhe would aſſiſt the States.

During this Negociation, that it might take the deſired Effect, in behalf of theſe Foreigners, there was great Advantage of Monies in Proſpect to the Queen, as well as Gratifications to one, if not more, of her Counſillors: And what it was is more fully explained in a Letter from an unknown Friend to the Lord Treaſurer, and in that Lords Anſwer, dated *June* 24. “ That whereas it was “ moved, how the Court might be tempted by allowing a Device to “ gain her Majeſty 10000 *l.* monthly, and himſelf, [*viz.* The Lord “ Treaſurer] one other thouſand Pound; ſo as her Majeſty would “ help the States; that he knew the Matter very well, having heard “ thereof ſeven Months paſt; and had within a few Days ſeen and “ read the Project. But what thereof to think, he could not but “ pronounce doubtfully; until he ſhould ſpeak with the Party that “ offered it. Adding theſe Words, ſhewing how well affected he was to that Cauſe, for the Publick Good, in his Judgment. “ That “ in his Opinion, if the Matter might appear feaſible, (which he “ muſt doubt of) and reaſonable, as being feaſible, he thought it “ [worthy accepting; and with] Correction of ſome Points, he “ ſhould be to blame, if he ſhould not conſent to her Majeſties Profit thereby, to enter into the Defence of the *Low Countries*: “ Since, as he ſubjoined, he was perſuaded, and did maintain it, “ that her Majeſty for her own Safety ought to charge herſelf with “ the Defence of them againſt the Common Enemy. Without which “ Attempt her Majeſty ſhould not be able with Expence of Thouſands to defend herſelf, that now ſhe might with Gods Aſſiſtance “ do with Hundreds.

The Treaſurers Judgment for aiding them.

“ But for any Offer to himſelf, (ſhewing how he contemned any “ thing that looked like Bribery) he did utterly refuſe either ſuch, “ or any leſs Sum: Thinking it more Charity to yield his own to “ the common Cauſe, than to receive a Penny.

The Queens Declaration for aſſiſting them.

When the Queen after a long and ſerious Conſideration, reſolved to give Aid to theſe Provinces of the *Netherlands*, to juſtify her Doings, ſhe ſet forth *A Declaration of the Cauſes moving her to give Aid to the Defence of the People oppreſt in the* Low Countries. It began, “ Although Kings and Princes Sovereign, *&c.* I ſhall not repeat it, but refer the Reader to *Hollinſheds* Chronicle; where under the Year 1585 it is ſet down at length: And I believe it drawn up by the Head and Pen of the Lord Treaſurer.

A Deliberation about the Charge and Forces to be ſent.

I find another Paper relating to this important Affair, framed, as by the Writing, it ſeems to be, by the Warlike Earl of *Leiceſter:* And who was ſoon after ſent the Queens General Lieutenant there. It is a *Deliberation,* "What Forces and Charges it would coſt, to enter into this Buſineſs. As, what Support was needful for thoſe *Low Countries*: What her Majeſty of herſelf, and by her People was able to contribute towards them: What Security might be convenient for her Majeſty to aſk of them; what Forces *England* might ſpare to help them, and leave itſelf ſupplied. What Forces on both Sides muſt be kept, by Sea as well as by Land. Whether it be probable that her Majeſty might be able by herſelf and People, to give ſufficient Aſſiſtance to thoſe Countries, or no. If not, then with what Princes it were moſt fit, for her Majeſty to join withal.

The Earl of Leiceſter *goes over.*

When the Queen was now engaged with the States, ſhe had ſent in *October*, Mr. *Daviſon* (who was Clark of her Council) in Quality of her Ambaſſador to them. The Earl of *Leiceſter* was now gone her General thither. By whoſe going the Queens Expences were enhanced; as the Lord Treaſurer wrote in his Letter to the ſaid *Daviſon.* How the Queen began already to grudge at the Charges. "That they ſaw her Charges daily to encreaſe, beyond her Majeſties good Allowance: Specially by the coming of my Lord of *Leiceſter*, with a great Company of Gentlemen, but not yet experimented in the Wars. Although they were ſuch as having good Hearts and Reputation, would prove Men quickly able to ſerve. And then he acquainteth *Daviſon* with the Gentlemen, whom the Queen had appointed to govern two Townes granted her by the States, *viz.* "That ſhe had determined Sir *Philip Sidney*, her Governour of *Fluſhing*, and his own Son, *Tho. Cecil*, the *Brill.* And praying him, if he ſhould tarry until his Son ſhould come over, to give him his Advice, how to uſe himſelf: And alſo his [*Daviſon*] Letters to the Towneſmen of *Brill*, to uſe him with the Favour that he ſhould reaſonably require.

The Queens Grudges at his Expences.

Laws and Ordinances for the Army under the Earl of Leiceſter.

But the Earl of *Leiceſter*, as became a wiſe and careful Captain General, for the better Diſcipline, good Order, and Regard of him and his Commands, upon his Entrance into his Government; ſet forth divers good Laws and Ordinances to be obſerved by his Army, under Penalties, of Loſs of Wages, of Impriſonment, nay, and Life, according to the Quality of the Crimes. What they were is too large to be ſet down here. For them therefore I refer the Reader to the *Appendix.*

[Num.L.]

The Netherlanders *vindicated in defending themſelves.*

There is a Remark made by *Bedel* an *Iriſh* Biſhop in his Anſwer to *James Waddeſworth*, a *Jeſuit*, concerning this Aſſiſtance of the Queen given to the *Netherlanders* againſt the King of *Spain:* Upon Occaſion of a great Blame laid by the ſaid *Jeſuit* againſt the Proteſtants upon this Account, concerning Subjects defending themſelves againſt the Tyranny of their Princes. "Do you think, ſaid he, Subjects are bound to give their Throats to be cut by their Fellow Subjects [ſet over them by their Prince] or by their Princes at their mere Will, againſt their own Laws and Edicts? You would know, *Quo jure*, The Proteſtants Wars, and *France* and *Holland*, "are

Biſhop Bedels *Anſwer to* Wadſworth. *Printed* 1685.

" are juſtified. Firſt, the Law of *Nature*. Which not only allow- " eth, but enclineth and enforceth every living Thing to defend it- " ſelf from Violence. Secondly, That of *Nations:* Which per- " mitteth thoſe that are in the Protection of others, to whom they " owe no more, but an honourable Acknowledgment; in Caſe they " go about to make themſelves abſolute Sovereigns, and uſurp their " Liberty; to reſiſt and ſtand for the ſame; and if any lawful " Prince (which is not yet Lord of his Subjects Lives and Goods) " in this Attempt to ſpoil them of the ſame, under Colour of re- " ducing them to his own Religion, after all humble Remonſtrances, " they may ſtand upon their own Guard; and being aſſailed repel " Force with Force. As did the *Macabees* under *Antiochus*. In " which Caſe notwithſtanding, the Perſon of the Prince himſelf " ought always to be ſacred, and inviolable, as was *Saul* to " *David*.

" Laſtly, if the enraged Miniſter of a lawful Prince [ſuch as " Duke *D'Alva* was in *Holland*] will abuſe his Authority againſt " the fundamental Laws of the Country; it is no Rebellion to de- " fend themſelves againſt Force: Reſerving ſtill their Obedience to " their Sovereign inviolate.

All Preparations were now making for War, and the Queens Fleet was ſetting forth. I meet with *Orders*, which accordingly were ſent to the Vice-Admirals from the Admiral: Occaſioned by the King of *Spains* ſtopping all *Engliſh* Veſſels, and ſeizing their Goods. Theſe Orders will give ſome Account of the State of Things at this Time between the Queen and *Spain:* And therefore fit to be entred here; eſpecially ſince our Hiſtorians, *Stow*, *Camden*, and *Hollingſhed* are ſilent of them. The Title they bore was:

Orders to the Vice-Admirals of the Fleet.

Orders to be publiſhed and put in Execution by the Vice-Admirals of the Realm: Set down by the Lord Admiral, with the Aſſent of the Lords of her Majeſties Privy Council; the 12. *of* March, 1585.

The King of Spains Rigour.

" WHEREAS the King of *Spain* in *May* laſt did command ve- " ry ſuddenly Arreſt to be made of all the Ships, Veſſels and " Goods of her Majeſties Subjects, then being in all the Ports of *Spain* " without any Token of Suſpicion thereof conceived by any her " Majeſties Subjects aforehand, either in *England*, *Spain*, or *Portin-* " *gal*. As alſo to be put in Priſon, all ſuch Merchants, Factors, " and Mariners as they could apprehend, being her Majeſties Sub- " jects; there only trading the Uſe of Merchandizes. And in *July* " following, the ſame King did by his Miniſters take to his own Uſe " a great Part of the ſaid Ships and Goods of her Majeſties Subjects: " The Queens Majeſty upon the pitiful Complaints of her Subjects for " theſe ſo great Injuries offered unto them by the King of *Spain*, and his " Miniſters (with whom ſhe conceived for her own Part to be in Peace) " finding no other ordinary Means of withſtanding, or remedying " ſo general a Wrong, and Loſs to her Subjects; eſpecially when " there was no Acceſs left for any Safty to ſeek Remedy in *Spain*

Letters of Repriſal. “by Petition in Way of Juſtice; did therefore after good Deliberation of Council grant unto all ſuch Merchants, or any others which had their Ships or Goods ſo ſpoiled or detained, upon their earneſt and importunate Requeſts, ordinary Letters of *Repriſal* in lawful Form and Manner, for recovering of their Loſſes (which was inſeperable) or elſe ſome Part thereof.

“Whereupon an Order was deviſed and decreed by the Lords of her Majeſties Privy Council, to be executed with divers good Proviſions in Cautions and Bonds, to avoid all other Inconveniences: And ſo delivered the ſame unto the Lord Admiral. Wherein was contained, among other Things, that ſuch as ſhould make good and due Proof, in the Court of *Admiralty*, of their Loſſes and Impriſonments of their Servants by Occaſion of the ſaid Arreſt, ſhould have Warrant to paſs unto the Seas in Warlike Manner; for no other Purpoſe, but only, for the ſeizing either of their own, or of any other Ships of *Spain*, for, or towards the Recovery of their Loſſes, as far forth as conveniently they might, according to the Articles by their Lordſhips ſo ſet down.

“Since which Time it is underſtood, that divers went to the Seas by Vertue of thoſe Grants, whereof many had taken ſome Prizes warrantable, but far off to anſwer their Loſſes. And ſome others which did linger about the narrow Seas, and never went further to the Southward than to the Coaſt of *France*, and many of them no further, than within one Day, they might ſee *England*. Which Sort of Men made Spoil of divers with whom they met; not ſparing in ſome Part, her Majeſties good Friends, both of *France* and *Denmark*, and the Eaſt Parts; (whereof Reſtitution nevertheleſs hath been made, as far forth as poſſibly might:) For colouring whereof they have alledged, that the Ships by them ſo taken, ſhould be laden with *Spaniſh* Goods: As among ſome that they have ſo ſtayed, Part have ſo proved. Whereby it is evident that there might hereafter enſue a great Diſturbance among her Majeſties good Friends, if Remedy ſhould not be provided; and is moſt earneſtly commanded by her Majeſty to be performed.

French *and* Daniſh *Veſſels ſeized.*

Remedy. “Therefore it is ordered, that from the 12th of *March*, all ſuch as have or ſhall have Warrant for Reprizal, ſhall repair with all poſſible Speed, after they ſhall depart from any Harbour in this Realm into the Coaſt of *Spain*, or to the Iſlands or to ſuch other remote Places where the *Spaniards* or *Portingals* do moſt uſe their Traffic: And that none upon the Peril, to be judged a Pyrate, ſhall take any Veſſel that ſhall not belong to a *Spaniard* or a *Portingal*. And whoever ſhall under a Colour meddle wittingly, or take, or aſſault any Veſſel, appertaining unto any of the Subjects of any other Prince or State, than the King of *Spain*, or of the Kingdom of *Portingal*, ſhall be reputed or taken, as a Pyrate; and ſhall be tryed, and ſuffer by Order of the Laws as a Pyrate.

“And furthermore, it ſhall not be lawful for any Subject of the Crown of *England* to ſerve with any Ship of War, by Vertue

Special Licence.

“ of any Commiſſion to be granted by any other foreign Prince
“ or Perſon, without ſpecial Licence of the Queens Majeſty.
“ Laſtly, it is ordered, that all *Vice-Admirals* ſhall publiſh theſe
“ Orders in every principal Port of the Realm within his Juriſdiction;
“ and cauſe true Copies thereof to be annexed in ſome peculiar
“ Places near the Shipping Places in the ſaid Fort. And to the Intent
“ the Offenders hereafter may be ſpeedily puniſhed, the Judge
“ Civil, that is appointed within every Juriſdiction of the Admiralty,
“ ſhall have from Time to Time regard, to proceed to the Inquiſition
“ and Indictment of every Offender in theſe Caſes abovementioned,
“ or againſt any Part of the former Orders, preſcribed in this Behalf.

Judge Civil.

“ Finally, Charge to be given by the Vice-Admirals to all Perſons
“ that ſhall repair to the Seas, by Vertue of any Warrant abovementioned,
“ for Recovery of Recompence for their Loſſes againſt
“ any Subjects of the King of *Spain*, that they obſerve all other
“ former Orders preſcribed to them, not only upon Pain of Bonds,
“ acknowledged in the Admiral Court; but alſo upon Pain to be
“ taken and uſed as Pyrates, according to the Nature of their Offences.
This was printed by *Chr. Barker*, at the Commandment
of the Queens Privy Council.

A Parliament: Their Buſineſs.

A Parliament ſat, not before *November*, and continued ſome Months after. They were chiefly employed in ſecuring the Kingdom againſt *Papiſts*; who were buſy in hatching Conſpiracies againſt the Queens Throne and Life, which cauſed a ſevere Statute againſt *Jeſuits* and Seminary Prieſts, or any others, that grounded any villanous Plots upon the Bull of Pope *Pius* V. and againſt any Subjects of *England* that ſhould go abroad for Education in any Popiſh Schools. And in this Parliaments Zeal for the Queens Safety, they voluntarily entered into an *Aſſociation* to revenge her Death, if that ſhould happen by any Violence; and confirmed it by a Statute. Which the Queen took very well at their Hands.

They enter into an Aſſociation for the Queens Safety.

Bills againſt the Eccleſiaſtical State.

I ſhall not need to mention the Labours of the Diſaffected Party to Epiſcopacy and the Practice of the Church eſtabliſhed, by Bills brought into the Houſe, preferred againſt the Biſhops, and which ſtruck deep at the Eccleſiaſtical State: As, againſt the Biſhops Juriſdictions, in giving *Faculties*, in giving Holy Orders; their Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures, and the Oath *Ex Officis:* And propoſing a new Oath to be taken by the Biſhops in *Chancery*, and the *Kings Bench*; *viz.* that they ſhould act nothing contrary to the Laws of the Land. Which Petitions, and the Succeſs thereof may be found at large in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*.

Book III. ch. 10.

The Speakers Speech to the Queen.

But that which I chiefly mind to ſhew is, the Speech of the Speaker, Serjeant *Puckring*, to the Queen at the Concluſion of the Parliament. Which is no where ſet down in our Hiſtories, and will let in a great deal of Light into the preſent State of Affairs. And I muſt add, that the Speech is the more Remarkable, being all methodized by a Form drawn up by the Head and Pen of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. From whoſe Minutes I tranſcribed it.

The Sum thereof.

The Sum whereof was, “ That after the Speaker (in the Name of
“ the whole Parliament) had beſpoke her Majeſty in moſt humble
“ Sort,

"Sort, he begged her to give Life not to the Work of their Hands, but of their Minds, Cogitations, and Hearts: Which otherwiſe, being not enlivened by the Beams of her Favour, would be vain and dead. Then acknowledging the great Benefit ſhe had granted both Houſes to meet and conſult freely, and at great Leiſure; firſt, what were meet for the Furtherance, and Advancement of Gods Service; by whom we had our Beings: And what were alſo neceſſary for the Preſervation of her Majeſties Perſon, by whoſe long Life and Continuance, they were free of all Tyranny, and Subjection of foreign Oppreſſion. And laſtly, to conſult among themſelves, and provide not only what ſhould be good and profitable for their own Eſtates, but to foreſee, how to avoid Things hurtful to the ſame. To which good Ends they acknowledge, by her Majeſties Goodneſs and Permiſſion, their Aſſembly had now tended.

And among other Things, thus the Queen was addreſt concerning their *Aſſociation*, "That they offered to her Majeſty with their whole Hearts their Bodies and Lives to be ſerviceable to the Safety of her Majeſties moſt Royal Perſon; for Defence thereof, and for Revenge of any Act or Imagination againſt her Majeſty, and by a Form of Law had given a Teſtimony to the whole World, how dear the Safety of her Life was to them. And aſſured her, that they were willing, to have extended this Ordinance to a ſtraiter Courſe, as they thought the ſame meet for her Safety, and for terrifying of all Perſons, not well willing to her; if otherwiſe they had not underſtood, that it was her Majeſties Pleaſure, that it ſhould not be extended to any ſtraiter Point than it was. But I refer the whole Speech to be read in the *Appendix*. The Queen herſelf gave a very gracious Anſwer to the Houſe, with a thankful Acknowledgment to both Houſes, which is preſerved by *Hollingſhed*.

Num. LI.

Oration of Sergeant Puckring *to the Queen.*

The Speakers own Speech was different, though grounded upon, and directed by that Form; and conſiſted of divers Heads. He began, "In beſeeching her Highneſs to vouchſafe by his Mouth only, to accept the moſt willing and ready, humble, and hearty Thanks of a Multitude, repreſenting the whole State of the Commons of her Realm, offered unto her in the greateſt Meaſure of their moſt loyal and bounden Duties, that her Highneſs might be beſt pleaſed to comprehend in that moſt rare and ſingular Wiſdom, wherewith the Lord had beautified and bleſſed her.

Thanks for ſummoning them at that Time ſo ſeaſonably.

"And Firſt, For that it had liked her Majeſty with great Care of Mind to take ſo good and ſeaſonable Opportunity for the ſummoning of that Aſſembly: Whereby they had gained the Commodity to deliberate of Matters tending no leſs to the Glory of God, and Preſervation of her Majeſty, than to the common Utility and Welfare of themſelves, and all their Fellow-Subjects. Secondly, for that it had pleaſed her Majeſty to chear them therein with the Preſence of her moſt Royal and gladſome Perſon: Than the which nothing under God could be more comfortable unto them, and without the which all their Conſultations would have been heavy and diſpleaſant. Thirdly, For her Majeſties moſt

" gracious, free, and general Pardon. Whereby they both did feel themſelves delivered of ſundry Pains, that her Highneſs might have juſtly inflicted upon them; and were all moſt graciouſly incited by this her Clemency to a more diligent and careful Obſervation of her Highneſs Laws, than heretofore they had been accuſtomed.

" Howbeit, he beſought her Majeſty to ſuffer him to crave ſome Enlargment in this Behalf, as well for himſelf particularly, as alſo generally for all the whole Company of her *Commons*, that kneeled before her Highneſs. For himſelf he ſaid, who beſide a ready Obedience, faithful Mind, and willing Endeavour, had performed nothing that belonged to his Place. And therefore great Need of her Majeſty for Pardon. Which alſo he moſt earneſtly craved and deſired, and hoped her Majeſty would the rather grant him, becauſe of the Conſcience of his own Inability; and foreſaw and foretold his Wants. ——— And for that whole Company he beſought her Majeſty alſo, to pardon and remit whatſoever had, during that Seſſion of Parliament, fallen out to her Majeſties Diſcontentment: Aſſuring her Highneſs in the Obligation of that Faith and Allegiance which he bare unto her Highneſs, that however ſome Things had eſcaped through humane Infirmity, he had ſeen nothing either wilfully and contemptuouſly committed to any Purpoſe of Offence to her Majeſty. Yea, rather the Truth drew him to report, that they had with all zealous and dutiful Mind toward her Majeſty, and with great Moderation and Wiſdom, Diligence, and Pains-taking, ſpent the whole Seſſion in deviſing Laws, which (if it ſhould like her Majeſty to ratify them) would, as he ſuppoſed, greatly avail towards the Honour and Glory of God, the Safety of her Majeſties moſt Royal Perſon and Eſtate, and the publick Commodity and Benefit of her Highneſs People and Country: The chief and only Mark, whereas all good and Chriſtian Laws ought to aim and level.

" In which Part alſo, he added, that he was moſt humbly to recommend unto her Princely Conſideration and Judgment theſe, whereupon her *Nobles* and *Commons*, had, after great and mature Deliberation, condeſcended. First, An Act for the more Reverend and better Obſervation of the *Lords-Day*. Secondly, An Act deviſed for the Safety of her Majeſties moſt Royal Perſon, and the Preſervation of the Realm in Peace. Alſo, an Act to rid and keep out of her Majeſties Dominion all *Jeſuits*, Seminary Prieſts, *&c.* being utter Enemies to the Realm, Seducers of Souls from the true Faith, and due Obedience, *&c.* and divers other Acts, which to avoid Tediouſneſs he would forbear mentioning Particularities; leaving the ſame to be read unto her Highneſs. The Reaſons moving them he ſuggeſted.

Acts prepared by the Parliament for the Queen.

" Firſt being perſuaded that all good Laws of Men ought to be grounded upon the eternal Law of God, expreſt in the two Tables of the Ten Commandments: And calling to their Remembrance what Godly and Chriſtian Laws her Majeſty had already publiſhed in former Parliaments: Firſt, For the worſhipping of the only true God, and the worſhipping him aright, as himſelf hath preſcribed:

“ ſcribed: And alſo for the Aboliſhing and Puniſhment of all Deviliſh Conjuration, Popiſh Idolatry and Superſtition, fantaſtical Propheſying, and Falſhood in forſwearing: Offences againſt the firſt, ſecond, and third Commandments of the firſt Table. They had thought it their Parts to go forward, and providing for the *Reſt* and right Uſe of the *Sabboth Day*, to provoke her Majeſty to give Law concerning the fourth and laſt Commandment of the ſame Table alſo.

The Bill for the Sabbath daſhed by the Queen.

D'Ews *Journ. p.* 322.

Let me inſert here concerning this Bill, which was intitled, *For the better and more reverend obſerving of the Sabbath-Day*; that it was not ſigned by the Queen. The Account given of it was this. It was argued ſeveral Days. In all which it hardly and difficultly paſſed both Houſes. And at laſt, when it was agreed on by both Houſes, it was daſhed by her Majeſty at the laſt Day of this Parliament, upon that prejudicated Principle (ſaid *D'Ews*, as might be conjectured) that ſhe would ſuffer nothing to be altered in Matter of Religion, or Eccleſiaſtical Government. But now to go on with the Speakers Speech.

Friends of the Scots *Queen.*

Act for the Queens Safety.

“ Secondly, Thoſe her Highneſſes *Nobles* and *Commons*, knowing that next after the Service of God himſelf, the *Honour* of Parent is commanded, being the firſt Precept of the Law, being both the firſt and foremoſt of the ſecond Table, as having a Promiſe annexed to the ſame: And conſidering on the one Side, that all the Bliſs, Joy and Security of this moſt happy Eſtate of the Realm is laid and repoſed, next under God, in the Life and Safety of her Majeſties Royal and moſt precious Perſon (under which he prayed God to grant them many more Years to enjoy) and beholding on the other Side the malicious Plots practiſed, *&c.* abroad and at home, both by the profeſſed Enemies of her Majeſty and the Realm, ——— and alſo by the ambitious Friends and Favourers of ſome that pretended Title to her Majeſties moſt undoubted Title of the Crown, *&c.* they had thought it the moſt bounden Duty of them all, being [the Subjects] of her Majeſty (their natural Prince and common Parent) to honour her Royal Perſon, [and conſulting] the moſt provident Means of Preſervation, that their Wits could deviſe. And that they had therefore laid down a moſt prudent and politick Form of Law, which they entitled, *An Act for the Safety of the Queens Majeſties moſt Royal Perſon, and Continuance of the Realm in Peace*. By the which they did mean to cut off all Hardineſs of any wicked Attempts againſt her Majeſty, by or for any pretended Succeſſor: Shewing thereby their moſt bounden and loyal Duty and Affection toward her Majeſty.

“ Thirdly, That her Majeſties *Nobles* and *Commons* perceiving well that all the Evils intended againſt the Religion of God, the Royal Perſon of her Majeſty, and the Welfare of her Highneſſes Realms and Dominions were meant to be prepared and ſet on Foot by a certain Sort of *Romiſh* Prelates, calling themſelves *Jeſuits* and *Seminary Men*, had thought it therefore moſt expedient to offer unto her Majeſty ſome Mean of a Law for the Baniſhment of theſe Seeds of Sedition forth of her Highneſſes Dominions: Intitled, *An Act againſt Jeſuits, Seminary Prieſts, and ſuch other like diſ-*

“*obedient Perſons.* Beſides divers other Forms of Law for the politick Benefits, *&c.* Which to avoid Tedioufneſs he forbore to recite; leaving the ſame to be read to her Highneſs.

“And then he prayed, that by her Breath the Life of Law might be inſpired unto them. And furthermore, that it might pleaſe her Majeſty to give in Charge to her Judges and Juſtices, that the ſame might diligently be put in Execution; the only Nutriment of all Laws; and without the which they muſt ſtarve at the laſt, what Life of Authority ſoever was at firſt beſtowed upon them.

“And then that her Majeſty, he ſaid, might receive ſome Signification of their grateful Hearts towards her Highneſs, as they had innumerable Marks of her moſt loving and careful Government over them, he was laſtly, with all Humility to preſent her with the Gift of a Subſidy, and two Fifteens and Tenths moſt willingly granted, and as readily agreed upon, by all her Highneſſes *Nobles* and *Commons* in that preſent Parliament: Who ſeeing not only the viperous Natures of ſome unnatural Subjects; who ſtrove to make their Way through the very Belly of the Realm, their own Country and Mother; but alſo the envious Diſpoſition of ſome foreign Popiſh Potentates, that awaited all Advantages to undermine her moſt godly, happy, and bleſſed State; had thought it moſt expedient and neceſſary, that her Majeſty beforehand ſhould have ſome Maſs of Treaſure in a Readineſs againſt all Neceſſities and Events. To the End that by the favourable Protection of God, her Highneſs might the rather thereby prevent the Miſchief of the one Sort, and countermine the Malice of the other.

Foreign Popiſh Potentates.

And then ſubjoyning further theſe very cordial and moſt endearing Words: “And this we offer unto your Majeſty, not as any Sufficiency, to ſerve for ſo changeable and weighty Turns but [as an Earneſt] Penny and Pledge of all the reſt that remaineth with ourſelves. Which alſo together [with our faithful Service] of Body and Mind, to the End of our Lives, we devote and dedicate to your Highneſs: [throughly ſenſible] by a long and aſſured Experience, of your Majeſties moſt frugal and thrifty Diſpoſition and Care, that whatſoever is by us committed into your Highneſſes Hands will be laid out for ourſelves, and laid up in a moſt ſure and ſafe Treaſure for beſt Advantage.

The Speakers Prayer.

And then piouſly concluding all with a Prayer for her: *viz.* “May the King of Kings and God of Glory, that ſo brightly ſhineth and ſheweth himſelf your moſt gracious Governour, as well by the Preſence of his Holy Word, as by the full Fruition of all earthly Bleſſings, aſſiſt your Majeſties Counſils, continue his favourable Spirit with you; eſtabliſh your Royal Seat and Eſtate; preſerve you from all your Enemies; reveal and fruſtrate all their wicked Practices and Devices; and grant you long to live and reign over us and ours here; and take you late, but at length, from us forth of this mortal Kingdom unto himſelf, into his Heavenly Kingdom: There to reign with him in Glory forever. *Amen.*

I have thought fit to ſet down this Speech, to ſhew what a good Underſtanding there was between the Queen and her People, and how dear ſhe was to them; and what a Value they had in thoſe Times for the Religon reſcued from Popery.

A Petition in Behalf of Papiſts to the Parliament.

It muſt be related here, that while this Parliament was buſy upon the Bill againſt Papiſts, and *Jeſuits*, thoſe of that Religion, or the Favourers of them, beſtirred themſelves all that poſſibly they could, againſt its taking Effect, or to render it more favourable towards them. And for that Purpoſe they drew up and preferred a Petition to the Houſe; conſiſting of ten Pages. The Concluſion thereof conſiſted in three Things. "The Firſt was, That they ſhould be deem-
" ed void of Suſpicion for refraining from Publick Places of Prayer:
" Which they do for fear of falling into damnable Sin. The Se-
" cond was, To have pitiful Conſideration of their Calamities. The
" Third was, That they require, not to ſuffer any Law to be
" made, to baniſh the Catholick Prieſts of this Realm.

Richard Shelly *preſents the Petition to the Parliament.*

The Preſenter of this Petition was *Richard Shelly*, Eſq; of *Michael Grove* in *Suſſex*, a Gentleman of an antient Family. Whom it was thought fit afterwards to be taken up. And *Apr.* 9. I find him examined before the Privy Council in theſe Points following; being Matters contained in that Book of Petitions, in ſeveral Pages.

Examined in certain Points.

" Who were the Authors of the Book. In whoſe Names, and for
" whoſe Cauſes are the Contents of the Book to be underſtood?
" Why they do make themſelves to be touched in a Book writ by
" *John Stubbs.*

" Where they do deny the Pope or Cardinals may command a Sub-
" ject to ſeek the Bloud of his Sovereign, they ought more particular-
" ly to anſwer the Opinions in a Book of *Allens* againſt the *Juſtice*
" *of England:* Where he plainly ſetteth down the Popes Authority
" to be ſufficient to depoſe any King or Prince. And ſo conſequently
" the ſame is to be applyed againſt her Majeſty.

p. 5. " To know, who be the Perſons learned in the Catholick Church,
" that ſhould hear the Proofs of the learned Men in the Convocation;
" that theſe Profeſſors of the Catholick Religion may without Of-
" fence of Mortal Sin, reſort to the Churches.

pa. 1. " Who they be that have been famined in a Priſon? [In anſwer
" to which he named one *Temple*, famined in *Bridewel.*] And
" who they be that have been whipped. Who they be that by
" paying xx *l.* a Month, are brought to extream Poverty?

pa. 6. " Who be the Prieſts that have converſed with the Petitioners?
" And have recognized her Majeſty to be lawful Prince; *Tam de Ju-*
" *re quam de Facto.*

pa. 7. " Who be they that came to their Doors, craving Suſtinence
" for their Bodies; and proffering ghoſtly Food to the Petitioners
" Souls?

After *Shellies* Examination upon the Articles above ſpecified before the Lords of the Council; and becauſe the Petition ran ſo loyally to the Queen; they put theſe Words in writing for him to ſubſcribe. viz. "*Whoſoever being a born Subject of this Realm doth allow, that*
" *the Pope hath any Authority to deprive Queen* Elizabeth, *that now*
" *is, of her Eſtate, and Crown, is a Traitor.*

ANNO 1585.

Then follows in the *MS.* written by the Pen of the Lord Treaſurer, "*Richard Shelly* being examined, Whether he will ſubſcribe "the Sentence aforeſaid, or no, he ſaith, that it is very hard for "him to diſcuſs, what Authority the Pope hath. And therefore can "anſwer no further. And then the Counſillors ſubſcribed their "Names, *viz.*

Shelly refuſeth to ſubſcribe a Writing drawn up to try his Loyalty.

"*Before us, Tho. Bromley*, Canc.
F. Knollys.
W. Burghley. *C. Howard.*
R. Leyceſter. *Chr. Hatton.*

Then follow theſe Names of eminent Papiſts ſet down by the ſaid Lord *Burghleys* Hand, and ſeem to be named by *Shelly* in his Examination, as chiefly concerned in drawing up, and preſenting the foreſaid Book, and ſubſcribing it, *viz.* Lord *Vaux*, Sir *John Arundel*, Sir *Thomas Treſham*, Sir *William Catesby*, *Will. Tirwhit*. *Wilford*, *Price*. *Fitton*. This *Richard Shelly* was Nephew of Sir *Richard Shelly*, ſometime Lord Prior of S. *Johns* of *Jeruſalem:* Of whom we have ſaid many Things before.

Petitioners.

The Conſideration of *Mary* Queen of *Scots* came before the Houſe of Parlament: And apprehending ſhe was concerned in the dangerous Conſpiracies with *Spain* and the Pope and others againſt the Queen and Kingdom, moved for the taking her off: As the ſureſt Way to prevent imminent Dangers. And a Diſcourſe came out now, concerning the Lawfulneſs of putting her to Death. It conſiſted of two or three Sheets of Paper. The Caſe there put is this:

The Parliament conſult concerning the Scots *Queen.*

"A Sovereign Prince, acknowledging no Superior, in Diſtreſs at "home, flyeth to the Kingdom of his Confederate, being likewiſe a "Sovereign Prince: And is by him received into Protection; yet "kept in ſafe Cuſtody, as having been a Competitor afore of that "Kingdom, where he practiſed by open Fact againſt the Life and "the Kingdom of that Prince; whether may ſuch the Practiſer, be "therefore juſtly put to Death. The Diſcourſe is in *Latin*.

This Queen being now at *Tutbury*, was under the Cuſtody of Sir *Amias Paulet*: Who was very careful and watchful of her. But being often troubled with the Gout, and ſo might not perſonally be always preſent in his Charge; (which was now very earneſtly required of him) he ſent a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, that he might be permitted to take a certain faithful Perſon whom he well knew and his Friend, to ſuppy his Place; and to be always with ſome Servants about him. He was tender in propounding this Matter: But the Reaſon of it was, as he wrote, his Gout; conſidering the Nature of that Diſeaſe, he muſt look for freſh Aſſaults in the accuſtomed Seaſon. At which Time the Importance of this Service, he ſaid, required the Aſſiſtance of ſome honeſt and faithful Gentleman; which no doubt might be eaſily found both in the Court and in the Country. But the Reſolutions at the Court were not always ſpeedy, and that his Aſſiſtance might be found wanting before ſuch an one came; he preſuming upon his Lordſhips Favour; recommended one Mr. *Colles*, who would be content to come thither unto him; a Gentleman,

She is under the Cuſtody of Sir Amias Pawlet.

known to the Treaſurer for his good Diſcretion, and ſo well known to him [*Paulet*] that he would anſwer for his Fidelity, and that he was ſufficient to take the Charge, during his Sickneſs. He ſeemed the more earneſt for the Aſſiſtance of this Gentleman, rather than ſome Perſon to be ſent from the Court, uſing theſe Words to the Lord to whom he wrote, “ That he feared there would be ſome Cunning in the “ Choice of his Supply, if he ſhould come from thence, meaning ſome “ Friends that Queen had then at the Court. And ſo left it to his “ Lordſhip to make the Motion as he ſhould find it reaſonable and Num.LII. “ likely. But the whole Letter I repoſit in the *Appendix:* Knowing that theſe State-Letters are valuable, and tend much to let into a true Knowledge of Matters tranſacted.

The Queens Concerns at the taking of Antwerp.

The *Spanyard* had now gotten Succeſs againſt the great and flouriſhing City of *Antwerp.* It was yielded unto the Prince of *Parma,* Governour of the *Netherlands,* by ſome Treachery of certain of that Place; particularly by S. *Aldegonde,* a Burgomaſter there. At which the Queen was ſo concerned, that ſhe preſently took upon her the Protection of the *States*; (which ſhe was long unwilling to do;) obſerving well in how dangerous a Caſe ſhe and her Kingdoms were hereby: Knowing alſo whatever Conditions were made between the *Spanyards* and that City, how little Truſt was to be given thereunto. And how awakened ſhe was hereby may appear by the *Inſtructions* given her Ambaſſador, *Daviſon,* diſpatched now to the *United States.* And not being inſerted, as I find, in any of our Hiſtories, may well deſerve to be here entered, being an Original: And drawn up, I ſuppoſe, by the Lord *Burghley,* it being the Hand of his Secretary, *Mainard.* All that *Camden* in his Hiſtory of Queen *Elizabeth,* writes of this Matter, was, That *Antwerp* being cloſely preſt by the Prince of *Parma,* and the Queen, for raiſing the Siege, was ſending 4000 Men, they ſurrendred: But mentioneth not a Word of an Agent ſent to the *States* upon the Loſs of *Antwerp*; but only that ſoon afterwards ſhe took the States into her Protection.

The Queens Fear and Care of the States.

She prefaced her *Inſtructions* with her Fears of ſome Alteration in the reſt of thoſe *United Provinces* upon the yielding of *Antwerp:* And eſpecially ſhe was apprehenſive of *Zeeland,* where *Aldegonde* was in moſt Credit: and doing all he could to withdraw them from depending upon her Favour and Aſſiſtance. That ſhe ſent him, her Ambaſſador thither, as well to comfort ſuch as had received Diſcouragement by the Loſs of that Place, as alſo to give Countenance againſt ſuch Perſons, as the ſaid S. *Aldegonde* and his Aſſociates might uſe, to draw the People to ſubject themſelves under the King of *Spains* Obedience, without ſufficient Caution for the Preſervation of Religion, and their Liberties, to be free from the Government of Strangers. Without the Terms of which Security ſome had treacherouſly delivered up that City. Then follow the Inſtructions given *Daviſon,* when he ſhould have Acceſs to the *States*; to let them underſtand, how ſorry ſhe was for the Loſs of the ſaid Town. And that the Care ſhe took for the Preſervation thereof was not accompanied with thoſe good Effects ſhe deſired. But I leave the Whole to Numb. LIII. the Reader; which will open much of the Affairs between thoſe Countries and the Queen. At the ſame Time ſhe gave them Notice,

tice, that for lack of ſome good Head and Director, the Government grew into Contempt, ſhe ſent them over the Earl of *Leiceſter*, a Perſon of Nobility, to aſſiſt them with Advice and Authority, for the better Direction both of their Civil and Martial Cauſes, with 5000 Foot and 1000 Horſe with him.

A Book ſet forth of the yielding up of Antwerp.

I only add, That upon this Loſs of *Antwerp*, a Book was ſet forth Printed at *Amſterdam*, called, *A true Report of the yielding up of the City of* Antwerp *unto the Prince of* Parma: Which was on the 7th *of Auguſt laſt paſt* 1585. On which Day he was received with a Gariſon of Soldiers into the ſaid City by the ſaid Inhabitants with great Pomp and Triumph. Whereunto are adjoined the Articles of Agreement ſent before by the Prince of *Parma* to the Burgomaſter. The Book ſhewed at large, how that Prince was received with all the Pomp the Citizens could deviſe: Having vowed to maintain the Articles he ſent them, and no Violence to be offered to them. There were Bonfires and ringing of Bells. But the Writer addeth, "What treacherous Dealing was to be expected at the Hand of "the *Spanyard*, I fear themſelves will find ſhortly. That all theſe "Offers are but in Truth Words, meaning nothing leſs than the "Performance of the ſame.

CHAP. XXV.

The Queen endeavours a League between the King of Scots *and Her. Occurrences in* Scotland. *Inſtructions to her Ambaſſadors ſent to that King. The* French *Ambaſſadors Interceſſion for the* Scots *Queen. Her Letter to the Lord Treaſurer. A diligent Search at the Sea-Ports for dangerous Perſons, now coming into the Realm. Letters from the Privy Council. Young Gentlemen to be trained in the Muſters: And made Officers. Colleges for Popiſh Seminaries: Dr.* Bilſon *concerning them.* Alfield *arrained for bringing in Dr.* Allens *Book: Some Contents of that Book.* John Preſtal, *a Conjurer:* Philip *Earl of* Arundel; Edmund Nevyl, *alias Lord* Latymer. *Priſoners in the* Tower; *their Caſe and Letters.* Robert Turner, *Profeſſor of Divinity in* Ingolſtade. *His Letters to Cardinal* Allen: *And to* Hilliard.

A faſt Friendſhip to be maintained with the King of Scots.

TO add a few more Notices concerning Matters of State. It was now the general Senſe of the Court, to keep a ſtrict Friendſhip with the King of *Scots*. And ſo was the particular Judgment of that wiſe and great Counſillor, the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. And for the faſter Ty of that Prince to this

The Lord Treaſurers Advice therein, falſified.

this Crown, he adviſed it ſhould be done by large Liberality, both to that King and to ſome of the great Men about him; though ſuch Back Friends had that worthy Stateſman, that they had blown about Reports of him to the quite contrary. And this ſpread as far as *Scotland*, even to the King himſelf. Which not long after coming to that Lords Ears, by ſome Letters, he thus in ſome Concern declared himſelf in a private Letter to a Friend, concerning this malicious Lie: "That as he was uſed here for Matters at home, ſo but the Day before he ſaw a Letter out of *Scotland*, declaring, that the King was enformed from this Court, that he had no greater Enemy in this [*Engliſh*] Court, than he: And the like was written to the Maſter of *Grey*, of him." And then that Lord proceeded in his own Vindication againſt this vile falſe Report, "If you knew, how earneſt a Courſe I hold with her Majeſty, both privately or openly, for her to retain the King of *Scots* with Friendſhip and Liberality; yea, and to retain the Maſter of *Grey*, and the Juſtice *Clerke* [two great Men near that King] with ſome Rewards, to continue their Offices (which indeed were to ſome known to be very good) you would think there were no more ſhameful Lies made by *Satan* himſelf, than theſe be." And then that Lord concluded his Letter with this Reſentment, "That finding himſelf thus maliciouſly bitten with the Tongues and Letters of Courtiers here, if God did not comfort him, he had Cauſe to fear murthering Hands, or poiſoning Spirits. But God, ſaith he, is my Keeper.

But excuſing my inſerting this more private Matter falling in the Way, I proceed in this *Scotch* Affair.

Wotton *Ambaſſador to the King of* Scots.

A yearly Penſion to that King.

The Queens Ambaſſador now in *Scotland*, was Sir *Edward Wotton*: Who had Inſtructions of Matters to be ſpoken to the King of *Scots*. And what Anſwer the ſaid King made him, the Letters he had ſent to the Secretary ſhewed: Which Matter ſeemed chiefly to be concerning a Penſion to be granted him by the Queen, in order to the entring into a League with him, and to keep all fair that Way. For other Letters by *Wotton*, wrote to the Lord Treaſurer, imported, That as her Majeſty had willed him, before he ſhould ſpeak to his Majeſty touching the Queens Offer of 4000 *l.* by the Year, to feel upon that Point the Maſter of *Grays* Mind. He had done ſo, and the ſaid *Gray* aſſured him the King would take it in very ill Part; ſince it had already been told him, that it ſhould be 5000 *l. Engliſh*. He added, That his Lordſhip in his great Wiſdom was beſt hable to conſider, what in this Caſe was fitteſt to be done; and ſo to adviſe her Majeſty. And that he for his Part did long to receive from his Lordſhip ſome Inſtructions. And ſo offering his Lordſhip his beſt Service, took his Leave. From *Edenburgh*, *ult.* of *May*, 1585.

Occurrencies in Scotland.

By another Gentleman, *Henry Woodrington*, from *Barwick*, the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, in *December*, had an Account of the then preſent Affairs of the ſaid Kingdom of *Scotland*, after great Hubbubs and Diſturbances there. That ſuch Occurrences as he was credibly informed of out of *Scotland*, upon the opening of a Parlament, he thought good to ſignify the ſame to his Lordſhip. Which were as follow: " The 4th of this preſent the King paſſed into " the great Hall in the Caſtle at *Litch*; accompanied with ſuch a " Number of Nobility, as the like had not been ſince King *James* " the Firſt's Days: Where the Parlament was fenced; the Lords " of the Articles choſen; and all other Solemnities uſed, according " to the Cuſtom. Which Parlament began the 6th of this Inſtant.

A Parlament there.

" The Duke of *Lenox* bore the Crown. The Earl of *Huntley* " his Scepter. The Earl of *Athol* his Sword.

The Kings Speech.

" The King made an Oration, expreſſing in Preſence of his Nobility, how many Alterations and Changes had been, ſince the " Beginning of his Reign, during his Minority, in his Realm; and " how miraculouſly God had preſerved him, and his Eſtate unto " that preſent Time, not without expected Subverſion; as daily by " civil Seditions he was in danger of. And now underſtanding, that " upright Government was the Means to quench the paſſed Dangers, " he would determine with himſelf to follow that Life, that Concord and Obedience might follow thereupon without Partiality. " And whereas the Eſtate and Country theſe many Years by paſt, " hath been ſo troubled by Civil Diſſenſions, that the Noblemen, " who were lately diſtreſſed, have by their good and peaceable Behaviour declared their good Affection to his Majeſty's Welfare and " Service: So that he clearly underſtandeth their Adverſaries to " have reported otherwiſe of them, than they have merited; therefore his Highneſs is not only minded to ſettle his Eſtate, and the " Eſtate of his Country; but alſo to extend his Favour and Goodwill towards them in particular; and to reſtore them to their " Livings, Honours, Offices and Goods, and all that belonged unto " them, as if they had never been forfeited, nor declared Rebels.

" The Lords of the Articles their Names, of the Eccleſiaſtical " State, are theſe.

Biſhops.

The Biſhop of St. *Androes*, *Conſtine*.
The Biſhop of *Brechin*, *Cambel*.
The Biſhop of *Dunkeld*, *Rollocke*.
The Biſhop of *Orkney*, *Bodwale*.
The Biſhop of *Glaſcoe*, *Montgomerie*.

Abbots.

The Abbot of *Dunfermiling*, Maſter of *Grey*.
The Abbot of *Newbottle*, *Ker*.
The Prior of *Pluſcardin*, *Seton*; with ſome others.

Temporal Lords.

The Lord *Sincler*, the Lord of *Karkathe*, the Lord *Olyphante*, with ſome others.

Earls.

Of *Athel*, *Huntley*, with ſome others of that Rank. And the ſundry Commiſſioners of the Boroughs, the third Eſtate.

The Fourm of the Noblemens Reſtitution, that were baniſhed, and their Adherents, is in this Sort, viz.

"That all Things ſince the King's Coronation, that have happened by Civil Sedition, ſhall be annulled and put out of Memory, as if ſuch a Thing had never been. So that all Men ſhall be reſtored into that Place as they were at that Time.

"The King gave Commiſſion to the Lord *Hamilton*, and the Earl of *Huntly*, to purſue and apprehend the late Earl of *Arran*. Who made a ſecret Journey to that Effect; and came in the Night to that Part, where he was lying in his Ship, beſide the Town of *Ayre*. But he perceiving that, eſcaped out of his Ship into a ſmall Pink, or Pinnace; and ſo paſt to the Sea. They cauſed to take his Ship; and have ſent in her XXIIII to chaſe him. For there is but five with him in the Pinnace, beſide the Mariners. He hath ſtolen away, as is ſaid, of his Majeſties Jewels, to the Value of 200,000 Crowns. His Wife is ſtill in Priſon in *Blackneſs*, with the univerſal Hatred of the People; and as yet uncertain what ſhall become of her.

"The Earls of *Montros* and *Crayford* are ſtill kept ſtraitly in *Kinſalle*. Againſt whom it is thought ſome Order ſhall be taken after this Parlament.

"The Lord *Hamilton* is Captain of *Dunbarton*, and Provoſt of *Glaſco*. *Colding Knowles*, Captain of *Edenburgh* Caſtle. Juſtice *Clark*, Captain of *Blackneſs*. The Earl of *Gozings* Lady and Children ſhall be reſtored to their Living, Honour and Eſtate. The Earl of *Angus* ſhall have *Dawkeneaſe* and *Aberdour*; and ſhall pay the King 10000 Mar-Scots. The Matter between him and the Lord *Maxwell* for the Earl of *Morton*, is referred to Friends. The Maſter of *Glames* is made chief Treaſurer, and Captain of his Guard. The Earl of *Athol* Provoſt and Sheriff of St. *Johnſton*'s and *Perth*, until the young Earl of *Goury* come to full Age. And this is the State of the Country at this preſent. *Barwick*, the 8th of *Decemb.* 1585.

Your Honours moſt humbly,

Hen. Woodrington.

Randolph *ſent Ambaſſador to* Scotland.

The Queen being minded to create and keep up a good Underſtanding between the King of *Scots* and herſelf, ſent *Randolph*, another Ambaſſador this Year to him. The Particulars of his Meſſage, I leave to be read, taken from a ſhort Abſtract of his Inſtructions, from his own Pen, *viz.*

"Her Majeſties Joy to hear of the King's good Acceptation of the Noblemens Obedience, that were in *England*; reported both by Mr. *William Knowles*, and Mr. *Keethe*. [Who it ſeems from that King had brought ſuch Word to her.]

"2. Her Majeſties Affection towards the King; and Care, that nothing ſhall be attempted againſt him with her Will, that may be hurtful unto him.

“ 3. The League [between her and the King] hindred by the
“ Death of the Lord *Ruſſel*, [treacherouſly ſlain by the *Scots*, upon
“ the Borders, at a Treaty between them and the *Engliſh*, the
“ Earl of *Arran*, being the chief Inſtrument:] Now to be renewed
“ being the Special Cauſe of his Coming.

“ 4. The Fear her Majeſty hath, leſt the King ſhould give ear
“ to the League in *France* againſt the Goſpel. *Carſolles*, a dangerous
“ Partie; and full of Practices. *Mortons* Attempt not to be ſuffered
“ uncorrected. Neceſſary Concurrence of both the Princes,
“ to ſuppreſs the Danger that may fall out in both the Realms by
“ the Practice of Papiſts.

“ 5. That ſomewhat be done before the League, for Satisfaction of
“ the ſhameful Murther of the Lord *Ruſſel*. The Delivery of
“ *Pharnihurſt*, [in that treacherous Fact of the *Scots*, againſt the
“ ſaid *Ruſſel*] or ſuch as were of Counſil with him.

“ 6. The League being agreed upon, ſome Perſons of Quality
“ of both the Realms, to meet at *Barwick*.

“ 7. Aſſurance to be made of a yearly *Benevolence*; *at her Majeſties
“ Hands*. [*Support*, ſo writ at the firſt; but that croſſed
out, and *Benevolence*, &c. added by another Hand.]

“ 8. Find, before the offer of a Support, whether the King's
“ Mind be alienated by the *French* Kings Perſuaſion, or no.

“ 9. Deal roundly in proſecuting of *Arran*.

“ 10. *Holt* and *Brereton*, Practiſers againſt both the Realms, to
“ be delivered or baniſhed out of his Majeſties Country.

“ 11. Nothing ſhall be done prejudicial to the King's Title: But
“ the ſame to paſs by private Aſſurance from her Majeſty to the
“ King.

“ 12. Orders for Redreſs upon the Borders. And Cauſes put in
“ a readineſs againſt the Commiſſioners Meeting.

And then follow in the ſame Paper,

Anno 1585. *Articles offered to the King*, March 11. *in the Name of her Majeſty.*

“ 1. How neceſſary it is, their Majeſties to have Intercourſe by
“ writing between themſelves, or their Secretaries, and Perſonages
“ of greateſt Credit about them; until their Majeſties appoint Ambaſſadors
“ to remain in each others Countries; to entertain mutual
“ Amity; and do all good Offices of Love between their Majeſties.

“ 2. Reconciliation of Noblemen for their Particularities; and
“ ending Feuds between the Subjects.

“ 3. The League being concluded, Perſons of Quality of both
“ Realms to meet at *Barwick*, to confirm the ſame.

“ 4. The Delivery of *Phernihurſt*, or ſuch, or ſome of thoſe that
“ were of Counſil of the Lord *Ruſſels* Death.

“ 5. Beware of the dangerous Practices of *Curſolls*; put away by
“ *Malvaſier* [the *French* Ambaſſador] for the ſame.

“ 6. *Holt* to be delivered, or ſent out of the Country.

“ 7. Orders for Redreſs upon the Borders. Speedy Juſtice, the
“ Wardens oft to meet, *&c.*

The French *King interceeds by his Ambaſſador for the* Scots *Queen.*

The *French* Ambaſſador, *Mauveſier*, was now employed by his King, in Behalf of the *Scots* Queens Deliverance. She alſo now made her Interceſſion at the *Engliſh* Court, with the Lord Treaſurer, to ſecond the ſaid Ambaſſadors Endeavour, by a Letter in *French* to him written from *Sheffield*, where ſhe was in Durance: Importing, "That ſhe had written a few Days before to the Queen, to teſtify the Sincerity of her Intention to the Queen; and the great Need ſhe was in of having her Requeſt granted by her Majeſty. And that ſhe thought fit to pray him to be favourable to her in this Affair. And that ſhe had required that Ambaſſador of the moſt Chriſtian King, to communicate the whole Matter to him; and to obtain his Aid and Support to the ſaid Queen, his Siſter. She would not trouble him with long Diſcourſe; unleſs only to pray him to have regard of her long Captivity; and leaving it to his Wiſdom to judge eaſily, how ſhe deſerved not to be ſo ſuſpected as ſhe was." But this being the Letter of ſo remarkable as well as unhappy a Queen in this Reign, I have placed in the *Appendix*, as I tranſcribed it from the Original.

See this Letter at Numb. XLI.

The Lords Letters to ſearch for dangerous Perſons coming over by Sea.

It was high Time for ſuch Laws to be made as the Parliament lately had done, againſt *Seminaries* and others diſaffected, privily coming into the Realm. For I find the Lords in the Month of *May* this Year, iſſuing out their Letters for the ſearching for Perſons coming into the Realm: Occaſioned by an Information concerning ſome Perſons that were to be ſent over, to practice ſome great Miſchief. The Letter was as follows.

"After our hartie Commendations. For as much, as it is underſtood, that certain wicked Perſons in ſundry Parts on the other ſide of the Seas, have Intention to continue their Deviliſh Malice againſt her Majeſty and this Realm; and mean to come ſecretly into the Realm in covert Sort, with ſome Purpoſe to attempt ſome great Miſchief: Which nevertheleſs we hope God will of his Goodneſs withſtand. We have for this Purpoſe thought it very neceſſary, that good Regard be had in every Port, and other Creeks of the Sea, as well in that Country, as in other; where Perſons, either Strangers or *Engliſh*, ſhall ſeek to Land; and of what Condition they are, ſo as none be ſuffered to come on Land in any Port or Creek, that be not notorious Merchants, and thoſe of honeſt and ſound Condition; or otherwiſe Perſons exerciſing Fiſhing. For which Purpoſe we have made Choice of you, as Perſons dwelling near to the Sea-Coaſt. Requiring you, when theſe our Letters ſhall firſt come to you, to impart them to ſuch of the others next unto you: And thereupon, according to your Dwellings, to join two or three together; and with that Speed you can, to make Choice of ſome ſpecial, honeſt Perſons, that either dwell within any the Port Towns, or upon any Creek, where Landing may be, or near to the ſame; and to direct them daily to ſee what Perſons ſhall come in any Veſſels, either into any Port, or Creek near to the ſame. And to ſuffer none to come on Land, until they be ſeen, ſearched, and duly examined of what Condition they are, and for what Purpoſe any of them do come.

ANNO 1585.

" And if any ſhall appear worthy of Suſpicion, as being not a " known honeſt Merchant, or trading in Fiſhing, or that ſhall not " ſhew a juſt Cauſe of coming hither, void of Suſpicion; the ſame " to be ſtayed and kept either on Ship-board, or in ſome Houſe in " Safety, until you or ſome of you, may be certified from ſome as " you have deputed, of the Condition of the Party ſo ſtayed. And " thereupon alſo we deſire you to advertiſe us: That upon further " Conſideration of the Matter we may direct our Opinions, what " ſhall be done with ſuch Perſons.

" We wiſh, that you would make Choice of ſuch Perſons to look " to this Charge in every Port or Creek, as are known to be well " affected in Matter of Religion. And for that the Searchers and " all Officers of the Cuſtom-Houſes, and their Deputies, in all the " Ports within that County ſhall alſo do their Duties herein.

" I, the Treaſurer, do ſend my ſeveral Letters to all the Officers " in every ſuch Port, to charge them to uſe themſelves in this Service as you ſhall direct them; upon pain of loſs of their Offices, " and to be ſtraitly puniſhed according to their Deſerts.

" We do further conſider, that kind of lewd Perſons, as we mean " to have apprehended and ſtaid, hearing of this Order taken for " Search of all Veſſels, coming to any Ports or uſual Creeks, will, " to avoid their Apprehenſion, procure the Paſſage Boats, wherein " they ſhall be, to ſet them a land in ſome Places upon the Coaſts, " not being Ports, nor Creeks: And ſo the ſame Perſons will ſecretly repair by Night further off into the Land; and ſo ſeek to " eſcape from Search. Wherefore we require your Lordſhip and " the reſt, to conſider among yourſelves, how this may be remedied. " Which in our Opinion cannot be better met withal, than that in " ſuch Places, where it may be thought likely or probable, that any " ſuch Perſons may be ſet on Land, diſtant from any Port or Creek, " or from any Town, that there be a Watch ſet; to be made of " ſome honeſt People of the Towns next adjoining. Whom we " would have to be appointed to watch thoſe Parts of the Sea-Coaſt, now theſe Summer Nights. Directing them how to uſe " themſelves in their Watches ſecretly, to apprehend any Perſons " that ſhall be ſet on land in that ſuſpicious Sort; and to bring the " ſame to ſuch Places, as you ſhall direct them; until they may be " ſearched and examined; and as yourſelves thereof advertiſed, as " in the other Caſes above mentioned, we have preſcribed.

Lord Treaſurer to the Officers of the Ports on the ſame occaſion.

The Lord Treaſurers Letter ſpecified above, will not be amiſs to be added, further to illuſtrate this Matter ſo carefully ſearched into: Which probably concerned the Queens Life. It was directed to the Officers of the Ports to this Purport: " That whereas the Lords " of the Council had by her Majeſties Commandment, directed " their Letters to certain ſpecial Perſons in the Country of the Maritime Counties of this Realm, to have a Care for examining of all " ſuch Perſons as ſhould come into this Realm at any Port or Creek " of the ſame, being not known to be notorious Merchants, or " Fiſhermen: For that her Majeſty was given to underſtand, that " divers bad Perſons had, and did purpoſe to come in for bad and " lewd Purpoſes: To which Perſons, as the Lords had, to the Ef-

“fect aforeſaid, directed their Letters, with Authority given unto them to appoint in every Port, Creek, or other Place, ſuch Perſons, as they ſhould think fit to have the daily viewing of ſuch Perſons, as ſhould arrive; and ſhould advertiſe them thereof, upon any Occaſion of Suſpicion, or their Apprehenſion of any ſuch bad Perſons; and to proceed with them according to their Directions: So alſo do I require you to be aiding and aſſiſting herein, as you ſhall be required, as you will anſwer for the contrary at your uttermoſt Peril.”

How juſtly grounded this Suſpicion was, our Hiſtorian informeth us: Namely, that about this Time *Savage* was ſent to aſſaſſinate the Queen, and that *Throgmorton*, *Paget*, and other Refugees were creeping into *England*; joining with the *Guiſes* in the Holy League, and by bringing in War into this Kingdom to depoſe or murder Queen *Elizabeth*, and to place *Mary* the *Scots* Queen in her Room.

Young Gentlemen to be employed in Muſters.

And foreſeeing how neceſſary it was to be ready againſt any Invaſion, general Muſters were made. And the Council in this Month of *May* ſent abroad their Letters, for employing young Gentlemen in thoſe Muſters in the ſeveral, or in ſome of the Counties more eſpecially. Which Letters ran to this Tenor: “That whereas at the laſt Year's Training of Soldiers in that County, they that were appointed principal Captains, made Choice of ſundry Perſons, to be their petty Captains or Lieutenants, and other neceſſary Officers of their Bands in Martial Service; whereof ſome were meer Strangers in that Country: Whereby now upon the like occaſion of Service to be renewed, it might happen, that ſome of them ſhould not be found ready to ſupply their former Places: It was therefore thought fit, that three or four at the leaſt of the Commiſſioners of the Muſters, together with the former principal Captains of each Diviſion within that County, ſhould aſſemble themſelves together, and conſider of all ſuch young Gentlemen, being the Sons of Men of Hability, as were within each of the ſaid Diviſions, as might be thought meet to ſupply the former Places of petty Captains and other Officers in the Bands; and to appoint the moſt ſufficient of them, according to their Habilities, to take Charge of thoſe neceſſary Offices, within and under every Captains Charge; that is, ſo as they were not retained to ſerve any of them, as being of her Majeſties Privy Council. That hereby both the ſaid young Gentlemen might be trained and exerciſed in the Service of the Country; and ſo alſo as in Time coming the Country might not be deſtitute of towardly Men to ſerve in ſuch Places.”

Colleges for Seminaries.

Something now concerning theſe buiſy *Engliſh* Emiſſaries of *Rome*, ſo dangerous to the *Engliſh* Common Weal. Colleges were erected for them at *Rome* and *Rheimes*. Concerning which *Bilſon*, Warden of *Wincheſter* College, takes this Notice. That they were ſet up at the Popes Charge, (which they call *Seminariec*) with Purpoſe to draw thither the beſt Wits out of *England*, as well from both the Univerſities, as from other Grammar Schools: There to train them to their Fancies and Factions: And then to direct them back into this Realm, for the reconciling of poor Souls, as they ſay, to the Catholick Church: Or in truer Terms (ſaith that learned Man,) for the perverting of ſimple and ignorant Perſons from the Duty which they owed to God and the Queen. This Attempt being truly lookt into (ſaith the ſame Author) by the Queen and others of the Queens Privy Council, they thought very dangerous, and pernicious to the Realm; that the Capital Envyer of this State, Diſturber of the Queens Peace, and purſuer of her Perſon, ſhould allure and abuſe ſo great a Number of her Subjects with a Shew of Liberality; and have them in ſuch Bondage by the Rules of their Society; that they muſt obey the Will of their Superior (the Popes Agent among them) no otherwiſe than they would the Voice of Chriſt from Heaven. For ſo themſelves profeſs. Thereupon Proclamation was given out, that none ſhould depart the Realm without Licence; and a Time prefixed for thoſe that were abroad to return home, upon ſome Pain there ſpecified. And further Threats, if the Queen were thereunto provoked.

True Difference between Chriſtian Subjects and unchriſtian Rebels. *Pref. to the Queen.*

As Campion *wrote in his ſecond Article.*

The Guiders of theſe ungodly Societies, inſtead of obeying the Queens Edict, fell to defend their own Act, in departing this Land and reſorting to *Rome*; and alſo the Popes Intent in erecting thoſe *Seminaries*, and appointing a Number of them to be ſent into *England*, to reduce the Realm to *Romiſh* Obedience; which they call the *Faith of their Fathers*, in a Book intitled, *An Apology and true Declaration of the Inſtitution and Endeavour of the two* Engliſh *Colleges*. Whereof Dr. *Allen* was the Author. Which received a learned Anſwer this Year by the aboveſaid Dr. *Thomas Bilſon*, Warden of *Wincheſter* College.

Among other *Jeſuits* now in *Newgate*, and brought to their Trial, one of them was *Hawfield*, or *Alfield*. The chief Crime laid againſt him was, the bringing into the Realm Dr. *Allens* Book, writ in Defence of the *Engliſh* Catholicks. Which was full of very bold Accuſations of our Laws, and a Vindication of ſome Traitors that had been executed; as *Campion* and others. The Proceſs of the Trial of that Man I ſhall ſet down as I find it in an Authentick Manuſcript.

Hawfield *a* Jeſuit, *brings in* Dr. Allens *Book.*

The Effect and Subſtance of the Matter, that was done and ſpoken at the Arraignment of Tho. Alfield, *a Jeſuit Prieſt, at* Newgate, *upon* Monday, *the* 3d *of* July, 1585.

Firſt, He and his Fellows were brought from *Newgate*, and placed at the Bar. My Lord Maior, my Lord *Buckhurſt*, the Maſter of the Rolls, my Lord *Anderſon*, Mr. *Sackforth*, Sir *Rowland Haywood*, Mr. *Owen*, Mr. *Tong*, and the Recorder. Theſe ſate upon the Bench. Mr. Town Clerk read the Commiſſion of *Oyer and Terminer*. After this a Subſtantial Jury of the beſt Commoners, to the Number of Twenty, or thereabouts, ſworn to enquire, *&c.* Then the Recorder gave the Special Charge, that belonged to the Commiſſion. After that done, the Inqueſt of Enquiry went up into the Counſil Chamber at the Seſſions Hall, *&c.* *Alfields* Indictment was read. He was demanded, whether he was guilty of the Matter contained in that Indictment. To which he would make no Anſwer; and

His Arraignment at the Bar.

ANNO 1585. and prayed, that he might be heard ſpeak. And thereupon he uſed a certain frivolous Speech, containing no Matter. The Effect whereof was, That the Cauſe in Queſtion was ſuch, that the ſame ought to be tried before learned Men in Divinity; and not before Laymen. And after, with much ado, he pleaded, *Not Guilty.* And being asked, How he would be tried; and alſo being told, he ought to be tried by God and the Countrey; he made a long Stay; and ſaid, that it was no Reaſon, that twelve ignorant Men ſhould try a Matter of Religion; but that it ought to be tried by learned Men. And then was it told him, That a Matter in Fact was laid to his Charge; *viz.* For bringing into the Realm, and uttering of a certain ſlanderous and leud Book againſt her Majeſty and the Realm, deviſed by one Dr. *Allen.*

Allens *Book vindicated.* To which *Alſield* anſwered; and ſaid expreſly, that the ſame Book was a Loyal Book, a lawful Book, a good and a true Book; and that the ſame was printed in *Paris*, under the King's Privilege there; and was allowed for a good and a lawful Book throughout all the Univerſities in *Chriſtendom* beyond the Seas: And that it touched nothing but Matter of Religion. And being asked, whether it were a Matter of Religion, that the Pope hath Authority to deprive the Queen of *England*; he anſwered, that in generality, it was a Matter of Religion, that the Pope had Authority to deprive any King, if he ſee Cauſe. For that the Pope was a Regal King and Prince; and that he might take Arms in Hand, as well as other Kings might do. It was anſwered him, that the Court ſet not to try Matters of Religion, but a Matter *de Facto.* That is, Whether he brought the ſaid ſlanderous Books into the Realm; and whether he had diſperſed them. To the which he anſwered, that he had brought 5 or 600 of the ſame Books into the Realm; and that he had diſperſed them, as he ſaw Occaſion. And further, he affirmed expreſly, that the Book was a good Book and lawful; he declared, as he had before done, how the ſame was allowed, *&c.*

And after he was urged to put himſelf upon his Trial; and was put in Remembrance, what the Puniſhment of the Law was, if Judgment were given againſt him, *De pain* [*peine*] *fort & dure.* And thereupon it was asked him, How he would be tried; and he anſwered, *By God and the Country*, &c.

The Indictment was read. The which contained divers falſe, lewd and ſlanderous Parts of Dr. *Allens* Book: Tending plainly by expreſs Words, not only the Treaſons, but moſt manifeſt and ſhameful Slanders againſt her Majeſty. Yet did *Alſield* not ſtick to ſay, that it touched not the Queen any more, than it did the *French* King, or *Spaniſh* King. He travailed very much to make the Commiſſioners believe, that they underſtood not that ſlanderous Book. Adding this withal, that the ſame Book was eſpecially deviſed and written by Dr. *Allen*, to anſwer him, who had written the Book of *Juſtice* of *England*; and not to ſlander the Queen, *&c.*

Found guilty. There was delivered to the Jury one of the Books, to compare the Words of the Indictment with the Book, and the Examination: And finding them to agree, and hearing him ſo ſtoutly to juſtify the ſame to be a loyal Book; they returned after a competent Time to the Bar. They were then asked, whether he were guilty of the Offence that was contained in the Indictment. The Foreman anſwered, *Guilty*.

The Recorders Speech to the Priſoner.

He then pleaded a Pardon. Then his Pardon was read. And it was found, that his Offence was excepted out of the Pardon. Then the Recorder called him forth, and recited the Effect of the Indictment; and how that he was found *Guilty*; and told him, that he wondred, that his Father in King *Henries* Days, being an Uſher of *Eaton*, and of a good Religion, and had brought up many learned Divines, and others that ſerved the Queen in Temporal Cauſes; where of Hundreds the Recorder himſelf was one of the meaneſt (as he modeſtly ſaid.) And that the ſame Priſoner paſt through the ſame College, and ſo to the *King*'s College; being both of the Queens Highneſs Foundation; and now had ſo unnaturally and beaſtly behaved himſelf: Though he was the firſt, that ever was arraigned of Felony, of any that ever paſt through thoſe Colleges, by the Space of theſe 50 Years and more.

Then further, ſaid the Recorder, Ye know that Chriſt paid Tribute to *Cæſar*, and commanded, that *Cæſar* ſhould be obeyed. And that each Man ſhould yield to *Cæſar* his Duties: And that St. *Paul* in the End of the *Acts* was accuſed for Religion by the *Jews*; and it was told him, that he ſhould be ſent to *Jeruſalem*, to be tried before the Prieſt there. And he anſwered, that he ſtood before the Tribunal or Judgment Seat of *Cæſar*: And there he ought to be tried. And ſo he appealed to *Cæſar*, where his Cauſe was heard, and he diſmiſt. Here, quoth the Recorder, ye ſee, that Chriſt commanded, that *Cæſar* ſhould be obeyed: He ſaid not, *Depoſed*. [as the Pope taught his Proſelytes.] And St. *Paul* did appeal to *Cæſar*, and not to *Peter*. Becauſe he took *Cæſar* to be his lawful King. And all Men know, that *Cæſar* was not of the Faith of Chriſt; nor yet did he believe as St. *Paul* did. And after a few Words more, he gave Judgment, and commanded the Sheriff to do Execution.

Alfield *ignorant, but bold.*

This *Alfield* (as my MS. goes on) appeared to have no Skill at all, either in the *Old* or *New Teſtament*. There appeared no manner of Learning in him. He was bold, ſtout and arrogant. He behaved himſelf more arrogantly than any that ever the Commiſſioners had heard or ſeen in their Times. His Words were ſuch againſt her Majeſty, that all the People fell into a Murmur. He never uſed one Word of Reverence towards her Highneſs. And at his Paſſage to Execution, the People offered to pray with him; and he refuſed their offer, and ſaid, that if there were any Catholicks there, he would be glad to have their Aſſiſtance.

Traiterous Sentences in Allens *Book.*

It is worth reading the ſeveral Sentences, taken out of *Allens* Book, which were entred into *Alfields* Indictment; which the Jury were directed to ſee in the Book itſelf. As this for one: "That if *Campion* and his Company might have ſpoken their Minds boldly, "they would, at their Paſſage out of this World, have done as *Leyborn* a Gentleman did: Who proteſted at his Arraignment and "Death, that her Majeſty was not lawful Queen for two Reaſons; "for her *Birth*, and for her *Excommunication*: And that ſhe ſought "neither *Diſpenſation* for the firſt, nor *Abſolution* for the ſecond.

ANNO 1585.

Another of the Aſſertions in *Allens* Book was, "That by the Fall of the King from the Faith, the Caſe is ſo dangerous and inevitable, that God had not ſufficiently provided for our Salvation, and the Preſervation of his Church; if there were no ways to Deprive, or reſtrain Apoſtate Princes." But I chuſe to refer all theſe and the reſt of the Paſſages of this Book (mentioned in the ſaid Indictment) to the *Appendix*.

Numb. LIV.

I have a few Notices more to inſert concerning ſome other *Romaniſts* now in Hold.

John Preſtal, *Priſoner, ſues for Liberty.*

John Preſtal, a Papiſt and Conjurer, (who had been divers Years in the *Tower*) now ſolicited for his Liberty in an humble Letter to the Lord Treaſurer; having been in ſome Combination, againſt the Queen; and ſeems to be the ſame *Preſtal*, that was concerned divers Years before in caſting a Figure by the Art of *Aſtrology* upon the Queens Life, and foretelling her Death, and a Party among ſome Popiſh Plotters, among whom the *Poles* were concerned. I find this Man now writing to the ſaid Treaſurer, upon a Letter from that Lord to Sir *Owen Hopton*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*: Intimating ſome Compaſſion towards him, who had lain there ſo long under Reſtraint. In his Letter which on this Occaſion he ſent to that Lord, "He acknowledged himſelf greatly bound to his Lordſhip, eſpecially, for that his Honour had ſaid, that his Diſpleaſure was not bent towards him: And in all humbleneſs of Heart he prayed to God to encreaſe his Favour towards him. And for his Lordſhips favourable Advertiſement, *viz.* that ſome of the Lords of the Council took Offence at his Writings, he made Anſwer, That if God had beſtowed any Benefit upon him, he ſhould think himſelf a moſt happy Man, therewith to ſerve him. [This *Benefit* ſeems to be his pretended deep Skill in Aſtrology.] Humbly deſiring his Honour to appeaſe their [thoſe Lords] Diſpleaſure: And favourably to remember his Obedience; and in his Pity to conſider the Time paſt; for that it had pleaſed him to ſay to his Daughter, that he had received twelve Years Impriſonment [ſpeaking it in Compaſſion.] And then adding, For Truth is, I was between ſix and nine Months cloſe Priſoner in *Beaſts* * Houſe. And then a ſmall Time in her Majeſties Porters Lodge. One Year and more in the *Marſhalſea*. In her Majeſties Bench about two Years. And, as he remembred, ſeven Years upon Bonds. And in that Houſe now [*viz.* the *Tower* wherein he was] eight Years and more. Moſt humbly deſiring his Honour for Gods Cauſe, not to take thoſe his Writings, nor in any other, to have in them any Thought of Contempt; but of his lamentable Interceſſion with Humbleneſs to move his Pity towards him. And that if he might with Gods Aſſiſtance, receive his Lordſhips Favour, and his own Liberty, he ſhould not only in all dutiful Fear of Heart and Mind, live in all Obedience unto her Majeſty, but dutifully and diligently at all Times preſt with any Benefit that God had beſtowed upon him, to ſerve and pleaſure his Honour: And further, he truſted, that God would move the Minds of ſome Men to ſtand bound; not only for his Dutifulneſs unto her Majeſty and their Honours; but alſo, that his ſolitary Life (if not otherwiſe ap-

His Letter.

* Beals *Houſe perhaps, who was Clerk of the Council.*

“ pointed by her Majeſty and their Honours) ſhould be ſuch, as “ wittingly not to give Offence, by Word or Deed, to any her Majeſty's Subjects: No, nor to the leaſt Child that lived, *&c.*

How far theſe fair Promiſes and Proteſtations might prevail upon the Lords to grant Liberty to this Man, ſo long under Confinement, I know not: Who by his pretended Art of foretelling Things to come, might ſuggeſt Encouragement and Succeſs to the buiſy Enemies of the Queen.

Philip *Earl of* Arundel *flies.*

A Perſon of greater Figure, even *Philip* Earl of *Arundel*, comes next under my Pen: Who was taken up upon meddling in theſe dangerous Courſes againſt the Queen and Realm: At leaſt great Jealouſies were now conceived of him in the Court. He was eldeſt Son to *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, (that was beheaded in the Buſineſs of the Queen of *Scots*) by his firſt Wife; who was Daughter and Heireſs to *Henry Fitz Allan*, Earl of *Arundel*. This *Philip* the Queen reſtored in Bloud; and obtained the Title of Earl of *Arundel*; and ſate in Parliament. But was taken up upon Suſpicion, and committed to the *Tower*; and reſtored after a while to Liberty again. But being devoted to the *Romiſh* Religion; and apprehending future Danger, took a Reſolution to fly abroad: But thought fit to leave a Letter to the Queen: Giving in plain Language the Reaſon of his Departure. Which Letter, (briefly mentioned in *Camdens* Hiſtory) from an exact Copy in the *Cotton* Library, I ſhall here exemplify at large; as a further Account of this Earls Troubles. Though he was diſappointed and ſeized before he took Ship. His Letter follows:

Camd. Eliz. p. 310.

His Letter to the Queen. Cott. *Libr.*

“ Your Majeſty never charged me with the leaſt Fault or Offence “ to you. And thoſe Adverſaries of mine which did bark behind “ my Back, durſt never accuſe me, nor once open their Mouths to “ my Face. So that I counted my Hap very ill; that was wrongfully accuſed: But much worſe, becauſe I could at no Time be “ charged: Whereby I might have had fit occaſion both to have “ ſhewed my Innocency, and to have ſatisfied your Majeſties Suſpicion. For firſt, ſeeing your Majeſty to countenance my Adverſaries, who did ſeek of Purpoſe to diſgrace me; and that you “ would not many Times in their Preſence, once ſo much as bend “ your Eyes to the Place, where I ſtood. Secondly, I finding them “ encouraged to my Injury many ways by the Help of your Favour; “ and that I was unable to defend my ſelf any way, by reaſon of “ your Diſpleaſure. Laſtly, perceiving by your Majeſties Diſgrace; “ which all Men did note by your bitter Speeches, which moſt Men “ did know, that I was generally accounted, nay, that I was in a “ manner pointed at, as one whom your Majeſty leaſt favoured; and “ in moſt Diſgrace as a Perſon, whom you did deeply ſuſpect, and “ eſpecially miſlike; I knew that this Smoke did beware a Fire; and “ I ſaw that theſe Clouds did foretell a Storm. And therefore prepared my ſelf with Patience to endure whatſoever it was the Will “ of God, by Means of your Majeſties Indignation, to lay upon me; “ being aſſured, that my Faults towards you were none, though by “ Offence towards others, were many. And thus having reſolved “ my ſelf to endure whatſoever ſhall happen, I continued ſome

ANNO
1585.

Months in this deep Diſgrace, without either knowing what was the Ground of your Majeſties Diſpleaſure; or hearing what ſhould be, in the Depth of mine own Misfortune. Till at the laſt I was called, by your Majeſties Commandment, before the Council at two ſundry Times. Where many Things were objected to me; and ſome of them ſuch Trifles, as they were ridiculous. Others of them, as unlikely as they were incredible. But all of them ſo untrue, as none of them could be juſtified. And yet notwithſtanding that my Innocency did ſo evidently appear by my Anſwers, as my greateſt Enemies could not reprove me of the ſmalleſt Offence of Undutifulneſs to your Majeſty, I was commanded to keep my Houſe.

“ Wherefore I ſaw it was reſolved by the Courſe of this Dealing, that how clear and manifeſt ſoever my Innocence was, yet my Adverſaries ſhould receive thoſe Triumphs of their Victory, having what they would; and I feel the Diſgrace of my own Misfortune, in enduring that which I no way deſerved; and my Enemies to maintain their Doings by ſome colourable Shew, (ſeeing they could not juſtify the Accuſation by no juſt Proof) after this they procured your Majeſty to ſend ſome of your Council four Days after my Reſtraint, to examine me of no Matters which were of greater Weight and Importance; but as improbable as the former. And I did diſcharge my ſelf as clearly, as of the others before mentioned. So as my Innocency did more plainly appear, although my Reſtraint did continue ſtill.

“ From after this, which was my laſt Examination, I remained in the ſame State XV Weeks at the leaſt, no Man charging me with the leaſt Offence; and my Conſcience not being able to accuſe me of the ſmalleſt Fault. And at the laſt, when either my Enemies could not for ſhame longer continue in their unconſcionable Proceedings; or that your Majeſty was informed by ſome of my Friends, that I had too long endured this undeſerved Puniſhment, I was reſtored to my former Liberty, without hearing any juſt Cauſe of your Majeſty's hard Conceit, or any good Colour, why I was committed; or but the Shaddow of a Fault, wherewith I might be touched.

“ Wherefore after I had eſcaped theſe Storms, and when I was clearly delivered from all my Troubles, I began to remember the heavy Sentence, which had lighted upon three of my Anceſtors, which immediately went before me. The firſt being my great Grandfather: Who was ſo free from all Suſpicion of any Fault, as becauſe they had no Colour to bring him to his Trial, they attainted him by Act of Parliament, without ever calling him to his Anſwer. The Second being my Grandfather, was brought to his Trial, and condemned for ſuch Trifles, as it amazed the Standers by at that Time; and is ridiculous at this Day to all that hear the ſame. Nay, he was ſo faultleſs in all reſpects, as the Earl of *Southampton*, that then was, being one of his greateſt Adverſaries, fearing leaſt his Innocence ſhould be a Means to ſave his Life, told Sir *Chriſtopher Heydon*, one of the Jury, before hand, that though they ſaw other Matter, weighty enough to condemn

“ him,

ANNO 1585.

“ him, yet it was a ſufficient Cauſe to make him guilty; for that he “ was an unmeet Man to live in a Commonwealth.

“ The laſt being my Father, was arraigned according to the Law, “ and condemned by Peers. God forbid, that I ſhould think but “ that his Tryers did whereto their Conſciences did lead them. “ And yet give me leave, I moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty, to “ ſay thus much, that howſoever he might be unwittingly or unwillingly drawn into greater Danger, than himſelf did either ſee “ or imagine; yet all his Actions did plainly declare, and his greateſt Enemies muſt needs confeſs, that he never carried any diſloyal “ Mind to your Majeſty, nor intending any undutiful Act to his “ Country.

“ And when I had in this Sort both fully and ſtrongly conſidered “ the Fortune of theſe three, which was paſt, I called to Mind my “ own Danger, which was preſent; and did think it impoſſible by “ the Shew of this rough Beginning, but that I might as well follow them in their Fortune, as I had ſucceeded them in their Place. “ For I conſidered the Greatneſs of my Enemies Power to overthrow, “ and the Weakneſs of my Ability to defend my ſelf; I perceived “ by my laſt Trouble, how narrowly my Life was ſought, and how “ eaſily your Majeſty was drawn to a Suſpicion, and hard Opinion “ of my Anceſtors; and by my paſt Danger, how my Innocency “ was not ſufficient Warrant to protect me in Safety, I know my “ ſelf. And beſides, was charged by your Council to be of the Religion which is accounted odious, and dangerous to your Eſtates. “ Laſtly, but principally, I weighed, in what miſerable, doubtful “ Caſe my Soul had remained, if my Life had been taken, (as it “ was not unlikely) in my former Troubles. For I proteſt the “ greateſt Burthen that reſted in my Conſcience at that Time was, “ becauſe I had not lived according to the preſcript Rule of that “ which I undoubtedly believed, and aſſuredly do perſuade my ſelf “ to be that Truth, *&c.*” This Letter goes no further. It was writ when he was juſt ready to depart and go abroad beyond Sea, being in *Suſſex*, ready to embark; and betrayed by his own Followers and the Maſter of the Veſſel: Seized and brought to the *Tower*. And ſome Years after was arraigned and condemned, for holding a Correſpondence with Cardinal *Allen*, and *Jeſuits* and other Traitors, that plotted the Deſtruction of the Prince and Realm, as our Hiſtory of Queen *Elizabeths* Reign ſhews at large.

Edm. Nevyl *his Letters from the* Tower.

Edmund Nevyl was another of theſe Popiſh Gentlemen, now under Reſtraint; who was in the Plot with *Parry*, to take away the Queens Life. And had the good Fortune to ſave his by the firſt Diſcovery of it. But he was ſtill kept in the *Tower:* He pretended to be Lord *Latimer*, as next Heir in Deſcent from the Lord of that Name deceaſed; and ſo ſtiled himſelf. Some of his Letters I have ſeen, as well of that Affair, as pleading for his Liberty; and particularly that he might not be baniſhed; which was the Queens Purpoſe concerning him. Thus in one of his Letters to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, he thus mentions his Caſe. Firſt in reſpect of a Lie that the ſaid *Parry* had told of him, while they were Fellows in the Conſpiracy: Which came out after *Parries* Execution. He pretended to be much acquainted with the ſaid Treaſurer. And had told *Nevyl* privately, that that Lord mortally hated him. Sir *Tho. Cecil*, that Lords eldeſt Son, (who had married one of the Heireſſes of the Lord *Latymer*) told his Father, how *Nevyl* was informed, that he mortally hated him. And ſoon after told *Nevyl*, that he had acquainted his Father with it: And that his Father had anſwered, that he was ſo far from that, that he bore him a good Will, and was honourably affected towards him. This occaſioned *Nevyl* to write to that Lord.

Telling him, that it was Dr. *Parry*, that had aſſured him of the contrary, and that upon his Credit and Knowledge: Willing him never to truſt the ſaid Lord: *Parry* adding, that he, [*Nevyl*] ſhould not demand of him, how he knew it; for that he might not tell it him. And for the Truth of it, *Nevyl* added, “ It were Sin to belie the Dead. God forgive him; and grant us Grace that live, to do that we ought. And that he muſt now needs believe that he [*Parry*] dealt unjuſtly with all Men, ſeeing he had ſought ſo much to abuſe him [the ſaid Lord Treaſurer] unto whom the World thought him ſo much beholden. And then, he did humbly beſeech his Honour to believe thoſe malicious Reports, that *Parry* made of him unto his Lordſhip and others of the Lords, to be of like Credit.

The Suit between Sir Tho. Cecil *and him.*

I will continue *Nevils* Letter to the ſame Lord, though the next Period is more private; concerning ſome Differences between Sir *Tho. Cecil*, and his Houſe, as Heir of the Lord *Latymer*. “ That he proteſted he ever held him for ſo honourable and worthy a Magiſtrate, as he was contented to have put them unto his Lordſhips own Compremiſe; and which he had offered at ſeveral Times unto his Honour; and that he would rather have loſt his Portions [which he claimed by his Deſcent from the *Latymers*] than his Lordſhips Favour. Whereby it appeared, that he never had ſo unreverend a Thought of him, as wilfully to hinder him of Juſtice. But yet that he [*Nevyl*] muſt needs know, that by his Lordſhips Power and Authority, his Friends forbare to favour and aſſiſt him, and the Lawyers themſelves to take his Fee, or adviſe him.” Adding theſe cloſe Words, “ Herein, my good Lord, do I blame your Might, and not your Malice, your Power, and not your Will. Which Power, when it ſhall pleaſe your Honour to turn to my good, being joined with Will, may profit me much more, than I have been damnified by it.

And then in his Letter he deſcends, to take Notice of his Lordſhips ſending to him ſome Divine (as it ſeems) to ſatisfy his Conſcience in point of Religion, or Allegiance, *viz.* “ That his Honours Wiſdom and Vertue did well appear, in that charitable Courſe he had taken for the quieting his Conſcience, wherein that Lord, he ſaid, had bound him more to do him Honour and Service, than if he had given him twice ſo much Lands as he had loſt of his Anceſtors. For that it appeared to proceed from the Integrity of a true Chriſtian Conſcience. That the Croſſes of his Houſe, and theſe his Troubles, he muſt needs eſteem to proceed from the ſecret Judgment of God, for Forefathers Offences, his own, or

" both: Since he found in his Conſcience, that he had not deſerved " them at the Hands of his Prince or Country.

Vindicates his Innocency.

And then he vindicates his Innocency in *Parries* Plot; " That " if her Majeſty knew, how much he hated the Name of a Traitor " even in the Secret of his Soul, and with what Zeal he left the " World abroad, to repair the Fault of the Chief of his Houſe [*viz. " Nevyl*, Earl of *Weſtmerland*] by his Loyal Service to her Majeſty " at home; her Highneſs would not hold him there, in her Majeſties *Tower*, Priſoner; and much leſs command him out of his " Country in Baniſhment. And then, humbly beſeeching his Honour to weigh his Cauſe, which in itſelf was lamentable, in having loſt his Living abroad, [having been a Penſioner, as it ſeems, " to King *Philip* of *Spain*] the Favour of all Foreign Princes, the " Liberties of their Countries; and laſtly, which troubled him moſt " of all, the poor Gentlewoman his Wife, who was dead by his Abſence. [Yet not ſo dead, but I find her alive ſome Years after.] " And all this he had done to obey the Queen, his Miſtreſs. Whoſe " Favour notwithſtanding he could not have, *&c.* That her Highneſs had commanded him to Exile: Where, he ſaid, he ſhould " reſt a Prey unto her Enemies, who had ſought his Life in many " Sorts. But that yet he had rather her Majeſty ſhould take it " here, or permit him here a perpetual Priſoner; where he ſhould " infallibly pray for her Highneſs's moſt gracious, long and proſperous Reign in the Fear and Service of God. And ſo concludes, " referring his Cauſe and ſelf to his Honourable Conſideration. " From his undeſired and leſs deſerved Lodging in the *Tower*. Where " I kiſs (as he concluded) moſt humbly, your Honourable Hands. It was dated the 13th of *Octob.* 1585, and ſubſcribed,

His Exile appointed.

Edmund Latymer.

I find his Baniſhment according to his Deſire was diſpenſed withal; but he remained a Priſoner in the *Tower* ſome Years after. Whence in the Year 1588. I meet with another of his Letters to the ſame Lord, writ in a very lamentable Strain. Which that I may at once finiſh what occurs concerning this unhappy Man, I ſhall alſo here (being but ſhort) ſubjoin.

Another Letter of Nevyls *from the* Tower.

" He complained of his intolerable and bitter Diſtreſſes. And " that he ſuffered, he might juſtly ſay, for the Queens ſake. Since " only to do her Service, he left all Foreign Princes, their Countries, and ſuch Abilities as he there poſſeſt. And that this was " not unto her Majeſty unknown, though peradventure for the Time " forgotten, *&c.* What he wanted he needed not to expreſs, it " was ſo well known to him: Save his Wifes free Acceſs to him, " after her ſo many Troubles endured for his ſake, together with his " other Penſion, for their better Relief and Maintenance, *&c.* " Dating his Letter thus: " From my Purgatory, or rather earthly " Hell; where tormented with ten Thouſand Melancholies, humbly kiſs your Hands. From whence hoping to receive a Drop of Favour to aboliſh them all. " Dated in *June*, 1588.

I have another Popiſh Zealot to mention here: And the rather, becauſe there will fall in ſome Remarks of Cardinal *Allen*, that great buiſy *Boutifeu* and Incendiary of Miſchief for the Popes Quarrel.

Robert Turner *Profeſſor of Divinity at* Ingolſtad.

Robert Turner, a Native of *Devonſhire*, was about this Time publick Profeſſor of Divinity at *Ingolſtade* in *Germany*, preferred to that Place by the Intereſt of Dr. *Allen*, the Cardinal, with Prince *William* of *Bavaria*, a zealous Adverſary to *Luther* and the Reformation; and that had received ſeveral *Engliſh* Fugitives into that Univerſity. From his Letters, which were printed at *Ingolſtade*, *Anno* MDCII. we may gather divers Matters worthy of Note, relating to the Affairs of *England*, eſpecially reſpecting Religion. How himſelf ſtood affected, thoſe Words of his do ſhew, concerning the Wars in *France* between the *Guiſes* and the *Hugonotes*: *Spero pacem noſtris, & peſtem Hugoneticis rebus, &c.* There were Letters of his to Cardinal *Allen* at *Rome*, directing them with this Title, *Guilielmo Alano Sanctiſſimo, doctiſſimo, &c.* Therein he mentions the Cardinals commending of him to Prince *William* of *Bavaria*, for his Place of Profeſſor at *Ingolſtad*: That he being an exile *Engliſh* Man, that Prince had embraced him with both Arms of his Charity and Clemency. And that the ſaid Prince in all his Speeches remembred *Allen*; and talked much of his Glory and Vertue. And that that Prince had ſent one *George Brand*, his Meſſenger, to obtain ſomewhat of the Pope; which he prayed *Allan* to forward, and to recommend him to the Pope to diſpatch his Buſineſs. And as an Argument to excite the ſaid Cardinal *Allan*, or *Allen*, he highly commended this his Prince for his Life, not only without Blot, but without Suſpicion; and that he was a great Aſſerter of the See of *Rome*: And who had erected a Seminary in *Germany*, according to the Preſcription of the Council of *Trent*: And that he had wholly rooted out of his Juriſdiction whatſoever ill Plants *Luther* had ſet. And concluded his Letter with this Wiſh, "That God might reſtore the moſt Illuſtrious [meaning the Cardinal] to *England*, and *England* to the moſt Illuſtrious.

His Letters to Cardinal Allen *at* Rome.

One Coffin *ſeeks to be admitted into the College at* Rome.

In another Letter to the ſame, giving him the Title of the *moſt Reverend and moſt Illuſtrious*, he recommended an *Engliſh* Man, one *Edward Coffin*, ready at his Service, to be admitted into the *Engliſh* College at *Rome*, (where *Allen* was Chief,) being a young Man, a Catholick and an Exile. This Perſon he recommendeth to him: "Whom (as he flattereth him) *England* loved, *Rome* adorned, Baniſhment hath as it were ratified [*ſanxit*] the Patron and Father of *Engliſh* Men, Catholicks and Exiles. "That this Man had deſired "*Turners* Letters to him, and that his Requeſt was, that he might "be choſen into the ſaid College; having conſecrated himſelf to "God, to *England* and *Rome*; and that he was a fit young Man, "of no ill Note, and prepared *inire paleſtram: Juvenis feroculus*; "ready to enter upon Action, a fierce Youth: Very good Qualifi-"cations for a *Romiſh* Emiſſary.

Another Letter of Turner *to the Cardinal.*

And before this, (that we trace this *Turner* a little backwards) it appears by another Letter of his to Dr. *Allen*, now at *Doway*, before he went to *Rome*, writing to him from *Paris*, he calleth him his Patron; who was to take care of him, and to fix him ſomewhere, (having

Biſhop *of* Roſs.

(having been invited over privately, as it ſeems by him) ſtiling himſelf a Catholick, poor and his Client. In which Letter he ſpeaks alſo of the Biſhop of *Roſs*, (the Queen of *Scots* Agent abroad) and of his Aſſiſtance of him at *Paris*; and who had ſuch an Inclination to him, that he choſe him into the Number of thoſe that were ſhortly to go thence with him to *Rome*. Upon the mention of this Biſhop of *Roſs*, and his Friendſhip to *Turner*, I do but hint a Conſolatory Letter to the ſaid *Mary* Queen of *Scots*: Which was drawn up by this *Turner*; being Maſter of an elegant *Latin* Stile, mentioned before under the Year 1583.

Turner *endeavours to pervert one* Hilliard.

Tam ſincere tuus, quàm Evangelium, Chriſtus, Roma patitur.

Cælum odit, Terra perſequitur, quicquid eſt nominis Anglicani.

Angliam fore eſcam tibi ad peccatum ad ruinam, ad mortem.

I cannot but relate ſomething out of another Letter of the ſame Man, of like Strain of Zeal, to one *Hilliard*, his Countryman, and his former Acquaintance in the Univerſity, though of another Opinion in Religion. Whom he tried by his Oratory to reduce. He tells him, he was *ſo ſincerely his, as the Goſpel, Chriſt, and* Rome *ſuffered him to be.* Where it is worth obſerving the Argument he uſed to bring him over to the Popiſh Religion, and his Hatred that Religion begat in him to his Native Country. Thus writing concerning *England*, “Whatſoever bears but the Name of *England*, is “hated by Heaven, and perſecuted by Earth.” And again, “That “*England* would be to him but a Bait, to Sin, to Ruin, and to “Death.” And comparing his Countryman, the ſaid *Hilliard*, to the Prodigal Son, he exhorted him to return to his Fathers Houſe, “Where was *Poculum gratiæ, oſculum pacis, &c.* the Cup of Grace, “the Kiſs of Peace, the Muſick of a good Act, and the fatted Calf, “Chriſt himſelf: Then he ſhould be filled and ſatisfied from *Rome*, “ſatisfied in himſelf; and well ſatisfied, too well: That is, by the “Preſcription of Antiquity, by the Preſcription of Tradition, by “the Senſe of the Church, and the Conſent of the World. And “then going on in his Argument: But among the [*i. e.* Proteſtants] “ſaid he, What is there of *Antiquity*? No more than *from Luther* “to the preſent Age. What is there of *Tradition*? Their Foundation is, that there was no Tradition at all. What do they ſay of “the Senſe of the CHURCH? O! they are afraid of this Name “and Deity. What of the Conſent of the *World*? A Part of it, “and that the worſt of all is in *England*; a very little Part of it “in *Germany*; a moſt ſeditious Part in *France*: And in all Places “of the World the moſt unlearned: All but Dregs; and how little “a Portion in compariſon of our World, *&c.*” And thus this unnatural *Romiſh Engliſh* Man went on, to bring off his Countryman both from his Religion, and from a Love of his Native Country, by his empty, but malicious Oratory.

Timent hoc Nomen & Numen.

CHAP.

ANNO 1585.

CHAP. XXVI.

Uſury practiſed in York. *The Archbiſhop brings it before the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer about it. The Dean of* York *openly diſſents. Articles againſt him in the* Star Chamber, *by the Archbiſhop. The Deans Submiſſion to the Archbiſhop. This Archbiſhop preaches at* Pauls Croſs. Scory, *Biſhop of* Hereford, *dies. Exerciſes in the Dioceſs of* Cheſter. *That Biſhop preſcribes Rules to the Clergy for them.* Scambler, *tranſlated to* Norwich; *his Complaint of his Predeceſſor.* Curteſs, *Biſhop of* Chicheſter, *dies poor. Complaint made by the Biſhop of* Litchfield *and* Coventry. *His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.* Cox, *Biſhop of* Ely, *vindicates his Liberties in* Holborn *againſt the City. The Revenues of the Dean and Chapter of* Norwich *in danger; upon pretence of Concealment. The Caſe. The Suit. Referred.*

NOW I proceed to make ſome relation of Matters of the Church, and of ſome of the Biſhops thereof, according as they occur to me this Year.

Archbiſhop of York *endeavours to reform Uſury practiſed there.*

Sandys, Archbiſhop of *York* had obſerved a great Crime prevailing in his Dioceſs; and eſpecially, in the City of *York*. It was *Uſury*, in a moſt exceſſive Degree. Inſomuch that ſuch as had occaſion to take up Money, paid a heavy Conſideration for it. The good Archbiſhop was moved at it, and brought the Matter into the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. And, which was worſt of all, one of his chief Brethren of the Clergy, even the Dean of *York*, who was rich, was deeply touched in the ſame Fault. And he being one of the Commiſſioners, endeavoured to interrupt it; and in fine, openly proteſted againſt it. Which ſpoilt all the Archbiſhops good Intentions, in puniſhing and redreſſing that great Oppreſſion. The Archbiſhop had no Help now, but by applying to thoſe above. And as he had written to the Queen, and to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; ſo he alſo declared the Matter more at large to the Lord Treaſurer. Which was to this Tenor, (which I relate that the Thing before us, may be the better underſtood.)

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer about it.

“ That in his Troubles he was forced to fly unto his Lordſhip.
“ That God would ever record with him, how faithfully and painfully he had travailed in his Vocation, as well in preaching the
“ Goſpel, as in exerciſing Diſcipline. But that now, ſuch was the

ANNO 1585.

Malice of Man, that his Hands were cloſed up, and the Rod of Diſcipline taken from him. That biting and vile Uſury, forbidden by the Law of God and Man, the very Bain of the Commonwealth, was practiſed in that City of *York* more than elſewhere in the World in his Opinion; and that all other Traffick and Art was in a manner laid aſide; and that only put in ure, even from the higheſt to the loweſt, all in manner given to it. And that in moſt extreme Sort; to take one Hundred at the Hundred. That this had eaten up the Poor, and ſpoiled the Gentlemen of their Patrimony.

He proceeded, " That he had diligently laboured with others by preaching, to reform this Sin. *Sed in vanum Laboravimus.* And therefore compelled even in Conſcience, by vertue of her Majeſties Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, to call the Offenders herein to anſwer their Fact: But that as they were in the Conſiſtory, miniſtring Oaths unto them, to anſwer unto certain Articles, the Dean of *York* (who croſſed all good Proceedings) with a full Stomach ſtood up, proteſting, that he diſſented from them. And further, that he there publickly defended Uſury, as lawful; and threatned the Witneſſes which were brought in to charge the Offenders with *Premunire:* The Dean adding, that he would clear his Hands of it. Yet, as the Archbiſhop ſubjoined, the Report was, that his Hands were deeply mired in this Matter. For otherwiſe he could hardly have abounded in ſuch Wealth, as he at that Time preſently did.

The Dean of York *defends Uſury.*

" And that thus his Speech wonderfully encouraged the Offenders, as afterwards (added the Archbiſhop) fell forth in Proof. For hardly would they be brought to any Examination. And that one of the Number utterly refuſed to anſwer to the Articles, although he had taken his Oath to do it. And that another of them utterly denied their [*viz.* the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners] Authority and Juriſdiction; and that with big Words, and unſeemly Behaviour. And that for this their great Contempt, they were compelled to commit them to the Caſtle; for the Example, ſaid the Archbiſhop, was not tolerable.

Council in the North *complained of*

And which he further thought fit now to acquaint the Treaſurer with, that obſtructed their good Purpoſe, was the Oppoſition that the Council in the *North* gave thereto. For thus the Archbiſhop went on. " That the Second, after the Vice-Preſident with the reſt of the Council there, by Warrant ſent for them, and ſet them at Liberty; and that chiefly provoked thereunto by Mr. *Cheek*, [who was Son to that excellent Man Sir *John Cheek*, and was now a Member of that Council] who, ſaid the Archbiſhop, without all Cauſe did malice him, croſs and hinder his Proceedings, what he could. That he thought, the like had not been done by any Authority heretofore: [Namely, that a Council in the *North* ſhould annul, or revoke what was done in an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, iſſuing from the Queen.] " That her Majeſties Commiſſion by reaſon hereof was diſcredited, and made of no Authority; and they, her Majeſties Commiſſioners, defaced and contemned: And ſo forced to ſurceaſe any further Proceeding by that Authority. " And then adding theſe Words, “ So that Sin may now take his full “ Courſe uncorrected; to the great Offence of God, and the great “ danger of the State. For this Commiſſion was the only Means “ to bridle Sin withal.

And then the Archbiſhop ſhewed the Treaſurer, that there were but two that were brought into Queſtion for Uſury by the Commiſſion, and reſcued after that Manner: “ That the two Perſons thus “ privileged, that they might not be touched, were two Serving “ Men; the one, Yeoman of the Wood-Yard to the Lord Preſident; “ the other a Clark to one *Coltbirſt*, an ordinary Atturney at *York.*

And at laſt the Archbiſhop laid their Caſe before his Lordſhip in theſe Words: “ Your Lordſhip now ſeeth our Caſe. The Cauſe is “ her Majeſties, whoſe Authority in Caſes Eccleſiaſtical is too much “ contemned. I doubt not but that your Lordſhip according to your “ great Wiſdom, will have honourable Conſideration hereof; as well “ in reſpect of Gods Cauſe, (for God hateth Sin) as for the Maintenance of her Majeſties Authority: Which by reaſon hereof hath “ received a great Blow. And that he would have attended himſelf, but preſently he could not, being occupied about the collecting of Money of the Clergy for her Majeſties Service in the “ *Low Countries.*

And that ſuch an Affront might not be put up, he ſignified, “ That he had written ſomething touching this Matter to her Majeſty, as alſo to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury:* Well knowing “ that his Lordſhip alſo would further ſo good a Cauſe. And thus “ he commended his good Lordſhip to the good Direction of Gods “ holy Spirit. Dated from *Biſhopthorp*, the 4th of *March* 1585.

Articles againſt the Dean of York.

This Matter of Complaint was at length brought up to Court. And now ſeveral Articles were drawn up, and objected againſt the abovesaid Dean of *York* by the Archbiſhop, and laid againſt him touching ſundry Miſdemeanours, both in Speech and Action, as well againſt the Authority of her Majeſties Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, as againſt the Archbiſhop and his lawful and dutiful Proceedings; with other Accuſations.

His Behaviour towards the Archbiſhop, MSS. Burghlian.

I. The Archbiſhop at his firſt coming to the See, conſidering, how much it imported the good Succeſs of that Service which her Majeſty had laid upon him, to have the Aid of ſuch as were of Countenance and in Place, fit to further the Service; dealt with the ſaid Dean to that End; requiring, that he would yield to join with him, the ſaid Archbiſhop, in dutiful Care, to ſee to the Government, which her Majeſty had committed unto him in the *North* Parts. Whereto the Anſwer of the ſaid Dean (though no way injured by the ſaid Archbiſhop, and without all Cauſe of Suſpicion on his Behalf offered, that he ſought in that Requeſt to begin or maintain any Partiality or Faction) was, that he needed not the Favour of him, the Archbiſhop, nor yet the Lord Preſident. And therefore he would join with neither of them both.

Dean of Durham, Whittingham.

II. Where it pleaſed her Majeſty to ſend her Letters of Commiſſion to the Archbiſhop, the Lord Lieutenant, the Dean abovesaid, with others for the hearing and determination of divers Matters complained of againſt Mr. *Whittingham*, Dean of *Durham*, the ſaid Dean of *York* did

His Orders queſtioned.

did bear himſelf, as a Perſon greatly affected to the Cauſe of the ſaid Mr. *Whittingham*; and in no Sort indifferent to the Service committed to their Truſt: And Queſtion ariſing among the ſaid Commiſſioners touching the *Orders* of the ſaid *Whittingham*, being one Matter among many, for which he was thought not lawfully to hold his Deanry; or at the leaſt worthy of Deprivation; the ſaid Dean of *York* maintained, that the ſaid *Whittingham* was in better Sort ordained Miniſter, than our Miniſters in *England*. Notwithſtanding that he well knew, that the ſaid *Whittingham*, his Miniſtry was not warranted by the Law of the Realm; as being made Miniſter by a few mean Men and Lay Perſons in a private Houſe at *Geneva*, without the Knowledge or Conſent of Mr. *Calvin*, the chief Miniſter there. And, upon further Speech of that Argument, he entred into an odious Compariſon of his own Miniſtry and the Archbiſhops Calling to the ſame; affirming, that his was much better than the Archbiſhops was.

III. The Archbiſhop offering to viſit the Dean and Chapter, and other Members of the Cathedral Church of *York* (as by Law and Duty he is bound to do) the ſaid Dean hath from Time to Time proteſted againſt the ſaid Viſitation; of Purpoſe that the Caſe of the Cathedral Church ſhould not come to any Account, or Examination; but remain in Diſorder, to the private Profit and Advantage of the ſaid Dean and his Chapter; pretending only an old Compoſition made by a Pope; neither warranted by Law, nor regarded by the Predeceſſors of the ſaid Archbiſhop. Who, notwithſtanding the ſame, have had actual Viſitations of the ſaid Dean and Chapter; wherein the ſaid Archbiſhop taketh it, that the ſaid Dean hath broken a great Part of his Duty to her Majeſty, in vouching a Privilege not known to have other Warrant than the Popes Grant. And ſo by Statute in Caſe of *Premunire*.

IV. The ſaid Dean receiving Letters from my Lord Treaſurer and others, to examine the Wife of *Syſſon*, who had been uſed by Sir *Robert Stapleton*, as his Inſtrument to ſlander the ſaid Archbiſhop, as in the Caſe heard and debated before the Lords of the *Starchamber* plainly appears; and alſo to examine other Witneſſes, that were to depoſe of the wicked Life of the ſaid Sir *Robert Stapleton*, with *Syſſons* Wife; and received particular Articles for his Direction, to examine as well the ſaid *Syſſons* Wife, as the ſaid Witneſs: He firſt permitted the ſaid *Syſſons* Wife to take her Scope to utter all the Malice of her Heart in Maintenance of her wicked Slander, altogether without the Compaſs of the Articles, committed to his Examination; as one delighted to hear the Slanders of the ſaid Archbiſhop, and grieved, that any thing in that Examination ſhould be diſcovered to the Defence of his Innocence: And that notwithſtanding by ſome of his ſaid Commiſſion he was charitably put in Mind, that he ſhould, though not in Regard of the Archbiſhops Perſon, yet for the Credit of Religion, not ſeek to give way to ſo apparent Malice; he held his Courſe, and anſwered, that Religion hanged not upon one Mans Back, and in the Examination of the ſaid Witneſſes, he travailed with ſome privately, to take Heed of their Danger, if they ſhould depoſe any thing to the Diſcredit of Sir *Robert*

Stapleton. Some he terrified openly; with others he trifled, and cavilled, as it pleaſed him: Giving them no further Hearing, than he thought he might without the Hurt of the ſaid Sir *Robert.* And in the End, where his Commiſſion was to proceed with Mr. *Cheek* and one Mr. *Ramſden,* to whom the Letters were directed with himſelf, he made his Certificate without calling the ſame and Mr. *Ramſden* to the ſame.

Seven Uſurers called before the Commiſſion.

V. The Archbiſhop perceiving the exceſſive and horrible Uſury practiſed in *York* as well by Merchants as by Artificers, and Men of all Sorts, to the great Offence of God and Hurt of the Commonwealth; he with others moſt earneſtly for the Space of three Years together preached againſt the ſame. And perceiving that no Reformation followed thereof; he with his Aſſociates, by Virtue of her Majeſties Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical (the Dean of *York* being one) called before them ſeven Uſurers, publickly defamed and detected of that Offence; offering to them Articles to anſwer unto upon their Oaths. Which Thing they did, being not encouraged to the Contrary. And upon their Confeſſion and Proof convinced for great and exceſſive Uſury; acknowleged the ſame, and ſubmitted themſelves to Order. Which was to enter into Recognizance of One thouſand Marks a piece, never to commit the like, and to make Reſtitution to the Party grieved, of that which they had received, more than the Principal.

The Dean of Yorks *Speech againſt the Proceedings with the Uſurers.*

The Archbiſhops Anſwer.

About a Fortnight after this, *viz.* the 21. Day of *February,* the Archbiſhop with his Aſſociates, called Twenty mo, detected of Uſury; and offered to them like Articles to anſwer unto, upon their Oaths. While this was in doing open in the Conſiſtory, in Audience of a great many People, the Dean of *York,* (on purpoſe to hinder this good and lawful Proceeding, well liked of all good Men) upon the ſudden ſtood up, and with great Stomac uttered theſe Words, or the like in Effect, *viz.* "We muſt be ware how we deal in this Mat-
" ter of *Uſury.* For my Part I diſſent from theſe Proceedings, of
" Miſlike of them. So will clear my Hands of it. For many Things
" are termed *Uſury* in the Civil Law, which are not Uſury by the
" Word of God: Alledging the Authority of *Calvin, Bullinger, Beza, Bucer,* and *Daneus,* for that Purpoſe. Adding further, that ſuch as dealt therein did run into *Premunire.* And he required the Actuary to record this Saying. The Archbiſhop in mild and temperate Words anſwered, " Mr. *Dean,* Theſe Speeches are out of Sea-
" ſon, and not fit for this Place. For if you had miſliked, you
" might privately have ſo told me this Morning, we being both
" together. Or elſe you might have abſented yourſelf from this
" Place, or have been ſilent, and kept your Voice and Diſſent unto
" yourſelf: And not thus have croſſed theſe good Proceedings, to
" the great Derogation of the Authority of her Majeſties Commiſſion.
" As touching *Uſury,* I know and ſhall be well able to prove, that
" it is manifeſt both againſt the Laws of God and Man, and con-
" demned accordingly, as wicked. And for Matter of *Premunire,* I anſwer that for all. Nay, ſaid the Dean, I will anſwer my Doings for myſelf.

For theſe his Speeches it inſued, that the Offenders contemned the Authority of the Court: Whoſe Boldneſs the Archbiſhop and others labouring to reform, by committing ſome of them, for their great Contempt, to Priſon; their Order was eluded by a Delivery procured from the Council [In thoſe North Parts] as encouraged by the Dean in his Speech.

VI. The ſaid Dean is ſuſpected to practiſe Uſury himſelf: And being reported to be thereof guilty; that Opinion hath the rather encreaſed, for that he in open Diſputations and Conferences maintaineth it for a Matter lawful. And being himſelf charged with that Sin, hath in very trifling Manner ſcorned the Complaint, as worthy no Blame: Shifting off thoſe which laid it to his Charge, with this or like Anſwer; That we, Preachers are all Uſurers of Gods Gifts and Talents: In a Manner thereby acknowledging himſelf guilty of Uſury.

VII. At ſuch Time as the ſaid Archbiſhop certified the Contempt of *Recuſants* into her Majeſties Court of Exchequer, the ſaid Dean, and one Mr. *Palmer*, who were to concur in that Certificate, refuſed to ſubſcribe the ſame, as favouring the Papiſts; and being loth to ſeem to offend them.

VIII. He hath given great Suſpicion, that he beareth ſecret Favour to Recuſants and other Papiſts; namely, that ſundry of them, being ſent for, to make their Appearances before the Archbiſhop, and others her Majeſties Commiſſioners; he hath given them ſecret Warning of the Proceſſes that were to come out againſt them. By means whereof divers of them have conveyed themſelves out of the Compaſs of that Commiſſion; and ſo avoided Examination.

Recuſants.

IX. It appeareth, that touching Religion he maketh none other Reckoning thereof, than by that Colour to take the Benefit of that Peace, which it hath pleaſed God to bleſs the Realm withal under her Majeſties Government. And ſo to grow in Wealth without Purpoſe of holding his Profeſſion in Caſe God ſhould for our Sins caſt us again into Superſtition, or into Affliction, for profeſſing of his Name. For being himſelf asked not many Years ſince, upon occaſion of ſome Mens Fear, that the Realm was like to fall into that Danger, what he meant to do in Caſe of Change of Religion; he anſwered, he would live a private Life, and as a Layman upon his Lands, as other Laymen do. Which Anſwer implieth a Purpoſe of Apoſtacy.

X. Belike fearing ſuch Time of Alteration, he hath made great Purchaſes; as he is now able to ſpend thereby in Land and Leaſes of long Continuance, 500 *l.* by the Year. Which Revenue is thought ſufficient to defray all his Charges of Houſe-keeping, and otherwiſe, without diminiſhing his Revenue of his Eccleſiaſtical Livings: Which cometh, as is thought, clear to his Purſe.

XI. The ſaid Dean is poſſeſt of 5 or 6 Eccleſiaſtical Livings; worth in all by Eſtimation one Thouſand Pounds Yearly; or not much leſs: And two of them Benefices with Cure of Souls, ſerved with ignorant Curates: A Matter moſt lamentable in that Country, where the Number of Preachers are fewer than in many other Parts in the Realm; and in his Perſon, a dangerous Example to ſuch as either have Charge, or wait upon Advantages without Conſcience to ſpoil the Livings of the Church.

XII. And for further Encreaſe of his Living, he was for a Time ſole Reſidentiary of the Cathedral Church. In which Time he reaped the whole Commodity due to ſuch as be Reſident. And for another

ANNO 1585.

other Space, had but one to be Partaker of that Commodity, or now but two. So as his Gain that way riſeth yearly to a great Sum.

XIII. Touching the Care of his Function, he preacheth not much above three Times in the Year; and at thoſe Times almoſt without Fruit. For he ſpendeth the Time in debating Controverſies with Sentences of the Doctors; neither reproving Sin, nor exhorting the People to Reformation of Life, or to the true Service of God. And at no Time, as far as the ſaid Archbiſhop can learn, hath preached againſt *Uſury*, although Uſury doth moſt exceſſively abound in that Country: Some taking 50 upon the 100, ſome threeſcore, and ſome an 100 upon an 100. Which was the very Cauſe the Archbiſhop entred into this Proceeding.

The Complaint brought before the Privy Council.

It ſeems the Dean could not acquit himſelf. For the Queen hearing this Complaint of the Archbiſhop againſt him, ordered it to be brought before certain of her Privy Council: And he appearing before them explained himſelf, and craved their Pardon. And by them in the Month of *June*, he was ordered, beſides his Submiſſion to them, to make his Submiſſion publickly before the Commiſſioners at *York*. And accordingly this Speech was drawn up for him by the Lord Treaſurer to pronounce there.

The Dean of Yorks Submiſſion.

“ Whereas upon *Monday*, the firſt Week of *Lent* laſt paſt, when
“ my Lord Archbiſhop, with others, the Queens Majeſties Com-
“ miſſioners for Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical, ſet in their Place, I uttered
“ ſome Speeches, which, as I perceive, did offend both his Grace,
“ and ſome of the Commiſſioners, and a Part of the Auditory;
“ whereby they did conceive my Speech to tend not only to the
“ diminiſhing of the Authority of the Commiſſion, as in miſliking
“ of the Manner of Proceeding by his Grace and the Commiſſion-
“ ers, but alſo to the Defence of ſuch as were called thither, to be
“ charged and corrected for great and corrupt Uſuries; and to the
“ Encouragement (as by ſome was then conceived) of other like
“ Offenders: For that I have been charged herewith by the Queens
“ Commandment, before certain of her Majeſties chiefeſt Counſil-
“ lors; as the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, the Lord Chancellor, the
“ Lord Treaſurer of *England*, Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, her Maje-
“ ſties Vice Chamberlain, and ſome others of her Majeſties Council,
“ before whom I have declared my Meaning never to have been to
“ diminiſh the Authority of her Sacred Majeſties Commiſſion;
“ (which I reverence with all Duty) nor to have given juſt Cauſe
“ of Offence to my Lord Archbiſhops Grace, (whom as my Ordi-
“ nary and Superior, I am bound to honour and obey,) neither yet
“ to have by any Means given Cauſe to comfort or allow of the a-
“ bominable Vice of Uſury: And yet for that I perceive the Cen-
“ ſure of the ſaid grave Counſillors to be, that my Speeches in this
“ Place, and all that Time were not (as their Lordſhips thought) ſo
“ adviſed, as they might have been; in that the Authority of her
“ Majeſties Commiſſion hath been thereby in Opinion of ſome there
“ preſent ſomewhat touched; and no ſmall Offence alſo followed
“ thereby to the Mind of my Lord Archbiſhop and divers of the
“ Commiſſioners; and thereby alſo ſuch others, as were then charg-
“ ed with the Crime of Uſury, were thereby emboldened. Al-

“ though

ANNO 1585.

“ though I had no Intention by my Speeches at that Time to give juſt Cauſe of ſuch Offences; yet I have offered my ſelf with all Humility, as did become me to their Lordſhips, for their better Satisfaction, to make ſuch Declaration of my true Meaning, as to their Lordſhips might appear to be a due Satisfaction to all ſuch as took Offence at my Speeches; and might alſo ſerve to fortify the Authority of her Majeſties Commiſſion, and to diſſuade all Perſons from the committing of the Vice of Uſury: And hereafter with all good Affection to forbear, in ſuch Places and Times, to utter any Speeches that may give offence to any Perſon in ſuch Action or Proceeding, as this was.

“ And for theſe Purpoſes, here I do declare very willingly, that in my Heart I do deteſt and condemn all kind of Uſury, (adjudged by the Laws of this Realm to be Uſury) as unlawful, and contrary to the Word of God. That I will endeavour my ſelf by all Means I can, both by Word and Deed, to procure the Puniſhment thereof. And as touching the ſaid Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, I think it to have proceeded from her Majeſty by juſt Authority, and to be a very profitable and neceſſary kind of Diſcipline, convenient to be executed and continued for this Time and State. The Credit and Maintenance whereof I will always ſeek to my Power, to keep and further, as Duty bindeth me.

“ Thus much according to my humble Submiſſion, made to the Lords of her Majeſties Council, I have uttered unto them, in this Place at this preſent; for the ſatisfying of all ſuch as either have miſtaken me, or were offended with my manner of ſpeaking and proceeding at that Time. Requiring moſt humbly my Lord Archbiſhops Grace, and charitably all others, to give Credit to this my preſent Declaration, with all Charity, as a Thing proceeding from my Heart; and ſo to accept thereof accordingly: Offering to his Grace, or to any other Perſon, that ſhall not be fully ſatisfied herewith, upon any charitable Motion, to give them all good Means of further Satisfaction, to the removing of all kind of Offence.

Archbiſhop of York *preaches at* Pauls *Croſs.*

I paſs from Archbiſhop *Sandys*, after I have told, that he being an excellent Preacher, was appointed to preach at *Pauls* Croſs, upon a very ſolemn Occaſion; namely, Gods wonderful Deliverance of the Queen, from the Conſpiracy of *Ballard* and *Babbington*. His Text was *Pſal.* IV. 5. *Offer unto God the Sacrifice of Righteouſneſs.* And he ended all with a large Prayer of Thankſgiving, (which may deſerve Remark) proper to ſtir up in the Auditors a thankful Spirit, by his Relation therein of the great Mercies of God to the Realm, in his often interpoſing his wonderful Providence on the Queens Behalf againſt her fatal Enemies; his Petitions to God for her: The Happineſs of the Nation in her Government; the Bleſſing of the Goſpel by her Means, *&c.* Beginning, “ Thou knoweſt, O Lord, (who haſt delivered our Sovereign Lady out of all Diſtreſs, from the Rebellion of *Abſalom*, from the Counſil of *Achitophel*, &c.) that ſhe hath not deſerved this Treachery at their Hands, ſo mild and merciful, *&c.* The whole Prayer I have thought worthy preſerving. See it in the *Appendix*. Numb. LV.

This

Biſhop Scory *dies.*

This Year put a Period to the Life of *Scory*, Biſhop of *Hereford*, (formerly in the Reign of King *Edward* VI. Biſhop of *Chiceſter*) an Exile under Queen *Mary:* And one of the Biſhops that aſſiſted at the Conſecration of Archbiſhop *Parker*. He was an antient Profeſſor of the Goſpel, and belonged to the Church of *Canterbury*, when *Cranmer* was Archbiſhop there; and a great Preacher in thoſe Times of King *Henry* VIII. and was one of the ſix Preachers there. And for a Farewel of this antient Reverend Father, I ſhall repeat two or three Paſſages of this Preachers Sermons at *Canterbury*. Preaching at St. *Ephies* on *Aſcenſion* Day, *An.* 1541. he had this Expreſſion, “ That there was none in Heaven but Chriſt only, ” [meaning probably, as Mediator there with God, in oppoſition to the Popiſh Doctrine of the Interceſſion of *Saints*.] And another Time in the Chapter Houſe of *Chriſts* Church *Canterbury*; “ That no Man “ might pray in this wiſe in *Latin*, or other Tongue, unleſs he un- “ derſtandeth what he prayeth ” And at another Time at the ſame Church, “ That the Supper of the Lord, which is *Sacrificium &* “ *Hoſtia* is not *Hoſtia pro peccatis*, but *Hoſtia Laudis*. Much more of his Doctrines in his Sermons againſt the Principles and Practices then maintained, may be read in my *Memorials* of Archbiſhop *Cranmer*. On the Seal in hard Wax of one of this Biſhops Letters, (which I have ſeen) appears his Coat of Arms; being on a Bend three Creſcents; and round about it theſe Words, *Meliora ſpero*: As if it had been his *Motto* in his Exile.

Memorials of Archbiſhop Cranm. *p.* 106. *Print.* 1694.

Eccleſiaſtical Exerciſes in the Dioceſs of Cheſter.

There were *Exerciſes*, which were alſo called *Propheſies*, not long before this Time uſed among the Clergy; ſet on Foot, and encouraged by the Biſhops in their Dioceſſes, which were *Conferences* held about Religion; intended for the better improving of Perſons in Holy Orders, in the Knowledge of Scripture and Learning in Divinity. But by reaſon of ſome Abuſes thereof were under Archbiſhop *Grindal*, commanded to ceaſe by the Queens Special Order, as hath been ſhewn by me in the *Life* of that Archbiſhop. I find now they were uſed again, but with Caution: At leaſt in the Dioceſs of *Cheſter*; where and in other *Northern* Parts the Miniſters were more ignorant, and ſo more Care was required for their Inſtruction. Such Directions for every ſeveral *Exerciſe* were given to the reſpective Moderators by *Chaderton*, the Biſhop: Now no more called *Propheſies*, but *Eccleſiaſtical Exerciſes*. The Directions follow:

Print. 1710.

The Biſhops Directions for them. MSS. Ra. Thoresby.

“ The *Moderators* of every ſeveral Exerciſe ſhall ſelect ſuch Parts “ of Scripture to be handled amongſt the Miniſters, that are to at- “ tend the ſame, as they in their Diſcretions ſhall think meet. So “ that they take, in every ſeveral Place of the Exerciſes, divers “ Parts of Scripture.

“ The *Writers* ſhall be appointed to gather ſeveral *Obſervations* “ upon every Verſe of that Part of Scripture, which ſhall be aſſign- “ ed unto them; and ſo proceed with the Whole, Verſe by Verſe.

“ The *Speakers* ſhall be appointed (every of them) in order to “ treat upon ſo many Verſes of the ſame, as by an equal Diſtributi- “ on of the whole Text amongſt them all, ſhall be aſſigned to every “ one.

The Manner of proceeding in the Exerciſe.

" Prayer ſhall be aptlie conceived for the preſent Occaſion; for " the bleſſed Eſtate of her Majeſty, of the Church and Common- " wealth, by one of the Moderators. Who in order ſhall, every " of them, accompliſh the ſame at every ſeveral Exerciſe.

" Then the firſt Moderator ſhall propoſe and read the firſt Verſe " of the Text, which is to be handled.

" Upon which Verſe the Writers ſhall in order read the Obſer- " vations which they have gathered.

" After whom the Speaker, aſſigned to that Part of the Text, ſhall " in ſome larger Manner diſcourſe upon the ſame.

" After him the reſt of the Speakers ſhall have Liberty to give " any brief Notes upon that Verſe.

" In all which Action of the Writers and Speakers, the Mode- " rators care, that propoſed the Verſe, ſhall be to make ſpecial Obſer- " vation of any Error, Negligence, or Ignorance in any of them; " and the ſame to correct and reform with as brief Speech as may " be. After which he ſhall further add ſuch Obſervations as he " ſhall gather upon the ſaid Verſe. And after him the reſt of the " Moderators and Preachers, in due Order, ſhall do the like; till " as much be ſaid upon that Verſe, as ſhall be thought convenient.

" All which Time both the Speakers and Writers ſhall take Notes " in writing, of thoſe Obſervations which ſhall be given by any the " Speakers, Preachers or Moderators. And ſo in due Order ſhall all " the Moderators proceed with the whole Text, Verſe by Verſe.

" Then ſhall the Moderators call before them thoſe, whom by " any Information they are to admoniſh of any Miſdemeanour or " Enormities of Life. And if after ſuch Admonition they ſhall " again fall into the like Offence, then the Moderators ſhall certifie " the Biſhop thereof; and crave Suſpenſion of them.

" After, the Moderators ſhall proceed againſt the Abſents in this " Sort. *viz.* They ſhall at the next Exerciſe after every ſuch Ab- " ſence, call before them the ſaid Parties: Who, if they cannot be " able to prove a ſufficient Cauſe of their Abſence, and the ſame " well approved by the Moderators, then the Moderators ſhall ex- " act the Mulct impoſed by the Order ſet down by the Right Re- " verend Lord Biſhop, without abating any Part thereof, in any " Reſpect. Leſt any thereby learn to preſume of Favour in ſuch " Caſe to be ſhewed. Which Mulct, if any ſhall refuſe to ſatisfy; " and not duly conform themſelves in that Behalf, or not come in " Place to give Accompts of their Actions; then the Moderators " ſhall without Delay proceed to Suſpenſion, according to the ſaid " Orders. Which Suſpenſion they forthwith certify unto the Bi- " ſhop according to the ſaid Orders: And further with all Inſtance " proſecute the ſaid Suſpenſion, with full Effect.

" In fine, the whole Action is to be concluded with Prayer, as " it was begun.

And for the better eſtabliſhing theſe Exerciſes among this *Northern* Clergy (who began to ſlacken their Attendance thereon) the

ANNO 1585.

The Biſhops Letters to the Moderators.

ſaid Biſhop ſent a Circulary Letter to thoſe, who being Perſons of the better Learning and Dignity, he had appointed *Moderators:* Signifying his Authority committed to them for holding theſe Exerciſes. Wherein the Biſhop was backed by an Order of the Privy Council, for the better improving of the Clergy there. And that it was in Purſuance of Inſtructions from the Lords of the Council. By Vertue whereof he gave them Power to admoniſh or ſuſpend the Parſons, Vicars, Curates for Abſence, or other Miſdemeanours.

The Days for theſe Exerciſes.

The Days for the holding theſe Exerciſes were each *Thurſday* in the Month. The Places were *Preſcot*, *Burie*, *Padian* and *Preſton*, being Towns in each of the four Deanries within that Dioceſs. In the Church of each Town all the Clergy of that Deanry, with the Schoolmaſters aſſembled together, to ſpeak, if they were able, or otherwiſe write their Minds upon the Text of Scripture, given by the Moderator. They met at eight a Clock in the Morning; and a Sermon was preached by the Moderator upon the Subject; and the Exerciſes, which were firſt, and the Sermon which followed (where all the Congregation of the People had liberty to be preſent) laſted till Eleven. And then the Clergy met again at One in the Afternoon, and broke up at Three. *Mulcts* were laid upon ſuch as were abſent, of one, two or three Shillings, or more, and other Penalties upon further Neglects. What was writ by each Clergyman was ſent to the Biſhop, with his Name ſubſcribed, to review; that he might obſerve the Abilities and Proficiency of them, chiefly the younger Divines, that were enjoined this Taſk. And the Biſhop took Notice, what Profit came to them hereby after the Experience of ſome Time, and how much good had accrued by Means of this Practice. But ſee the whole Relation, with the Biſhop of *Cheſters* Letter to the Moderators, as I tranſcribed it from the Original, in the ſecond Volume of the *Annals*. Numb. 38, 39.

Lord Bacons *Judgment of the* Exerciſes. Advertiſements, *p.* 137.

Of theſe Exerciſes (which were all one with thoſe called *Propheſies* in Archbiſhop *Grindals* Time) I cannot but obſerve the Lord *Bacons* Approbation of them with ſome Regulation, (in his *Advertiſement* touching the Controverſies of the Church of *England*.) “ Is there no Mean to trade and nurſe up Miniſters? For the Field “ of *Univerſities* will not ſerve, though they were never ſo well “ governed, to train them, I ſay, not to preach, (for that every “ Man confidently adventures to do) but to preach ſoundly, and “ to handle the Scriptures with Wiſdom and Judgment. I know “ *Propheſying* was ſubject to great Abuſe, and would be more a- “ buſed now, becauſe Heat of Contention is encreaſed. But, I ſay, “ the only Reaſon is, the Abuſe was, becauſe there was admitted to “ it a popular Auditory; and it was not contained within a private “ Conference of Miniſters. Which Inconveniences were remedied “ in theſe after-*Exerciſes*.

Scambler *Biſhop of* Norwich, *his Complaint of his Predeceſſor.*

Edmund Scambler, D. D. a Native of *Lancaſhire*, bred at *Cambridge*, was the laſt Year tranſlated from the Epiſcopal See of *Peterburgh* to that of *Norwich*. Whom I obſerve this Year finding great Fault with his immediate Predeceſſor, *Freak*, for paſſing away the Judicial Offices of the See; (to the weakening of his Authority and Safety) by a Patent to one *Withipole*. Of this he firſt made Com-

ANNO 1585.

plaint to the Queens Secretary *Walſingham.* Who informed the Lords of the Council therewith. From whom certain Letters were ſent, to call the Parties and the Matter in Queſtion before them. And again, he, the ſaid Biſhop, addreſt to the Lord Treaſurer; (to whoſe Wiſdom and Impartiality the Biſhops uſed always to make their Application) “That if his Complaint at that Time deſerved Relief, he moſt humbly beſought his accuſtomed Favour towards him therein. For that if it were not a Cauſe that touched his publick Governance, whereof he had Charge (as his Letter imported) he could then forbear and conceal the Wrongs: But that hereby his Courſe was hindred, his Power weakned; that he could neither place his own Officers, (of whoſe Fidelities he reſted aſſured) in quiet State, nor command them, that by his Predeceſſors were impatented, (unleſs they would themſelves) if they reſiſted. That all the private Hurts of the Epiſcopal Poſſeſſions (although they were in Number many, which never before his Time were ſo ſuddenly letten in Leaſe, upon his Departure), had not troubled him ſo much as the paſſing of theſe Judicial Offices, no more than all. On which ſtood the Fall or Riſe of his Succeſſors.” And then addreſſing his Suit to the Lord Treaſurer, uſed theſe Words: “Having therefore, my very good Lord, a Care to perform, as I am able the Duties to me appertaining in my Function, you will, I truſt, continue my Honourable Lord, ſo far as your Honour may; and I require only to reduce into its priſtine State my Juriſdiction. So ſhall I have Comfort in my Actions, and reſt fully protected under mine own Officers in Safety. In the mean while I commit your Lordſhip to the Tuition of the Almighty, long to continue your Lordſhips Days, happy as well by Health, as with much increaſe of Honour.” It was dated from *Ludham* the 16th of *Auguſt*, 1585. I add only this, that as this Biſhop *Scambler* complained of his Predeceſſors wronging this his Biſhoprick of *Norwich*, *Scamblers* Succeſſor had not leſs Cauſe to complain of him, who had ſpoiled *Petersburgh*; impaired the Honour, Privileges and Revenues of it; if we may believe the Author of the Hiſtory of that Church. And another Author in his Hiſtory of *Sacrilege* tells us, That he did as much as well he might to impoveriſh the Church, making a Leaſe of moſt of the Manors and Lands thereof; and among them, two Abbies, *Blackborough* and *Wrongy.*

Hiſtory of the Church of Petersburgh, *p.* 73.

Hiſtory of Sacrilege, *by Sir* H. Spelm.

This Year died *Curteſs*, Biſhop of *Chicheſter.* He was Chaplain to the Queen, and a great Court Preacher: But died poor and left a Widow. *Tho. Bickley*, D. D. and Warden of *Merton* College ſucceeded him in that See. Upon his Death was ſent up to the Lord Treaſurer an Account of the preſent State of the Biſhoprick: As to the Revenues and the Deductions out of it, *viz.* Fees, Subſidies, Repriſals, *&c.* This will be found tranſcribed from the Original in the *Appendix.* At the End whereof were theſe few Lines added by him, probably that was ſent to take the Survey, *viz.*

Biſhop of Chicheſter *dies.*

The State of the Biſhoprick.

Numb. LVI.

“*Item*, No hope to recover any Thing, the Biſhops Widow being left very poor. So that the Weight thereof is to fall upon the next Biſhop.

“ *Item*, The Woods are ſo ſpoiled, as there is ſcarce ſufficient for “ Fire Wood.

Inventory of his Goods.

There was alſo an Inventory taken of this Biſhops Goods and Effects, by *Tho. Bowyer*; *Richard Lewkener* and *George Bynion*, Commiſſioners appointed, as it ſeems, from the Lord Treaſurer. Which Goods, Furniture, Books, Cattel, Plate, Armour, were found at *Alderborn* and *Chiſworth*, his two Seats or Manors. In which Inventory are ſet down his Books, (valued at 20 *l.*) his Parlament Robes, one Velvet Cuſhion, embroidered with Gold and taſſeled; one Silk grograine Gown, faced with Velvet, a Velvet Caſſock; another grograine Gown, faced with Velvet; a Night Gown of Buffin; one Cloak loined with Bages; one Velvet Hat. His Plate, one Baſin and Ewer; laid to pawn. One Silver Cup, laid to pawn. Two ſtanding Cups, gilt. His New Years Gifts, the Number not certified. At *Aldingham*, beſides Cattle (whereof were 88 Oxen, Kine 22, Horſes, Geldings, Nags, Colts and Mares, 26, and Calves, Swine, Wethers, Lambs, Corn, *&c.*) were certified in the Inventory. Of rough Timber 30 Tun; In Plate, Bowls gilt, great and ſmall 14. Baſins and Ewers, ſtanding Cups, Silver Spoons 24. Salts, and other Plate, ſome pawned. And at *Chiſworth*, his other Houſe, (where his Reſidence chiefly was) were theſe Goods noted in the ſame Inventory; (beſides ſix drawing Oxen, four fat Oxen, ſix Weaners, ſixty Load of Wood, Ploughs with their Furniture, Carts) his Armour was reckoned, *viz.* ſix Corſlets, ſix Head-pieces, twelve Calivers, ten Pikes, ten Jacks, ten Bows, twelve Halberts, Sheaf-Arrows, Powder and Match, ſeventeen Caps and Skulls. His Goods in both Places and *Chicheſter*, were valued at 199 *l.* 17 *s.* 4 *d.* Beſides many more not valued. For the deceaſed Biſhops Relations, *viz.* Mrs. *Courteis*, Mr. *Mervyn*, and Mr. *Turner* (perhaps his Sons in Law,) conveyed away ſeveral Things, as ſome Horſes, *&c.*

This Biſhop ſeemed to overlive his Incomes; affecting good Houſekeeping and Hoſpitality, after the Quality of a Lord Biſhop. And ſo died in great Debt to the Queen.

A Complaint of the Biſhop of Litchfield *and* Coventry *againſt one of his Church,* viz.

Dr. Beacon.

A Grievance happened to another of our Biſhops, *viz.* *Overton*, Biſhop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*; occaſioned about his collecting the Queens Subſidy from the Clergy of his Dioceſs: Which he was ordered to do. And had accordingly appointed ſome particular Perſons to receive. Whereof Mr. *Fitzherbert*, a Gentleman of thoſe Parts was one. But Dr. *Beacon*, a buiſy Member and Dignitary of that Church, and an Enemy to the Biſhop, had ſent up an evil Report; as though he, and ſome others, the Collectors, were needy; and ſo might not duly return the Money received. And accordingly ſome Stop was put to the Collection; and ſome others appointed to gather the ſaid Subſidy of the Clergy. This Diſgrace nearly touched the good Biſhop. Inſomuch that he diſpatched a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer; and made this juſt Complaint, giving *Beacon* his due Character, and vindicating himſelf and other his Friends employed therein. Complaining of Letters, written to the Clergy of that Dioceſs to his Diſgrace: Namely, not to pay their Subſidies to the Biſhop, or at leaſt his Order. The Copy of which Letters the

Lord Treaſurer friendly ſent to him. On which Occaſion he declared his Mind to that Lord in this pious Manner.

Writes to the Treaſurer in his own Vindication.

“That ſurely the Letters might have grieved him very much. For they touched him in Credit very near. But he thanked God, he had learned, by continual Afflictions to deſpiſe the Shame and Contumelies of this World; and to think any Thing eaſy that ſhould be laid upon him without his juſt Deſert, though never ſo hard and heavy to bear. He knew (as he went on) it was all of that Lettermonger, that notable Lettermonger Dr. *Beacon* [as he ſtiled him] his deviſing and working; who indeed gloried always in this one Point chiefly, that by his own Letters, and by procuring other Mens Letters, he could work almoſt what he liſted. But the Lord, ſaid he, in his Time ſhall judge the Man, and no doubt of it in the End will confound his Devices to his own Shame: For that he had abuſed both his Lordſhip and Mr. *Fitzherbert*, and him: His Lordſhip; in giving him falſe Information of Mr. *Fitzherbert*, and croſſing him, when he had done; and him [the Biſhop] in making him a Party in a Matter that touched him leaſt of all. And that this was now the third Time, that he had thus procured againſt him [the Biſhop] about the ſame Matter; and then uſing this Aſſeveration, “That, in good Faith, it was altogether without his juſt Deſert, as the Country and Clergy themſelves, to whom thoſe Letters were come down, could teſtify. For that they knew well enough, that neither he [the Biſhop] had meddled with any of the Queens Money, nor was about to meddle with any, but only (as he gathered his Lordſhips own liking that way by his own Letters) gave his Conſent, that Mr. *Beacon* and Mr. *Fitzherberts* Agreement to the Collection of that firſt Part of the Subſidy ſhould take place, and none otherwiſe; leaving the reſt of the Queens Money that ſhould be hereafter collected to his Lordſhips Order and Direction, to be diſpoſed of, as he ſhould think good, and as he [the ſaid Lord] ſhould conclude and determine at their Meeting before him, which was intended to be very ſhortly.

“And, as the Biſhop further added, that in very Truth, he had ſomewhat a Conſcience alſo in the Matter, to prevent a greater Miſchief that was practiſed by Dr. *Beacon* againſt the poor Gentleman, Mr. *Fitzherbert*: Whoſe Plainneſs and Simplicity, if other his Friends, that were better acquainted with Dr. *Beacons* cunning Devices, had not holpen him, the ſaid Doctor had notably abuſed to the poor Gentlemans undoing; as at their coming to his Lordſhip he ſhould more particularly underſtand. In the mean Time they truſted, that however the Doctor informed his Lordſhip, he would ſuſpend his Judgment: And upon the hearing, conſider of every Mans doing, as he deſerved. The good Biſhop ſeaſonably concludes in Behalf of himſelf and his Friends againſt this Talebearer, *viz.*

“For mine own Part I am content to put up all theſe Wrongs [thoſe falſe Informations in *Beacons* Letters to that Lord, the Copies whereof he had ſent the Biſhop to peruſe] at the Doctors Hands, and to wear them out, as I may. Only I beſeech your

ANNO 1585. " Lordſhip, know the Man hereafter, and take heed of this *Letter-monger*, that he abuſe not your Lordſhips forwardneſs and good " Meaning in her Majeſties Behalf, to the Damage and Diſcredit of " their poor Friends without Cauſe. And ſo till I repair to your " Lordſhip to *London*, I humbly take my Leave. From *Eccleſhal*, " the VIIth of *Novemb.* 1585.

Your Lordſhips always moſt dutiful to command.

W. Coven. & Lich.

The Biſhops Troubles by the Receivers of the Queens Subſidies.

The Biſhops Troubles ſtill remained upon the ſame Matter of the Queens Monies between the Receivers and him in the next Year. Several Things were charged upon him about the Receit of theſe Monies: But the Receivers of ſome of the Counties were too tardy, if not worſe; and made ſhift to repreſent their Caſe up to the Officers of the Exchequer: Who favoured them. And for the Letters, which were Informations concerning them, they were ſhewn to their Friends at Court; and ſo the Blame remained upon the Biſhop: And their Doings paſt over favourably. Upon theſe Injuries the poor dejected Biſhop opened again his Mind by Letter to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, the common Friend of the oppreſſed. And the Biſhop having been in *London* about the Cauſe for many Weeks, the ſaid Lord gave him anſwer to his Letter by Word of Mouth. Which was,

That he ſhould more particularly ſet down his Griefs; becauſe they were too general. To which the Biſhop ſoon anſwered thus by Letter. " That the Truth was, Particularities had done him " much Hurt, eſpecially when they ſent Complaints, and touched " divers Men. And that he had writ no Letters almoſt, but they " were ſeen, or ſhewed to the Parties. And that therefore he would " rather put up his Griefs as they were, than make Matter for his " Enemies to ſcan upon his Diſadvantage. That it was not many " Weeks ago, that ſome of the Exchequer ſent him Word, to take " heed, how he wreſtled with Exchequer Men. For they would " be too hard for him." And, he added, " he found it true in-" deed. For that in the End he bore away both the Blows and the " Blame.

" In fine then, (as he ſignified his Requeſt) his humble and only " Suit now therefore to his Lordſhip was, that he would call the " Receivers and him before his Lordſhip, and hear either Party; " both him, how he could charge them, and anſwer for himſelf; " and them, how they could anſwer for themſelves, and charge " him. And this he truſted his Lordſhip would grant; being the " Service of her Majeſty; and the only Cauſe, why he had now " attended there eighteen Weeks, or moſt Part thereof. And ſo " with Pardon craved, he humbly took his Leave. From his poor " Lodging in *Longditch*, the 14th of *June*, 1586.

And then by Way of Poſtſcript he addeth, That there was not ſo much Cauſe to call the Receivers of *Darby*, *Leiceſter*, and *Northampton*. For the greateſt Injuries that were offered, both to her Majeſty and him, were by the Receivers of *Staffordſhire*, *Warwickſhire*, and

North Wales. That his Lordſhip therefore might uſe his honourable Wiſdom and Diſcretion in the Matter, as he ſhould think good. And he [the Biſhop] was ready to attend his Pleaſure. The Reaſon I inſert theſe Paſſages and Circumſtances of the Biſhops in theſe Days, is (as I meet with them) that I might preſerve Memorials of them. And ſhew the Hardſhips and Difficulties they ſometimes encountred; who were the leading Men and Stays of the Church.

The Liberty of Ely *Houſe in* Holbourn *vindicated by the Biſhop againſt the City.*

The Biſhop of *Ely*, *Cox*, had this Year alſo (as well as ſome Years before) his Share of Trouble, in vindicating the Liberty of his Manour, Houſe and Lands in *Holbourn*; and his Juriſdiction, as exempt from the City of *London*; which that City had now pretended a Right to. Formerly the City only kept the Aſſize for weighing of Bread, and no other Thing: But afterwards encroached further. And here I ſhall firſt ſet down from an authentick Original Paper, the Proof made by the City of *London* concerning their pretenſed Liberties, claimed by them within the Manours and Rents of *Ely* Houſe in *Holbourn*. Which was as followeth.

Chart. Cox *Ep.* Elien.

“ Firſt, The City hath to ſhew forth one Record out of the *Huſtings*, dated the 26. Year of the Reign of *Edward* I. teſtifying the “ *Probat* of Biſhop *Kirtons* [*Kirkham*] Will; who firſt purchaſed “ the ſaid Manour and Houſe to the Biſhopric. Which was only “ proved there: But by the Executors moſt likely not knowing “ what belonged thereunto. And it may the rather ſo be thought, “ for that no ſuch like Matter concerning the ſame Manour Houſe “ and Lands, beſides that, ever was ſeen, or put in Uſe before, or “ ſince. Which if the ſame had been true and good, it would have “ been uſed, or ſpoken of ſometime ſince, there within the ſaid City.

“ *Item.* Secondly, The City hath to ſhew forth one Order, upon “ a joint Arbitrement, (as they term it) made before the late Lord “ Keeper, the Lord Earl of *Leiceſter*, and others, in the Abſence of the ſaid Lord of *Leiceſter*, being a chief Arbitrator in “ the Cauſe. And the ſame being grounded only on a ſurmiſed “ Complaint of the ſaid City; but by Words, without either Bill, “ Anſwer, or other orderly Proceeding; or yet Conſent of the Biſhop, then being the Adverſary Party. And ſo thereupon every “ Part void in Law. Which notwithſtanding, as it is ſaid, they do “ ſtill perſever and continue.

Proofs for the Liberty of Ely *Houſe in* Holbourn.

Now did the Biſhop on his Part vindicate the Liberties and Privileges of his Church under three Heads of Arguments. I. From ſeveral antient Grants of Kings. As a Grant of King *Edgar*; another Grant of *Edward* the Confeſſor before the Conqueſt. And thoſe Grants confirmed by *William* the Conqueror, King *Henry* I. King *Stephen*, King *Richard* I. and ſo down, till the Grant of *Holbourn*, purchaſed to the Biſhopric of *Ely*, by *Kirkby* the Biſhop in the Reign of King *Edward* I. Secondly, Proof of the Liberties of the ſaid *Ely Houſe* ever ſince that Purchaſe, downward from Age to Age. Thirdly, Proofs of *Holbourn Houſe* with the Appendences, to have been a Manour; and alſo a Liberty exempt from the City of *London:* As appeared by ſundry Records thereof, made in King *Edward* the Thirds Time; and ſeveral Records beſides in other Kings Reigns. And for further Proof thereof, there had always been Bailiffs and other Officers appointed within the ſaid Manour and Liberty, from Time to Time, for the due Execution thereof. But it is worth peruſing the whole Argument, tranſcribed from an Original Paper, as a worthy Record of Antiquity.

Numb. LVII.

The Revenues of the Church of Norwich *ſtruck at.*

From this Year, and before was a Conteſt between the Church of *Norwich* and Sir *Thomas Shirley*, and other *Patentees*, for the Revenues of that Cathedral, upon Pretence of *Concealment*. And the Law Suit managed by Dr. *Gardiner*, the Dean and the Chapter, continued till *Anno* 1590. In which Year it was ſettled, I think, by Act of Parliament. I have met with ſeveral Letters, Papers and Notes about the Caſe. Some whereof were theſe that follow.

The Caſe of the Church. MSS. Eccleſiaſt.

In one of theſe is ſet down the Condition of the Church, the Settlement of it by divers Princes, and the Troubles by Reaſon of Concelements, and Patents granted thereupon. Again, in another Paper the Cauſe was drawn up in theſe Words. “*May* the 2. *Anno* 30. *Henr.* 8. The King of his Regal Authority, as Supreme Head, did by his Letters Patents tranſlate the Monaſtery, which was incorporate by the Name of Prior and Convent of the Cathedral Church of the *Holy Trinity* of *Norwich*, to Dean and Chapter of the Cathedral Church of the *Holy Trinity* of *Norwich*. And by his Letters Patents gave to the ſaid Dean and Chapter all the Lands, *&c.* which before gthey did enjoy. The Dean and Chapter continuing Poſſeſſion of all the Premiſes the 3 of *June*, *Anno* 1. *Edw.* 6. by the Name of *Dean* and *Chapter* of the Cathedral Church of the *H. Trinity* of *Norwich*; ſurrendred unto the King all their Poſſeſſions the 7. of *November*, *Anno* 1. *Edward.* 6. The King did now incorporate the Dean and Chapter, and made them *Ex fundatione Edw. 6. Nov.* 9. *Ann.* 1. *Edward* 6. the King granted unto the ſaid Dean and Chapter their Poſſeſſions, excepting certain Lands to the yearly Value of 500 *l.* And reſerved to himſelf a yearly Rent of 4 ſcore and 19 Pounds, 11 Shil. 5 Pence *ob.*

“The 7. of *May*, *Ann.* 11. *Regin.* her Majeſty did pardon the ſame Dean and Chapter, of 1970 *l.* 11 *Shil.* 1 *d.* being the Arrerages of the Rent before reſerved: And remitted alſo unto them all the ſaid reſerved Rents, ſaving 50 *l.* 5 *d. per Annum.* Which is now paid unto the Exchequer.

“By Virtue of theſe ſeveral Grants, the Dean and Chapter have quietly held and enjoyed all the ſaid Premiſſes to them granted, until the ſame were by Letters Patents, dated the 24. *July*, *Ann.* 25. of the Queens Majeſty [*Ann.* 1583.] granted, as conceled Lands, unto *Theophilus Adams*, and *Robert Adams*, and their Heirs, for the yearly Rent of 5 Shil. by Virtue of former Letters Patents, made to the late Lord *Wentworth* deceaſed, dated the 24. of *July*, *Ann.* 12. of the Queen [*viz.* 1570.] Wherein is a *Proviſo*, that if the Lands, or any Part thereof, were not conceled, *Ann.* 12. then to be void.

“Upon Conſideration of theſe Grants, for that there was a yearly Rent of 50 *l.* reſerved to the Queens Majeſty, which is paid accordingly to her Majeſty; and for that there was no other Title accrued to her Majeſty touching the Premiſſes at the Time of this laſt Grant, than was in King *Edward* VI. at the Time of his

“ Grant; unleſs the Prior and all the Covent had been dead the 24th of *July*, *Ann.* 12. which indeed they were not. Therefore the Lands could not be concealed. And ſo the Patent made to *Theophilus Adams* and *Rob. Adams*, is utterly void.

The Petition of the Dean and Chapter.

“ Nevertheleſs, for that great Suits in Law may ariſe upon ſome Doubts, urged for theſe late Purchaſers; therefore the humble Petition of the Dean and Chapter, and alſo the Farmers of the Premiſſes, being above 1500 intereſſed Perſons, with the reſt, is, that an Act of Parliament may be made, to ratify all the Letters Patents made by the Dean and Chapter, according to the true Meaning thereof. For if the Grant of cancelled Lands ſhall ſtand in Force, theſe new Purchaſers would claim Land worth 2000 *l.* *per Annum*, for five Shillings by the Year; and they would for the ſame five Shillings Rent by the Year, defeat the Queens Majeſty of 50 *l. per Annum*, reſerved from the Dean and Chapter, and of the Manor of *Martham*, being in her Majeſties Poſſeſſion, worth other 50 *l. per Ann.* And they would likewiſe quite overthrow the Foundation of the Dean and Chapiter: Whereby many learned Men are, and may be from Time to Time maintained. Beſides, that all thoſe Perſons, that heretofore have purchaſed any Part of the Premiſſes, ſhould be ſubject to the like Loſs.

“ Laſtly, Whereas Sir *Tho. Sharlow* [*Shirley*] ſaith, that the Purchaſe of his Leaſe from one Mr. *Ryſe*, hath been very chargeable unto him: *Viz.* to the Sum of 11 or 1200 *l.* we do underſtand, that he never paid for the ſame above 300 *l.* which if Sir *Tho. Sharlow* [*Shirley*] be demanded by your Honours, [of the Privy Council, to whom the Cauſe was referred] we verily think he will not deny the ſame. In Conſideration whereof he hath received of Mr. *Rob. Suckling*, for one Leaſe, the Sum of 200 *l.* And hath nevertheleſs by vertue of this pretended *Concealment*, commenced Suit againſt the ſaid Mr. *Rob. Suckling*, his Fermour. What other Sums of Money he hath received of any other Perſon for his ſaid Leaſe, we know not.

“ It is alſo to be noted, that there be former Letters Patents Sir *John Parret*, of great Part of the ſame pretended concealed Lands; which hath been of long time ſithence, purchaſed by Sir *Edward Cleare*.

So that *Shirleys* Title to thoſe Lands depended upon their Concealments. This Controverſy may deſerve a little longer tarrying upon: Since what I have further to add was the Judgment of that great Lawyer *Popham*, ſometime after Lord Chief Juſtice in this Reign; as I find it under his own Hand, *viz.*

Judgment of Popham *in this Cauſe.*

“ The Priory of the *Holy Trinity* of *Norwich* was of the Foundation of the Biſhop of *Norwich*, by the Kings Licence, as it appears of Record. [The King was *William Rufus*, the Biſhop was Biſhop *Harbert*.] This Priory was by King *Henry* VIII. tranſlated from a Priory to a Dean and Chapter, without the Aſſent of the Biſhop, for any Thing that yet appeared. And therefore that Tranſlation void. And ſo reſolved by the Judgment lately given in the Exchequer.

ANNO 1585.

"Then the Monks continuing in the Houſe, as they did, the "ſame remaineth a Priory ſtill, until it were utterly relinquiſhed "by themſelves, or that they were all dead. Without which no "Choice maketh a Relinquiſhment of it ſelf.

"Then the Surrender made by the Dean and Chapter *An.* 1mo. "*Edward. Sexti*, being no Dean and Chapter in Law, is merely "void.

"Then it follows, that notwithſtanding the New Foundation of "a Dean and Chapter there, the Grant thereupon of the Priory "Lands to that Dean and Chapter, whereupon 50 *l.* Rent was to "be paid to her Majeſty and her Succeſſors for ever, was merely "void. For at that Time divers of the Monks remained ſtill in the "Houſe; and the Priory therefore not then relinquiſhed. And ſo "the Lands came not to the Crown, until after that, when all the "Monks were gone, or dead.

The Warrants for theſe two Grants, as the Particulars or Parcels granted, are to be ſhewn This the Lord Treaſurers Hand, before whom this Caſe came.

"Hereupon all thoſe Lands in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* were granted "away in one Book of *Concealments:* And after the reſt of the "Lands belonging to the ſaid Priory were granted away in another "Book of *Concealments*. Which ſecond Book doth not concern Sir "*Tho. Shirley*.

"And it follows, if theſe *Concealments* ſtand perfect, and not revoked, then her Majeſty hath loſt her 50 *l.* by the Year; and the "Dean and Chapter have loſt all their Poſſeſſions; and the Eſtates "of the Under-Tenants, having Eſtates ſithence the ſaid Tranſlation, are merely void.

"Wherefore it cannot be but for the Good of her Majeſty, and "by her Favour for the Good of the Church, and a better Relief "for the Tenants to have the ſame Concealments re-aſſured to her "Majeſty.

"And ſithence the Leaſe is to be made to Mr. *Fanſhaw* and Mr. "*Oſborn*, [that were Officers of the Exchequer] being Perſons choſen, of Truſt to deal reaſonably with the Tenants, the Tenants "are in expectation to be in better Caſe, than to have it remain in "Patentees of Concealments. And the Dean and Chapter may by "by her Majeſties Favour have Aſſurance of the Lands in better "Sort than now it ſtandeth; both for the Valew, and for the exceſſive Leaſes already made by the Dean and Chapter, and the "Aſſignes of the Patentees reaſonably dealt with.

"But admit the Aſſurance upon the Concealment be doubtful or "unperfect; yet to have that Title of Concealment re-aſſured to her "Majeſty, and by a Leaſe to be made to Mr. *Fanſhaw* and Mr. *Oſborn*, doth leſs prejudice to the Dean and Chapter, and their Tenants, than to leave it, as it now ſtandeth, in the Hands of the "Patentees.

Jo. Popham.

Articles of Agreement propounded.

The next Year (*viz.* 1587.) there were Articles of Agreement propounded between the Dean and Chapter and the Patentees; and drawn up by the Queens Atturney and Solicitor. And being offered to the Dean, he in certain Words and Conditions, accorded. But ſome

ANNO 1585.

ſome Exceptions happened: So as it came as yet to no poſitive Agreement.

The State of the Cathedral Church.

It will open this Cauſe further, if we take the State of this Cathedral Church, as it was ſaid to be truly ſet down by one on the Side of the Patentees: Shewing alſo the Effect of a Warrant from the Queen to the Lord Treaſurer; authorizing him to procure a Leaſe to be drawn up in Truſt to *Fanſhaw* and *Osborn*, for making new Leaſes to the Tenants. Which Paper being ſomewhat long, and letting in much Light into this remarkable Suit, I have diſpoſed it in the *Appendix*.

Numb. LVII.

The Matter was depending till Ann. 1588.

The Buſineſs ſtill hung for ſome Years after. And the Cauſe thus depending, the Queen at length referred the ordering the whole Matter to the Lord Treaſurer, and to Sir *Walter Mildmay*, Chancellor of the Exchequer, as two Honourable Perſons moſt indifferent. But the Buſineſs was not at an End, even in the Year 1588: when we may haer more of it.

CHAP. XXVII.

A Motion made by Travers *to* Hooker, *now become Maſter of the* Temple, *to ſtay for a Call of the People. His Anſwer:* Cartwright *returned home. Some Univerſity Matters. One called before the Vicechancellor of* Cambridge, *for a Sermon* ad Clerum, *about keeping the Sabbath. A new printing Preſs at* Oxford. *A Book of* Ethics, *the firſt Book printed there. Conteſt about the Antiquity of the Univerſities. Lord* Lumley *gives Books to* Cambridge. *The want of an Univerſity in* Ireland. *Slanders raiſed of the Lord Treaſurer. Some Variance between the Earl of* Leiceſter *and him. Letters between them.* Philip *Earl of* Arundel, *fined.* Edward *Lord* Beauchamp. Davys *finds out the* North Weſt *Paſſage. His Letter to Sir* Francis Drake.

A Motion made to Hooker, *when he firſt became Maſter of the* Temple.

SOMETHING occurred this Year concerning *Puritans* and *Schiſmaticks*. When *Hooker* was to be Maſter of the *Temple*; *Travers*, the Reader there, and two other Gentlemen, the Evening before he was to preach, came to him: The Effect of their Conference with him was, that he ſhould change his Purpoſe of preaching there the next Day; and to ſtay, till *Travers* had given Notice of him to the Congregation; that ſo their Allowance

Anſwer to Travers. Supplicat. p. 470.

might ſeal his [*viz. Hookers*] Calling. I ſet down this the rather to ſhew, how *Travers* endeavoured to inſinuate his own Principles ſlightly upon *Hooker*; *viz.* of the Peoples Election of their Miniſter. But that Reverend Man was aware of it by the Anſwer he made: " That as in Place where ſuch Order was, he would not " break it; ſo here where it never was, he would not of his own " Head take upon him to begin it. But liking very well the Mo- " tion of the Opinion which he had of his good Meaning who made " it, he required him not to miſlike of this his Anſwer.

Faults found with Hooker.

But this diſpleaſed. Some angry Informations were daily ſent out: Intelligences given out far and wide, what a dangerous Enemy was crept in. This occaſioned a ſecond Conference between *Travers* and him: When a common Friend had requeſted him [*Travers*] to utter thoſe Things wherein he found himſelf any way grieved. Then he firſt renewed the Memory of *Hookers* entring into this Charge by Vertue only of a *human Creature.* For ſo the want of the Formality of Popular Allowance was then cenſured. To this was annexed a Catalogue, partly of cauſeleſs Surmiſes; as that *Hooker* had conſpired againſt him, and ſought Superiority over him, and partly of Faults; as praying in the Entrance of his Sermon only, and not in the End: Naming *Biſhops* in his Prayer: [That Order being holden by the *Puritans* as Antichriſtian] and kneeling, when he received the Communion, and ſuch like. I take this out of Mr. *Hookers* Anſwer to a *Supplication* made by *Travers* to the Council, full of great ſuppoſed Crimes laid to that learned Mans Charge: To note hence the Opinions and Principles ſo conteſted for by Men, called then the *New Reformers.*

I refer the Reader to Mr. *Hookers* own Anſwers: Only I obſerve by the Way concerning one of the Faults laid to his Charge, *viz.* that of praying for *Biſhops*, that it was a Cuſtom of the *Puritans* many Years after, to omit the Mention of the Biſhops in their Prayers. Thus in the Year 1595, the Archdeacon of *London* viſited the Churches there: And when the Church-wardens Anſwers to the Articles concerning the Miniſters, were given in, the Churchwardens of *Aldermary* Church, informed, Concerning the Prayer of their Miniſter, one *Jolliff*, M. A. " That he prayed for the Queens " Majeſty, but left out the Title of *Supremacy*; and that he refuſed " to pray for Archbiſhops and Biſhops, *Nomine.*

Cartwright *returned home.*

I find *Tho. Cartwright*, the Chief of the *Puritan* Sect (of whom many Things have been ſaid before) was now returned home from beyond Sea: Whither he had retired and abode for divers Years. For his Troubles that he had created in the Church, by his Writings and Readings in the Univerſity and elſewhere, made him liable to danger here at home. Inſomuch that he was informed, Officers were appointed to apprehend him, as a Promoter of Sedition. Whereupon in an elegant *Latin* Epiſtle to the Lord Treaſurer, apologizing for himſelf, he prayed that Lord to uſe his Intereſt with the Queen for his Safety, giving ſome Account of his Behaviour, when abroad. This was writ in *April.* And he wrote alſo to the Privy Council: *Quod in me juvandi voluntate animum non omnino adverſum & alienum eſſe conſiderem*, *i. e.* " That he truſted, that the Lord Treaſurers

“ Mind was not ſo averſe, nor alienated from him; but that there was in him a Will to be helpful to him: *Quinque jam annos peregrè a Patriâ agens, i. e.* That he had now lived five Years from his own Country. And that almoſt all thoſe Years he ſpent in the Miniſtry of the Church of *England*; which remained in the Parts beyond Sea. And in which Time he laboured under a very doubtful Diſeaſe. And that by much Shaking and Agitation [which ſeemed to be an Ague] he fell into a *Tabes*, (perhaps a Conſumption, or as they called it an *Hectic*) ſo that by the Phyſicians he was adviſed to leave that Air where he was, [*Antwerp* I think] an Enemy to him; and to return to his own Country. But that being now come neceſſarily for the Recovery of his Health, that there were ſuch as watched to apprehend him, that they might caſt him into Priſon, when he laboured all he could abroad to ſhew himſelf peaceable.” And the good Succeſs *Cartwright* obtained appears in a Letter of Thanks, wrote in *June* following, to the aforeſaid Nobleman, in repreſenting him favourably to the Parliament, as he acknowledged; ſpeaking of his quiet Behaviour abroad, *in Clariſſimo Regni Conſeſſu de me dixiſti*, whereby his Peace was obtained. And how his Buſineſs was referred to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and how friendly and favourably he was dealt with by him, appeared by a Letter of the Earl of *Leiceſters*, to the Archbiſhop, by thankfully acknowledging the ſame ſet down in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitgift, *Book* III. *ch.* 13.

Univerſity Matters.

Now ſomething concerning the *Univerſities*, and Matters relating to Learning.

Sundays *profaned; reproved in a* Clerum.

The *Sundays* ſet apart for the publick and ſolemn Worſhip of God, were now a-days much profaned in Riot and Intemperance; chiefly cauſed by *Interludes* and Sports, practiced on the Eves of thoſe Days, and the Afternoons alſo. Inſomuch that in a Seſſions of Parliament, *An.* 27. *Regin.* a Bill was put up for the better Obſervation of that Day. And a Sermon was now preached at *Cambridge ad Clerum* by one *John Smith*, M. A. venting therein a Doctrine for keeping the Chriſtian Sabbath according to the Law and Practice of the *Jews*. Which being new to many of the Scholars that heard him, he was informed againſt to the Vicechancellor and Heads. And for which the Preacher was cited before them: When divers Queſtions concerning that Holy Day were put to him, and others likewiſe. But take the whole Account thereof from the Univerſity Regiſter.

Aſſerting Jewiſh *Sabbath.*

In Cauſa Jo. Smith *in Artibus Mri. Acta quædam.*

The Preacher cited before the Vicechancellor. Regiſt. Rev. T. Baker.

Primo die Quadrages. 1585. *Secundum,* &c. *Præfatus Magiſter concionatus eſt, &c.* “ The firſt Day of *Lent*, 1585. the foreſaid Maſter of Arts preached. In whoſe Sermon ſome Things delivered by him gave occaſion of Offence. Whereupon *Febr.* 21. he appeared before Dr. *Perne*, Deputy Vicechancellor, in the Preſence of *Styll*, *Bell*, *Norgate*, *Legge* and *Hatcher*, Doctors of Divinity, and Mr. *Barwel*; Heads of Colleges; and confeſſed by the Subſcription of his Hand, that he had ſpoke the following Words, *viz. Si illud verum ſit, quod auditione accepi, iſtiuſmodi*

“ *certè ludos diris devoveo, & Actores & Spectatores; ſi eos metiver pede, arbitraver, certè, vel quod eſſent Dii nati, vel Satanæ futuri. O! tempora: O! mores: O! Magiſtratus.* Adding further theſe Words, “That the Plays at *Saturday* and *Sunday* at Night were Breaches of the Chriſtian Sabbath. On *Sunday*; for that they were at it before the Sun was ſet. On *Saturday*; for diſabling of their Bodies for the Sabbath Duties. 2do. For that by the Equity of the *Jews* Sabbath, we are *feriari ab occaſu pridiano ab ordinariis vitæ muneribus per* 24 *horas: in Sabbato feriandum, Jure divino.*

His Words.

“ *Febr.* 26. *Ann. Dom. Secundum, &c.* 1585. *in Magna Camera, &c.* The 26th of *February* 1585. In the great Chamber of *Humphrey Tyndal*, S. T. P. Vicechancellor of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, in *Queens* College. Preſent the aforeſaid Vicechancellor, Doctors *Styll, Goad, Peter Baro, Norgate* and *Legge*; and Maſters, *Chaderton, Whitacre* and *Barwel*, S. *Tha. Bacc.* the following Queſtions were propounded by *John Smith*, M. A. collected from a certain Sermon preached *Ad Clerum* by him, the firſt Day of *Lent* the Year aforeſaid. To which the ſaid *Smith* anſwered, as followeth. And the ſaid Vicechancellor, and the reſt Aſſeſſors, aſſerted their Judgments concerning the aforeſaid Queſtions, as followeth.

“ I. Whether the Chriſtian Sabbath is to be kept *Jure divino*, from Even to Even? *Smith* and the reſt anſwered, Negatively.

“ II. Whether the Time of the Lords Day is to be continued, *Jure divino*, by the Space of 24 Hours? *Smith* anſwered in the Affirmative, all the reſt, Negatively.

“ III. Whether the Chriſtian Sabbath is broken, when ſome Thing is done, which is not neceſſary, or religious? *Smith* Anſwered, Affirmatively: So that *Neceſſary* be not too ſtrictly taken. All the reſt, Negatively; ſo that thoſe Actions do not hinder Religion, or are not an Offence to the Brethren.

“ IV. Whether Chriſtians are bound ſo ſtrictly to the Obſervation of the Lords Day, in reſpect of *Works*, as the *Jews* to the Obſervation of the *Sabbath*? *Smith* and the reſt anſwered Negatively.

And in fine, the ſaid *Smith* promiſed, and undertook, to interpret his Opinion of thoſe Things, doubtfully and uncertainly delivered in his aforeſaid Sermon, more openly, largely and plainly in another Sermon *Ad Clerum*, either in the End of that Term, or in the Beginning of the next. Yet on that Condition, that what he ſhall ſay he ſhall firſt faithfully ſhew in Writing to the Vicechancellor, and the ſame, in all approved by his Judgment, teach the Auditors in his Sermon *Ad Clerum*.

Nothing appears further in the Univerſity Regiſter concerning this *Smith*. And ſo we may conclude in his next Sermon he explained himſelf to Satisfaction.

A Conteſt between the Univerſity and Sir Walter Rawley.

Another Thing I have to relate concerning this Univerſity is a Secular Matter. Wherein a Conteſt happened this Year between them and Sir *Walter Rawley*. Who having a Patent for Wine-Licences, claimed a Right, by that general Grant, from the Crown, to appoint Vintners for drawing Wine in *Cambridge*, and ſetting the Price thereof. And in ſome Letters he ſpake big to that Purpoſe: But taken down by the Lord *Burghley*, that Univerſities Chancellor, in ſmoother Language. And in the Iſſue gave an Account of this Buſineſs in a Letter to Dr. *Norgate*, his Vicechancellor, and the reſt of the Heads. Which is as follows.

Lord Burghleys *Letter to the Univerſity thereupon.*

" After my very hartie Commendations. Whereas upon the " Queſtion grown to the infringing of your Charter, whereby you " pretend to have Authority by the ſame, to nominate ſuch Perſons " as ſhould ſell any Wine in that Univerſity, and for ſetting of " Prices upon the ſame Wine; I was both to require my two Lords, " the Chief Juſtices, to deliver their Opinions in Law, how far " forth you might ſo do. Which after the hearing of your Counſil, and the adverſe Parties, they have delivered their Opinion, " to be ſuch as is expreſt in this Paper included; ſubſcribed with " my Hand, being a Double of that which they ſent unto me, ſubſcribed with both their Hands. And therefore you ſhall do well " to acquaint your learned Council herewith: And according to " their Opinions, how far forth you may proceed therein, by Law, " to maintain the ſame accordingly; and to impeach all others " which ſhall go about to impugne the ſame. So Fare you well. " From the Court this 26th of *July*, 1585.

Your very loving Friend,

W. Burghley.

Vintners in Cambridge, *An Original.*

The Paper included follows: " *Primo Julii*, 1585. For the " Matter touching the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, and Mr. *Rawlie*, " for the Nomination of *Vinteners*, and ſetting Price of Wine there.

" Firſt, touching the Nomination of *Vinteners* there, we think it " appertaineth to the Univerſity by Uſage and Charters from her " Majeſty, confirmed by Parliament: And that Mr. *Rawlie* can " nominate none there.

" For the *Price*; it ſeemeth they may ſet Prices; ſo as it be according to the Statute, and not otherwiſe. And if the Vinteners " ſet at higher Prices, they are to be puniſhed by Law. Which " Penalty Mr. *Rawlie* may diſpence withal. And yet cannot ſue " for the Penalty by his Patent, againſt the Statute Laws. For " therein all Liberties to the Univerſity is excepted.

Subſcribed, *W. Burghley*. *C. Wraye*, *Ed. Anderſon.*

A new printing Preſs at Oxon.

In the other Univerſity of *Oxford* was a new printing Preſs erected about this Year (whether any before, I know not) given as a ſuitable Preſent to that Univerſity by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, their High Chancellor. And the firſt Book printed there was a Book of *Ethics*, made by one *Caſe*, a learned Man there, intitled, *Speculum Queſtionum Moralium*. Which Book the Author dedicated to the ſaid Earl of *Leiceſter*, and to the Lord *Burghley*, Chancellor of the other Univerſity.

In

ANNO 1585.

A Book of Ethics firſt there printed.

In his Addreſs to the former he gave three Reaſons, why he dedicated this Book to him. Firſt, as a Preſent to him from their new printing Preſs, ſet up by his Favour, in theſe Words, *Novum hoc preli Beneficium, quod, te Auctore, noſtra Academia nuper recepit,* &c. *Prelum hoc novum (cui Author exiſtis) hunc novum de Moribus Libellum preſſit.* "That this new Benefit of a Preſs, their Univer-"ſity acknowledged to have lately received of him, the Donor: "And that this new Preſs of his Gift, impreſſed that new Book of "*Morals.* And that the Author of this Book might ſeem ingrateful, "if he ſhould not preſent this firſt Fruits of the ſaid Preſs to him. Secondly, Another Reaſon of this Dedication was, that extraordinary Love towards the Univerſity, which his coming to them had greatly confirmed. And thirdly, That Golden Spur, when he was there at *Oxford*, that he gave him, to excite him to thoſe kind of Studies. And then he bringeth the Founders of the Colleges making their Congratulatory Speeches to the Earl, as the great Reſtorer and Preſerver of their Foundations: "Thanking him for his well "deſerving toward that Univerſity. That he had twice or thrice "preſerved all Things there going to decay, immortal Thanks for "that: And that the ſame being preſerved, he had confirmed with "many and great Privileges obtained, they rendred him ſtill greater "Thanks.

The Conteſt between the Univerſities for Antiquity.

And then taking occaſion from the hot Contentions at that Time between the two Univerſities for Precedency in regard of Antiquity, the grave *Moraliſt* applied to both the Chancellors: Shewing how childiſh and trifling this Conteſt was; and that the Students there had greater and more ſubſtantial Matters to concern themſelves about; proceeding in theſe Words: *Non de nugis, non de Antiquitatis titulis & umbris inanis Gloriolæ contendimus. Quippe nunc utrinque in utriuſque corpus numeroſè inſerti, una, ut ita dicam, Academia ſummus,* Oxonia Canbrigienſis, *&* Cantabrigia Oxonienſis. *Studio fortaſſe æmulationis ardemus, ſed contentionis nulla facula incenſi exardemus. Nam quæ cauſa litis, quæ bilis cauſa inter Sorores eſſet? Preſertim cum unam matrem, Angliam dulciſſimam, Patres duos, eoſdémque Reges,* [Alfridum *&* Cantabrum *ſcilicet*] *Fundatores multos; eoſdemque omnes, aut in Eccleſa Pontifices, aut in civitate Proceres, habuerint.*

Contention about Ariſtotle *and* Ramus.

And whereas at this Time and ſomewhat before, another great Conteſt aroſe in both Univerſities, concerning the two Philoſophers, *Ariſtotle*, and *Ramus*, then chiefly read, and which of them was rather to be ſtudied; he gave them both their Commendations and Characters in his ſaid Epiſtle: *Juvenilem ardorem animi in utraque Academia decertaſſe; utrum in perdiſcendis Artibus plus* Ariſtotelis *magnum Acumen quàm* Rami *fluens ingenium prævaleret.*

Lord Lumleys *Library.*

There was ſome Struggle alſo about this Time between the two Univerſities, for the Lord *Lumleys* Library, noted then for a choice Collection of Books, for his Gift thereof to their Libraries: Both claiming an Intereſt in him for that Purpoſe; *Cambridge*, where he had been once a Scholar; and *Oxford*, whereof he was now High Steward. Wherefore Dr. *Perne*, one of the antient Heads of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, put the Vicechancellor and Heads upon writing their Letters to that Lord, to grant them the Favour of his Books for the furniſhing of their Library. And that this Epiſtle might have the better Succeſs, he communicated it to the Biſhop of *Canterbury*. Who ſo favourably eſpouſed their Requeſt, that he delivered it himſelf at Court to the Lord *Lumley*. And the Iſſue of it was, That he gave them a conſiderable Portion of *Greek* and *Latin* Books out of his Store. Which ſtill are, or lately were, in that Univerſity Library.

Benefactors to the Cambridge *Library.* T. Bak. S. Th. B.

Dr. Coſins MSS.

And what the Numbers of Books that Lord gave on this Addreſs, appears from a Catalogue of the Benefactors to that Library, as it was taken by my learned and worthy Friend, in theſe Words. *Honorabilis Dominus* Lumley *dedit Libros* 89 *aut circiter*. To which was added what he found writ in another MS. " *His accenſendi* " *ſunt Hon vir Dns*. Nic. Bacon, *Magni Sigilli Cuſtos: & Dns.* " *Guil. Cecil.* Who together gave 200 Books *Latin* and *Greek:* " Whereof Sir *Nic. Bacon* gave 103.

Of this Affair thus Dr. *Pern* wrote to the Lord *Burghley*, Chancellor of that Univerſity: " I cauſed your Honours Vicechancellor " of *Cambridge*, and divers of the Heads, to write to my Lord " *Lumley*, for ſome of his Books to be beſtowed on your Lordſhips " Univerſity of *Cambridge*. The which Letter I did ſhew to my " Lord of *Canterbury*. Who did deliver the ſame to my good Lord " *Lumley* at the Court. I did alſo cauſe your Vicechancellor to " write to Mr. *Watſon*, my Lord *Lumleys* Chaplain; that he might " ſolicit my Lord, his Maſter, to be good to the Library of your " Honours Univerſity: Where his Lordſhip was a Student. For " that I did know divers *Oxford* Men were greatly deſirous, that he " ſhould beſtow all his Books on the Univerſity of *Oxford*, he being their Steward." This was dated the 18th Day of *Octob.* 1585.

No Univerſity yet in Ireland.

There was no Univerſity as yet in *Ireland*; a Thing much deſired; ſince Learning might produce a better Effect in order to Peace and Submiſſion to their lawful Prince, than the Wars in that unhappy Kingdom. The Character of the *Iriſh* was, that there were excellent Wits among them. This was hinted by *Caſe*, the beforeſaid learned Man of *Oxford*, in his Epiſtle Dedicatory abovementioned. " Where, in his Addreſs to both the Chancellors of our Uni-" verſities, he wiſhed for an Univerſity founded in that Kingdom; " where he ſpake (as he ſaid) by Experience, were many ripe Wits, " and which might be a great Means of ſoftening their Manners, " which in ſome Parts of that Land were very fierce: Chiefly for this " Cauſe, *Quòd in tam beato ſolo nullum Muſarum Collegium, nullum* " *Philoſophiæ Seminarium floreat. Arte enim, non Marte emolliun-* " *tur mores*, i. e. That in ſo bleſſed a Soil no College of Muſes, no " Seminary of Philoſophy flouriſhed. For Mens Manners are molli-" fied by Art and not by War.

Slanders raiſed of the Lord Treaſurer.

Now for a few Remarks of ſome eminent Men about theſe Times, and ſuch as were about the Queens Perſon, and her Counſillors. One whereof was that great and wiſe Stateſman, the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, upon whom, notwithſtanding his Honour, and Integrity, many grievous Miſreports and Slanders were raiſed, and carried

ANNO 1585.

about: As, that the Suits of great Men ſucceeded according to his Will and Pleaſure; and his great Intereſt with the Queen was ſuch, that he hindred certain profitable Negotiations; his great Wealth gotten by his Service: That he abuſed her Majeſty and the Office that he held: That he was guilty of Falſhood, Injuſtice, Bribery, of Diſſimulation, and double Dealing in Advice, in Counſil, either with her Majeſty or with her Counſillors. All this came to his Knowledge, and partly by ſecret Intelligence from an intimate Friend of his unknown. Theſe baſe Slanders moved this worthy Patriot to ſome heat; calling them, in his Letters in Anſwer, " *Vile, falſe,* " *deviliſh Exclamations and Execrations*; made by ſuch as he knew " not; and ſo could not judge of the Degree of their Malice. So " that he might ſay truly, *Acuerunt linguas ſuas, ſicut Serpentes.* " *Venenum Aſpidum ſub labiis eorum:* Inſomuch, that as he added, " if his own Conſcience did not aſcertain him of Gods Favour and " Protection againſt theſe Satanical and fanatical Spirits, he ſhould " think himſelf in a moſt wretched State. But that he knew, and " had proved Gods Goodneſs ſo many Years to defend his Innocency, " that he might boldly ſay with *David*, *Factus eſt mihi Dominus* " *in refugium.*" The Letters, out of which I have tranſcribed theſe Sentences, I ſhall preſerve in the *Appendix*; becauſe they will ſerve further to illuſtrate the Hiſtory of that truly honeſt, and wiſe Counſillor, and great Inſtrument of ſettling and conſulting about the Reformed Religion in *England*, and of the wonderful Succeſs of the Queens Affairs throughout her Reign. Theſe Letters will ſhew, how heavily he took it, that his good Name ſhould be ſo ſtained, and the main Bent of his Pains of Body and Mind for ſo many Years, ſhould be ſo baſely interpreted, And where you find him at laſt ſolemnly appealing to God and to his own Conſcience, and to ſome of the Queens Counſillors, [but not to all; for he knew ſome others not ſo well affected to him] for his Integrity. And at laſt, piouſly repoſing himſelf and his Truſt in his God.

Numb. LVIII, LIX.

Of which by private Letters he acquaints a Friend of his.

But there happened another Thing in this Affair, that gave him Offence, and diſpleaſed him; that theſe Letters ſecretly written and ſent to his Friend, as aboveſaid, were by him ſhewn about to others, in the City and Court; nay, and to ſome of the Queens Council. Which were done indeed out of a good Intent; that my Lords Innocency, and the Falſhood of thoſe Reports of him, might be the more manifeſt, and that the Raiſers of theſe Lies might be expoſed. But when that Lord underſtood this divulging of his private Letters, he ſignified the ſame to him that had ſo done; and required they ſhould be ſent back to him again. " For that he was " Friendly informed, that he (to whom he had writ thoſe Letters] " had made Oſtentation of his Greatneſs with him [the Lord *Burgh-* " *ley*] and had ſent all his Letters abroad in the City. I am con- " tent, added he, that every one ſhould know that I like you; but " to ſend and diſperſe my Letters in that ſort, I cannot allow; be- " ing deſirous you would return them to me. And yet I will per- " form all therein written. And for that many would think great " Levity in him, to have his private Letters in that ſort ſpread " abroad.

Between

ANNO 1585.

Some Variance between the Lord Treaſurer and the Earl of Leiceſter.

Between the ſaid great Courtier (of whom all this hath been told) and another as great, namely, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, Maſter of the Horſe to the Queen, was ſome Variance at this Time. And it was juſtly to be ſuſpected, that that haughty Earl might be inſtrumental in thoſe Miſreports mentioned above. It was certain this great Favourite was very jealous of the Lord *Burghley*. Which at length cauſed him to write a plain Letter to the Earl; openly and freely to ſhew his Mind, and if poſſible, to beget a better Underſtanding: For it appeareth, it was upon ſome ill Will that he bare the Lord Treaſurer undeſerved. To ſee the Ground hereof, and the obliging Addreſs of the Treaſurer to the Earl, the Letter is worth the Tranſcribing: It follows.

Lord Treaſurer to the Earl.

" My Lord, I have been in diverſity of Mind, whether I ſhould write, as now I mean, or not. Though writing may be miſconſtrued, yet Silence ſometimes may do more harm. And therefore I adventure to write more briefly, to avoid Occaſion of much miſtaking.

" My Lord, I have many Times been informed, that your Lordſhip had miſliking of me. But the Informers would never commonly make Proof thereof, but rather dealt doubtfully with me. On the other Part, I know my ſelf without Fault, or colour of Fault. I alſo many Times found your Lordſhip friendly diſpoſed to me in many Sorts, by your honourable and courteous Behaviour and Treatment. The like alſo of late Times both my Sons conſtantly do many Times report it to me. And the elder within theſe few Days hath told me with great Aſſurance, how favourably your Lordſhip did uſe him; and how by other good Means of ſuch as know inwardly your Lordſhips Mind, he accounteth himſelf aſſured of your conſtant Favour.

" Now when your Lordſhips ſelf doth not uſe me evil to my Underſtanding, as to Knowledge of my ſelf, and that my Children are ſo well uſed; yea, I judge hitherto my Daughter of *Oxford*, who always affirmeth the like of you; it may ſeem ſtrange, that I ſhould not ſo ſettle mine Opinion conſtantly to make ſure Account of your Lordſhips Favour upon theſe ſhort Proofs; notwithſtanding many Tales brought me of late, during the Time of this Treaty with the *Hollanders*: Noting your Lordſhips miſliking of my doubtfulneſs or coldneſs therein. Wherein I perſuaded my ſelf, that ſuch odd Reports were either Conjectures of buiſy Heads or jealous Perſons for good Will to the Cauſe. But, good my Lord, the Freſhneſs of a Report, and the Credit and good Will of the Party will not ſuffer me to ſmother up, and touch unto your Lordſhip, and remit the Anſwer hereof for my better Satisfaction, to your own Diſpoſition.

" Within theſe two Days, a Lady a Widow, your Lordſhips old familiar good Friend, and my near Ally, was, as ſhe ſaith, with your Lordſhip, to entreat you to be favourable unto her, for her ſelf and her two Daughters, being by Law in Bloud Heirs to a great Man, and of great Livelihood: But yet to ſmall or no Part thereof. Your Lordſhip, as ſhe ſaith, anſwered her Friendly. But that yet you ſaid her Friends did not deſerve your Friendſhip.

ANNO 1585.

" And for Proof your Lordſhip named me, not to be your Friend, " although you and yours had otherwiſe deſerved of me: Remembring, that it was the Duke, your Lordſhips Father [*viz.* the " Duke of *Northumberland*] and not the Duke of *Somerſet*, that " brought me to be a Counſillor; with other ſuch Speeches, which, " as ſhe ſaith, ſhe was very ſorry to hear. Whereby ſhe found, " that your Lordſhip was not my Friend.

" Hereupon, my Lord, as I was ſorry to perceive it to be true of " your own Speech to my good Friend, that your Lordſhip had ſo " ill Opinion of me, to be unfriendly to you; where by Deſert, " of your ſelf, and my Lord, your Father, (whom I cannot remember without Conceipt of his Honourable Favours to me) I was " otherwiſe bound; ſo was I in ſome Part glad to underſtand the " many Reports, which I did not before credit, have had ſome " Ground from your Lordſhips ſelf. And therefore knowing, in " the Sight of God, mine own Innocency of any unhoneſt Action " againſt your Lordſhip, or Intention, I will quiet my Heart, and " arm myſelf againſt this Wrong with Patience; as I am ſure, no " Man of my Sort hath abiden more this Way in hearing Evil, " when I have done well. And ſo I ſhall remain to do that Good I " can, however I am miſuſed. And ſo will I live by Gods Grace. " As, for any Mans ill Will, I will not forget my Duty, or ſtain " my Honeſty. And if the Places I hold might be beſtowed by her " Majeſty upon any other without Condemnation of me for mine " Honeſty, I avow to Almighty God, I would be moſt glad. And " thereby ſhould I be ſure to be void of any ill Will, or wrong Interpretation of my poor Actions. For I know my Place, not my " Deeds, procure me Unfriendlineſs of many. Which I beſeech " God to remedy. Who keep your good Lordſhip long, in Honour, " Health, and in his Favour. From the Court at *Nonſuch*, the " 11th of *Aug.* 1585. *Your Lordſhip as you ſhall pleaſe to have me.*

W. B.

The Earl of Leiceſters *Anſwer to the Lord Treaſurer.*

I have the Anſwer the Lord *Leiceſter* made to this Friendly Letter, which he wrote back the ſame Month to the Lord *Burghley*, endorſed thus by that Lords own Hand, *The Earl of* Leiceſter *in Anſwer of my Letter to him: Written at* Cornbury Park; The Earl juſtifying himſelf at large, in ſome Points, wherein he was charged to have accuſed the Lord Treaſurer. Beginning, " My " Lord, I perceive by your Letter you were doubtful to write; but " that you would avoid Miſconſtruction; that it pleaſed him rather " to write than be ſilent, *&c.* He thanked his Lordſhip, that he " would take that Way; whereby thoſe he [*viz.* the Treaſurer] dealt " and lived withal might rather know what he heard, than to conceal what he miſliked. That his Lordſhip ſaid [in his Letter] " that he had been many Times informed, that he [the Earl] had " miſliking of him; but that the Informers would never bring forth " their Proofs; but rather dealt doubtfully. The Earl truſted, " that for ſuch Informers he ſhould need little to ſtand in anſwering them. And that his [the Treaſurers] own Wiſdom would

" eaſily diſcharge him, being ſo well acquainted with the Devices " and Practices of thoſe Days, when Men went about rather to ſow " all Diſcord between ſuch as they [the Queens Counſillors] were, " than to do good Offices, *&c.* And thus that Noble Perſon proceeded in an Honourable Proteſtation, in divers Particulars, of his Eſteem of that worthy Perſon he is writing to. Which being ſomewhat large, I rather recommend it to be read in the *Appendix.*

Numb. LX.

Philip *Earl of* Arundel *Fined.*

Another Nobleman of Note, remarked in our Hiſtory of theſe Times, was *Philip* Earl of *Arundel:* Who married *Anne*, Daughter of *Thomas* Lord *Dacres.* Unhappy he was in his Father, the Duke of *Norfolk*, beheaded upon Account of the Queen of *Scots*, and unhappy in his own, favouring the ſame Queen, and endeavouring her Eſcape; and unhappy alſo in contracting great Debts; and being now in Cuſtody in the *Tower* after his Trial in the *Star-Chamber*; for relieving Popiſh Prieſts, and holding Correſpondence with *Jeſuits* abroad, the Queens Enemies; and for Writings of his, accuſing the Juſtice of the Nation. For which he was fined 10000 *l.* ſaith our Hiſtorian. And ſo he remained a Priſoner in the *Tower.* I have a Scheme before me of his Debts, found among the Lord Treaſurers Papers; which ſhew, how unable he was to pay the Fine. His Debt to the Queen, 5351 *l.* and upwards. Owing to his Creditors upon Specialties, 7641 *l.* and upwards. Total of the Earls Poſſeſſions and Rents, 4987 *l.* yearly. But they that are minded to ſee the Particulars of the Earls Debts and Revenues, may find them in the *Appendix.* He was ſome Years after condemned for Treaſon, for being Inſtrumental in the *Spaniſh* Invaſion. But by the Queens Mercy ſpared; and died a Priſoner in the *Tower.* And no doubt it was his Zeal for the *Scottiſh* Queen and for Popery, (though the Duke his Father had bred him up in contrary Principles of Religion) that was the Cauſe of all his Perſonal Misfortunes, and diminiſhing of his Patrimony.

His Debts.

Numb. LXI.

Edward, *Lord* Beauchamp *in Trouble for his Marriage.*

Edward, Lord *Beauchamp*, was a Perſon of great Honour, being the eldeſt Son of the Earl of *Hertford*, by the Lady *Katharine Gray.* He had privately married *Honora*, Daughter of Sir *Richard Rogers*, Knight. This gave ſo high a Diſguſt to the Earl his Father, as a Match inferior, that he kept him from his Wife, and his Wife from him. And likewiſe he had made himſelf obnoxious to the Diſpleaſure of the Queen and Council; in marrying without her and their Conſent, he being of Royal Blood by his Mother. This Lord now laboured to make his Peace with the Queen as well as with his Father; and that he might obtain Permiſſion to cohabit with his Lady whom he had married. But coming out of the Country (where as it ſeems he was enjoined to abide) with this Purpoſe of Addreſs, his angry Father cauſed him to be ſeized in his Journey, by one of his Servants at *Reading.* Where he was detain'd. Whence he applied himſelf by a Submiſſive Letter to the Lord Treaſurer: Declaring his Caſe, and hoping by his Interceſſion with the Queen and Council, to obtain their Favour; and that he might be ſent for by their Warrant. His Requeſt and Caſe will more particularly appear by his Letter: Which coming from ſo Noble a Perſon, and upon ſuch an Occaſion, may be acceptable, from the Original.

His Letter on this Occaſion to the Court, being ſeized by his Fathers Order.

“My Lord, Having ſought my Lord, my Fathers good Will, this long while, hoping by my dutiful Means I might have obtained his Favour; and finding his Lordſhip to deal harder, to the End he might weary me; hoping thereby in Time to bring me not to care for my Wife, whom I am bound by Conſcience, as well by God, God and his Law, to love, as myſelf; I was determined to come to your Lordſhip. Whom I have found my good Lord, and Honourable Friend: Meaning ſo to ſubmit my ſelf to her Majeſty by your Honours Means, and alſo to the reſt of her Majeſties Council: Hoping, that firſt her Majeſty, whoſe Faithful and Loyal Subject I am, to ſpend the beſt Bloud of my Body, as well in Cauſe private as pulick, (if it ſhould pleaſe her Majeſty ſo to command me) as alſo your Lordſhip, with the reſt of her Majeſties Privy Council, would grant me the Benefit of the Laws of the Realm.

“Coming on the Way, I was ſtayed at *Reading* by my Lord, my Fathers Man; deſiring your Honours Favour ſo far, that it would pleaſe you, by your Warrant to ſend for me; that I might not be injured by any my Lord, my Fathers Men; though hardly dealt with by his Lordſhip himſelf: Conſidering, how dutifully I have uſed my ſelf. I hope your Honour will conſider of my Caſe, and ſuffer me to take no Wrong; ſo long as I am a faithful and true Subject.

“I underſtand of certain, before I would attempt to depart, that her Majeſty ſhould ſay of me, I was no Priſoner of hers; and alſo your Lordſhip with the reſt of the Council ſhould anſwer my Wife, that you would impute it no Offence, if I ſought to enjoy my Wifes Company; moſt humbly craving to hear ſomething from your Honour, I commit your Lordſhip to the Tuition of the Almighty. From *Reading*; the 9th of *Auguſt*, 1585.

Your Honours to Command,

Edward Beauchamp.

This Gentleman died before his Father. And by his ſaid Wife had Iſſue *Edward* and *Thomas*. But his Grandchild *William*, ſucceeded in the Honour, by Letters Patents of King *James* I.

Davys *finds out the* North Weſt *Paſſage.*

I have one Note more to make of one *Davys*, a Mariner, ſometime belonging to Sir *Francis Drake*. Who being employed to find out a *North Weſt* Paſſage into thoſe Seas in that Part of the World, came back this Year. And upon his Return, in a Letter acquainted the ſaid *Drake* with ſome Account of thoſe Seas, and how Navigable they were. The Letter, ſhewing the firſt Diſcovery of that Paſſage, and wrote to ſo eminent a Seaman, may deſerve to be preſerved, and is, as I take it from the Original, to this Tenor.

His Letter to Sir Francis Drake.

“Right Honourable, moſt dutifully craving Pardon for this my raſh Boldneſs, I am hereby, according to my Duty, to ſignify unto your Honour, that the *North Weſt* Paſſage is a Matter nothing doubtful; but at any Time almoſt to be paſſed by Sea Navigable, void of Ice; the Ice tolerable, the Waters very deep. I have

" alſo found an Iſle of very great Quantity, not in any Globe or
" Map diſcovered; yielding a ſufficient Trade of Furrs and Leather.
" Although this Paſſage hath been ſuppoſed very impoſſible,
" yet through Gods Mercy I am in Experience an Eye witneſs to
" the contrary: Yea, in the moſt deſperate Climates. Which by
" Gods Help I will very ſhortly more at large reveal unto your
" Honour: So ſoon as I can poſſibly take Order for my Mariners
" and Shipping. Thus depending upon your Honours good Favour,
" I moſt humbly commit you to God. This 3d of *October*.

Your Honours for ever moſt dutiful

John Davys.

Hence thoſe Straits in that Paſſage are called *Davis Straits* to this Day.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Books ſet forth. The Great Engliſh *Bible. A Declaration of the Cauſes of the Queens giving Aid to the* Low Countries. *A Summary Report of the Earl of* Northumberlands *Treaſon. The true and lawful Right and Title of* Don Anthonio *to the Kingdom of* Portugal. *The State of the* Engliſh *Fugitives under the King of* Spain. *The true Difference between Chriſtian Subjection and Unchriſtian Rebellion: By Dr.* Bilſon. *An Apology and true Declaration of the Inſtitution of the two* Engliſh *Colleges at* Rome *and* Rhemes. *A Defence of* Engliſh *Catholicks.* Pilkingtons *Expoſition upon* Nehemiah. *Certain Prayers and other godly Exerciſes, for the Seventeenth Day of* November. *A godly and neceſſary Admonition concerning* Newters. *Moral Queſtions in* Latin: *By* Caſe. *Exploits by the* Engliſh *in the* Netherlands: *By* H. Archer. Leiceſters *Commonwealth.*

BOOKS I find of moſt Note, printed this Year, were as follows:

The great Bible printed.

The *Engliſh* Bible of the laſt Tranſlation, in the great Volume. Printed by *Chriſtopher Barker*, the Queens Printer, with this Title, *The Holy Bible; containing the Old Teſtament*

ANNO 1585.

ment and the New: And appointed to be read in Churches. Which was a third Edition of the Bible, after the firſt ſet forth, new tranſlated by Archbiſhop *Parkers* Care, Overſight and Order, *Anno* 1572. there being another Edition *Anno* 1578. This Bible hath, 1. A remarkable Prologue, or Preface ſet before it; which was that made by *Tho. Cranmer*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; and ſet before the firſt Tranſlation of the Bible in King *Henry* VIII. his Reign, printed. 2. A Table of Genealogy, from *Adam*; and ſo paſſing through the Patriarchs, Judges, Kings, *&c.* and ſo continuing in Lineal Deſcents to our Saviour *Jeſus Chriſt*. It hath in ſeveral Places two Capital Letters, being the two firſt Letters of the Names of the Biſhops, or others that reviewed or corrected their ſeveral Portions allotted them in this Work. And therefore called the *Biſhops Bible*, Thus at the End of the *Pentateuch* are the Letters *W. E.* At the End of the Second Book of *Samuel*, R. M. At the End of *Chronicles*, E. W. And at the End of *Job*, A. P. C. *&c.* And who theſe Perſons were, deſigned by theſe Letters, are ſhewn in the Life of Archbiſhop *Parker*, under the Year 1572. This Bible hath marginal Notes. To give a *Specimen* thereof. At *Gen.* Chap. i. ver. 2. *The Earth was without Form, and was void.* Here the Note in the Margin is, *The Works of God, both in his Creation, and in his Spiritual Operation in Man, ſeem rude and imperfect at the firſt; yet God, by the working of his Holy Spirit, bringeth all Things to a Perfection at the End.* And at that Clauſe, *ver.* 2. *The Spirit of God moved upon the Face of the Waters*; the Note is, *The confuſed Heap of Heaven and Earth was imperfect and dark; yet not utterly dead; but was endued with the Power and Strength of Gods Spirit; and ſo made lively to continue unto the Worlds End.*

This Bible I ſaw ſome Time in Sion College *Library.*

Book III. *Chap.* 21.

Other Books.

Now to account for other Books and Diſcourſes that came forth and were printed this Year; both State Books, and Books about Religion.

A Declaration of the Cauſes moving the Queen of England *to give Aid to the Defence of the People, afflicted and oppreſſed in the Low Countries.* Beginning, *Although Kings and Princes Sovereign*, &c. This Book I have mentioned before. *Given at* Richmond *the* 1ſt. of *Octob.* 27 *Regin. Elizabeth.* Which Words conclude that Book. And it is of the more Remark, being drawn up by the Head and Pen of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. It is preſerved to us by *John Stow*; and inſerted by him into *Hollingſheads* Chronicle. As alſo this Book that follows.

A true and ſummary Report of the Declaration of ſome Part of the Earl of Northumberlands *Treaſon:* Delivered publickly at the Court of the *Star Chamber*. Together with the Examination and Depoſitions of ſundry Perſons, touching the Manner of his wicked and violent Murther, committed upon himſelf with his own Hand in the *Tower* of *London*, the 20th of *June* 1585. This Man before was in the Rebellion, 11 *Regin. Elizab.* (being then Sir *Henry Percy*, Knight) and undertook the conveying away of the *Scottiſh* Queen, as appeared by a Record the 14th Year of the Queen. This is ſhortly ſummed up in Queen *Elizabeths* Hiſtory by *Camden*.

P. 311.

Another

ANNO 1585.

Another Book now came forth in Favour of *Don Anthonio.* Who claimed the Right of Poſſeſſion to the Kingdom of *Portugal*; which *Philip* King of *Spain* had actually poſſeſt himſelf of. This Prince came into *England* to crave Aſſiſtance of the Queen to recover his Right; which ſhe granted him. For the better underſtanding of his Cauſe, this Book was printed; tranſlated from the *French* and *Latin*, and was intitled, *The Examination of the true and lawful Right and Title of the excellent Prince* Anthony, *the Firſt of that Name, King of* Portugal. *Concerning his Wars againſt* Philip, *King of* Caſtile, *and againſt his Subjects and Adherents; for Recovery of his Kingdom.* Together with a brief Hiſtory of all that had paſt about that Matter until the Year of our Lord 1583. Tranſlated into *Engliſh*, and conferred with the *French* and *Latin* Copies. At *Leyden.* The Deſign of this Tract appears in the End of it, *viz.* “That *Don Anthonio*, having a rightful and juſt Cauſe, that all Chriſtian Princes, or the more Part of them, would on their own Accord offer themſelves, to aid and ſuccour him, to recover his Kingdom, whereof he is ſo unjuſtly and tyrannouſly ſpoiled by the King of *Caſtile:* As it appertaineth to all Princes to help that be afflicted and oppreſſed by Tyranny. And eſpecially, it being the only Way and Means to deliver themſelves and their Poſterity from the Tyranny of the *Spaniards.*

State of the Engliſh *Fugitives.*

The State of the Engliſh *Fugitives under the King of* Spain, *and his Miniſters.* For thither our zealous Recuſants fled for Shelter and Harbour. This Book contained alſo a Diſcourſe of the ſaid Kings Manner of Government, and many of his late diſhonourable Practices. It was declared by the Author to be written out of Compaſſion to the *Engliſh* there; and to prevent any more of the Catholicks in *England* to leave their own Country, to go to live in *Spain* or *Flanders.* For as he ſpake in his Epiſtle to the Reader, “That himſelf being five or ſix Years paſt in theſe Parts of *Flanders*, ſubject to the *Spaniſh* King, he ſaw a miſerable Troop of his unhappy Countrymen; ſome Gentlemen of good Houſes in *England*, wandring in poor Habits and afflicted Geſtures, heavily groaning under the Burthen of extreme and calamitous Neceſſity; on the one ſide by their headleſs Demeanour there, debarred from Return into their Country; and on the other, overlookt by the proud Eyes of diſdainful *Spaniards:* And for want of due Regard in that comfortleſs Service, periſhing without either Pity, or Relief.

The Ground of this Book was a Letter, privately ſent from a Gentleman, that had ſometime ſerved the King of *Spain*, [*viz.* the Author] to a Catholick Gentleman, his Kin and Friend, that had a great Longing and Deſire to come into thoſe Parts: Which Letter is there ſet down.

True Difference between Chriſtian Subjection, &c.

As the *Roman* Catholicks of this Nation made great Complaints, and publickly clamoured againſt the Severity uſed towards them, ſo it was neceſſary the State ſhould as publickly be vindicated. Dr. *Bilſon*, Warden of *Wincheſter* College, was one of the learned Defenders of this *Engliſh* Cauſe: And this Year ſet forth a Book in a large *Quarto*, intitled, *The true Difference between Chriſtian Subjection, and Un-*

ANNO 1585.

chriſtian Rebellion. “Wherein the Princes lawful Power to command for Truth, and indeprivable Right to bear the Sword, are defended againſt the Popes Cenſures, and the *Jeſuits* Sophiſmes, uttered in their Apologies, and Defence of *Engliſh* Catholicks: With a Demonſtration, that the Reformed in the Church of *England*, by the Laws of this Realm, are truly Catholick, *&c.*” Written by *Tho. Bilſon*, Warden of *Wincheſter*; Printed at *Oxford*, 1585.

An Apology for the two Engliſh *Colleges at* Rome *and* Rhemes.

This Book ſeaſonably met with Dr. *Allens Apology and true Declaration of the Inſtitution and Endeavours of the two* Engliſh *Colleges.* “Therein they charged the Queens Chriſtian, mild and adviſed Regiment with no leſs Crimes than Hereſy, Tyranny, and Blaſphemy; (as the ſaid Dr. *Bilſon* in his foreſaid Book lays to the Charge of the Writer.) And that thoſe were the only Cauſes, why they departed and harboured themſelves ſo long from their natural Country: Agnizing none of her Eccleſiaſtical Laws to be orderly or duly made; but calling them ſtrange and unnatural Dealings; violent Diſorders, which to all Poſterity muſt needs breed Shame and Rebuke; repugnant to the Laws of God, the Church and Nature: And moſt of all, ſpurning at the Act and Oath, which aboliſhed the Popes uſurped Power out of this Realm, and declared her Highneſs to be the Supreme Bearer of the Sword, *&c.* And to make their Matter the more ſaleable in the Ears of the Simple, they uſed all their *Romiſh* Art and Eloquence, to deface and traduce the Right of her Authority and Band of our Obedience, with cancelling Sophiſmes and flouriſhing Termes: As if the Sovereignty uſed by her Highneſs, were a Thing improbable, unreaſonable, unnatural, impoſſible; and the Oath [of Allegiance] yielded by us, intolerable, repugnant to God, the Church, her Majeſties Honour, and all Mens Conſciences: Having, ſaith the Anſwerer, beſides much waſtful Words and mighty Brags, nothing in it, that is worth the Reading; as being rather a Rhetorical Declamation of an ungracious Wit, than a ſubſtantial Confirmation of their Acts and Attempts againſt God and the Magiſtrate.

Fo. 37, 38.

Fol. 10, 12.

A Defence of Engliſh *Catholicks.*

Upon the Execution of ſome of theſe Prieſts and Seminaries for maintaining the Popes Authority over the Queen in her Dominions, they ſet forth another Book near this Time, called, *A Defence of* Engliſh *Catholicks, that ſuffer for their Faith.* This Book alſo Dr. *Bilſon* took Notice of. Wherein he obſerved, “Many Things ſtately and ſtoutly avouched; but nothing attempted or intended to be proved, ſave only the Popes Power to deprive Princes. Which with all Furniture of Wit and Words they laboured to infer. Not ſhaming to ſay, That Subjects bearing Arms againſt their Natural Princes, upon the Popes Warrant, do a holy, juſt and honourable Service: And that this hath been the Faith of this Land, ever ſince it was converted unto Chriſt.

Def. of Cathol. *Chap.* 5.

Dr. Bilſons *Anſwer.*

To this Book thus the ſaid learned Dr. *Bilſon*: “Againſt this Canker, conſuming the very Soul and Conſcience, where it taketh hold, I thought it not amiſs to oppoſe the ſolemn Salve of Gods eternal Law and Commandment; and to let it appear, that Princes

" are placed by God; and ſo not to be diſplaced by Man; and Subjects threatned Damnation by Gods own Mouth, if they reſiſt. From which no Popes Diſpenſation ſhall ſave them. And therefore the *Jeſuits* in that Point, to be wicked: As their Proofs be weak, having neither Scripture, Council, nor Father, for a Thouſand Years, that ever allowed, mentioned or imagined any Power in Popes to deprive Princes." And then he proceeded to ſet down the ſeveral Subjects of his Book, in four Parts. The laſt whereof ſhewed the Reformation of this Church to be warranted by the Word of God, and the antient Fathers of Chriſts Church. And the *Jeſuits* to be, for all their Crack, nothing leſs than *Catholick.*

The Reformation of this Church.

Pilkington, an Exile for Religion under Queen *Mary*, and Biſhop of *Durham* under Queen *Elizabeth*, wrote a ſeaſonable Expoſition upon *Nehemiah:* Suitable to thoſe Times; as after the *Jews* ſad Captivity, they returned again to their own Country and enjoyed their Religion at *Jeruſalem.* Publiſhed this Year by *John Fox*, with a Preface to it, made by him. Which ſhewed the Friendſhip between them, being Fellow Exiles; and the Reverence he had for his Memory; who was dead now ſome Years before.

Pilkingtons *Expoſit. upon* Nehemiah.

Now alſo came forth a Book intitled, *Certain Prayers and other godly Exerciſes* for the XVIIth Day of *November.* "Wherein (as the Title ran) We ſolemnize the Bleſſed Reign of our gracious Sovereign Lady Q. *ELIZABETH*, by the Providence and Grace of God, of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*, Queen, *&c.*" This Book was made by *Edmund Bunny*, and dedicated to *John*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury:* And about four or five Years after came forth another Book of Prayers and Thankſgivings and Pſalms, to be uſed in the Queens Reign, upon various Occaſions. Beginning with a Form of Prayer to be ſaid every Seventeenth Day of *November:* And that, as it ſeems, by publick Order. Which may not be amiſs here to tranſcribe, that ſuch a Piece of Solemn yearly Devotion be not quite loſt. It was intitled, *A Prayer of Thankſgiving for the Queen.*

Prayers for the 17*th of* Nov.

"O! Lord God, moſt merciful Father; who, as upon this Day placing on the Throne thy Servant, our Sovereign, and Gracious Q. *Elizabeth*, didſt deliver the People of *England*, from Danger of War, and Oppreſſion both of Body by Tyranny, and of Conſcience by Superſtition: Reſtoring Peace and true Religion, with Liberty both of Bodies and Minds; and hath continued the ſame to us, without all Deſert on our Part, now by the Space of theſe two and thirty Years: * We, who are in Memory of theſe thy great Benefits aſſembled here together, moſt humbly beſeech thy Fatherly Goodneſs, to grant us Grace, that we may, in Word, Deed and Heart, ſhew ourſelves thankful and obedient unto thee for the ſame. And that our Queen, through thy Grace, may in all Honour, Goodneſs and Godlineſs, long and many Years Reign over us; and we obey and enjoy her, with the Continuance of thy great Bleſſings, that thou haſt by Her, thy Miniſter, poured upon us. This we beſeech thee to grant unto us, for thy dear Son, Jeſus Chriſts Sake, our Lord and Saviour, *Amen.*

Prayer of Thankſgiving on the Queens Day.

* *Encreaſe this Number according to the Years of her Majeſties Reign.*

ANNO 1585.

Anthem after the Prayer.

Nor was it a ſingle Prayer that was all the Solemnity of the Day, but there was an Anthem compoſed to be ſung after the Prayers were done, in two Parts. The former collected out of divers Places of the Book of *Pſalms*. Beginning, *Be light and glad, in God rejoice, which is our Strength and Stay. Be joyful, and lift up your Voice, for this moſt happy Day.* In the ſecond Part are theſe Lines;

Lord keep ELIZABETH, *our Queen,*
Defend her in thy Right.
Shew forth thy ſelf, as thou haſt been,
Her Fortreſs and her Might, &c.

Numb. LXII.

After this was an *Anthem*, or Prayer, for the Preſervation of the Church and the Realm, to be ſung at Evening Prayer. For the Peruſal of theſe anniverſary Pſalms or Anthems, I refer the Reader to the *Appendix*.

A godly and neceſſary Admonition.

I adventure here to place another Book; though the Year exactly I cannot affirm, neither Printer nor Year in it ſpecified. But hereabouts I believe is the propereſt Place for it, conjectured by the kind of Black Letter it is printed in. It is called, *A godly and neceſſary Admonition concerning Newters*, and ſuch as deſerve the groſs Name of *Jack of both Sides*. In *Octavo*. It was intended againſt ſuch *Newters* as were indifferent between Popery and the Reformation. The running Title is, *Newter and Jack of both Sides*. I am apt to think it was writ and printed privately at firſt, about the Beginning of Queen *Maries* Reign. For it ſpeaks of the *late happy Times* of King *Edward*, in regard of the Profeſſion of true Religion. And now, as it ſeems, thought fit to be reprinted, for the better Confirmation of Proteſtants, againſt Wavering or Indifferency. It began thus: "Men in all Ages have judged, that the Diverſity of Religions and Doctrines do cauſe Alteration in Mens Minds, and ſundry Changes; and bring Diſcommodities unto Realms,— It is the more unworthy and more noiſome, that Men count it a light trifling Matter, nay, merry. They reckon it a ſingular, witty Part, that they can craftily cloke and diſſemble Religion, and handle themſelves in all other Affairs after ſuch Sort, as if a Man were familiarly linked to both Parties: Not altogether gone from the Papiſts; leſt he be counted a ſtubborn Fellow; not altogether diverted from the Goſpellers, leſt he be called an Apoſtate. And by that Shift to walk as it were in the Middle, and moſt ſafe Way; to be indifferent to both Sides; to keep Peace, Subſtance, Honour and Doctrine ſafe; and not altogether, and ſluttiſhly to forſake Religion, yet for all that, to ſeem addict to what Religion a Man will.

Newters in Religion deſcribed.

The *Newters* he further deſcribes, "That when they vary in their Doctrines, aſſent openly to none of them all, but abide in a Mean, either defying both Parties, or gaping for a Determination of Doctrines in ſome General Council." Again, this Character he gives of another Sort of them, "They hang on both Sides, and do what they can to be in Favour with both Parties. Their Drift is to

“ content the Goſpellers, leſt it ſhould be thought, they do againſt
“ the Truth, that they had acknowledged. And all this upon a
“ wondrous Forecaſt of Peace and Tranquility. Some Popiſh Toys
“ they follow to be in Favour with them, for fear of putting them-
“ ſelves, and their Pelf in Hazard.

Again, ſome of theſe he deſcribes, “ That they regarded no
“ Doctrine at all: And ſo they tell every Body, that they defy
“ both the Papiſts Part, and the Goſpellers, and live after their
“ own Faſhion and Fantaſy; either utterly without Religion; not
“ paſſing, whether they know the Truth, or not; or elſe, they
“ imagine them Opinions of their own; and thoſe they ſtick ſtoutly
“ to. Yea, when they have not a Word to ſay, yet they will not
“ yield, nor change their Judgment.” Towards the End of the
“ Book, the Writer exhorts, “ To embrace, and ſtart not one Inch
“ from the Word of God, which by his Benefit was moſt purely
“ preached in *England*, in bleſſed King *Edward* VI. his Days, ſo
“ that no Body can be ignorant of it.... And to endure Perſe-
“ cution for the Truths ſake; and not to put away Peril from us
“ by our Mother Wit, with the Injury of Gods Word, and con-
“ feſſing of Chriſt.

Moral Queſtions.

Moral Queſtions, ſet forth this Year at *Oxford*; by *John Caſe*, a learned Philoſopher there: The Book bore this Title, *Speculum Quæſtionum Moralium in univerſam* Ariſtotelis, *Philoſophi ſummi, Ethicen*; *M.* Johanne Caſe, Oxonienſi, *olim Colleg. D.* Johannis *Præcurſoris Socio, Authore.* Printed firſt at *Oxford*, *An.* 1585. afterwards at *Frankford*, *An.* 1610. The Author dedicated it to the Earl of *Leiceſter*, High Chancellor of that Univerſity. As he had the laſt Year printed a Book of *Logick* at *London*.

This Piece of Moral Philoſophy was of the more Remark, being ſo highly approved by the Univerſity for its uſeful Learning among the Scholars there: Abundance of the Publick Profeſſors, and chief learned Men, ſetting their Names thereto; and being the firſt Book printed at their Printing Preſs at *Oxford:* The Names ſubſcribed in Commendation of the Book were theſe: *Tho. Bickley.* Th. D. *Arthur Weldardus*, Th. D. *Gulielmus Cole*, Th. D. *Martin Colepeper*, Theol. D. *Oliver Whithington*, Med. D. *Joan. Delaber*, M. D. *Anton. Alworth*, Publ. Medicinæ Profeſſor. *Fran. Wallis*, Præſes Coll. D. *Joan* Precurs. *Joan Read*, *Nic. Balgay*, *Tho. Dochen*, *Rob. Crane*, *Baliol*, quond, Soc. *Tho. Drop*, *Magdal. Rich. Eedes*, Æd. Chriſti. *Barthol. Warner*, *Mich. Greene*, *Martin Read*, *Mira. Guarda*, *Rodulph. Ravens*, *Sabin. Chamber. J. Williams*, *Rich. Harley*, *Giffin Powel*, ex. Coll. *Jeſu Joann. Prime.* Beſides ſeveral others of the moſt eminent Members, that wrote Verſes in Commendations of the Author and his Book: Which are placed before it. Whereof *Underhil*, the Vicechancellor ſtands firſt. Whoſe two laſt Verſes were theſe:

Non dedit hoc ſeclo prælum Oxonienſe *priorem,*
Doctrinamq; dabunt Secula nulla parem.

But

ANNO 1585.

Numb. LXIII.

But the Verſes of Dr. *Lawrence Humphrey*, the Kings Profeſſor of Divinity there, being ſo elegant, and giving a more particular Account of the Book, the Firſt Fruits of that Univerſity Preſs, I cannot wholly omit; but being ſomewhat long, I have rather placed them in my *Appendix*.

Engliſh *Exploits in the* Low Countries. *By* Hen. Archer.

Henry Archer writ Accounts of the *Engliſh* Exploits in *Holland* and the *Low Countries*, againſt the *Spaniards:* Whether printed, or a *Manuſcript*, I cannot tell. But which, *Stow*, in his *Annals* of theſe Times makes much uſe of: Who in one Place of his Book thus tells his Reader: “Thus far I have received Advertiſement from my good Friend and near Kinſman, *Henry Archer*, one of his Excellencies Guard”: Meaning, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, the Queens Lord Lieutenant General in thoſe Parts.

Stows Annals, *p.* 1239. *4to.*

Leiceſters *Common-Wealth.*

And to all the reſt I add a State-Book, called *Leiceſters Commonwealth*. Which made a great Noiſe about theſe Times: Expoſing the Earl of *Leiceſter*, Queen *Elizabeths* great Favourite, but not beloved by the People. It was intitled, *Leiceſters Common-Wealth; Conceived, ſpoken, and publiſhed with moſt earneſt Proteſtation of all dutiful good Will, and Affection towards this Realm. For whoſe Good only it is made common.* But neither Author, Printer, or Date of Year expreſt. Which makes me add it under this Year, or near it, upon ſome probable Conjectures from Paſſages in the Book. It was writ Dialogue-wiſe, between a Gentleman, a Lawyer and a Scholar. 'Tis a notable Book, not ſparing that Stateſman, by relating a great many of his Crimes, as of Bloud, Covetouſneſs, Ambition, *&c.* But the Reader muſt ſuſpend his Belief of every Thing that he reads there charged upon him. The Book makes him ambitious of Sovereignty; and ſhews, “His Methods of Policy to obtain it, by marrying the Queen. And in order to that, a beſieging the Princes Perſon, and by taking up the Ways and Paſſages about Her: His Inſolency in Court; his Singularity in Counſil; his violent Preparations of Strength abroad; his enriching of his Complices; the banding of his Faction with abundance of Friends every where.” And then the Author concludes, “What do all theſe Things ſignify, but his Intent and Purpoſe of Sovereignty?

P. 83.

Theſe are ſome of the Paſſages, and a few more, I ſhall add, as a *Specimen* of the Book, being collected thence. “That he hindred the Queens Marriage with three Princes ſucceſſively, Suitors to her; by proteſting, that he himſelf was contracted to her. That there were continual Fears in her faithful Subjects Hearts, while he was about her Noble Perſon. That he ſwore to her, that he was not married to the Lady *Lettice*, late Wife of the Earl of *Eſſex*, though he was indeed twice married to her. That he always coveted to be furniſhed with certain choſen Men about him for divers Affairs: As *Baily* and *Culpepper*, Phyſicians, for his Agents in the Univerſity of *Oxford*, where he was Chancellor. That there was no one College, or other Thing of Commodity within that Place; whence he had not pulled whatſoever was poſſibly to be gathered, either by Art or Violence.

P. 71.

P. 69.

ANNO 1585.

Among other his choſen Men about him, were *Dee* and *Allen*, two Atheiſts, for Figuring and Conjuring: “ *Julio* the *Italian*, and “ *Lopez*, the *Jew*, for poiſoning, and for the Art of deſtroying “ Children in Womens Bellies: *Verneis* for murthering: *Digbies* “ for Bawds, and the like other Occupations, which his Lordſhip “ exerciſed.

But the Queen when ſhe heard of this Book, and divers Clamours and baſe, and no doubt many falſe, Reports diſperſed about this her Counſillor; was provoked; and cauſed a ſevere Proclamation to be ſet forth, for calling in ſuch Libels, and rectifying ſuch Calumnies, together with another and better Character of him. This very Book was printed again in the Year 1641. Which was about the Beginning of King *Charles* I. his Troubles, on purpoſe, as it may be thought, to make the Court, or ſome of the Council about that King, odious to the People.

BOOK

ANNO 1586.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Matters about the Queen of Scots. *Reſolution to bring her to her Trial. Her Removal.* Sir Amys Paulet, *her Keeper, faithful. The Queens Letter to him. A Commiſſion preparing for the ſaid Trial. The Judges conſulted about it. Letters from* Popham, *Attorney General. Conſultation about putting her to Death. Which the Queen was againſt. Objections and Anſwers for the Queens Satisfaction. Dr.* Dales *Letter for that Purpoſe. Conſiderations offered to the Queen by Parliament. Moved, to* Diſable *the* Scots *Queen. Anſwered. What Precedents might be found.* Joan *of* Naples. *Petition of both Houſes to the Queen: And her Anſwers. The Queen of* Scots *executed. The Queen highly provoked at it. The Lord Treaſurer forbid her Preſence. His Letters to her.* Daviſon, *the Secretary, his Character. Interrogatories put to him. With his Anſwers.*

THIS was the fatal Year of the Death and End of the unhappy *MARY* Queen of *Scots:* Of whom our Hiſtories are not wanting. Yet ſome Things I am able to relate from Authentick Papers, fallen under my Hands, that may further illuſtrate this Critical Part of Queen *Elizabeths* Reign.

Reſolved to bring the Scots Queen to her Trial.

Upon *Babingtons* deſperate Plot to murther Queen *Elizabeth*, and to raiſe a Rebellion, and to reſcue the *Scots* Queen, and ſet her upon the Throne; the Court came to a Reſolution to bring her to her Trial. And in order to that, to put Things into a Method, there was a *Memorial* drawn up by the Council, dated *Sept.* the 28th, of Matters with the Queens Majeſty. Which was thus endorſed by the Lord Treaſurers Hand, *About Removal of the* Scots *Queen, in Order to her Trial; and for the better ſecuring of her Perſon. To be reſolved* by her Majeſty. All that follows writ alſo by the ſaid Lords Hand.

ANNO 1586.

"I. To what Place the Queen of *Scots* ſhall be removed: *Fotheringah*, or *Hertford* Caſtle.

"II. About what Time the Council and Noblemen ſhall aſſemble, to hear the *Scots* Queens Cauſe.

"III. At what Time the Judgment of the Noblemen ſhall be affirmed by Parliament.

"Hereupon Order is to be given for the Execution of the Reſolutions.

"So upon the Firſt Sir *Amyce Paulet* [her Keeper] is to be warned to put Things in Order for her Remove; without giving to her, or to any of hers, any Warning longer, than two or three Days: Not ſhewing to her to what Place certain ſhe ſhall go, by the Space of two or three Days Journey.

"Warning to be given to certain principal Gentlemen to attend, with a Number of Servants for that Purpoſe, from Shire to Shire.

"IV. To get Letters ſent ſeverally to all Noblemen, that are abſent, to come to *London* about a Day certain, or rather to the Court.

"V. According to the Queens Reſolution, to have either a new Summons preſently, or elſe to expect the 14th of *November*, for her Remove out of *Staffordſhire* the Way to *Hertfordſhire*.

Then are ſet down, what Gentlemen of Quality of the Counties were to attend, by *Warwickſhire*, by *Northamptonſhire*; by Part of *Buckingham*; by *Bedfordſhire* into *Hertfordſhire*.

Places of Lodging from *Chartley* to *Hertford*. And from *Chartley* to *Fotheringay*.

To the latter of which ſtrong Places that Queen was ſoon after ſafely brought, by the Care and Watchfulneſs of the abovesaid Sir *Amyas Paulet*. At which the Queen was ſomewhat eaſy; and in Gratitude to him for his Faithfulneſs in the Managery of that Remove; and ſtill to encourage him to be ſteady in that great Charge intruſted with him, ſhe wrote him a Letter ſubſcribed by her own Hand. Which (as I tranſcribed from a Copy thereof taken by *Mich. Hickes*, the Lord Treaſurers Secretary) was as followeth:

To my faithful Amyas.

The Queens kind Letter to Sir Amyas Paulet.

"*Amyas*, my moſt careful and faithful Servant, God reward thee treblefold in the double for thy moſt troubleſome Charge, ſo well diſcharged. If you knew, my *Amyas*, how kindly, beſides dutifully, my grateful Heart accepteth your double Labours, and faithful Actions, your wiſe Orders and Safe Conduct performed in ſo dangerous and crafty a Charge, it would eaſe your Travel, [*Troubles* writ over Head] and rejoice your Heart. And (which I charge you to carry this moſt juſt Thought) that I cannot ballance in any weight of my Judgment, the Value I prize you at: And ſuppoſe no Treaſure to countervail ſuch a Faith: And condemn my ſelf in that Fault which I have committed, if I reward not ſuch Deſerts. Yea, let me lack, when I have moſt need, if I acknowledge not ſuch a Merit, with a Reward, *Non omnibus datum*.

“ But let your wicked Miſtreſs know, how with hearty Sorrow her vile Deſerts compel thoſe Orders; and bid her from me aſk God forgiveneſs for her treacherous Dealing toward the Saver of her Life many Years, to the intolerable Peril of her own. And yet not content with ſo many Forgiveneſſes, muſt fall again ſo horribly, far paſſing a Woman, much more a Princeſs. Inſtead of excuſing whereof, not one can ſerve, it being ſo plainly confeſſed by the Actors of my guiltleſs Death. Let Repentance take Place; and let not the Fiend poſſeſs ſo, as her beſt Part be loſt. Which I pray with Hands lifted up to him, that may both ſave and ſpill: With my loving *Adieu*, and Prayer for thy long Life.

“ *Your aſſured and loving Sovereign in Heart,*
“ *by good Deſert induced,*

Elizabeth *Regina.*

Thus the Queen was purpoſed to keep that *Scots* Queen in ſafe Cuſtody under her *Faithful Amyas*, (as ſhe called him) for the Preſervation of her own Life: But further than that cloſe Reſtraint, ſhe could not be brought to grant. But when urged by continual Solicitations of her Counſillors, and generally of all her Proteſtant Subjects; ſhe conſented at laſt to grant a Commiſſion to many Perſons of chiefeſt Rank and Nobility (beſides her own Council) to go down and call her to her Trial for High Treaſon. Which Trial, and how ſhe was found guilty, is related at large by our Hiſtorians. Which I leave therefore to be read in them.

A Commiſſion to try the Scots *Queen.*

Great Care and Conſultation was had about drawing up this Commiſſion, being to remain a Record to after-times, of the juſt and legal Proceedings in this weighty Cauſe. Some Particulars whereof I ſhall relate from certain Letters between the Lord Treaſurer and *Popham*, the Queens Attorney General. Who in a Letter advertiſed the ſaid Lord, “ That it was thought on by him and others learned in the Law, Whether it were convenient to make ſpecial mention of the *Scottiſh* Queen [dubious as it ſeems, whether expreſly to charge her with Treaſon.] But that, as he added, ſithence the Matter had been ſo revealed already by the Traitors themſelves, he thought his Lordſhip had conceived a very good Courſe to have it ſo; if it might ſo ſeem good to her Majeſty. But that then there muſt be good Conſideration had by what Name ſhe was to be named in the Commiſſion.

Upon another Letter writ a Day or two after, by the Lord Treaſurer to the ſaid Attorney General, ſignifying her Majeſties Concern by what Name the *Scottiſh* Queen ſhould be indicted, thus did the Attorney anſwer: “ That he gave Order to the Clark of the Crown, that the Commiſſion ſhould be written in a ſet Hand; in reſpect it was of great Importance, and to continue in After-ages. That he had ſent him therewith a Copy of the Commiſſion, with a Space when the Name of the *Scottiſh* Queen was to be put in. Wherein it might pleaſe her Majeſty to have a great Care, and not upon any Conceipt to hazard the whole Proceedings; for that

" beſide her Chriſtian Name, ſhe might alſo have either the Surname " of her laſt Husband, or the Name of her Father, as was ſet down. " For no Name of Dignity, (as he proceeded) is taken Notice of " by our Law, but that which is grown, or created within her Majeſties Dominions, or by her Majeſty or her Progenitors Warrant. " But in the *Alias dictus* any Thing may be ſaid that ſhall pleaſe " her Majeſty, being once ſurely named. Wherefore he humbly " beſeeched his Lordſhip, if any Thing were ſo ſet down therein, as might endanger the whole Proceedings, it might be ſo known " to her Majeſty: And then to ſet off the Blame that hereafter " might grow to them [the Lawyers] thereby. That it might be " this without Peril, *Maria filia & hæres* Jacobi *Quinti*, *nuper* " *Regis* Scotorum, *alias dict.* Maria *Regina* Scot. *Dotar. Franc.* " For it is not regarded what the *alias dict.* is. And then adding, " that if this might be reſolved on by her Majeſty, ſo that he [the " Attorney General] might have Knowledge thereof by the next " Day, then his Lordſhip ſhould have the Commiſſion it ſelf preſently after ſent him, to ſhew the Queen.

What the Anſwer was to this, and the Queens Reſolution, the Lord Treaſurer ſoon after acquainted the Attorney: As we ſhall tell by and by; only let me mention another Enquiry of the ſaid Attorney to be reſolved about, ſpecified in the Letter above-mentioned. For nothing was done in this great Affair without conſulting with that great Counſillor; and he with the Queen.

The Courſe of Proceeding intended.

" I have (as he proceeded in his Letter) likewiſe ſent your Lordſhip herewith the Courſe that we have thought on, for our Proceedings: Which it may pleaſe your Lordſhip to reform, and for " to direct us therein, as in your Honours Judgment ſhall ſeem beſt " for the Service.

And by the Words that follow, the Treaſurer endeavoured to be abſent at the Trial. For thus the Attorney proceeded. " That by " what his Lordſhip wrote he was much in doubt, his Lordſhip " might hardly be ſpared from thence, [*viz.* the Court.] And for " him not to be at the Proceedings, might work great Prejudice to " the whole Service. And that in reſpect whereof, if her Majeſty " could ſo be perſuaded, it were better the *Scottiſh* Queen were " brought nearer, than that himſelf ſhould be abſent." And ſo concluded his Letter, dated from his Houſe in *Chancery-Lane*, *Oct.* 1. 1586. Subſcribing,

Your Lordſhips moſt humbly at Commandment.

J. Popham.

And in reſpect of this Need apprehended of the Preſence of the Lord Treaſurer at this Trial, he, being one of the Chief Commiſſioners, was there preſent; and had large Diſcourſe with that Queen, then bearing a double Perſon and Quality, (as he told her) both as a Commiſſioner and a Counſillor.

But now concerning the great Point before ſpoken of, *viz.* by what Name the *Scottiſh* Queen ſhould be ſtiled in the Commiſſion,

ANNO 1586.

(which her Majeſty had made heſitation about) the Attorney General, and alſo *Egerton*, the Queens Solicitor, had conſulted with the Judges about, together with the Courſe to be taken in the Proceedings. And the Conſultation of the Queens Judges and others her learned Lawyers; and that in ſuch a weighty Affair as this was, may deſerve to be related. Which I will do from the Letter of *Popham* and *Egerton*, for the Information of the aforeſaid Lord, and by him to be opened to the Queen. The Letter dated *Octob.* 7. ran to this Tenor.

Conſultation of the Judges about the Trial.

" That that Morning they had Conference with ſuch of the Judges as were at preſent there; *viz.* the Lord Chief Baron, Sir *Tho. Gaudy*, Juſtice *Windham*, Juſtice *Periam*, and Juſtice *Rodes*, and with Mr. Serjeant *Gaudy*; touching the Courſe of Proceeding in the Commiſſion.

" That they thought good among other Things, to underſtand their Opinion, by what Name the *Scotch* Queen was to be called in the Commiſſion and Record. And that herein they found them all of Opinion, that to give her directly, and preciſely the Name of *Regina Scotorum*, either in the Beginning, or by a Copulative, as was ſet down in his Lordſhips laſt Letters, could not well be warranted by Law. And therefore that they held it the ſureſt Way, to Name her *Maria, filia & hæres Jacobi Quinti nuper Regis Scotorum, communiter vocat. Regina Scotor. & Dotaria Franciæ.* Whereof they preſumed to advertiſe his Lordſhip to the End ſuch Courſe might be taken therein as might be warranted by Law, and the Importance of the Cauſe required. Adding, " That the Judges had required their humble Suit to his Lordſhip, that their Lodging [at *Fotheringhay*] might be ſo ſorted, that they might be ſomewhat near together; to the End they might be the more ready for ſuch Conferences as it was likely in the Courſe of Proceeding, would often fall out to be requiſite, *&c.* This was dated the 3d of *Octob.* ſubſcribed *John Popham, Tho. Egerton.*

Deliberation about putting her to Death.

There was firſt great Deliberation of putting that Queen to Death. For though the Parliament and People for divers Years paſt had apprehended imminent Danger of the Queens Life and the Safety of the whole Kingdom, by Means of her and her Party at Home and Abroad; yet for the ſatisfying her Majeſty (who could not yield to the putting her to Death) it was ſeriouſly debated, whether it were lawful to cut off a Queen, or to bring her into Judgment. I have met with a Writing of the Opinion of the *Civilians* touching this Matter: Conſiſting of Objections againſt the Trying of her, as a Queen; and Anſwers to thoſe Objections by ſome learned in the Civil Law: Which were drawn up for the Satisfaction of Queen *Elizabeth*, as well as others, in ſo weighty and unuſual a Cauſe. As.

I. *Objection.* She [*viz.* the Queen of *Scots*] is *Anointed.* [As well as Queen *Elizabeth.*] And ſo, *Par in parem non habet Imperium.* To that it was anſwered, That it might be doubted, whether ſhe then were a Queen; becauſe ſhe ſtood Depoſed by the

Three Eſtates of *Scotland*. And ſeocndly, ſhe had willingly left her Right to her Son, *&c. Deletum non eſt conſummatum. Ergo.*

II. *Object.* Secondly, That ſhe ſubjected her ſelf *Juri Gentium Soli*; that is, to the Law of Nations only. The Anſwer was, That in reſpect of her Allegiance to the Crown of *England*, her Actions were rather to be meaſured by the poſitive Laws of the Land. And by theſe what ſhe had done was Treaſon, *&c.* This Paper runs out into a conſiderable Length; and therefore I rather lay it to be peruſed in the *Appendix*.

Numb. I.

I add the Judgment of Dr. *Dale*, a very learned Civilian; who was particularly required by the Lord Treaſurer to ſet it down, in order to ſatisfy the Queen, which he did in a Letter to the ſaid Lord, dated in *October*. Which I tranſcribe from his own Paper.

Dr. Dales Judgment about puniſhing the Scots Queen by the Law of Nations.

"Pleaſeth it your Lordſhip to confirm your Opinion aſſuredly, *Quòd delinquens punitur loco delicti, nullâ Dignitatis habitâ ratione.* It may pleaſe your Lordſhip to conſider theſe Words following of the Popes own writing, *in Clementina paſtoralis de re indicata.* Which he made expreſly to revoke the Sentence of *Henry* VII. againſt King *Robert* of *Sicily*.

"*Quod ſi punitio criminis intra diſtrictum imperialem commiſſi, ad Imperatorem forſan pertinuiſſe aſſeratur; verum eſt quidem, ſi in eodem diſtrictu fuiſſet inventus delinquens, &c.* So that in the preſent Caſe, the Party being in the ſame Territory, where the Crime was committed, the Pope himſelf confeſſeth the Concluſion and Aſſertion of the Emperor to be true. And yet the Civilians do write, that in the very Caſe of King *Robert* of *Sicily*, which was out of the Territory of the Emperor at that Time of the Sentence, *Juriſtæ debent & tenentur ſequi factum Imperatoris, & non Papæ.*

"It may pleaſe your Lordſhip alſo to call to remembrance, that when all the Civilians were conſulted in the Biſhop of *Roſſes* Caſe, it was reſolved, *quòd Legatus punitur in loco delicti, ſi delinquat tempore Legationis, non obſtante Legati privilegio.* And indeed the very Text of the Civil Lawyers is plain in the Caſe. *L. non actio ſi Legati, F. de judiciis, Legati ex delictis in Legatum commiſſis coguntur judicium* Romæ *pati; ſive ipſi admiſerint, ſive ſervi eorum.* And yet *Legatus ſuſtinet perſonam ſui Principis:* And of all Men the moſt privileged, *ipſo jure gentium.*

"If it may be any Satisfaction unto her Majeſty, or if her Majeſty be deſirous to be fully reſolved in this Point; your Lordſhip may aſſuredly inform her Majeſty of the Premiſſes, as it ſhall ſeem to your Lordſhip moſt convenient. *Nihil enim eſt in toto jure certius:* What Doubt ſoever any Man do make of it. And thus I have not to trouble your Lordſhip any further. At *London*, the 6th of *October* 1586.

Tour Lordſhips moſt humble

Valen. Dale.

Conſiderations offered to the Queen. MSS. J. Conyers. *Aren.*

Then followed *Conſiderations* offered to the Queen; to induce her Majeſty to proceed *contra, &c.* [*viz.* againſt the *Scots* Queen.]

1. The Intereſt that all her Subjects have in her Safety; without which they cannot be ſafe.

2. The Burthen of her Majeſties Conſcience, in being guilty of the univerſal Harms that may follow, in not cutting off the *Scotch* Queen.

3. The Ruin of the Realm, And

4. Of Religion.

5. The cancelling of the Glory of her Anceſtors.

6. The mutual Love of her Majeſty to her moſt loving Subjects in general. Whom for that Loves ſake ſhe will not leave to the Spoil.

7. The dreadful Forethinking, what ſuch an one may do; ſo of herſelf malicious, unnatural, and incenſed by cruel Papiſts; irritated by Diſhonours and Dangers.

8. The Blaſphemy the *Scots* Queen may bring upon *England.*

9. The Honour of our Queen, not to drown the Glory of her Government with the Evil like to ſucceed by her Indulgence.

10. Conſider, that you take away the Ground of all Foreign Attempts, and the Hope of Rebellion; and remove the Cauſe, for which her Majeſty may be in danger of deſperate Traitors.

11. You take away from corrupt Perſons the Hope of Reward and Benefit of her Peril.

12. So you give Freedom and Boldneſs to all Subjects for Service: Conſultation in diſcloſing, and in reſiſting Attempts.

All your perilous Favour ſhewed to the *Scotch* Queen ſhall not be imputed to their Clemency, but to their cunning Means, and Practices or Timorouſneſs, or God's Permiſſion. And that the Queen is not able to touch ſuch Holy People. Or to the Popes Bleſſings, Prayers, Vows, Faſtings of Papiſts; and as a Miracle. Theſe ſeem to have been the ſhort Heads of what was offered to her Majeſty.

The Queens Meſſage to the Parliament about the Scots *Queen.*

While the Parliament was now ſitting, were read before them divers Letters of *Anthony Babington* (that had lately plotted the Murther of Queen *Elizabeth*, and the delivering and ſetting up the *Scots* Queen) written to that Queen; and Letters of hers to him and others. Whereupon the Sentence that had been before pronounced againſt her, was read before them of the Lower Houſe, on the 9th of *November*. And in Purſuance of that Sentence, a Form of a Petition agreed upon by the Committee of both Houſes, was read, to this Purport. That the Queen give Order for that Queens Execution. Which Petition was preſented to her by the Lord Chancellor, *Nov.* 15. which he declared to both Houſes he had done. And withal the Anſwer ſhe gave to him, to report to them: Shewing her Averſeneſs to the Execution of the Sentence of Death againſt that Queen; (as ſhe had before done:) Saying, "That "it was a Cauſe of great Moment, and required good Deliberation; "and that ſhe could not preſently give Anſwer to them; but that "ſhe would ſhortly deliver it to her Privy-Council: Who ſhould "deliver her Mind unto them. And further, the ſaid Chancellor declared unto the Lords, that her Majeſty commanded him to require

D'Ews *Journ. p.* 379.

ANNO 1585.

quire the Lords, to adviſe among them, if ſome other Courſe might be taken without proceeding to the Extremity, which ſhe could better like of, if any ſuch might be found. And that ſhe looked for their Anſwer.

One of theſe Courſes of more favourably proceeding with that Queen, (which was an Act to diſable that Queen in Princely Dignity) I find by a Paper, ſhe had propounded to the Parliament. Which I will here ſet down; as worthy in this Piece of Hiſtory to be recorded: From the Minutes of it, *viz.*

The Parliaments Petition to the Queen in anſwer.

The Sum of a Petition to her Majeſty; and Reaſons gathered, ex jure Civili *by certain appointed by Authority in Parliament, to prove that lawful it is, and honourable, to proceed,* &c.

And here it was debated in dealing with the *Scotch* Queen, whether to proceed for the diſabling of her: (which Queen *Elizabeth* was for) or for *Attaindor*, for which the Parliament was.

MSS. ubi ſupra.

“ We your Majeſties moſt humble and faithful Subjects, aſſembled
“ in Parliament for the Preſervation of your moſt Royal Perſon,
“ *&c.* Thank God for ſuch a Sovereign Perſon, as never
“ Subjects had better, we ſeek with Fear of Body, and Care of
“ Mind, to redreſs whatſoever ſhall be thought hurtful to your Ma-Majeſtys
“ Safety.

“ A Queen of late Time, and yet, through her own Acts now
“ juſtly no Queen, nigh Kinſwoman of your Majeſty, and yet
“ a very unnatural Siſter, Lady *Mary Steward*, late *Scottiſh* Queen,
“ being driven through Violence of Weather, to take Harbour in
“ your Majeſty's Realm for Safeguard of her Life, hath not only
“ had your moſt gracious Protection, but was in her own Realm
“ by your Majeſty's Authority preſerved from Execution of Death
“ for her moſt horrible Doings there, known through *Europe*, to
“ her perpetual Infamy.

“ And albeit upon her firſt coming, your Majeſty might by Law
“ have dealt with her judicially, for her Attempts made by Writing
“ and otherwiſe, againſt your Crown, and the Diſhonour of
“ your royal Perſon: Yet your Majeſty, in Conſideration of her
“ long dangerous Troubles in her own Realm, and in Hope that
“ ſuch Advertiſements would have been good Leſſons for her
“ Amendment hereafter; hath not uſed her in ſuch Manner, as
“ ſhe deſerved; but forgat and forgave after a Sort her former Doings.

“ All which notwithſtanding, this unnatural Lady, born out of
“ kind, hath forgotten God and all Goodneſs, and ſeeketh to deprive
“ your Majeſty of your Dignity and Life. Which the Judges
“ declare to be moſt horrible Treaſon. For which her Doings your
“ Majeſty minding to touch her in Honour therefore (not ſeeking
“ to deal with her according to her Deſerts) is content to have her
“ diſabled, as a Perſon uncapable of Princely Honour within your
“ Land. And you think this the beſt Way to eſtabliſh yourſelf,
“ and take away the Hope of ſuch as depend upon the Title. And,
“ to aſſure your Quietneſs to make it High-Treaſon, to attempt and
“ maintain her pretended Title. So ſhall your Enemies be weakened,
“ by the Law, and your true Subjects heartned.

“ If the *Scotch* Queen ſhall hereafter attempt Treaſon, the Law
“ is determined that ſhe ſhall ſuffer Death without Trouble of Parliament.

“ If any Enterprize to deliver her from Priſon, the ſame to be
“ convicted immediately of High Treaſon. If ſhe conſent, [to be]
“ likewiſe adjudged. So ſhall none for her dare to attempt againſt
“ you. And all Nations will honour your merciful Proceedings:
“ Seeing ſhe is fallen into your Hands from the Violence of others:
“ And ſeeketh Succour at your Majeſties Feet: Being your Siſter,
“ and a Queen; not to proceed further, but *diſable* only.

“ This is a Declaration and Proof of your gracious Nature. This
“ Aſſurance for your Perſon.

Reſp. 1. “ A *ſpecial Diſabling* her by Name, is in effect a ſpecial Confirmation of the Right ſhe ſhould have had. *Privatio*
“ *præſupponit Habitum.*

2. “ By the Statutes of this Land ſhe is already diſabled. *Ergo, Rem actum agimus.*

3. “ It ſtrengtheneth them that be evil minded: And maketh them
“ deſperate; ſeeing no Remedy.

4. “ Grievous Penalties fear not the Wicked, whoſe Gain more
“ boldeneth: Naturally given to this Nation, and all other under
“ the Moon, to make Stir without Cauſe. *Plato: Naturales ſunt*
“ *Converſiones Rerum publicarum.* Deſperation feareth no La-
“ bours.

“ The Law which was then in Force as much as this, heretofore
“ never reſtrained Traitors. The Inſtrument is ſtill living by whom
“ all Attempts are wrought. Force overthrows Judgment.

5. “ No new Law needs to encourage faithful Subjects againſt her,
“ who breaks all Laws.

6. “ Touching a Law againſt her, if ſhe ſhould hereafter attempt
“ any Evil, ſhe ſaith, ſhe will ſtir Coals. By Experience of her
“ former Life, Law hath no Force with her. She will take the Ad-
“ vantage upon any Occaſion. She fears no Threat of Death. If
“ ſhe ſhould ſeek Liberty, yet diſhonourably. She adventured with
“ a young Fellow to get away in a Boat in *England*. She attempt-
“ ed to get away; and occupieth the Heads of the chiefeſt States
“ in *Chriſtendom* for that Purpoſe. And ſhe may eſcape. For ſhe
“ wanteth no Cunning to make the Way. And there will want no
“ Traitors to aſſiſt her. The Reward is great.

7. “ For your regard of Honour. An honourable Meaning.
“ But we would not ſee you by ſuch Regard loſe your State, Life
“ and all. If ſhe eſcape, all good Princes would think great want of
“ Judgment and Foreſight in you, and in the Council.

“ A Grief to you and other your Friends. A Triumph to the
“ Adverſaries. A miraculous Eſcape: Ill Foreſight. And adviſed-
“ ly lookt unto, doth ever the leſs harm. Deal rather certain than
“ by chance. *Ergo*, Not good to deal by the ſecond Bill for *Diſ-*
“ *ablement*; rather by the Firſt by *Attainder*.

What Precedents might be found for their Proceedings.

Then it came to be conſidered, what Precedents might be found of ſuch a Matter as now lay before them: And *Joan*, Queen of *Naples* was offered. And a Compariſon was made between her and *Mary*

Mary Queen of *Scots*. And an Argument was framed, intitled, *An Analogy, or Reſemblance between* Joan *Queen of* Naples, *and* Mary *Queen of* Scotland. This was drawn up to repreſent her the worſe to Queen *Elizabeth:* Shewing the Parallel between both Queens in many Particulars from Hiſtories. As

Joan *Queen of* Naples *and* Mary *Queen of* Scots *parallel.*

1. *Joan* Queen of *Naples*, being in Love with the Duke of *Tarent*, hanged her Husband *Andreas* (or, as ſome write him, *Andraſius*) King of *Naples*, in the Year of our Lord God, 1348. *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, being, as appeareth by the *Chronicles*, and her own Letters, [in Love] with the Earl *Bothwel*, ſtrangled the Lord *Darly*, her Husband, King of *Scotland*, in the Year of our Lord God 1567. 2. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* did, preſently after the foul Slaughter, marry with the ſaid Duke of *Tarent*, notwithſtanding they were joined and knit in Kindred near together. *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, after the Death of her ſaid Husband, was married by the Biſhop of *Orkney*, to the ſaid Earl *Bothwel*, notwithſtanding that he had two Wives alive, and was divorced from them upon a likely Adultery, by himſelf committed. The whole of this *Analogy*, or *Reſemblance*, being ſomewhat long, conſiſting in many other Particulars, will be found in the *Appendix*. The Concluſion whereof, which the Parliament made to the Queen, was, "That nothing remained to make the Hiſtory perfect, but that *Mary* of *Scotland* "might have Gods Judgment in her accompliſhed and performed, "that had not only killed her former Husband, but had practiſed "oftentimes the End of her Majeſty, the Queen of *England*; and "conſequently like to bring the whole Nation into a general Maſſacre.

Numb. II.

However, her Majeſty could not be perſuaded to give her Conſent to the *Scotch* Queens Death: Notwithſtanding by that ſpecial Commiſſion aboveſaid, her Crimes were found to be great, and ſhe guilty of High Treaſon. And thereupon thought neceſſary by a Special Commiſſion to call the States of the Realm together in Parliament, for their Judgment and Reſolution in this weighty Affair. When both Houſes well weighing the imminent Danger the whole Nation was in, as well as the Queens Life and Safety, made two earneſt Addreſſes to her, the one from the Lord Chancellor for the Upper Houſe, the other from the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, that Execution might be done, according to the Sentence given againſt the *Scotch* Queen. Which coſt her Majeſty two ſeveral long and moſt eloquent Speeches, which ſhe made *Verbally* (as it is indorſed in the MSS. thereof) in anſwer. Which Speeches may be read in our Hiſtorians. But in the Iſſue ſhe deſired them to find out ſome other Expedient than that Queens Death.

The Petition of both Houſes to the Queen againſt the Scots *Queen.*

In her firſt Speech ſhe deſired ſome further Time to deliberate about it in theſe Words, (I tranſcribe out of the Lord Treaſurers MS.) "That ſhe thought they did not look for a preſent Reſolution; the "rather for that it was not her Manner, in Matters of far leſs Moment, to give ſpeedy Anſwer without due Conſideration: So in "this of ſuch Importance ſhe thought it very requiſite, with earneſt Prayer to beſeech his Divine Majeſty ſo to illuminate her Underſtanding, and inſpire her with his Grace, as ſhe might do and "determine

ANNO 1586.

“ determine that which ſhould ſerve to the Eſtabliſhment of his “ Church, the Preſervation of their Eſtates, and Properties of the “ Commonwealth under her Charge.

And in the Concluſion of her latter Speech to the Parliament twelve Days after, when they again earneſtly required her to ſign the Warrant for the Execution, ſhe thus put it off again: “ Their “ Judgments ſhe condemned not: Neither did ſhe miſtake their Rea- “ ſons. But prayed them to accept her Thankfulneſs; excuſe her “ Doubtfulneſs, and take in good Part her Anſwer anſwerleſs, *&c.* “ That therefore if ſhe ſhould ſay, ſhe would not do, what they “ requeſted it would be, peradventure more than ſhe thought. And “ to ſay, ſhe would not do it, might perhaps breed Peril of that “ their Labour to preſerve: Being more than their own Wiſdoms “ and Diſcretion would ſeem convenient, Circumſtances of Place “ and Time being duly conſidered.

The Sentence againſt the Scotch *Queen proclaimed.* Camd. Eliz. *p.* 369.

Add, that in the beginning of *December* was iſſued forth her Majeſties Proclamation and Declaration of the Sentence pronounced by the Nobility in the Commiſſion againſt the *Scots* Queen. In which Proclamation the Queen ſeriouſly proteſted, that this Publication was extorted from her, to the exceeding Grief of her Mind, by a kind of Neceſſity, as the Hiſtorian relates. But addeth, “ That “ there were ſome that thought this to proceed from the Art and “ Guiſe of Women; who, though they deſire a Thing never ſo “ much, yet will always ſeem to be conſtrained and forced to it. And again, thus he writes, That upon the *Scots* Queens Death, the firſt News thereof brought to her Majeſty, ſhe conceived great Grief thereupon, or *pretended.* But this ſeems but an odious Inſinuation; and would have been too mean a Piece of Hypocriſy, beneath the Queen. And thoſe ſolemn and earneſt Proteſtations ſhe uſed in her Speeches to the States of her Realm in Parliament; the Delays ſhe made, the Scruples ſhe put to her Judges and learned in the Laws of *England*, ſhew, how concerned and ſerious ſhe was; and unwilling and almoſt reſolved in her own Mind, to proceed no further with that Queen, than a cloſe Reſtraint; at leaſt yet a while; as what is ſaid before, and what ſhall follow after, will declare.

The Queen charged with Hypocriſy, unjuſtly.

Upon the continued Solicitations of thoſe about the Queen, for ſigning a Warrant for the *Scotch* Queens Execution, ſhe unwillingly did ſo; ordering *Daviſon*, her Secretary, to do it under the Great Seal; but thinking to keep the Warrant ſo prepared, without ſending it away; to lie by in readineſs. But the Council being acquainted by the Secretary with what was done, knowing no more of the Queens Meaning, in haſt ordered it to be ſent away; among whom was the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley.* And accordingly the fatal Execution was done. For the Particulars thereof I refer the Reader to our Hiſtorian.

Camd. Eliz.

The Queen angry, baniſhes her Preſence the Lord Treaſurer.

But as ſoon as the News of it was brought to the Queen, ſhe fell into an exceeding Perturbation and Paſſion, and particularly expreſſed a great Anger and Indignation againſt ſome of her Council: And immediately commanded them out of her Preſence; and baniſhed them the Court. One of whom, which was the only one I meet with by Name, was her great Counſillor, the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley,*

ley. Who being under the Queens Diſpleaſure, took it exceedingly to Heart: As being under her Frowns for a Fault of Ignorance: Not knowing her private Mind for delay of the Sentence, ſo ſigned by her; and when he knew it, confeſſing his Sorrow for it to her: After which he hoped for her Pardon. He felt the Burthen of the Queens Anger; who had ſo long been accuſtomed to her Favour, and ſo near about her Perſon; and now to remain ſo long eſtranged from her Sight and Preſence. He thought the Queen too ſevere for what he had ignorantly done. It brought to his Remembrance Gods Dealing with penitent Offenders: Merciful and ready to forgive. And that nothing became a Prince more than Clemency. Theſe and many more were the melancholy Thoughts and pious Meditations of this Lord, during his Baniſhment from the Court. Which take at length from a Paper of his own writing, in many ſhort ſignificant Sentences, which I preſent here, tranſcribed thence by me. Beginning: Num. III.

" *Peccatum ignorantiâ commiſſum.*

" *Anima ſi peccaverit per ignorantium, offeret arietem, & dimittetur ei; quia per ignorantiam.*

" *Melius eſt, ut benefacientes (ſi voluntas Dei velit) pati, quàm*
" *malefacientes.*

" *Quem diligit Deus, corripit, &c.*

" The Queen meant it not. *Eſto.* This not known.

" Mr. *Daviſon.* The Bill ſigned. His Affirmation, *&c.* Theſe are a few of that Lords written Sentences: For the reſt conſult the *Appendix.*

His Letters to her.

Under this his forced Retirement from Court, he was very uneaſy, and could not bear the Queens Indignation. And to avert it, and reconcile himſelf unto her Favour, he endeavoured to have Acceſs to her, to declare more at large to her his Innocency, or to pray a mitigation of her Diſpleaſure. But that would not be granted. Divers humble Letters alſo and Meſſages he ſent to her in the mean Time, by Mr. Vicechamberlain, Mr. *Hatton*, the Lord *Buckhurſt*, and Mr. *Wolley*, one of her Secretaries for the *Latin* Tongue. Some of theſe Letters I meet with, being his own Minutes.

The firſt whereof was dated *Feb.* 13. that is, five Days after the *Scotch* Queens Death. Endorſed thus by his own Hand: *A Writing from me to her Majeſty.* Beginning,

His firſt Letter, Feb. 13.

" Moſt mighty and gracious Sovereign, I know not with what " manner of Words to direct my Writing, to utter any Thing like " a Counſellor, as I was wont to do. I find my ſelf barred ſo to do " by your Majeſties Diſpleaſure, declared to me many ways. To " utter any Thing in my Defence, being in your Diſpleaſure, I doubt, " whilſt your Diſpleaſure laſteth, how to be heard, without en- " creaſe of the ſame: To utter nothing, being ſecluded from your " Preſence by my Lameneſs, but ſo to reſt alſo dumb, muſt needs " increaſe, or continue, your Majeſties heavy Diſpleaſure; and " therewithal my Misfortune is far beyond others in like Caſe: " Who coming to your Preſence, may, with humbleneſs, boldly " ſay that for themſelves, that I alſo may as truly alledge for my " own private Defence.

ANNO 1586.

“Therefore, moſt Gracious Queen, in this Perplexity I am ſometime deeply thrown down, near to a Pit of Diſpair; and yet ſome other Time I am drawn up to behold the Beams of your accuſtomed Graces; and there held up and ſupported with the Pillar of my Conſcience afore God, and my Loyalty towards your Majeſty. And ſo I am, I thank God, prepared patiently to ſuffer the Diſcomfort of the one, or enjoy the Comfort of the other: Confeſſing both to be in your Majeſties Power.

“I hear with Grief of Mind and Body alſo, that your Majeſty doth utter more heavy, hard, bitter and minatory Speeches againſt me than almoſt againſt any other. And ſo much the more do they wound me, in the very Strings of my Heart, as they are commonly and vulgarly reported: Although by ſome with Compaſſion of me, knowing my long, painful, faithful and dangerous unſpotted Service. But by divers other I think, with Applauſe, as maliceing me, for my true Service againſt your ſworn Enemies. And if any Reproach; yea, and if any Puniſhment of me may pleaſure your Majeſty, and not hinder your Reputation, (which is hardly to be imagined) I do yield thereto. And with a moſt willing Mind do offer unto your Majeſty, as a Sacrifice, either to pacify your Diſpleaſure, or for your Majeſty to pleaſure any other, (Friend or Unfriend) to acquit my ſelf freely from all Places of publick Government. Whereof none can be uſed by me to your Benefit, being in your Diſpleaſure. And I ſhall nevertheleſs continue, in a private Eſtate, as earneſt in continual Prayer for your Majeſties Safety, and my Country, as I was wont to be in publick Actions.

“And whatſoever worldly Adverſity your Majeſty ſhall lay upon me, I conſtantly and reſolutely ſhall, by aſſiſtance of Gods Grace, affirm, prove and proteſt to the World, during the few Days of my Life, that I never did, or thought to do any Thing with Mind to offend your Majeſty; (or to commit any unhoneſt Act.) But in the Preſence of God, who ſhall judge both quick and dead, I do avow, that I was never in my Underage more fearful to diſpleaſure my Maſters and Tutors, than I have been always inwardly, both out of, and in your Preſence, to miſcontent your Sacred Majeſty. Which proceeded, I thank God, of due Reverence, and not of Doubtfulneſs, how to do my Duty.

“Thus, moſt Gracious Queen, being by my Miſhap, deprived of your Preſence, I have confuſedly uttered my deep Griefs, and offered the Sacrifice of a ſorrowful wounded Heart, ready to abide your Majeſties Cenſure, and to wear out the ſhort and weak Thread of my old, painful, and irkſome Days, as your Majeſty ſhall limit them; being glad that the Night of my Age is ſo near by Service and Sickneſs, as I ſhall not long wake, to ſee the Miſeries, that I fear others ſhall ſee, that are like to overwatch me. From the which I ſhall, and do pray the Almighty God to deliver your Majeſties Perſon, as he hath hitherto done, by Miracle, rather than by ordinary Means.

“And having ended that concerneth myſelf, I cannot in Duty forbear to put your Majeſty in Mind, that if Mr. *Daviſon* [who

" ſent away the Warrant for the *Scots* Queen Execution] be committed to the *Tower*, who beſt knoweth his own Cauſe, the Example will be ſorrowful to all your faithful Servants, and joyful " to your Enemies. And as I can remember many Examples in " your Fathers, your Brothers, your Siſters, yea, your own Time, " of committing of Counſillors, either to other Mens Houſes, or to " their own; ſo can I not remember any one Example of a Counſillor committed to the *Tower*; but where they are attainted afterwards of High Treaſon: And ſo were ſerved afterwards. And " what your Majeſty intendeth towards this, your Servant, I know " not; but ſure I am, and I preſume to have ſome Judgment therein, I know not a Man in the Land ſo furniſhed univerſally for " the Place he had, neither know I any that can come near him.

Thus it was in the firſt Minutes of this Lords Letter concerning *Daviſon*; but in his Review thereof ſent to the Queen, it ran in theſe Words, with more Reſerve.

" I beſeech your Majeſty pardon me to remember to let you underſtand my Opinion of Mr. *Daviſon*. I never perceived by him " that he thought your Majeſty would have miſliked to have had an " End of the late Capital Enemy. And what your Majeſty minded to him in your Diſpleaſure, I hear to my Grief. But for a " Servant in that Place, I think it hard to find a like qualified Perſon. Whom to ruin in your heavy Diſpleaſure, ſhall be more " your Majeſties Loſs than his.

W. B.

The great Character of Secretary Daviſon.

But notwithſtanding this Interceſſion of the Lord Treaſurer for Secretary *Daviſon*, and the great Character he gave the Queen of him, and of his Abilities, ſo highly was ſhe incenſed againſt him, that he was brought into the *Star Chamber* by a Special Commiſſion; and ſeverely cenſured there, deeply Fined, caſt out of his Place, and impriſoned, and that for a long Time after. And where I cannot but obſerve the Account given of him by our Hiſtorian, very different from what that Lord wrote of him to the Queen; who was a good Judge, and knew him well. For thus that Hiſtorian: " That he was a Man of good Ingenuity; but not well ſkilled in " Court-Arts; brought upon the Court-Stage on purpoſe (as moſt " Men thought) to act for a Time his Part in the Tragedy; and " ſoon after, that Part being acted on the Stage, Attire laid aſide, " he was thruſt down from the Stage, *&c.*

Character of him by Camden. Eliz. *p.* 392.

There was a ſecond Letter written by the aboveſaid Lord to the Queen four Days after the former, *viz. Febr.* 17. endorſed thus by his own Hand, *My ſecond Letter to her Majeſty, ſent by Mr.* Wolley: *But not received.* The Subſtance whereof was, that ſhe would hear his Plea: " That he could not underſtand her Majeſties Offence " againſt him was diminiſhed, notwithſtanding that humble Submiſſion of his, to endure that might pacify the ſame. And that " he was continually oppreſt with Grief for her Diſpleaſure. That " he could imagine no Remedy, but continuance of his humble Interceſſion, either to receive his Submiſſion, or rather firſt to hear " him anſwer for Thought and Deed, as if God himſelf ſhould call " him

Another Letter of the Lord Treaſurer to the Queen.

ANNO 1586.

“ him to Judgment. That her Majeſty, he underſtood, was more deeply offended with him than the reſt: Though he was no more to be charged than others. Which he ſuppoſed encreaſt, becauſe her Majeſty had not heard him, as ſhe had others, that ſhe had admitted to her Preſence; while he by his Lameneſs and Infirmity could not come, *&c.*” But the whole perfect Letter I had rather leave to be read in the *Appendix*. Num. IV.

Another Letter to her by the ſame.

Little Countenance yet ſhewn him from the Queen, he addreſt another Letter to her, dated *Febr.* 23. which he thus endorſed, *A Copy of my Writing to her Majeſty, delivered by my Lord of* Buckhurſt: Importing, “That he was not yet come to any underſtanding what Special Means to uſe, to pacify her Majeſties heavy Diſpleaſure; ſo often and grievouſly expreſt both to his Friends and many others. Whereby he was ſo overthrown in his weakly Spirit, as no Part of his Mind was found to perform that he ought to do. A Torment ſuch as the like he never felt.——That he knew ſurely by many Experiences her Majeſties Sincerity and Chriſtian Conſcience ſuch, as except he had been faulty indeed, ſhe would not thus extremely uſe him. And therefore he did not think any Thing, but honourably of her, as he was perſuaded. Num. V. See this whole Letter alſo repoſited in the *Appendix*.

In this and his former Letter, he deſired Admiſſion into her Preſence, that he might relate more at large what he could ſay for himſelf in his own Vindication; whereupon the Queen ſignified to thoſe about her, that he might do that in Writing. Which he underſtanding by his Son, (to whom the Queen ſeems to have ſaid it) excuſed it in his next Letter, “Knowing what Ill-willers he had about the Court, [whereof the Earl of *Leiceſter* ſeems to be one] who would be apt to put ſiniſter Interpretations upon what he ſhould write, and that a Writing was but a Compoſition of Words, that might otherwiſe be taken for want of his being preſent to explain and reply.

The Lord Treaſurer at Court, how received.

The Treaſurers firſt Admiſſion to the Court, as I find, was ſome Weeks after: When the Queen wanted his Advice concerning her Matters with the *Low Countries*. But being in her Preſence ſhe fell foul upon him, for the late Grudge ſhe bore him for the *Scotch* Queen. Whereupon again he fell into great diſcontent; and abſented himſelf from the Court. But compoſed a Writing, ſhewing the Cauſe thereof. Which was to be delivered to the Queen by Mr. Vicechamberlain. But whatever the Reaſon, not delivered. This Num. VI. Writing will likewiſe be found in the *Appendix*. Which I tranſcribed from the Original Copy; thinking this Paper, as well as the reſt, highly deſerving to be preſerved; being written by ſo great a Stateſman, and tending further to illuſtrate that great Piece of Queen *Elizabeths* Hiſtory.

As for the unhappy Secretary, *Daviſon*, (whoſe good Character given to the Queen was read before) and who underwent a ſevere Sentence in the *Star Chamber*, for his too haſty ſending away the Queens Warrant for the *Scotch* Queens Execution; we have the Management of that Cauſe told us at large by our Hiſtorian. But there is ſome thing omitted, which will ſerve to illuſtrate that Affair, and

Camd. Eliz. *ſub. Ann.* 1587.

to ſet *Daviſons* Caſe in a true Light. Which finding in certain MS. Collections, I think very proper here to be inſerted: Being

MSS. Foxii.

Certain Articles miniſtred to Daviſon *upon the Execution of Queen* Mary *of* Scots, *by Mr. Vicechamberlain and Mr.* Wolley, *the 12th of* March, 1586.

Interrogatories miniſtred to Daviſon.

" 1. Whether upon the ſigning of the Warrant, her Majeſty gave " it not in expreſs Charge and Commandment unto you, to keep " the ſame ſecret; and not to utter it to any Body?

" 2. Whether her Majeſty commanded you to paſs it to the Great " Seal?

" 3. Whether when it was paſt the Great Seal, her Majeſty " charged you, and that on your Life, not to let it go out of your " Hand, until you knew her further Pleaſure?

" 4. Whether her Majeſty ever willed or commanded you to deliver it to any Body, or to cauſe it to be executed?

" 5. Whether 6 or 7 Days after it was paſt the Great Seal, and " in your Cuſtody, her Majeſty told you not in the Gallery, that " ſhe had a better Way to proceed therein, than that which was " before deviſed?

Daviſons *Anſwers.*

To the firſt he anſwereth, " That he hopeth her Majeſty doth " not forget, how ſhe commanded my Lord *Admiral*, to ſend for " him to bring the Warrant unto her: Having, as his Lordſhip told " me, reſolutely determined to go through with the Execution. " That upon my coming to her, it pleaſed her to call for the Warrant, and voluntarily to ſign it, without giving me any ſuch Commandment as is objected. Which he affirmeth, as in the Preſence " of God.

" To the Second he ſaith, he truſteth her Majeſty, in her Princely and good Nature, will not deny to have given him expreſs " Order to carry it to the Seal; and how ſhe willed, it ſhould be " forthwith diſpatched. Whereupon he offering to have gone to " my Lord Chancellor the ſame Forenoon, [of the Day] it was " ſigned, ſhe commanded him to go in the Afternoon, becauſe of " ſome other Buſineſs he had. Which he did accordingly. So as " it was between five or ſix of the Clock at Night, ere he was with " my Lord Chancellor. So as my Lord Admiral knowing it by " the Occaſion above remembred, and my Lord Chancellor by her " Majeſties expreſs Commandment: Beſides, that at the ſame Time, " it pleaſed her Majeſty to give him Order to impart it in the Way " to Mr. Secretary *Walſingham*, as her Majeſty may beſt remember; " he hopeth, there ſhall appear no Cauſe of any ſuch Commandment to conceal it, and not to utter it to any, as is objected.

" To the Third, he proteſteth before God, he neither remembreth, nor received any ſuch Commandment given him. For if " he had, he would not have concealed it from my Lords, that " joined in ſending down the ſaid Commiſſion.

"To the Fourth he anſwereth, That as her Majeſty did not expreſly will him to deliver it to any Body, ſo did he never underſtand her Majeſties Meaning to be other, than to have it proceeded in, conſidering the hourly Danger ſhe lived in, and how much therefore it imported her Life and State: Beſide other Reaſons too long to be here rehearſed.

"To the laſt, he remembreth, that upon ſome Letters received from Mr. *Paulet* [Keeper of the *Scotch* Queen] her Majeſty falling into ſome Complaint of him, upon ſuch Cauſe as ſhe beſt knoweth, ſhe uttered ſuch a Speech, *That ſhe could have Matters otherwiſe done.* The Particulars whereof I leave to her beſt Remembrance.

He was examined again upon the like Interrogatories, the 14th and 16th of *March* following.

CHAP. II.

Revenge meditated in Scotland *for the* Scots *Queens Death. Not ſafe to call in the Aſſiſtance of* Spain. *Advice of the Event thereof from a Stateſman in* England *to one about that Kings Perſon. His Deliberation about it. Several Writings and Books on this Occaſion. A* MS. *of the Order and Manner of the* Scots *Queens Execution. The Dean of* Peterburghs *Speech to her: And Prayer. A Book,* De *Maria* Scotorum Regina, totaque ejus contra Regem Conjuratione. *Maria Stuarta* innocens a Cœde *Darliana. Sentences againſt the Queen of* Scots. Cœdes Darliana: *Dedicated to Cardinal* Allen.

The King of Scots Thought of Revenge of his Mothers Death.

WHEN this Queen was thus brought to her End by a violent Death, both the King her Son, and the *Scotch* Nation, at leaſt many of them, were highly enraged, and ſtudied Revenge immediately. To withſtand whom, as well as other Princes abroad, to aſſiſt him in this Quarrel, exerciſed now the Thoughts and Cares of the *Engliſh* Court. Concerning the Diſcourſe of the *Scots* in *Flanders*, I gather ſomething from a Letter of Intelligence writ to the Lord Treaſurer by *Anthony Coppley*, an *Engliſh* Fugitive there, That concerning the Aſſiſtance to be given the ſaid King by the *Spaniard*, who mortally hated Queen *Elizabeth*, they alledged, "Their King was too politick to uſe the King of *Spains* Aſſiſtance in revenge of his Mothers Death; for fear leſt that Kings Forces ſhould ſo much prevail in the Revenge, that

Declines the King of Spains Aid.

“ that at laſt he might prove another *Saxon* to the poor *Brutain*; “ by defeating him of his Crown, and conquering it [*Britain*] him- “ ſelf. And that in this Reſpect *Policy*, ſay they, did require, he “ ſhould rather attend the Troubles, very like to enſue upon her “ Majeſties Deceaſe within *England*, than to make thereof his Ad- “ vantage for the Revenge of her Death, and the Recovery of the “ Crown, as he could.” This was writ ſometime after, at their more mature Deliberation.

And another Letter about the ſame Time, writ to the ſame Lord from an *Anonymous* Catholick in *Flanders*, (who ſeems to be Sir *Richard Shelly*) gives this Intelligence concerning this *Scotch* Affair. “ The *Scottiſh* Diſcourſes in *Flanders* are to this Effect, That not- “ withſtanding that King's pretended Amity with *England*, that “ ſure he bore a revenging Mind of his Mothers Death. Which one “ Day, they ſay, they do not doubt will be fulfilled upon the “ Realm by the Wars, and the Aſſiſtance of the *Dane*. Their Pro- “ pheſies, they ſay, run all to this Effect, That in King *James* ſhall “ be united both Nations, *England* and *Scotland*, both to his “ Crown. Mean Time it is Policy and very meet his Majeſty diſ- “ ſemble his revenging Mind, till Advantage be preſented for the “ Action; namely, her Majeſties Death, when all the Realm is “ likely to be divided into Factions and Controverſies; what for the “ Crown, what for Religions, or other Cauſe. Colonel *Stuard*, “ who is preſently in great Favour with the King, much induceth “ the King to that Revenge. None more. Likewiſe the Earl of “ *Huntley* is altogether, ſay they, inclined that Way. Theſe Informations were ſent four or five Years after; ſo long did thoſe Thoughts of Revenge ſtick in their Minds. But to return back.

The Scots *Diſcourſe in* Flanders, *in reſpect of Revenge.*

There is an excellent Letter written upon the Queen of *Scots* Death to ſome *Scotch* Nobleman near about the Kings Perſon, (ſeems to be *Lethington*) ſhewing his Danger in proceeding to War with the Queen; and how uncertain and unhappy it might prove to him, to require Aſſiſtance from Foreign Princes againſt her. It ſeems to be writ by the Lord Treaſurer. And though it be ſomewhat long, hath ſo many curious Things contained in it concerning the State of Affairs with reſpect to *England* and *Scotland*, and the Neighbouring Kingdoms, that it may deſerve exemplifying.

An excellent Letter to a Scotch *Nobleman; to diſſuade that King from War.*

“ Sir, I am ſorry to find by your Letter, that the Execution of “ the King your Sovereigns Mother ſhould be likely to bring forth “ any ſuch Effects as you ſeem to affirm, will undoubtedly enſue, “ upon the Knowledge thereof in *Scotland*, and work an Alienation “ in the Kings your Sovereign's Mind, and of that People, from the “ Amity of this Realm; the Continuance whereof hath ever been “ ſo carefully ſought, and deſired. But it is hoped here, beſides “ the Kings own ſingle Judgment, that you and others of Wiſdom “ and Experience about him; that depend upon your ſaid Sove- “ reigns Fortune; whoſe Advice he will, as in a Matter of ſo great “ Importance, deeply weighing the ſame, ſhall eaſily judge, how “ unfit it will prove every way for the one Eſtate to enter into that “ Courſe, that cannot cure that already done; and in the End but “ turn to his Diſhonour and Danger, and certain Prejudice, inſtead

ANNO 1586. of Reputation and Credit; which he may ſeem to affect thereby.

“For if hereupon he will needs make War with this Realm, three Things would be conſidered. Firſt, How juſt and honeſt this War will appear in the Eye of the World. Then, what Means he hath to go through withal. Laſtly, What may be the Conſequent thereof any Way; and eſpecially in reſpect of that he pretendeth, the Succeſſion of this Crown: Which hereby ſhall come into Queſtion.

“Now for the Juſtneſs of the Quarrel; without which it is not only unlawful to enter into War, but nothing elſe can be expected, but unhappy Succeſs; he taking Arms againſt this Realm in revenge of an Action ſo neceſſarily done by general Conſent, for the Safety of her Majeſties Perſon and this State, and accompanied with that Juſtice, as all the World may be Judges of the honourable and upright Proceedings, uſed in that Behalf. It can no way be avoided, but he muſt be ſaid to oppoſe himſelf to the Courſe of Juſtice; and ſo conſequently to the Judgment of God himſelf; whoſe Miniſter this State was in the Execution thereof. And ſo we ſtanding in Defence of Juſtice, ſhall not lack the Arm of Aſſiſtance of Almighty God againſt all the Potentates of the World, that ſhall in ſo unjuſt and deſperate a Quarrel attempt any Thing againſt this Realm.

“And as for the Means of going through with ſuch an Enterprize, if your Sovereign ſhall truſt but to his own Strength and Forces, no Man can be ſo ſimple, as not to ſee that *Scotland* of itſelf is not in Caſe to make Head againſt *England*, augmented in Power and Wealth; as *Scotland* is decreaſed by reaſon that *France*, which ſerved themſelves hereof in Times paſt to annoy *England* withal, (which had then a Footing in *France*:) Having not now the like Uſe of that Realm, as heretofore they have had, hath not the like Effect. And as for Foreign Means, when you have conſidered, how long you ſhall ſolicite for a little Aſſiſtance, as the Kings Expectation found by Experience to his Coſt; and when you have it, how uncertain the Succeſs may be of all your Attempts againſt *Englands* Forces and Reſiſtance; which by the Conjunction of *Holland* and *Zealand*, hath gotten that Strength by Sea and by Grace, that though all the Princes of *Europe* were banded againſt this Realm, we ſhould have no juſt Cauſe to fear that they ſhould prevail to do us harm, ſtanding upon our Defence.

“If therefore due Conſideration be had of theſe Things, and withal the Conſequence of this War, if the King (Things that heretofore have fallen out in Experience) ſhould happen, either to be taken, or being overcome in Field, or otherwiſe be enforced to retire himſelf out of the Realm, having juſtly incenſed the State againſt him, ſo far as they ſhall think meet utterly to diſable him for the Succeſſion, as by Law they may; to what Extremity he ſhould be reduced, I doubt not, but it will be ſeen of Men of Judgment, not tranſported with Paſſion, to be every way beſt for his Majeſty, to forbear ſuch a deſperate and violent Courſe

" as may render him ſubject to many Hazards, and Inconveniencies. " Where on the other ſide, carrying him with that Moderation " that becomes a Prince of his Perfection and Education, and is ne- " ceſſary in this remedileſs Accident, he ſhall both in the mean " while, happilieſt provide for his own Security, and for the Time " to come through his kind of good Uſage of her Majeſty, who hath " deſerved ſo greatly at his Hands, win unto himſelf the Hearts, " Good-will and Affection of the whole Body of the Realm.

" For it cannot but fall out, if a Courſe of Revenge ſhould be " taken upon this late Accident, whereby the People of this Iſland " ſhall be brought once to draw Bloud out of one another, the an- " tient Enmity between the two Nations, which now in a Manner " remaineth quite extinct, and buried, ſhould be revived, in ſuch " ſort as the *Engliſh* would never endure, or accept him for their " Prince, who had been Author of ſo unfortunate a Breach and Di- " ſturbance of the common Quiet of both Realms; the ſame being " grounded upon ſo unjuſt a Quarrel; but eſpecially, the whole " Nobility, by whoſe Sentence the late Queen was condemned; the " ſame being approved by Parliament; ſeeing the King to take it ſo " hainouſly, and carry ſuch a bloudy, vindicative Mind; ſhould " have good Cauſe to think it touched them nearly. And you may " be ſure they would rather hazard the marching over their Bellies, " than to yield to the Government of ſuch a Prince, as they ſhould " ſtand in doubt would one Day call their Honours and Lives in " Queſtion.

" And what Relief or Remedy he might expect to obtain in ſuch " an Extremity at Foreign Potentates Hands, who are not very haſty " at theſe Days, to embark themſelves in dangerous Enterprizes for " other Mens ſakes, without ſome further Diſcourſe; *Don Antonio* " may ſerve for a lively Example: Wherein, as in a Mirroir, he " may behold his Fortune, falling into the like diſtreſſed Eſtate.

" And yet to deſcend into a little more particular Conſideration " of this Point, which you can make Account of for to deal with " in any ſuch Enterprize. That is, the *French* King, and the King " of *Spain*, either of which to depend on; as to whoſe Aſſiſtance " he may attain to the preſent Poſſeſſion of this Crown, whoſoever " ſhall go about to perſuade him to take ſuch a Courſe of Counſil; " ſhall in the Opinion of beſt underſtanding Men, diſcover either " great Paſſion, or elſe plain want of Fidelity, or Judgment.

" For the Firſt, in common Reaſon it is not ſafe for any Prince " to repoſe his Strength and Truſt in them, to whoſe Deſires and " Deſigns his Greatneſs and good Succeſs may prove an Impediment " and Hindrance. In which reſpect neither of the two Kings can " ſimply wiſh your Sovereigns Good. For as you know his Reli- " gion is odious unto them both. And if heretofore it bred a Diffi- " culty in his Mothers Proceedings with the Catholick Princes, " when it was ſometime hoped or ſuggeſted, that his Mothers Wiſ- " dom and Authority, (being at Liberty) would alter his Humour " and Diſpoſition that way, which notwithſtanding moved her to " proceed after that Manner in the Enterprize now lately, without " any Conſideration of him; profeſſing to make the King of *Spain* " her

ANNO 1586.

"her Heir, in Caſe her Son became not Catholick. Much more now ſhall the ſaid Princes think they have Cauſe to be backward in the Advancement of ſuch an one to this Crown, who ſhall be likely to be every way prejudicial to the *Rome* Religion, being a Man, and ſo much more mighty by the Union of the Crowns.

"Beſides, it is meerly repugnant to the Policy of *France*, where it can, in reſpect of the antient Claim *England* makes to that Crown, in any Caſe to ſuffer the uniting of this Iſland under one Prince. So as for a King of *France* to help a King of *Scots* to the Crown of *England*, were but in Truth to enable and ſtrengthen him one Day to proſecute his Title to that Crown. But as the State of *France* preſently ſtandeth, I think you ſhall not find the King very forward to caſt himſelf into any Foreign War, it being well known that full ſore againſt his Will he was forced by them of the Houſe of *Guiſe* to allow of the Civil Wars, notwithſtanding this glorious Pretext, wherewith they of *Guiſe* have entangled and embarked that State. For the which, as he hath good Cauſe, (whatſoever Shew he now maketh) no doubt he hateth them, and wiſheth their Confuſion in Heart. And yet perhaps the *French* Politicks ſhould be content (although it lieth not in us divers ways to ſtop and prevent any ſuch malicious Practice) for their own Eaſe and Quiet, to ſerve themſelves of their Sovereigns Quarrel for the preſent, for to tranſport the War out of their Country into this Iſland; yet you may thereby plainly diſcern, how your King ſhall be but uſed as an Inſtrument for to ſerve a Turn; as his Predeceſſors heretofore have been, to the Effuſion of much *Scottiſh* Bloud, and the Spoil of that Realm. Beſides, it were no good Counſil to be given by thoſe that depend upon the *French* Kings Fortune, to advance a King of *Scots*, too near allied in Bloud to the Houſe of *Guiſe*: By whoſe Aſſiſtance this Deſign to poſſeſs that Crown and to depoſe the King, (a Matter by him greatly doubted) may the better take Effect.

"Now for the Aſſiſtance of *Spain*; it is thought his Age and unſettled Eſtate every way, would move him rather to incline to Peace, if it were offered; than to hearken to any new Enterprizes. But otherwiſe, if he ſhould give Ear thereto, it cannot be but moſt dangerous to your King, conſidering his Ambition, his Practices, his Power, his Colour of Right. For it is well known, how he had figured himſelf an Empire over all this Part of the World: What Plots he laid for the compaſſing thereof. A Foundation was laid for the ſubduing of this Land in Queen *Maries* Time, he being then our King in Right of his Wife. The Conqueſt was fully concluded afterwards under Colour of Religion; as by the Prince of *Orange*, then of the Privy Council, ſince revealed. He now pretendeth himſelf to be the *firſt Catholick Prince*, of the Bloud Royal of *England*; being reputed before, though falſly, Heir of the Houſe of *Lancaſter*, as by the Pedigrees and Books publiſhed by the Biſhop of *Roſſe*, and others in his Favour, may appear. It was practiſed even during the late Queen of *Scots* Life by the *Jeſuits* and divers Gentlemen, to advance him to the Crown by way of Election, to the Prejudice of her and her Line, as meeteſt to reſtore the *Romiſh* Authority, both here and elſewhere.

“For although your Sovereigns Diſpoſition was not deſperate, they aſſured themſelves, that he would not part with the *Supremacy* no more than King *Henry* VIII. we may eaſily and rightly judge, how far he would prevail of the Donation made of this Crown by the late Queen of *Scots*, in her Letters promiſed to be confirmed by her Laſt Will and Teſtament. Whereof his Ambaſſador at *Paris*, *Don Bernardino de Mendoza*, ſticketh not already to make open Vaunt; and what herſelf hath practiſed to that Effect with her Servants, ſince her Condemnation, God knoweth. Laſtly, being the Strongeſt, what ſhould let him to diſpoſe of the Prey, as he liſteth. Warrant he could want none, ſo long as the Popes may be as they are, of his own and only making.

“All which laid together argues, how dangerous a Matter it might prove, for your Sovereign upon the ſaid *Spaniard*, or any ſuch kind of Friends Aſſiſtance, which might be converted to his own Diſheriſon, as well as to his Adverſaries Annoyance.

“And thus by Chance of this Religion he ſhall be able to mend the Matter, or better his Condition in any reſpect, is very unprobable; conſidering the ſaid private reſpects of their own Eſtates and Pretentions will ſtill remain. And for the King of *Spains* Part, the Uſurpation of the Kingdom of *Portugal* gives evident Proof, that his Ambition cannot be reſtrained, when he hath the Advantage by any Bonds of Religion, Honour or Juſtice. And the ſimple Aſſiſtance poor *Don Antonio* hath received, notwithſtanding he is a Catholick, doth ſufficiently ſhew, what is to be hoped for, if ought happened to your Sovereign in the like Caſe. But contrariwiſe, the Kings Revolt from Religion (which God defend) likely to be judged a want of Religion, rather than a Change, will be his utter overthrow, and diſcredit to all *Chriſtendom*. For as it ſhall looſe him his natural Subjects and Well-willers, both at home and abroad, ſo will it win him but hollow hearted Friends; in reſpect that no Aſſurance can be had of a Conſtancy in a Religion, if it ſhould appear, that upon Stomach he ſhall fall from his God, and that Religion wherein he was extraordinarily inſtructed and brought up. Neither can he in Reaſon look upon the ſudden, and at an Inſtant to be Inheritor of his Mothers Party and Credit in that reſpect here; which notwithſtanding was not ſufficient to hold all the Catholicks of *England* united.

“And as for my other Objections that may be made, whereby he ſhould ſeem to be urged, and conſtrained to ſeek after Foreign Supports; as in reſpect of the Offence that may have been already taken by the Nobility and People of this Land, that he hath, contrary to their earneſt Deſire, and joint Purſuit, being aſſembled in Parliament, mediated for his Mothers Life, it lies in his own Power to remove the ſame, if he leave, when it is Time, as he perſiſted, while there were Hopes.

“As alſo touching that Point of the Honour and Reputation, whereupon you all ſeem ſo much to ſtand, which ſurely he ſhall be judged ſufficient to have cared for, and preſerved, in mediating

ANNO 1586.

“ for his ſaid Mother, ſo long as there was Hope, ſhe being alive, whereof all the World can bear him witneſs. But ſeeing ſhe is now dead, and that the Juſtneſs and Neceſſity of her Execution ſtoppeth the Courſe of all ſlanderous Reports that may be made thereof, the whole Proceeding being imparted to all ſuch as he can deſire, or careth to have ſatisfied, it ſhall be the more for his Honour aſſuredly, to ſhew, how he can moderate his Paſſion by Reaſon. And ſo it was wiſhed by all good Men, both for the common Good of this Iſland, and for his own Greatneſs every way, that he were adviſed; and to thank God, who hath delivered him by this Means of a great Burthen of Conſcience, which otherwiſe muſt have lyen upon him, as at whoſe Hands God would have lookt for a Revenge of his Fathers Bloud, ſo innocently and horribly ſpilt, by her Conſent and Privity: Not to ſpeak of the Goodneſs of God herein towards him, in eſtabliſhing his Throne, continually undermined by her Practices. The End whereof, if he be well counſilled, will be the Beginning of all Happineſs in *Scotland*. Where inſtead of being ſent for an Hoſtage, or Ward, to Pope or *Spaniard*, as the ſaid Queen would have made him, he may now abſolutely and quietly Reign.

“ Thus you ſee, how the Care and Deſire I have of the Continuance of Amity between the two Crowns, hath carried me into a longer Diſcourſe than I purpoſed. But having collected theſe, and a Number more concerning the Weal, as I hope of both Realms, to be imparted to you by——— for that I found him unwilling to meddle therewith, I thought good to write thus much unto yourſelf, whom I truſt I ſhall not need to exhort and encourage to do all the good Offices, which on your Part ſhall be poſſible; conſidering that our Satisfaction on this Behalf ſhall be joined with the Service of God, your own Sovereign and Country; which thereby ſhall reap the bleſſed Fruits of Peace.

This wiſe and well penned Letter, with the good Counſil given to the King accordingly by that grave Counſillor to whom it was written, took Effect. For I meet with a Paper of that Kings, being, as it ſeems, his own Thoughts in that weighty Affair, wrote by himſelf after ſerious Deliberation of his preſent Circumſtances. It was thus endorſed, *Reaſons for the* Scots *Kings not revenging his Mothers Death.*

The Kings ſecond Thoughts of revenging his Mothers Death. Cotton *Libr.*

“ I am unable to revenge the hainous Murther committed againſt my deareſt Mother, by the old Enemies of my Progenitors Realm and Nation; for divers Reſpects: Firſt, in reſpect of my tender Youth, not trained up in Dexterity of Arms, either to withſtand Injuries, or to conquer mine own Right; being at all Times by gane [by-paſt] deteint in Captivity. Next, my exceſſive Cowpit from Hand to Hand, from Neydie to Neydie, to greedy and greedie; having ſufficient Patrimony and Caſualty; and yet has none at all in Store. The divers Factions of the Spiritual and Moral Eſtate, every one regarding himſelf, and not me. Council perſuading me Security of my own Eſtate now, which could never have been without Faction, if ſhe had been left alive. Perſuaſions never to conjoin myſelf in Matrimony, except with a

“Prince, having Affinity to our own Religion; or elſe to be long unmarried. Which may cauſe other Princes to hold me in Reverence. The Puiſſance of *England*, which may work a contrary Faction of my own Subjects againſt all my Intents; that [may] ſeize me, [and] for impriſoning and betraying in their Hands, to be rewarded with my Mother, or elſe Thraldom of perpetual Impriſonment; if of Courſe not all three.

All this had the good Concluſion at laſt of a firm League of Friendſhip between that King and Queen *Elizabeth*; as we ſhall hear by and by.

This Emergence gave Occaſion of ſeveral Books to be writ on both ſides.

A Relation of the Scots *Queens Execution. MSS.* Burghl.

I ſhall firſt take Notice of an authentic *MS.* intitled, *The Order and Manner of the Execution of* MARY *Queen of* Scots, *Febr.* 8. 1586. It was writ by Order of the Lord Treaſurer. *Beal*, Clerk of the Council, was I ſuppoſe, the Writer: Who was one of thoſe that went down with the Warrant for the Execution, and was preſent at it. He entered upon his ſaid Relation with this Preface to that Lord; “That it might pleaſe his good Lordſhip to be advertiſed, that according as his good Lordſhip gave him in Commiſſion, he had ſet down in Writing the Time, Order, and Manner of the Execution of *MARY*, late Queen of *Scots*, the 8th Day of February, in the Year of our Lord 1586. together with the Relation of all ſuch Actions, done in the Great Hall in the Caſtle of *Fotheringay*, with the Speeches ſpoken, and Things done by the ſaid Queen: With other Circumſtances and Proceedings concerning the ſame, *&c.* after the Delivery of the ſaid *Scots* Queen to *Tho. Andrews*, Eſq; High Sheriff for her Majeſty's County of *Northampton*, to the End of the Execution. I ſhall only extract a few Particulars out of it. It began thus.

The Preparation.

“It being certified, the 6. of *February* late, to the ſaid Queen by the Right Honourable the Earl of *Kent*, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and alſo by Sir *Amyas Paulet*, and Sir *Drue Drury*, her Governours, that ſhe was to prepare herſelf to die the 8th of *February* next coming, ſhe ſeemed not to be in any Terror, for ought that appeared, by her outward Geſtures or Behaviour, (other than marvelling ſhe ſhould die;) but rather with ſmiling Cheer, and pleaſant Countenance digeſted and received the ſaid Admonition of Preparation. As to her, ſhe ſaid, (ſave the unexpected Execution) that her Death ſhould be welcome unto her, ſeeing her Majeſty was ſo reſolved. And that that Soul were far unworthy the Fruition of the Joy of Heaven for ever, whoſe Body in this World would not be content to endure the Stroke of Execution for a Moment. And that ſpoken, ſhe wept bitterly; and became ſilent.

Deſcription of the Queen of Scots.

“The 8th of February being come, at the Time and Place appointed for the Execution, the ſaid Queen of *Scots*, being of Stature tall, of Body corpulent, round-ſhouldered, her Face fat and broad, Double-chinned, with hazel Eyes, her borrowed Hair;

"her Attyre on her Head was on this Manner. She had a Dreſſing "of Lawn, edged with Bone-lace; a Pomander Chain, with an "*Agnus Dei* about her Neck: A *Crucifix* in her Hand; a pair of "Beads at her Girdle; a golden Croſs at the End of it: A Vail of "Lawn faſtened to her Caul, bowed out with Wyer, edged round "about with Bone-lace. Her Gown was of black Satten, painted "with a Train behind and long Sleeves to the Ground, ſet with "acorne Buttons of Jet, trimmed with Pearl; and ſhort Sleeves of "Satten black cut, with a Pair of purple Sleeves [Gloves] of Vel-"vet, whole underneath. Then her Kirtle whole of figured black "Satten. Her Petticoat [*i. e.* Waſtcoat] unlaced in the Back, of "Crimſon Satten. Her Petticoat Skirts of Crimſon Velvet: Her "Shoes of *Spaniſh* Leather, the rough Side outward. A Pair of "green Silk Garters: Her nether Stocks wooſted, coloured watchet, "clocked with Silver, and edged on the Top with Silver; and next "her Leggs a Pair of *Jerſey* Hoſe, white.

"The Queen thus apparelled in a Kind of Joy, without a Deſire "of deferring of Matters, or Time, departed her Chamber, and very "willingly landed her Steps towards the Place of Execution; being "gently carried and ſupported out of her Chamber into an Entry "next the ſaid Great Hall by two of Sr. *Am. Powlets* Gentlemen: "Mr. *Andrews* the High Sheriff going before her. This I ſet down the more largely and particularly, to ſupply Mr. *Camdens* Brevity in the Relation both of her Attire and Appearance. Which he thus flouriſheth to the Queens Honour.

Camd. Eliz. *p.* 383.

"She dreſſed herſelf as gorgeouſly and curiouſly, as ſhe was wont "to do upon Feſtival Days, *&c.* And forth ſhe came with State, "Countenance, and Preſence Majeſtically compoſed; a cheerful "Look, and a Matron-like and modeſt Habit. Her Head covered "with a Linnin Vail; and that hanging down to the Ground. Her "Prayer-Beads hanging at her Girdle, and carrying a Crucifix of "Ivory in her Hand.

I ſhall mention another Paſſage from this *MS.* (being abbreviated in our Hiſtorian) concerning *Melvil*, her faithful Servant: And his paſſionate Words, and Tears, meeting her, as ſhe was going into the Hall to die.

Melvins *Lamentation and Words to the Queen.*

"In the Entry the Earl of *Kent*, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, Com-"miſſioners appointed by her Majeſty for her ſaid Execution; toge-"ther with her two Governours of her Perſon, Sir *Amyas Powlet* "and Sir *Drue Drury*, and divers Knights, and Gentlemen of good "Account, met her. Where they found one of that Queens Ser-"vants, named *Melvin*, wringing his Hands and ſhedding of Tears, "and uſing theſe Words, Ah! Madam, unhappy me; What Man "on Earth was ever before the Meſſenger of ſuch importunate Sor-"rows and Heavineſs, as I ſhall be, when I ſhall report, that my "good, gracious Queen was beheaded in *England*? His ſaid Tears pre-"vented him of further Speech. When the ſaid Queen powring "out her dying Tears, then anſwered him; My good Servant, "Ceaſe thy Lamentation. For thou haſt Cauſe rather to joy, than "to mourn. For now ſhalt thou ſee *Mary Stuards* Troubles

" receive their long expected End and Determination. For know, " ſaid ſhe, good Servant, all the World is but naught, and ſubject " ſtill to more Sorrow, than a whole Ocean of Tears can bewail. " But I pray thee, ſaid ſhe, report from me, that I die a true Wo- " man to my Religion, and like a true Woman of *Scotland* and " *France*. But God forgive them, ſaid ſhe, that have long deſired " my End, and thirſted for my Bloud, as the Hart doth for the " Water Brooks. O God, added ſhe, thou art the Author of Truth; " and Truth itſelf knoweth the inward Chamber of my Thoughts; " and how I was ever willing, that *England* and *Scotland* ſhould " be united together. Well, ſaid ſhe, Commend me to my Son; and " tell him, that I have not done any Thing prejudicial to his State " and Kingdom of *Scotland*." [The Hiſtorian adds here, (which is not in the MS.) *And admoniſh him to hold in Amity and Friendſhip with the Queen of* England: As though it were added by ſome *Engliſh* or *Scottiſh* Stateſman,] " And do him faithful Ser- " vice.

" And ſo diſſolving herſelf again into Tears, ſaid, Good *Melvin*, " farewel. And with her Eyes and her Cheeks all beſprinkled with " Tears, as they were, ſhe kiſt him; ſaying again, Farewel, good " *Melvin*, and pray for thy Miſtreſs and Queen.

Wherein the Hiſtory is ſhort and imperfect, the MS. will ſupply; as in ſeveral Particulars alſo following.

The Commiſſion for her Execution read.

How ſhe heard it.

" When ſhe was brought to the Scaffold, the Commiſſion for " her Execution was read openly by Mr. *Beal*, Clerk of the Coun- " cil, *&c.* During the Reading the Queen was very ſilent, liſten- " ing unto it with ſo careleſs a Regard, as if it had not concerned " her at all; but rather with ſo merry a Countenance, as if it had " been a Pardon from her Majeſty for her Life. And withal uſed " ſuch a Strangeneſs in her Words and Deeds, as though ſhe never " knew any of the Aſſembly, nor been any Thing ſeen in the *Engliſh* Tongue. Which *Camden* expreſſeth thus ſhortly, *Beal read the Warrant; ſhe heard it attentively; yet as if her Thoughts were taken up with ſomething elſe.*

The Lords had prepared a learned Divine, *Fletcher*, Dean of *Peterburgh* (afterwards Biſhop of *London*) to attend upon her with his Inſtructions and Prayers. Which alſo are in our Hiſtorian very defectively related. I go on therefore to tranſcribe from the *MS.*

Dean of Peterburghs Speech to her.

" Then Dr. *Fletcher*, Dean of *Peterburgh*, ſtanding before with- " out the Rails, bending his Body with great Reverence, uſed theſe " Exhortations to her, following; Madam, the Queens moſt excel- " lent Majeſty (whom God preſerve long to Reign over us) having " notwithſtanding this Preparation of the Execution of Juſtice, " juſtly to be done on you, for your manifold Treſpaſſes againſt " her Sacred Perſon, State and Government, for a tender Care over " your Soul, which preſently departing out of your Body, muſt " either be ſeparated in the true Faith of Chriſt, or periſh for ever, " doth by *Jeſus* Chriſt offer the comfortable Promiſes of Almighty " God for all penitent and believing Chriſtians. Wherein I beſeech " your Grace in the Bowels of *Jeſus* Chriſt, to conſider theſe three " Things. Firſt, Your Eſtate paſt and tranſitory Glory. Secondly,

ANNO 1586.

" Your Condition preſent of Death and Immortality. Thirdly, " Your Eſtate to come, either by eternal Happineſs, or elſe perpetual Infelicity.

" For the firſt, let me ſpeak to your Grace, with *David* the " King, Forget, Madam, yourſelf and your own People, your " Fathers Houſe; forget your natural Birth, your Regal and Princely Dignity. So ſhall the King of Kings take Pleaſure in your " Spiritual Beauty; making all Things as Duſt and Clay; Doing ſo, " that you may be found of God; not having your own Righteouſneſs, which is defiled and unclean, but the Righteouſneſs of God " by Faith in Jeſus Chriſt, upon all and in all that believe: That " you may know him, whom to know is Life everlaſting; and the " Vertue of his Reſurrection, to raiſe you up at the laſt Day to the " Life everlaſting; and the Fellowſhip of his Paſſion; that if you " ſuffer with him, you may be glorified with him; and the Conformity of his Death, that by the partaking and Communion thereof, you may die to Sin, and live again to Righteouſneſs; and that " in your former Courſe, you be not judged of the Lord.

" Repent you truly of your former Sins and Wickedneſs. Juſtify the Juſtice now to be executed. And juſtify her Majeſties " Faithfulneſs towards you at all Times. Have a lively Faith in " Chriſt, our Saviour and Lord. And ſo ſhall you be rightly prepared unto Death. If your Offences, Madam, were as many as " the Sand upon the Sea Shore, and as red and bloudy as Scarlet, " in the Eyes of the Lord, yet the Grace and Mercy of Jeſus " Chriſt ſhall purge and make them as white as Snow, and ſhall " caſt them into the Bottom of the Sea, and remember them no " more. The Special Means to attain to Forgiveneſs of Sins is neither in Man, nor by Man, but by Faith only in Jeſus Chriſt " crucified. In whom we being juſtified have Peace with God, and " all Spiritual Security.

" Secondly, Conſider, I beſeech your Grace, your preſent Condition of Death, and Mortality, your going from hence, to be no " more ſeen; your Departure into a Land, where all Things are " forgotten; your Entrance into a Houſe of Clay; where Worms " ſhall be your Siſters; Rottenneſs and Corruption your Father, as " *Job* ſpeaketh. Where the Tree falls, there it muſt lie; whether it be toward the *South* of Life and Bleſſedneſs; or toward " the *North* of Death and Dolefulneſs. Now is the Time of your " riſing to God, or your Fall to utter Darkneſs: Where ſhall be " weeping, wailing, and gnaſhing of Teeth. Hereafter is no Time " of Reconciliation, or Place of Satisfaction. Here Life is gotten; " here Life is loſt.

" And therefore, Madam, this Day, yea, this Hour, if you will " hear Gods Voice, harden not your Heart.

" The Hand of Death is over your Head. The Axe is put to " the Root of the Tree. The Throne of the great Judge of Heaven is ſet. The Book of all your Life is laid open; and the particular Sentence and Judgment is at Hand. But if you flee to " the Throne of God with Boldneſs only in Chriſts meritorious " Obedience, and apply it to your Soul with the Hand of true

“ Faith, your Chriſt ſhall be your Life, and your Death ſhall be
“ your Vantage; and nothing elſe but an Entrance into the everlaſting
“ Glory. And this your Mortality ſhall in a Moment put
“ on Immortality. Madam, even now, Madam, doth God Almighty
“ open unto you a Door into a heavenly Kingdom. In
“ compariſon whereof all earthly Principality is as Darkneſs and
“ the Shadow of Death. Shut not up therefore this Paſſage by the
“ hardening of your Heart; and grieve not the Spirit of God;
“ which may ſeal your Soul to a Day of Redemption.

“ Thirdly and laſtly of all, I pray your Grace to weigh with
“ yourſelf the Time and Eſtate to come; either to riſe in the Day
“ of the Lord, to the Reſurrection of Life, and to hear the joyful
“ and bleſſed Saying, *Come, ye Bleſſed of my Father:* Or the Reſurrection
“ to Condemnation, *Depart* with Sorrow and Grief; *Item,*
“ Go, ye accurſed, into everlaſting Fire. Either to ſtand on Gods
“ Right Hand, as a Sheep of his Paſture, or at his Left Hand, as a
“ Goat, prepared unto Vengeance: Either to be gathered as Wheat
“ into his Barn, or to be caſt out as Chaff into a Furnace of unquenchable
“ Fire. *Bleſſed are the Dead, which die in the Lord.*
“ *In the Lord* ſhall you die, if in true Faith you deſire to be diſſolved,
“ and to be with Chriſt. *With Chriſt* ſhall you be, if you
“ make Chriſt your only Sacrifice for your Sins, and a Ranſome for
“ your Redemption.

“ O! Madam, truſt not the Devices, which Gods Word doth
“ not warrant, which is the true Touchſtone, and the clear Lanthorn,
“ to lead and to guide our Feet into the Way of Peace.
“ *Jeſus Chriſt Yeſterday, and to Day, and the ſame for ever.* In
“ him are all the Promiſes of Good, to him give all the Scriptures
“ Teſtimony; that through Faith in his Bloud we, and all Gods
“ Church, ſhall receive Remiſſion of Sins. On him all the Saints
“ call in the Day of Trouble; and have been heard and delivered.
“ In him have they all truſted, and were never confounded. All
“ other Ciſterns are broken; and cannot hold the Water of everlaſting
“ Life. *The Name of the Lord is a ſtrong Tower: Whereunto
the Righteous fly, and be ſaved.*

“ Therefore, Madam, that you may ſo glorify him in your laſt
“ Paſſage, that you may be glorified of him for ever, I moſt humbly
“ beſeech your Grace in the tender Mercy of God, to join with us
“ preſent, in Prayer, to the Throne of Grace; that we may rejoice,
“ and you be converted; and God may turn his loving Countenance
“ toward you, and grant you his Peace.” None of all this in our
Hiſtorian. I do not repeat the Deans Prayer, ſince it may be found
in the Hiſtory of the Church of *Peterburgh* by *Gunton.* I go on
in the Words of the *MS.*

She interrupts the Dean. Her Words to him.

“ In uttering theſe Words of Exhortation, the ſaid Queen three
“ or four Times ſaid unto him, Maſter Dean, trouble not yourſelf,
“ nor me. For know, that I am ſettled in the antient, Catholick,
“ *Romiſh* Religion. And in Defence thereof, by Gods Help, to
“ ſpend my Bloud. Then ſaid the Dean, Madam, change your Opinion,
“ and repent of your former Sins and Wickedneſs, and ſettle
“ yourſelf upon this Ground, that only in Chriſt *Jeſu* you hope to

ANNO 1586.

" be ſaved. Then ſhe anſwered again and again with great earneſtneſs, Good Maſter Dean, trouble no more yourſelf about this " Matter. For I was born in this Religion, I have lived in this " Religion; and I am reſolved to die in this Religion: Then ſaid " the Earls, when they ſaw, how uncomfortable ſhe was in the " hearing of Maſter Deans good Exhortation, Madam, we will pray " for your Grace with Maſter Dean, if it ſtand with Gods good " Will, you may have your Heart lightned with the true Knowledge of Gods good Will and his Word; and ſo die therein. Then " anſwered the Queen, if you will pray for me, I will even from " my Heart thank you, and think my ſelf greatly favoured by you. " But to join in Prayer with you, my Lords, after your Manner, " who are not of one and the ſelf ſame Religion with me, it were a " Sin. I will not." *Camden* relates it ſomewhat differently, That when the Earls ſaid, they would pray for her, ſhe ſaid, ſhe would give them Thanks, if they would pray with her.

" Then the Lords called for Maſter Dean again, and bade him " ſay on, or ſpeak what he thought good. Whereupon the ſaid " Maſter Dean kneeling on the Scaffold Stairs, began his Prayers.

Theſe are ſome Extracts taken from the Lord Treaſurers *MS.* (endorſed by his own Pen) concerning the laſt Concluſion of Queen *Maries* Life.

Concerning this Queen there were ſeveral other Books written, and diſperſed about this Time.

Two Books concerning the Lord Darlies *Murther.*

Two Books came forth in Print concerning the Death of the Lord *Darly*, the *Scots* Queens Husband, barbarouſly murthered. One of them laying the Crime to that Queens Charge; and the particular Concerns ſhe had in it. Which Book was intitled, *De* Maria Scotorum *Regina, totaque ejus contra Regem Conjuratione*; *fœdo cum* Bothuelio *adulterio*; *nefaria in maritum crudelitate & rabie*; *horrendo inſuper & deterrimo ejuſdem parricidio*; *plena & tragica Hiſtoria.* Another Book was writ and publiſhed, to clear and vindicate the ſaid Queen: intitled, *Maria Stuarta innocens à cœde* Darliana. Writ by *Obert Barneſtapolius.* And dedicated to Cardinal *Allen*, in the Year 1588. Containing almoſt the whole Hiſtory of that Queen. Both theſe Books I have ſeen in the *Lambeth* Library.

Memoirs.

There is a Volume in the ſame Library, called *Memoirs* in Archbiſhop *Whitgifts* Time. Which appeareth to conſiſt of looſe Tracts and Papers collected together by the late Archbiſhop *Sancroft:* Thus intitled by his own Hand, *Memoirs of Affairs in Church and State in Archbiſhop* Whitgifts Time. In the Beginning of this Volume is an *Index* of the ſeveral Treatiſes contained therein. Among the reſt there was one bearing this Title, *Sentences againſt the Queen of* Scots. But when I went to look for it according to the Page, I found it was torn out. Whereupon I concluded it was done after that Archbiſhop was departed from *Lambeth*, under the late King *James*, when ſome of his Prieſts or Party, meeting with ſuch a *MS.* might think fit to take it away, in Favour of the Memory of that Queen.

ANNO 1586.

Cœdes Darliana.

Cœdes Darliana was another Book written by *Robert Turner*, an *Engliſh* Man, Profeſſor at *Ingolſtad* in *Germany*, and Scholar ſometime to *Campion* the *Jeſuit*. He dedicated his Book to Cardinal *Allen* at *Rome*, but concealed his Name. In his Epiſtle to the Cardinal he mentioned this his Book with ſome Account of it; *viz.* That he had lately reduced into the Form of an Epiſtle, or rather into a certain Body of a ſhort Commentary, whatſoever he had read or heard of the Cauſe of the Lord *Darlies* Murther, private and publick. The private Cauſe was, a Friends asking him, what there was of Fact, or Pretence, [*facti vel ficti*] in this infamous Report of the *Scots* Queen; that I ſhould without any Colour of Art, unfold to him clearly and diſtinctly. The other, namely, the *publick* Cauſe of his writing this Book was, the Fame of the Queen. The Vindication of whom ſeemed to him to be publickly uſeful; whether as a Catholick, or as ours, or as one innocent, or as a Martyr. He proceeded, " That he had wrote firſt not with a publick Eye, " but for the private Will and Pleaſure of a Friend; and him he " pleaſed in every Part; and a Friend indeed he was of a good Palate; but whether he ſhould pleaſe publickly, he was willing now " to try under his [the Cardinals] Name, that if he diſpleaſed on " one Part, on this Side at leaſt he might pleaſe: Such Favour his " Vertue on all Hands obtained by thoſe who knew him. That all " might truly ſay, that *Alan* [the Cardinal] next after *More* and " *Fiſher*, was at that preſent Time the third Flower of the Church in " *England*; to flouriſh to the Glory of Heaven, by the perpetual " Fruit of his good Actions and Cogitations. I could not forbear the reciting this Part of this Authors Epiſtle, wherein that *Engliſh* bigotted Cardinal is ſo applauded.

A Genealogy of the Queen of Scots.

To all that hath been ſaid of this unfortunate Queen, I ſhall add one Memoir more; and ſo paſs on. There was a *Genealogy* of this Queen in a large Map, printed at *Paris*, *Ann.* 1580: To prove her direct Succeſſion to the Crown of *England.* Set forth by *Leſbley*, Biſhop of *Roſs*, her buiſy Agent abroad. Thus intitled: *Genealogia Regum* Angliæ *a* Gulielmo Conqueſtore, (*Quo Duce* Normanni, *ex* Dacis *orieundi* Angliam *primum occuparunt*) *in noſtram uſque ætatem Succeſſionis ſeriem rectiſſimè deducens.* And at the End by way of Epilogue

Lectori Benevolo.

Habes hic, Lector benevole, continuam florentiſſimi Anglicani *Regni abhinc quingentis annis Succeſſionem; quam non tam Sereniſſimæ* Scotorum *Reginæ* MARIÆ, *ejuſque filio, optimæ Spei Principi, gratificandi Studio, proponere volui, quàm ut ſublato omni de legitima Succeſſione Scrupulo, totius* Britanniæ *Dignitati, Paci ac Saluti, conſulatur; & omnis Seditionis materia, quæ inde ſuboriri poſſet, penitus extinguatur, Vale, & huic noſtro Labori fave.* J. Leſſeus, Epiſ. Roſs. Pariſiis, *Anno* MDLXXX.

In this Map, when the Genealogy reacheth to Queen *Mary*, is her Picture in the Print ſet at large. And under her, when the Stem comes to Queen *Elizabeth*, her Picture ſtands in a much leſs Compaſs.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A League made between the Queen and King of Scots. *The Grudge of ſome of the* Scotch *Nobility at it. Dangers on all Hands from abroad.* Drake *ſent forth with a Fleet. Intelligence from the Iſle of* Wight. *The Queen charged to ſow Sedition among Princes. Anſwered. King of* Navars *danger. Conſultation for him: The Queen ready to aſſiſt him, at* Rochel. *An* Engliſh *Officer going to ſerve in* Holland, *taken by the* Spaniard*: Examined. His Anſwers. Upon ſome Overtures between the Queen and* Spain, *the Advice of* Ramelius, *the* Daniſh *Ambaſſador. Difference between the Lord Deputy of* Ireland, *and Council. Biſhop of* Meaths *Letter thereupon.*

League between Queen Elizabeth, *and the King of* Scots.

UPON the matureſt Thoughts of the King and the State in *Scotland*, it was concluded, that a firm Peace ſhould be made with Queen *Elizabeth*. And there were Heads drawn up, and concluded, of a ſtrict League between the Queen and King *James*, for the Defence of each other in Religion: Concluded at *Barwick* upon *Tweed*, *July* 5. 1586. The Commiſſioners on the *Engliſh* Side were the Earl of *Rutland*, Lord *Evers*, and *Tho. Randolph*. Commiſſioners on the *Scotch*, the Earl of *Bothwel*, and *Boide*. The Peace the King made up chiefly by himſelf; conſulting but with few; a great many of his great Men not made privy to it, as they expected, and in expectance of Gratification from the Queen. So that when they were advertiſed of it by *Randolph*, the great Agent on the Queens Part, they ſeemed much diſcontented, and had Words ſounding to their Diſallowance thereof.

Randolph *the Queens Ambaſſador, his Letter concerning ſome Noblemen in* Scotland *diſcontented.*

Of this, *Randolph* ſoon acquainted the Lord Treaſurer. But yet withal that they complied at length. His Letter unfolds the Matter more fully. Which was as follows: "The Matters of late had gone ſo far awry, partly, under a colour, that the Noblemen are diſcontented, that ſo great a Matter the King hath yielded unto by himſelf without them, by granting unto the League. By it either they think themſelves neglected; not to have the Honour, to be made privy unto it; or for that ſome of them look for Thanks at her Majeſties Hands, or ſome for Gain. That I aſſure your Lordſhip, that for a Time I thought my Travail had been quite in vain; though it fell out otherwiſe, (as by a former ſhort Letter he had ſignified unto Mr. Secretary) not doubting but his Honour was privy unto them. Yet not ſo clear, but that (as he proceeded)

ANNO 1586.

“ proceeded) he found them remain both diſcontented towards their King, ſo little to regard them; and alſo, as far as they dared ſpeak of her Majeſty, they were ſo meanly thought of, as in a Caſe of ſo great Weight, which bound both themſelves and Poſterity, it ſhould be ended without their Advice. But howſoever they, or whatſoever they took it, it was then concluded; and all other her Majeſties Commands agreed unto by the King . . . that the firſt Sum granted ſhall be yielded unto by her Majeſty; though not now yet hereafter. As alſo ſome ſuch Inſtrument or Teſtimony to proceed from her Majeſty; as by it ſhould be aſſured, that ſhe will ſuffer nothing to be done that ſhould be prejudicial to his pretended Right, during her Life.

“ That though theſe were the Cauſes, *viz.* the Noblemen, the Money and the Aſſurance; yet he [the King] ſeemed eſpecially to be grieved with ſome Words in her Majeſties Letters: As not coming to that good expecting of his Doings, as he lookt for. In which he thought to have deſerved moſt intire Thanks. And alſo that ſhe ſhould think him ill adviſed, as her Majeſty writ, by his Counſillors. Which not a little offended a Secretary [*i. e.* of that King.] The Ambaſſador added, that he had excuſed all, and had brought him rather content to bear it in ſilence, than further to deal in a Matter paſt, and remedileſs.

“ Concluding, that for all Matters touching his Negotiation, he referred himſelf to that which at more length he had written to Mr. Secretary; and ſo humbly took his Leave.” By way of Poſtſcript, he ſubjoined theſe Words: “ The *Scots* impatient to bear any Words of diſdain, where he [the King] may be revenged.

In danger of Invaſion; Drake *with a Fleet ſent forth.*

The Queen this Year had Enemies on all Hands of her; and continual Apprehenſions of Invaſion, eſpecially from *Spain*; now that the Queen had taken the People of the *Low Countries* under her Protection. And to ſecure herſelf by Sea, Sir *Francis Drake* was ſent out with forty Gallies, for Defence and Offence: And did notable Execution: Which our Hiſtories mention. And of this Sir *George Carew*, Governor of the *Iſle of Wight*, gave Intelligence from thence, unto the Earl of *Suſſex*, Lord Lieutenant of the County of *Southampton*; upon occaſion of the ſtrong Report that came to Court, that they were all up in that *Iſle of Wight*. Which, as Things then ſtood abroad, inclined Men to believe. Whence the ſaid Lord Lieutenant diſpatched a Letter to the ſaid Governor for Information. Who the very next Day (*viz.* June the 8th.) anſwered to this Tenor.

Intelligence from the Iſle of Wight.

Sir G. Carew *the Governor his Letter.*

“ That finding there by the ſtrange Bruits and Reports, that ſhould be publiſhed of ſome Stir and unlawful Aſſembly there in the *Wight*, whereof it ſhould ariſe he could not gueſs. For Thanks be to God (as he proceeded) we have Corn ſufficient to ſerve until Harveſt; in every Market Day ſerved ſo plentifully, that half brought thither was not bought. The Price was 4 *s.* and 13 Groats. That in the Shires of *England* he thought, not much better cheap. For finding the ſmall Yield of Corn this Year, he made a general Search of all the Corn in the Iſland.

ANNO 1586.

“ And ſo divided the Proportion thereof, to ſerve the Market and Country Weekly between that and Harveſt, that all Buyers ſtand moſt contented; and the Sellers held themſelves but well dealt withal.

“ That therefore whereupon any Speech ſhould grow, that they which had not among them, to his Knowledge a diſcontented Perſon, were up in Arms, and yeſterday a Field to be pitched, he could not gueſs; unleſs they ſhould turn to a ſeditious Jeſt, or being in Arms, becauſe he [the Governour] daily muſtred and trained the People. And of pitching a Field, in reſpect that Yeſterday (added he) divers Gentlemen accompanied me to hunt young Ducks at *Nettleſton* Pond; where in the Battel 200 were killed: Or elſe, that ſome Papiſts would feed diſcontented Humours with Reports of ſuch Matters, to be in Accord as the Malice of their Hearts did wiſh.

There were at this Time ſome treacherous Deſigns carrying on in this *Iſle of Wight*; a Report ariſing there of the Governours being to be ſent thence into *Flanders*. For thus he went on in his ſaid Letter to the Earl: “ That for him that came over, and had reported, he brought Letters from the Council to him, that he was to go into *Flanders*, he had made Search, but could not as yet find him; but he intended the Morrow Night to make a privy Search throughout the Iſland, for all the ſuſpected that ſhould lately be come over; to try if he could find any Practiſers, lurking among them [in the Iſland] to diſcover any of theſe Sowers of Untruth. Wherein if he could learn any Matter of Importance, he would not fail to advertiſe his Lordſhip thereof. He added concerning the Beacons, that the *Beacons* of *Ride* ſhould be well watched, to advertiſe his Lordſhip upon any Occaſion whatſoever.

Reports from France.

He went on with further Intelligence of the Dangers on that Side the Kingdom. “ That it might pleaſe his Lordſhip further to underſtand, that Yeſterday there arrived there a Bark of that Iſland, that came from *Newhaven*. The Company whereof made Report, that the Speeches there were, that the King of *France* had ſent to St. *Tovies* in *Portugal* 60 Sail of Ships for Salt; and was then preparing a Fleet to go againſt *Rochel*, whereof ten Sail came out of *Newhaven*: Who were appointed to haul out of *Newhaven* as the Day before. And that there were two *Engliſh* Ships of *Alborough*, of the Burthen of 140 Tun apiece, the one had paid thirty Crowns to be releaſed; and the other ſtayed to ſerve. And that the common Report was, that the King had ſent to her Majeſty an Ambaſſador, that if ſhe would by any Means aid *Rochel*, he would have War with her.

Reports of Drakes *Succeſs againſt* Spain.

“ That they further ſaid, that the common Report in *Newhaven* was, that the King of *Spain* had ſent againſt Sir *Francis Drake* forty Galliaſſes and Caracks; and that Sir *Francis Drake* had burnt divers Cities and Towns in the *India*. Which proved true enough.

“ And ſo (as the Letter ends) with the humble remembrance of my Duty to your Lordſhip, I commit you to the Tuition of

“ the only Almighty. From the *Park* this 8th of *June* 1586.
“ Your Lordſhips to his Power,

George Carey.

I repeat this Letter thus at large, that by this News, and theſe Reports, the preſent Condition of this Kingdom may hence be the better underſtood; and with what good Reaſon the State now, at this Juncture, had to look about them.

The Queen charged to create Sedition amongſt Princes.

Clamours were now raiſed by the Queens Enemies, that ſhe moved Sedition among Princes. I meet with a Speech ſpoken as it ſeems in Parliament, or in ſome other publick Audience upon this Occaſion, of the *Jeſuits* laying to her Charge, that ſhe ſowed Sedition among Princes, and aſſiſted Rebels, in reſpect (as it ſeems) of of her taking upon her the Protection of the *Netherlanders.* The Speech was as enſueth.

Vindicated. Memoirs. Lambeth *Libr.*

“ The old Saying was never more juſtified, *Mala mens, malus* “ *animus.* Miſchievous Hearts are ever fraught with Slanders. “ Among the manifold Practices which have been bent againſt her “ Majeſties moſt happy Government of late Years, there is none “ doth ſhew that Malice of our common Adverſaries more apparently, than do their bitter and ſhameleſs Calumniations, *arrepta ex* “ *trivio,* as *Tully* terms them. And I find it hath been a Practice “ evermore of the old Calumniator and ſlanderer of Religion, where Apo. “ he cannot otherwiſe prevail, to aſſault the ſame by reproachful “ Defamation. As I remember Chriſt himſelf was called a Glutton, “ a Seducer, a Companion with Sinners, and a Practiſer with Devils. St. *Stephen* was charged, that he had ſpoken contumeliouſly *adverſus locum Sanctum & Legem.* One *Tertullus* accuſed Act. 6. “ St. *Paul,* that he was an Heretick and ſower of Sedition, and Pro- Act. 24. “ faner of the Temple.—— I have heard it often preached, and I “ think it is true, that in the Primitive Church, the Chriſtians were “ accuſed by ſuch malicious Enemies, to offer their Children for “ Sacrifices, to commit Uncleanneſs in their godly Meetings, to oppoſe themſelves, as factious Rebels, againſt Authority. And if “ my Memory fail not, *Juſtin Martyr* is ſaid to have made an *Apology* for his own, and their Defence.

“ But howſoever it was in Time paſt, there is now a Generation “ of *Cadmus* Race, ſprung up of Serpents Teeth; who being the “ moſt fraudulent *Matchiavels,* and *Roman* Firebrands, (to enſlave “ all godly Government,) that ever lived, to charge her Majeſty to “ be of their Diſpoſition. Thereby to bring her Highneſs into Obloquy and Hatred; though not at Home, where her Dealings are “ beſt known; but abroad, *&c.* For they have learned that heatheniſh Rule, *Sanetur vulnus, cicatricis Veſtigia manebunt.* “ Where be no State or Perſons, that ſet themſelves againſt their “ Tyranny, can eſcape that Poiſon of Aſps, that lies under their “ Lips. A Device moſt dangerous to all kind of Government, and “ the very Seed of all Rebellions. *Multos deſperſit de gente in gen-* Ecclus. 28. “ *tem. Civitates mutatas deſtruxit; & domos Magnatum effodit.* “ To alienate [Affection] from Princes by impious Accuſations, is

Eccluſ. 10.

Rom. 3.

"in itſelf intolerable. And ſo much the more to be avoided, becauſe the Scriptures do give us this preciſe Commandment, *In Cogitatione tuâ Regi ne detrahas.* Nay, if that were not, the very "Deſcription of ſuch Miſcreants might make their Dealings odious. "If I could go through with the old *Pſalm*, it were to my Purpoſe *Sepulchrum apertum guttur eorum. Linguis ſuis ad dolum uſi ſunt. Venenum Aſpidum ſub labiis eorum. Quorum os diris & amarulentia, &c.* unto *oculis eorum.*

Pſ. 37.

Job 19.

Gen. 3.

"But as he ſaith, *Rumpantur ilia.* Let them whet their Teeth "like Swords. Let their Lips like Arrows flow out their worſt, to "taint her Majeſties Government, this is and may be her Highneſs "Comfort, in that ſhe may truly ſay with King *David*, *Detrahebant mihi, quia ſequebar bonitatem:* And with *Job* again, *Cum a Stultis deceſſiſſem, detrahebant mihi.* True Religion muſt ever "content herſelf with ſuch incounterings. For although ſhe doth "evermore bruiſe, through her Spouſe, Chriſt, the Head of the "Serpent, yet notwithſtanding he will always *inſidiari calcaneo ejus.*

"But of all the ſhameleſs Men that ever lived, it is ſtrange, that "*Roman* Rebels will talk of *Rebellion*, of *ſowing Sedition among Princes*, &c. conſidering their Popes Practices among the States of "*Italy*; between the King of *Spain*, *France*, *England*, *Swedia*, "and the Empire, *&c.*" Whereof having preſent Examples, I will not ſpeak.

Quem ſemel horrendis maculis infamia nigrat,
Ad benè tergendum multa laborat aqua.

"The Poets fain the Crow was white; and that after for ſlandering of her Friends unjuſtly to *Jupiter*, ſhe was condemned to "be black." And ſo he ends with ſome Verſes out of *Ovids Metamorphoſis*, Lib. 2.

Other political Subjects diſcourſed of. Lamb. *Librar. pag.* 35, 33, 38.

This Author, whoever he were, made another Speech, for executing the Queen of *Scots*. This tender Point he thought fit to diſcourſe under this Caſe. "If any Violence be attempted a"gainſt Princes, the Treaſon may juſtly touch them, who gape for "the Crown." Another political Subject there handled was, "That Princes by Mulcts may uſe Compulſion againſt Hereticks." And another, "That *Jeſuits* may lawfully be baniſhed. And "that upon the Contempt of ſuch Order they may be executed, "and their Receivers puniſhed ſeverely.

The Engliſh *concern for the King of* Navarr.

The State was at this Time very ſolicitous for the true Religion abroad, as well as at home; leſt it might loſe Ground there. Such a Cauſe there now was for Conſideration to be had in the preſent Caſe of the King of *Navarr*; as it ſeemed now to ſtand very dangerouſly, both for himſelf and the common Cauſe of Chriſtian Religion: And conſequently for her Majeſty and her State. The great Apprehenſions of that Kings making Peace at this Juncture with the Duke of *Guiſe*, and ſo to forſake his Religion, gave Occaſion to the wiſe Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* to deliver his Mind hereupon. Which

I

I tranſcribe from his own Pen, wrote *June* 20. 1586. The Title whereof was, *Conſultation for* Navarr.

Lord Treaſurers Diſcourſe about him.

" The ſaid King, (whoſe Condition now was very low) being ſolicited by the Houſe of *Guiſe*, and by likelihood by all his Friends, " Servants and Followers; as principally by Marſhal *Montmorency*, " who are Catholicks, to yield to a Peace, and to a Friendſhip with " the Houſe of *Guiſe*, it cannot be imagined but that therewith he " muſt of Conſequence make Profeſſion to change his Religion, and " to become for himſelf a Catholick.

" Hereof muſt needs follow theſe Inconveniencies. Firſt, A manifeſt Offence to Almighty God, to make a Profeſſion in Religion " contrary altogether to his own Conſcience, and to the Word of " Almighty God. The Horror whereof cannot be by Words expreſt. For that the King ſhall never find Quietneſs in his Mind, " but ſhall be continually afflicted in his Heart, as with a Worm " perpetually biting the ſame. 2. Hereby he ſhall endanger all " his Friends, both in *France* and elſewhere in Chriſtendom, that " have ventured their Lives, Lands, and all their worldly Goods " for his Defence. 3. He ſhall never have like Aſſurance of Friendſhip of the Catholicks, as he now hath of the Proteſtants. For " that the Proteſtants do love him with a Bond of Conſcience. The " Catholicks ſhall love him but ſo far forth as he may be profitable " to them. And 4. They will always doubt him for changing Religion, or for Revenge.

" For theſe Reſpects the King is to be warned of theſe former " Miſchiefs, which cannot be in ſhort Speeches expreſt; nor cannot " be ſeen how infinite the Sequel thereof will be. And namely, " how the Judgment of God in this, which hath hitherto defended " the King againſt all his ſworn Enemies theſe many Years; may " and ought to be feared to follow upon the King for his Defection " againſt his own Conſcience.

" For the ſtaying of him from theſe dangerous Courſes, he may " be informed, that the Queens Majeſty hath yielded to as much " in Money to be had in *Germany*, as was at the firſt deſired, which " is One hundred thouſand Crowns. So as with ſuch Help as otherwiſe his Servants ſhall procure, with help of *Caſimire*, and the " other Princes; and alſo with the Help that is certainly accorded " by the *Swiſſe*, there remaineth good Hopes, that the Army may " be ready to enter into *France* by *November*.

" Likewiſe, it is to be remembred to him, how her Majeſty hath " ready ſuch a Sum of Money in *France*, even in *Paris*, as was required by the Princeſſes of *Bourbon*, to enterprize great Actions in " his Favour, when the Army ſhould enter. And that the Purpoſe " of thoſe Princeſſes did ſtill continue firm, and to very good Purpoſe. And if the King ſhall not perſiſt in his Action, but ſhall " alter the ſame, thoſe Princeſſes, being of the Bloud, ſhall be in " great hazard, for their Friendſhip towards him.

" Laſtly, If the King ſhall find his Peril ſo great, as before the " Army can come, he ſhall be in danger to be beſieged in *Rochel*, " the Queens Majeſty may offer, that for Safety of his Perſon, ſhe " will ſpare no Charge by the Strength of her Navy to bring him ſafe

ANNO 1586.

“ into *England*, maugre all the Forces of *France* on the Seas. And ſo his Perſon being here free, all his Friends, all his Forces ſhall be as ready to reſtore him, as if he were ſtill in *France*. And now the *French* King ſhall, by the End of this Year be ſo exhauſted, as he ſhall not be able to bring any ſuch Wars in *France*, as he hath done this Year.

“ And when the King ſhall be here, the Right of his Title in Succeſſion ſhall not be impaired: Conſidering it is not to take place but by the *French* Kings Death. And during his Life the King of *Navarrs* Right cannot be impeached by any preſent Poſſeſſer.

This ſeems to have been the Effect of the Advice and Comfort ſent now from the *Engliſh* Court to that diſtreſſed King and his Friends. What their Caſe was, a *French* Hiſtorian relates; That the Prince of *Condé* and his Army were worſted by the *Guiſes*, called the *Holy League*; who vowed to root out the Profeſſors of the Goſpel in *France*. And now they had given an Overthrow to all their Forces, that they were glad to diſperſe, and ſhift for themſelves where they could; till at length by a great Hand of good Providence they all arrived through long and dangerous Journeys to *Rochel*. What their woeful Condition was, we are told, *viz.*

The miſerable Condition of the King of Navars *Army. Mutability of* France. *p.* 114.

“ That as ſoon as the Chriſtians, the Prince and the reſt of his Army, were diſperſed, the common Soldiers were quickly ſcattered. Some took their Way to *Orleans*, ſome to *Normandy*, &c. Every Man which Way he liked beſt; travailing in exceeding great Fear; having, as they imagined, neither Means to eſcape, nor Force to reſiſt; but were ready every Minute to fall into the Hands of thoſe, who did purſue them, and thirſted for nothing more than for their Bloud. But all Hope failing, God did miraculouſly deliver them; and ſo delivered them in their Journeys, that having voided a million of more than apparent Troubles, they all arrived at length at *Rochel:* And that much about one Time, to the exceeding Comfort of themſelves, and the Wonder of all *France*. This then will ſhew the Condition of the King of *Navar*, when the former mentioned Conſultation was held at the *Engliſh* Court.

An Engliſh *Officer taken by the* Spaniards.

Carried to Dunkirk, *and examined.*

The Queen was now alſo deeply concerned in Behalf of the *Low Countries* on the ſame Account of Religion, and in Compaſſion towards them; who by the reaſon of their Religion ſuffered great Hardſhips and Oppreſſions. The Earl of *Leiceſter* was the Chief over the Queens Forces there: Under whom was one *Anthony Braekenbury* going over to ſerve; but taken by the *Spaniards*, and carried to *Dunkirk:* And there examined before the Governor and Council. It will let in ſome Light into the preſent Affairs between *Spain* and *England*, to relate the Subſtance of what was demanded of him, and the ſundry Articles put to him; with his Anſwers. Which I will ſet down, as I find them in a *MS.* of the *Cotton* Library.

Titus *B.* 2.

“ Firſt, What Country are you of? What Age, and of what Profeſſion? His Anſwers, An *Engliſh* Man born; of thirty Years of Age; and by Profeſſion a Soldier. *Item*, Whether were you going; and to what End? Anſwer, Into *Holland*; to ſerve under the Earl of *Leiceſter*? *Item*, What Commiſſion hath the Earl of

“ *Leiceſter* from the Queen of *England*; and how large doth it extend? Anſwer, Your Honours are deceived in me. I am but a poor Servitor of *Ireland*, and none of her Majeſties Privy Council. Wherefore I am ignorant, either what Commiſſion he hath, or how largely it extendeth. *Item*, Whether do you think the Queen of *England* to be an Uſurper of the King of *Spains* Right, as well in *Flanders*, as in *Ireland*. For that the Popes Holineſs hath reſigned his Right, Title and Intereſt thereof unto the King of *Spain*. Anſw. I know her Majeſty to be ſo vertuous and godly, that ſhe is no Uſurper of your Maſter, the King of *Spains* Right in *Flanders*; and what her Highneſs taketh in Hand, ſhe groundeth her Foundation upon ſome juſt Cauſe. And for *Ireland*, if it pleaſe your Honours to grant me that Favour, this Hand of mine ſhall prove her Majeſties Right upon the Body of any one Man, both againſt the Pope and the King of *Spain*. *Item*, Whether do you think the Popes Holineſs to be Supreme Head over all *Chriſtendome*, in Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical? Anſw. In Foreign Realms, as pleaſe the Kings and Subjects to allow of him. For *England*, both I, and the reſt of her Majeſties good Subjects do deny, and defy his Supremacy. *Item*, What Number of Soldiers is in readineſs in *England* for *Flanders*? When ſhall they come? Where ſhall they arrive? And what Exploits ſhall be taken in Hand? Anſw. There is in readineſs 400,000. But for what Place, when they ſhall come; where they ſhall arrive, or what Exploits they ſhall take in Hand, I cannot tell you. And if I could, I would not. *Item*, Whether have you ſerved againſt the *Spaniard* heretofore, or no? And in what Countries? Anſw. Yes, that I have, both in *Flanders* and *Ireland*. *Item*, What Charge of Soldiers had you under your Leading? Anſw. An hundred Footmen. *Item*, What is the Governours Name of *Amſterdam*; and of what Account for Service? And what Bands of Soldiers are in the Town? Anſw. If your Honours will give me leave to go thither, I could then advertiſe you a Troth, which now I cannot.” Then ſaid they, “ After we have wracked you to confeſs a Troth in theſe and other Matters; and then hanged you according to your Deſerts, you ſhall then have our Paſſeport, to go to *Amſterdam*. And ſo they returned me again to Priſon.

The King of Denmark *interpoſeth between the Queen and* Spain.

Ramelius *the King of* Denmarks *Ambaſſador; his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.*

In theſe angry Tranſactions between the Queen and the King of *Spain*, another Foreign Prince was willing to interpoſe, and to do good Offices between both. It was the King of *Denmark*; who made it his Endeavour to find out Expedients for Peace. *Henry Ramelius*, a wiſe Counſillor of that King, and lately Ambaſſador here, took the Opportunity of ſome Propoſals of Peace, now in Hand, to ſtir the Queens great and prudent Counſillor, the Lord Treaſurer, to liſten to ſuch Terms; and to avoid the great Inconveniencies of War, and not to be too forward in liſtening after ſuch as adviſed againſt Concord. In his Letter dated *Nov.* 12. he ſhewed, what that King had done for promoting Peace, and what Courſe was to be taken in order to it, as to a preſent Treaty; the State of *Navar*, and in general of the Proteſtant Countries. “ That it ſeemed then as if all were aſleep in a fatal Lethargy, and that they would never

ANNO 1586.

“awake, till it were effected by ſuffering great Miſchieves and cruel Strokes; which he prayed God to avert. He wiſhed the Affairs of *England* might ſucceed according to their own Deſires. That ſo in them, if it were Gods Will; and in them alone, *Aliquid adhuc Præſidii ſolidi Chriſtianitati ſperandum eſt*, *i. e.* Some ſolid Safety and Protection might yet be hoped for in the Behalf of Chriſtianity. That every Thing elſe ſeemed to threaten a fatal Ruin. *Servabit tamen alicubi Deus Halcioneam ſuam. Etiam rumpatur Satanas.*

And then he addreſſeth himſelf to the ſaid Lord, concerning a Treaty now in Hand, according to the Succeſs of which would follow dreadful Wars, unleſs a happy Peace prevented; uſing theſe Words to him: “You according to your very great and ſingular Prudence and Experience of Things, moſt Honourable and Noble Lord, look about you again and again, whether you can promiſe and bring forth to yourſelves a tried and certain Peace, or Victory by Force, and Continuation of War. And if ſo, good and honeſt Men will indeed be ſolicitous concerning this Treaty. But ſince no where almoſt leſs than in War, the Events are wont to anſwer Hopes: And that Papiſts hold together, as in a Chain, there is no Reaſon you ſhould follow the Opinions or Judgments of the Vulgar, or of Youth, greedy of Arms and Glory. Which for the moſt Part deceive at laſt. For War is ſweet to thoſe that have not tried it. But conſult with yourſelf alone, and weigh what is moſt ſafe; turning your Eyes every Way. And although ye ſhall think the Tranſaction or Treaty of Peace is by no Means to be neglected or rejected by you, yet as I have ſhewn before, I judge there is need now of ſome more vehement Endeavour, and more violent Impreſſion to be uſed.

And then he concludes with his moſt profound Obedience and Service to be preſented to the Queen, with Acknowledgments of her very excellent Vertues and Accompliſhments, accounting her as little beneath a Deity; after this Manner: *Subjectiſſimam Fidem, ac humillima, Obſequentia que Servitia mea Sereniſſimæ Reginæ Majeſtati quàm veluti numen quoddam, ob omnis generis virtutes excellentiores fermè, quàm quæ in unum hominem, ea præſertim dignitate, cadere ſoleant, dum vivam, veneror, debitâ Reverentiâ deferri, ſummopere oro.*

Difference between the Lord Lieutenant and Council in Ireland.

But now to come nearer home. Among the divers Troubles created to the Queen in her Kingdom of *Ireland*, a Miſunderſtanding between Sir *John Perrot*, the Lord Lieutenant, and the Council there, was none of the leaſt. Who, though he were a Man of great Merit, and had done good Service in that Kingdom, yet had the Miſfortune to have powerful Enemies: And the next Year I find him returned home into *England*; and another, Sir *Will. Fitzwilliams*, ſucceeding him in the Government there. But what the Difference between him and the Council this Year was, (particularly, with *Adam Loftus*, Archbiſhop of *Dublin*, Lord Chancellor, and the Biſhop of *Meath*) will in Part appear by a Letter, which one of them, *viz.* the Biſhop of *Meath*, a prudent Man, writ to the Lord Treaſurer in *February*: Propounding a Means, how a Reconciliation might be made, having fallen out among themſelves. The chief Remedy was his Revocation; the Biſhop thus unfolding his Mind unto the ſaid Lord:

Biſhop of Meaths Letter concerning it.

"That although for ſome ſpecial Cauſes importing, as he conceived, Service of her Majeſty, he had earneſtly wiſhed the Revocation of my Lord Deputy: Yet underſtanding her Highneſs Reſolution for his longer Abode and Continuance among them; he confeſſed it was the Duty of them all, both willingly to ſubmit themſelves to her Majeſties good Pleaſure herein, and with all Reverence to obey the Lord Deputy, during the Time of his Government over them. For the better Performance whereof, conſidering it was a Thing both convenient and very neceſſary, that all former Contentions were compoſed amongſt them; and that they all might draw, as it were, in one Line, for the Advancement of her Majeſties Service, and the good of that Kingdom: Eſpecially, in theſe dangerous Times at Hand, he had thought good hereby to preſent to his Lordſhips grave Conſideration, a Mean by him deviſed, in his Opinion, Honourable for her Majeſty, meet for her Deputy, and good for them all; whereby all former Contentions might be compoſed.

"That her Highneſs had vouchſafed already once to command a Reconciliation and good Agreement between her two principal Officers of that Realm: Which being not obeyed, on one, or both Parts, had not, he confeſſed, wrought, as her Majeſty wiſhed, and which was moſt meet. Whereby it might fall out perhaps, that her Majeſty would miſlike of this ſecond Motion. Notwithſtanding he left it to his Lordſhips grave Cenſure: Proteſting, that in this Caſe, he had chief Reſpect to her Majeſties Service; and next to the Quiet and good of every one of themſelves.

Then the Biſhop went on to declare the Diſcontentment of the Council againſt the Lord Deputy; "That it was not only in the Lord Chancellor, as had been ſignified, but it reſted generally in the greateſt Part of that Board. The particular Cauſes he knew; and ſhould be ready at his convenient Leiſure to diſcover them to his Lordſhip. That for preſent Redreſs hereof, he took it both requiſite, and very neceſſary, that her Majeſty be moved to ſign a joint Letter to her Deputy and Council there, containing theſe Clauſes, or other ſuch like, as his Lordſhip in his Diſcretion ſhould think moſt meet.

His Advice for Peace.

"Firſt, A general Commandment upon our Duties, preſently to be reconciled, and to remit on each Part, all former Offences whatſoever. Secondly, A mild Exhortation to her Deputy, to conſider of them, [the Council there] as neceſſary Inſtruments to be uſed in her Service. And therefore to uſe them in good Sort, (eſpecially them of the *Engliſh* Council, which were then moſt diſcontented) by his honourable Uſage of every one of them: Rather to encourage them to go forward in the due Execution of their Duties, than any way to diſcourage them by his ſevere and hard Dealings. Thirdly, A ſtrait Charge to them, her Counſillors, to reverence her Deputy, and to obey him in all Things: Burying all former Grievances, ſuppoſed any way to be received

ANNO 1586.

" from him. Leaving unto them this only Liberty, freely, boldly " and plainly, and yet with all Modeſty, to deliver their Opinions " in Things concerning her Majeſties Service. Laſtly, in Caſe a " Breach be made of her Highneſſes Directions on either Side, that " forthwith, the Cauſe be examined before the Board; and, if it " may, be compoſed. Otherwiſe, the Matter from the Council to " be ſignified thence, either to her Majeſty, or the Lords; and the " Offender to be puniſhed according to her Highneſs, or the Lords " good Pleaſure, for an Example to others: This, added he, is in " mine Opinion a moſt ready Mean, both to compoſe all Things " amongſt us, and for the Eſtabliſhment and Continuance of good " Amity, Concord and Agreement: A Thing moſt expedient for " her Majeſties Service, and for the Good of us all.

His Proteſtation for himſelf and Lord Chancellor.

The Biſhop went on in his Letter concerning his own Suffering by the Deputy; " That for his own Part, albeit among his Com" panions of that Board, he had taſted his Part of my Lord Depu" ties Diſpleaſure, (being, as he conceived, puniſhed for another " Mans Offence) to his great Charge and Undoing, unleſs her Ma" jeſty were good unto him: Yet ſo long as her Majeſty was pleaſed " to continue his Lordſhips Government, he would with all Reve" rence both ſerve and obey him. And then further uſed theſe Words: " And I proteſt before God, I would be as glad of his " Lordſhips good Favour, as the meaneſt Subject of that Kingdom. " And for my Lord Chancellor, I undertake upon my Credit with " her Majeſty, that his Lordſhip ſhall with all Humility, ſeek my " Lord Deputies good Favour, and a ſecond Reconciliation; and " afterwards as a faithful Servitor to her Majeſty, and a good Friend " to his Lordſhip, ſhall firmly join with him in her Majeſties Ser" vice, and never hereafter give his Lordſhip juſt Occaſion of Of" fence. And humbly beſeeching his good Lordſhip in his Behalf, " at his Lordſhips convenient Opportunity, to move her Majeſty in " conſideration of his good Services, to remit the Offence, which " her Highneſs had conceived againſt him; and whereunto (adding " this Aſſeveration) in my Conſcience ſhe is wrongfully incenſed: " Knowing him both a moſt wiſe and grave Counſillor of that State, " beſt experienced in that Service, and beſt able to ſtand her Maje" ſty in good ſtead.

The Abilities of that Lord Chancellor of Ireland.

" And laſtly, he addreſt to the Lord Treaſurer in Behalf of them " both, (whom the ſaid Lord Deputy had ſomewhat wrongfully re" preſented to the Queen, being both of them chief Biſhops in that " Kingdom,) That for them both, he beſeeched his Lordſhip to " pardon him to make this Petition, that ſince in them and a few " others the outward Shew of Gods Church in that Land did reſt, " where they were diligent and painful Paſtors, both in the Execu" tion of their Functions, and in the Furtherance of all her Ma" jeſties good Services (their Perſons being hated even for their Re" ligion) his Lordſhip would vouchſafe to defend and protect them " in their good Cauſes, according to their Deſerts. And ſo eftſones " craving his Lordſhips Pardon for this his wonted Boldneſs, and " beſeeching him to conſider hereof, he humbly took his Leave,

To be countenanced as they were Biſhops there.

“ the 17th of *February* 1586. Subſcribing, *His Lordſhips moſt*
“ *humbly at Commandment,*

Tho. Midenſis.

This Sir *John Perrot* was the next Year diſcharged of his Office of Lord Deputy; and after ſome Time ſent for home, according to the Advice of the Biſhop of *Meath*; and ſuch Articles laid to his Charge, that he was found guilty of Treaſon; and made a Priſoner in the *Tower*. But the Hiſtorian makes Spight and Envy the chief Grounds of his Troubles, giving him a great Character for his Services. But the Letter above will give ſome further Knowledge of the Man, in falling out with thoſe two Right Reverend Fathers, as well as others of the Council there.

Camd. Eliz. p. 460.

CHAP. IV.

Sir John Perrot *contends with the Biſhop of St.* Davids, *about the Stewardſhip of that Biſhops Courts. The Caſe. The Biſhop of* Meath *forfeits double Fruits. His Caſe referred to* Perrot *his Enemy. Comes into* England *about it. Oppreſſions of the Clergy in* Yorkſhire, *by pretence of Concealments. Occaſions the Archbiſhops Letter. Letters from the Queen and Council to the Biſhops, to obtain Lances from the Clergy for the* Low Countries. *Accounts thereof from the Biſhops. Sums raiſed for that Purpoſe, in each Dioceſs. The State of the Church of* Weſtminſter. *The State of* Geneva. *Their dangerous Condition. Their Letters to the Lord Treaſurer, to ſolicit the Queen for Aid.* Beza’s *Letters.*

AND as theſe *Iriſh* Biſhops met with hard Uſage from Sir *John Perrot*, ſo about this Year a Controverſy happened between him and another Biſhop, *viz.* Biſhop of St. *Davids* in *Wales*, in his claiming to be Steward of that Biſhops Courts. The Matter in Variance was drawn up by the Biſhop himſelf, after this Manner; and how he had proceeded in this Matter of Trouble and Wrong. It was for the Office of Steward and Authority to keep the Biſhops Courts in the Lordſhips of *Dewſland* and *Lawhaden* in *Pembrokeſhire*.

Controverſy between Sir J Perrot, and the Biſhop of St. Davids;

“ *Will. Barlow*, Biſhop of St. *Davids* in the 33d Year of King
“ *Henry* VIII. granted a Patent to the Right Honourable, the Earl
“ of *Worceſter* that now is, of the Office of Stewardſhip of all his

For the Office of Steward.

ANNO 1586.

" Lands, to have and to hold unto the ſaid Earl for the Term of " his Life; after the Death, Surrender or Forfeiture of the Earl his " Father: Who had a Patent of the ſame Office, granted before by " one *Robert*, Biſhop of S. *Davids*. In both theſe Patents a Fee of " 12 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* by the Year, was granted for exerciſing the ſaid " Office.

" The Authority granted to the ſaid Earls (by which they were " conſtituted Stewards) was to keep Seſſions at *Lawhaden* aforeſaid " *de menſe in menſem*, and to keep *Courts Baron* 100 Shil. and ſuch " inferior Courts.

" The Authority to keep the ſaid Courts Baron and inferior " Courts, was at that Time of the ſaid Patents granted to the Earls, " and ever afore that, in an Officer, called *Conſtable*, and not " Steward, by Patent of the Biſhop from Time to Time, granted to " ſuch Conſtables.

" But if it were ſo that the Office of Stewardſhip granted to the " ſaid Earls, did reach to give them Authority to keep the ſaid " Courts Baron, and inferior Courts; yet becauſe the ſaid Earls did " never, either by themſelves, or by their Deputies, attend upon " the keeping of the ſaid Courts Baron, and the other inferior " Courts; the Office by *Non uſer* is forfeited.

" Sir *John Perrot* notwithſtanding procured to himſelf a Deputation " of the ſaid Office of Steward from the Earl about twelve " Years paſt; and was the firſt that ever, in the Name of the Earl, " did enter upon the Office of Conſtableſhip, and to keep an hundred " Courts, Courts Baron and inferior Courts. *Item*, Sithence " Sir *John* entred to the Office by Deputation, he hath by *Abuſer* " forfeited the Office. I have already proved, both the *Non uſer* and " *Abuſer*; and have the Depoſitions forth-coming, exemplified under " the Seal of her Majeſties Council in the Marches of *Wales*.

" Sir *John*, by the Force of his Deputation from the Earl, claimeth " not only Authority to keep the ſame Courts, but in the ſaid " Earls Name and Behalf, vexeth and troubleth, by Suit, the " young Earl of *Eſſex* and me, for his ſaid Fee, and Arrearages of " the ſame for this 26 Years. This cometh to paſs concerning the " Earl of *Eſſex*, becauſe the Manor of *Lanſey* is diſtrainable for his " Fee: Which Manor heretofore appertained to the Biſhop of St. " *Davids*; and is ſo in the Poſſeſſion of the ſaid Earl. To procure " Quietneſs to me and my Friends; and eſpecially, to *Alban Stepneth*, " my Collector and Receiver, I offered Sir *John* to grant him a " Patent, and to give him Authority to keep the ſaid Courts in *Dewſland* " and *Lawhad* aforeſaid; to have unto him, during his Life. " And then I and my Succeſſors to appoint a Deputy, or to have " him during Pleaſure; and then he to appoint his Deputy himſelf. This was the Caſe as drawn up by the Biſhop, and his fair Offer to his Adverſary.

The Biſhop of Meaths *Troubles for his Firſt Fruits.*

Before we leave Sir *John Perrot*, a Troubler of the Biſhops, we ſhall mention more particularly one Occaſion that he took to ſhew his ill Will to the Biſhop of *Meath* before ſpoken of. This *Iriſh* Biſhop had by ſome Neglect or Omiſſion in timely Payment of his Firſt Fruits, as it ſeems, made a Forfeiture of double Fruits; for which in *Ireland*

land he could have no Favour or Redreſs, the Deputy being his Enemy; as he carried Things there with a high Hand alſo to others. But in other Reſpects alſo was very hard to this Biſhop. Inſomuch that he was fain to come over into *England*. And being here his chief Addreſs was to the Lord Treaſurer, the great *Aſylum* of the Clergy. This was *Thomas Jones*, late of *Lancaſhire*; the firſt Chancellor, after Dean of St. *Patricks*. Then Conſecrated Biſhop of *Meath*, *An.* 1584. And afterwards tranſlated to *Dublin*. His Requeſts now were, to be pardoned his double Fruits; and to have ſome Eaſe in the Payment of his Fruits. His Cauſe will be more fully underſtood, and his hard Dealing by the Lord Deputy, if we liſten to his Letter wrote to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, while he was attending the Court. Which was as followeth.

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.

“It may pleaſe your Lordſhip, ſince your weighty Affairs of far greater Moment, do bar me from wiſhed Acceſs unto your Lordſhip, I am moſt humbly to pray and beſeech you to vouchſafe the peruſing of theſe few Lines. I have hitherto forborn to move my Petition unto the Lords, wanting your Lordſhips Preſence; (in whoſe honourable Favour my chiefeſt Hope doth reſt) both in Conſcience to conſider of my Cauſe, and in your good Favour, to help me with Relief.

To remit his Forfeiture of double Fruits.

“My firſt Petition, for Remittal of the Forfeiture of double Fruits, I doubt not your Lordſhip accounteth moſt reaſonable. For the Manner of my Relief therein, I beſeech your good Lordſhip to weigh and conſider, how juſt a Cauſe of Grief, and utter Diſcomfort it may be unto me, ſeeking Relief at her Majeſties Hands (my laſt and only Refuge) to my great and intolerable Charges, to be returned back again with open Diſgrace, being referred to his Devotion; whoſe Hatred towards me ſhews itſelf implacable. And to whom ſix Times privately with all Submiſſion, and thrice publickly with all Humility, I have been a Suitor in this Behalf. I beſeech your Lordſhip favourably to conſider this one Thing: That for my Profeſſion and Religion ſake, I ſtand in great Hatred among the idolatrous People; having none other Supportance in that Country, where I am a Stranger, but her Majeſties good Countenance. Which if either it be withdrawn from me, or any way hidden, I look for nothing but the loſs of my Life. I have vowed my ſelf to her Majeſties Service there. Wherein, as hitherto, I have uſed all Faithfulneſs and Diligence, ſo during my Life I will endeavour by all Means to deſerve her Highneſſes good Favour.

“My ſecond Petition is, for the Remittal of ſome Part of my Firſt Fruits. Wherein unleſs her Majeſties Highneſs be inclined to deal graciouſly with me, I dare not return into my Country. My Biſhoprick is ſurveyed far above the Value. My preſent State is very poor. I proteſt unto your Lordſhip, the Charges of this Journey have been ſo heavy unto me, that it had been better for me to have paid the Forfeiture in *Ireland*. The Thing I crave, albeit it be an extraordinary Favour, yet ordinarily it hath been granted unto others of my Calling in like Caſe.

ANNO 1586.

" Wherefore I do moſt humbly beſeech your good Lordſhip, to " be a Means for her Majeſties extraordinary Favour towards me. " And aſſure your good Lordſhip by all manner of Services I will " deſerve it. Your Lordſhips inward Zeal to Learning and Religion, and your Favour ſhewed to myſelf hath emboldened me to " uſe this wonted Courſe of Writing unto you. For the which " moſt humbly craving your Lordſhips Pardon, I take my " Leave, *&c.*

Your Lordſhips moſt humbly at Commandment.

Tho. Midenſis.

Referred back to the Lord Deputy.

The poor Biſhops Caſe came at laſt but to this Concluſion, that it ſhould be referred back to the Lord Deputy: Which much grieved him. That he ſhould have no better Succeſs of his Journey into *England*, when the Deputies hard Dealing forced his coming over; and to be referred to him who confeſt he never meant to relieve him, till it was too late; as he wrote in another Letter to the Treaſurer: He pleaded his good Services and Courſe of Life. He encloſed a Paper of all his Livings in *Ireland*, and the yearly Values of them. Upon which he always kept XX able Men always in his Houſe to ſerve her Majeſty; and one half of them well furniſhed on Horſeback. And himſelf always employed in her Majeſties Service without any Conſideration. This Letter was writ in the beginning of *March*, as the former was the Month before. I leave it to be peruſed in the *Appendix*; to revive as much as may be, the Memory of this worthy Biſhop.

Numb. VII.

Now to gather up a few Notices more concerning the Biſhops and Clergy, happening within the Compaſs of this Year.

The Archbiſhop of York *complains of Concealments.*

Sandys, the zealous and pious Archbiſhop of *York*, was fain to ſend up one of his Clergy to complain againſt a ſevere Commiſſion of *Concealments*, (often before in this Queens Reign complained of;) being a great Oppreſſion to the poor Clergy, chiefly by reaſon of the rigorous Execution thereof. His Application in his own Behalf was to be made to the Lord Treaſurer. And in order to his Addreſs to him, the Archbiſhop ſent him firſt to Mr. *Mainard*, one of the Secretaries to the ſaid Treaſurer, to procure him Acceſs. His Caſe will the better appear by the Letter itſelf. Which is as follows:

His Letter.

" Mr. *Mainard*, The Bringer hereof is a learned and godly " Preacher, much moleſted and greatly wronged by theſe Finders " of *concealed* Lands. I well hoped, (for ſo I heard) that my Lord " Treaſurer had taken Orders for the Stay of that dangerous " Commiſſion. But in Truth, it is more whotly followed in " this Country than before, and all Extremity therein ſhewed. " And the Spoil of the Church is chiefly ſought. I forbear to write " unto my Lord Treaſurer herein. For I know that I have troubled " him too often with my Letters.

" His Requeſt therefore (as he proceeded) to him [his Secretary] " was, That he would be the Means, that the Reverend Perſon, " the Bringer of the Letter, might have Acceſs unto the Lord

“ Treaſurer, and declare his own Caſe. ” And thus he bade him heartily farewel. Dated from *Southwel* the VIII. of *June*, 1586. Subſcribed,

Your loving Friend,

E. Ebor.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitgift, B. III. *Ch.* 17.

This Year there was a Convocation of the Clergy. When beſides a Subſidy, they granted the Queen a Benevolence, concerning which I refer to what is written of this Convocation elſewhere. There was required of the Clergy now their Aſſiſtance for raiſing Forces for the *Low Countries*. The Manner and Method whereof was, by Vertue of Letters from the Queen and Council, that Orders be ſent from the reſpective Biſhops to the Archdeacons, to make Collections, for the Queens Uſe in this her Undertaking, of ſuch of the Clergy as were of the beſt Abilities. Thus I find in the Archdeaconry of *Darby*, the Biſhop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry* had ſent to the Archdeacon and divers others, eminent Preachers of that County of *Darby*, to ceſs that Archdeaconry. Who ſent their Letter in anſwer to the Biſhop. Importing, “ That they met, and called before them ſuch as they thought the fitteſt to be ceſſed. But upon ſuch Exceptions as had been uſed by ſundry before them, they deſired to be better reſolved from his Honour, [*i. e.* the Biſhop] that they might perform this Service the better, and with more Safety. Firſt, That it was required of them that they ſhould ſhew the Queens Majeſties Letters, and the Letters of the Lords of the Council. Becauſe there was a Statute, the Penalty whereof was great, if any adventured to make out Men, and levy any Money for the Furniture of Men, without ſpecial Commiſſion to be ſeen. And they had not ſo much as the Copies of theſe Letters.

The Clergy ceſſed to aſſiſt the Queen.

“ Secondly, They deſired to know the whole Number of this Dioceſs appointed to be made; and thought that the Number of Lances ſhould be ſo named, as they ſhould be known; and hoped, that the Number ſhould not exceed the Rate of other Dioceſſes.

“ And Thirdly, That the Warrant they had from his Lordſhip, though it were of ſufficient Credit with them to believe it; yet they were given to underſtand, that becauſe it was not under his Seal of Office, it was not of ſufficient Force: But that the obſtinate might refuſe to be ceſſed: As ſundry had refuſed to yield to the Ceſſment.

And ſo concluding with theſe Words. “ We therefore deſire your Honour to ſatiſfy us in theſe Points; and then with as much Diſcretion and Diligence, as we may, we ſhall either return the Money, or the Names of the Men ſo ceſſed, unto your Honour, with as much Speed as poſſibly we can. ” Thus, *&c. Darby*, the 7th of *April*, 1586. And theſe Names ſubſcribed; *Your Honours moſt humbly to command*,

L. Gilpin, *John Walton*, *John Coke*, *Pet. Morwen.*
Michael Harriſon, *Tho. Royle*, *Richard Sale*,

Theſe

ANNO 1586.

Theſe ſeem to be the eminent Divines in that Archdeaconry, to whom the Biſhop ſent by Vertue of the Order from Court, for ceſſing the Clergy there, upon the Queens preſent urgent Neceſſity. There was a Poſtſcript to this Letter; which will give further Light to this Ceſſment.

“ My Lord, We are humbly to pray you in Behalf of the Clergy, that if it be poſſible, the Sum ſet down may be abated. We have conſidered of the Clergies State; and heard their ſundry and grievous Complaints. We could bring it well to one hundred Marks, with every Mans Contentment, and hearty good Will. And this we humbly deſire to be advertiſed from your Lordſhip in as ſhort Space as may be.

And this Requeſt ſeems to have been granted; but the Backwardneſs or Poverty of the poor Clergy is hinted by the Words added in the Margin by another Hand, *viz.* “ And yet this Promiſe is not performed; nor the Preachers can bring it to paſs.

But to ſhew this Matter further. There was an Order ſent from the Queen to every Biſhop for a Contribution from the Clergy towards the Wars in the *Netherlands*, to find ſo many Soldiers or Arms to be ſent thither. They in the Dioceſs of *Litchfield* made Exceptions, and refuſed. In obedience to the Queen and Council, the Biſhop had alſo ſent to the Chapter, laying ſuch a Charge upon them, and to the Archdeacons to charge the reſt of the Dioceſs. To whom the ſaid Dean and Chapter (whoſe Ceſſment was Fifty Pounds) made this Anſwer, (namely, the *Reſidentiaries*) ſhewing their Caſe.

Dean and Chapters Letter to the Biſhop concerning their Ceſſment of Fifty Pounds.

“ Right Reverend Father, our Duty moſt humbly conſidered. This may be to advertiſe your Lordſhip, that where lately in our Chapter, your Honour in Perſon ſtraitly charged us directly to anſwer your Lordſhip the Cauſe, why and wherefore we do not provide Payment of the L. *l.* of Money towards her Majeſties Service in the *Low Countries*. To the which Sum the Chapter was rated by a Special Scedule, encloſed in the Letters of her Majeſties moſt Honourable Privy Council; and your Honour charged to collect the ſame.

“ For anſwer whereunto, we requeſt your Lordſhips charitable Conſideration of the State of us, *Reſidentiaries* of the Chapter, whoſe Names be hereunto ſubſcribed. For your Honour knoweth, that every one of us in particular were charged in the Scedule ſent to your Lordſhip, as aforeſaid, ſaving Dr. *Mewrik*, who is charged in the like Scedule, ſent to the Lord Biſhop of *Bangor*, for Dr. *Beacon*, who is not charged at all by any ſuch Original Scedules; but, as we hear, diſcharged by the Ordinaries in *Norwich* and *Chiceſter*, in reſpect of his Charge for the Chapter here in *Litchfield*. For ſo the Lord Biſhop of *Chicheſter* did us to underſtand of that Party, concerning his Prebend there. For the which (as we hear) he receiveth 40 *l.* a Year. And ſo of *Norwich*. For which he receiveth 30 *l.* a Year, as we are informed. Your Lordſhip knoweth he is diſcharged for the ſame in reſpect as is before ſaid.

" Wherefore the Premiſſes conſidered, with the Contents of the " Letter ſent unto your Honour from the Lords of the moſt Honourable Privy Council, we ſurely truſt that your Lordſhip will " not urge us to a double Charge. For that the Contents of their " Honours Letters do grant us that Liberty. And we hope that " your Honour will not urge us contrary to the ſame. But rather " ſee her Majeſty ſerved by conſidering Dr. *Beacon* and others, the " Canons and Prebendaries of this Church, Members of this Chapter; who have Livings abroad, and be not ſpecially charged as " we are; to the Number of 25 beſides us; and others that be " charged by the ſaid ſpecial Scedules.

" Alſo, we requeſt your Honour to conſider, that we know no " Cauſe, that Dr. *Beacon* ſhould not pay ſo much as the moſt of " us, for his Livings, and Part in the Chapter here is as good, as " any of ours: And ſince *Candlemas* he hath received 200*l.* we " know, for an Office, that he had only by your Lordſhips free " Gift. Then the Surpluſage we truſt, your Honour may eaſily " gather among the reſt of the Canons and others of the Clergy uncharged, by your godly Wiſdom to the Supply of her Majeſties " Service, and the Diſcharge of us, which be ready to pay according to our Rates; as knoweth the Almighty. To whoſe bleſſed " Tuition we commit your Honour. The *Cloſe* of *Litchfield*; the " 24th of *May*, *An. D.* 1586. Subſcribed,

Your Lordſhips to Command,

George Boleyn, *Chriſtopher Hodgeſon*,
E. Mewrik, *William Sale.*

Thus we have the Cauſe of this Letter of Dr. *Boleyn* the Dean, and the Canons Reſidentiary. Which was not to leſſen the Sum of Mony impoſed upon them; but that the ſame might be raiſed, and they ſomewhat eaſed of the reſpective Payments laid on them, others of that Church paying their Proportion, who by Favour or Overſight eſcaped; and particularly one of the Richeſt of them: Not making any Petition to the Biſhop for ſome Abatement of the 50l. but only making ſome Delay, that others might (as was fit) bear their due Share

Taxation of the Clergy in the Archdeaconry of Coventry.

From another Part of this Dioceſs, *viz.* The Archdeaconry of *Coventry*, I find Mr. *Henton* the Archdeacon, giving this Account to the Biſhop of what he and two other Preachers appointed, his Aſſiſtants, had done in their taxing the wealthier Sort of the Clergy, and requiring the reſpective Payment; How unwilling he found them. The Cauſe whereof, I ſuppoſe, was their Poverty and mean Circumſtances. For nothing elſe was alledged. " He ſignified by his [the " Biſhops] Commiſſion to them, that they had performed ſuch Ser- " vice about the taxing of the abler Sort of the Clergy, within that " Archdeaconry, for providing 75l. for Lances for the Service of " the *Low-Countries*. And that to the uttermoſt of their Diſcretion. " That they had commanded the Parties they had taxed in her Majeſties Name, to make ſpeedy Payment of their ſeveral Sums in

" *Coventry* on ſuch a Day in the Month of *April.* At which Time " and Place the Archdeacon and the others in Commiſſion attended, " to have received the ſaid Sums. And that among them all there " was but one Man willing or ready to ſatisfy the Taxation. The " reſt ſhewing themſelves unwilling hereunto; alledging their Diſ- " ability. Whoſe Names and Sums of Money appointed to each, " they ſent unto the Biſhop in a Scedule, that he might take ſuch " Order with them, as to his Diſcretion ſhould ſeem convenient. " Adding, that they themſelves had moſt willingly performed their " Service to his Lordſhip, and done that which in their Conſciences " they thought beſt. And that they had likewiſe dealt further with " all the Reſidue of the Clergy of that Archdeaconry, to ſee what " others of the Miniſters would do; but that the whole that was " offered by them amounted but to 6 or 7 Pounds. This is a brief Account of this Letter, but I leave it at Length to be peruſed and preſerved in the *Appendix:* With a Scedule annexed of what Sums were to be raiſed in each Deanry, and from whom.

Num. VIII.

Biſhop of Peterburgh *concerning the Money raiſed in his Dioceſs.*

I meet alſo with a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer from another Biſhop, namely *Howland* Biſhop of *Peterborough.* Wherein among other Things he informed him of the Mony raiſed in his Dioceſs: *viz.* " That he had paid into the Exchequer 300 l. for Lances, impoſed " upon the Clergy of his Dioceſs. And ſo yielding therein humble " Thanks for his Honourable Favour towards him; he recommend- " ed his Honour to the gracious Tuition of *Chriſt Jeſus.* It was dated *June* the 27.

The Sum of Money raiſed from the Clergy for the Queens Service.

But to ſee at once an Account of all the Monies received now of the Clergy throughout all the Dioceſſes for Lances; and with all of the Recuſants for Light Horſes, there was a Paper brought in to the Lord Treaſurer by one *Freke*, Receiver: Dated *June* 24. 1586. To the Sum of 6650 *l.* 3 *ſh.* This Paper, wherein the particular Sums collected in each Dioceſs (beſides the *Welch* Dioceſſes, which are not ſet down) may be ſeen in the *Appendix.* Whereof 2000 *l.* was paid by Warrant to Sir *Tho. Cecil*, and Sir *Philip Sidney*, that went now into the *Low Countries* with the Earl of *Leiceſter.*

Num. IX.

The State of the Church of Weſtminſter.

The State of the Collegiate Church of St. *Peters Weſtminſter* ſtood thus this Year, as it was given in by *Goodman*, the Dean, with this Title: *April* 4. 1586. *The Names and Places of the Prebendaries of* Weſtminſter. Written, as it ſeems by Order of the Queen, to underſtand, who they were, and how they were qualified, and how dignified, and how they performed their Duty; and how conformable to the Uſages of the Church; and laſtly, whether married or unmarried. I commit this *Orginal Paper* alſo to the *Appendix*, to be read there. To which is added the Order by the Statutes, deviſed by Dr. *Bil*, and ſo in Uſe ever ſince the laſt Erection, under that Dean, for the Prebendary Months of Reſidence, Contribution to the Commons and for Preaching.

Num. X.

Geneva *in great Danger, ſues to the Queen.*

The Proteſtant City of *Geneva* was now in a very dangerous Condition; being begirt about with Enemies of the Popes Party; accompany'd with the Duke of *Savoys* Ambition, to receive that Place into his Territories. An Account whereof, and of their preſent Circumſtances,

ſtances, and of their greedy Enemies is given in a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer; written in *September* from the *Syndics* and Council, to this Tenor.

" *Monſieur; L'Experience, que nous avons eu ce devant de voſtre*
" *faveur & amitie envers noſtre Eſtat, nous a donne d'autant plus*
" *de hardieſſe de nous addreſſer priviment avous, pour vous faire*
" *entendre la diſpoſition & eſtat de nos affaires apreſent, &c.* Thus
in *Engliſh* " The Experience which they before had of his Favour
" and Friendſhip towards their Eſtate, gave them ſo much the more
" Boldneſs to addreſs themſelves privately to him, to let him un-
" derſtand the Diſpoſition and State of their Affairs at preſent: Not
" only for the Degree he held about the Queens Majeſty, but alſo
" for the Affection, which he had alway ſhewn to them, that made
" Profeſſion of the true Religion. That he knew the inveterate
" Hatred, which the Houſe of *Savoy* had a long Time born to their
" Town: Not for any Right he had there; the Illuſtrious Duke
" *Charles*, Uncle to his Highneſs that at preſent reigned, having
" been before convinced of the Invalidity of his Pretences by
" *lawful* Cogniſance of Law. To which he ſubmitted himſelf.
" Notwithſtanding which, and that they had always implored the
" Juſtice of the Law, and had Recourſe to all freindly Ways, his
" Succeſſor had not forborn thereupon to try by all Means to di-
" ſturb them. Having begun by Enterprizes, ſecret Means, and at
" laſt aſſaulting them openly: Having commanded an Army before
" their Town four Years paſt. Whereof they gave Advertiſement
" to her Majeſty. And by whom they were greatly comforted, by
" appointing a Collection to be made at their Requeſts, in her Realm.
" Which they knew to have been greatly advanced by his [the Lord
" Treaſurers] Favour and good Proviſion. They added, how that
" they knew this Emotion was alſo determined at the Exhortation
" of the magnificent Lords of the Leagues, and other their Friends.

Their Letter to the Treaſurer. Account of their Condition.

" Then they proceeded to ſhew at large the unjuſt Dealings of
" the Duke of *Savoy*, with them, (contrary to Promiſe and Agree-
" ment) that he ſuffered no Grain to be carried through his Coun-
" try to them, upon pain of Death. That he entred into a League
" with *Spain*, and made extraordinary Proviſion of War; and block-
" ed them up as well by Water as by Land; to ſtop all Victuals
" to come to them, to drive them to the greateſt Extremity. That
" they were fain to provide themſelves with Corn from the Side of
" *Germany*. And that they were advertiſed for certain, that there
" were arrived in *Piedmont* 2000 *Spanyards:* Who ſhewed them-
" ſelves under Colour to go to the *Low Countries*. In the mean
" Time they were attended with other Forces from *Italy:* Which
" his Majeſty, the King of *Spain*, and the Pope did furniſh and de-
" fray; unto the Number of 5000 Foot, and 400 Lances. And
" that all which appeared undoubtedly (as they wrot) to be deſigned
" againſt them, and to lay Siege to their Town: If God by his Grace
" remedied not, and raiſed them up ſome good Lords and Friends.

" Among whom (as they then ſubjoyned) we have caſt our Eye
" upon the Clemency of the moſt Serene Queen. The Benevolence
" of whom, having had Tryal of before, makes us hope and pro-

“ miſe ourſelves, that her Majeſty will tender to us ſtill for this “ Time a ſuccouring Hand. And this ſo much the more willingly, “ in that we are not aſſaulted for any Cauſe, but in Hatred to the “ ſame Religion, of which by the Grace of God we make Profeſſion, “ with her Majeſty!

“ To conclude, they believing, not onely that he [the Lord “ Treaſurer] could much aid them in this their Suit, but alſo that “ his good Will would never fail them in favouring ſo juſt a Quarrel, “ and which they were reſolved, by the Grace of God, to maintain “ to the very laſt: Prayed him to uſe his Intereſt with the “ Queen to aſſiſt them with Money, or other good Means, to enable “ them to reſiſt the Efforts of their Enemies: Hoping that the Benefit, “ which they ſhould by this Means receive, ſhould not only redound “ to their Profit, but would bring ſome Advantage to the Affairs “ of her Majeſty, in reſpect of the Paſſage; which ſhould be “ intyrely ſtopped to her Majeſties Enemies, to go to the *Low Countries.* “ Which he [the Lord Treaſurer] knew much better to “ comprehend, according to his great Prudence. This was dated the 27th of *September*, 1586.

Beza to the ſaid Lord of their State.

This Letter was accompanied with another in the ſame Month from their chief Miniſter, *Theodora Beza.* Wherein he wrote, “ How the “ Pope, the King of *Spain*, and Duke of *Savoy* had taken the Opportunity “ of a Dearth and Plague at *Geneva*, to enter into Arms “ againſt their City: And therefore earneſtly deſiring Aſſiſtance from “ *England.* And then ſpeaking of the Queen and her miraculous “ Deliverances, added, how it was apparent, that God had bleſſed “ her; and had choſen and ordained her to be as his Arm againſt “ the Enemies of his Truth; and a Cover and Refuge for his poor “ afflicted People, far and near. And that it would turn to her Praiſe “ and Glory perpetual.

“ Beſides, that his Lordſhip's Prudence would well conſider and “ cauſe her Majeſty to underſtand, if it pleaſed her, how to end “ happily the Affairs of the *Low Countries*, this ſhould be a great “ Advantage to have ſtopped the Paſſages to all the Succours which “ the King of *Spain* knew there to ſend from *Spain* and *Italy:* Which “ by her Liberality, and the Forces of their Neighbour Allies, “ they could ſeize certain [*deſtroits*] Straits, and guard them, which “ being done there would be no Means whatſoever for the King “ of *Spain* to prepare an Army; but ſhould fail of all that which “ he would ſend to the *Low Countries.*

And then concluding with theſe Words, “ Conſidering theſe Things, “ my Lord, if your holy and wiſe Diſcretion find good to aid, with “ your good Advice, and favour, this City and Church in ſuch Extremity, “ towards her Majeſty you ſhall do a Work worthy Pity, “ and very agreeable to God. And which ſhall oblige us more and “ more, to pray God for you and yours.

Another Letter to the Treaſurer from Geneva.

And ſuch was this Cities Dependance upon the Queen, by the Intereſt of the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, that the former Letter was followed with another to him, dated *December* 20. in *French*, beginning, *Encore que, &c.* The Tenor whereof was, “ That although “ they knew enough the grand and important Affairs, which he had

" in Hand for her Majeſty above all, in that Time, that the Enemies made all their Efforts to overthrow her Vertue and Heroic " Conſtancy, they reckoned, that among theſe great Buſineſſes, he " would do them this Honour, as he had pleaſed in Times paſt, to " have Remembrance of their State, and to recommend it to her " Majeſty, according as they had moſt humbly prayed for it by their " laſt, and which they did ſtill at preſent; that ſhe would tender " them her Succouring Hand, in aſſiſting them with ſome of her " Incomes, or other Means, for Strength, in caſe they ſhould be aſſaulted by the neighbour Prince: To guard them againſt the Hoſtilities which they were preparing for them, the Spring approaching; being aided by the King of *Spain*, the Pope, and other Enemies of their Liberties, and the true Religion.

And ſome Months before, this afflicted City addreſt another Letter dated in *May*, to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, ſhewing the Danger of their Affairs, and begging his Favour, and Intereſt.

Beza *to L.Treaſurer. Thanks in Behalf of their City* Geneva.

In the ſame Month of *May* this Year, did *Beza*, one of the chief Miniſters of *Geneva*, write another Letter in Latin to the ſaid Lord, importing how the City of *Geneva* was beholden to him: How Things ſtood with the Proteſtants there, and in *Helvetia*; the Practices of their Enemies; and ſhewing their great Senſe of Gratitude to the Queen and him. *Cui enim hominum plura ſecundum ſereniſſimam Reginam, quam tibi tota hæc Civitas, &c.* " To whom next to the " moſt Serene Queen, doth this whole City owe more than to you: " More indeed than we are able to comprehend in our Minds; much " leſs (as he proceeded) could they perform that excellent Precept " of *Heſiod* of *returning a Benefit*. And that therefore the only " Thing that remained to them, that they might avoid the Mark " of an ingrateful Mind, was diligent, and daily Prayer to God, " (not otherwiſe than for their own Safety) firſt, that he would go " on by his ſtrong Guards there to defend the Queens Majeſty, who " was the Defender not only of ſo many good Men, but alſo a whole " People moſt unworthily oppreſt; and ſetting herſelf and all hers, " by a rare Example of Chriſtian Zeal, towards the Propagation of " the Goſpel, to be her ſtrong Defence, and to adorn and amplify " her with all the excellent Gifts of his holy Spirit: And then " that he always furniſh her Counſillors, given her of God, and " him [that Lord] eſpecially, to whoſe Counſils ſhe, not without " Deſert, attributed much, with that Wiſdom and Prudence, which " the Adminiſtration of ſuch weighty Buſineſs did require, *&c.* But I leave the whole Letter of this eminent and learned Man to be read and preſerved, in the *Appendix*. Num. XI.

There were other Letters from *Beza* and *Sadeel* to the Lord Treaſurer, three Years after, craving his Favour, to obtain of the Queen ſpeedy Relief, as ſhe had formerly been aſſiſtant to them, being ſo oppreſt ſtill by their Popiſh Enemy, that their State, School and Church were near intire Ruin. Which we may more particularly relate hereafter.

ANNO 1586.

CHAP. V.

A Popiſh Conſpiracy, to raiſe a Rebellion, and murder the Queen. Parſons, *the Jeſuit, to Cardinal* Allen *at* Rome; *now ſoon after his Arrival here, in a Miſſion.* Creicton, *a Jeſuit, his* Reaſons *for the Catholicks taking up Arms.* Ballard, Savage, *and* Babington, *their Confeſſions about the Plot. The City rejoices. The Queens Letter to them. The Juſtices of* Suffolk *to the Council, concerning yearly Payments by Popiſh Gentlemen there.* Topclifts *Diſcovery of the Practices and Reſorts of Seminary Prieſts in and about* London. Cotton, *a Jeſuit, and* Perpoint, *Gent. Recuſant, taken up; their Examinations.*

A Conſpiracy of Papiſts.

WE ſhall now turn to the Tranſactions of the Papiſts here at home this Year. Where they were very buiſy in compaſſing three Things, *viz.* Raiſing a Rebellion in *England*, killing the Queen, and delivering the *Scottiſh* Queen, and ſetting her up Queen of theſe Realms. But the wicked Conſpiracy was detected in the Month of *July*. And *Babington*, the chief Head thereof, was in *September* following indicted for his intended Treaſon againſt the Queens Majeſties Perſon, and for ſtirring up of Civil Wars within the Realm, and practiſing to bring in a Foreign Power. And in fine, he and *Ballard*, a Prieſt of *Rheims*, and others, (who all confeſſed the Crime) were condemned and executed. Which Matters are related at large in our Hiſtorians;

I ſhall here gather up ſeveral Remarks of this dangerous Plot, which had conſiderable Correſpondents abroad, as well as cloſe Counſillors and *Jeſuits* at home.

I begin with a Letter writ in the midſt of their Buſineſs, ſecretly carrying on, to Cardinal *Allen* at *Rome*, of the Succeſs of a late Miſſion, from the ſaid Cardinal into *England*. The Writer was *Parſons* the *Jeſuit*, now come ſecretly into *England*, to promote the Catholick Cauſe, confirm Catholicks, and make Proſelytes. A Summary of which Letter wrote in *Latin*, take as follows.

Parſons *Letter to Cardinal* Allen.

“ That they had a very happy Journey to *England*, where they “ found great Fury in the Enemies of the Truth, but not leſs Fa- “ vour among the Catholicks. That there went then a Report of “ their coming, and that from the Mouth of ſome of the Queens “ Council. And that his Name [*viz. Parſons*] was known to ſome “ of them. That it proved a Terror to the Adverſaries, and that “ they feared ſome great Matter to fall out from them. That when “ he came to *London*, he had Diſcourſe with ſome Catholicks under

" Guard, and ſome in Priſon. Which preſent Condition of theirs " (if he might gueſs) portended ſomewhat not unacceptable. That " after a Day or two they had ſome ſhort Diſcourſe with a certain " Perſon, to whom the ſaid Cardinal had recommended them : But " referring further Communication to another more convenient " Time. Which ſoon after happening, after the Confeſſions, as accuſtomed, they [theſe *Miſſionaries*] renewed their Vows, to the " great Conſolation of all. And that whatſoever belonged to their " ſeveral Faculties, and each ones Buſineſs they conſidered of together. That their Arrival in the Iſland did in a wonderful " Manner refreſh and chear the Catholicks: Who had before complained, that they were forſaken by the *Society*; and that the " Shepherds diſcouraged with Difficulties would forſake their Flock, " that had never more need of them. That not a few Prieſts were " lately taken up; but not ſo inhumanly dealt withal as before, " nor ſo ſtraitly kept. And ſome redeemed by Money, or delivered out of Priſon, and diſmiſt without any Condition. But that " the Catchpoles narrowly, with prying Eyes walked about the " City; ſearched Houſes; and whom they took, ſpoiled of their " Money, Horſes and every Thing elſe they could meet with. " That ſome Catholicks died in *Newgate* by the Stench of that " Priſon, and others miſerably tormented with the ſtinking Smells " of the Place.

" It was reported, that at Court ſomething was then lying before " them; which if it ſucceeded, very rigorous Things were like to " fall upon them; but if it happened otherwiſe, they might promiſe themſelves Tranquility and Peace. But that theſe Dealings " with Catholicks ſeemed now to them but Bugbears to frighten " Children with, ſince they had brought their Severities to that " Paſs, that nothing now remained for any new Cruelty. But that " it was Matter of great Grief, that there were ſeveral Counties, " wherein were many of the right Faith, but not one Prieſt among " them, although much deſired by very many of them.

The Letter runs on in other particular News of the Affairs of the Catholicks. " And how diligent he himſelf was, in Confeſſions, Sermons and other Offices of the Society : And that he was " compaſſed with daily Dangers. That the Earl of *Arundel* was " offered by the great Men of the Court, to be ſet free, if he would " carry the Sword, only for Honour ſake, according to Cuſtom, before the Queen to the Chappel, and be preſent to the end of the " Service and the Veſpers. But that he fearing ſome Fraud, determined wholly to decline it, or to conſult with ſome of their " Doctors about the Lawfulneſs of ſo doing.

Another piece of this Writers News hence was, " That a Prieſt " was taken in the Habit of a Seaman, the better to conceal himſelf; " but diſcovered, and brought to Court; and at length brought before the Queen. Who asked him, if he would convert her. And " upon ſome Anſwer, That he would do his utmoſt Endeavour, " ſhe told him, he muſt begin with her Maids of Honour, and firſt " convert them. And ſo after they had made Sport with him, " committed him to Priſon.

ANNO 1586.

One Paſſage more in this Letter of Intelligence, ſent to *Rome*, was, “ That ſome ſtrange Miracles were done here, as he [*Parſons*] had heard from Eye-witneſſes, of diſpoſſeſſing Devils out of the Bodies of divers, by the Piety and ſublime Power of ſome of their Prieſts. Whereby many were converted to the Faith, and others wavering confirmed; to the extolling of the Prieſts: Though the Hereticks called them Conjurers and Magitians. But of this Cheat we ſhall read under the next Year. This is ſome ſhort and imperfect Account of this Letter of the Jeſuit *Parſons*. But the whole, taken from the Original, and ſigned by his own Hand, (being as it ſeems intercepted) is preſerved in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XII.

Reaſons of Creicton *a* Jeſuit, *for an Invaſion.*

Next, I ſhall diſcover the Diſcourſe about this Year found with another *Jeſuit*, *viz.* *Creichton*, a *Scot*, to forward this diſperate Plot; containing *Reaſons to ſhew the Eaſineſs of the Enterprize.* By which may be ſeen, what imminent Danger the Queen and Kingdom was now in. It was as follows:

Cotton *Librar.* Julius.

“ As for the Country of *England*, it is eaſy to be overcome with a few Forces: Few Fortreſſes or Strong Places in the Land. So as one Army would ſuffice to end that War. The People given to Change and Alteration; chiefly, when there is ſome Beginning or Aſſurance. For our Stories do declare, how a few and weak have overcome a great many: As it is evident in the Victory of *Henry* VII. King of *England*. Who with a few Strangers, and ſome Intelligence with, *&c.* And to ſet forth and manifeſt this Point more clearly, in the Time of Queen *Mary*, Wife to the Catholick King, yet living, a private Man riſing up againſt her, led his Army even unto *London*. [That was Sir *Tho. Wyat*. But what did he get? He was ſtopt at *London*, and vanquiſhed.] Of other Times we have likewiſe many Examples of baſe Men, *viz.* Part Artizans, and People diſcontented, have overcome the greater Part of the Realm.

Of the Diſpoſition of the Realm for this Enterprize.

“ Firſt, All the Catholicks, without any Exception, do favour, or rather do greatly deſire ſome ſuch Enterprize: Firſt and chiefly for the great Deſire they have of the Reſtitution of the Catholick Faith. Secondly, for the Right and Intereſt which the Queen of *Scots* hath to the Kingdom, and to deliver her out of Priſon, where theſe many Years againſt the Law of Nature ſhe remaineth, to the Offence of the Dignity of Majeſty Royal. Thirdly, For the great Troubles and Miſery which they endure more and more: Which indeed are intolerable. For firſt and foremoſt, all the Catholicks, and known for ſuch in *England*, remain deſpoiled of all the Offices, Magiſtracies, Favours, Honours, and other Commodities of the Eſtate; which have been granted them in other Princes Days; and have been always during this Time and Reign ſo kept under, and diſhonoured in their Countries, and Shires, that they have no kind of Authority, beſide the Law of the People, which they cannot take from them by all the Injuries offered them. But moreover, by publick Juſtice, and in ſuch

“ Matters, as they have in the Law, they are uſed with great Diſhonour, intolerable Partiality, for the moſt grievous Diſgrace of the Queen, which they ſuſtain. Which is to be ſubject to Puniſhment, Tormenting and Condemnation to the unjuſt Death of ſo many Men, and of their Goods, the barbarous Confiſcation: Separation of the Wives from their Husbands; the extreme Poverty of very many Servants, and with great Miſery of their Maſters and Lords.

“ All which Things make the Catholicks deſirous of this Enterprize, for their Delivery out of Bondage.

“ Beſides this, the Queen of *England*, having made new Laws, doth begin to execute thoſe Laws, foraſmuch as toucheth the Confiſcation of their Goods in ſuch Sort, as in a ſhort Time ſhe would reduce the Catholicks to extreme Poverty. So finally, the ſaid Queen, as it were to accompliſh her Tyranny, did cauſe to be publiſhed, the 4th of *April* laſt paſt, and ſo hath declared to the People, that they ſhould hold the Catholicks for Capital Enemies unto her Perſon and State. And ſo declareth and commandeth to all her Subjects by that Proclamation ſo to account and repute them; that is, all thoſe which are of the Catholick Religion, or which within the Realm of *England* ſhall receive *Jeſuits* or Prieſts; or which in any other Sort ſhall ſhew themſelves to be Catholicks. By the which Proclamation and others publiſhed before to that Effect, the Catholicks are proclaimed to be the Enemies and Traitors to the Queen without any Cauſe; and by the ſame Means are every Day in danger of their Lives.

“ Whence it comes to paſs, that they are already reſolved rather to take Arms, or to attempt their Deliverance by any other Means that they may, than thus to become the Prey of Hereticks; which ſtand over them every Day to cut off their Heads. The Faction of the Catholicks in *England* is great, and able, if the Kingdom were divided in three Parts, to make two of them. But becauſe there is no Fortreſs in all the Country, where they may remain in Surety, while they gather Forces together, and that there are Officers of the Queen, which have always eye over them, that they cannot move without being ſeen and taken, although they are that great Part of the Realm, notwithſtanding they dare not riſe without ſome Beginning of Forces, *&c.* Then there follows a Diviſion of the Realm in two Parts. “ The one conſiſteth of Earls, Barons, Knights, Eſquires. The which are able all of them to conduct and bring Men of their own Charges. The other is of Yeomen; the which, he ſaith, for the moſt Part are Catholicks. Moreover, there are not a few baniſhed Men for Religion, which will return to ſecond this Enterprize.

“ And concerning the *Hereticks*, they are divided into two or three Factions, in reſpect of Succeſſion to the Crown. And very many of them do favour the Right of the *Scottiſh* Queen. And a great Number are diſcontented with the preſent Government, Part for the . . . . Part, for the unworthineſs of the Counſillors: Men of baſe Sort; which have already drawn unto themſelves the whole Government; excluding from the ſame all the Nobility of

“ *England.* Beſide that, a moſt infinite Number there is of thoſe which have received, and do receive particular Offence and Oppreſſion from the Favourites of the Queen.

The Credit of the Duke of Lenox *is ſet forth.*

“ The State of *Scotland* is at this preſent ſubject to ſudden Mutation; whereby the Duke of *Lenox*, and the Lord *Seaton*, the principal Foundation of this Enterprize may be made away. Which importeth them more than the Perſon of the King himſelf.

“ The Catholicks of *England* are brought to that ſtrait, and will be reduced to that Poverty, as they ſhall not be able to hold out.

“ Wherefore now is the Time, if ever it be the Pleaſure of God, to reduce theſe two Kingdoms under one Empire. Which would be a moſt happy Thing. Wherefore his Holineſs, and the Catholick Majeſty ſhould, *&c.* whereby ſhould enſue the final Peace of the Church, *&c.* Theſe abrupt Stops are made on purpoſe to conceal what was meant to follow; but any may eaſily gueſs the Meaning.

And what Effect the Endeavours of theſe Incendiaries had, the threatning Plot carried on this Year will make appear. Which I ſhall ſupply with a few Matters of Fact, wherein our Hiſtories are ſilent, or ſhort.

Confeſſion of Ballard *and* Savage, *of Letters from Fugitives in* France.

There is an Account, as I find it in ſome State-Papers of thoſe Times, of the Confeſſion of *Ballard* the Prieſt, and chief Fomenter, and *Savage*, (that undertook the Murther of the Queen) as touching Letters received from *Engliſh* Fugitives in *France*, ſent by the *French* Packet to the Ambaſſador. Whence we may obſerve how *France* was privy to this wicked Combination.

“ *Aug.* 27, and 29. *Ballard* ſaith, At his firſt coming over, he went to the Ambaſſadors Houſe to his Secretary, to ſee, what Letters were there from *France* for him. Becauſe *Cha. Paget* willed him to repair thither by the Name of *Dynne*, for Letters which he would ſend. And at that Time the *French* Ambaſſador came to him into the Secretaries Chamber, and ſaid unto him, he had need to take heed, how he came thither, for being ſuſpected. And therefore promiſed, he would come himſelf to *Ballard* to any Place, if he had cauſe to ſpeak with him.

“ He procured *Cordalion*, the *French* Ambaſſadors Secretary, to come to *Edward Windſores* Lodging in *Fiſhſtreet*, on purpoſe, to be acquainted with *Tilney* and *Windſore*. [two deeply concerned in the Plot.]

“ He met and conferred with the *French* Ambaſſadors Secretary in the Fields near the Windmills: And *Ballard* told him, That if the Duke of *Guiſe* would ever do any Thing for the reforming this State, and freeing the Queen of *Scots*, now was the Time, when the Earl of *Leiceſter* was abſent with his great Forces. Whereunto the Secretary replied, they would be loth to looſe ſo neceſſary a Member, as the Duke of *Guiſe*; becauſe he might not

" be ſpared out of his Country. But yet bade *Ballard* be of good " cheer.

" After this the ſame Secretary at another Time met *Ballard*, *Savage*, and *Gilbert Giffourd* [another Prieſt] in the ſame Place. " And had ſecret Speech there with *Gilb. Gyffourd.*

" He received Letters from *Morgan*, [a Servant of the *Scots* " Queen, then in *France*] by the *French* Ambaſſador.

" He delivered to *Courdalion* [the *French* Ambaſſadors Secretary " aforeſaid] two Letters, one to *Charles Paget*, another to *Grateley:* " Declaring, how far he had dealt with *Babington*, [the chief Head " of the Plot] and what Plot was laid. Requiring further Aſſurance under *Mendoza's* Hand [the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador then in " *France* tranſacting the Buſineſs there,] for effecting of that which " was promiſed [*viz.* Invading the Kingdom.] Becauſe many here " liked not to truſt Words.

Savages Confeſſion.

" *Aug.* the 17th, *Savage* ſaith, That he received of the *French* " Ambaſſador a Letter from Dr. *Giffourd*, a Letter from *Morgan*, " and a Letter from *Gilbert Giffourd.* The Subſtance of all which " Letters was, to encourage him to proceed in the Act againſt her " Majeſties Perſon [to ſhed her Bloud by an Aſſaſſination, which " he had vowed to do.] Commending it, for Honourable and Meritorious.

" *Aug.* the 29th, *Savage* was commended to *Chaſteleneuf* by " *Mauvaſeur*, [the *French* Ambaſſador.]

Babingtons Confeſſion.

Aug. 22. *Babington* confeſſed, " That *Gilb. Giffourd* was to paſs " into *France*, as a *French* Man, by Means of the *French* Ambaſſador.

" *Aug.* 23. *Babington* after his Flying, did write to *Ceurdaliot*, " [which the Lord Treaſurer amended by his Pen (as his true Name " was) *Cordalion*] the *French* Ambaſſadors Secretary, that he was " inforced to fly, for Cauſes concerning the Queen of *Scots*, [between whom had paſſed many Letters :] Willing him to require " his Maſter to lend him 300 Crowns; and to write to the Governour of *Calais*, to provide a *French* Bark, to tranſport him, and " certain other Gentlemen. [Such Traitors as himſelf.]

The Purpoſe of this Plot.

Here were three wretched Purpoſes deſigned to be brought to paſs by this Conſpiracy, *viz.* to aſſaſſinate the Queen, to raiſe a Rebellion in the Kingdom, and to ſet up *Mary* Queen of *Scots* in Queen *Elizabeth's* Room. And a Fourth may be added, to overthrow the eſtabliſhed Religion, and reſtore the abandoned Religion of Popery.

The City gives all Signs of Joy.

But upon the diſcovery of this dreadful Plot, and the taking up of theſe Rebels and bloody minded Traitors, the City of *London* made extraordinary Rejoicings, by publick Bonfires, ringing of Bells, Feaſtings in the Streets, ſinging of Pſalms, and ſuch like: Shewing their exceſs of Gladneſs, and ample Expreſſions of their Love and Loyalty to the Queen, and her Government. Whereof the grateful Queen thought fit to take publick Notice by a Letter to the Lord Maior and Aldermen, with much Satisfaction. And that it might be known to all her loving Citizens in general, ſhe gave Order that her ſaid Letter ſhould be openly read. Which accordingly on

ANNO 1586. the 22d of *Auguſt* was done, before a great Aſſembly of the Commons in *Guild-Hall:* Being firſt Prefaced by a Speech of *Dalton*, one of the City Counſil, in the Abſence of the Recorder. The true Copy of which Letter was printed by *Barker* the Queens Printer; and which I ſhall here ſubjoin.

To our Right truſty well beloved the Lord Maior of our City of London, *and his Brethren, Aldermen of the ſame.*

" Right truſty and well beloved, We greet you well. Being " given to underſtand, how greatly our good and moſt loving Sub" jects of that City did rejoice, at the Apprehenſion of certain de" viliſh and wicked minded Subjects of ours; that through the great " and ſingular Goodneſs of God have been detected, to have moſt " wickedly and unnaturally conſpired, not only the taking away of " our own Life, but alſo have ſtirred up (as much as in them lay) " a general Rebellion throughout our whole Realm:

" We could not but, by our own Letters, witneſs unto you our " great and ſingular Contentment we received upon the Knowledge " thereof: Aſſuring you, that We did not ſo much rejoice at the " Eſcape of the intended Attempt againſt our own Perſon, as to ſee " the greateſt Joy our moſt loving Subjects took at the Apprehen" ſion of the Contrivers thereof. Which to make their Love more " apparent, have, (as We are to our great Comfort informed) omit" ted no outward Shew, that by any external Act might witneſs to " the World the inward Love and dutiful Affection they bear to" wards us. And as we have as great Cauſe with all Thankful" neſs to acknowledge Gods great Goodneſs towards us, through " the infinite Bleſſings he layeth upon us, as many as ever Prince " had; yea rather, as ever Creature had; yet do We not, for any " worldly Bleſſing received from his Divine Majeſty, ſo greatly ac" knowledge the ſame, as in that it hath pleaſed him to incline the " Hearts of our Subjects, even from the firſt Beginning of our Reign, " to carry as great Love towards us, as ever Subjects carried to" wards Prince. Which ought to move us (as it doth in very Deed) " to ſeek with all Care, and by all good Means, that appertain to a " Christian Prince the Conſervation of ſo loving and dutifully af" fected Subjects: Aſſuring you, that We deſire no longer to live, " than while We may, in the whole Courſe of our Government, " carry Our ſelf in ſuch Sort, as may not only nouriſh and con" tinue their Love and good Will towards Us, but alſo encreaſe the " ſame.

" We think meet, that theſe our Letters ſhould be communicated, " in ſome general Aſſembly, to our moſt loving Subjects, the Com" moners of that City. Yeven under our Signet at our Caſtell at " *Windſor*, the 18th Day of *Auguſt*, 1586. in the 28th Year of " our Reign.

The previous Speech of Mr. *Dalton* before the reading of the Queens Letter, will be found entred by me in the laſt Edition of *Stows Survey* of *London*.

Yearly Payments of Popiſh Recuſants, in Suffolk.

But further, concerning the Popiſh Recuſants, many whereof were Gentlemen of Eſtates in the Country. To whom Forfeitures for not coming to Church were appointed by Law. Which encreaſing according to their continued Abſence, proved heavy to them, by the Advance thereof. The Queen with her Council contrived to find out this Way to give them ſome Eaſe. Which was, that they ſhould pay into her Receipt ſeveral Sums yearly according to their Abilities. A Letter to that Import I find written by the Privy Council to the Juſtices of *Suffolk*, with a Scedule of the Names of divers of the Popiſh Gentlemen in that County, encloſed; and an Order to ſummon them before them, and to impart to them the Contents thereof. It was for them to make offer by Writing under their Hands what reaſonable Portion they would be contented yearly, of their own Diſpoſition, to pay into her Majeſties Receipt to be eaſed of the common Danger of Law, for their Recuſancy.

The Juſtices Advice to them.

They whom the Juſtices cited were *Mannock*, *Rookwood*, *Taxley*, *Norton*, *Drury*,. *Everard*, *Sulliard*, and others: Adviſing them to conſider her Majeſties gracious Favour to them herein, and to meaſure the Benefit they would hereby receive. The ſaid Recuſants ſhewed themſelves contented to ſubſcribe accordingly each their Payment yearly under their Hands. Which with the ſaid Juſtices Letters (dated in *April*) were ſent up to the Council in anſwer to theirs. which will be found at length in the *Appendix*. Num. XIII.

Many Papiſts in Priſon.

There were now, after the Diſcovery of that black Treaſon of the Papiſts againſt the Queen and Kingdom, many Papiſts in Priſon; and great Care taken concerning them. At length in the Month of *November*, the Reſolution of the Lords of the Council was, to make a Diviſion of the Fifty ſeven then in hold. Whom they thus divided. Firſt, her Majeſties Pleaſure was to be known concerning them. Some to be continued, and to appear at the next *Star Chamber* Day, to be informed againſt by the Queens Atturney. Others to be continued in Priſon. Others to be baniſhed the Realm. And theſe to be proceeded againſt in Courſe of Law, *viz. Ra. Ithel*, *Kath. Bellamy* [who I think harboured the Traitors in the late Plot] *Ka. Coppley*, *Dor. White*, *William Wyborn*, *Cutbert Bennet*. Others continued in Priſon; and to be farther examined. Others continued in Priſon, until they have put in Sureties for Payment of their Fines. Dr. *Bagſhaw* to be committed to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. One to be conferred withal in Point of Religion, to be ſent to *Wisbich*. Where were many ſuch Recuſants in hold; and learned Men appointed to repair to them there, to confer with them.

Reſolutions taken concerning them.

Topcliff a Spy upon the Papiſts

But it muſt be told here, that as theſe had their private Carriers on of Intreagues againſt the Queen, and for unſettling the preſent State of the Kingdom by their Plots and private Correſpondences; ſo the State had their Spies to inform themſelves of theſe buiſy Folks, and to learn their Doings, and to take them up. One of theſe was one *Topcliff* in *London*, a very diligent Man, and very ſucceſsful in his Diſcoveries. I find a Declaration of his to the Lords of the Council concerning the Danger of Papiſts near about this Time, ſomewhat before the Queen of *Scots* Death. This notable Paper I will enter here, taken from the Original.

His Declaration to the Lords, and Diſcoveries concerning them.

"It may pleaſe your Lordſhips, and the Reſidue, to conſider of theſe Things, needful to be regarded in this perilous Time.

"There hath aſſembled unto the City of *London* lately from all the Counties of *England*, a great Number of the moſt principal Seminaries and ſeditious Prieſts, bred at *Rome* and *Rheimes*, who have had their Being and continual Harbour among ſome Noblemen, Gentlemen, and other ſuch, as have been reſtrained of Liberty and be ſtill; and with ſuch as be, and long have been, Recuſants. Moſt of them be Gueſts and Hoſts, being yet about *London*.

"Some of them live beyond Sea, as Dr. *Allens* Man, *Stordevant*; and ſome out of *Scotland*, as *Holt*, the *Jeſuit*. Some, Captains or Soldiers that have ſerved the Earl of *Weſtmerland*; others Penſioners to the Pope.

"I learn theſe Things by Advertiſement of ſuch Perſons as have been of their Society beyond Seas: And hearing there their venemous and cankered Intents towards her Majeſty: And here at home ſmelling their Practices and Plots to be anſwerable: Being burthened in Conſcience, and charged in natural Obedience, bewray the Haunts of all ſuch as they have learned to be in *England*, being about the Number of threeſcore: And the Diſpoſitions and Parts of the Doings of ſuch Seminary Prieſts, and their Fautors and Patrons, ... for that Intent have given themſelves to be converſant with thoſe bad Perſons in many of their Harbours; whereby they have come to further Underſtanding . . . . Above twenty Seminary Prieſts of Reputation and beſt Learning now in *London* . . . . They walk audaciouſly, diſguiſed, in the Streets of *London*. Their wonted Fears and Timorouſneſs is turned into Mirth and Solace among themſelves. As though the Day of their Expectation were not paſt, or at the furtheſt coming towards.

"My Inſtruments have learned out ſundry Places of Countenance; where ſometimes theſe Men meet, and confer together in the Day time; and where they lodge a-nights, having Changes of Lodging. The chief Places of their Acceſs be ſolitary, ſtrong and ſtated for the Purpoſe. Of all which and of my laſt Experience with a few, I think it my Duty to lay before your grave Conſideration:

Worthington *and other Prieſts in* London.

"That there is ſmall Regard taken in *London*, or about the City of theſe Men. About 20 Days paſt, one *Tho. Worthington*, a notorious Seminary Prieſt, did reſort hither, a Stirrer of Sedition, as ever haunted *Lancaſhire*, *Cheſhire*, *Shropſhire*, *Darbiſhire*, and *Yorkſhire*.

"One *Revel*, a Seminary Prieſt his Companion. One *Humfrey Maxfield*, a Seminary Scholar at *Rome* and *Rheims*, a great Companion, Conveyer and Intelligencer to and fro, from *Worthington*. And three Boys to be conveyed beyond Seas, to be made Prieſts; ſtollen from their Uncle *Worthington*, and from the Biſhop of *Cheſter*.

Apprehended,

"The three Men, and one of the Boys, he [*Topcliff*] apprehended at *Iſlington*. *Worthington* was committed to the Tower by the

“ Lord Treaſurers Direction. *Revel* and *Maxfield* to the Clink; “ and the Boy to the Gatehouſe.

And examined.

“ *Worthington*, *Maxfield*, and *Revel* were twice examined by Sir “ *Owen Hopton* [Lieutenant of the Tower] Dr. *Hammond* [a Civi- “ vilian] Mr. *Rokeby* [a Juſtice of Peace] and myſelf [*viz. Topcliff.*] “ We all agreed, that there did never come before us ſo arrogant, “ wilful and obſtinate Perſons: Impudently denying any Familiarity “ or Acquaintance between them, or that any one of them had ſeen “ another before they laſt met together at *Iſlington*, before their laſt “ Apprehenſion, or that they were in *Staffordſhire* at *Meare*, old “ *Maxfields* Houſe, lately before their coming up. Where it ſhall “ be proved, that *T. Worthington* was at old *Maxfields* Houſe with “ other like to himſelf; as *Bell*, *Sherwood*, *Cotton*, &c. And at “ *Whitſontide* laſt, and at St. *Peters* Time preached there. And at “ their coming up they were all at *Meare*, with one *Nowel* and “ *Sturdevant*, Dr. *Allens* Man, and of their being there the young “ Boy, confronted with *Maxfield*, juſtified in ſeemly Sort the ſame “ by good Tokens, to *Maxfields* Diſgrace. And yet like a Man given “ over, he did deny the Truth, which by others ſhall be juſtified, if “ Occaſion ſerve: And Proof [made], where they divided them- “ ſelves, and appointed to meet again.

“ Some of them commended *Labournes* Death, [a Gentleman “ executed in the North] ſaying, he died for avowing, the *Scots* “ Queen was Queen of *England*; and our Sovereign [no more] but “ *Elizabeth Bullen*. And that a Miracle was ſeen upon *Labourns* “ Quarters at *Preſton*. Some praiſed *Arderus* Behaviour,” [who was executed in the Year 1583. for being an Acceſſary to an Attempt of killing the Queen] “ for ſaying at his Arraignment, that *Somerfield* [or *Somervile*, who ſtrangled himſelf in Priſon, and was the Perſon that came to the Court with his Sword to kill the Queen] “ was “ ſtrangled, becauſe he ſhould not ſhame his Adverſaries.

“ Some among them ſaid, that it would never be merry World, “ until the *Scots* Queen reigned in *England*, and her Son in *Scot-* “ *land*. Some ſaid, that the Queens Majeſty ſhould not reign: “ And that ſhe will not reign: [Meaning, as it ſeems, in reſpect of the Attemps to be made upon her, or of the Propheſies that went of her Death, or both.] “ *Topcliff* added, that he knew them that “ would lay their Lives of it. For God (ſaid they) will not “ ſuffer her to live. For foreign Princes will invade this Realm by “ *Scotland*, which is the only Way to hope of.

This is an exact Coppy of this Declaration to the Lords by this Gentleman; which I give at length, and will further diſcover the Practices and Malice of theſe Popiſh Recuſants, and Prieſts: And in what Danger the State was by Reaſon of them.

By the Means of this *Topcliff* many of theſe Prieſts and other of that Religion, were taken: Among the reſt were one *Cotton* a notable *Jeſuite*, who went by the Name of *Martin*, and *Martin Ara*; and *Gervaſe Perpoint* a Gentleman; who had been in the Tower before. Both theſe were the 16. Day of *June*, brought before *Richard Toung*, an active Juſtice of Peace in *London*. And the Examinations ſent up to Court.

ANNO 1586.

Cotton, *a Seminary Prieſt; his Confeſſion.*

Cotton confeſſed, that he was a Seminary Prieſt, ſo made at *Doway*, by the Biſhop of *Cambray*; and brought up twelve Years in the Univerſity of *Lovain*. That he went to *Rome*. Where he ſtayed 18 Months in the Hoſpital. That he came into *England* about ſix Years ago: And made his Abode moſt about the City. That he lodged at *Southwark*, *Lambeth*, and other Places. That he went into *Hampſhire*, to ſee if he could live quietly there. That he enquired, how the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* [in whoſe Dioceſs that County was] behaved himſelf towards the Recuſants, and hearing that he was very troubleſome, he found there was no ſtaying for him there: and ſo returned to *Guilford*. And ſo came back to *London*. And that he heard no Bruits or Reports in his Journey, but that the poorer Sort were ready to break down Barns to get Corn. That he knew Mr. *Gervaſe Perpoint*; and had been with him ſeveral Times, but that he durſt not ſuffer him to lay there, the Law was ſo rigorous, [*viz.* againſt harbouring Recuſants.] And much more is read in his Confeſſion: But very wary in all. As particularly refuſing to tell, where the Apparel, Linnen and Books were, uſed by him, as it ſeems, at the Celebration of Maſs: and denying to take his Oath to anſwer any Matters concerning the State of the Realm; now when *Babingtons* Plot, and the Invaſion of the Realm was hatching. The refuſing to take the like Oath, did *Perpoint* make, upon his Examination, as appears by what follows. Which no queſtion was done by Agreement of the Party.

Perpoints *Confeſſion.*

Perpoint was examined at the ſame Day by *Young*. He denied to take his Oath to make Anſwer to any Matter concerning the State of the Realm. That he had lain at a Houſe in the *Old Change* ever ſince he came out of the Tower: Which was ever ſince *Chriſtmas* was Twelvemonth. Denied, that he knew *Martin Ara*, alias *Cotton*, or one *Heywood*, alias *Blythe*, [another Prieſt.] But it was proved to the contrary that he knew both. That he and divers others with him went on a *Sunday*, ſuch a Day in *June*, at eight a Clock in the Morning to Sir *Tho. Fitzherberts* Houſe: But heard no Service [Maſs] there, *&c.* But I leave the whole Examinations of theſe two notable Papiſts to be read in the *Appendix* from the Original.

Num. XIV.

ANNO 1586.

CHAP. VI.

Anthony Tyrril, *Prieſt, his Confeſſion in Letters to the Queen and Lord Treaſurer. His Diſcoveries of the* Jeſuites, &c. *His Recantation. His Revolt. And his Letter to the Queen after it. A Diſcourſe, proving the Treaſon of Prieſts executed. Divers Tracts and Speeches concerning the Papiſts: And concerning the Dealings with them. Cardinal* Allens *Concern with Sir* Edward Stanley *in betraying* Deventer *to the* Spanyard. *He, with the Pope moves for an* Engliſh *Seminary of Soldiers. Writes a Book for them.*

Anthony Tyrel, *Prieſt, his Confeſſion, and Story.*

AMONG the reſt of the Prieſts taken up at this dangerous Juncture, was one *Anthony Tyrrel*, of a good Family, who came over with *Ballard*. He ſeemed very penitent, and very frank in his Confeſſion of himſelf, and what he knew of others and of their Practices. He renounced Popery and pretended to turn to the Proteſtant Religion; but getting his Liberty revolted back. After which taken again, he turned again, and denied what he had before confeſſed. But the Queen became exceedingly offended with him; and ſo was the Lord Treaſurer. Whereat he addreſt an humble Letter to her, and ſome others to that Lord. Which being ſo remarkable, and diſcovering ſuch a Character of a *Romiſh* Prieſt, I ſhall ſet down ſomewhat at length from the ſaid *Tyrrils* own Letters.

His Letter to the Treaſurer.

One whereof dated in *July* this Year, was to the ſaid Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. Which he ſeems to have writ not long after his Submiſſion to the Queen: It ran to this Tenor.

“Right Honourable, *&c.* That being by Gods Providence made Captive, and brought thereby into the Danger of her Majeſties Penal and Capital Laws, he thought it his Duty to humble himſelf unto her Majeſties Mercy. For the better acquiring whereof, he knew none who gave him greater Comfort, or Hope of Favour, or Help, than his Honourable Lordſhip: Partly, in reſpect of the great Favour he had found at his Lordſhips Hands heretofore; and partly, for the honourable Favour and Goodwill which he knew his Lordſhip bare unto his poor Houſe and Family. But that chiefly for that always his poor Father had a ſpecial Affection unto him.

“That his Religion and Order ſet apart, (both which might make him ſeem odious unto her Majeſty, and contemptible unto his Honour) he proteſted, that no Man living could impeach him with the leaſt Fault that might be offenſive unto her Highneſs, or hurtful to the State, ---- That he did bear as humble and dutiful Mind unto his gracious Queen and Sovereign, as any Subject “might or could. For that, beſides his natural Duty he owed unto her Majeſty both before God, and in Conſcience, her Graces particular Favours, and bountiful Rewards towards the Maintenance of his poor Father, bound him always in Heart to honour and love her. That he hated from his Heart always the Company of thoſe, were they of his own Religion, or otherwiſe, that would pretend to practiſe any Thing againſt her Majeſties Perſon. And that if any ſuch whatſoever were ſo convicted by Law, he thought them worthy of their Deſerving.

“That in Places of his Travail beyond the Seas, where Men were moſt prone to open their Stomacks, if any diſhonoured, or miſtermed her Majeſties Royal Perſon, he contemned them, controwled them, and kept them (unleſs by neceſſity he were conſtrained) no longer Company. That ſince his coming into his Country, where he had converſed, being Prieſt, for the Space of 4 or 5 Years, he had at home ſo behaved himſelf, as he had neither ſpoken, written, nor practiſed any Thing offenſive to her Majeſty, or hurtful to the State, the Zeal of his Function only excepted. Which he had done ſo ſeldom and ſo warily, as poſſibly he could deviſe.

“This being true, as he proteſted before his Lord God to be true; and perceiving, how gracious her Majeſty was enclined even to thoſe of his own Profeſſion, as were not Capital Offenders, otherwiſe than in Matters of meer Religion and Conſcience, he conceived ſome Hope, that the Rigor of her Majeſties Laws would not be extended towards him, without other Special Cauſe of Offence: That he had obtained Licence from the Right Worſhipful Mr. *Young*, [a Juſtice of Peace in *London*, who it ſeems, had committed him] to addreſs his humble Letters unto his Honour. Theſe were therefore moſt humbly upon his Knees to crave ſuch Favour at his Lordſhips Hands, as it might pleaſe God, her Majeſty and his Honours good liking, to have extended to a Man of his Quality and Condition, the like Favour whatſoever, he ſhould, during his Life, pray Almighty God, that his Lordſhip might find at the Tribunal Seat of the Omnipotent Majeſty, *&c.*

“That Matters of Import he had none, becauſe he never liſted to be acquainted with any. That if hereafter he heard of any, I bind myſelf, [theſe are his Words] if they ſhall concern her Majeſties Perſon, or the Subverſion of my Country, that I ſhall in moſt faithful and dutiful Manner, reveal them unto you. Thus moſt humbly he took his Leave, from the Place of his Impriſonment. Subſcribing,

Your Honours poor Suppliant and Orator during Life,

Anth. Tyrrel.

Tyrrel ſoon after repenteth, declaims againſt his falſe Religion, that led him into ſuch diſloyal and wicked Practices; makes great Diſcoveries of Fugitives, and the fatal Enemies of the Queen and Kingdom: Unleſs Hypocriſy were all this while at the Bottom. For

ANNO 1586.

thus I leave him to declare himſelf in another Letter writ in *Auguſt*, a Month after the former, to the ſaid Lord in theſe Words:

Tyrrels *Letter, for a Diſcovery of treaſonable Practices.*

"Right Honourable, I am eſpecially moved to have Recourſe ſtill unto your good Lordſhip. The Cauſe importeth not a little, for it concerneth her Majeſty, the State of her whole Realm, and myſelf. Her Majeſty, for that I am to diſcover a Number of treaſonable Practices, that have been directly committed againſt her; whereby her Majeſties Perſon may ſafely be preſerved by the rooting out of the corrupt and wicked Members. Her whole Realm, to be made moſt ſafe and proſperous. For myſelf, to be delivered from the Tyrannical Bondage of her Capital Enemy, the Pope. To whom for theſe 25 Years, I have been made a Slave and Subject, loſt the Favour of my gracious Sovereign and Prince; undutifully demeaned myſelf unto her Majeſties Laws; unnaturally behaved myſelf towards my Country, by corrupting many of her Highneſſes Subjects with falſe and erroneous Doctrines. All which Guilt being laid upon my Conſcience, it hath pleaſed Almighty God, of his infinite Mercy, moſt ſtrangely, yea, I may ſay, miraculouſly, to call me home.

"Theſe may be therefore, moſt humbly on my Knees, to beſeech your Honour to favour a true Penitent. The Reſidue of my Life, it may pleaſe her Majeſty to accept it, ſhall make ſuch a Satisfaction as never any of my Condition have done in her Majeſties Time. When I come before your Honour, you ſhall find, that I do not feign; and ſhall be able to certify your Honour of that, of the which you ſhall be full fain [*i. e.* glad.] I leave troubling your Honour any further; hoping your Honour will vouchſafe your Honourable Audience. And until then, for her Majeſties Behalf, to let none of her corrupt Subjects, of my Letters have any Intelligence. I reſt,

Tour Honours moſt humble and

Dutiful Servitor,

Anth. Tyrell.

By theſe ſolemn Proteſtations, Promiſes and Diſcoveries, whatſoever they were, whether in Truth or Pretence, *Tyrrel* ſoon after obtained his Liberty: For I meet with another Letter of his to the foreſaid Nobleman, dated in *December*, from his Chamber in the *Strand*. The Contents whereof was, to ſhew himſelf firm and ſteddy to what he had avowed; his deſire to come to the Court, (at leaſt, if for nothing elſe) to return his Thanks. And that his Reſolution was not to ſwerve, but to make it his Buſineſs to obſerve his Faith to God and his Prince. But take the Letter itſelf in the Words of it; being but ſhort.

Promiſeth to obſerve his Lordſhips Inſtructions.

"That he had been deſirous long ere that Time to have ſhewn ſome Signs of Duty, ſince the enjoying of his Liberty, in yielding of Thanks at the leaſt, *&c.* That his Lordſhip had with a moſt favourable Pity began to tender his poor diſtreſſed Caſe.

ANNO 1586. " And that he ſhould be ſorry to ſhew himſelf ſlack to deſerve, " from whence he had received ſo great Grace; by whom all good " Minds were governed, and all laudable Actions directed.

" That Mr. Juſtice *Young* will inform your Honour, how carefully I proceed in well demeaning myſelf, ---- If I ſhould any " ways ſwerve from the right Square of your Directions, I covet to " be certified. To pleaſe all Parties is a Thing impoſſible. I have " choſen therefore rather to ſerve God, than *Mammon* ---- If for " my Faith to God, and my Prince, I fortune to find [reproach] I " ſhall repute it rather a Grace than Ignominy. The Fear of God, " and the true Love of my Prince, hath obtained this Conqueſt of " Fleſh and Bloud.

But now to ſee more fully and evidently this falſe Man, he revealed all in a Letter to the Queen, after his Revocation of what he had confeſſed, and his Return to his old Religion, being now at Liberty. Whereby he had juſtly fallen under her Diſpleaſure. In his ſaid Letter he diſclaims his Recantation; aſſerts all a Falſhood what he had declared againſt Dr. *Allen*, and other Prieſts and *Jeſuits:* Having been employed after his Recantation, as a Spy againſt *Catholicks*. This confident Letter began thus: " If ever your Majeſties Pity enclined unto the Complaint of a ſorrowful and diſtreſſed Subject, vouchſafe, O Gracious Queen, as to encline to mine: " Who craves no more at your Highneſſes Hands, than that you " peruſe theſe Letters, *&c.*" 'Tis very long, but well worthy the reading, to let Light into the Popiſh Practices, and particularly to ſhew more at large what a ſort of Man this Prieſt was. And therefore I lay it in the *Appendix*, to be read there; only let me mention here the Reaſon he aſſigns of his Converſion to the Proteſtant Religion; which is ſomewhat ſurpriſing, as he hath the Confidence to tell it to the Queen in his own Letter, *viz.* Numb. XV.

The Reaſon of his Converſion.

" That when he firſt came into the Kingdom, if he had had a " thouſand Lives, he would have loſt them all, for the Defence of " the Truth of his Religion. And ſo long as the Fear of God was " before his Eyes, he ſo continued; and had never changed, nor " forſaken his Faith. And ſo had done in ſpight of all the Devils " in Hell, or Torments by Men. But that he, falling into Corruption of Life, and diſſolute Manners, and ſuffering himſelf " to be drowned in Senſuality; the Grace of the Holy Ghoſt could " no longer abide with him, his Conſcience crying out againſt his " own Impiety, the Devils ſeized him and ſo expunged his Faith: " Not, for that he knew his Religion to be evil, but becauſe he " knew himſelf to be paſſing naught; as that God, nor any Goodneſs could any longer abide in him." Of this fickle Man we ſhall hear again under the next Year; when he was again taken up, and recanted a ſecond Time, and that openly at *Pauls Croſs*, from his Popery. And it ſeems obtained again ſo much Favour as to be admitted into St. *Katharines*. For from thence I find afterwards ſome Letters of his dated.

Papiſts had been executed (when ſo much Fear was juſtly apprehended from them) according to ſome Laws made againſt them. But this gave occaſion of great Clamours of Rigours and Cruelties uſed to thoſe of that Religion by the preſent Government. Therefore it was thought convenient, to manifeſt to all, how juſt and neceſſary thoſe Proceedings were: And that by the Laws of the Land. I meet with divers Tracts and Diſcourſes to this Purport made in theſe Times, among certain *MSS.* in *Lambeth*, called *Memoirs of Affairs in Church and State:* Collected, as it ſeems, by *Murgatrode*, Archbiſhop *Whitgifts* Secretary. Whereof one Diſcourſe went on this Head, "*That ſuch Papiſts as had been executed, were by a* "*Statute of* Edw. III. *lawfully executed, as Traitors.* This ſeems to have been a Speech made in the Houſe of Lords, or in ſome other Venerable Aſſembly; and that by Archbiſhop *Whitgift* himſelf, or by ſome other learned Divine, there being ſo much *Latin* and Allegation of the antient Fathers and Writers mentioned. This I have taken Notice of under the Year 1585; and ſo much the rather, ſince it will give us the Hiſtory of *Rome*, and the Methods of that Church to overthrow this Kingdom through the Courſe of Queen *Elizabeths* Reign to that Time.

The juſt Proceedings in the Execution of Papiſts.

Memoirs in Lambeth.

Chap. XXII.

There was in the ſame Volume another Diſcourſe of this Subject, *viz.* That *Jeſuits* may lawfully be baniſhed. And upon Contempt of ſuch Proceedings may be executed; and the Receivers of them puniſhed ſeverely. This and one or two more are mentioned in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. But beſides theſe, there are many Caſes handled and diſcuſſed, (as well for the Queens Satisfaction, in her Proceedings, as in Vindication of the State,) in the ſame Volume: And were ſeaſonable, while the Publick, and eſpecially the eſtabliſhed Church, was in ſuch dangerous Circumſtances, by reaſon of the Conſpiracies and Endeavours of the Diſaffected. As, 1. A Caſe, *Whether* her Majeſty be bound by the Scripture to aſſiſt the *United Provinces*, againſt the King of *Spain*. 2. Another was intitled, *Reaſons* of Magiſtrates in general; how they were inſtituted, and ought to be obeyed. 3. Another carried this Title. *A perfect Definition* of a King; and what his Office and Government is over his People. 4. *The old Order* of the *Romans*, when either their chief Governor was dead, or abſent by Reaſon of War. 5. That *we ought* firſt to ſeek the true Worſhip of God, and the Preſervation of his Church. 6. *Our Duty* to her Majeſty, and Care of her Defence and Safety. 7. *Our Duty* to our Country, and Preſervation of the ſame againſt bad Subjects. 8. *The Judgment of God* againſt Kings, for diſturbing the Church. [Applicable to the King of *Spain*.] 9. *That Princes* by Mulct may uſe Compulſion againſt Hereticks, [in juſtification of the pecuniary Puniſhments laid upon Papiſts for not coming to Church.] 10. *If any Violence* be attempted againſt Princes, the Treaſon may rightly touch them, who gape for the Crown. [Intimating thereby the Queen of *Scots*.] 11. *Of Ambition*, of Treaſon and Traitors. 12. *Malum in authores plerumque recidit.* 13. *Sentences* of Scripture to be applied to the Queen. 14. *Not lawful* for a Subject to kill or reſiſt his Prince. 15. *In Jeſuitas, authores Seditionum, & ſanguinis.* 16. *Religio Verbum Dei. Via Salutis, Dei cultus.* 17. *The Papiſts Treachery* may appear by three Points: *Viz.* Their ſlanderous Words in their Writings againſt her Majeſty, their treacherous Practices;

Tracts in Vindication of the Queens Proceedings, &c.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. p. 268.

ANNO 1586.

tices; and their fanatical and deviliſh Doctrines. 18. *Certain Places* of Scripture that ſome *Preciſians* uſe, that godly Kings may not only lawfully ſuppreſs the Wicked, but deſtroy all their Children and Allies. For this, in the Diſcourſe, are alledged *Joſhua*, *David*, *Zimri*, *Jehu*. Who uſually cut off and deſtroyed all the Poſterity of thoſe they fought againſt, and were greatly commended. And this Argument uſed here, (the Divinity of it I leave to others to determine) is this.

“ The Law ſaith, Traitors ſhall looſe their Lives and Goods, “ and that the Bloud of their Poſterity is ever after ſtained. And “ why may it not likewiſe as juſtly ſay further, (if the Penalty will “ not ſerve for the Preſervation of Princes) that all their Kin to “ the third and fourth Degree in that Caſe ſhall be executed.” And then is added (to ſoften what was ſaid) “ It were indeed a hard “ Law; but as they ſay, *Graviſſima vulnera acerbiſſimis curantur* “ *remediis*.” This Diſcourſe endeth thus. “ And therefore conſidering, that the Kindred of Traitors are as it were one Body “ with them, or one Fellowſhip, if they ſhall ſhew themſelves likeminded to their Parents; then may they be puniſhed as Traitors. “ If otherwiſe, yet as Adherents in Nature, though not in Fact. This was ſpoke, (as it ſeems) in Parliament, or given as a Counſil againſt the Papiſts, who about theſe Days were ſo full of malicious Plots againſt the Queen, as extorted theſe rigorous Advices from ſome.

Allens *concern with* Stanley *in betraying* Deventer.

Sends to Rome *for Prieſts for this Regiment.*

State of the *Engliſh* Fugitives.

Dr. *Allen* (of whom ſomewhat before) now made a Cardinal, one of theſe implacable Enemies to the preſent State of *England*, was now concerned upon an Affair of this Nature, namely, the Treachery of Sir *William Stanley*, Governor of *Deventer* in *Holland*: Who baſely betrayed it to the King of *Spain*. Which *Allen* confirmed the ſaid *Stanley* and his Regiment there left in Garriſon, with the Receipt of two Months Pay; as was written in a Book printed in the Year 1595; Shewing the Eſtate of the *Engliſh* Fugitives. And moreover this Cardinal wrote to *Rome* on this Emergence, to ſend down certain Prieſts, to inſtruct this religious Regiment. He informed the Pope thereof. Who both wrote jointly unto the King of *Spain*, to be good and gracious unto this Regiment. Which being well and liberally entreated, as they had already been at *Rhemes* and *Rome*, he would encourage a Seminary of Students and Scholars, to pray and write for the Catholick Cauſe of our Country. For this being conducted by ſo worthy and Catholick a Gentleman, as Sir *William Sanley*, might be a continual Nurſe and Seminary of Soldiers to fight for the ſame.

And writes a Book for them.

And withal the Cardinal wrote a Book unto the Captain and Soldiers of this Regiment: Endeavouring therein to ſatisfy their Conſciences, as touching the Juſtice of this Action, [of betraying *Deventer*] and likewiſe animating them, conſtantly to perſevere in this good Cauſe, into the which they were now entred. Beſides, down came Prieſts thick and threefold from *France* and *Italy*, catechiſing theſe new Soldiers with many Maſſes, and continual Sermons. And generally, Men that for their Conſcience lay diſperſed in other Parts, all drew down thither, in hope of this good Payment, and

Golden World, that was there talked of. But by Reaſon of a Contention that happened between *Stanley* and *Rowland York*, that had about the ſame Time betrayed *Zutphen* to the *Spaniard*, all this came to nought.

ANNO 1586.

CHAP. VII.

Travers *acquaints the Lords of the Council with his Lectures at the* Temple, *and Conference with* Hooker, *upon ſome Points. A Religious Company complained of to the Archbiſhop, for certain Opinions. What they were. One* Darrel *pretends to caſt out Devils.* White, *an Enthuſiaſt Anabaptiſt, calls himſelf* John a Baptiſt. *His Examination. Diſcourſes in Parliament againſt the Diſciplinarian Model. A Dearth.* Whitaker *and others ſtand for to ſucceed* Howland *in the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College. Puritans in* Chriſts *College. That College viſited. They refuſe the Injunctions of the Viſitor.*

Travers, *Lecturer of the* Temple, *ſilenced.*

THE Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* had lately ſilenced *Travers*, the Lecturer of the Temple, a learned Man, but ſomewhat diſaffected to the Church eſtabliſhed. The Cauſe of it was, to put a ſtop to a Courſe uſed in his Lectures, to confute in the Afternoon the Doctrine that Mr. *Hooker*, the Maſter of the Temple, preached in the Morning. Which tending to little good but to create Differences and Factions, the Archbiſhop thought fit to forbid *Travers* to preach any more there. This Buſineſs hath been ſhewn more at large in the Life of that Archbiſhop.

Book III. *Ch.* 16.

His Supplication to the Queens *Council.*

Hookers *Doctrine charged to be unſound.*

But ſoon after *Travers* applied to the Council, to be reſtored to his Lecture, in a *Supplication* to the Lords, declaring at large the Cauſe of the Contention between them, in relation to the unſound Doctrines by the Maſter of the Temple preached: Which he briefly thus repreſented to them. “That he had diſcovered ſundry unſound Matters in his [*Hookers*] Doctrine. And that many of his “Sermons taſted of ſome ſower Leaven or other. That Matters of “ſmaller Weight, and ſo covertly diſcourſed, that no great Offence “to the Church was to be feared in them. And thoſe he wholly “paſt by. But others of greater Moment, and ſo openly delivered, “as there was juſt Cauſe of Fear, leaſt the Truth and Church of “God ſhould be prejudiced and perilled by it, and ſuch as the Conſcience of his Duty and Calling, would not ſuffer him altogether “to paſs over; this was his Courſe; to deliver, when he had juſt

“ Cauſe by the Text, the Truth of ſuch Doctrines as he had otherwiſe taught in general Speeches, without Touch of his Perſon in any Sort; and ſometime, at convenient Opportunity, conferred with him in ſuch Points.

Predeſtination.

“ Thus whereas *Hooker* had taught certain Things concerning *Predeſtination*, otherwiſe than the Word of God did, as it was underſtood by all Churches profeſſing the Goſpel, and not unlike that, wherewith *Coranus* ſometime troubled the Church; he ſaid, he both delivered the Truth in ſuch Points in a general Doctrine, without any Touch of him in particular: And conferred alſo with him, privately upon ſuch Articles. In which Conference he remembered that when he urged the Conſent of all Churches, and good Writers againſt him, *Hooker* anſwered him, that *his beſt Author was his own Reaſon*. Which then he [*Travers*] wiſhed him to take Heed of, as a Matter ſtanding with Chriſtian Modeſty and Wiſdom, in a Doctrine not received by the Church; not to truſt to his own Judgment, ſo far to practiſe it, before he had conferred with others of his Profeſſion; labouring by daily Prayer and ſtudy, to know the Will of God, (as he [*Travers*] did) to ſee how they underſtood ſuch Doctrines. Notwithſtanding, added *Travers*, with wavering he replyed, that he would ſome other Time deal more largely in that Matter.

Aſſurance.

“ That another Time he preached this Doctrine, that the Aſſurance that we believe by the Word is not ſo certain, as of that we perceive by Senſe. But that he, [*Traverſe*] taught the Doctrine otherwiſe; namely, the *Aſſurance* of Faith to be greater: Which aſſured both of Things above, and contrary to all humane Senſe, and Underſtanding. And that he dealt with him alſo upon that Point.

The Church of Rome *a true Church.*

Again, (as he went on in his Declaration to the Lords,) “ That he anſwered *Hooker* in another Point, which he delivered in his Sermon: Which was, that he taught that the *Church of* Rome *was a true Church of* Chriſt; and a ſanctified Church by Profeſſion of the Truth which God revealed unto us by his Son, though not a pure and perfect Church, *&c.* To which *Travers*, thus anſwered, That it was a Matter of that Moment to deliver, that it might prejudice the Faith of *Chriſt*; encourage the evil affected, to continue ſtill in their damnable Ways, and other weak in Faith to ſuffer themſelves eaſily to be ſeduced, to the Deſtruction of their Souls, *&c.* All the reſt that follows in *Travers Supplication* in relation to the Controverſy between him and the Maſter of the *Temple*, I omit. But what ſufficient Anſwer he made for himſelf in each Particular may be ſeen in his Works: Making the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* his Judge, “ Offering to his Graces Hands a plain Declaration of his Innocence, as he wrote, in all theſe Things, whereof he was ſo hardly and ſo heavily charged; leſt if he ſtill remained ſilent, that which he did for Quietneſs ſake, be taken as an Argument that he lacked what to ſpeak truly and juſtly in his own Defence.

There

ANNO 1586.

A Religious Company complained of to the Archbiſhop, for ſome Opinions.

There was a religious Aſſembly now taken Notice of; (whereof one *Glover* was a Chief, and, as it ſeems, a Miniſter) complained of, for their Opinions, to the Archbiſhop. Which *Glover* with ſome others impriſoned. But whatſoever this Society was, they ſeemed ſo excuſable to the Lord Treaſurer *Burhgley*, that he wrote a Letter to the Archbiſhop in their Favour. For which the ſaid *Glover* writ to him a Letter of Thanks. In which Letter may be ſeen, what their Tenets and Doctrines were, namely, about the Senſe of *Juſtification* and *Predeſtination*; Followers perhaps of Dr. *Peter Baro*, late *Margaret* Profeſſor in *Cambridge*, and *Corranus* before him. I chuſe to repeat *Glovers* Letter, as I find it; dated in *April* this Year.

Glover *one of them, his Letter, ſhewing their Doctrines.*

“ Ackowledging myſelf moſt highly bound unto your Honour, in that you would vouchſafe, for us poor and contemptible Perſons, to write ſo graciouſly unto the Archbiſhop. Theſe are to repay what poor Recompence and Thanks I am able: Wiſhing unto your Lordſhip the moſt Good I can; though I am of Power to do none: And praying to God moſt heartily for the ſame.

“ Alſo, to prevent ſiniſter Information, I think it moſt needful to explain truly and briefly unto your Wiſdom, the capital Points for the which we ſuffer: And wherein if we can be proved to erre, we require to be reformed by Reaſon, and not by Rigour.

“ The firſt and chiefeſt is, in that we teach, that all Men to be juſtified, muſt come to *Chriſt*; who is only and wholly our Remiſſion and Juſtification, by the Way of true Faith and Repentance, or Amendment of Life. As *John Baptiſt* teacheth: And not by Faith only; as *Luther* of late hath taught.

“ The Second is, that God hath from the Beginning choſen in *Chriſt*, and predeſtinate none to be in the State of Salvation for that Time as they are not predeſtinate to be in the State of Charity, and true Repentance. As Mr. *Calvin* newly hath written.

“ The Third and laſt, that the Vinyard of God, and Church of *Chriſt* is not given to ſuch who profeſs in Words only; but only to ſuch, who bring forth the Fruits thereof in their Seaſons.

“ For the diſcuſſing whereof we referr ourſelves to the due Tryal and Examination of the Word eſpecially: As alſo to the Authority of antient Fathers agreeable thereunto. By the which if we ſhall be convict before indifferent Judges in an open Aſſembly, we offer ourſelves willingly to be reformed, or elſe refuſe no Puniſhment. Humbly beſeeching all in Authority, that we may find this End, which Thieves, Murtherers, and all Malefactors find: To wit, That our Accuſers and Adverſaries may not be our Judges. That our Cauſes may not be determined of in Corners. That they may not handle us as they liſt themſelves. And ſo ſhall we not have the Cauſe we have juſtly to complain of their Iniquity and Tyranny. The Lord *Jeſus* preſerve you and yours from all Evil for ever, *Amen*. Subſcribing,

Your Humble Orator,

Edward Glover.

I have

ANNO
1586.

One Darrel *pretends to caſt out Devils.*

I have a few Remarks to make here of two *Enthuſiaſts*, or rather Cheats and Deceivers. The one was named *Joh. Dayrel*, or *Darrel*, Batchelor of Arts, ſoon after a Miniſter, of the preciſer Sort, about three or four and twenty Years of Age: Who pretended to have caſt out a Devil out of one *Katharine Wright*, a young Wench about ſeventeen, living in *Darbiſhire*. And after upon a Return of the evil Spirit into her, he caſt out eight Devils more, with which ſhe was pretended to be poſſeſſed. A Hiſtory whereof *Darrel* writ at large, and communicated ſome Copies thereof to ſeveral Perſons: and among the reſt to the Lady *Bowes*. Hoping to get Applauſe, and compaſs other Ends hereby. We hear little more of him and of his Feats, till 9 or 10 Years after, about the Year 1596. And out of a great many more pretendedly poſſeſſed Perſons *Darrel* caſt out their Devils: As, out of a Boy in *Burton*, called *Tho. Darling*, about 14 Years old. Whereof another Book was penned by a Saddler in that Town Confederate, as it ſeems with him. Which Book was reviſed and contracted by one *Deniſon*, a Miniſter: And then publiſhed in Print: And called, *The Book of the Diſpoſſeſſion of the Boy of Burton.* This ſpread *Darrels* Fame throughout the Country. So that afterwards he was ſent for in *Lancaſhire* unto Mr. *Starkie* there. In whoſe Houſe were ſeven Perſons poſſeſſed with as many Devils: All which he caſt out. Whereof one was called *Anne Aſhton.* Who after fell into the Hands of certain Seminary Prieſts, (thinking how by her Tricks ſhe might be of Service to them) and was carried by them up and down the Country to ſundry Recuſants Houſes: And by her cunning counterfeiting of certain Fits, and ſtaying herſelf for the ſecret Directions of the ſaid Prieſts; ſhe had her Gains; and the Prieſts gained great Credit to them and their Doctrine among the ignorant People.

There was alſo one *Sommers* of *Nottingham*, a Youth likewiſe, with whom this Wonder-working Man had much ado by Reaſon of his violent Fits, to Maſter the unclean Spirit that acted him. But diſpoſſeſt he was at laſt. Many Friends this Impoſtor had, pretending to do all by Prayer and Faſting. In ſhort, he was at laſt ſummoned up to *Lambeth*, with one *Moor*, another Miniſter that held with him, before the Archbiſhop and Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical: And found a groſs Impoſtor; and committed both to cloſe Priſon. A particular Relation of all this was ſet forth afterwards in a Book by Dr. *S. Harſuet*, who was Chaplain to Biſhop *Bancroft*; expoſing the Man and his Cheats and Impoſtures.

One gives out himſelf to be John Baptiſt.

Another ſuch an Impoſtor was one *John White*, a Shoemaker of *Raleigh* in *Eſſex*, an *Anabaptiſt*, or of the Sect of the *Family of Love:* Who held himſelf to be *John Baptiſt:* And gave out very odd and vile Speeches under Pretence of Religion. The Report of this Man ſpread. And at laſt it was thought convenient to the Magiſtrate to call him, and thoſe he pretended to teach, into Examination. Which take as I find it in one of the Bundles of Paper in the Kings *Paper-houſe*, *Weſtminſter.*

The Examination of John White *of* Raleigh, *Shoemaker*; *Aged* 24. *Taken by* Arthur Herrys, *Juſtice of the Peace, living at* Woodham Mortymer, *Oct.* 1586.

Depoſitions taken concerning him.

“ That he came to the Shop of one *John Warley* of *Raleigh*.
“ And ſaid to *John Young* in the ſaid Shop, I come to do you good.
“ The ſaid *J. Young*, Examinate, aſked him, What good? He re-
“ plyed, You can never glorify God aright, until you have fulfilled
“ all your Luſts. He aſked him, What they were? Ye muſt, ſaith
“ he, if yee have a Mind to a Woman, marry her. If ye like her
“ not, put her away and take another. If you like not her, take
“ a Third. And ſo as many as ye can. And when ye can obtain
“ no more, take Maids, and take away their Beauty, meaning, to
“ deflower them, as this Examinate underſtood him. The Exami-
“ nate aſked him, What Warrant he had for theſe Things? He
“ anſwered, *David* could never ſee his Sins, until ſuch Time as he
“ had fulfilled all his Luſt; nor *Solomon*, until ſuch Time as he had
“ accompliſhed all his Deſire. To this the other anſwered, that
“ this was contrary to the Word and Law of God, and that he fal-
“ ſified the Scripture. The other anſwered, What have we to do
“ with the Law? The Goſpel is above the Law. To this the Ex-
“ aminate ſaid again, that the Lord would judge us according to the
“ Rigour of his Law, unleſs we endeavoured by all poſſible Means
“ to fulfil it. I think, ſaith this Examinate, ye are an *Anabaptiſt*,
“ or one of the *Family of Love*. To this the other ſaid, If ye had ſaid
“ a *John of Baptiſt*, ye had ſaid right. For there was but one be-
“ fore *Chriſt*, and another after.

Calls himſelf John o. Baptiſt.

“ Theſe Speeches ended, *John Warely*, the Maſter of this Exami-
“ nate, called him away; and willed the other to depart from the
“ Shop, ſaying, that he was not the Man he took him for.

“ At the ſame Time another Perſon preſent depoſed, That he ſaid,
“ It is good for you to take Time, while it laſts. Go into the Gar-
“ dens, and ſee all the Herbs. For *Time* is the braveſt Herb that
“ groweth. Our Queen ſhall live but a little while. She will be
“ gone ere Summer come.

“ Another Shoemaker of *Raleigh* depoſed, that this *John Young*,
“ alias *Snelling*, came as a Stranger to offer Service to him, who took
“ him into Service about a Month laſt paſt. And that for that
“ Month he behaved himſelf orderly, until *Wedneſday* laſt in the
“ Morning, he began to enter into a vain Talk *Lunatickly*; altoge-
“ ther touching Divinity, and Matter of Religion. That he went
“ from his Shop down the Street, to the Shop of a Neighbour of
“ his. Where he had ſome Speeches: For which he was appre-
“ hended. [Which Speeches, as it ſeems were concerning the ſud-
den Death of the Queen, as he had heard from the abovesaid En-
thuſiaſt.]

“ Then *John White* examined ſaid, That being at *Warlies* Shop,
“ he prayed that God would take away, for the Sins of the People,
“ our good Prince. That the People for their Sins might be puniſh-
“ ed with ſome Tyrant. And being touched concerning other of his

“ Speeches makes no certain Anſwer: But behaveth himſelf in Word
“ and Geſtures *Lunatickly*. Then follows:

Judged Lunatic.

Arthur Herrys ſent this Examination to the Lord Chancellor *Bromeley*, to know his Order what to do with the Man; but concludeth him *Lunatic*, or of imperfect Senſe. Whether ſo indeed, or but fained, he knew not certainly. But if he might utter his Opinion, he thought him to be a Man over-ſtudied with *Anabaptiſtical* Conceits. And therewithal partly entered into Lunacy or Frenzy.

Diſcourſes in Parliament againſt the Diſciplinarian Model.
Book III. *Ch.* 17.

This Year the *Diſciplinarians* ſtruggled hard in Parlament for a Reformation of the preſent Church, according to their Model prepared and offered in the Houſe. Some Account whereof was given in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. Many were the Speeches and Diſcourſes *pro* and *con* then delivered. The Heads of ſome of them in Behalf of the eſtabliſhed Church, and againſt any Innovations to be introduced, were theſe. That the preſent Form of our Eccleſiaſtical Government in *England* is both godly and neceſſary. Another Head of Diſcourſe was, That the Ordinances of our Church, and the Means appointed for the Execution are good and commendable. Another, That if any thing be generally amiſs in Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, it appertaineth, under her Majeſty, to the Clergy in the Convocation Houſe, or Synod, to be reformed. Another Head of Diſcourſe was, that when Orders are agreed upon by the Clergy, and confirmed by her Majeſty, thoſe Men ought to be puniſhed that wilfully oppoſe themſelves, and will not obey them. Another went on this Head, certain Miſchiefs enſuing the *Puritans* Demands and Platform. And laſtly, another, intitled, *The Errors and Untruths in the Bill exhibited for a Reformation.* Theſe Arguments, and other, ſuch like, may be found and read in a Volume in the *Lambeth* Library, endorſed, *Memoirs*, in Archbiſhop *Whitgifts* Time.

A Dearth. The Cauſe thereof.

The Queens Proclamation.

And as theſe Controverſies about Religion made Diſcontents and Diſturbances among the Queens Subjects; ſo there happened now a Matter of another Nature, that gave many of them Trouble and Diſtreſs, and that was a great Dearth. Proviſion for Food grown ſcarce, and the Prizes of Victuals enhanced; by reaſon of very unſeaſonable Weather the laſt Year, and now by with-holding Corn and Proviſion, and not bringing it to the Markets by Means of Engroſſers. The Queen moved with a Compaſſion towards her poorer Sort of Subjects, iſſued forth her Proclamation, *Jan.* the 2. to remedy this as much as ſhe could, by requiring Corn-Maſters to ſell their Corn, and appointing Victuals to be ſold at reaſonable Prices, ſet down.

“ Declaring therein, how the Dearth was in ſundry Parts of the
“ Realm, firſt grown by the Viſitation of Almighty God in the Al-
“ teration of ſeaſonable Weather in the laſt Year. Which yet was
“ not ſo extream in this Realm, as in many other Countries adjoin-
“ ing; whereof the Dearth was by many Occaſions known mani-
“ feſtly to be far greater, than it was in this Realm hitherto; or
“ by Gods Goodneſs like to be.

“ That it was manifeſtly known, the ſaid Dearth to have been
“ wilfully increaſed in very many Places of the Realm, not only by

" and through the Covetouſneſs of many Engroſſers of Corn, and Corn-" Maſters, but alſo by unlawful Tranſportation of Grain; and lack " alſo of Preſervation of Store in Time requiſite.

" The Queen acknowledged this Manner of Gods Mercy, and Favour, in a more favourable Meaſure towards her Country and " her People, than in any other foreign Parts adjoyning; and that " ſhe thought good and neceſſary for a further Remedy againſt the uncharitable Covetouſneſs of the Corn-Maſters, as Cauſe ſhould require, " to notify, that if ſuch, as were great Corn-Maſters and Owners of " Grain, or of other neceſſary Victually for Food of the Poor, ſhould " not be willing, or did not perform certain Orders that ſhe intended " to ſet forth, whereby the poorer Sort might be relieved in the Markets at reaſonable Prizes; or that it ſhould appear, that other needful Victuals ſhould by Covetouſneſs of any Perſon, grow to exceſſive Prices, to the pinching of the poorer Sort: She did hereby " ſignify, that ſhe would not only ſeverely puniſh the Offenders " for their cruel Covetouſneſs and Offences againſt her Orders; but " would alſo for the exceſſive Prizes of other needful Victuals, give " Order, that reaſonable Prizes ſhould be ſet both on Corn and other " Victuals, to be ſold for the Relief of her Majeſties poor Subjects, " according to both her Prerogative Royal, and to the Order of Juſtice as by ſpecial Law of Parliament therefore made in the 25th " Year of the Reign of her late Noble and Dear Father King *Henry* " VIII. was eſpecially in ſuch Caſes provided. Given at *Greenwich*, " the 2. of *January*, 1586. in the 29. Year of her Reign.

But this ſpecial Order for ſetting particular Prices for the ſelling of all Sorts of Corn and Grain, and all other Victuals, I do not find added in this Declaration, till the Year 1588. and then joined to another at large.

The Preamble to the Queens Proclamation abovеſaid, ſhewed her Princely Affection and tender Compaſſion towards her poor Subjects: which enclineth me to add it here, *viz.*

The Queens Affection to her poor Subjects.

" That ſhe foreſeeing the general Dearth grown of Corn, and " other Victuals, partly through the Unſeaſonableneſs of the Year " paſt; whereby Want had grown more in ſome Countries than in " others; and moſt of all generally through the Covetouſneſs, and " uncharitable Greedineſs of ſuch as were great Corn-Maſters and " Engroſſers of Corn; uſing all ſubtil Means they could to work " their own preſent and unconſcionable Gain againſt the Rules of " Charity; which her Majeſty of her princely Care and Love towards her People, utterly condemned, and earneſtly deſired to remedy, for the Relief of the poorer Sort; and therefore out of her " ſaid princely Care toward all her People, having, with the " Advice of her Council, had good Conſideration hereof, did by " her Proclamation give expreſs Commandment and Charge unto " all ſuch, unto whom it ſhall or might appertain, that ſuch good " Orders as her Majeſty had commanded to be deviſed for that Purpoſe, and now alſo ſent into all Parts of her Realm, be diligently " and effectually put in ſpeedy Execution, ſignifying to all her good " and loving Subjects, that if any ſhould be found obſtinate or

“ negligent in the due Execution; or otherwiſe Obſervation thereof; that then upon due Information and Proof thereof made unto her Highneſs Council, which ſhe required not to be ſpared by any having juſt Cauſe of Complaint, for reſpect of any Perſon, ſhe had given ſpecial Command and Order, that they ſhould be ſpeedily called to anſwer; and thereupon according to the Quality of their Offences, they ſhould receive ſharp Puniſhment. Whereby others might take Example to avoid the like Contempt, Negligences, and other Defaults.

But now to deſcend to Matters leſs publick happening this Year in the Univerſity.

Whitaker *ſtands for the Maſterſhip of St.* Johns *College, in* Cambr.

Dr. *Howland* had for ſome Time held the Maſterſhip of St. *Johns* College in *Cambridge*, with his Biſhoprick of *Peterburgh*. Nor wanted there ſuch in the College as looked earneſtly to ſuccede: And namely, *Watſon* and *Stanton*, according as both Parties had their Friends in the College: And alſo Dr. *Whitaker* of *Trinity* College, the Queens Public Profeſſor of Divinity. For whom the Lord *Burghley*, ſometime of St. *Johns* College, and ſtyled a Patron to it, was concerned: Knowing him a learned and ſober Man. And the Biſhop of *Peterburgh* held the Maſterſhip the longer, till a favourable Opportunity might preſent, for the Election of him or ſome other worthy Man. The Biſhop being now deſirous to reſign, as finding it too difficult to take that due Care of the College, and his See alſo, as was requiſite, ſignified his Mind to the ſaid Lord: And the rather now, the College that in former Times was in great Diſorders, being pretty well quieted. The Biſhop was then at the College, when he wrote his Letter declaring his Intent; and wherein this preſent College Affair appearing more plainly, I ſhall give the Tenor of it from the Original before me.

Biſhop Howland, *Maſter of the* College *to the L.* Burghley, *concerning* Whitakers *Intereſt.*

“ That he could not enter ſo far into the Affection of the College, for Mr. *Whitaker*, as he purpoſed. But yet ſo far he went, that he was fully perſuaded, he might be choſen by Voice: But not without a ſtrong Faction for Mr. *Watſon*, as was pretended, but he thought in Truth for Mr. *Stanton*. Which as he added, would greatly hinder the Government, and alter the quiet State of the College: The Good whereof he knew his Lordſhip did greatly tender. And that therefore if it ſhould pleaſe his Lordſhip, at his next Return, which ſhould be before *Michaelmas*, God willing to vouchſafe his Letters unto the Fellows in Favour of Mr. *Whitaker*, upon his relinquiſhing the Place, he did not doubt to draw them if not to a general Conſent, yet not to repugne the ſame at the leaſt. That ſo it will appear what Courſe was to be taken; whereupon he would not only give over the Place, but do what further his Lordſhip will him herein.

“ For that beſides his Honourable Care for the Man and College, he found it chargeable unto him to keep two Places; either Place beſides requiring a whole Man. Nor that was it his Mind ever to keep it any longer, than to make things fit for his Lordſhips Determination; and to leave the ſame with Credit. Humbly praying, that God would ſtill bleſs them, that it might continue in as good Peace and Quiet as by Gods great Mercies, he ſhould

“ now leave it, the State of *Cambridge* and Studies this Time con“ſidered.

St. Johns *College to the L.* Burghley *upon their Maſters being made Biſhop.*

But to underſtand this Matter better, we muſt go a Year or two back. The Seniors and other Fellows of that College, upon the Advancement of Dr. *Howland* unto the aforeſaid Biſhopric, in a Letter to the Lord *Burghley*, earneſtly expreſt their Deſire for *Whitaker* to be their Maſter in his Room, upon Account of his great Merit. They thanked him for honouring their Maſter, Dr. *Howland*, in raiſing him by his Intereſt to ſo high a Degree in the Church, as that of a Biſhop. They expreſt a great Sorrow to be deprived of him: *Quocum annis multis jam tum magna Collegii dignitate, tranquillè pièque viximus*. And that now the Queen being of Courſe to ſend them a Maſter, having taken the other from them; they were very ſolicitous whom ſhe would ſend them, ſince many were now Candidates. But that they, the Fellows of the Houſe, that wrote this Letter to his Lordſhip, judged, that *Whitaker* was beyond them all. *Unus* Whitakerus, *qui vir, Deus bone! Quantâ Virtute, quàm excellenti Doctrina præditus!* They acknowledged that they did ſometimes in Diſcourſe among themſelves, look on it as a Neglect in him [the Lord *Burghley*] and other great Men of the Court, that they thought no more of preferring this Man.

Whitaker *recommended by them.*

They went on in theſe Words: *Si non eſſet* Whitakerus, *aut ſi noſter non eſſet, aliúmne Athlêtam habemus illi parem, quem* Rhemenſibus *præclariſque* Jeſuitis, *&* *omnibus Papiſtarum Emiſſariis objiceremus?* So that he was now eſteemed the great Champion of the Proteſtant Cauſe. And that whereas about that Time (*viz. An.* 1584.) the Popiſh Scholars did fly up and down the Kingdom, and make great Boaſts, and ſeemed to carry all before them, that they doubted not but by his [this learned Mans] Pains and Aſſiſtance, they ſhould be beaten, and forced to give Place. They added, That he had by his Book, moſt accurately written, and publiſhed, overthrown that whole Stock, and all our Fugitives and Followers of the Pope.

Whitaker lived at this Time in a little Houſe near the College. Which gave theſe Fellows Occaſion to add, *Tantum tali ingenio præditum, tam benè de Eccleſia & Evangelio meritum, inter oppidanos, &c. i. e.* Should we ſuffer ſuch a great Man, furniſhed with ſuch Parts, that hath ſo well deſerved of the Church and the Goſpel, to live in a poor, ſtrait, hired Houſe of his own, among the Townſmen? Shall there be no Place among all theſe large Colleges, to receive him according to his Worth? And ſo they ended earneſtly begging, that *Whitaker* might be their Maſter. There was but Eleven ſubſcribed this Letter: But they ſeemed to be the *Seniors*, whereof *Andrew Downes* was the firſt, who was *Greek* Profeſſor.

But notwithſtanding this earneſt Letter, there was great Oppoſition by others in the College againſt him. And he was choſen with much ado, the Lord *Burghley* reſolving to put him in. But it ſeems upon ſecond Thoughts, and to avoid Contention, it was reſolved that Biſhop *Howland* ſhould continue their Maſter. And ſo he was till *February* 1586. when *Whitaker*, not without Difficulty was elected Maſter. But the Election being dubious, the Matter was determined by the Biſhop of *Ely* and the other Viſitors of the College.

ANNO 1586.

Biſhop Howland *takes ſome Gentlemen of the College with him to* Peterburgh.

But Biſhop *Howland* was this Summer retiring from the College to *Peterburgh*, ſoon after the Commencement; and minded to take along with him ſome young Gentlemen of that College, (to whom the Lord *Burghley* had a more particular Regard, and Overſight) it being now a Time of Leiſure to the Students, and to prevent the danger of Sickneſs in regard of the Multitude and the Heat of Summer, and withal for their Recreation. But the Biſhop thought it adviſable firſt, to obtain that Lords Leave for them. For thus his former Letter concludes: " I am moſt humbly to requeſt your " Lordſhips Favour, (for without it we dare not) that the Earl of " *Southampton*, Mr. *Cecill*, [Lord *Burghleys* Grandſon] and Mr. " *Denny* [Grandſon as it ſeems to Sir *Anthony Denny*, an eminent " Stateſman in King *Henry* and King *Edwards* Reigns] might come " over unto *Peterburgh* for 2 or 3 Weeks, now after the Commence" ment; to the avoiding of our peſtered Houſe in this Heat of " Summer, and for their Recreation. Which I truſt, ſhall be for " their good. Dated from St. *Johns College* the 27th of *June*, " 1586.

Gold *of* Chriſts *College preaches againſt the Croſs.*

MSS. *Acad. Rev.* T. Bak.

Puritaniſm prevailed now in *Chriſts* College: *Gold* and *Uſher* being proceeded with for that Cauſe: *Gold* for a Sermon preached at St. *Maries*. Who was thought, and alſo reported to have ſpoken againſt the *Croſs*, and the Uſe of the ſame, now received in the Church of *England*. For which he was cited before the Vicechancellor and Heads, *June* the 10th. Where before Dr. *Tyndal*, Vicechancellor, and *Fulk*, *Goad*, *Norgate*, and *Lorkin*, he openly proteſted that he had no ſuch Intendment; and that he did not diſallow or condemn the Croſs, or the Sign of the ſame, but thinketh it to be tolerable. *& ſic abſolutus eſt ab ulteriori, &c.*

Regiſt. Acad.

Uſher *of that College, his Trouble.*

The Trouble brought upon *Chriſtopher Uſher*, *A. B.* of the ſame College, was occaſioned from ſome Table-talk between him and *Thomas Bowes*, *A. M.* who had taken ſome Offence at certain Words which paſſed, as he thought, from the ſaid *Chriſtopher*; as derogating from the Queens Majeſties Authority, Preeminence and Title. And thereupon humbly requeſted Dr. *Tyndal*, Vicechancellor, that he would cauſe the ſaid *Chriſtopher* to ſet down, and plainly to expreſs his Meaning in the former Talk. The ſaid *Chriſtopher* for this appeared before the ſaid Vicechancellor, and Mr. Dr. *Still*, Juſtices of the Peace, and of the *Quorum*. He proteſted, that he ſpake no ſuch Words as were laid to his Charge.

Whereupon one *William Prat*, *A. M.* and two more Scholars of the Houſe, then preſent at ſuch Talk, were examined by the Juſtices: Who denied any ſuch Words, as the ſaid *Chriſtopher* was burthened withal, to have been ſpoken or uttered in their Hearing. And further, the ſaid *Tho. Bowes*, being demanded of Mr. Vicechancellor, anſwered and ſaid, that he did believe, that the ſaid *Chriſtopher* did ſpeak theſe Words, which he did lay to his Charge, not of any cankred or malicious Stomach; but only in way of Talk, and raſh *Contradicendi Studio*, rather than for any Thing elſe. Whereupon the ſaid Juſtices, after a godly Exhortation, given unto the ſaid *Chriſtopher*, to be circumſpect and wiſe in talking of

Princes Matters: And to either of them to live in Unity and Peace; diſmiſt the ſaid *Chriſtopher*.

Chriſts College *viſited; upon the Breach of the Statutes.*

I have ſome further Remark to make of this College: This Houſe was this Year found guilty of divers Faults, and Matters that required Inſpection and Redreſs. Inſomuch, that in the Month of *December* Dr. *Copcotts*, being now Vicechancellor, an honeſt, ſtirring Man, and perceiving the Affairs of that College complained of, as mightily out of Order, (almoſt every Statute of the Foundreſs tranſgreſt) proceeded to viſit the College. For the Chancellor of that Univerſity, or his Vicechancellor, was yearly Viſitor of it.

Information of Abuſes practiſed there.

At Dr. *Hawfords* Death, which was in the Year 1579. (who was the former Maſter) there was in their College Treaſury 700 *l.* Of which they laid out 400 *l.* for a Purchaſe. Whereof they raiſed the Fellows Commons to three Shillings a Week, which by Statute was but Twelve Pence. They took no care to reſtore in Time the common Treaſury; or to encreaſe what was left; but took all Commodities of Fines for Leaſes, and of Wood-Sales to themſelves. They had a Dividend at the Bakers Hands, who allowed 15 to the Dozen. The Commodity whereof went to the Fellows. The Scholars Size in that reſpect was the leſs, *&c.* Dr. *Copcots* thought therefore to give Injunctions to the College, and had drawn them up, to the Number of 21. Which he ſent to the Chancellor, entreating him to peruſe, and to amend and ratify them: Aſſerting, that there was not one Clauſe in the Whole, but met with ſome Diſorder or Abuſe, or ſome Breach of Statute.

What Injunctions the Viſitor gave to the College, the Maſter was bound within a Month to ſee them executed: Elſe to be admoniſhed the ſecond Time. If ſtill neglected, it was loſs of his Place. This is the Sum of a Letter to the Chancellor by the Vicechancellor; acquainting him with this College Affair; expecting his Order, and Confirmation of what he had done. Which Letter I have tranſcribed from the Original, and reſerved in the *Appendix*.

Num. XVI.

Ill Practices in the College.

The Injunctions are too long to be here ſet down; but by them it appears, that Non-Conformity was gotten in greatly into the College. That the Fellows neglected publick Prayers, as to the Time and Habit appointed by the Statutes of the Univerſity and College. And ſo was the partaking of the Holy Communion neglected too: That in their Common Places their Practice was, to reflect upon particular Perſons [whoſe Doctrines or Perſons they liked not.] And their Common Places were ſo tedious and long in the Chapel, that the Lectures in the Hall were omitted. They neglected to ſpeak *Latin* in the Court and in the Hall. Thoſe that were to perform Divine Offices, or Scholaſtick Exerciſes, did neglect their Duties. They ordinarily Dined and Supped out of the College. They wore not Caps. They would go into the Town, not in their Academical Habits. Which it ſeems the Maſter himſelf, Dr. *Barwel*, neglected, with other Charges laid againſt him. When they diſputed publickly, or did their Exerciſe *Ad Clerum*, the Members of the College did not accompany them, either to the Schools or St. *Maries*. But ſee theſe *Injunctions* at length in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XVII.

ANNO 1586.

This Viſitation continued.

5

This Viſitation the Vicechancellor continued and prorogued from Time to Time, in order to examine thoſe of the Houſe that were from home at the Time of adminiſtring the *Interrogatories* to them. Which Continuation laſted beyond the Time of the Vicechancellors Year or Office. Of theſe Injunctions, and Proceedings the Maſter and Fellows informed the Lord *Burghley*, the High Chancellor, in order to their own Vindication: Complaining of their Viſitor for miſrepreſenting them, in charging them with ſuch Miſdemeanors, and endeavouring to clear themſelves of them. And aſſerting, that he could not prorogue the Viſitation ſo long by their Statute; delivering the Injunctions but in *February* the 22d. And continuing it further to the 22d of *March*, which was the ſixth Time. And thereby that he had broke the Statute: Which limited the Time of ſuch Viſitation.

The College repreſents their Caſe to the Chancellor, Lord Burghley.

And whereas it was charged upon them by their Viſitor, that they had uſed unſeemly Words and Behaviour towards him; they ſet down in their Letter, dated *Febr.* 26. to that Lord, the very Words, and the Occaſion of ſpeaking them, *viz.* "That the Maſter, having ſignified before his Mind concerning this endleſs Viſitation, one of the Fellows, being thereunto appointed by the "Company, uſed theſe Words: "I beſeech your Worſhip, Mr. Vicechancellor, to hear me ſpeak unto you in the Name of the Fellows, (they being preſent to juſtify the ſame:) Conſidering the "Injury that our College hath received by your often Continuance "of this Viſitation, we ſignify thus much, that reſerving all Reverence and Duty to you, as Mr. Vicechancellor, we are minded "to appear no more at your Commandment by the Name of our "*Viſitor*.

The College refuſe the Viſitors Injunctions. And why.

The Lord *Burghley* had written them a Letter, upon Complaint of his Vicechancellor concerning them; mentioning to him, how they had irreverendly behaved themſelves towards him, his Deputy, their Viſitor, and concerning their Refuſal in receiving his Injunctions. To the former the College gave that Lord their Anſwer, as aboveſaid. Touching receiving the Injunctions, thus they anſwered, "That ſo far forth as they pertained to the Reformation "of the Breach of ſuch Statutes as wherein there was any Offence "committed, they would dutifully yield unto his lawful Authority; for ſo far and no further, their Statutes limited him. That "as for other Statutes, which he termed by the Name of *Injunctions*, they could not yield unto them, without the Diſcredit of "their Houſe, the Overthrow of their Liberty, and the utter Subverſion of the State of their Government. The End of which "his Injunctions, if he could as well ſee what Confuſion it would "breed in their Houſe, as by their Experience they throughly "knew, they believed, he would be more ſparing in challenging "more Authority, than he might. And yet they offered him, "that if there were any Diſorder, which he miſliked, and would "have reformed, upon Proof thereof, they would take Order, as "by Statute they had Power, within themſelves to do; that not "for the Time preſent only, but for ever hereafter it ſhould be re-

"formed,

ANNO 1586.

“ formed, in as effectual a Manner, as any Man could require. “ But that for ought they ſaw, Mr. Vicechancellors Drift was, to “ alter the whole Government of their Houſe; and to bring it hereafter from the College to the Vicechancellor: That is, from a “ whole Corporation to one private Man. For otherwiſe, if the “ Reformation of Errors only were ſought, he would never have “ ſtood ſo much in this Matter, ſeeing that might be done with the “ hundredth Part of this great Adoe.

Adding in the Concluſion of this their briſk Letter, “ That it “ could not ſtand with the Credit of Government in their College “ for Mr. Vicechancellor to come as their Viſitor, and go out their “ Founder.” This was ſigned by the Maſter, and Fellows: Some of whom were, *Andrew Williat*, *Cutbert Bainbrig*, *Will. Perkins*, *Francis Johnſon*, *George Downham*, who were Puritans.

This Controverſy between the College and Dr. *Copcot*, held to *Auguſt* the next Year: When the Lord *Burghley* was fain to appoint certain Perſons of that Univerſity to examine and judge of the Matters between them. And ſo it ended. For which the College returned him (in another of their Letters) *quàm maximas quàmque mens hominis capere poteſt, ampliſſimas gratias ob maximum æternúmque Beneficium:* As we ſhall take Notice under the next Year.

CHAP. VIII.

The Printing Preſs at Cambridge. *The Archbiſhops Order to the Univerſity about Books to be printed there. His Letter about the Univerſity Preachers. The Univerſity and Town of* Cambridge *at Difference. Their Petition to the Lord* Burghley, *their Chancellor. Dutcheſs of* Somerſet; *her Laſt Will. Her Jewels. Her Letter to Secretary* Cecil, *concerning the Lord* Hertford, *her Son, in the* Tower. *Sir* Philip Sidneys *Laſt Will. A Letter of the young Earl of* Eſſex. *Character of* Daviſon, *late Secretary.* Fleetwood *Recorder of* London, *his Diary. Books printed.* P. Bizarus, *a learned* Italian *here. His Writings.*

I HAVE a Remark or two more to make of the aforeſaid Univerſity, before I leave it.

The Archbiſhop to the Univerſity about their Printing-Preſs.

It was ſhewed before, how the Art of Printing was ſet up, and began in *Cambridge*, by the Advice and Care of the Heads and Governours thereof. But there was a Jealouſy of the Liberty of printing Books there, the Purpoſes whereof ſometimes might tend to

ANNO 1586.

more Harm than Good: Namely, ſuch as might either diſturb the Government, or the Peace of the Church. And therefore for the preventing any ſuch Inconveniencies the Lords of the Council had lately ordered, That no Book ſhould be printed in *London*, or in either of the Univerſities, but the Copies to be firſt reviewed and allowed by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, or the Biſhop of *London*. And of this the careful Archbiſhop gave the Univerſity of *Cambridge* Information. And that on Occaſion of a Book now in printing there, called *The Harmony of Confeſſions, &c.* Tranſlated out of *Latin* into *Engliſh*: Which for ſome Reaſons was not allowed in *London* to be printed. This the Archbiſhop underſtanding was going in Hand with theſe in *Cambridge*, ſent his Letter to the Vicechancellor and Heads, to cauſe the ſaid Book to be ſtayed from printing, and that preſently upon the Receipt thereof, until they ſhould receive further Direction from him. And that in Regard of that late Order of the Council, he required them to take ſpecial Care that nothing ſhould be printed there, but what ſhould be authorized accordingly. This Letter, as taken from the Records of that Univerſity, may be read in the *Appendix*. And yet, however it came to paſs, the ſaid Book was printed and publiſhed this Year in *Octavo*, at *Cambridge* by *Tho. Thomas*, who was the Univerſity Printer, (as my learned Friend hath obſerved.) With this Title, *An Harmony of the Confeſſions of the Reformed Churches, &c.* No doubt, the Printing of the Book had the Permiſſion of the Archbiſhop, after ſome Review, or Correction of it.

Harmony of Confeſſions, forbid printing.

Num. XVIII.

Vid Manſels *Catal.*
Rev. T.Baker.

The Archbiſhop alſo took Care about the Univerſity Preachers; who had their Licence from the Univerſity. A Privilege which they had, to nominate an Univerſity-Preacher, and ſome others, to a certain Number, as it ſeems. But by this Means ſeveral of that Univerſity had gotten to be Preachers, that were diſaffected to the Doctrine or Rites or Conſtitution of the Church as eſtabliſhed. To prevent or remedy this, the ſaid watchful Archbiſhop ſent another Letter this ſame Year to the Vicechancellor and Heads: Requiring them that whoſoever ſhould be by them admitted to preach in their Univerſity or elſewhere, ſhould firſt ſubſcribe the three Articles, agreed upon, and confirmed by her Majeſties Authority. And threatning them in Caſe of their Neglect in this Matter of Subſcription, to call in Queſtion their Authority to admit ſo many Preachers; which how ſlender it was, he well knew. This Letter alſo I join to the former, to preſerve as much as we can, the Memory and Deſerts of this great Prelate.

Univerſity Preachers to ſubſcribe the 3 Articles.

The Archbiſhops Letter to that Purpoſe.

Num. XIX.

There was about this Time a great Difference and Conteſt between the Univerſity and the Town. What the firſt Occaſion or Offence was, I enquire not. But ſo hot the People of the Town were againſt the Scholars, that about the Time of *Sturbridge* Fair, the Maior and others of the Freemen made theſe Orders, That no Scholars or their Servants, ſhould have any Booths in the Fair, nor have any Commodity belonging to the Town. And furthermore in other Reſpects, ſhewing great Ingratitude towards them of the Univerſity; bending themſelves with much Contention againſt them, more than had been known heretofore.

Difference between the Town and Univerſity.

ANNO 1586.

The Heads of the Univerſity, in their own Right, and withal to be even with the Town for their Ingratitude, (who had ſuch a Dependance upon the Scholars) came to this Reſolution, to humble them, with the Leave and Concurrence of their High Chancellor; *viz.* That no College, Scholar, or Scholars Servant, ſhould ſell or let any Lands or Tenements to any Townſman, without it were with the Conſent of the Chancellor and whole Body of the Univerſity. Nor that any Scholar, or Scholars Servant ſhould buy any thing of them; as Cloth, Apparel, or Victuals, or any thing elſe. And that none, either Scholar, or Servant of any Scholar, or Foreigner, taking to farm any Houſe or Land from the Univerſity, become after a Freeman of the Town, or let or ſet over any ſuch Houſe or Land, or Parcel thereof, to any Townſman. Or if ſo, the Leaſe to ceaſe and become void. And further, that no Townſmen ſhould partake of any Benefit from a Privilege granted to the Univerſity for the Proviſion of Corn and Victuals for five Miles Compaſs from *Cambridge.* Other Orders the Heads agreed upon to ſtraiten the Townſmen, and to recover their Privilege at *Sturbridge* Fair. For this Purpoſe, and that this their Conſultation might take Effect, they preferred a Petition to their Chancellor, the Lord *Burghley.* Which was delivered to him by the Hands of *Perne,* one of the ancienteſt Heads of the Univerſity, and of venerable Eſteem. Which I leave to be read in the *Appendix.*

The Courſe the Univerſity took.

Num. XX.

Now I will proceed to make ſome Obſervations of a few particular Perſons of Note, as fall this Year within our View.

Dutcheſs of Somerſets *laſt Will.*

This Year the Dutcheſs of *Somerſet,* a lofty Lady, (Relict of the great Duke of *Somerſet,* Unkle to King *Edward* VI. and Protector of his Realms) made her laſt Will, dated *July* 14. though ſhe died not till the Year following. Several Particulars, being the Sum thereof, I will ſet down, as I have them from an authentick Copy. Wherein will appear her vaſt Wealth, her Children and Poſterity, her Relations and Servants, by the Legacies ſhe left them.

"First, She thanked God in *Chriſt Jeſus,* that he had long ago called her to the Knowledge and Love of the Goſpel; and ever ſince kept her therein, to an aſſured Hope of Life everlaſting, through Faith in the Righteouſneſs of *Jeſus Chriſt* alone. She gave to her Son *Edward,* Earl of *Hertford,* and his Heirs, all her Manſion Houſe, ſituate in *Chanon Row* within *Weſtminſter,* with the Houſhold Stuff and Furniture. *Item,* ſhe gave him a Glaſs of Chriſtal dreſſed with Gold: A Baſin and Ewer, all gilt Plate: A Pair of gilt Pots, a Pair of Flagons: Three gilt Trenchers: A Spoon of Gold, Three other Spoons gilt antick Faſhions: Two of the faireſt gilt Bolles with Covers: A Salt of Chriſtal: Beſt Chain of Pearls, with long Beads of Gold between: A fair Jewel Diamond: A great Pearl, by Eſtimation worth 30*l.* To his Wife, my Daughter of *Hertford* [Lady *Katharine Gray*] a fair Tablet to wear with antick Work on one Side, and a Roſe Diamond on the other: A Clock of Gold, worth about 30*l.*

"To my Son, Lord *Henry Seymour* XIII hundred Pounds, over and above the VII. hundred I have already given him, towards the Payment of his Debts. *Item,* I give him a fair Jewel of an Egret

ANNO 1586.

“ with divers Stones: Three Bolles of Silver and gilt, with Covers, and a Baſon and Ewer of Silver. [And that was all to this Son whom ſhe did not love.] She had two Daughters married, and alive: To whom alſo ſhe gave Legacies; *viz.* The Lady *Mary Rogers*, and the Lady *Elizabeth Knightly*.

“ To my Son *Beauchamp*, [*i. e.* eldeſt Son to the Earl of *Hertford*] 200*l.* and a Chain of Pearls and Gold, with Friers Knots; the Gold by Eſtimation worth 80*l.* To my Son *Thomas Seymour* [*i. e.* the Earl of *Hertfords* ſecond Son] 100*l.* and a Chain worth about 60*l.* To my Son *Beauchamps* Wife [*Honora*, Daughter of Sir *Richard Rogers*] a Book of Gold, kept in a green Purſe, and a Pair of Braſlets without Stones. To my Daughter *Maries* Husband [*i. e.* *Andrew Rogers*, Eſq;] one of my Rings that hath the beſt Diamond. To my God-daughter *Anne Knightley* [*viz.* Her Granddaughter] 500*l.* and a Rope of ſmall Pearl. To my Lord Treaſurer [Lord *Burghley*] a Jug of Chriſtal, with a Cover dreſt with Silver and gilt, and a Ring with an Emerald.

Somewhat alſo ſhe bequeathed to her two Nephews, *John* and *Michael Stanhope*: To her Servants: To her Yeomen, Grooms and others. To the godly Poor in the two Univerſities 20*l.* and to poor Priſoners in *London* 20 Mark. And no more in Charity, for ought I find. All the reſt to the Earl of *Hertford*: whom ſhe made ſole Executor.

Her Treaſure of Money and Jewels.

To this Copy of the Dutcheſſes laſt Will, (found among the *MSS.* of the Lord *Burghley*) there was found alſo another Paper, being an Inventory of her Money and Jewels, (which was vaſt) taken by Order from her Majeſty, *April* 21. 1587. by *John Wolley*, one of the Privy Chamber, and *John Forteſcue*, Maſter of her great Wardrobe: In Preſence of the Earl of *Hertford*, *Henry* Lord *Seymour*, Sir *Richard Knightly*, and *Andrew Rogers*, Eſquires, Her Sons and Sons in Law. Such a huge Treaſure that it would take up too much room here to inſcribe the ſaid Inventory; and yet 'tis pity it ſhould not have a Place in this Hiſtory. And therefore I have transferred it to the *Appendix*.

Num. XXI.

The Queens Meſſage to the Dutcheſs about her Will.

It was not many Days before this Dutcheſſes Death, that ſomething of Remark happened concerning her laſt Will. For the Queen coming to underſtand, that ſhe had made her eldeſt Son, the Earl of *Hertford*, her ſole Executor, and excluding the Lord *Henry*, her ſecond Son, whoſe Circumſtances were ſomewhat ſtrait, ſhe ſent Sir *Tho. Gorges* to the Dutcheſs lying now on her Death-bed at her Seat in *Hanworth*, to move her, in her Majeſties Name, to joyn her ſaid ſecond Son in the Executorſhip with the Elder: And *Gorges* argued with her earneſtly, as the Queen appointed him ſo to do. At Length ſhe promiſed, ſhe would: But (as appeared by the Will) did not. Whereupon, after her Death, ſome Trouble aroſe, and Examinations were taken: Which I ſhall refer to the next Year, when it happened.

The Dutcheſſes Letter to Secretary Cecil *for Lord* Hertfords *Liberty.*

I have but one thing more to add of this great Dutcheſs; which will leave ſome further Memory of her to Poſterity. And that is a Letter of her own Hand, which ſhe wrote many Years paſt, to *Cecill* the Queens Secretary; as ſhe had at the ſame Time writ another to the Earl,

Earl of *Leiceſter*; to join their Intereſts in an earneſt Addreſs to the Queen for the Lord *Hertford*, her eldeſt Son, and the Lady *Katharine* his Wife, for their Liberties, both then remaining in the Tower, under the Queens Diſpleaſure, for marrying without her Knowledge or Conſent; the Lady his Wife being of Royal Blood. The Letter follows, as I tranſcribed it from the Original.

" Good Mr. Secretary. After this long Silence, and for that as " yet my old Occaſion letts my Attendance, I have preſumed by " Letter to renew my Suit for my Son to the Queens Majeſty; " and have likewiſe written to my Lord of *Leiceſter*; Praying you " to ſet in your helping Hand, to end this tedious Suite. Wherein " for me to reaſon, how much her Highneſs Diſpleaſure is too long " laſting, or how unmeet it is, this young Couple ſhould thus wax " old in Priſon; or how far better it were for them to be abroad, " and learn to ſerve, I will not [ſay,] but leave all ſuch Speeches " to the friendly ſetting forth of my good Lord and you. Only " my ſeeking is, that as there is none other Cauſe, ſince her Majeſties Reign, but hath had ſome favourable Order, or End; ſo by " your earneſt conferring and joyning with my good Lord, this " young Couple may feel ſome like of her Majeſties plentiful Mercy. " To the Procurement whereof, the more earneſt my Lord and you " ſhew yourſelves, the more ſhall you ſet forth the Queens Majeſties Honour; And as a Mother I muſt needs ſay, the better diſcharge your Callings and Credit. And ſo reſting in Prayer, that " God would bleſs your Travail to ſome comfortable End, I take " my Leave:

Your aſſured loving Friend,

Anne Somerſet.

This was writ by the Dutcheſs in *January*, 1565. But neither her, nor their Interceſſion prevailed with the Queen for the Liberty of her Son, and the Lady *Katharine*, till many Years after, though ſhe by Reaſon of her Sickneſs was permitted to retyre for ſome Time to *Pyrgo*, her Brother, the Lord *John Grays* Seat, in *Eſſex*.

A Clauſe in Sir Ph. Sidneys *laſt Will.*

As this Year put an End to the Life of that famous and accompliſhed Gentleman, Sir *Philip Sidney*, who was ſlain at *Zutphen* in *Flanders*, in the Queens Service; ſo I cannot but give a Clauſe of his laſt Will. Which will ſhew, among the reſt of his admirable Qualities, his Juſtice and Integrity: *viz.* " *Item*, I will, and abſolutely authorize the Right Honourable, Sir *Francis Walſingham*, " and my Brother *Robert Sidney*, or either of them, to ſell ſo much " of my Lands lying within the Counties of *Lincoln*, *Suſſex*, or " *Southampton*, as ſhall pay all my Debts, as well thoſe of my Father deceaſed, as of mine own. Beſeeching them to haſten the " ſame, and to pay the Creditors with all poſſible Speed, according " to that Letter of Atturney which Sir *Francis Walſingham* already hath; ſealed and ſubſcribed by me to that End. Which " Letter of Attorney I do hereby confirm and ratify, ſo far " forth as concerneth that Purpoſe to all Effects of Law.

ANNO 1586.

To add a Word here of another young and brave Nobleman, *Robert* Earl of *Eſſex*, his Father, *Walter Devereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, dead ten Years before. This *Robert* made himſelf famous from his Youth for his Warlike Diſpoſition: As in the Year 1589. being in an Expedition againſt *Spain*; where he fought with a *Spaniard* Hand to Hand: Afterwards ſent with Forces into *France*, as our Hiſtories relate. But ſomething before theſe Exploits of his, *viz.* this Year, when he was little above 20 Years of Age, I have to relate, to ſhew his aſpiring Spirit, in the Language he treated Sergeant *Puckring*, a Man of Eminence in the Law, and not long after the Queens Solicitor, and a Judge. He had been a Counſil againſt one *Vaughan*, a Retainer of the Earles, or an Arbitrator in that Cauſe: Wherein the Sergeant favoured him not. Which ſtirred up the young Nobleman when he heard of it, to much Diſpleaſure, that he gave his Mind ſomewhat proudly in a threatning Letter to the ſaid Sergeant, in the Terms that follow; as I tranſcribe it from the Original.

The Earl of Eſſex *his lofty Letter to Sergeant* Puckring.

“That he was ſorry to hear, that he ſhould proſecute that Matter againſt his Servant, Mr. *Vaughan*. Whom he perceived, ſince his Abſence, had hard Meaſure offered. Which how he, [the Earl] ſhould redreſs, becauſe he was now far from him, he knew not. But, as he proceeded, I will do my beſt. And when I ſee *England*, if I, and all the Friends I have can help it, it ſhall take no Wrong. He hath, like a Gentleman, and an honeſt Man, followed me and my Houſe. Therefore as long as he may ſtand by my Help, he ſhall not fall. I did not look that either Mr. *Atkis* or yourſelf ſhould ſtrive for this Victory over any of mine. But you are Judges and therefore ſevere Men; and therefore willing to revenge: In Authority, and therefore able. To help that which is already paſt, I have already determined my Courſe. For any thing that is to come, intreat you I will not, ſince my beſt Friends are already rejected. Exaſperate you I need not. For I think you have already done your worſt. But I am ſorry every thing falls out ſo ill, that my Man ſhould be condemned; yourſelves, whom before I loved, ſhould proſecute; and I abſent, who might yield him ſome Help. I hear D. *Williams* hath uſed his Kinſman very well. But it is not the firſt Time he hath played the Knave. I ſhall one Day make even with him for many old Debts.

“For yourſelves I wiſh you no Harm; but that you may not have your Wills in this. In haſt this 18. of *June*, 1586. *He that loved you, if you could have loved him, and is,*

R. *Eſſex.*

By this we ſee a *Specimen* of this young Earls Spirit; which brought him at laſt to an untimely End, as our Hiſtories relate.

I make a Note here in this Period of another memorable Man, *William Daviſon*, late Secretary of State: Who was lately cenſured, and deeply fined, and caſt into the Tower for too haſtily diſpatching the Queens Warrant, for the Execution of the *Scotch* Queen: Whereof Relation hath been given before. But ſtill the good Character of the Man remained. Of whom *Tho. Newton*, a Poet in thoſe Times, gave this Character, in a Copy of Verſes to him; as follows.

Ad ornatiſſimum Virum, Guilielmum Daviſonum, *Regineum Secretarium*

Tempora lætadiu vidiſti, tempora dura
  Senſiſti, & variis fata inimica modis.
Flante, reflante tamen Fortuna, ſemper eundem
  Te præſtas, fortem ſcilicet, atque pium.
Macte animo, Daviſone, *tuo: Sic itur ad Aſtra.*
  Præmiolum virtus aſſolet eſſe ſui.

Daviſon *late Secretary, his Character.*

Of the Abilities and Deſerts of this Gentleman, however now fallen under the Queens Diſpleaſure, the Lord Treaſurer thus obſerved to her, “That he knew not a Man in *England* furniſhed ſo univerſally for the Place he lately had under her Majeſty; neither “knew he any that could come near him. And that for a Servant “of the Queen in that Place, he thought it hard to find a like “qualified Perſon. More of him hath been told before.

Minutes of what paſt at the Seſſions in London.

I have a few Paſſages to ſet down concerning ſome Tranſactions in the City of *London*, as I find them in a *Diary* of Sergeant *Fleetwood*, Recorder; in which he uſed to ſet down Minutes of what paſſed at the Seſſions, or otherwiſe: Sending them cuſtomarily to the Lord Treaſurer. I tranſcribe from that *Diary*, as follows.

Oxford *Preachers Doctrine.*

“*Whitſunday, May* the 23. Upon *Friday* at Afternoon, I ſat “in the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical at *Lambeth*, with my Lords “Grace: Where three *Oxford* Preachers were charged, for that “they would have all temporal Cauſes to be decided by the Seniors “of the Church. And that her Majeſty had not to deal in Cauſes “Eccleſiaſtical; with ſuch like Matters. My Lord Almoner * did “bear much with them.

“*Saturday* was by me employed to abbreviate and explain a new “Commiſſion, granted for the Relief of the *Fleet*, and *Kings Bench*. “And that I did by the Command of my Lord of *Canterbury* his “Grace.

“*Wedneſday* was ſpent at the Goal of *Newgate*, where we had “little or nothing to do. The Matters there were ſlender, and of “no great Importance. There were none executed.

The principal Thieves in the Realm now in Newgate.

“Your good Lordſhip peradventure may marvail, why we have “had ſo few Dealings in Criminal Cauſes at this our late Seſſions. “The Reaſon is this. We have in Priſon here in *Newgate* the moſt “principal Thieves of this Realm. We lack none but *Mannering*. “Who doth daily gather into his Society leud Perſons, who commit, in all Parts of the Realm, moſt dangerous Robberies. I hear “that the *Genn* or Ingen [Engin] is in your Lordſhips Cuſtody. “The Want whereof is a great Stay of many Burglaries.

“*September* 6. at Evening 1586. That at the ſending away his “Man that *Wedneſday* Morning, all the Bells of *London* did ring for Joy.

* Pierce *Biſhop of* Sarum, *if I miſtake not.*

ANNO 1586.

The Queens Birth-day celebrated at London.

“ Joy. That upon the 7th of this Month, being as this Day *Anno* 28 *Hen.* VIII. her Grace was born. There was this Day, but ſpecially at Supper, great Feaſting. That he had been bidden out to Supper that Night, in 6 or 7 Places.” The Citizens now ſhewing their Loyalty to the Queen, and their Joy, upon the late Diſcovery of a Plot againſt her Life, and the Execution of the Conſpirators; and when ſuch Plots were carrying on, to ſet up the Queen of *Scots*, and dethrone their beloved Queen *Elizabeth*.

Lives of the Archbiſhops of Cant. *Writ by* Fr. Thinn.

Francis Thinn ſet forth this Year the Lives of the Archbiſhops of *Canterbury:* Beginning at *Auguſtin* the Monk: Being put upon the Work by ſome of his Friends. He confeſt he had taken what he had written out of *Matth. Parker*, [the late Archbiſhop] who, he ſaid, had learnedly in *Latin* writ the Lives of the LXX Archbiſhops of that See. The Lives contained in this Book are digeſted into *Hollingſheds* Chronicle under the Year 1586.

P. 1435.

P. Bizarus, *a Writer.*

I add to this, another Writer, named *Petrus Bizarus*, an *Italian*, dwelling here in *England*; a Man of Learning; entertained divers Years with the Earl of *Bedford*. And expecting Preferment here, failing of it, in Diſcontent he departed, and lived abroad. Where he applied himſelf to write in *Latin* Relations of Hiſtory of Wars in ſeveral Kingdoms; and then publiſhing them to the World. The Lord *Burghley* ſeemed to have an Eſteem for him; and affecting Learning himſelf, deſired once of *Bizarus*, to know what he had publiſhed. Which cauſed him to ſend a Letter to the ſaid Lord, giving him therein an Account of his Books, and ſending him withal his laſt Book, *viz.* certain Verſes. It was writ from the *Hague*, and ran in this Tenor.

His Books publiſhed.

Illuſtriſſime D. D. Clementiſſime, & Obſervantiſſime, &c. Poſt meas Elucubrationes, &c. “ That after his Pains, publiſhed as well at *Venice* as *Baſil*, viz. *De Bello Cyprio, & De Bello Pannonico*; together with an *Epitome* of ſundry Things, and other Matters; he had ſet forth a great and vaſt Work; to wit, The Hiſtory and Annals of the *Republick of* Genua. Wherein, beſides other Things, moſt honourable mention was made by him of the moſt Serene Queen, [*Elizabeth*] and that very many Things were inſerted *De nefario ac deteſtabili ſcelere Reginæ* Scotiæ: Namely, how by her Conſent, her Husband was ſlain; and then married the Parricide. And that all theſe Things he wrote, *Non adulatoriè, ſed Verè*, i. e. not to flatter, but to ſpeak the Truth, and according to the genuine Hiſtory, *Ut veridicum Hiſtoricum decebat; as became an Hiſtorian, that dared to ſpeak the Truth.*

?

“ And that becauſe in the ſame Work mention was made of his Illuſtrious Lordſhip, he had ſent him a Copy, by the worthy Gentleman, Mr. *Rob. Beal*, [the Queens Agent it ſeems, now in thoſe Parts] who he knew would faithfully deliver it to him.

“ But that although, as he proceeded, the State of *Genua*, by reaſon of different Religion, was barbarous and very ingrateful towards him, it ſhould never work him off from his Labours and Watchings, ſince Vertue itſelf was his true Wages and Reward. After that Time he wrote the Hiſtory of the *Perſian* Affairs: Be-

" ginning from *Cyrus*, the Founder of the *Perſian* Monarchy, by a " deduced *Series* to theſe preſent Times: Which Work was in *Folio*, " printed likewiſe by *Chriſtopher Plantin* at *Antwerp*; and was dedicated to the moſt Illuſtrious Prince *D. Auguſtus*, Elector of " *Saxony*. Whom, he added, next to the moſt Serene Queen, was " his Prince for fourteen Years, and honoured him with a yearly " Stipend; and for that Work was beneficent and liberal towards " him.

" Laſtly, That he wrote a *Latin* Work of the four chief Empires or Monarchies, very clear. Which he ſent to *Frankford* to " be printed. Here, as he concludes, you have, Honourable Sir, " an Account of my Studies, from the Time I left the *Engliſh* Court. " Wherein, I ſaw, I ſpent in vain my Time and Hope, while for " ſo many Years I ſerved the moſt Illuſtrious Earl of *Bedford*, of " happy and pious Memory. But although now a great many " Years are paſt, ſince I wrote nothing to the ſame Illuſtrious Lord, " that I might eaſily have been forgotten by him; yet I have ever " retained his Memory with the chiefeſt Obſervance. And I pray " the great and good God to keep him ſafe and happy: As alſo I do " for your Lordſhip. For whom, as I ſaid, I do yet pray and will " pray, as long as I ſhall live. I have now withal ſent theſe my " Verſes lately printed, to your Lordſhip. And finally, beſeeching " God, that his Illuſtrious Lordſhip with his whole Family, and " chiefly the Queens Majeſty, within all her Majeſty's Kingdoms, " might perpetually flouriſh. In haſte. From the *Hague*, the 23d " of *Novemb.* New Stile, 1586.

Veſtra Illuſtriſſima Dom. longè addictiſs. &

Obſervantiſs.

Petrus Bizarus.

ANNO 1587.

CHAP. IX.

The miſerable Condition of Don Antonio: *Repreſented to the Lord Treaſurer. Sir* Fran. Drake *takes a rich Ship of* Portugal. *His Succeſs at* Cales. *Intelligence from* Scotland *by a Prieſt there. Remembrance for* Portland Caſtle, *ſent to the Lord Treaſurer from Sir* Walter Raleigh. *Orders for the Lieutenancy of* Hampſhire. *Care taken about the Juſtices of Peace. Biſhop of* Peterburgh, *his Letter, concerning them in his Dioceſs. Letters alſo of the ſame Concern, from the Biſhops of* Hereford, Norwich, Wincheſter, Bath *and* Wells, *and* York. *A Letter from Dr.* Knibbius *to* Dan. Rogers, *the Queens Ambaſſador, concerning the Earl of* Leiceſters *Departure from* Holland. *Two military Diſcourſes; ſeaſonable at this Juncture: By* Rafe Lane.

The mean Condition of Don Antonio.

AS the Queen had aſſiſted *Don Antonio* to recover his Kingdom of *Portugal*, according to his claimed Right to it againſt *Philip* King of *Spain*; ſo his Condition now grew very mean; ſo as he became an Object of Compaſſion for his Poverty, and Inability even to pay his Servants. Which occaſioned one *Edward Prince*, a Perſon near him, to acquaint the Lord Treaſurer with his Circumſtances; eſpecially now upon the Succeſs of a late Voyage, undertaken by the Queens Permiſſion. Wherein Sir *Francis Drake* took a very rich Ship of *Portugal*; [called, *The great Carrack.*] “ Whereupon many Merchants and Noblemen in “ *France*, as *Prince* writ to the ſaid Treaſurer, were of Opinion, “ that the Queen would lend that King his Maſter, out of that “ rich Prize 200,000 Crowns; to enable him to levy an Army for “ the Voyage of *Portugal:* Adding, that the King aſſured himſelf “ not leſs of her Majeſty, if the Time gave Opportunity. But that “ putting aſide theſe great Matters, That in Loyal Duty he was “ bound to ſhew his Honour, that the miſerable State of the poor “ King was ſuch, that her Majeſty might do well to cauſe ſome of “ the Kings poor Creditors to be paid. All which 12 or 13 *l.* would “ diſcharge. And that by this Means the poor King, (as he went “ on in his Letter) might come out of Extremity, and great Diſcredit; which he did aſſure his Honour would befal him, if at “ *Michaelmas* next, there were not ſome good Order taken with “ theſe poor Men, which were in great danger of undoing.

Camd. Eliz. *p.* 396.

Sir Francis Drake *takes a rich Ship of* Portugal.

He ſolicits further in the Behalf of this dethroned King, in this Manner: “ I could be large in ſhewing the moſt pitiful Eſtate of

ANNO
1587.

“ this poor King. In Honour, my good Lord, her Majeſty ſhould
“ take pity of the diſtreſſed King, and cauſe the ſame Sum above
“ named to be paid unto the poor Creditors in this poor King's
“ Miſery; weighing his poor Eſtate with your true Ballances. And
“ uſe herein your Honourable Favours. Under which the State of
“ this poor Houſe dependeth, having no other Refuge but in your
“ Honour.

Drakes *Victory and Succeſs at* Cales.

What Favour was ſhewn *Don Antonio*, and his Creditors out of that rich *Carrack*, I know not; but before the taking of it, *Drake* had glorious Succeſs in the ſaid Expedition before *Cales*, with four of the Queens Ships, and ſome few others. Where he chaſed ſix Gallies under their Forts, and ſunk, took and fired about an hundred Veſſels. And among them two great Gallions; and ſo went onwards on that Coaſt with continued Succeſs. But of this Expedition and ſome other Particulars of it, Sir *Francis Drake* himſelf ſhall tell us in a Letter of his own writing to the Lord Treaſurer, from aboard his own Ship, the *Elizabeth Bonaventure*; which I tranſcribe from the very Original. Wherein the ſaid Captain alſo gave Intelligence, what mighty Preparations were making there for the invading of *England*.

His Letter, giving Account thereof.

“ Right Honourable and my very good Lord, having occaſion by
“ Means of our late happy Succeſs at *Cales* in *Spain*, to write unto
“ my honourable good Lords at the Court, I have thought good to
“ certify your Lordſhip of the Particulars of our Proceedings.

“ The 2d of this Month we departed from the *Sound* of *Plymouth*.
“ The 5th we had ſight of the Cape *Veneſter*. We were
“ incountred by a vehement Storm, the Space of five Days. By
“ which means our Fleet was ſevered; and a great Leak ſprang upon
“ the *Drednought*. We met altogether at the Rock the 16th.
“ And the 19th we arrived into the Road of *Cales*. Where we
“ found ſundry Shipping of very great Portage, laden with the
“ King's Proviſions for *England*. We remained there until the
“ 21ſt. In which Time, notwithſtanding the often Encounters of
“ 12 Gallies, of whom we ſunk two, and repulſed the reſt; and
“ the continual Thundring of the great Ordnance from the Shore;
“ we burnt a Ship of the Marqueſs of *S. Cruce* of 1500 Tun, a
“ *Biskain* of 1200 Tun, and 31 Ships more of 1000, 800, 600,
“ 400, to 200 Tun the Piece. Carried away with us four Ships,
“ laden with Proviſions; and departed thence at our Pleaſure, with
“ as much Honour and Victory, as any Man in the World could
“ wiſh for; being very courteouſly written unto by *Don Pedro*, General
“ of thoſe Gallies.

“ Aſſuredly, there was never heard of, or known ſo great Preparations
“ as the King of *Spain* hath, and daily maketh ready for
“ the Invaſion of *England*, as well out of the *Streights*, from
“ whence he hath great Aid from ſundry mighty Princes, as alſo
“ from divers other Places in his own Country. And his Proviſions
“ of Bread and Wine are ſufficient for 40000 Men a whole Year.
“ The uniting of all which Forces will be very dangerous, unleſs
“ their Meeting be prevented: Which by all poſſible Means we will
“ ſeek to perform, as far as our Lives will extend. No doubt, but

Spains *vaſt Preparations againſt* England.

ANNO 1587.

" this which God hath permitted us to do, will cauſe them to make " great Alteration of their Intents.

" Nevertheleſs it is very neceſſary, that all poſſible Preparation " for Defence be ſpeedily made, I would ſet down unto your Lord" ſhip the large Diſcourſe of this whole Event, but want of conve" nient Leiſure cauſeth me to abridge the ſame: Leaving it unto " the Report of this Bearer. And thus in very great haſte I hum" bly take my Leave of your good Lordſhip. From aboard her " Majeſties good Ship the *Elizabeth Bonaventure*, the 27th of " *April* 1587.

Your Lordſhips moſt ready to be commanded,

Fra. Drake.

Report of the King of Scots.

It made up a part of Intelligence ſent this Summer from a *Scotch* Prieſt, called *John Murdock*, to Father *John Gibbon*, Rector of the *Society of Jeſus* at *Trevir*; " That there was a Report, that the " King of *Scotland*, was fled to the *North* Parts, to unite his Sub" jects, whereby he might revenge his Mother from *Scotland*, and " for the Injuries done them by the *Engliſh*.

Which Revenge indeed the King meditated with great Earneſtneſs at firſt, and continued ſo for ſome Time. For this Letter was writ in *June*, ſeveral Months after that Queens Death; that King having been ſtirred up chiefly by the Popiſh Faction. But upon more mature Deliberation, put it up, and entred into a Friendſhip and good Accord with the Queen; as was ſhewn before.

Camd. Eliz. p. 379.

Other Intelligence ſent in the ſame Letter was, " That M. *Grey* [a falſe *Scot*, who was ſent by the King to Queen *Elizabeth*, to diſſuade her, not to put his Mother to Death, but ſecretly perſuaded her to do it, uſing thoſe Words to her, *Mortua non mordet*, as our Hiſtorian relates it] " was caſt into the *Tower* of *Edenburgh*, that without the King's Knowledge he would reſtore Reli" gion. *Rectè Sanè*, addeth the Writer; for the Lord will not uſe, " I conjecture, that the Catholick Faith ſhould be publiſhed through " *Scotland*, *tali Authore*. And that Father *Creitton* [a buiſy *Scotch* " Jeſuit in the late Treaſons in *England*] was ſafe come to *Paris*, " from *London*, about the End of *May*. What to do, God know" eth. Written from *Muſſiponte*, the 18th of *June*. For the " Queen of *Scots* being taken off, their Hopes began to flag.

Remembrance for Portland *Caſtle.*

Care was now taken for the Sea-Ports, when the Kingdom was threatned ſo much with an Invaſion by the Popiſh Princes. Particularly, Proviſion was thought fit to be made for *Portland* Caſtle in *Dorſetſhire*, by a Remembrance ſent up from Sir *W. R.* [*Walter Raleigh*] Governour, as it ſeems, of it. There is this Note of it among the Lord Treaſurers Papers endorſed, *Remembrance for the Right Honourable, the Lord Treaſurer*, touching the Requeſt of Sir *W. R.* Knt.

" Firſt, He requeſts your Honour for five caſt Pieces of Braſs, " lying at *Woolwich*, for the ſaid Caſtle. He likewiſe requeſteth " your Lordſhip to direct your Letters to the Lord Marqueſs of " *Wincheſter*, [Lord Lieutenant of the County] that there may be "appointed an hundred Men for the Defence of the Caſtle and "Iſland of *Portland*, with Armour accordingly. 3. He moveth for "a Supply of Powder for the ſaid Caſtle. For that there is but one "Laſt in all: Which he ſuppoſeth to be very little in Time of Ser-"vice. 4. It may pleaſe your Honour, as he proceeded, to take "ſome Order, that the Ordinance which is unſerviceable, and "lying in the ſaid Caſtle, may be conveyed to *London*. 5. If it "may pleaſe your Lordſhip, that my Lord Marqueſs do give Or-"der, for his ſaid hundred Men, by his Commiſſion directed to the "Lieutenant of *Portland*. And he will undertake to collect an "hundred ſufficient Men; and not of the Trained Number. "6. And laſtly, your Lordſhips good Remembrance for the Towns "of *Weymouth*, and *Melcomb Regis*." Which Places Sir *Walter Raleigh* ſeemed to have the Care of.

Sir Walter Ra-leighs *Care for Proviſion of Arms.*

Hampſhire lying on the Sea Coaſt that way, Orders alſo were ſent thither, touching the Lieutenancy of that County: Committed to the Lord Marqueſs of *Wincheſter* and the Earl of *Suſſex*: For their manner of Government. *May* 1587. Which follow, as I tranſcribe from the Minutes of the Lord *Burghleys* own Hand.

Orders for the Lieutenancy of Hampſhire *to the Lords Lieutenants.*

"Firſt, They ſhall jointly do their endeavour to execute all the "Parts and Contents of their Commiſſion, without any private Man-"ner; by way of dividing the Shire between them into Parts; or "that any one of them ſhall intermeddle in the Execution of their "Commiſſion alone, as a ſole Lieutenant: But with the Privity of "one another: Except, the one of them ſhall by Sickneſs be occa-"ſioned to forbear the doing of ſuch Services, as ſhall be requiſite: "Or that by the Abſence of one out of the Country, the Service "ſhould be hindred, if the other being preſent, ſhould not proceed "to execute the ſame alone. In which Caſe the Lieutenant Reſi-"dent ſhall do his beſt Endeavour to perform that Service, that "ſhall be needful.

"*Item*, Whenſoever any Direction by Letters from her Majeſty "or from the Council, ſhall be ſent to them, or to any of them, he "to whoſe Hand the ſame ſhall come, ſhall immediately certify the "other thereof; and ſhall appoint a Time and Place of Meeting to "conſider thereof. And thereupon ſhall jointly expedite the Matter "and Contents of the ſame Letter.

Care taken about the Juſtices of Peace.

Another Care was now taken concerning the Juſtices of the Peace throughout the Kingdom. That none might be intruſted with that weighty Charge, but ſuch Gentlemen as might be aſſured to be hearty Men, zealous in the Queens Affairs, and true to the Government eſtabliſhed: Some being juſtly ſuſpected, and others weak, or unactive, or poor. Therefore the Lord Treaſurer, who had indeed the great Care of all lying upon him under the Queen, directed his private Letters to all the Biſhops of the ſeveral Dioceſſes, to inform him concerning the Conditions of the Juſtices in their reſpective Dioceſſes. Though to take off the *Odium*, other Reaſons were aſſigned of the Queens ordering the Lord Chancellor, and others of her Council, to enquire concerning them, as to their great Numbers, and unneceſſary Charges, ariſing thence. But ſee the ſaid Lord Treaſurers Letter to the Biſhops elſewhere at large.

Private Letters to the Biſhops.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitgift. B. III. *ch.* 19.

ANNO 1587.

Biſhop of Peterburghs Letter concerning the Juſtices in his Dioceſs.

Howland, Biſhop of *Peterburgh* accordingly ſent up a Certificate of the Juſtices within his Dioceſs, accompanied with his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer: Importing, “ That his Lordſhips Letter of the “ 4th of *September* he received: And for his great Care therein “ ſhewed for the due Adminiſtration of Juſtice, as he thanked God, “ deſiring him to bleſs his good Purpoſe, with all other his Honourable Studies for the Peace of the Church and this Realm; ſo “ he was heartily ſorry that he was not able to perform that Duty “ therein, which that Lord had ſo lovingly laid upon him, and he “ would willingly diſcharge; but by reaſon of the ſhortneſs of Time “ and want of the Knowledge, as yet, of the Country, with the great “ Diverſity in Reports, (and that from even good Men ſometimes) “ nouriſhing their own Humours and partial Conceits, by Means “ whereof he knew not what to write. For as he would be loth to “ commend any Man, that ſhould not be found fit for the Place; “ ſo to diſable any, whom he did not know, upon any Mans Report, “ would be a great Raſhneſs in him, and a greater Injury unto “ them. For

Turpius ejicitur, quàm non admittitur hoſper.

Numb. XXII.

But this Biſhops Letter being ſomewhat long, and by which one may partly gather ſome Character of him, ſhall have a Place in the *Appendix*, together with his *Certificate* of the Juſtices.

Lord Treaſurers good Service herein noted.

This was one of the commendable Counſils of that wiſe Stateſman; *viz.* to make a Regulation of the Juſtices of the Peace in every County; and to take this Courſe for his better and truer Information of the Gentlemen, and their Abilities. That none might be put into thoſe Places of Truſt and Diſtribution of Juſtice and Right unto the Inhabitants, but honeſt and able Men. Whereof there had been no little want; and much Partiality uſed; and not ſeldom ſuch as favoured the Queens Enemies. And hence happened oftentimes the putting Perſons in and out of the Commiſſion: Which gave Occaſion of Speeches. This that good Lord knew well enough. And therefore endeavoured by this Means of ſecretly applying to the Biſhops of the ſeveral Dioceſſes, to obtain true Characters of the Gentry in their Parts. This the aboveſaid Biſhop in his Letter thought very convenient to take Notice of to that Lord. “ That “ underſtanding he had taken this Cauſe in Hand, as in other “ Things he had done, ſo in this alſo upon ſound Information, he “ would lay a firm and honourable Foundation. Praying his Lordſhip to go forward: Aſſuring him, that as he had done many “ other Things of great Import to the Benefit of the Realm, ſo for “ the ſound ſettling of the whole Realm in firm Obedience to their “ Sovereign, and for the Preſervation of Love in every Member, he “ could never take a more Honourable Cauſe in Hand, and more “ acceptable to the People.

How the Juſtices ſtood affected in other Parts of the Kingdom, and what their Abilities were, the other Biſhops wrote their Letters, as the aforeſaid Biſhop had done, on the like Meſſage ſent to them. Thus as the Lord *Burghley* had ſent his Letter to *Weſtphaling*, Biſhop

ſhop of *Hereford*, to certify him concerning the Juſtices of the Peace within his Dioceſs, either ſuch as had been lately left out of the Commiſſion, or meet to be left out hereafter, or to be put in again: The Biſhops Anſwer dated *Octob.* 7. was to this Tenor:

Biſhop of Hereford *to the Lord Treaſurer concerning the Juſtices in his Dioceſs.*

" That he had made his Enquiries with as much Circumſpection " and Diligence, as his ſmall Acquaintance as yet, in that Country, " his little Knowledge of Mens Diſcretions and Secreſy, and ſome " urgent and neceſſary Occaſions, and that ſhortneſs of Time would " ſuffer him. He mentioned ſome Commiſſions that he was bound " to ſit upon; that would be ſome Hindrance to this Service; but " that he would, by Gods Leave, as he ſhould come to more " Knowledge, ſupply the ſame with all convenient Speed. But " highly approving that Lords Purpoſe, added, That he certainly " perſuaded himſelf that this his Lordſhips Care and Courſe, (if it " ſhould be anſwered accordingly) would in a ſhort Space work a " very ſenſible and great Effect, beneficial both to the State and true " Religion. Which he muſt (he ſaid) with the reſt of his Brethren, " acknowledge himſelf moſt bound to ſeek for, and to the uttermoſt " of his Power to promote." This Biſhops whole Letter I leave alſo to be read in the *Appendix*, with his Notes of the Juſtices at the Concluſion.

Numb. XXIII.

The Biſhop of Worceſters *Letter concerning the Juſtices in that Dioceſs*

Upon the like Letter from the Lord Treaſurer to *Freake*, Biſhop of *Worceſter*, he alſo ſent an Account back of the Juſtices in that Dioceſs, according to the Particulars ſpecified; as concerning their Affection to Religion: Whether they lived in the County: Whether any of their Relations were *Roman* Catholicks. And then, concerning ſome lately put out of the Commiſſion, and ſome other Matters enquired of. An Account whereof the Biſhop reported to his Lordſhip in his Letter in Anſwer, " That he had with all " poſſible Diligence and Secrecy enquired concerning the Juſtices " in the County of *Wigorn*, and had given his Opinion and Knowledge of thoſe that were continued in Commiſſion. That divers " of them were but Superficial, either for Advice, or Execution of " any weighty Affair of the Country. And that for Matter of Religion, they were conformable enough outwardly, and forward " in outward Obedience and Service. Yet he did not obſerve any " ſuch fervent Zeal indeed in ſome of them, as he could wiſh. " That in the Adminiſtration of Juſtice, they carried themſelves " modeſtly: And that they were the principalleſt Gentlemen, for " Living and Countenance, as were in the Shire. That as for thoſe " that were left out, he could not accuſe ſome of them for Recuſancy, though their Wives were ſuch. That that Exception ſet " apart, they were for Wiſdom, Livelihood, Reputation and Diſcretion in Government, ſome of the beſt and meeteſt Men that " were in that Aſſociation." But the whole Letter I leave alſo in the *Appendix*, for ſome Memorial of this Biſhop: Together with his *Calendar* encloſed, containing the Names of the Juſtices, their Conditions and Affections toward Religion, and the Valuations of their Eſtates in the Subſidy Books, ſet in three Columns. Which and his Letter he deſired the Lord Treaſurer to conceal, by reaſon of

Numb. XXIV.

of the Dependency of the Diſpleaſure that might ariſe to him by this Service, and depending upon his promiſed Secrecy.

Letters of other Biſhops concerning the Juſtices in their Dioceſſes.

To theſe I cannot forbear to ſubjoin the Letters of the like Concern (which I have among my *Collections*) to the Lord Treaſurer, written from three other Biſhops; containing their Characters and Accounts of the Juſtiees within their reſpective Dioceſſes: Specially, ſince hereby we may come to paſs ſome Judgment of the Eſtates, and Qualifications of the Gentlemen in thoſe ſeveral Counties where they lived, and how diſpoſed to Religion in thoſe dangerous Times: And likewiſe to obſerve the Uſe made of the Biſhops, and their Care and Diligence to inform and adviſe. Whereby we may attain to ſome further Knowledge of thoſe Venerable Fathers of the Church in thoſe Days: whereof our Hiſtories are but ſcanty. The ſaid Letters are from *Scambler*, Biſhop of *Norwich*, *Cooper*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, *Godwin*, Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*. And one Letter more from the other Province, writ by *Sandys*, Archbiſhop of *York*. Which are all tranſcribed and entred into the *Appendix*.

Numb. XXV, XXVI, XXVII, XXVIII.

A Motion of Peace with Spain.

Some Motions were now made towards a Peace with *Spain*, even in the Midſt of theſe Preparations and Attempts of War. And in this ſome of the Cities of the *Netherlands* were concerned; chiefly moved by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, when Governor of the *Low Countries:* Whom the People greatly diſguſted, as too rigorous and haughty. What follows will open this Cauſe more at large.

The ill Conſequences thereof.

Daniel Rogers was now the Queens Ambaſſador there. And Dr. *Knibbius*, an eminent Perſon in *Holland*, communicated thus his Thoughts to him from *Fluſhing*; ſhewing the Sentiments of the *Hollanders*, concerning the Conſequences that would follow upon the making a Peace with *Spain*; and concerning the State of *Holland*, and their Affection to the Queen; and of *Leiceſter*'s Government; he being now gone from thence into *England*, and had left many Enemies there: But yet his Return thought very adviſeable.

Knibbius *to* Rogers *the Queens Ambaſſador, thereupon.*

The Letter thus began. *S. P. Heri veſpere demum accepi Literas tuas, Kalendis Martii datas, &c.* in *Engliſh* thus: "That Yeſter-
" day he received his [*Rogers*] Letter, dated the *Calendes* of
" *March:* Which he ſuſpected to have been intercepted; and with
" his Letters a Book, which he learned was made by the Son of
" your *Neſtor* [as he ſtiled the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*] containing
" thoſe Deliberations, that went before the Death of that *Scottiſh*
" [Queen:] Which was very acceptable to him; although he had
" ſeen it all tranſlated into their Idiom two Months before. That
" in thoſe Letters there was nothing that needed Anſwer.

Then the Writer proceeded in theſe Words: " Here hath been
" ſprinkled privately, that you [in the *Engliſh* Court] are attempting I
" know not what, concerning a Peace. And this is that very Thing,
" whereby, as by a Prop and *Baſis*, they ſupport themſelves, who
" ſeek new Things. Nor is it yet commonly known; nor do I think
" it profitable it ſhould be made known. Becauſe it would move
" the very beſt Men to deſperation, who while the King of *Spain*
" is alive, expect by Peace nothing, but [*Extrema quaq;*] Extremi-
" ty in every Thing: As well becauſe whatſoever Conditions at
" length ſhould be propoſed, they ſhew to be the hardeſt, or im-

ANNO 1587.

" poſſible. And indeed nothing but Traps and Snares were to hold " us faſt in a ſtraiter Yoke of *Spaniards.*

" He underſtood, that there was to be a Convention indicted at " *Utrecht*; where Ambaſſadors were to meet from *Arheim*, *Levardia*, and the reſt of the Neibour Provinces, and alſo from ſome " Towns in *Holland*, to oppoſe themſelves againſt thoſe that follow the Party of *Hollach*. But that neither did prudent Men " approve this Way. Becauſe it paved a Cauſey to a Schiſm between the States of *Belgium*. And that the only Remedy would " be the ſudden and unexpected Return of the Earl of *Leiceſter*: " [Who was lately gone back to *England* upon ſome Diſguſt;] and " would render void whatſoever Things in his Abſence were innovated, or attempted. Nor was there any Province which he had, " or ſhould have adverſe to his Government; beſides *Delph*, *Gouda*, " *Leiden*, *Amſterdam*. For the other Cities of *Holland*, if any " were of that Number, now it repented them; as of thoſe that " were mentioned, there was Hope, when the Earl ſhould come: " And although *Hollach*, *Buſius* and their Followers had heaped up " divers Pretences, partly falſe, partly wreſted on the ſiniſter Side; " whereby they might render the Earl of *Leiceſter* hated by the " States of *Holland*; yet, as he would open it ingenuouſly, what " it was that offended the moſt part, and thoſe evil Perſons, (whereby for the future Care might be taken) the Chief was, that " upon *Ringouts* Perſuaſion, he [the Earl] ſuffered Enquiry to be " made by ſome vile Men into Things that were paſt, and would " have the Books of the Merchants, as they ſaid, laid open. Which " kind of Men, every one knew, did not want Fraud. Which " they very unwillingly ſuffered to be expoſed to the Common People. They did not bear it hardly, that Caution ſhould be taken " for the future, becauſe that being forewarned they might take " care.

He added, " That this almoſt was the Beginning of the Exacerbation of very many of the City, while the Earl of *Leiceſter*, as " yet was there. That Impediment taken away, and ſuch being " taken into Counſil, not altogether ſuch as they ſhould chooſe, but " ſuch as were without Fault, or when they could not refuſe by any " juſt Cauſe; there would be the greateſt Hope that the Fear would " ceaſe, which of itſelf brought forth Hatred. That of the reſt " there needed no Trouble to be taken. For they would be quieted of their own Accord. But, (as he went on) if the Queen had " taken the chief Power over them, [which ſhe would not do] there " had been no need of theſe Cautions. For then ſhe might have " done all Things by Right, towards her own Subjects, [as they " all then ſhould have been.] But now the States had Occaſion of " contending, that the Queens Ambaſſador had not more ample " Power, than as much as was granted her by the States. And " that therefore without their Conſent he could appoint nothing. " And now he heard, theſe Things were pretended by the States, " that in Appearance they ſeemed not to have offended in thoſe " Things, which had been innovated. Which he thought to be " plainly worthy of Conſideration.

ANNO 1587.

“ Laſtly, That he [the Ambaſſador] ſhould bid the Earl of *Leiceſter*
“ to think very well of the *Zealanders*; who had not known,
“ nor approved any Thing of thoſe Things which for ſome Time
“ had been acted under the Name of the States, who were about
“ to accuſe them of an *ill managed Embaſſy* * who ſent to the
“ States; and (unleſs he miſtook) were alſo about to ſend certain
“ Perſons to the Queen, concerning that Matter, after the Example
“ of the Inhabitants of *Leward*. Neither ſhould it be unadviſed
“ for the Earl of *Leiceſter*, when he ſhould come, to call together
“ the States of *Middleburgh*; and there to diſcourſe of the
“ whole State of Things, before he proceeded further. Becauſe
“ that Province was more moderate than the reſt, and leſs ſuſpected
“ by both Parties; in the mean Time moſt devoted for the Queen
“ and Earls taking on them the Rule *.

* Παραπρεσβείας.

* Imperium:

“ That there remained one Thing, which the Writer believed,
“ he already underſtood; that he that ſought to ſucceed *Sydney* [Sir
“ *Philip Sydney* ſlain] in obtaining the Office of Colonel of *Zealand*,
“ obtained it from the States by the Means of *Hollach*, [Chief of
“ the Faction againſt the Earl.] But that the next Day the
“ States of *Zealand* would meet at *Middleburgh*; to hinder the
“ Way to get it, and to defer it to the coming of the Earl of *Leiceſter*.

“ That it was given them to underſtand, that the Counſil of *Aldegond*
“ and *Viller* to be different from the Conceipt of *Hollach*
“ and *Buſius*; nor did tend to Diſtraction. He rather wiſhed they
“ would rightly counſil Count *Maurice*, that he ſuffered not himſelf
“ to be impoſed upon by *Hollach*; nor to take any Authority
“ upon himſelf, without the Will of the Queen and the Earl of
“ *Leiceſter*. Which he believed they would do. For that they
“ ſufficiently weighed, with what Mind theſe Things might be received
“ by the People, which *Hollach* was tranſacting with his
“ Party. That the Princes of *Aurenge* were not ignorant, that the
“ Safety of Poſterity did depend upon the Protection and Goodwill
“ of the Queen. From whom disjoining themſelves he would
“ looſe himſelf and Country.

And then concerning News thus he went on: “ I have nothing
“ of News here, unleſs that there is an extream Dearth with the
“ Enemy; eſpecially of Bread-Corn; and that we ſhall never have
“ the Occaſion we now have of invading *Flanders*, if we ſhall once
“ let it go out of our Hands. *Bruges* is diſtreſt above the reſt;
“ and may in a ſhort Time be overcome by reaſon of the Famine.
“ For that Place being reduced under Power, will be the Place of a
“ Fort of War. Or whether it ſhould pleaſe, that *Graveling*,
“ or *Newport* ſhould be invaded. For it doth not ſeem adviſeable,
“ again to conſume the whole Summer about *Zutphen*; but
“ it will be enough to place ſtrong Guards in the Neighbourhood.

“ In *Calais* alſo and *Monſtrole*, it is reported, The *Guiſes* attempt
“ ſome new Matter, I know not what, for what End. Whether
“ the King being conſcious of it, or unwilling, as yet we are

“ ignorant. Farewel, Honourable Sir, At *Fliſſing*, the XXII. of
“ *March*, 1587.

Tibi ex animo deditiſs.

Paulus Knibbius.

Earl of Leiceſter returns no more.

This was wrote upon Expectation of the Earls Return back again to *Holland*, after his late Departure into *England*, which was in *December* 1586. But I think he came no more to them; though when he departed, he kept the Government in his Hands, but intruſting it under him to the Council of State. But took from them their wonted Juriſdiction; and left divers Orders with his Officers in his Abſence. He loſt himſelf among the People by his Exactions, and laying new Payments from their Traffick and Merchandizes; procuring Hatred thereby to himſelf. But in expectation of his Return to them in the Spring, this Politician thought fit to write the Inſtructions in the Letter above ſpecified; as ſenſible how important the Queens Forces were in carrying on their defenſive War with the King of *Spain*. I have ſet down this Letter at large, as ſerving to illuſtrate this Part of our *Engliſh* Hiſtory.

A Diſcourſe for raiſing Horſes offered to the Lord Treaſurer.

Care had now been taken to put the Kingdom into a Poſture of Defence. And in Order to that, to raiſe ſufficient Numbers of Soldiers; and to have them in a readineſs. *Raſe Lane*, a brave Gentleman, and skilful in Arms, and a Man of Thought and Invention in Warlike Affairs, diſcovers to the Lord Treaſurer a Way to raiſe Horſe more than before; in a *Diſcourſe* [of his compoſing] for the raiſing Troops of Horſes in the ſeveral Counties. And in Token of his dutiful Care of her Majeſties Service, to make a Preſent of it to her. The Scope whereof was to ſhew (as he wrote in his Letter to the ſaid Lord) a Means, how to raiſe far greater Troops of Horſes and Geldings for Launciers in every Shire for her Majeſties Service, within the Realm to be uſed, (but not to be drawn out of the ſame) than hitherto had been preſented in any Muſters: With a Form alſo to reduce the ſame into Bands. And that he meant (his Lordſhip and the Earl of *Leiceſter* not miſliking) to perſuade ſome Practice of to the Deputies and Gentlemen of that Country wherein he was in Commiſſion. This Diſcourſe he firſt preſented to the Lord Treaſurer; and next to the Earl of *Leiceſter*, Lieutenant General of all the Queens Forces. “ To whoſe Wiſdom, as
“ he ſaid, and experimented Judgment, the Counſils of all her
“ Majeſties Martial Actions ſeemed very ſpecially to be referred.
“ And then he intended to offer it to her Majeſty.

Another Diſcourſe of encamping an Army.

The ſame *Lane* preſented alſo another Diſcourſe, of Encamping an Army in the Field, rather than Quartering them in Towns and Villages. Which he writ in the Year 1576. and now thought fit to revive it in this neceſſary Time. This he writ againſt ſuch as were not for encamping. “ Which Treatiſe (as he ſuggeſted) he compoſed
“ for the Glory of her Majeſty; and that his Countries Service did
“ ſtir him in the preſent Likelihood of ſome honourable Action by
“ the ſame to be taken in Hand. Now concerning the Neceſſity of
“ encamping, and avoiding Villages and Towns; and that even

ANNO 1587.

from the firſt levying of every ſingle Band, from their own Doors, even unto the Place of the general Aſſembly for the whole Army, he obſerved this Order in his Diſcourſe:

The Sum of the Diſcourſe.

" Firſt, To declare the ſundry Inconveniences by lodging Armies, Regiments, or ſingle Bands, in Villages or Towns, while the ſame is in paſſing towards the Place of Service. Secondly, The ſundry Commodities of encamping in the Field, growing thereby as well to the Soldiers, as to the Countries, through the which Bands are to march, either ſingle or in Regiment. Thirdly, To deliver ſome ready Rules, and brief Principles, to reduce a Camp into a certain orderly Diviſion; which no unevenneſs of Ground could eaſily take away, or make to fail, and that with great Facility to the Captain that ſhould diligently obſerve the ſame; with great Eaſe unto the Soldiers, that ſhould be taught orderly to execute the ſame: And for the whole Army being fronted at hand by an Enemy of great Surety and Defence: And on the other ſide, void of all Annoyance unto any Friendly Country in the paſſing thereof." And this and ſuch like Subjects of Diſcourſe were not unſeaſonable, that the Kingdom might be ready with able, diſciplined Soldiers, and well encamped, while it was in expectation of an Invaſion this Year; and actually happened the next, when the Queen had an Army ready in *Tilbury* Camp.

Of this Martial Man we have ſet down ſome particular Notices before. As how the Warlike Earl of *Leiceſter* recommended him to Secretary *Wylſon:* Whom he termed *His very Friend, Raſe Lane*; and what an earneſt Ambition he had to have the Queens Leave to go into the *Levant* Service againſt the *Turk*, *Anno* 1574.

CHAP. X.

Southwel *Collegiate Church, endeavoured to be got from the Archbiſhoprick of* York. *The Archbiſhops Application to ſtop it. Required to be preſent at the Council in* York. Barnes, *Biſhop of* Durham *dies. Some Account of him. Endeavours at Court for the Dean, Dr.* Matthew, *to ſucceed him. The Deans Letter thereupon. The Decay of that Biſhoprick by reaſon of long Leaſes. Troubles of that Collegiate Church by Reaſon of Suits. The preſent ill State of the Biſhoprick of St.* Aſaph. *That Biſhops* Commendams. *The Queen requires a Leaſe of* Dunnington, *belonging to the Biſhoprick of* Ely, *now void. The Dean and Chapters Letter to the Lord Treaſurer hereupon. A Commiſſion of Concealment granted to* Edward Stafford. *Lands of vacant Biſhopricks.*

BUT now let us paſs to Matters relating nearer to the Church and Churchmen, as I have collected them for this Year.

Endeavours to alienate Southwel *from the See of* York.

I begin with the Archbiſhop of *York*. There was a ſtrong Endeavour to get away the Church of *Southwel* from that See: Which was a Collegiate Church, and where the Archbiſhop had a Seat. The Earl of *Leiceſter*, who was in Debt, laboured with the Queen to alienate it, for himſelf perhaps, or ſome of his Friends under pretence of Concealment. The Archbiſhop had before by Word of Mouth interceded with her Majeſty not to grant it away, to the great Injury of the Biſhoprick. But now being retired, he applied himſelf earneſtly to his Friend, and the common Friend of the Church, the Lord Treaſurer, in a Letter, dated from *Biſhopthorp:* Which ran to this Tenor:

The Archbiſhops endeavour to hinder it.

His Letter to Court.

“ That the Bringer came from him, for the Defence of the Church of *Southwel*, which was ſore aſſaulted. That he had ſpoke to her Majeſty of it, and gave her a Note of it in Writing [concerning the Foundation of it, as it ſeems] when he took his Leave. That the Earl of *Leiceſter* had moved her in it. And that he prayed her Majeſty in the Churches Behalf, that if they could not find the gracious Favour which we looked for, that at the leaſt they might have the Benefit of her Laws for their Defence, which Thing would ſerve their Turn.” He added, “ That he had at that Time written an earneſt Letter to the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and he would hope, that he would deal no further in it. He heartily prayed his Lordſhip [the Lord Treaſurer] to continue his good and honourable Favour towards that Church, and not ſuffer

ANNO 1587.

" thoſe greedy Cormorants [the Commiſſioners for Concealments] " to ſwallow it up: Which in Truth have none Intereſt to it. But " theſe Men muſt live by other Mens Loſſes. That he had been at " great Charges about that Church; had travailed much for it; and " that was all the Gain he ſhould ever get by it. And that he only ſet before him herein the Glory of God, and the Maintenance " of Learning and Religion. Which Things to do, I am, ſaid he, " in Conſcience bound to do. And thus commending this Cauſe " unto his wonted Favour and honourable Conſideration, he com" mended his Lordſhip to the good Direction of Gods Holy Spirit. Dated *April* 21. 1587. Subſcribing,

Your Lordſhips moſt bound,

E. Ebor.

The Archbiſhop came ſeldom to the Council in the North. *And why.*

This Archbiſhop did not much appear at *York* with the Preſident and Council there; not liking ſome that ſat there; and by reaſon of Oppoſitions he met with there. This was taken Notice of at Court, inſomuch that the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley* quickened him to be more frequently there; eſpecially in this dangerous Time. The Letter was dated *Febr.* 20. " Certifying him of the Queens Diſ" pleaſure, that he ſo ſeldom appeared in the Commiſſion with the " Preſident and Council. And that he was commanded by her Ma" jeſty to let him know, that ſhe was not well contented with his " Grace; for that ſhe did certainly underſtand, that he did not " attend, or very ſeldom repair to the Lord Preſident and Council " at their Sittings, for the hearing and ordering of the Cauſes of " her Subjects according to the Charge committed to him by her " Commiſſion, and the Truſt ſhe had repoſed in his Grace, as ſhe " ſaid, for his Sincerity, and good Diſpoſition to Juſtice. And " though he ſought (as he went on) to defend him to the Queen " for his Abſence; as that he thought his Grace given to Quiet" neſs, and to refuſe to intermeddle in deciding of Civil Cauſes; " but rather to give himſelf wholly to the Exerciſe of his Epiſcopal " Office in preaching and governing the Church, being his ſpecial " Charge: Yet her Majeſty not diſallowing of his [the Lord Trea" ſurers] Opinion, ſaid, ſhe thought, that his Grace might do God " good Service, in aſſiſting the Lord Preſident and Council, both " in their Seſſions, and at other Times, as well by his Preſence " Perſonally, for the Honour of her Commiſſion, as with his Ad" vice and Counſil in Furtherance of Juſtice to her poor People, as " their Cauſes ſhould require. And that further, her Majeſty ad" ded, that his Grace ſhould have Opportunity many Times even for " Cauſes of Religion, to reform the Obſtinacy of ſome, and the " Raſhneſs of others; both Adverſaries in their Kinds to the pub" lick State of the Church. By which two Sorts ſhe meant (as the " Treaſurer explained it) for the firſt and worſt, Papiſts and Re" cuſants; and for the Second, Innovators or Breakers of common " Orders in the Church. And ſo with many other Speeches, tend" ing to blame him for his Negligence, or rather, as ſhe ſaid, for " his worldly Eaſe, ſhe commanded him [the Treaſurer] to charge

The Lord Treaſurers Letter to him on this Occaſion.

“ him [the Archbiſhop] in her Name ſtraitly, that he ſhould hereafter not forbear to repair to *York* at Seſſions, and there to give his Attendance; except by Sickneſs he ſhould be let.

“ And ſo concluding, he prayed his Grace to have regard to this her Majeſties Command; and not for any Reſpect of Eaſe, or ſaving of Charge, to forbear his Reſort thither; and to let him have ſome Anſwer to be given to her Majeſty.

Barnes, *Biſhop of* Durham *dies.*

Barnes, Biſhop of *Durham* died this Year in the Month of *Auguſt*, St. *Bartholomews* Eve. Dr. *Toby Matthew*, the Dean of that Church preached his Funeral Sermon. In a Book in the Office of *Heralds* this Account is given of him and his Stock and Family. *Rev. in Chriſto Pater, & Venerabilis Vir* Ricardus Barnes, S. T. P. *ſive Doctor, in Comitat.* Lancaſtr. *ex honeſtâ Familiâ, quæ a Dnis. Baronibus de* Barnes *originem traxit, oriundus.* Oxonii *apud Muſas in Coll. Æneſtiacenſi educatus. Cui per aliquot annos piè & providè præfuit. Hinc* Eboracum *evocatus, Almæq; illius Eccleſiæ Metropolitanæ Cancellarius, ac Scholarcha creatus, Sacram Theologiám inibi ad aliquos annos publicè prælegit ac profeſſus eſt. Deinde Epiſcopus factus. Noviſſimè* Dunelmium *tranſlatus jam ad Dei Gloriam Epiſcopus, illius Eccleſiæ habenas ac Gubernacala moderatur.*

Vincent. *No.* 55.

His Chancellor.

This Biſhop had a Brother *John*, who was his Chancellor, a bad Man, addicted to Covetouſneſs and Uncleanneſs. He was to be bribed by Money, to paſs over Crimes preſented and complained of. Which reflected upon the Biſhop himſelf, and gave him an ill Name every where. And when theſe Things were brought to the Biſhop, he would ſay, Others were in the Fault; but it never came to his Knowledge. *Gilpin*, a reverend and pious Preacher in thoſe Parts in a Sermon preached before him, told him plainly, that whatſoever he did himſelf, or ſuffer through his Connivency to be done by others, was wholly his own. The Biſhop took this well, and taking him by the Hand, ſaid, Father *Gilpin*, I acknowledge you are fitter to be Biſhop of *Durham*, than I to be Parſon of *Houghton*; which was *Gilpins* Parſonage.

Toby Matthew *the Dean, talked of to ſucceed.*

Toby Matthews, the Dean of this Cathedral Church, was talked of at Court to ſucceed in this Biſhoprick. But the See was not filled till the Year 1589. But now at the Deceaſe of the former Biſhop, the Revenues were ſomewhat more nicely lookt into. And the ſaid Dr. *Matthews* could find many Alienations, or long Leaſes made, moſt of them in Biſhop *Barnes*'s Time: No leſs than ten long Leaſes. So that when *Francis Mills*, a Gentleman Attendant of Secretary *Walſingham*, had ſhewn him from the ſaid Secretary, that he was deſigned to ſucceed to that See, (chiefly by the Endeavours of the Secretary) the ſaid Dean *Matthew* wrote him a long Letter of the Condition of the Biſhoprick, and of the great Diminution of the Revenues: Which (with other Inconveniencies) ſeemed to diſcourage him from the Acceptation thereof: *Viz.* “ That the Biſhoprick was greatly impaired; the beſt Things of it demiſed at length; and no Proviſion at all of Corn by Rent, or otherwiſe. The Rate very high in the Queens Books. Seventeen hundred Pounds a Year *communibus annis*, going out. The Dioceſs, namely *Northumberland*, ſpecially about the Borders, moſt wretched and miſerable,

His Letter of the State of that Biſhoprick.

ANNO 1587.

“ miſerable, enough to burſt the Heart of an honeſt, well meaning Paſtor: So ſmall Aſſiſtance for the publick Service of Religion. And the State both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil no where leſs, he thought, in all this Realm, or the next. The Place exceeding chargeable in Peace, and in War double dangerous. And ſo he went on in his Account of the Condition of this Preferment. And yet however, as he concluded, if God ſhould ſend it, it ſhould be welcome; if otherwiſe, he was but where he was before; and in better Place, than happly he deſerved; as he humbly expreſſed himſelf.” The whole Letter at length deſerves to be preſerved in Memory of this pious and worthy Man. I have repoſited it in the *Appendix*; as I tranſcribed it from the *Cotton* Library. To which I ſhall ſubjoin the *Particulars* of the ten long Leaſes, granted to the Queen by the former Biſhop and his Predeceſſor, with the Date of the Leaſes, Number of Years, and yearly Rent.

Numb. XXIX.
Numb. XXX.

His Letter to Secretary Walſingham; *adviſing with him about it.*

About this Time the ſaid Dean *Matthew* ſent a Letter of Thanks to Sir *Francis Walſingham* for his great Favour in reſpect of the ſaid Biſhoprick; and therein thought fit to conſult with him [the ſaid Secretary] concerning making his Application to two other great Favourites with the Queen, the Earls of *Leiceſter* and *Eſſex*.

He began his Letter with his thankful Acknowledgment, in the Name of that Church of *Durham*, of ſome great Favour ſhewn to them, the Dean and Chapter, and the whole Body of the Queens Foundation, upon ſome Conteſt with the Archbiſhop of *York*, attempting to infringe their Liberties. And then for his own Part in ſpecial Manner, “ That he was tied to honour and ſerve ſuch a Patron, [as he, the Secretary] while he had Breath, carrying ſuch a Regard, Care and Study of his Preferment, being ſo long, and ſo well acquainted with his exceeding great Favour towards him. But that the leſs his Deſert was to his Honour, the more was his Debt.

Then he adviſed with Sir *Francis* concerning the Earl of *Eſſex*, (who was his Son in Law) concerning addreſſing a Letter to him in this Affair, who was his Friend, and might yet be more, “ Leaſt by his Slackneſs, he might have made a Fault, in not taking Knowledge of his good Will he had done him, or might do for his [the Secretaries] ſake. That as to the Lord Steward [*i. e.* the Earl of *Leiceſter*] his ſingular good Lord and old Maſter, he ſuggeſted to the Secretary in the ſame Letter, that he would gladly take Notice of his Diſpoſition; that is, Whether his Inclination was for ſome other to be preferred to that See. Which if ſo, that he would neither ſeem, nor ſeek to impeach, for all the Promotions (as he added) of the Realm.” But the Deans Letter at large I leave to be read in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XXXI.

Leiceſter *endeavours a Remove of the Biſhop of* Sarum *to* Durham.

It was not long after, that Dean *Matthew* underſtood by the Earl of *Leiceſters* Secretary, that he was making Intereſt with the Queen, in Behalf of *Pierſe*, Biſhop of *Sarum*, to be tranſlated to *Durham*; and that the Earl would endeavour to procure the ſaid Deans Remove to *Sarum*. But that did not accord with the Dean. And that becauſe it would put an End to his Endeavours now for five Years paſt, to accomodate himſelf and his Service, for the Benefit of thoſe rude, remote, *Northern* Parts; and that not without ſome Fruits, as he truſted. Which had coſt him ſome Pains and Charge. But take the Deans own Words in another Letter to the Secretary, more amply declaring his Mind in this Caſe.

Another Letter of the Deans to the Secretary.

" Pleaſeth it your Honour to be certified, that by Mr. *Lyndſeys* " Letter of the 3d of this preſent, [*February*] receiving Advice as " from your Honour, that I mought become a Thankſgiver to my " Lord Steward, and his Honourable Diſpoſition and Liking to have " me ſucceed the late Biſhop of *Dureſm* in this See, I did accord- " ingly write unto his Lordſhip the 18th of this Inſtant. Howbeit " for ſo much as Mr. *Aty*, his Lordſhips Secretary, by his of the " 16th of this preſent, about another Matter, which came to me " the 21ſt, gave me therewith to underſtand, that his Lordſhips " Promiſe for this Biſhoprick was paſt to my Lord of *Sarum*, with " a Purpoſe, if the Place ſhould be offered to me; wherein he " craved ſpeedily to know my Mind; I could not but in Duty and " Reaſon acquaint your Honour with ſo much as was imparted to " me. But withal humbly deſire your Honour, ſo to interrupt the " Courſe of that Proceeding, ſo that no ſuch Remove be tendred " unto me; having now near theſe five Years altogether accomo- " dated myſelf and my Things to the moſt Commodity and Service " of theſe rude, remote Parts; and not without ſome Fruit, I truſt, " and not without ſome ſtudious Endeavour and Charge, I am well " aſſured.

" So that if by any ſuch Plot I ſhall be diſcarded out of this " Country, to make another Mans Game the fairer, and mine own the " worſe, tho' percaſe not in Value of the Promotion, yet for the Or- " der of Teaching, and manner of Living that I have now under- " taken; I could not take it, but for a Diſadvantage with a Diſ- " grace. Which, I hope, I ſhall never either receive, or deſerve at " her Majeſties Hand, my moſt Gracious Sovereign. By whoſe " bountiful Gift, and your Honours Means, I poſſeſs this Place to " my good Contentation. Which I ſhall be hardly perſuaded to de- " part with, but for that Biſhoprick only, which your Honour hath " dealt in for me. In reſpect whereof I confeſs myſelf more deeply " to your Honour indebted, than I can well expreſs. So truſting " your Honour will have regard in Time, that if this Biſhoprick " may not conveniently be obtained, yet I may reſt upon my " Deanry without Offence; I humbly betake your Honour to God, " my Eſtate to your Conſideration, my Service, during Life, to " your Commandment. From *Dureſm*, the 26th of *Febr.* 1587.

Your Honours humble and bounden for ever,

Toby Matthew.

In ſhort, neither the one nor the other, ſucceeded to this Biſhoprick, I mean, neither the Biſhop of *Sarum*, nor *Matthew* Dean of *Durham*, but after a pretty long Vacancy it fell to another *Matthew*, namely *Matthew Hutton*, Dean of *York*. Nor yet when ſome Years after,

ANNO 1587.

Spelm. *Hiſtory of Sacrilege.*

after, the ſaid Biſhoprick of *Durham* fell void again, and this Dr. *Matthew* nominated for it, it fell to another, he not accepting it, not liking certain Terms propounded to him by Sir *Walter Raleigh:* Who held the Caſtle and Manor of *Sherburn* of that Biſhoprick. But at laſt that Epiſcopal See of *Durham* fell to his Lot.

Endeavour to diſſeize the Dean of a Corps of that Deanry.

Our Dean had at this Time another Concern, *viz.* the troubled State of his Deanry, (for ſo he termed it in a Letter to his Friend and Patron, *Walſingham*) partly upon an Incumbrance he was like to receive from *Rob. Cary*, Son to the Lord Chamberlain [Lord *Hunſdon*] who was endeavouring to diſſeize the Dean of the greateſt Part of his Corps there, called *Billingham* and *Holme*, upon Pretence, as it ſeems, of *concealed* Lands, given for Superſtitious Uſes. And was not long before endeavoured to be ſued from him by one *Brakenbury:* Which alſo to looſe, as the Dean ſaid to his ſaid Friend, would have been his Undoing. Adding, That by Suit to be driven to defend it, were much to his Loſs. And to redeem his Claim [that is *Caries*] (bad and weak thought to be) God wot, I am unable? "And thus "(as he concluded,) to your Honours Boſom I am bold to unfold "my Care and Fear: Offering the Conſideration thereof, as of the "reſt, unto your Wiſdom, together with the proſperous State of "your Honour to his Protection and Providence that worketh all in "all, and ever for the beſt to them that love him, and whom he "loveth." Words ſuitable to the Piety and Contentment of this Reverend Man.

Suit between the Archbiſhop of York *and the Church of* Durham.

The Deans Letter to the Secretary. Their Caſe. Cott. Libr. *Titus*, B. 2.

But beſide this Care, which more particularly concerned the Dean, there was now alſo another Care and Trouble lay upon him, for the whole Collegiate Church; in order to the preſerving and vindicating the pretended Privileges thereof. Things in many reſpects being out of Order in that Church of *Durham*, the Archbiſhop of *York* (under whoſe Inſpection it was) had inſtituted a Viſitation of it. But this was thought an Intruſion upon their Privileges. Which cauſed a Suit between the See of *York* and them. This alſo Dean *Matthew* informed the Secretary of, and thanked him for ſome Favours vouchſafed them in this Regard by his Letters. Thus beſpeaking him, "That to their great Grief and Aſtoniſhment they "perceived by Mr. *Bunny*, one of their Brethren [Prebendaries of "that Church] that all his Care and Favour towards them could "not prevail in the Suit between the See of *York* and that Church; "yet their good Hope aſſuring them, that Juſtice and Equity ſhould "take Place in the End. Adding, that they were all, and every of "them, to yield his Honour their humbleſt and greateſt Thanks the "while; as the only Patron upon whom they preſumed in the whole "Cauſe to repoſe both the Dignity of that College, and the Liberty "of that Country. Beſeeching his Honour the rather to continue "forth the ſame his Goodneſs and Furtherance; for that they were "otherwiſe the more overlaid, and overborn by ſo potent an Adverſary, and ſo partial Judges; together with ſo vain and frivolous "Delays. Profeſſing, that as they muſt moſt juſtly acknowledge "themſelves more bound to his Honour, than to any Man, or all "Men beſides, ſo ſhould their Hearts and Services be more devoted

“ to his Honour, than any Church in all this Realm, when Opportunity ſhould be offered, to make Demonſtration thereof.

Rectories in the Biſhoprick of St. Aſaph, *retained by that Biſhop.*

Some of the *Welch* Biſhopricks were fleeced by the reſpective Biſhops; retaining in their Hands the beſt Rectories and other Dignities; as was ſhewed before, in the Year 1582, in the Biſhoprick of S. *Davids*. *Hughs*, Biſhop of S. *Aſaph* ſerved himſelf after this Manner in his Biſhoprick. Indeed the former Biſhop, *Thomas Davies*, had ſome Benefices in the Dioceſs by *Commendams*. For which Archbiſhop *Parker* gave his Judgment to Secretary *Cecil*, for the Queen to grant them to him, in order to the better keeping up the Port of a Biſhop, and maintaining Hoſpitality: See his Letter, *March* 18, 1563. in that Archbiſhops Life. But it ſeems by this Time the Liberty of the Biſhop or Biſhops of this See was talked ſo much of, that the Report of it came to Court; inſomuch that an Account of the State of this Biſhoprick was ſent up this Year. Thus endorſed by the Lord Treaſurers own Hand, *A Diſcovery of the preſent State of the Biſhoprick of St.* Aſaph. *Feb.* 24. 1587. Dr. *Hughes*, ſome Time of *Oxford*, Biſhop. I found it in a Book that had ſome Notes of that Lords Hand, of Things laid before him, I ſuppoſe, in Complaint and for Redreſs. It contained mention of the great Livings within the Dioceſs, ſome with Cure of Souls, and ſome without Cure, which were either holden by the Lord Biſhop himſelf in *Commendam*, or elſe in the Poſſeſſion of ſuch as dwelt out of the Country. Then follows a Particular at large of theſe Benefices. Whereof an Archdeaconry and nine Cures, and ſeven *Sine*-Cures were held by him: This Paper I have laid in the *Appendix*. Therein alſo is ſpecified the Parcels of the Biſhoprick leaſed out, and to whom; and on what Terms: Alſo that Biſhops Miſgovernment and Neglects: And likewiſe of his Courts: And the want of Hoſpitality by the Means of Non-reſidency.

Life of Archbiſhop Parker. *Book* II. *Ch* 17.

Preſent State of this Biſhoprick.

Num. XXXII.

The Queen requires a Leaſe of Donnington, *belonging to the Biſhoprick of* Ely, *for one* Aſhby.

The See of *Ely*, now void ſix Years without a Biſhop, a Gentleman had obtained a Letter from the Queen, to the Dean and Chapter there, to grant him a Leaſe of certain Manors belonging to that Biſhoprick. The Letter was brought to Dr. *Perne*, the Dean; ſignifying, “ That it was her Majeſties Will and Pleaſure: And we “ do hereby (as the Letter ran) authorize you to make a Leaſe unto our Truſty and Well-beloved Servant, *Will. Aſhby*, Eſq; and “ to his Aſſigns, of the Manor of *Dunnington* and *Thriplow*; being “ together of the yearly Rent of XIX *l.* and of the Parſonage of “ *Hinkſton*, of XVI *l.* Rent by Year, or thereabouts; Parcel of the “ Temporalties of the Biſhoprick of *Ely*, now vacant. The ſame “ Leaſe in due and ſufficient Form made for XXI Years. To begin after the Statute now in being. And to be confirmed under “ your Chapter Seal: Reſerving the accuſtomed yearly Rents unto “ the See of *Ely*; and under ſuch Covenants and Conditions as are “ in like Demiſe uſual. Given under our Signet, at our Manor of “ *Greenwich*, the 13th of *April*, 1587.

“ This Letter of her Majeſty was delivered by Mr. *Aſhby* to me, “ *Andrew Perne*, Dean of *Ely*, the 7th of *June*, and opened in the “ Chapter Houſe in the Preſence of the Prebendaries the 10th of “ the

ANNO 1587.

“ the ſame Month, 1587. As it was under-written by the Dean, in due Obſervance to the Queen, and her Pleaſure.

Secretary Walſingham, *to the Dean and Chapter of* Ely, *concerning this Leaſe.*

This Letter from the Queen was attended with another to the ſaid Dean and Chapter from Secretary *Walſingham*, importing, “ That the Queen, having by her ſpecial Letter written her Pleaſure unto them, for granting a Leaſe of certain Things unto that Gentleman, her good Servant, Mr. *Aſhby*; and had alſo been pleaſed of her Special Favour and Grace to him, to will him [the Secretary] to let them underſtand, that her Highneſs had that Care of him, that ſhe would have them know, that no Favour ſhould be omitted on their Parts, which any Way they might ſhew him, to the more Benefit: But that they ſhould grant unto him thoſe Things, which were ſpecified in her Letter, with all the Commodities belonging to the ſame, as largely and effectually, as was in them to do, and according to her gracious Meaning: Namely, the Royalties of the Manor of *Thriplow*. Dated from the Court at *Greenwich*, the 15th of *April*.

Their Letter to the Treaſurer on this Occaſion.

But as theſe Letters from Court, or other great Men, were ſeldom very acceptable to Biſhops or Collegiate Churches, to abridge them the Liberty of beſtowing their Lands and Preferments; ſo this Dean and Chapter of *Ely* found Cauſe to mention an Obſtacle to the granting this Leaſe to *Aſhby*, required of them. The Lord Treaſurer had granted *Donnington* before to *Richard Cox* [the deceaſed Biſhops Son] during the Term of the Vacancy; and had beſtowed ſeveral Things beſide, belonging to the ſaid Biſhoprick. Whence they concluded, that all the reſt belonged to him, during the Vacancy. And therefore they had forborn to ſeal the Leaſe, as they were authorized by the Queen, until they underſtood the Lord Treaſurers Mind, being Steward of their Church. And whereas among other Grants, made by former Kings to the Prior and Convent of the Church of *Ely*, they had the Privilege of keeping and receiving all the Temporalties, during the Vacancy: They took this Occaſion to move the Treaſurer, to obtain of her Majeſty the like Grant of keeping the Temporalties, *Sede vacante*. And then they reckoned they might ſafely yield to her Letters, without Prejudice to that See, or any other. And this was the Sum of a Letter from them to the ſaid Treaſurer; encloſing therein divers Grants of her Majeſties Progenitors under their Seals, granting their Church this Privilege: Promiſing withal that they would not paſs any Thing belonging to the Biſhoprick, but would firſt make him privy thereunto, and with his Aſſent. This was ſigned by the Dean, and ſeveral others Prebendaries, who were Heads of Colleges in *Cambridge*. This Letter, tranſcribed from the Original, will be found in the *Appendix*.

Num. XXXIII.

Commiſſion of Concealment and other Grants, to Edward Stafford.

A Mortification of the Clergy, as well as others, that had Church Lands, was the granting Commiſſions for concealed Lands; which ſome obtained of the Queen, greedy Courtiers and others: Whereby many grievous Oppreſſions were occaſioned, and complained of. Of theſe *Edward Stafford*, Eſq; was one, who had obtained ſuch a Commiſſion from the Queen, of Concealment of Lands, given to ſuperſtitious Uſes under the Times of Popery. He procured alſo a

Leaſe from the Queen (for his further Profit and Advantage) of Parſonages impropriate. Which was to comprize all this following; (according to a Relation of it by the Lord Treaſurer, as I tranſcribe it from his own Hand) *viz.*

By Leaſe for a Rent.

I. Parſonages impropriate; Free Chapels, Guiles, Chauntries, Lay Prebends, Colleges; relinquiſhed, diſſolved or eſcheated.

By Leaſe for a Rent.

II. All Parſonages, Vicarages without Cure; whereof the Pariſhes are depopulated; the Churches profaned, decayed, waſted, defaced: That remain concealed, and which of Right ought to belong to the Queen; and which may be found out, or challenged by *Edward Stafford.*

III. Advouſons, Preſentations, Nominations, Donations; of all Parſonages, Vicarages without Cure, as in the ſecond Branch.

IV. Advouſons, Preſentations, Nominations, Donations of all other Parſonages and Vicarages, with Cure, Prebends Preſentative, and Donative, being concealed, detained by any Means.

To give, diſpoſe and preſent, as often as any of them ſhall become void, during the Term.

Of all theſe, Books are to be made; to paſs the ſame from her Majeſty to *Edw. St.* [*Stafford.*] With a *Proviſo* to hear the Controverſies for diſplacing of any Preacher, Miniſter, Parſon or Vicar, in the Exchequer.

A Suit to the Queen to take ſome Revenues of Biſhopricks for the Earl of Leiceſter.

To mention another Aſſault made this Year upon the Church; namely, upon the Revenues of the Biſhopricks; endeavoured by the Earl of *Leiceſter.* Who in a Suit to her Majeſty upon the Deceaſe of *Barnes*, Biſhop of *Durham*, moved her to take to herſelf divers Biſhops Lands, the Biſhopricks being then void, to the Value of a Thouſand two hundred Pounds yearly Rent; and to ſettle upon them Impropriations in the Room thereof. The Suit being to this Tenor: “That it would pleaſe her Majeſty to reſume from the Biſhopricks of *Durham*, *Ely*, *Oxford* and *Briſtol*, now being void, Manors, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, to the clear yearly Value of MCC *l.* And that her Majeſty would recompence the ſame with Parſonages impropriate, Tithes and Tenths to the like clear yearly Value of MCC *l.*

“Then it was deſired, that after the ſaid MCC *l.* ſhall be reſumed, and Recompence delivered as aforeſaid, it would pleaſe her Majeſty, at the Suit of the Right Honourable, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and in Conſideration he ſhall aſſure unto her Highneſs, her Heirs and Succeſſors, for every of the Manors, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments, to the clear yearly Value of M *l.* To grant unto the ſaid Earl and his Heirs for ever, the Fee-ſimple of ſo much of Biſhops Lands and Poſſeſſions as ſhall amount to the clear yearly Value of M *l.* and of Lands whereof her Majeſty is in Reverſion or Remainder, to the clear yearly Value of CC *l.* Whether this Suit was granted; or no, I know not. But 'tis ſure, the Earl, whoſe Death happened the next Year, died deep in the Queens Debt.

CHAP. XI.

A Synod held by the Diſciplinarians: Orders conſiſting of 16 *Articles there concluded. One* Durden *in* Cambridge *calls himſelf* Elias. *His Examination: And pretended Viſions. Letter of Intelligence from an* Engliſh *Prieſt in* France. Anthony Tyrrel, *a Prieſt, renounces his Religion: Revokes what he had renounced: His Proteſtations, in ſome Letters.* Weſton *a Jeſuit. He with ſome other Prieſts pretend to caſt out evil Spirits. A new Commiſſion of the Peace for* Lancaſhire. *The Effect of it; for Diſcovery of Prieſts.* Fleetwood, *Parſon of* Wigan, *his Letter. A Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical. A Note taken of the Catholick Gentlemen, and their Livings.*

A Synod held by the Puritans.

HOW the Church now ſtood; Firſt, as to the *Diſciplinarians*, whoſe Endeavour was to unſettle the Conſtitution of it by Epiſcopacy, and its Liturgy: There was a notable Synod held by them this Year privately, the Place uncertain, whether at *Warwick*, where *Cartwright* was placed, or *Cambridge*. And here divers Orders were made for Church Diſcipline, and Rules to be obſerved by Miniſters; and Matters to be diſcourſed in their Conferences. And there was a Letter of Credit or Truſt in *Latin* framed, and to be ſigned by two of the eminenteſt *Puritan* Miniſters in the divers Counties, for the Overſight and Inſtruction of the reſt in thoſe Places, as Occaſion required. The Form whereof was:

The Synods Letter of Credit.

“ *Salutem in Chriſto, Amen. Reverende Frater, Chariſſimis Frater noſter*, D. N. In *Engliſh* thus, Reverend Brother, our very dear Brother, Mr. *N.* hath been deſired to come and ſpeak with you. He was deſired alſo to impart unto you ſome Things, relating to me and certain other Brethren in theſe Places: And if any other are there to whom the ſame may profitably be communicated. Whom therefore I have not comprized in this Letter; becauſe he ſhall have Diſcourſe with you, whoſe Faithfulneſs is ſufficiently known. To whom I deſire you to give Credence in ſuch Things as he ſhall communicate to you in our Name. And ſo, dear Brother, Farewel” What was decreed and appointed at Numb. XXXIV. this Synod was contained in 16 Articles. Which, with the aforeſaid Letter, all in *Latin*, may be found in the *Appendix*. Whereby it appears, what Courſe and Method they took to ſettle their Diſcipline through the Kingdom; and nominated two or more of their Brethren, the Miniſters of chiefeſt Account in each County, to ſuperintend there, and diſperſe Orders.

As, in *Suffolk*, D. *Knewſtub*, and —— *Allen*. In *Kent*, *Nichols*, *Eſtwel*, and *Elvyn*, *Weſtwel*. In *Eſſex*, *Gifford* and *Rogers*. In *Northampton*, *Barbon*, and *Flood*. In *Surrey*, *Rychman*, and *Udall*. In *London*, *Field*, and *Egerton*. In *Hertford*, *Dyke* and *Pig*. In *Warwick*, *Cartwright*, and *Fen*. And in *Cambridge*, *Chadderton*.

Perſons appointed by the Synod for each County, as Chief.

And here it is to be noted concerning this Synod, that they laboured to vindicate themſelves, and their Party, from making a *Schiſm* in the Church eſtabliſhed. Thus in one of their Articles, concerning their *Conferences*, they are directed, "To wipe off the Calumny "of *Schiſm*; in that the Brethren communicated with the Church "in the Word and Sacraments, and in all other Things, except its "Corruptions; and that they aſſumed no Authority to themſelves "of compelling others to their Decrees.

Clear themſelves of the Scandal of Schiſm.

There was a Synod, or *Claſſis* this Year held in *Cambridge*. Whether theſe aboveſaid were the Acts of that Synod, I leave to conjecture. What is found in the 13th Article may make it probable, that it was held at the Univerſity, *viz. De Miniſterio Academico deliberandum a Fratribus* in *proximum Conventum, ſi interſint Academici.* That is, "That the Brethren at the next Meeting "ſhould conſult concerning the Univerſity Miniſters, if any Univerſity Men were preſent. See further concerning theſe Puritan "Societies, in a Book written near thoſe Times, called *Dangerous* "*Poſitions:* By Dr. *Bancroft*; afterwards Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*.

Lib. III. *Ch.* 5, 6.

This was one of their Conventions, as they had their private ſtated Times and Places for others. Thus at this preſent Convention or Synod, they referred ſome Things to be tranſacted at their next. As, to diſcuſs the Queſtion of the holy and ſynodical Diſcipline, how it agreed with the Word of God; and how far they might lawfully uſe it with the Peace of the Church. And then to conſult concerning the Miniſters of the Univerſity. For further Account of theſe Claſſical Aſſemblies, I refer the Reader to the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*.

Matters to be diſcuſſed at another Convention.

B. III. *Ch.* 21. *p.* 290.

What is above writ will ſerve particularly to ſhew what *Camden* in his *Annals* of Queen *Elizabeth* writes, *viz.* "That the *Puritans* had now begun to exerciſe their Diſcipline in Corners, in "deſpight of the Authority of the Laws; holding Synods and "*Claſſes* in ſeveral Places, and forming Presbyteries. For which "Cauſe *Cartwright*, *Snape*, and ſome other Miniſters were called "in Queſtion.

The Diſcipline ſet up privately. Camd. Eliz. *p.* 421.

One of theſe, an Enthuſiaſt, comes into Trouble this Year, whoſe Name was *Durden*, a Miniſter, calling himſelf *Elias*. What his Principles were appears by a Period in one of his Papers, that were taken, *viz.* "But what Judges be now a-days? They command "Popiſh and needleſs Ceremonies. And ſuch as obey not, they "call Rebellious. As if it were lawful for Kings to command what "they will. There is one Lawgiver, which ſaith, the Fear is vain, "that is taught by the Precepts of Men. This Man was at length taken at *Cambridge*, where he had reſorted among ſome of his Ac-

One calls himſelf Elias.

ANNO 1587.

quaintance, and ſecretly diſperſed his falſe Doctrine. And was brought before Dr. *Copcot*, the Vicechancellor, and examined. The Sum of his Examination with a Letter, was ſent from the Vicechancellor to their High Chancellor, the Lord *Burghley*: Therein giving him Information:

The Vicechancellors Letter to Lord Burghley *concerning him.*

“ That one *Raphe Durden*, B. A. of *Pembroke* Hall, and after Miniſter in *Eſſex*, (from whence he came and kept with his Friends in *Cambridge*) was impriſoned by him in *November* laſt, becauſe he named himſelf *Elias*; and being ſet at Liberty would be preaching very diſorderly in every Place whither he could come. And that ſince that Time he had written certain Papers, and as it ſeemed, diſperſed them abroad: Interpreting the *Revelation* of St. *John* after his own Fancy. And that both in Word and Writing, had uttered ſome dangerous Matters touching the Eſtate of this Realm, as by the Examination of one *Rob. Williamſon*, [one of *Durdens* Hearers] might appear: As well by other Papers; which he ſent to him ſealed up; as he had them from the *Tolebooth*, where *Durden* remained in Hold. Whither he had alſo ſent *Williamſon*, till he heard further his Lordſhips Pleaſure. This was dated from *Trinity* College *Cambridge*, *June* 25, 1587.

Now to underſtand in ſome Particulars what dangerous Matters this Enthuſiaſt had uttered, both by his Speeches and Writings, here ſhall enſue the Examination, that the ſaid Vicechancellor ſent up, ſigned by the Univerſity Regiſter.

The Examination and Confeſſion of Rob. Williamſon *of* Cambridge, *Taylor, had and made before Mr.* John Copcot, D. D. *and Vicechancellor of* Cambridge, *and Mr.* Iſaac Baro, *Doctor of Phyſick.*

His Prophecies, what ſhould happen in this Kingdom.

“ The ſaid *Rob. Williamſon* ſaith, That he came firſt acquainted with *Raphe Durden* in the *Tolebooth*, being both there Priſoners: Which *Durden* nameth himſelf *Elias*. And that *D.* ſaid, That the 24th of *February* come twelve Month, *England* ſhall have a new Prince: And that Prince ſhall Reign but five Months. And he ſhall be a Papiſt.

“ *Item*, *Dur.* ſaid, That all that tarry in *England* ſhall be damned, except they go with him, the ſaid *Durden*, to build *Jeruſalem*. *Item*, The ſaid *Dur.* ſaid, that he himſelf, *viz.* the ſaid *Dur.* ſhould be King of the whole Earth. *Item*, This Examinate ſaith, That *D.* ſaid, he had a Mark upon his left Thigh. Which divers then preſent would have ſeen. But *D.* refuſed ſo to do. But afterwards he, *D.* ſhewed it to this Examinate. And it was a little round Spot. And further, *D.* ſaid, the round Circle doth ſignify, that I ſhall be King of the whole Earth. *Item*, This Examinate ſaith, That he had a Writing of the ſaid *D*'s Opinion, about a Month paſt delivered unto him by the ſaid *D.* Which he, *D.* willed the ſaid Examinate to ſhew to a learned Man. *Item*, This Examinate ſaith, That one *Henry Reeder*, a Collier, was in the *Tolebooth* with this Examinate, and ſo came acquainted with him. Who of late, paſſing this Examinates Houſe, deſired of

“ him the foreſaid Writing, to ſhew it to their Vicar: And promiſed
“ to bring the ſaid Writing back again ſhortly.

Concordat cum Original. Ita teſtor Mattheus Stokys, *Not. publicus.*

This ſaid Writing from *Reeder*, came into the Hands of a Juſtice of Peace in *Suffolk* about 12 Miles from *Cambridge*, and from him to the Vicechancellor; and was one of the Papers ſent up to the ſaid Lord *Burghley*. In which by way of Letter to *Williamſon*, he concluded, from ſeveral Places of the old Propheſies and the *Revelations*, theſe four Things: *viz.* 1. That the *Jews* were to be brought from among the *Gentiles* unto the Land of *Judea*. 2. That he was appointed and ordained of God, to be their Deliverer. And 3dly, That they [of his Party] ſhould be ſent unto the promiſed Land; and that in the Queens Days that then reigned. And 4thly, That ſhortly after this all the Kings of the World ſhould be gathered together to fight againſt them in *Judea*. But they [that ſhould go with him, and were of his Side] ſhould have the Victory, and all the Kings of the World be obedient unto them; and that for a Thouſand Years they ſhould be obedient to the Goſpel. This whole Letter is too large to be inſerted here; but being ſomewhat extraordinary, I ſhall give it a Place in the *Appendix*.

Foretells the Jews *to be brought to their own Land by him.*

Num. XXXV.

In this Writing, he gave out himſelf to have an extraordinary Calling; and that by that Calling he knew, he was the Perſon ordained of God to deliver the *Jews*, who were the 144000 ſpoken of in the *Revelations*: And that the Time exactly agreed; and that he was to bring them to their own Land. And that becauſe he was the Lion of the Tribe of *Judah*, and the Root of *David*. And to prove that he was the Perſon, he had extraordinary Viſions moſt like the Viſion of the ſeven Seals. For that God inwardly informed him of the underſtanding of the *Apocalypſe*, and *Daniels* Propheſy. And that he was certified of all this by another Property of that Perſon. *Apoc.* 19. 16. *He had on his Thigh a Name written, King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.* Which Place he applied to himſelf, becauſe on his Thigh there was a Mark or Print of a round Circle: Which he interpreted to ſignify his Proportion of that Poſſeſſion he was promiſed, that is, the whole World. And that this Deliverance of the *Jews*, which ſhould be effected by him, ſhould commence the 24th of *February*, *An. Dom.* 1589. For then the 42 Months, and a Time, and two Times and half a Time ſhould expire.

We have ſome Matters to relate alſo concerning ſome of the Popiſh Prieſts and *Jeſuits*, falling out this Year. And firſt, I tranſcribe here a Letter of Intelligence ſent from an *Engliſh* Prieſt in *France* in ſome Convent or College there: Intitled by the Writer; *True Intelligence.* This ſeems to have been intercepted; and by that Means came into the Hands of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; among whoſe Papers I found it. Where Notices are given of the preſent

A Letter from an Engliſh *Prieſt in* France *intercepted.*

ANNO 1587.

Affairs of *France*, as well as *England*. I ſhall ſet all down, as I find it, *viz.*

“Five Prieſts executed in *England* in divers Places: Whereof four hanged, drawn and quartered; the fifth ſtoned: Becauſe he would anſwer to no Interrogatories of *Iſs*, and I cannot tell what. Their Names were *Pilcher*, *Sandes*, *Haulley*; *reliquos neſcio.* The reſt are, as I hear ſince, *Dakins*, *Patinſon*, (but this is not certain.) Mr. *Peeters* at *Roan* long ſince is dead. Mr. *Panel* taken by Prodition [*i. e.* betrayed] by a Curate in *Monmouthſhire*. Mr. *Morgan*, Mr. *Eles*, Mr. *Morgan Clenocke* and others, do all well, and much good: [*Emiſſaries*, as it ſeems.] Here is one *Canon* [a Meſſenger] from them.

“Here arrived upon *Saturday* Queen Mother, [and Regent of *France*] with the Princeſs of *Lorrain*, with *Pinante* [*Pinart*] the Princeſſes Secretary, *Bellieure*, and *Lanſack*, Secretaries of Eſtate, and two or three Chevaliers *de S. Eſprit*, with Count *Cerny*. A monſtrous Retinue of Men, *viz.* the Princes of *Nemoures*, *de Montpenſier*, the Duke *Nemoures*, Counts, *&c.* An infinite Company there is. So that here is ſuch a Court as I never ſaw. She lies at St. *Peters*, and hath commanded all the Dukes, and Princes to lie here about her. So that our Scholars are thruſt out of their Chambers. Too too bad.

“The Talk is, that *Nemours* ſhall marry the Princeſs of *Lorain* here. *Sed non facile videtur.*

“Perſecution in *England*, monſtrous great. No Paſſage at all, but by Stealth in *Scottiſh* Veſſels.

“Great Talk that *Drake* is overthrown. *Sed non credo.*

“The Lord Chancellor [*Bromley*] is dead. Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton* in his Place. Sir *Rafe Sadler* is dead, [Chancellor of the Dutchy.] And *Walſingham* in his Place, *Rawlie*, [Sir *Walter*] in *Hattons* Place. Sir *Amias Paulet* in *Walſinghams* Place. The Earl of *Rutland* is dead alſo.

“They muſter and play the Devil in *England*. Great Bruits that *Leiceſter* comes over again. *Sed non credo.* He is gone to the *Bath* ſick; they ſay, incurable. *Sed nec hoc credo.*

“The Lord *Paget*, Sir *Francis Englefield*, *Charles Paget*, *Francis Throgmorton*, and the reſt, executed in *London*. Their Lands are ſequeſtred by Act of Parliament, notwithſtanding all Conveyances to the contrary.

“One Subſidy and two Fifteens granted by the Clergy, and Temporalty.

“We fear here a beggarly Peace, [*i. e.* with the Proteſtants.] The Dukes have no Mind at all. And they be *puſillanies.* Which the King will never make his Vantage of, to their Diſhonour.

“At *Rome* is dead Mr. *Wolley*, Prieſt. At the *Spaw* of late Mr. *Allot*, Prieſt. At *Paris*, Mr. *Rob. Fenne*, a baniſhed Prieſt, Brother to Mr. *Fenn* at *Deventrie*.

Anthony Tyrril *comes about again from Popery a ſecond Time.*

The laſt Year were given ſome Remarks of *Anthony Tyrril*, a Prieſt, that had been diſcovered and taken up. Who at length renounced his Popiſh Religion, and was reconciled to that of this reformed Church; and ſo was ſet at Liberty. But ſoon after revoked his Revocation; and returned back again to his firſt Religion; and diſavowed all that he had confeſſed in his former Informations againſt divers Popiſh Fugitives. Now (as it ſeems under ſome Reſtraint) he is come about again, and become a Proteſtant. And upon this, preſumed to make this humble Addreſs to the Queen in the Month of *Auguſt*, 1587.

Anno 1587.

His Letter to the Queen.

"Since the Performance of one good Deed in the Sight of God is " more acceptable, than many Words, I had rather ſeek, moſt gra- " cious Sovereign, to amend my Fault by ſome well-doing Act, " than to better myſelf only by ſaying. Once have I fallen moſt " grievouſly from my Faith unto Almighty God and your Majeſty. " Your Highneſs Wiſdom can eaſily diſcern, whether it were of " pure Malice, or of Infirmity. Had I departed away with a Mind " obdurate in Malice, I never had returned to make Repentance. " Wherefore ſince it hath been voluntary, I truſt it ſhall find the " more Favour in your Sight. As I am come home to embrace a " true Religion, ſo am I come to yield all true Obedience. For the " one ſo dependeth on the other, that the one is hardly kept with- " out the other.

"When I fell into the Hands of thoſe that perverted me, they " firſt ſhaked me in my Faith, before I forgot my Duty. And " when by Conſent I had yielded up the one, I was the more eaſily " drawn to forget the other. God forgive me my Offence in both. " And that your Majeſty do not cenſure me according to my De- " ſerving.

"As concerning that *pernicious Book* which I penned for the Pa- " piſts before my Departure: * Wherein I repealed for Falſhood, " which *bona Fide* I had uttered unto your Majeſty, and my Lord " Treaſurer, I am by your Favour ſo far to aſſert, as in the pub- " liſhing thereof they ſhall have ſmall Gain. Such Things as ſhall " concern the Defence of Gods Truth, the Preſervation of your " Majeſty, and the Safety of your Realms, I am ready (God wil- " ling) ſo to confirm, that neither Fear nor Flattery ſhall cauſe me " to deny again. Such Matters as ſhall but touch the Conſciences " of your diſcovered Subjects, I would ſo ſpare as that they find in " me no Humour of Malice for to remain. For being come home " for the Safety of my own Soul, I would be loth to have a Mind to " perſecute my Brother. As God by Mercy hath recalled me, ſo al- " ſo by Mercy he is able to recall them. And Charity would, that " as for myſelf, ſo ſhould I pray for them. I leave to trouble your " Highneſs any further; only on my Knees I crave Pardon for that " is paſt; and I hope your Majeſty ſhall receive better Fruit of me " to come. Our Lord preſerve you and grant you long to Reign. " *London*, the of *Auguſt*, 1587.

* *See his Letters to the Queen and Treaſurer the laſt Year.* Chap. VI.

Your Majeſties Loyal and Obedient Subject,

Ant. Tyrell.

ANNO 1587.

Offers by any Act to manifeſt his true Repentance.

And here, to diſpatch what I have further to ſay of this Man, I find him the next Year addreſſing another Letter to the Lord Treaſurer, dated from St. *Katharines*. Where, I ſuppoſe, upon his humble Submiſſion and Proteſtations, he might be admitted to abide in Favour, and to keep him the faſter from revolting again. Yet ſome further Teſtimony of the ſincerity of his Change and reality of his Repentance, was required of him. Which to ſhew his readineſs to do, he thus opened and manifeſted himſelf to that Lord:

“ That if he wiſt which way he might recover ſome Part of his Favour and good Will, which worthily (he confeſſed) he had loſt, by yielding of any Satisfaction that he were able for his Offence committed, he ſhould not only mitigate ſome Part of his Sorrow conceived, but prepare himſelf unto any laudable Action with a comfortable Spirit. That he had in former Times been too tedious unto his Honour; and therefore he dared not at that preſent Adventure to write much. That he was only in all Humility to beſeech his Lordſhip to grant him his wonted Favour, and he ſhould moſt gladly and thankfully receive it upon any Condition. That he did but expect his Lordſhips good Pleaſure, and (God willing) he ſhould be always ready to perform any Action, which his Wiſdom ſhould think expedient for the manifeſtation unto the World of his true Repentance; having ſcandalized ſo much, for his oft revolting.

“ That what it ſhould pleaſe his Honour to have done with his Confeſſion, he would gladly be informed. That if neither the Method nor Manner were unto his Liking; he would, God willing, take in Hand ſome other Thing. And until he might know his Lordſhips Pleaſure, he would ſpare both his Labour and his Pen.

“ I thought it thus my Duty, as he went on, to advertiſe your Honour of my good Will and Readineſs; remaining in Hope of your accuſtomed goodneſs, not only pardoning of my laſt Offence, but in remembring the great Miſery, which without your Honourable Aſſiſtance, had altogether overwhelmed me. The God of all Glory and Conſolation preſerve your Honour. And as he hath quite and clean averted my Mind from all Impiety; ſo to convert your honourable Compaſſion yet once again to pity me. Without the which Death ſhall be more welcome unto me than Life. Thus my Soul reſolving into a Fountain of Tears for memory of my Sins, I ceaſe further to trouble your Honour. S. *Katharines*, the 15th of *Octob.* 1588.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble and daily Orator,

Anth. Tyrell.

Recants.

Annals.

Upon which Requeſt of *Tyrrel*, I make no doubt, that Lord required him to make a publick Recantation, to ſatisfy the World. And ſo I find he did openly, with one *Tedder* another Seminary Prieſt, at St. *Pauls Croſs*, in the Month of *December* following: As we find in *Stow*.

But

ANNO 1587.

But whether he was in earneſt after all theſe Profeſſions and Proteſtations, it may be doubtful, ſince *Equivocation* is an avowed Doctrine of the *Jeſuits*; as the Secular Prieſts, among their Accuſations of the *Jeſuits*, laid to their Charge in a Book of the *Relation* of the Factions at *Wisbich*: " That they were ſo delighted with Equivo-" cations, as that to the Scandal of others, they are not aſhamed to " defend it in their publick Writings. And that hence it came to paſs, that though they ſwore, Men would not believe them.

Equivocation, a Doctrine of the Jeſuits.

Pag. 73.

Quodlibets.

Well, after *Tyrrel* had gone thus far, he then with more Confidence addreſſed to the Lord Treaſurer to be admitted into his Preſence, of which he had been ſo long deprived. " That as *Abſalom* " could enjoy no comfort of Mind, though he were brought back " to *Jeruſalem*, till he had ſeen the Kings Face; ſo, that as he " was by the Mercy of God, and the Clemency of his Prince, re-" ſtored from Death to Life, and left to enjoy the ſweet Liberty of " his Country, nay, and the Life and Liberty of his Soul: Yet " could he not be at full Quiet of Mind, until he might enjoy his " Lordſhips Preſence, and the Recovery of his good Favour. And " he hoped, God would ſo underprop him with his Grace, as " from thenceforth he ſhould not hear of him ſo much as a light " Suſpicion of Treachery, Hypocriſy or Diſſimulation. But I leave this Teſtimony of himſelf under his own Hand in his Letter, from St. *Katharines*, ſet in the *Appendix*. And ſo we take our Leave of him.

His Requeſt next after.

Numb. XXXVI.

Weſton, alias *Burges*, one of this Sort, had brought Letters from *Philip* Earl of *Arundel* (who was committed to the *Tower*, and afterwards tried by his Peers and caſt) written to Cardinal *Allen*, promiſing therein to give his Help for promoting the Catholick Cauſe; and for that Cauſe had an Intent to withdraw himſelf out of the Realm. This *Weſton*, who was a *Jeſuit*, pretended, with ſome other Popiſh Prieſts, to the Power of caſting out evil Spirits out of ſome poſſeſſed with them; and by that Means to bring over the People to their Religion. Dr. *Abbot* (who was afterwards Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*) hath a remarkable Paſſage concerning this *Weſton*, and ſome more of his Party, of their Managery of this their Craft, in his Book againſt Dr. *Hills Reaſons*.

Weſton *a Jeſuit pretends to the Exorciſing Faculty.*

Camd. *pag.* 425.

" That he, and a whole Dozen of Prieſts, conſpiring with him, " did for ſome Years together put themſelves upon a Practice to exor-" ciſe Devils out of ſome poſſeſſed. And had perſuaded ſome Men, " and three Maidens, that they were poſſeſſed with the Devil. (For " which *Abbot* named a certain Book printed, called, *A Declaration* " *of Popiſh Impoſtures*) and that they, by their prieſtly exorciſing " Faculties, could fetch him in and out, up and down, at their " Pleaſure. They had a holy Chair, to ſet their abuſed Diſciples " in, and a holy Poiſon to adminiſter to them. Both Matters pre-" tended to be formidable to the foul Spirits: But indeed Tricks to " caſt their Patients into ſtrange Fits. That ſo they might ſeem as " well to themſelves, as others ſtanding by, to be poſſeſt in moſt " hideous Manner. And this was ſo artificially carried by the *Je-" ſuit*, and his Fellow-jugglers, that divers hundreds of unſtable " and unadviſed People, being couſened by their Impoſtures, were " content-

Dr. Abbot *againſt* Hills Reaſons, *p.* 278.

“ contented to be reconciled to the Church of *Rome*; being won thereunto by their ſtupendous Miracles.

“ A Book alſo, or two, was penned to be ſpread abroad beyond the Seas of the admirable Domineering of theſe Prieſts over the poſſeſſing Spirits, and of the Wonders which they had done upon them. Notwithſtanding now by the Confeſſion of three of the Females, and one Man, (all which were then pretended poſſeſſed Perſons) and of another then, a Prieſt, and a perſonal Actor in this Exploit; all theſe five, (being ſworn, and ſpeaking upon Oath) it was manifeſtly and undoubtedly diſcovered to be moſt egregious, both Varletry and Villany, that among Men profeſſing Religion and Devotion was ever heard.

Upon which our Divine makes this Inference; “ That if our ſeduced *Romaniſts* would not cloſe their Eyes, they might ſee upon what Traſh their Worſhip is built; and that their Leaders care not, how they be abuſed and led by the Noſe; ſo that their own Projects and Intendments be effected.

Lancaſhire *abounds with Papiſts.*

Lancaſhire was eſpecially this Critical Year to be looked after; where Papiſts, and Gentlemen, Favourers of Papiſts ſwarmed. Therefore Care was now taken for ſome honeſt faithful Perſons to be put into the Commiſſion of the Peace there: That ſo every Hundred might be furniſhed with one or two ſuch at leaſt; and ſuch as might watch theſe diſaffected at this Time. (Beſides a Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical likewiſe ſent down, to be put in due Execution.) An Account of which and the Succeſs thereof, take from the Pen of one of them, *viz. Edward Fleetwood*, Parſon of *Wigan*, and in the Commiſſion of the Peace of that County, in a Letter, writ to ſome Perſon at Court, under the Title of *Right Honourable*; whom I conclude to be Lord Treaſurer: Making theſe Obſervations of the new Commiſſion of good Juſtices ſent down for that corrupt County.

Obſervations of the Juſtices there.

For the whole Body of them [the Juſtices] they were ſo proportionably allotted to the ſeveral Parts of the Shire, as our ſound Men would any ways afford. Five or Four, or Three Juſtices at the leaſt unto every Hundred. By means whereof every Hundred hath its ſufficient Magiſtracy within itſelf. And every Quarter Seſſions, containing moſt of them two Hundreds, a competent Number of Juſtices. And the General Aſſizes had a full furniſhed Bench of worſhipful Gentlemen to countenance and attend that great and honourable Service. Which appeared moſt evidently in the Eyes of all Men that laſt Aſſizes, by the moſt plentiful Concourſe of all the Gentlemen Juſtices well affected from all Parts of the Shire. Providing thereby, that neither the common Service, ſpecially laid upon them, ſhould be diſfurniſhed of due Attendance, nor the diſcontented Sort ſhould obtain any juſt Occaſion to argue their Honours [of the Counties] Direction of Inſufficiency, or them of any want of Duty. Where they employed themſelves ſo thorougly in the Caſe of Religion, that there enſued a moſt plentiful Detection of 600 Recuſants by Oath preſented: As alſo the Indictments of 87 of them, (as many as for the Time could be preferred to the Jury:) And further, a Notification by Oath of one and twenty vagrant Prieſts,

6

Prieſts, uſually received in *Lancaſhire*; and Twenty five notorious Houſes of Receit for them. Such are the manifold Commodities, which we feel already by your Honours moſt ſound Direction. In reſpect whereof it is of all, that deſire Reformation among us (as Juſtice of her Children) moſt confidently juſtified.

ANNO 1587.

The County void of Goodneſs, and good Men.

The only Want in general is the want of ſound Gentlemen in moſt Parts of the Country. And as for himſelf, he ſaid, he dwelt in the moſt deſolate Part of the Country, from all Goodneſs and good Men. He deſired his Lordſhips Letter of Encouragement and Direction unto ſome few Preachers, and worthy Men in thoſe Parts; by which they ſhould not a little be ſtrengthned in the buſy Charge they had in Hand, for the ſuppreſſing of many ungodly Enormities of the Sabbath; which Charge was impoſed upon them by the Lords, the Juſtices of Aſſize, the ſpecial Inſtance of himſelf, and ſome other of his Brethren.

The Succeſs of the new Commiſſion of Juſtices in Lancaſhire.

This Letter came ſoon after a new Commiſſion of Juſtices was ſent down for that County: Wherein Gentlemen of better Principles of Religion and Loyalty were put in, and others, either Papiſts, or Favourers of ſuch, and ſecret Friends to the Prieſts and *Jeſuits*, were diſcharged: And this Good was chiefly effected by the Means of the Lord Treaſurer in this County, aſſiſted by the Information of this Rector of *Wigan*, given him privately of the Gentlemen there: As that Lord had received the like Intelligences from the Biſhops, concerning the Inclinations of the Juſtices and other Gentlemen in the other Counties: Unto which new Commiſſions were alſo ſent; as was told before.

Earl of Darby.

But now to give that Lord further Knowledge of the Succeſs of this Commiſſion there, and the more fully to inform him, the Rector of *Wigan*, attended at the Aſſizes: Wherein he perceived in them that were diſplaced no ſmall Indignation towards ſuch as they ſuſpected to have furthered the ſame; and endeavoured to poſſeſs the Earl of *Darby* with it, (who had the chief Hand in nominating them in the former Commiſſion) as no ſmall Diſhonour unto him. To mitigate this, the ſaid *Fleetwood* laid before their Faces in his Pulpit, (as Occaſion ſerved) and which he had more particularly acquainted his Lordſhip with, concerning the corrupt State of the whole County, that their guilty Conſciences might apply to themſelves what was due to them. And hereof the Judges in their Circuit took Notice; and delivered the chief Points thereof to the Juries; and likewiſe more eſpecially recommended to the Juſtices of Peace, to be in their continual Services regarded. He likewiſe ſoon after applied himſelf to the Earl of *Darby*, by way of accuſtomed Duty, being his Patron, to give him Opportunity of Speech about the premiſed Matter of ſome of his Friends diſplaced; and to juſtify him, *viz.* the Lord Treaſurer and the other Lords of the Council, of this their moſt conſiderate Act. This, and a great deal more was the Subſtance of a ſecond Letter of that Reverend Man. Which as worthy the Peruſal and Recording remains in the *Appendix*, tranſcribed from the Original; giving further Accounts of the Earl, and his want of Care of the publick Concerns of that County: Concerning

Numb. XXXVII.

cerning the honeſt Gentlemen there, and who they were: And what Need there was of Activity in this Commiſſion, for the Comfort and Encouragement of thoſe that were for Reformation, and the faithful Profeſſors of the Truth.

Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion.

This active and worthy Divine was now going to accompany the Archbiſhop of *York* and the Sollicitor, and others at an Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion for thoſe Parts, which abounded much with Popiſh Prieſts, and *Jeſuits*, and ſuch as harboured them. And for their better Proceeding in this Commiſſion, the Lord Treaſurer had ſent Inſtructions to the ſaid Rector, to communicate unto the reſt.

Catholick Gentlemen, and their Revenues.

I have one Thing more to add of the *Romaniſts*, that as they were buſy now to overthrow the State and Religion of this Kingdom, ſo there wanted not a watchful Eye at home over the Queens Subjects of that Religion, of the beſt Rank, their own Lives and Eſtates being in danger. And for the better Knowledge of them, and what each of them were worth, Enquiries were made, and Informations were ſent up this Year, of all the Principal Recuſants in each County, and their yearly Rents, Incomes, and Goods. Such a Scedule dated this Year I have ſeen drawn up in three Columns, *viz.* The Names of the Recuſants in the ſeveral Counties: Then their yearly Rents and Livings; and then the Value of their Goods. Beginning, according to the Alphabet, with the County of *Bucks*, *Edward Eaſt* of *Bedlow*, Gent. 100 Mark. *Tho. Throgmorton*, Eſq; 1000 Mark. *Henry Manſfield*, Eſq; 100 *l.* *&c.*

CHAP. XII.

A Book, intitled Theatrum Crudelitatis Hæreticorum. *Another Book,* Execution of Juſtice in *England. Cardinal* Allens *Book in Anſwer, called,* A true, ſincere and modeſt Defence of Catholicks, *&c. Vindication of the* Execution of Juſtice, *in Anſwer to* Allen. Stubbe *the Writer, his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer. Some Univerſity Matters. Abuſes in the Colleges; which cauſeth a Letter from their Chancellor. Conteſts between the Town and Univerſity.* Edmund, *the Maior. Matters of St.* Johns *College: Some Letters of* Whitaker, *the Maſter.*

I Proceed next to take Notice of ſome Tracts that came forth in Print this Year, reſpecting Papiſts that ſuffered Death according to the Laws in Force.

Theatrum Crudelitatis Hæreticorum.

And the firſt I ſhall name was a Book called, *Theatrum Crudelitatis Hæreticorum in* Arglia. I make mention of it here, though it was printed at *Antwerp*, becauſe it concerns this Nation: Setting down ſuch Papiſts, both of the *Engliſh* Prieſts and Laity, as were pretended to be put to Death for their Religion: Namely, from the Year 1570 to the Year 1587, *viz.* of Prieſts to the Number of Thirty one, and of Laics Fourteen. In this *Theatre* are alſo numbred ſuch as were executed for Religion in King *Henry* VIII. his Reign, ſome for denying the Kings Supremacy, and others that were concerned in the Buſineſs of the Holy Maid of *Kent*. What their Names were the Reader will find in the *Appendix*. And thence he may have recourſe to our Hiſtorians, to enquire, whether they were put to Death for their Religion, or for their Treaſons and Conſpiracies againſt the Queen and Government.

Num. XXXVIII.

Cardinal Allens *Defence of* Engliſh *Catholicks.*

Care was now taken to reply to a ſcandalous Book of this Strain, ſet forth by Cardinal *Allen*, in anſwer to a Book intitled, *Execution of Juſtice in* England: Wrote by the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; though his Name be concealed: The *MS.* whereof being his own Hand writing, I have ſeen, it was tranſlated out of *Engliſh*, for the Vindication of the Queen and State, into divers Languages, that the Truth of the Proceedings in *England*, might reach to Foreign Countries. The Cardinals Book bore this Title, *A true, ſincere and modeſt Defence of* Engliſh *Catholicks, that ſuffer for their Faith at Home and Abroad. Againſt a falſe, ſeditious and ſlanderous Libel, intitled,* The Execution of Juſtice in *England*. “Wherein is declared, how unjuſtly the Proteſtants do charge Catholicks with Treaſon; how untruly they deny their Perſecution for Religion, and how deceitfully they ſeek to abuſe Strangers about the Cauſe, Greatneſs and Manner of their Sufferings: with divers other Matters pertaining to this Purpoſe.

Contents of the Book.

This Book will be the better underſtood by the Heads of the Chapters it contained. Which were theſe. *Chapter* I. The many Prieſts and other Catholicks in *England* that have been perſecuted, condemned and executed for meer Matters of Religion, and for Tranſgreſſions only of new Statutes; which do make Caſes of Conſcience to be Treaſon, without all Pretence or Surmiſe of any old Treaſons, or Statutes for the ſame. *Chap.* II. That Father *Campion* and the reſt of the Prieſts and Catholicks, indicted, condemned and executed upon the Pretence of Treaſon, and upon Statutes made of old againſt Treaſon, were never yet guilty of any ſuch Crimes; but unjuſtly made away. *Chap.* III. That they had now great Cauſe to complain of unjuſt Perſecution, intolerable Severity and Cruelty towards Catholicks in *England*. And that Proteſtants had no reaſon to do the like for Juſtice done to them in Queen *Maries* and other Princes Days: And the Cauſe of the Difference. *Chap.* IV. That their Prieſts and Catholick Brethren had behaved themſelves diſcreetly, and nothing ſeditiouſly in their Anſwers to the Queſtions of the *Bull* of *Pius Quintus*. And that they could not lawfully be preſt, nor put to Death, as Traitors, by the true Meaning of the old Laws of the Realm, for the ſame: With Examination of the ſix Articles propoſed about the ſaid *Bull*. *Chap.* V. Of Excommunication and Deprivation of Princes for Hereſy, and falling from the Faith; ſpecially, of Wars for Religion: And of the Office and Zeal

ANNO 1587.

of Prieſts of the old and new Law in ſuch Caſes. *Chap.* VI. That it was much to the Benefit and Stability of Commonwealths, and eſpecially of Kings Scepters, that the Differences between them and their People for Religion, or any other Cauſe, for which they might ſeem to deſerve Deprivation, might rather be decided by the Supreme Paſtor of the Church, as Catholicks would have it, than by popular Mutiny and Fantaſy of private Men; as Hereticks deſire and practiſe. *Chap.* VII. Of the late Wars in *Ireland* for Religion. How the Pope might uſe the Sword. And thoſe Differences between Temporal Princes and him, or their reſiſting him in ſome Caſes of their worldly Intereſt, could be no Warrant to the Proteſtants to contemn his Cenſures or Authority, in Matters of Faith and Religion. *Chap.* VIII. That the Separation of the Prince and Realm from the Unity of the Church and See Apoſtolick, and Fall from Catholick Religion, was the only Cauſe of all the preſent Fears and Dangers, that the State ſeemed to ſtand in. And that they unjuſtly attributed the ſame to the Popes Holineſs, or Catholicks; and untruly called them Enemies of the Realm. *Chap.* IX. The Concluſion contained a charitable Monition, and a Joinder with the *Libeller*, [as he called the Writer of the Book he anſwered] touching ſome Mean of Toleration in Religion; and ceaſing or mitigating this cruel Perſecution.

Allens Book *anſwered by* Stubbe.

Theſe were the Heads of this ſevere and bold Book. Many printed Copies whereof were privately brought into the Realm, and diſperſed. So that it was neceſſary to be ſubſtantially replied to. And *John Stubbe*, a learned Man, ſometime of *Lincolns* Inn, [though unhappy in the Loſs of his Right Hand] was employed, in the doing of it, by the Lord Treaſurer. And having finiſhed his Work, (which was peruſed, alſo by ſome of the learned Civilians at that Time,) the Author addreſt his Letter to the ſaid Stateſman concerning what he had done; and joined his Deſire to have it amended, improved, and Additions made to it, as he ſhould think convenient, in a Tract of ſuch Importance. His Letter follows:

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer concerning what he had done.

" My moſt honourable good Lord, Having long ſince by your " Honours Direction, delivered certain my written Labours to the " Conſideration of Dr. *Bing* and Dr. *Hammond*, and their Anſwer " now returned by Sir *Drue Drury*, I underſtand it, your Lordſhips Pleaſure to ſee them alſo. Now herewithal I am bold to " ſignify thus much: That as next after God and her Majeſty, I " undertook it to do you Service, ſo do I leave the ſame wholly to " your honourable Cenſure, for Words, Sentence or Matter. And " not only to yourſelf, my good Lord, but to the two Doctors, I " ſo far reſign me, as giving over all blind Self-love to mine own " Handy-Work, I beſought them to judge frankly, and (which in " this Cauſe is moſt Friendly) to read it ſeverely. It pleaſed them " nevertheleſs to encourage and provoke my Proceeding. Which if " ſuch as they had not done, whoſe learned Judgments I reverence, " it ſhould never have troubled your Lordſhip for me.

" If therefore it may be ſerviceable, either as it is, or by ſuffering ſome Alteration, your honourable Allowance ſhall make me " cheerfully to abide the Adverſaries Malice. And if it be unpro-

" fitable, I deſire not to winn publick Reproach by publiſhing my " Folly: Being ſo far from deſire of Vain-glory by doing it myſelf, " and from Envy at others doing it, as I ſhall moſt willingly ſit " down in the Shaddow, and let any have all the Fruit of my painful Travails: If at leaſt they may never ſo little help to furniſh " out ſome better Defence. Mine only Care is to ſee the Thing " done, and well done. Which as I am indifferent to ſee well done " by any, ſo would I be moſt loth to ſee it ill done by myſelf. It " remains, that whether this of mine paſs in Silence or Print, I " humbly pray your Honours moſt favourable and beſt Interpretation " of my Endeavours. Unto whoſe great Wiſdom I deſire to approve myſelf in all. So humbly taking my Leave, I beſeech the " Lord God to preſerve your Life, encreaſe your Honour; and " finally keep you ever his. The 27th of *July*, 1587.

Your moſt honourable good Lordſhips

Very humbly to command,

John Stubbe Scæva.

Some Abuſes committed in Cambridge *both by Tutors and Pupils.*

Some particular Matters of one of our Univerſities muſt claim a Place here. Some Abuſes brake into that of *Cambridge*; whereof Complaint was made to their High Chancellor, the Lord *Burghley*. As, in running into Debt for Wine and Cloths, and too coſtly Habits worn by Fellows of Colleges; and of the Liberty that Pupils took, to the Neglect of their Studies, and of the Exceſs of their Apparel; and the too greedy deſire of the Tutors for Gain. Which made them wink at the Neglect of thoſe under their Tuition. Theſe Faults will more particularly appear from a Letter which their careful Chancellor wrote to his Vicechancellor on this Occaſion: Which for the Reſtraint of theſe Abuſes, ran in this Tenor.

The High Chancellors Letter to the Univerſity.

" After my harty Commendations, Mr. Vicechancellor, Liking " very well of divers Things, which I am given to underſtand you " have well reformed in the Univerſity in your Time; ſo am I credibly informed by the great Complaint of divers, both worſhipful " and wiſe Parents, the which have brought their Children to the " Univerſity; That through the great Stipends of Tutors, and the " little Pains they do take in the inſtructing and well governing of " their Pupils, not only the poorer Sort are not able to maintain " their Children at the Univerſity; and the richer be ſo corrupt " with Liberty and Remiſsneſs, that the Tutor is more afraid to " diſpleaſe the Pupil through the deſire of great Gain, the which " he hath by his Tutorage, than the Pupil is of his Tutor. That " the Parents do greatly complain, both of the Loſs of their Childrens Time, and of the greatneſs of their Charges, as well in " Tutors Stipends, as in their ſumptuous Apparel.

" The which Things if you with the reſt of the Heads, can deviſe to have ordered with ſpeed, you ſhall have my Aſſiſtance " thereto moſt willingly.

“ To the great Stipends of Tutors cometh the great Exceſs of Apparel in Fellows of Colleges of late more than hath been; in wearing of Satten Doublets, Silk and Velvet Overſtocks, and facing of Gowns with Velvet and Satten to the Ground; and in great fine Ruffs, contrary to Law and Order. All which I will have you ſee Reformed with Speed. There is ſo much waſted this Way, and in the Town on *Fridays* and *Saturdays*, that they do leave their Sizings and Detriments unpaid Monthly in the Colleges; and alſo are, as I hear, greatly endebted to the *Drapers* and *Vintners* in the Town. To the which I would have you take Orders for. That theſe Debts, as well that of Colleges, as of private Men, may be diſcharged preſently. And that there be no more ſuch Debts hereafter. And to certify me the Names of thoſe Colleges, and particular Perſons, that ſhall make Defaults in any of the Premiſſes, faithfully and without delay. And thus I wiſh you well to fare. From my Houſe in the *Strand*, this laſt of *June*.

Tour loving Friend,

W. Burghley.

Conteſt between the Town and Univerſity.

A Conteſt between the Town and Univerſity of *Cambridge* about the Right of Commons, was very ſharp this Year, as well as it had been ſome Years before. And the Affronts offered by the Townſmen to the Scholars, or ſuch as depended on them, ſuch, that the Heads by a Decree among them diſcommoned *Edmunds*, the Maior. The Beginning of it was the impounding ſome Hogs, that ran in the common Fields: Which Hogs belonged to one *Hammond*, who was a Brewer and Bailiff of *Jeſus* College, and ſo a Scholars Servant of the Univerſity. But the Vicechancellor ordered them to be let out. At which, after ſome Conteſt, the ſaid Maior complained to the High Chancellor. Dr. *Perne*, in the Abſence of the Vicechancellor anſwered his Complaint. Which Complaint *Perne* had received in writing: And was required to make Anſwer unto in Writing again. Whereunto the Complainants were to be further referred. The Sum of which Anſwer was, That the Maior was the Cauſe of the preſent Controverſy between the Town and them; the Maior exacting of *Hammond* certain Money, contrary to a Compoſition made between the Town and Univerſity, *An.* 27 *Regin.* for the Space of twenty Years. Wherein it was provided, that the Pinner or driver of ſuch Hogs or Cattle ſhould be appointed 2, 4, or more, by the Conſent and Appointment of the Vicechancellor and Maior for the Time being: And that there be taken four pence for every Hog: Whereof one Penny to the Pinner, and three Pence to the Vicechancellor; if the Offender be a Scholar, or Scholars Servant. And if he be a Freeman, or a Foreigner, the ſaid three Pence to the Maior. Contrary to which Order, the Maior at this Time exacted of *Hammond*, a Scholars Servant, three Pence for every Hog that was driven by one appointed by himſelf, and not by an indifferent Perſon, appointed by the Vicechancellor and the Maior, *&c.*

ANNO
1587.

The Heads diſcommon the Maior.

In fine this Argument ran ſo far, and the Maior ſo perverſe, that the Heads ſolemnly diſcommon the Maior. And this was done orderly at a Court, Dr. *Copcot* Vicechancellor. In the Order mention is made of his great Ingratitude to the Univerſity Scholars and their Servants. Which ſhall be particularly related by and by. This Decree was, “ That no Scholar, or any under the Privilege of a “ Scholar, ſhould, for the Time to come, have any manner of Dealing, Contract, Buying or Selling with the ſaid Maior, upon pain “ of an 100 Shillings.” And this was ſet up upon the publick School Door. See this remarkable Decree ſpecified in the *Appendix*; taken out of the Univerſity Regiſter, and ſent me by a Reverend Member of that Univerſity.

Numb.
XXXIX.

R. T. Baker,
B. D.

His Ingratitude towards the Univerſity.

Where it is obſervable, that the ſaid Maior is charged with great, nay the greateſt Ingratitude againſt the Univerſity. For he was bred up from his Beginning by the Favour of the Univerſity. His Father was once a Member of it, and afterwards one of the Heads in the Times of King *Henry* VIII. And for his Fathers ſake, they had taken care of his Education. Which came to light ſome Years before, *viz.* in the Year 1582, when another Controverſy happened between him and the Univerſity. Which proceeded ſo far, that the Matter came before the High Chancellor, when the Particulars of his Ingratitude were made manifeſt. For when the Chancellor had urged him with his unſeemly Behaviour towards the Univerſity, (in anſwer to which he ſaid, that he never received any Benefit from them, or any Scholar, but only that they once made him one of their Praiſers) Dr. *Pern* (that had been one of his Benefactors, and knew him from the Beginning) being provoked, acquainted the ſaid Chancellor by Letter with his Hiſtory, *viz.*

“ That he was brought up by the Good-will and Liberality of the “ Univerſity, and divers Scholars of the ſame. And how his Father was a Doctor in Divinity of that Univerſity, and Maſter of “ *Peter-Houſe*, and oftentimes Vicechancellor. And though living in “ King *Henries* and Queen *Maries* Reigns, yet was married, but “ kept it very private. And had a Son, named *John*, (who was “ the preſent Maior) but went under the Name of *John Mere*, as a “ Son of a Beadle of the Univerſity; whoſe Wife and Dr. *Edmunds* “ Wife were Siſters; and was brought up from his Childhood with “ him, as his Son; and not until of late, in Queen *Elizabeths* “ Reign, was called by his true Name, *John Edmunds*.

This Paper of *Pernes* went on; giving Account of his breeding up, from the firſt, “ That he did receive from Mr. *Mere*, his reputed Father, ſo many ſhreds of Copes and Veſtments, as were “ worth 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* [that is, in King *Edwards* Reign, when all the Popiſh Apparel was called in.] That upon *Meres* Death he “ was received into the Service of *Parker*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. Afterwards, into the Service of Dr. *Perne*, Dean of *Ely*, “ (who gave this Relation of him) for the good Will he bare to his “ Father, Dr. *Edmunds*, and made him his Butler at *Ely*. After, “ he was made Butler of *Peter-Houſe*; whereof *Perne* was Maſter. “ Then he gave him a Leaſe of the Dean and Chapter of *Ely*, called “ *Quane*. Which he ſold for 50 *l.* That he got him the Leaſe of

ANNO 1587.

" an Houſe, wherein he at preſent dwelt, when Maior, worth 20 *l.* " *per Ann.* That he was likewiſe preferred by him to be one of " the Praiſers of the Univerſity; and did alſo procure him to be " one of the *Vintners* of the Univerſity. Which Office he ſold for " 80 *l.* and was a Means to get him to be Maior the preſent Year " 1587.

Other Particulars of his Behaviour were not ſpared now to be told. As that when he was to take the Oath to the Univerſity for the due obſerving the Peace of the Univerſity, he provided, that at the taking of it, none almoſt ſhould be preſent, but only the Maior and the Town-Clerk. Whereas there always uſed before to be preſent the beſt of the Univerſity, Town and Country. So that the Hall was commonly ſo full, that the Vicechancellor could not well enter into the Hall. And for this he was challenged by Dr. *Pern*, for breaking the antient Order. Which required him to take it, *In loco & more ſolito.* To which *Edmunds* anſwered, he did not know the Cuſtom: Though he had been preſent at the giving of the ſaid Oath by the Vicechancellor and the Proctors to the Maior and Bailiffs, when he did attend upon the ſaid Dr. *Pern.*

It was told further of him, how he bragged, that he would, if the Chancellor himſelf were at *Cambridge*, go before him. For that he was the Queens Lieutenant of the Townſmen, as his Honour was the Queens Lieutenant of the Univerſity. Though the Chancellor is always, and hath been accounted by Charter, and otherwiſe, the Head Officer of *Cambridge*, before whom the Maior and Bailiffs be yearly ſworn. Add to the reſt, this Inſtance of his Reſpect to the Univerſity, that being Maior, he did not invite the Vicechancellor and Heads, as was always cuſtomary to be done on *Michaelmas* Day, at the Maior and Bailiffs Feaſt; though Dr. *Pern* ſent him a barren Doe towards his Feaſt: Telling the Vicechancellor that he would not invite him to Dinner on that Day, becauſe Dr. *Pern* was not then come to *Cambridge.* And when Dr. *Pern* came that *Michaelmas* Eve, the Maior ſent him Word that he would not invite him, becauſe he had not invited the Vicechancellor.

Theſe unhappy Controverſies between the Town and Univerſity, as they had been before and this Year, ſo from Time to Time long after remained. So that in a Complaint againſt the Town ten Years after, they were charged to be more bold than ever, breaking moſt confidently upon all their Privileges.

Now to look into the State of Learning, in this Univerſity, I ſhall deſcend to ſome Remarks of Things and Perſons in two or three of the Colleges.

The preſent State of St. Johns College.

Whitaker the learned publick Profeſſor of Divinity, was choſen Maſter of St. *Johns* College the laſt Year, *viz.* in *February* 1586. by the Lord Treaſurers Intereſt, though with Difficulty. The State of which College (whereof that great Stateſman was once a Member, and always after a Patron) the ſaid Maſter gave him ſome Account this Year, in one or two Letters, wrote thence; after great Stirs and Commotions by reaſon of Parties there.

The former was wrote in *April.* The Import of which was, " That he would write to him the State of their College, and of the Affairs thereof, as well becauſe he doubted not, but it would be grateful to him; as alſo, that he might ſatisfy his Duty. That it was he who brought him into his College by his Authority and good Will. In which therefore if any Thing ſhould happen againſt his Mind and Expectation, he beſeeched him not to wonder at it, or bear it more heavily, or aſcribe any Fault to their Fellows. For that he was perſuaded, the Divine Providence did wonderfully ſhine out in this Matter. And although the Beginning was a little more turbulent, yet the Concluſion would be more happy and eaſy. And that after that one little Cloud of one half Hour, a clear Light had ſhone upon them.” [He ſeems to mean the Heats and Diſturbance at the Election.] Which hitherto no new Tempeſt had obſcured.

“ That for the Time to come, he promiſed himſelf ſuch Events, as ſhould bring more of Hope than Fear or Suſpicion. I am not ſollicitous of myſelf, (as he went on) and my State; nor do I promote any Thing elſe for myſelf, but to ſerve the College, and conſult for its good. In which I ſhall hope, I ſhall at laſt effect ſomething, that may redound to its Advantage. I will certainly endeavour, that I ſeem not to be unprofitable to the College.

Then he proceeded to open to that Lord to whom he writ, a preſent Neceſſity of the College, *viz.* “ That they laboured in nothing beſide a need of Money: Which could not be paid to the College in the ſtrait Circumſtances of many, [by reaſon of a great Dearth this Year.] And here an inteſtine Diſeaſe ſtuck in the College; and wanted altogether ſome Medicine. For unleſs Proviſion were had, they could not contain that Society, which then was held a long Time with difficulty, that it diſſolved not. And ſo concluded, moſt humbly beſeeching and begging his Honour, that as always he had done, ſo he would proceed to favour their College; and to eſteem himſelf to be chiefly and intirely eſteemed and obſerved by them. And ſo praying God to preſerve him in Safety for the Commonwealth and to their Univerſity. It was dated from St. *Johns* the 3d of the Cal. of *April*, 1587.

A Statute of the College, for the Fellows to take Orders.

Another Letter of the ſaid Matter to the ſaid Lord, wrote in *September*, was occaſioned by reaſon of a Statute of the ſame College of St. *Johns*, that the Fellows ſhould take Holy Orders, after they had been ſix Years Maſters of Arts: Shewing the Inconvenience of diſpenſing with it. Since about that Time ſome had endeavoured to obtain, contrary to that Statute, a Liberty to remain in the College; as one or two had done before. This new Maſter now ſhewed his Care in diſcharging his Truſt to the College, by endeavouring to ſtop this Abuſe, in his Addreſs to that Lord, that ſuch Diſpenſations might not be granted by the Queen or himſelf. For thus the Maſter expreſt his Mind.

The Letter of the Maſter in Behalf of that Statute.

“ *In illis rebus*, &c. “ That in ſuch Things as belonged to the State of their College, he could not but betake himſelf to his Authority and Prudence. That their Statutes were as yet in his Power, and ſeemed to want in certain Places, ſome Correction. And he hoped his Lordſhip would give him Leave to ſpeak with him at ſome convenient Time, concerning them: That it was an

ANNO 1587.

“ old Law, that the Fellows in the ſixth Year after they were
“ Maſters, either to be Prieſts, or to leave the College; only two
“ Phyſicians excepted. Notwithſtanding it had been granted to
“ ſome a few Years paſt, that againſt the Mind of the Statute, they
“ might remain in the College: And that it was very credible, that
“ there would be others who would ſeek for the like Indulgence
“ and Licence, either from the Queen, or from him. And then
“ added, (applying to his Lordſhip) that it ſhould be his Counſil
“ and Wiſdom to conſider, whether it were agreeable to grant that
“ which they ſhould aſk. That there was this Inconvenience in
“ this Matter which would happen at laſt, that the Primary and
“ Senior Fellows, who muſt always be Divines, be other than Divines,
“ and yet be neceſſarily compelled in the College to perform
“ the Office of Divines. He would not mention any more:
“ Since he, out of that incredible pious Regard he had towards their
“ College, would always provide, that their Affairs might be ever
“ cared for, as well as might poſſibly be. This was likewiſe dated
from St. *Johns* College: *Pridie Id. Septemb.* 1587.

The Queen to the Maſter and Fellows of Peter-Houſe.

The Queen this Year, upon ſome Intereſt made to her in the Behalf of one *Teniſon* of *Peter-Houſe*, wrote her Letter to the Maſter and Fellows of that Houſe, to admit him, though unqualified by the Statutes, to a Fellowſhip there: Whoſe Letter was as follows.

ELIZABETH.

By the Queen.

MSS. *Acad. pen. me.*

“ Truſtie and well beloved, We grete you well. Foraſmuch as
“ we are credibly informed, that one *John Teniſon*, Maſter of Arts
“ of your College, commonly called *Peter-Houſe*, in *Cambridge*,
“ whereof you be Maſter and Fellows, is greatly deſirous and ----
“ minded to continue at that Univerſity, and namely in the foreſaid
“ College, for his further Encreaſe in Vertue and Learning; and
“ that by reaſon of his Degree, he is not capable of a Fellowſhip
“ in the ſaid College without our Special Grace and Warrant: We
“ let you to wit, that for his better Proceedings in that good and
“ vertuous Courſe, which for want of ſufficient Maintenance, is
“ likely otherwiſe to be greatly hindred, and ſeeing no Cauſe, why
“ that Degree, which is beſtowed upon worthy Perſons, (as an Encouragement
“ and Furtherance unto Preferment) ſhould be a Let
“ or Hindrance thereof.

“ It hath pleaſed Us, upon humble Suit made unto Us in his Behalf,
“ and for the Conſiderations aforeſaid, to will and command
“ you preſently, upon the Receipt of theſe our Letters, to chooſe
“ and admit him Fellow of our ſaid College, into the Place, now
“ void, or hereafter next to be void in any manner of Means whatſoever,
“ any Statute, Decree, Act or Order to the contrary notwithſtanding.
“ For the which We do diſpenſe with you by theſe
“ preſents. And therefore have no doubt, but that you will accompliſh
“ this our Pleaſure accordingly. Given under our Signet
“ at our Manor of *Richmond*, the IXth Day of *October*, 1587. In
“ the 29th Year of our Reign.

ANNO 1587.

At this Command of the Queen the College was very uneaſy; requiring them to do ſome Things contrary to the Laws and Statutes of their College; which they were ſtrictly bound by Oath to obſerve; as to admit one to a Fellowſhip, unqualified in ſeveral reſpects. And that they had already elected ſeveral deſerving young Men to ſucceed, as Probationers, in the four next Places, as they fell vacant. In this Difficulty they applied themſelves to the great Patron of that Univerſity, the Lord *Burghley*, to acquaint the Queen with their Condition. As, that for the Perſon recommended, he wanted the Qualifications required, and among the reſt, *to be poor, and of an humble and quiet Spirit:* Both which he wanted. So they prayed his Lordſhip to acquaint her Majeſty herewith; and to obtain her lawful Favour, to uſe their Statutes; and that the ſaid young Men might not be diſappointed, to their great Prejudice and Diſcouragement, to which *Teniſons* Suit directly tended; and alſo to the Diſturbance of their Quietneſs, and that lawful and orderly Election. The Letter of the College at length is worthy preſerving. See the *Appendix*.

Their Addreſs to the Lord Burghley *hereupon.*

Numb. XXXIX.

CHAP. XIII.

Sheffield *of* Chriſts *College accuſed for a Sermon preached at St.* Maries. *An End of the Vicechancellors Viſitation of that College. Some Account of* Downham, *one of the Fellows.* Chadwic, *of* Emanuel *College, called before the Heads, for a Sermon of his preached in St.* Maries. *An Epiſtle to the Lord* Burghley *from the Univerſity of* Oxford. *Remarks upon ſome Perſons of Eminency.* Will. Lambard. *Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *Earl of* Oxford, *his Son in Law, diſcontented. Letters between them. Angry Words from the Earl of* Leiceſter *at Court to the Lord Treaſurer. Their Letters to each other. The Death of the Lord Treaſurers Mother. The Queens Meſſage to him thereupon. Earl of* Leiceſters *Debts.*

Aſſertions of Sheffield *of* Chriſts College.

NOW to look into ſome of the other Houſes. In *Chriſts* College *Puritaniſm* prevailed much: As was ſeen in the Year before, in two or three of the Members. There was one *Sampſon Sheffield* of the ſame College, M. A. againſt whom Dr. *Copcot*, one of the Heads, alledged, That in a Sermon preached at St. *Maries* this Year he had delivered three Aſſertions, erroneous and ſcandalous, in theſe Words, or the like in Effect.

R. T. Baker.

ANNO 1587.

I. That it is not lawful for a Miniſter of the Word to be a Magiſtrate. II. That he denounced Woe againſt him that put out ſome Lights that were wont to ſhine in this Town [of *Cambridge*.] III. The Brethren conſpired againſt their Brethren; and are Pricks in their Sight. And the ſaid Dr. *Copcote* deſired of the Vicechancellor, that *Sheffield* might anſwer thoſe Articles; and that under the Bond of his Corporal Oath. Which he did.

Sheffields *Anſwer.*

The Anſwer which the ſaid *Sheffield* made was, Firſt, That he ſpake no ſuch Words, tending to that Effect. To the Second, That he denounced a Woe againſt ſuch Magiſtrates, by whoſe Negligence towards their Brethren it was come to paſs, that we have had fewer Lights than we had before. To the Third he anſwered, That he did not ſpeak thoſe Words of the Heads of Colleges in *Cambridge*, but ſpoke as near as he could the Words of the Scripture out of one of the Prophets. Upon this divers Witneſſes were produced that were his Auditors. The Regiſter goes no further, to ſhew the Determination of this Scholars Buſineſs.

But an End this Year was put to an earneſt Controverſy between this College and Dr. *Copcot*, the laſt Years Vicechancellor: Who, as by the Statutes of the College was appointed their Viſitor, and began a Viſitation of the Fellows that Year, ſo he continued it by divers Prorogations to a great Part of the preſent Year, when he was no longer in that Office, and they refuſed to admit him: And appealed from him to the Lord *Burghley*, their High Chancellor. Who by his Prudence put an End to this Conteſt. And hereupon the whole College addreſt an elegant *Latin* Epiſtle to the ſaid Chancellor, containing Thanks to him for ſo ſeaſonable a Concluſion of this Trouble: Being ſubſcribed by the Maſter *Edmund Barwel*, and the reſt of the Fellows, *viz. William Perkins*, *Francis Johnſon*, *John Powel*, *Robert Baines*, *Thomas Morton*, *George Downham*, *Thomas Bradock*, *Andrew Williat*, *William Knight*, *Cutbert Bainbridge*. The Names of ſeveral of theſe, as they were well known for Men of Learning, ſo for zealous eſpouſers of *Puritan* Principles. Their Letter from the Original may be read in the *Appendix*. Num. XL.

Dr. Downham *of* Chriſts *College.*

One whereof I ſhall make a Note of here, *viz. George Downham*, the Son of *Will. Downham*, Biſhop of *Cheſter*, and he himſelf afterwards preferred to the Biſhoprick of *London Derry* in *Ireland*. He was ſome Time a Favourer of the *Diſcipline*; but after mature ſtudy of thoſe Points, heartily embraced Epiſcopacy. Take his own Words, expreſſive of his Thoughts, in an Epiſtle of his before his Sermon, preached *April* 17, 1608, at the Conſecration of *Mountague*, Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*: Intitled, *A Sermon defending the honourable Function of Biſhops.* "The Time hath been, when mine Af-
" fection enclined by the Reverend Opinion which I had con-
" ceived worthily, not only of Mr. *Calvin* and Mr. *Beza*, but of
" many other learned and godly Men, Patrons and Fautors of the
" pretended Diſcipline, made me ſuſpend my Judgment in this
" Cauſe; until I had ſeriouſly entred into the Study thereof. The
" which for a long Time I did forbear; partly becauſe I did rightly
" ſuppoſe, that my Pains might be more profitably beſtowed in other

ANNO 1587.

“ Parts of Divinity; partly, becauſe in my ſlender Judgment I could not then ſee what good would come either to myſelf, or the Church of God, by my Pains taken in that Controverſy, *&c.* Thus was I content to remain in Suſpence, while I took it to be the beſt Courſe .... to be no Meddler on either Side.

“ But that afterwards, (as he proceeded) he conſidered with himſelf, that this Church of *England* (wherein he was called to be a Miniſter) did hold and profeſs all ſubſtantial Points of Divinity, as ſoundly, as any Church in the World (none excepted) neither in this Age, nor in the Primitive Times of the Church: And Secondly, That it hath the Teſtimony of all other true Churches: And Thirdly, That in it the Means of Salvation are ordinarily and plentifully to be had: Therefore to make Separation from it, he took to be Schiſmatical, and damnable Preſumption.

I add one Sentence more in the ſame Epiſtle, That he heard a zealous Preacher * reprove young Divines, in a Sermon at *Cambridge*; who before they had ſtudied the Grounds of Theology, would over buſy themſelves in Matters of Diſcipline; and, as he ſaid, before they had laid the Foundation of their Study, would be ſetting up, as it were, the Roof.

* *Mr.* Greenham.

And in the ſaid Conſecration Sermon preached by the ſame Dr. *Downham*, he had theſe Words of *Calvin*'s and *Beza*'s Judgment of the Biſhops of this Church: “ Reverend *Beza*, though an earneſt Patron of the *Presbyterian* Diſcipline, and came far ſhort of *Calvins* Moderation in that Behalf, ſpake thus, *Quod ſi nunc Anglicanæ Eccleſiæ, &c.* But if now the Reformed *Engliſh* Churches do perſiſt, being upheld by the Authority of their Biſhops and Archbiſhops, as this hath happened unto them in our Memory, that they have had Men of that Order not only famous, and Gods Martyrs, but alſo moſt worthy Paſtors and Doctors, let *England* ſurely enjoy that ſingular Bleſſing of God. Which I pray God may be perpetual unto it.” The ſight of *Downhams* Name among the Fellows of *Chriſts* College hath produced theſe Paſſages, as ſome Memorial of him.

Chadwick *of* Emanuel, *gives Offence for a Sermon preached at St.* Maries *Rev.* T. B.

We paſs from *Chriſts* to *Emanuel* College, whereof one *Charles Chadwic*, M. A. was Fellow; who had given great Offence for a Sermon, preached by him at St. *Maries*; reflecting upon the Non-Reſidence of ſome of the Univerſity; particularly ſuch as were Governors of the Colleges: Calling them *Murtherers* of many Thouſands. For which and ſuch like Words he was ſummoned to appear before the Heads: To whom he gave Bond of 50 *l.* for his Appearance. But thus it ſtands at length in the Univerſity Regiſter.

“ *Nov.* 2. 1587. *Car. Chadwic*, M. A. Coll. *Eman. Socius, venit coram* D. *Johe. Copcot*, S. T. P. *& Vicecan. & Dominis* D D. *Perne, Fulk, Styll, Tyndal* and *Legg, Juſticiariis Dnæ Regin. Et recognovit ſe debere Reginæ* 50 l. *ſolvend. ſub Conditione, viz.* That the ſaid *Charles Chadwick* ſhall perſonally appear before the Vicechancellor of the Univerſity of *Cambridge* for the Time being; whenſoever he ſhall be lawfully called or warned at *Emanuel* College or elſewhere; to anſwer to ſuch Speeches, as he uttered in a Sermon made at St. *Maries* Church upon St. *Bartholomews*

ANNO 1587.

"Day laſt paſt. And alſo to any other Perſons, who were injured "by the ſaid Speeches: Intending to proſecute their Actions for "Words then and there uttered. And alſo ſhall Perſonally, or by "his lawful Attorney, appear at all Days and Times, when his "Matter, ſhall be handled, until final End be made in this Suit. "That then this Recognizance ſhall be void.

Proſecuted by certain Doctors for his Words.

The Proſecutors were Doctors *Perne*, *Styll* and *Tyndal*. *Roger Morell*, B. D. depoſed, that the ſaid *Cha. Chadwick* ſaid in Effect, That by the Non-Reſidents of the Univerſity, there were murdered Thouſands of Souls. But how many, he doth not remember. But he is ſure he named above Twenty. And he ſaith, that in his Judgment, he noted in this Speech the Governors of the Colleges particularly. For whereas it might be objected in the Defence of ſome Non-reſidents, that of neceſſity there muſt be ſome to govern the Univerſity; his Anſwer to that Objection was this, Let them go to their Livings and ſee whether we cannot govern the Univerſities. Or if they will not do ſo, let them give over unto us their Livings, and then let them ſtay here. This he ſpake, or Words like in Effect.

Lionel Ducket, M. A. and Fellow of *Jeſus* College, depoſeth to the like Effect. *W. Wady*, M. A. depoſeth to the like Effect, and ſays, That *Cha. Chadwick* named *between* 30 *or* 40 *Thouſand, to be murthered by Computation. Item*, he depoſeth, That Mr. *Chadwick* did reprehend the uſual and laudable Prayers in the Church for all States in Chriſts Church Militant, calling it a *Monk Prayer*. *Richard Warfield*, M. A. Fellow of *Jeſus* College, depoſeth, as far as he can call to remembrance, that Mr. *Chadwick* finding Fault with Non-reſidence of ſome remaining in *Cambridge*, named about nine Thouſand Souls to be in danger. That he did ſpeak againſt Non-reſidence, and Non-reſidents; but *Quo animo* he cannot depoſe. But believe he did it to reprove that Fault.

The Regiſter being imperfect, doth not ſet down what Cenſure paſt upon *Chadwick* upon theſe Informations. But there was a Cauſe of one *Cha. Chad.* of *Emanuel* College, depending two Years after; which ſeems to be the ſame Man.

A Privilege of the Univerſity of Oxford *invaded.*

There came an Epiſtle of Thanks this Year from the other Univerſity of *Oxford* to the Lord Treaſurer; to whom they had addreſſed for his Aſſiſtance in a Cauſe, wherein one of their Univerſity Privileges was invaded: Which was, that none within five Miles of that City ſhould be compelled to ſend Proviſion of Bread Corn to the Court; that the Colleges might the better be provided for; the Price whereof might otherwiſe be enhanced. A Stop being put to this Attempt by the Means of that Lord, in their ſaid Letter they acknowledged the Favour, *viz.* That they had underſtood by their Vicechancellor, that he had not only vouchſafed them this preſent Favour, but in many other Reſpects he had been a great Benefactor to them and their Univerſity; and was ready to do ſtill more. This they could not paſs by in ſilence; and thought it an Act of high Improbity to do otherwiſe; eſpecially, ſince it had not only been his Care, but his Pains and Solicitude, to conſult for their Affairs: And that much more than they had before underſtood, but were now informed of. And for all this they expreſt an high Senſe of their

Obligations to him. This Epiſtle I leave in the *Appendix*, as a Remembrance of that Univerſities Gratitude to that Lord, and of that Lords many good Offices towards them.

Numb. XLI.

Now for a few Remarks upon ſome particular Men of Quality and Eminence, falling under this Year.

Remarks upon ſome Perſons of Eminence.

Will. Lambard.

William Lambard, a learned Lawyer, excellently ſkilled in the Hiſtory and Antiquities of this Land, received this Year, as he had done before, ſome Favour from the Lord *Burghley*, who valued him for his great Parts and Deſerts. He was ſometime of *Lincolns* Inn; afterwards his Station was at *Halling* in *Kent*. And was by the ſpecial Order of the Lord Chancellor *Bromley* put into the Commiſſion of the Peace for that County for his great Abilities. He was not without Troubles; to which 'tis like he expoſed himſelf the more by his Care of the publick Service, and ſearch after ſuch as were diſaffected Perſons, Prieſts and others. But the Lord Treaſurer well knowing the Cauſe, and the Merits of the Gentleman, had cleared him and ſet him free. Which he ſtiled *Halcion Days*, reſtored to him at *Halling*. And the Lord *Cobham* of that County, was alſo his ſeaſonable Helper: Whom he called his *Fatherlike good* Lord: Who had favoured ſome Requeſt and Petition of his to that Lord. For which reſtoration of thoſe his Halcion Days, he excuſed himſelf that he returned him his Thanks only by writing, and did not Perſonally pay them. But the Cauſe was, that he was buſy at *Rocheſter* about the Queens Subſidy; and likewiſe the Grief he was then under for the loſs of a godly and dear Companion; [probably his Wife.] But his own Letter ſo well penned, and ſo deeply expreſſive of his Obligation to that Lord, and his own particular Circumſtances, muſt follow in his own Words. For Letters to and from ſuch Perſons of Eminency in theſe Days deſerve to be preſerved.

" Albeit my moſt Honourable and ſingular good Lord, (raiſed unto me by God, for Reſcue of all my Diſtreſſes) Duty willeth, " that I ſhould thankfully preſent myſelf upon my Knees before " you, and not cover me after this Sort in Paper; yet may it pleaſe " your good Lordſhip in regard that I am preſently cloſed in the " midſt of her Majeſties Service for the Subſidy, both in the City " of *Rocheſter*, and in the County at large, to vouchſafe this manner " of yielding my moſt bounden Thanks, till God in further Time " will give me the Means to perform it better.

" I have evermore, my ſingular good Lord, perceived a moſt honourable diſpoſition of Favour in your good Lordſhip towards " me, that never did, or could demerit any Thing at your Hands. " I felt it alſo to my joyful Peace, which for theſe few *Halcion* " Days I have enjoyed at my Ferme in *Hallyng*. But moſt ſenſibly " do I now apprehend it in this my juſt Sorrow for the Loſs of a " moſt godly and dear Companion of my Life; when your good " Lordſhip granted the Deſire preſented on my Behalf by that my " favourable and Fatherlike, good Lord *Cobham*, not only in reſpect " of my Petition, but alſo Pity of mine Eſtate; and for that Affection which your Lordſhip doth bear unto myſelf.

" For all theſe I moſt humbly thank your good Lordſhip upon " the Knees of my Heart; beſeeching that Lord of all to repay unto

ANNO 1587.

"you in the Great Day that comfortable Kindneſs, which I have "received from you: And aſſuring you, that not only myſelf will "daily call unto God for you, but will alſo teach my poor Sucklings to ſend up, and ſound your Praiſes in his Ears. The ſame "bleſs your good Lordſhip, with long Life, and honourable Proſperity here, and take you at the laſt unto himſelf in Heaven. "From *Hallyng*, this 5th of *Sept.* 1587.

Your for ever moſt bound,

William Lambard.

Lambard *nominated for a Judge.*

I add, (that I may here collect together what I have to ſay of this worthy Gentleman, Mr. *Lambarde*) that after a Year or two he was nominated by the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, his Friend, knowing well his Abilities, for a Judge, or ſome ſuch eminent Place in the Law. And ſo the ſaid Lord let him underſtand. Which cauſed another grateful Letter to him; ſhewing his Thankfulneſs, and his Modeſty too, in a Deſire he made; *viz.* That before he ſhould be inveſted in that Service, to be tried firſt for the next Term. For ſo his ingenious and well weighed Letter ran. "That he held himſelf doubly "bound to ſerve her Highneſs with all his Power; and the rather, "for that it had pleaſed his Lordſhip to give his Name to her Majeſty with his good Report of him. Only he beſeeched his good "Lordſhip to add this unto the reſt of his Favours, that he might "not be inveſted in the Service, but to be tried firſt for the next "Term, and upon his Probation to be admitted." For in this Tenour his ingenuous and modeſt Letter ran. Which will be found in the *Appendix* from the Original.

Numb. XLII.

Kilb. Topogr. of Kent. *Epiſt.*

Character of Lambard.

I cannot let this Man paſs, without the Mention of a Character, that *Kilburne* gives of him in his *Topography and Survey* of *Kent:* Who termed him, "That learned, judicious and laborious Gentle-"man, *William Lambard*, Eſq; whoſe Monuments of Piety and "Charity in that County, his Directory of the peaceable Govern-"ment of the ſame, [*i. e.* his Book of the *Office of a Juſtice of* "*Peace,*] and his painful and able Performance of his *Perambula-*"*tion*, [*i. e.* in his Book of that County, ſo named] have rendred, "and will perpetuate his Memory famous. And that Monument of his Piety and Charity above ſpoken of, was a College or Almshouſe for 20 poor People, Founded by him *Anno* 1560, in *Eaſt Greenwich:* Termed the *College of Queen* Elizabeths poor People.

Lord Treaſurer falſly repreſented in a Libel. Vindicated.

About this Year it was, that an abuſive, lying Popiſh Libel came forth, with unworthy and falſe Reflection upon the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. Which occaſioned a Vindication of him, by ſome particular Order from himſelf; wiping off thoſe ſcandalous Reports that were given out of him. Whether then printed or no, I cannot tell. But I ſhall tranſcribe it from the Original Paper, as I found it in the *Cotton* Library; referring the Reader to the *Appendix*. Which is worthy the Publick; for the better Knowledge of ſo great a Man, and ſo uſeful a Stateſman in that Age.

[Numb. XLII.]

I have

ANNO 1587.

The Earl of Oxford *diſcontented with the Lord* Burghley.

I have alſo a Remark or two more to make of that wiſe and worthy Stateſman the Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer, of whom ſo much already. He had matched his beloved Daughter *Anne*, to the Earl of *Oxford*. Who had not ſhewed that conjugal Kindneſs and Love to her, as was expected: Being diſcontented that he was not preferred (which he looked for) eſpecially, depending upon the great Intereſt of his Father in Law; and it having been ſuggeſted to him, that he had ſpoken ſomething in Council to his Diſparagement. And ſo in an angry Mood went beyond Sea. This made the Lord Treaſurer very uneaſy, as well as the Lady, his Wife, a very worthy and accompliſhed Lady. I find a Letter of the ſaid Treaſurer written to him, to ſoften him, and vindicate himſelf; that he had not been wanting in his Endeavours to prefer him at Court. And the Day after he had received the Earls Letter, he anſwered to this Tenour.

That Lords Letter to the Earl.

“ That he perceived by it an Opinion of his Lordſhip, that he thought it had been, and might be in his Power, conſidering, as he writ, that the managing of all Cauſes paſſed through his Hand, to ſtrengthen his Eſtate. And therefore that he ſeemed to infer, that the lack of his Preferment came by him, [the Lord Treaſurer.] For that he could never hear of a Way propoſed for his Preferment.” To which the Lord Treaſurer uſed theſe Words: My Lord, for a direct Anſwer, I affirm for a Truth, and that to be well proved, that your Lordſhip miſtakes my Power; howſoever you ſay, that I manage the Affairs. “ The Trouble whereof is laid upon me: But no Power to do myſelf, or any Kin or Friend any good: But rather impeached and croſſed. Which I am taught theſe many Years patiently to endure: Yea, to conceal.

“ Secondly, That there have been no Ways prepared for your Preferment I do utterly deny; and can particularly make it manifeſt by Teſtimony of Counſillors, how often I have propounded Ways to prefer you to Services. But why theſe could not take place, I muſt not particularly ſet them down in Writing; leſt either I diſcover the Hinderer, or offend yourſelf in ſhewing the Allegations to impeach your Lordſhip from ſuch Preferment. And therefore if your Lordſhip pleaſe not to admit my Defence, by avowing to your Lordſhip on my Faith afore God, that I have at all Times, when Occaſion ſerved, had your Lordſhip in Remembrance to be uſed in honourable Service; then I muſt content my ſelf with the Wrong you do me, in noting me, as you do very roundly, that you find yourſelf by me little ſtrengthned in Eſtate; and nothing in Friendſhip. And ſo I conclude, my Lord, that finding you thus affected, I mind not to diſpute of this Matter with you by any Writing; but wiſh you ſuch other Friends as you may be better perſuaded of, than you are of me.

“ As for the Matter of *John Wottons* Report of any my Speeches of your Lordſhip, wherewithal the Court was full, that you were offended with me, I have charged *John Wotton* with; who doth in a Sort deny it. But if he ſaid to your Lordſhip, that I ſaid any Word to your Diſgrace in Council, I affirm to your

“ Lord-

ANNO 1587.

" Lordſhip that he lieth. And ſo with me do all the Counſillors, " that heard my Speech affirm herein, to have belied me. But I " leave him to his own Defence. And ſorry I am, that your Lordſhip would put him in a Ballance of Credit againſt me, after you " had heard of me.

" Your Lordſhip muſt take in good Part my haſty Writing, for " neither my Health, nor my Leiſure doth permit me to write ſo " adviſedly, as otherwiſe the Cauſe requireth. And yet, my Lord, " I hope, I write nothing but I may avow, howſoever you may in " your doubtful Mind of me, otherwiſe interpret it. From my " Houſe in *Weſtminſter*, the 15th of *Decemb.* 1587.

Your Lordſhips ready to deſerve well,

W. B.

Earl of Oxford. Camd. Eliz. *p.* 62.

This *Edward* Earl of *Oxford*, was the more earneſt to obtain ſome Place of Profit as well as Honour from the Court: for he was a great Spender, and, as the Hiſtorian writ of him, ſet his Patrimony flying. And as this gave Cauſe of his Expectation from that Lord, whoſe Daughter he had married, ſo likewiſe to that Letter above, written in Vindication of himſelf, and his Endeavours to ſerve him.

The Earl of Leiceſter *to the Lord Treaſurer upon ſome Difference.*

This good Lord Treaſurer had another Trouble created him by another great Lord, at Court, and Favourite, namely, *Robert*, Earl of *Leiceſter*. Who had uſed ſome angry Speeches to the ſaid Treaſurer; having thwarted him in ſomewhat, diſcourſed before the Queen in Council.

As, " That he found himſelf grieved with ſuch croſs Handling, " as both at that and other Times he had done. And that he ſaw " his Lordſhip very ready to croſs him before her Majeſty. And " that he liked it ſo ill, that he would and could find way to anger " him as well. " The Treaſurer had alſo reckoned by ſome of the Earls Words, as though he had charged him with ſomething againſt her Majeſty.

This cauſed him to write that Morning to the Earl; and the Earl as ſoon anſwered him that Night, juſtifying himſelf. And by this private arguing with one another, taking a better Courſe than ſome Gentlemen are wont to do, by making Challenges, and deciding their Differences by the Sword; intending nothing leſs than the murthering one another. But it will not be unacceptable to read the Earls Letter, which is endorſed by the ſaid Treaſurers own Hand, *The Earl of* Leiceſter *in anſwer to mine, writ the ſame Morning.*

The Earls Letter.

" My Lord, I know not from whence my Hap hath it, but hit " hath fallen out ſundry Times, both contrary to my Expectation, " and much leſs by any Deſert of mine; that I have found your " Lordſhip more ready to thwart and croſs my Dealing, than any " other Mans, eſpecially in the Preſence of her Majeſty; and for " ſuch Cauſes as I have been the more earneſt in; and which by " his Lordſhips own Allowance and Opinion it had been ſo reſolved

“ on by their Conferences before.” But this whole Letter, being ſomewhat long, I leave to be read in the *Appendix*.

Numb. XLIII.

The Death of the Lord Treaſurers Mother. Certifies it to Court.

Another Affliction fell to the Lot of the Lord Treaſurer this Year, *viz.* in the Month of *March*. Which was the Deceaſe of his Mother, an aged and pious Gentlewoman. The great Reſpect due to this eminent Stateſman required the Condole of the Court. In which the Queen joyned, and gave ſpecial Order to Sir *John Woolley* to do it to him. For the Lord Treaſurer had intimated his Loſs to the Perſon, near about the Queen, being her Secretary for the *Latin* Tongue: Excuſing his coming to the Court, and waiting on the Queen for that Cauſe. I have the ſaid *Wolleys* Letter before me, wrote back to that Lord on the ſaid ſad Occaſion: And of his Purpoſe ſpeedily to acquaint the Queen with it, who was retyred that Day. The Import of his Letter was,

Wolleys *Letter to him from Court on that Occaſion.*

“ That he was heartily ſorry for the evil News he [the Lord Treaſurer] had received of the Death of his dear Mother: Whom, though God had bleſſed with long Life here, and now with immortal Life in Heaven (whereof no Man could doubt, that had heard of the moſt charitable and godly Courſe of her Days) yet muſt he not blame his Lordſhip for the natural Sorrow he felt with this Loſs of his, but rather honour and love him the more for this Senſe of Kindneſs appearing in him: Shewing himſelf therein a natural Man, ſubject to human Paſſions; and not *Stoical*, as too many in theſe evil Days of ours were found to be: He went on in theſe Words.

“ My good Lord, it ſhould be but Folly in me, to think I could ſpeak more in this Cauſe than is known to yourſelf in your own Wiſdom: Whereunto I remit myſelf; taking part, as your poor and faithful Friend, even from my Heart, of this Grief of yours, wherewith I have not yet acquainted her Majeſty: (Becauſe ſhe had that Morning taken Phyſick) meaning to do it as ſoon as he might in the Afternoon. That he had imparted it to my Lord Steward [Earl of *Leiceſter*] even then: Who otherwiſe would have lookt for his Honour that Day.

He added, “ That when he had ſpoken with her Majeſty, he would write again to his Lordſhip. In the mean time I beſeech God to encreaſe your Health both of Body and Mind, to the Benefit of our Eſtate, and the Comfort of all your Friends. At the Court, the 13. of *March*, 1587.

Your Lordſhips for ever moſt bounden,

J. Wolley.

Thus *Wolley* affectionately to the Lord Treaſurer. And then ſoon after having acquainted the Queen with the ſaid Matter, ſhe ſent him away forthwith on purpoſe in her Name to comfort him, in Token of her high Eſteem of him, as well as to require him to ſet upon her neceſſary Buſineſs of the Kingdom. *Wolley* accordingly repairs to the Treaſurers Houſe, but found him gone at his coming, being retyred in his Sorrow. Whereupon *Wolley* ſupplyed his

The Queens Meſſage to him.

ANNO 1587.

Meſſage with another Letter to him, wrote from his own Houſe near the *Savoy:* To this Furport: "That becauſe her Majeſty had "ſent him to his Houſe in *London*, and he found him gone at his "coming thither, he thought it neceſſary to ſupply the Meſſage by "Writing, which he ſhould have done by Mouth, if he had come "in Time, before his going thence. That her Highneſs willed him "to ſay to his Lordſhip, that ſhe was exceeding ſorrowful for his "Grief; knowing, how ſenſible his Lordſhip was wont to take the "like, though none the like to her Knowledge had happened unto "him. She was old, as her Majeſty ſaid, and you wiſe. And "therefore her Death, happening according to natural Courſe, was "to be taken moderately by you. To withdraw therefore your "troubled Mind from private Grief to publick Cogitations, ſhe "prayed your Lordſhip to think upon the ſpeedy Diſpatch of the "Commiſſioners for *Munſter* with all the Haſte you can. [Theſe "Commiſſioners were they, (the Earl of *Derby*, Lord *Cobham*, and "other) that were to be ſent to treat with the *Spanyard* about a "Peace.] For they muſt, ſhe ſaid in allwiſe be there, before the "Firſt of *May*. That it might pleaſe his Lordſhip to let him hear "from him the Morrow after, for the full ſatisfying of her Majeſty, "as touching the Matter, and likewiſe when his Lordſhip thought "he might be at the Court again.

And concluded, "That he had acquainted the Lords and others "of the Council of this Accident that had happened unto him. "Who were right ſorry for it, if it might be remedied. And ſo "committed his Lordſhip to the Grace of Almighty God. Dated "from his own Houſe near the *Savoy*, the 13. of *March*, 1587.

Such was the Need the Queen apprehended ſhe had of this great Counſillor in her important Affairs at this Juncture eſpecially, and the high Regard both ſhe and her Nobility had for him.

Rithers *Letter of Condole to L.* Burhgley.

I meet with another Letter to this Lord upon the ſame Occaſion of Condole, from one Mr. *Rither*, an eminent Perſon in the Northern Parts; with whom and this Lord was a friendly Correſpondence. Which Letter ſo wiſely, learnedly and piouſly compoſed, I cannot but give the Reader in the *Appendix*; eſpecially, becauſe we ſhall hear more of this Gentleman hereafter.

Num. XLV.

Earl of Leiceſter *takes up Money of the Merchants.*

I have this to add of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, (of whom ſome Matters before) that went out into the *Low Countries*, to aſſiſt them with Forces from the Queen, he took up large Sums of Mony of ſome of the wealthier Citizens of *London* upon his Barony of *Denbigh*; when the Strangers Merchants refuſed to lend. But that nothing might be wanting in ſuch an Expedition, reckoned to tend ſo much to the Safety of the Kingdom, they made up the Sum to be lent among themſelves. But now upon the Earls Return, the Mony was not ready to be repayed. Which put the Aldermen who took up the Money for him; to be in ſome Concern. And they applied themſelves to the Lord Treaſurer, with a Petition to this Purpoſe, laying open their Caſe, being, as they were ſtyled in the Writings, Copartners with him of that Barony.

Theſe Lenders were, Sir *George Barnes*, Maior Elect, Sir *Wolſtan Dixie*, Kt. *Richard Martin*, and *John Hare*, Aldermen and others,

ANNO 1587.

The Barony of Denbeigh *mortgaged to them by him.*

Their Petition

others, Copartners and Morgagees of that Manour of *Denbigh*. Their Petition, which will ſhew the Matter more at large, ran in this Tenour: It was their humble Petition to *Hatton*, Lord Chancellor, and Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer; ſetting forth, " That whereas " their Honours had lately directed their Letters to them, ſignify- " ing thereby, that they were by her Majeſty appointed to deal " with them for a longer Reſpit to be given to the Right Honou- " rable, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, for the Payment of their Monies due " in *January* next: They advertiſed his Lordſhip, that when his " Honour was purpoſed his Voyage into the *Low Countries*, and be- " fore the ſame was then perfectly known abroad, Order was given " out by his Lordſhip for the taking up of a great Sum of Money at " the Hands of Strangers in *London*; upon ſome of ours, Bond and " Aſſurance to be given for the ſame. Which Money was promiſed " to be lent; and ſupplied accordingly. But when it appeared for " whoſe Uſe, and for what Service it was to be furniſhed, the " Strangers went from their Promiſe; and there was no Money to be " had, or taken up among them at any Rate. Whereupon we, con- " ſidering the Honourable Purpoſe, and the Neceſſity of the Action " in Hand, did upon our own Credit (the moſt of us taking up " Money at Intereſt at hard Rates) ſupplied the ſeveral Sums of " 500 *l.* upon the Mortgage of the ſaid Manor, expecting our Mo- " ney at divers Days of Payment in *December* laſt. Which was not " performed. Then divers of us, being driven to a narrow ſtrait of " Time, either made preſent Payment of the Money by us taken up " at Intereſt, or continued the Uſe thereof, for a longer Time.

" The Day of Payment being paſt we were all earneſtly ſollicited " to re-aſſure the ſaid Manor again to his Lordſhip and his Heirs, " upon Condition that our Money ſhould be paid unto us in *Janu-* " *ary* next. Upon which Conſideration we were content, and did " make a new Aſſurance unto his Lordſhip, with a Reſpit of Re- " demption, until that Time. At which Time according to the " ſame Aſſurance it importeth as much, to receive our Money ac- " cordingly: Conſidering that many of our Credits lies upon it. " And alſo conſidering the hard State of Merchants, and Men of " Trade in this City at this Day.

" In reſpect of all which, the Premiſſes, We are humble Suitors " unto your Honours, to be a Means in our Behalf unto her Maje- " ſty, that ſome Order may be taken for the Payment of the ſaid " Money at the Day of our ſaid Aſſurance and Agreement, and we " ſhall, according to our Duties, daily pray for the Preſervations of " your right Honourable Eſtates.

Beſides theſe Gentlemen, of whom I have made ſome Remarks, and of Matters wherein they were concerned, I muſt allot here a Place for one Mr. *Rither* of the *North*, (of whom ſomewhat before) both in reſpect of the Quality of his Perſon, as alſo for ſome Advertiſements that he communicated this Year to a great Man at Court concerning the Northern Parts of *Yorkſhire*, and thoſe that inhabited there. And firſt ſomething concerning the Man himſelf.

James Rither was a wiſe and learned Gentleman of that County, Lord of the Manor of *Harwood*. And (upon a particular Occaſion

James Rither *of* Yorkſhire.

of Trouble befalling him) gave the Lord *Burghley* this Account of himſelf, “I am a Gentleman, not meanly deſcended; a poor Servant of her Majeſty, [in ſome Commiſſions in thoſe Parts.] One that hath not ſo vainly ſpent my Time; but have done her Majeſty good Service in my Country.” But two or three Years after he was detained in Priſon by no Deſerts of his own, but drawn in by ſiniſter extortionous Devices, under Colour of her Majeſties Proceſs, for Debts to her, which he had paid. The Effect of the Malice of many in thoſe Parts againſt Men of Juſtice, and Honeſty.

Account of Mr. Bellaſis.

But now for his Intelligence ſent this Year to that Lord, take it from his own Letter. He gave a particular Character of Mr. *Bellaſis*, a *Yorkſhire* Gentleman, (eldeſt Son of Sir *William Bellaſis*) employed in the Borders; of whom Enquiry ſeems to have been made from Court. *viz.* “That he was a Man of a weakly Conſtitution of Body, and ſubject to many Infirmities. But for Parts of the Mind, he [*Rither*] dared to gage his Credit, his Like, for all Towardneſs of Diſpoſition in Government, or otherwiſe in any ſoundneſs of Judgment, never was bred in that Country, ſince *Rithers* Time of Abode there; which was then four above twenty Years. That he was only one Year in Commiſſion of the Peace; and ſince that Time, the eldeſt, and in Effect all the Juſtices of that Part are glad to fetch Light at his Torch. And indeed ſince the Death of old *Dalton*, no Man more ſufficient of Skill in the *North* of this Shire.” *Rither* went on, ſhewing a particular unhappy Accident happening to this Gentleman. “That he taking by Appointment an hundred Foot from the Borders, was put to live with only 25 of them, in a Place, as it is now ſaid, moſt ſhot at by the bloody and inhumane Cruelty of that Savage Nation, [*i. e.* the *Scots*.] What Miſtake was made of his Man, and how narrow his own way of Eſcape was, I need not inform your Honour. The Hazard I ſee (as he proceeded) of a great Loſs to a Ground that ſo much needeth; and ſo ſeldom breedeth ſuch.” He added his Conjecture of Treachery, “I fear me, the Uprightneſs of the Gentleman was more than ſtood with ſome of their good Liking, that put him forward. Happly your Honour ſhall not hear this Commendation confirmed at all Hands that know him. Becauſe here we uſe rather to envy than imitate ſo good Diſpoſitions; though it fall out between near Kinſmen.

Diſorders in the North.

And then, as to the Condition of the People, thus he wrote to that Lord: “Our Diſorders here grow common, and greater than we can well bear, or eaſily remedy.... The Aſſociates of the Peace in theſe Parts are become ſo few, by the late diſplacing of many, by the Sickneſs and Death of ſome, as alſo by Abſence of others; ſo that ſuch are fain to ſerve in three Parts of the Shire, as were wont to ſerve only in one Hundred; from the Liberties of *York* to the Edge of *Lancaſhire*. Near to the common Paſſage between, there is but one Juſtice left. By which and other unforeſeen Accidents, it falleth out, that our Services are generally, and by particular Caſes ſometimes, not unworthily blamed by her Majeſty, and your Honours of the High Senate: When ſuch

ANNO 1587.

“ as endeavour in Deeds do deſerve better, bear yet nevertheleſs
“ more than the due Shares of the Burthen of others Overſights.

CHAP. XIV.

John Fox, *the Martyrologiſt dies. His* Acts *and* Monuments. *Some Account of that Book, and the Editions: And Enlargements. The great Eſteem of the Book and Author. His Judgment of the Government of the Church by Archbiſhops and Biſhops: Archbiſhop* Whitgifts *Value of him. His Monument. His Life in* Latin*: Written by his Son. His Books. His Poſterity. A* Latin *Epiſtle to the* Puritans. *Vindication of* the Engliſh Juſtice*: Written by* J. Stubbes. Latin *Poems by* Newton.

John Fox, *the Martyrologiſt, dies.*

His Acts *and Monuments.*

THIS Year concluded the Life of the Reverend *John Fox*; a Man of Remark for his Learning, and for his firm Adherence to the true Religion in the Times of Perſecution, (for the which he was an Exile) and for his Uſefulneſs to the Church, in reſpect of the ſeveral learned Books he wrote; and eſpecially his Martyrology, called, *The Acts and Monuments of the Church.* Infinite was the Pains he took in compiling thereof, and in ſearching of Regiſters, and the Enlargements in the ſeveral Editions in his Life Time. The firſt was publiſhed by him in *Latin*, and printed, I think, at *Baſil*, (where he lived) one of the Cantons in *Switzerland*. The next Edition, which was ſet forth in *Engliſh*, the Hiſtory commencing about 500 Years before, was printed in *London*, in the Year 1562. being continued to the Beginning of Queen *Elizabeths* Reign. And bare this Title, ſhewing the Purpoſe of the Book, *Acts and Monuments touching Things done and practiſed by the Prelates of the* Roman *Church, eſpecially, in this Realm of* England *and* Scotland, *from the Year of our Lord, One Thouſand, unto the Time now preſent. Wherein is lively declared the whole State of the Chriſtian Church; with ſuch Perſecutions and horrible Troubles, as have happened in theſe laſt and perilous Days. Faithfully gathered and collected according to the true Copies and Writings certificatory, as well of them that ſuffered, as alſo of the others that were Doers and Workers thereof. By* J. F.

Few Writers within the 500 *Years, ſince* Satan *broke looſe.*

In the Beginning of his Hiſtory he obſerved, how few and ſcarce the Writers were of ſo many notable Things, worthy of Knowledge, happening in the Time of the Five hundred Years, ſince *Satan* broke looſe, and ſo paſt and eſcaped without Memory in the Church of Chriſt. And that hitherto the barbarouſneſs of thoſe Days, and

partly

ANNO 1587.

partly Negligence in the learned Sort, were no ſmall Cauſes, why we lack now ſo many Things, much needful in theſe Times to be known. However ſuch as remained, ſpecially, of the more ſincere and leſs ſuſpected Sort of Writers, he [the Author] purpoſed in this Hiſtory to digeſt and compile. To the Intent to profit the Church of Chriſt. That in theſe Reformed Days, we ſeeing the prodigious Deformities and Calamities of thoſe former Times, might pour out more abundant Thanks to the Lord for this his moſt ſweet and merciful Reformation.

Preliminaries.

The Preliminaries to this Book were theſe. I. An Epiſtle Dedicatory to Queen *Elizabeth*. II. *Ad doctum Lectorem*, J. Foxus: In *Latin*. III. To the Perſecutors of Gods Truth; commonly called *Papiſts*. IV. A Declaration concerning the Utility and Profit of this Hiſtory.

Preſents his Book to Magdalen *College*, Oxon.

Of this Book the Author made a Preſent to *Magdalen* College, *Oxon.* (whereof he once had been a Member) in an elegant *Latin* Epiſtle to Dr. *Lawrence Humphrey*, then Preſident, and the reſt of the Scholars. Which Epiſtle in MS. ſtill remains in the Library of that College. A Tranſcript whereof was ſome Time ago kindly ſent me by Dr. *Charlott*, late Maſter of *Univerſity* College, deceaſed. Of which Epiſtle take this ſhort Account. Which began with his Wiſh, *Salutem & Pacem in Chriſto ſine fine.* "That he did it in "thankful Acknowledgment; having had his Education there: That "College being his Nurſe: Imitating the poor Widow in the Goſ-"pel, by the Mite that he ſent thither; thoſe Minutes of his Pains "and Studies that he ſent thither, to be thrown into their publick "Treaſury. Though mean and unworthy, he confeſt, to be re-"ceived into their *Chartophylacium*. But that indeed *Garbrand*, "their Bookſeller, perſuaded him; as alſo a ſilent, and as it were "innate Propenſion towards that College; and withal the Remem-"brance of their Humanity towards him, and of his Duty in like-"wiſe to them.

"Add alſo, that a great Part of his Hiſtory touched their Uni-"verſity. Whence, as from a Fountain, the happy Propagation of "the Reformed Religion took its firſt and only Beginning, but en-"creaſe alſo, through the Chriſtian World. [By the Means of "*Wickliff* of that Univerſity.] It only grieved him that the Work "was not writ in *Latin*, whereby the Fruits of it might ſpread fur-"ther, or be more pleaſant to them to read. Which he had done; "but that the Regard he had to the common Edification of his "Country required otherwiſe. That among the Confeſſors and "Martyrs for Religion, that Univerſity chiefly ſent out many. And "particularly *Magdalen* College yielded *Joſcelin Palmer*, not many "Years before ſnatched away: Whom after a Manner he now reſtored "to them again; [*i. e.* by the Hiſtory he had given of that Mans Sufferings.] But I leave the whole Epiſtle in *Foxes* own well penned *Latin* Stile to be read in the *Appendix*. Numb. XLIV.

Another Edition of this Book by the Author.

The Author ſet forth another Edition of his Martyrology in his Life-time about the Year 1582, with great Additions, in two large Volumes. The former beginningat the ten firſt Perſecutions in the Primitive Times, and ſo the Hiſtory continued through the Ages of the

ANNO 1587.

the ſeveral Reigns of the Kings of *England* ſucceſſively, to the Beginning of King *Henry* VIII. At which the Second, and much larger Volume commenceth. Where, in the firſt Page is a Cut of that King ſitting, and treading upon the Popes Neck; vindicating the Supremacy of his Kingdom againſt the Uſurpation of the See of *Rome*. This Volume was reviſed, corrected and enlarged by the Author. Who thus concluded it, (as in the End of the Book he declares) "That not very much had eſcaped in his Writings, neceſ-
" ſary to be known, touching the ſeveral Affairs, Doings and Pro-
" ceedings of the Church and Church-men. And wherein might
" be ſeen the whole Order, State, Deſcent, Courſe and Continuance
" of the ſame: The encreaſe and decreaſe of true Religion, the
" creeping in of Superſtition, the horrible Troubles of Perſecution,
" the wonderful Aſſiſtance of the Almighty, in maintaining his
" Truth, the glorious Conſtancy of Chriſts Martyrs, the Rage of his
" Enemies, the Alteration of Times, the Travails and Troubles of
" the Church from the firſt Primitive Age of Chriſts Goſpel, to the
" End of Queen *Mary*, and the Beginning of gracious Queen *Eli-*
" *zabeth*, during the Time of her happy Reign; which had hither-
" to continued through the glorious Protection of the Lord, the
" Space of 24 Years.

Hiſtory of the Church and Churchmen contained in this Book.

This Book was at other Times reprinted. As in the Year 1610. by the Company of *Stationers*, and of later Times with new Copper Cutts. I add, that this Hiſtory of the Church was of ſuch Value and Eſteem for the Uſe of it to Chriſtian Readers, and the Service of our Religion Reformed, that it was in the Days of Queen *Elizabeth*, enjoined to be ſet up in ſome convenient Place in all the Pariſh Churches, together with the Bible, and Biſhop *Jewels Defence* of the *Apology* of the Church of *England*; to be read at all ſuitable Times by the People, before or after Service.

Fox's *Judgment of Epiſcopacy.*

Whitg. *Defence. p.* 421.

I ſhall inſert here one Paſſage out of this Book, cited by Dr. *Whitgift*, occaſioned by a Controverſy between *T. Cartwright* and him, about the Government of this Church by Archbiſhops and Biſhops: Alledging *Fox*'s Judgment in that Point. "I conclude, ſaith *Whit-*
" *gift*, with the very Words of that worthy Man, (who hath ſo well
" deſerved of this Church of *England*) Maſter *Fox*. *In the Eccle-*
" *ſiaſtical State we take not away the Diſtinction of ordinary De-*
" *grees, ſuch as by the Scripture be appointed, or by the Primitive*
" *Church allowed; as, Patriarchs, Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Miniſters*
" *and Deacons. For of theſe four we eſpecially read, as Chief.*
" *In which four Degrees, as we grant, diverſity of Office, ſo we*
" *admit in the ſame alſo, diverſity of Dignity: Neither denying that*
" *which is due to each Degree: Neither yet maintaining the Ambi-*
" *tion of any ſingular Perſon. For as we give to the* Miniſter *Place*
" *above the* Deacon, *to the* Biſhop *above the* Miniſter, *to the* Arch-
" biſhop *above the* Biſhop; *ſo we ſee no Cauſe of Inequality, why*
" *one Miniſter ſhould be above another Miniſter, one Biſhop in his*
" *Degree above another Biſhop, to deal in his Dioceſs, or an Arch-*
" *biſhop above another Archbiſhop. And this is to keep an Order*
" *duly and truly in the Church, according to the true Nature and*
" *Definition of Order by the Authority of* Auguſtine; *Ordo eſt parium*

“ *diſpariúmq; rerum, ſua cuique loca tribuens, Diſpoſitio.* Hitherto M. *Fox.*

Lib. de Civit.

And then *Whitgift* applies the above Period (which is found in the 20th Page of his firſt Tome) unto his Adverſary in theſe Words. “ Now let the indifferent Reader judge, whether theſe Offices be *ſtrange and unheard of in the Church of Chriſt*, as *T. C.* and his Accomplices had affirmed in their *Admonition to the Parliament.*

The Eſteem and Reſpect had of Fox.

I cannot but obſerve the Eſteem and Character that Dr. *Whitgift* expreſt of that Reverend Man by his Words ſubjoined, with reſpect to the Matter before argued: *Viz.* “ That the Words above-mentioned were *Fox*'s own, and expreſt his own Judgment of theſe Degrees and Offices in the Church of *England.* And that he had ſhewn himſelf (in the Place before cited) to be no Enemy either to Archbiſhops, Primates or Biſhops. For I am ſure, as he proceeded, he ſpake as he thought; and that he was not a Man that would be corrupted with Praiſe. And that he thought of M. *Fox* as of one, that he loved and reverenced. For ſome further Notice of this Reverend Man, and the Reſpect *Whitgift*, (when Archbiſhop) had for him, ſee the Life of that Archbiſhop.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. B. III. Ch. 16. p. 254.

Camdens *Character of him,* Oxford *Librar.*

May 7, 1718.

Under the Year 1587. *Camden* in the *Latin* MS. of his *Annals* of Queen *Elizabeth*, took Notice of *Fox*'s Death, in theſe Words, (which ſhew the great Reſpect they had for him in thoſe Days) *Anno* 1587. *Ex Eruditorum numero obiit* Johannes Foxus, Oxonienſis, *qui Eccleſiaſticam* Angliæ *Hiſtoriam, ſive Martyrologiam, indefeſſo Veritatis ſtudio, conſcripſit: Quem Latinè primum, poſtea* Anglicè *auctius, Summâ cum Laude, contexuit.* Which Words the late Reverend and Learned Dr. *Charlet*, ſome Time Maſter of *Univerſity* College *Oxon*, deceaſed, was pleaſed to tranſcribe and ſend me in a Letter. Which he rather did, (as he wrote) upon a ſcandalous Character of the ſaid *Fox* in a Preface before the ſaid *Camdens Elizabeth*, of late printed at *Oxford*: Uſing theſe Words, in his ſaid Letter, “ We of the Univerſity, and I in particular, are much offended at Mr. *T. H.* his injurious Character of *J. F.* his Martyrology, which he calls, *Magna exparte Mendaciorum Farrago.* Whereas *Camden* ſpeaks of him with very great Honour in the MS. ” I forbear to add what ſome others of our modern Writers tell the World of him, different from the Eſteem had of him and his Works in the Age wherein he lived and was better known.

Foxes *Monument.*

Fox (of whom we have been ſpeaking) was buried in the Pariſh Church of St. *Giles Cripplegate*, in which Pariſh he lived; where in the Chancel againſt the *South* Wall, remains his Monument, with an Inſcription in Marble, ſet up by his eldeſt Son, *Samuel:* And near unto it, is a flat Stone over his Body: Under which are two other eminent Perſons, *viz. Rich. Bullen*, and *William Bullen*, M. D. Brothers, interred; with ſome *Latin* Verſes engraven, giving Characters of all three. Theſe Verſes, accompanying the Writing upon the Monument the Reader may find in the *Appendix.*

Numb. XLVI.

His Life writ by his Son in Latin.

The Life of this memorable and laborious Writer and pious Confeſſor, was compoſed at good length in an elegant *Latin* Stile by his ſaid *Son*, *Samuel Fox*, a learned Man. The Original MS. whereof I have. Which a Relation of his, having read, earneſtly requeſted him

ANNO 1587.

to publiſh, as highly uſeful, as alſo for preſerving the Memory of ſo well deſerving a Man: Thus addreſſing unto him:

Digniſſime Vir, Legi & perlegi, cum delectatione & Approbatione, literatum & elaboratum Tractatum tuum de Vita & morte Spectatiſſimi Patris tui, viri certè diviniſſimi: Qui in Doctrinæ Sanitate Evangelicus, & vitæ Sanctitate Angelicus, extitit. In cujus ore fuit Verbum Vitæ, & in cujus moribus fuit vita verbi. Verba enim in opera convertebat; & ut dixit, vixit.

Deliciæ noſtri Temporis ille fuit.
Talis erat, de quo mentiri Fama veretur.

Phœnix Arabicus, *Felix* Ariſtotelicus. *Quæ cum ita ſint, (lectiſſime & dilectiſſime Cognate) quid jam reſtat, quin ut Libellus iſte aureus, & Laureus, quàm citiſſimè, tua bona cum venia, prælo committatur; ut publici juris fiat.*

This Life of *Fox* was afterwards printed both in *Latin* and *Engliſh*, and placed before his Book of the *Acts and Monuments*, in the Edition, *Anno* 1641. In the ſaid Life are ſpecified the divers other Writings of this laborious Author, beſides his Book of Martyrs, *viz.*

Fox's *Writings.*

Comœdiarum Libri 2.
Syllogiſticon.
Admonitio ad Parliamentum.
De Lapſis per errorem in Eccleſiam reſtituendis.
Oliva Evangelica.
De Chriſto gratis juſtificante.
De Chriſto crucifixo.
Papa confutatus.
Contra Oſorium, *de Juſtitiâ.*
Meditationes ſuper Apocalypſim.
Actorum & Monumentorum Eccleſiæ; Latinè.

Fox's *Poſterity.*

Magdalen College.

Diary of Sam. Fox.

As to the Poſterity of this Reverend Man, he left two Sons, *Samuel*, and *Simeon:* Both bred up to Learning, and well deſerving Men; and of Note in their Times. *Samuel*, the eldeſt, was bred up in the ſame College in *Oxford*, where his Father formerly was a Student. He married *Anne Leveſon*, of a Knightly Family, at *Eſtwel* in *Kent:* And had Iſſue by her, four Sons, *Thomas*, *John*, *John*, and *Robert:* And as many Daughters, *viz. Anne*, *Urſula*, *Jane* and *Sarah*. Whereof *Ann* married to *Chriſtopher Botteler*, Eſq; at *Aſton Berry*, in *Hertfordſhire*; and *Urſula* to *Henry Wollaſton*, Eſquire. Of his Sons, *Thomas* and *Robert* ſurvived.

As to *Samuel* he lived to a great Age, and lived to ſee his Childrens Children. He enjoyed the Prebend of *Shipton Underwich Wood*, *Oxon*, with the Manor annexed, granted by Special Favour to his Father: Which was granted to *Samuel* his Son, by the Means of *Whitgift*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and the readineſs of *Pierſe* Biſhop of *Sarum* (in whoſe Dioceſs it was) to confirm it. And here he ſometimes lived. As alſo afterwards at *Havering* at the *Bower* in *Eſſex*, (an antient Seat of the Kings of *England*,) and at *Copthal* near *Waltham* in the ſame County; being dear to Sir *Thomas Heneage*, Treaſurer of the Queens Chamber; and ſo appointed by the ſaid *Heneage*, to be Steward and Receiver of the Queens Revenues in thoſe Manors.

ANNO 1587.

Dr. Tho. Fox.

His eldeſt Son *Thomas* ſtudied Phyſick, and after divers Years ſpent at *Magdalen* College, he removed and practiſed Phyſick in *London*, and was of the College of Phyſicians, and lived in *Amen Corner*, near *Pater-noſter-Row*, where the College of Phyſicians was long after, till the Fire of *London*. He married *Anne Honywood*, of a worſhipful Family in *Kent*. And by her had an only Daughter named *Allice*. Which *Allice* matched with Sir *Richard Willis*, of *Cambridgſhire*, Bart. By whom ſhe had a Daughter, *Anne*, and a Son named by his Grandfather, *Thomas-Fox Willis*. And upon his Fathers Death, the Honour deſcended upon him, and his Name and Title was, Sir *Thomas-Fox Willis*. He died young, a Lunatick. *Robert*, the younger Son of *Samuel*, was a Sea Captain, and died without Iſſue.

Dr. Simeon Fox.

Now as for *Simeon*, the younger Son of *John Fox*: He was bred up at *Eaton* College, and preferred either there, or at *Kings College, Cambridge*. He was afterwards received by Archbiſhop *Whitgift* unto ſome honourable Place in his Family. Afterwards he travailed abroad, and at length came to *Italy*; and ſettled to his Studies at *Padua*, where he was made a Doctor, and a *Syndic* too. And after divers Years ſpent there, returned home; and was a noted learned Phyſician in *London*, and lived in *Amen Corner*, where his Nephew Dr. *Tho. Fox*, lived with him; and was Preſident divers Years of the College of Phyſicians there. He lived to a great Age, even to Fourſcore; dying the 19th of *April*, in the Year 1642. And was buried decently by his ſaid Nephew in St. *Pauls* Church at the *North* Door, by Dr. *Linacer* his Tomb; His Funeral being upon St. *Marks* Day. He alſo compoſed and ſet up a handſome Monumental Inſcription in Memory of him. Which will give a more particular Account of this Dr. *Simeon Fox*. For which the Reader may apply himſelf to the *Appendix*. As I have tranſcribed it from the Compoſers own Hand.

Numb. XLVII.

Samuel Fox's *Diary.*

Num. XLVIII.

And meeting with ſome ſhort Minutes of *Samuel* the eldeſt Son, writ in his own Diary concerning himſelf, I could not but add them in the *Appendix*, to the reſt of the Memorials of that Reverend Man, his Father: Whereby may be obſerved not only his Education and bringing up in Learning, his Travails abroad, his Reputation at home, his Succeſſes, and proſperous State, and plentiful Iſſue, and length of Age to ſee his Childrens Children; but alſo in all this, the ſignal Bleſſing of God upon him, for that pious Confeſſor, his Fathers ſake.

I muſt ſubjoin here the mention of an excellent Letter in *Latin*, directed to ſuch Miniſters as ſcrupled Conformity to the Rules of the Church, for preventing the Breach of Unity. Written as near as I can conjecture about this or the former Year; the Author not mentioned, but by the Stile, and ſome other Circumſtances, I ſhould be apt to name the above-mentioned to be the Man; or perhaps Dr. *Laurence Humfrey*. It is a very good Diſcourſe, earneſtly preſſing Unity and Agreement upon ſuch as made Diviſions in this Reformed Church, by way of a compaſſionate Addreſs to them. It is

An Expoſtulatory Letter.

An Expoſtulatory Letter to the Puritans, for their Contentions in the Church, and Exhortatory to Peace, and an earneſt Application of

themſelves

ANNO 1587.

themſelves to preach the Goſpel, and to lay aſide Reflections in their Sermons. And bore this Title, *Ad omnes Fideles Miniſtros* JESU, *Cooperarios ſuos in Evangelio, & qui verum habent Domus Dei reformandæ zelum.* This Epiſtle is ſomewhat long, and therefore I place it in the *Appendix*, as well worthy a Place there, being writ in ſuch a Chriſtian Spirit of Concord and Peace.

Num. XLIX.

Vindication of Engliſh *Juſtice.*

I ſhall only add a Book or two ſet forth this Year. The one was, An Anſwer to Cardinal *Allen*, writ by *J. Stubbes*, *in Vindication of the Engliſh Juſtice*, in the Execution of ſeveral Papiſts and Jeſuits for Treaſon. The Book was reviewed by certain learned Civilians, *viz. Bynge*, and *Hammond*, and the Author employed in this Work by the Lord Treaſurer; as hath been ſhewn before, more at large.

Newtons *Poems.*

Tho. Newton of *Cheſhire*, a Poet in theſe Times, among the reſt of his Poems publiſhed in *Latin* Verſe, deſcribes all the Writers of our Hiſtory of *England* and *Wales* to this Year: With this Title: *De Annalibus ſeu Chronicis Anglicis*, in this Manner,

Loydus ut hac pridem gnavus, proluſit arenâ,
  Lelandus, Pricius, Stous, Holingſhedius.
Lambardus, Morus, Camdenus, Thinnius, Hallus,
  Vocalis *, *Grafton, Foxius, Harriſonus.*
Lanquettus, Patinus, Cooperus, Rouſſa Pouelus,
  Caxtonus, Sprottus, Saxto, Treviſa, Balus.
Hardingus, Gyldas, Stanithurſtus, Beda, Nevillus,
  Doctaque Flaminii *lima polivit Opus.*

* Vowel.

And then after the Names of all theſe Hiſtorians, he ends with the mention of the great Eccleſiaſtick Antiquarian, Archbiſhop *Parker*, in this Manner,

Nec te, cane Senex, magne O! Parkere, *ſilebo,*
  Cui decus attulerat Pontificalis Apex.
Omnibus his merito laus debita & optima merces
  Quod Patriæ accendant lumina clara ſuæ.

CHAP. XV.

A Motion for Peace with Spain. *Deliberation thereupon. The Lord Treaſurer delivers his Judgment. A Treaty begun with the Duke* of Parma's *Commiſſioners. The Articles propounded to* Parma, *Broke off. The* Spaniſh *Invaſion. Conſultation thereupon. Intelligence of the Fleet from* Spain. *The Queens Preparations. Publick Prayers appointed. The* Spaniſh *Forces.* La feliciſſime Armada, *ſo termed. Account of the* Spaniſh *Forces in their Books. The Defeat of this Fleet. News printed of the Overthrow of the* Engliſh. *Friers aboard the* Spaniſh *Fleet.* Litanies *uſed for the Succeſs of their Fleet. The* Engliſh *Nation at firſt in a dreadful Conſternation. A* Paſquil *concerning the* Spaniſh *Fleet ſet up at* Rome. *Their Defeat and Miſeries in* Ireland. *Sir* Francis Drakes *Letter from aboard of the Victory.* Killigrew, *Ambaſſador, his Letter to the States at this Juncture.* Rogers, *Ambaſſador in* Denmark, *his Service there. King* Philips *Words, when the bad News was brought him. Publick Thankſgivings. The Queen comes in Triumph to St.* Pauls. *A Thankſgiving Prayer uſed. Exhortation to the People of* England, *to be upon their Guard. The Cauſe of the Queens taking up Arms.*

Annus mirabilis.

WE now proceed to the next Year, *viz.* 1588. the wonderful Year, as it was commonly and deſervedly called, with reſpect to this Nation eſpecially.

Two weighty Matters now lay upon the Queen to be managed. The one was a Treaty propounded to the Queen by the Duke of *Parma*, Governor of the *Netherlands*, for a Truce, in order to a Peace between Her and the King of *Spain*. And the other, the preſerving her ſelf and Kingdoms, from the intended Invaſion of the *Spaniard*.

Motion of a Peace with Spain.

Concerning the former when it came into mature Deliberation before the Queen and Council, in *Decemb.* the Year before, and ſuſpecting the Motion was not ſound at bottom, the greater Care was taken, how they proceeded, to go upon ſure Grounds; and particularly,

larly, not to leave thoſe of the *Netherlands*, whom ſhe had taken into her Protection, to the *Spaniards* Mercy. And in this weighty Caſe the Lord Treaſurer gave his Judgment. Which I find among his Papers, written by himſelf: Therein ſhewing what he thought adviſeable and ſafe to be done in the managing of this Buſineſs. This Paper, writ by ſo wiſe and antient a Stateſman, will deſerve to be here tranſcribed, ſent to the Council (as it ſeems) in his Abſence by reaſon of his Gout or ſome other Cauſe. And was thus endorſed by his own Pen:

To be conſidered, what were meet to be done to procure a good Peace. Decemb. 14.

" Firſt, That a Peace is moſt neceſſary, no Man can deny.

" Secondly, That the obtaining of it cannot be without a Treaty.

" Thirdly, There are requiſite to that Treaty, theſe Circumſtances.

" Firſt, A Place convenient with Surety. Secondly, a Ceſſation " of Arms, during the Treaty, as well in *Spain*, as in the *Low* " *Countries*. Thirdly, An Aſſent for Commiſſioners for the *States*, " either to Treat for themſelves, or that the Queens Majeſty may " treat for them. Fourthly, That Articles between the Queen and " the King of *Spain* to be ſuch, as may make a clear and an aſſured " Peace; without leaving ſuch Scruples and Occaſion of Quarrels " as hath been, for the Queens Subjects to be free from the *Inquiſition*. Fifthly, That the People of the *Low Countries*, whom " her Majeſty hath defended, may not be impeached hereafter for " any Thing done; but that they may enjoy their Liberties and " Freedoms, and have the Uſe of their Religion, openly now profeſſed in their Churches. For the enjoying whereof they have " all this Time ſtand to their Defence. Sixthly, That her Majeſty " may be duly anſwered of ſuch Sums of Money, as by Contract " with the *States* ſhe ought to have. Seventhly, That this may be " contracted with the King of *Spain*, as hath been heretofore for " the *Low Countries* with the Duke of *Burgundy:* That is, to have " the Towns, both of *England* and *Low Countries* bound to keep " the Peace, as in former Times hath been.

" *Obſervations upon the Points afore remembred.*

Firſt, If it might be treated on in *England*, it were convenient " and reaſonable to be demanded for theſe Cauſes.

" *England* is without Men of War and Hoſtility. And ſo meeter to treat of Peace. That Reputation alſo requireth, that conſidering the Queens Commiſſioners to come from her Perſon, *Ut a* " *latere Principis*. The other come not ſo directly from the King; " but are named by the Duke of *Parma*, who is but a Subject to " the King of *Spain*. The Commiſſioners of the *Low Countries* " may come as ſafe from *Dunkirk* to *Sandich*, *Dover* or *Canterbury*, " as they of *England* may to any Place of the *Low Countries*.

" Secondly,

ANNO 1588.

"Secondly, The Ceſſation of Arms cannot be ſo ſoon in *Spain*, "as in the *Low Countries*, yet if the Duke will avow, that he hath "Power to covenant for it, and will ſend to *Spain* by Poſt for it, "it may be hoped to follow.

"Thirdly, It is requiſite to haſten the Anſwer from the *States*. "And if they will obſtinately refuſe; yet her Majeſty may treat "for herſelf. And in the mean Time it may be hoped the *States* "will aſſent. Her Majeſty alſo may by indirect Means ſee, how the "*States* may be provided for, for their Religion. Which if it can"not be obtained with Surety, her Majeſty may proteſt to the World "the juſt Cauſe of Breach. And ſo in like Manner provide, how "the States may become more able to defend themſelves. And her "Majeſty alſo may percaſe make herſelf ſtronger: Eſpecially, by "procuring Surety of *Scotland:* And by procuring further Means "to help her Majeſty to maintain her Wars.

"Fourthly, If ſuch Covenants may be made betwixt the Towns "of both Parts, as hath been in former Times; whereby may "more Aſſurance be hoped for, of Continuance of the Liberties of "the *Low Countries*, and Conſervation of Peace with *England*.

"Fifthly, If the People whom the Queen hath defended; and "who alſo themſelves have always perſiſted to have the Uſe of their "Religion, for that Purpoſe continued their defenſible Wars, may "not enjoy that Liberty, for which they have continued their "Wars; then may her Majeſty juſtly refuſe the Peace: And want"ing that ſpecial Matter for which ſhe hath attempted to defend "them. And well may it be avowed to the World, that if the "King ſhall refuſe that, and ſo diſpeople thoſe Countries of ſuch "Subjects, her Majeſty may certainly look for the like Peril from "the King of *Spain* out of the *Low Countries*, that in her Prote"ſtation publiſhed, ſhe did notify to the World, to be the Cauſe of "her yielding to them her Defence.

"Sixthly, Her Majeſties Contract with the *States* may be avow"ed lawful, as a Contract for a Debt; whereunto they may law"fully bind themſelves.

"Seventhly, That Examples are extant of like Contracts and "Bonds between the Kings of *England* and the Dukes of *Burgundy*, "and of the Abilities and Towns of both Sides. Which at this "Time is as neceſſary as ever was in any former Time.

Commiſſioners on the English *Side, for a Truce with* Spain.

Camd. Eliz. p. 407.

For the Treaty, Commiſſioners were afterwards ſent by both Parties, and met at a Place near *Oſtend*. Thoſe on the *Engliſh* Side were divers honourable Perſons, as the Earl of *Darby*, Lord *Cobham*, Sir *James a Crofts*, Comptroller of the Queens Houſhold, *Valentine Dale*, a learned Civilian, and Maſter of *Requeſts*, and ſome others. They began their Treaty in *April*, and continued arguing all the Summer; in Shew rather than in Reality on *Parma*'s Side.

Crofts *repairs to the Duke of* Parma.

And after long Delays and little done, *Crofts*, one of the Queens Commiſſioners, (who was very deſirous to compaſs ſo good a Purpoſe, as Peace, and to reduce all former Quarrels to an amicable Concluſion) went privately of his own Accord to the Duke himſelf at *Bruſſels*. And there ſhewed him the Terms required on the Queens Part, the ſooner to have his Anſwers. Which Terms he drew up himſelf, and comprized in divers brief Articles. And becauſe theſe Articles give Light into the Purport of this Commiſſion, and do not appear in our Hiſtorian, this is the Sum of them, as I tranſcribed them from a Volume in the *Cotton* Library.

ANNO 1588.

Articuli a Jacobo Crofto *Milite*, Parmenſi *Propoſiti*, *in Pacis Tractatione.*

Shews him the Articles to be treated on. Julius F. 6.

“ I. That the King [of *Spain*] his Commiſſion [by whoſe Au-
“ thority the Duke had ſet on Foot this Commiſſion] might be
“ ſeen.

“ II. For a Ceſſation of Arms.

“ III. Treaties and Intercourſes to be reſtored.

“ IV. Correſpondency for mutual Traffick, [in the Kingdoms and
“ Dominions of both Princes.]

“ V. How the *Engliſh* travailing in the King of *Spains* Dominions
“ ſhould be uſed, in Caſe of Religion.

“ VI. To make an 'Αμνηϛία of Things done by the *Engliſh*.

“ VII. A Concurrence to be put in Action concerning *Holland*
“ and *Zealand*; by what Means to bring them to the Obedience of
“ the King.

“ VIII. A particular and general Pardon.

“ IX. Toleration in Religion, as far as the King of *Spain* may
“ grant with a ſafe Conſcience.

The Treaty breaks off.

But in fine, the Treaty was broke off; intended in Truth only for Shew, on *Parma*'s and *Spains* Part, to hold the *Engliſh* in Hand, till the *Spaniſh* Fleet was ready. So that in *Auguſt*, when both Fleets were upon the Seas, the Queens Commiſſioners came home, being conducted ſafe by *Parma*'s Order, to *Callais:* But *Crofts* was called into Queſtion for that Journey of his to the Duke of *Parma*, and his Buſineſs there; and not having ſufficient Order for ſo doing, by the Earl of *Leiceſters* Accuſation, (perhaps upon ſome private Diſpleaſure) he was caſt into Priſon; though the Articles were approved by the other Commiſſioners, and agreeable to the Tenor of the Matters to be treated on.

The Spaniſh Invaſion.

Now next we come to ſee what great Cauſe there was for the Queen and her Council and Parliament, to be watchful againſt the Malice of Papiſts. Who had ſtirred up the Pope and the King of *Spain* againſt her in the Invaſion with their (ſuppoſed) *Invincible Armada*, as they vainly called it. The vaſt Preparations for this grand Expedition, the Number of Ships, Seamen, Soldiers, Ammunition, the Hiſtories publiſhed in other Countries as well as our own, will tell us. Some further Particulars whereof, with other Matters of Remark, relating thereunto, I ſhall add, to illuſtrate this Critical Emergence of this Queens Reign; as I have met with them, both in more publick as well as more private Papers of State, concerning this formidable *Armada*, with the abſolute Defeat of it. Which I ſhall here communicate, the rather, to ſhew the ſignal Providence of God to this Kingdom in this notable Juncture.

But

Spains Conſultation about this Enterprize.

But before this Enterprize againſt *England* was actually undertaken, the Fleet now ready, the King of *Spain* entred into a deep Conſultation with his Counſellors, whether it were more expedient to invade *England* or *Holland*. And the Reſolution was for *England* firſt. This notable Argument, with the Reaſons thereof afterwards came abroad, and was publiſhed in a Book *Politicarum Diſſertationum*. Beginning thus, *Anno* 1588. *quando ſtupenda illa Claſſis Regis Catholici in procinctu ſtabat, in qua diſputatur, quonam ejus convertend. ſit impetus*, i. e. That in the Year 1588, when that amazing Fleet of the King of *Spain* was in a readineſs, it was concerted, whither the Force of it ſhould be turned.

Print. Anno 1613.

The Diſcourſe, *Tanta hodie eſt* Hiſpaniarum *Regis potentia*, &c.
“ Such at this Day is the Power of the King of *Spain*, ſo ſtrong his
“ Armies, ſo prepared for War, ſo freſh his Glory newly added to
“ his Empire by *Portugal*; that nothing but what is ſignal, and
“ worthy the Grandure of ſo great a Majeſty, ſeaſonable to the pre-
“ ſent Time and Occaſion, is expected from him.

The Reſult whereof, to invade England.

The Reſolution was, That *England* was the Country that ſhould be invaded, rather than *Holland* firſt. And for this divers Political Reaſons were urged. The Heads whereof were theſe that follow. 1. That it was eaſier to conquer *England* than *Belgium*, that is, *Holland*. 2. The *Dutch* being Malecontents were not to be provoked. 3. *England*, how powerful heretofore, and how at this Day. 4. The Weakneſs of *England*, in compariſon of *Spain*. 5. *England* wanted Ships, and Forts: And alſo Horſes, and all other Warlike Preparations. 6. The *Engliſh* deſirous of Novelty. 7. The *Engliſh* hate the Queen. 8. The *Engliſh* want only to offend [*i. e.* to rebell in other Terms.] 9. *England* began to decline. 10. *England* deſtitute of Captains for War: Needy of Money. 11. The Power of King *Philip*. The Naval Strength of the Catholick King. 12. Aſſiſtance of *French* and *Scots*. 13. The Honour and Glory of this Expedition. 14. In *England* many Catholicks, favouring the King. 15. *England*, as inclinable to the Catholick Religion. All theſe Reaſons were diſcourſed upon at large.

Political Diſſertation. *Tom.* IV.

The Honour and Glory of this Expedition.

As to that Head particularly, *viz. The Honour and Glory of the Expedition*, thus the Argument was managed, “ That which in
“ this Deliberation muſt be conſidered in the firſt Place, that reſpect
“ is to be had in this Matter, of Honour and juſt Cauſe of it.
“ Since it is firſt the Part of the Catholick King, to defend Catho-
“ lick Faith and Religion. That he be certainly perſuaded in this
“ Confidence, that there will be no Impediment, that can retard
“ this Attempt of his, that is *Divino præſidio ſubnixum*, i. e. under-
“ proped with the Divine Safeguard. For weak and vain are hu-
“ mane Counſils and Aids, which oppoſe themſelves to the Will of
“ that Supreme *Arbiter*. But beſides theſe Pretentions, that the
“ Catholick King hath to this Kingdom, the Account of his Duty
“ and Office; that he can undertake no worthier Expedition in his
“ own or Anceſtors Name, who are called *Catholick*; for this Rea-
“ ſon he ſhall not only on moſt juſt Cauſes obtain the Poſſeſſion of
“ the Kingdom, due to him, but ſhall gain to himſelf the immortal

" Glory of his Name above all other Kings, that ever were: Name-" ly, ſo antient and famous a Kingdom, joined to *Spain.*

Catholicks in England *favour the King of* Spain.

Another Argument, in relation to the Catholicks in *England* that favoured the Catholick King: It was ſaid, " There were very " many of that Sort that were on his Side. And who knows not of " what Concern it is to have Friends and Favourers among very " Enemies? The Deſtruction of *Cauna* ſufficiently ſhewed this; " whereby the *Roman* Army was almoſt quite overthrown. Nor " indeed is any Place ſo fortified, which may not eaſily be ſubdued; " if within by the Citizens, and without by the Enemy, the Fight " muſt be managed. But in *England* are many, who are addicted " to King *Philip*. And in his Cauſe will do what they can. And " that was proved by three Reaſons. 1. King *Philips* Clemency. " 2. The *Engliſh* as yet inclinable to the Catholick Religion. 3. The " mighty Hopes of Gain. For the Confirmation of this, it was " ſaid, That the Catholick King doth not only himſelf abound in " Wealth, but in all his Empire hath numberleſs gainful Offices, " as well Secular as Eccleſiaſtical. And that he hath moſt ample " Opportunities to be grateful to thoſe that deſerve well of him. " And that it will be eaſy for him to draw the Minds of the *Engliſh* to him; and to catch others with the Proſpect of ſome rich " Rewards.

And to prove the Inclination of the *Engliſh* to the Catholick Religion, thus this Politician proceeded; " We know, that *England* " at this Day is torn away from the Boſom of the Holy Church, " not by any inveterate or natural Infection, but by the Error ra-" ther, and Blindneſs of *Henry* VIII. who ſuffered himſelf to be " carried away by his Luſts; ſo that he made no Account *omnia* " *miſcere*, i. e. to put all in Confuſion. But if we look upon the " Nation of *England* itſelf, it is indeed evident, that from the moſt " antient Times, it hath been the moſt obſervant of the Catholick " Religion. But if we conſider the preſent State, we ſhall find it driven " into this Precipice, not by their own Will and Deſire, but by the " Madneſs of the ſaid King. Now if a View of the Time be truly " taken, this Plague of Infidelity may be lookt upon, as yet freſh, " and the Wound not yet skinned over. Nor are there many " Years, ſince *Mary* obtaining the Crown, the *Engliſh* were return-" ed to the antient Catholick Faith; and ſo openly ſhewed, that " their Minds were blinded with no other Thing than by the drow-" ſy Lethargy, that held the Minds of Kings bound and oppreſt. " And how can it be poſſible, that the *Engliſh* ſhould not be *Catho-" licks* for a great Part, ſince either they or their Fathers, certainly " were born and educated in this moſt holy Faith?

The Engliſh *affect Diſturbances.*

Then for the Argument, *Angli novarum rerum cupidi*; thus it was argued, " That certain it was, that the Study of Novelties was " inſerted, as it were by Nature, in the *Engliſh*. For that if any " read the Hiſtory of that People, he ſhould find Seditions, Con-" ſpiracies, Treaſons and the like, had fixed, as it were, a Dwelling " Place for themſelves in that Iſland. And then Examples were " produced: Adding, It would be infinite to relate all ſuch Mat-" ters. Whence it appeared, how eaſy ſome Confuſions or Diſtur-

ANNO 1588.

“bances might ariſe in that Kingdom; eſpecially, if Men, of themſelves deſirous of Novelty, and given to Tumults, do ſee an armed Adverſary before their Doors. To whom they (if for no other Reaſon, at leaſt out of fear of Puniſhment for Rebellion) will undoubtedly join themſelves of their own Accord.

That the Engliſh *People hated the Queen.*

To that Argument, *Angli Reginam oderunt:* Thus the ſame zealous Stateſman enlarged, “That ſince all for the moſt Part of the *Engliſh* bore heavily the Queens rigorous Rule; as who, not only ruling with ſmall Prudence and Moderation, but alſo *inhoneſtè vivendo*, raiſed up againſt herſelf the Hatred and Indignation of her Subjects daily more and more; why is it, that we ſhould not believe, they will willingly caſt off ſuch a Yoke, Occaſion offering. For though the People ſhew a certain ſingular Obſervance towards that Queen in their outward Geſture and Countenance; yet if any look inward, he ſhall find a bitter Poiſon of Hatred towards her, in the inmoſt Receſſes of their Hearts. So that ſuch Words openly often, not only among the Great ones, but among the common People are toſſed about; that ſince the Queen was born in unlawful Wedlock, ſhe cannot hold the Kingdom in prejudice of the true Heirs, and againſt the Statutes of the Kingdom. Wherefore there is great Hope, if the Catholick King do Arm againſt the Queen, that the Subjects will attempt ſomewhat remarkable for her Deſtruction. Since ſo commonly it is ſeen to fall out, that the People pricked forward by Hatred, or ſome other Affection, will ſnatch at any Occaſion of deſtroying whom they hate. So the *Tarentines* weary of the Rule of *Caius Liber*, their Prefect, received the *Carthaginians* into their City, in his very Sight.

Theſe were the Deliberations of the *Spaniſh* Council, as full of Falſhood as Malice, to ſtir up the King, forward enough of himſelf, to determine this ambitious Purpoſe. But now to ſee how it ſucceeded.

In the Beginning of *July*, News was ſent to the Court by a Gentleman, who had it from a Captain, named *Gilbert Lee*, lately come from the Coaſt of *Spain*, and arrived at *Portſmouth*; and gave this Information.

Intelligence of the Fleet at Lisbon. *MSS.* Burghlian.

“That upon the 25th of *May*, after their Computation, there departed out of *Lixbon* for *England*, an 160 Sail of ſmall and great Ships, *viz.* 4 Gallies, 4 Galliaſſes, 30 Hulks, 30 ſmall Ships, the reſt *Armadoes* and Gallions. In the ſame Fleet there are 30,000 Footmen, beſide Mariners. Which Fleet arrived in the *Groine* all, ſaving the 30 Hulks. Which Hulks are yet miſſing. The Vice Admiral of the whole Fleet is dead. And the Sickneſs encreaſeth in the Fleet. The General, being the Duke of *Medina*, hath written to the King, to know his Pleaſure for the Proceeding in his Voyage. The Fleet lieth within the *Groyne* in three ſeveral Roads, three Leagues from one another. And he ſaid, that if there had come but Fifty Sail of Ships, by reaſon of the Sickneſs, and being ſo diſperſed, they might have burnt them all. There is a preparing for a ſecond Fleet in *Liſbone*; which ſhall likewiſe come for *England*.

“The King of *Spain* and the *Turk* have concluded a League for a certain Time. This News he learned from three ſeveral Ships,

“which

ANNO 1588.

"which he ſtayed: And that upon the Coaſt of *Biskay*. In one of them this News was confirmed by ſeveral *Spaniſh* Letters, directed from *Antwerp*. One that is Part Merchant and Paſſenger in a Ship that is here now, ſaith, that he will affirm upon the Loſs of his Life, that all this is true. This Ship came from *Bayon* about 20 Days paſt, and ſaith, he left all this whole Fleet in the *Groyne*, ſaving the 30 Hulks that are miſſing, wherein all his Horſes be. Since which Time, he ſaith, they have had no Southernly Wind, whereby the Fleet could well come out of the *Groyne*, until theſe 3 or 4 Days. And upon the Receipt of the Kings Anſwer, they were preſently determined to come for *England*. He ſaith alſo, that his Soldiers and Gentlemen that come in this Voyage are very richly appointed; aſſuring themſelves of good Succeſs. Inſomuch as they might take up any Wares, to repay it upon the Booty they would take in *England*.

"The Duke of *Parma* did ſend a Ship from *Dunkirk* to *Lisbon*, wherein there was an Ambaſſador and fourſcore Gentlemen. Upon whoſe Arrival the Fleet departed preſently. There was a Report there, that the Duke of *Parma* was come with his Forces out of *Flanders*, and entred the *Thames*, and had taken *London* without any Reſiſtance, whereupon they were about to make Bonefires.

"The *Engliſhmen* that be in *Spain* do report very foul Speeches of her Majeſty; and they and the *Spaniards* deſire but to ſet Foot on Land, and all ſhall be theirs. He ſaid, they made a juſt Account to be received in *Scotland*.

"He ſaith alſo, that he met with 25 Sail of *Frenchmen* upon the Coaſt of *Biskay*, which came from *Lisbon*. And after ſome Conflict between them, and Hurt done on both Parts, they departed; and whither they went, he knoweth not.

"I asked Captain *Lee*, whether he ſaw my Lord Admiral at Sea, or no, and he ſaith, he ſaw none of the Fleet." To this Paper the Lord Treaſurer ſet the Date, *viz.* 5 *Julii*, 1588.

The Queens Preparations.

The State ſaw well the mighty Preparations of Arms and Shipping that were ready to come down upon them. And the active Queen made the beſt Proviſion ſhe could to receive them. And in Order thereunto, one of her firſt Cares was to get the Nation in Arms; eſpecially, thoſe Countries that bordered upon the Sea. I have ſeen the Queens Letters to this Purpoſe to the Marqueſs of *Wincheſter* and the Earl of *Suſſex*, for *Hampſhire*; writ in the Month of *June*; now when already the *Spaniſh* Fleet appeared upon the Seas, "She firſt took Notice to them of their former Diligence in their Lieutenancies, that her Subjects in thoſe Parts might be ready in Arms to defend themſelves and her Kingdom againſt any ſuch Attempts. And the Directions ſhe gave, ſhe found ſo well performed by them, that ſhe could not but receive great Contentment thereby; and likewiſe for the great Willingneſs of the People, generally ſhewing thereby their great Love and Loyalty. That ſhe accepted it moſt thankfully; and acknowledged herſelf moſt bound to Almighty God, that it had pleaſed him to bleſs her with ſuch loving and dutiful Subjects.

Her Letter to the Lords Lieutenants of Hampſhire;

“ And that finding the ſame Intention now of invading and making a Conqueſt of the Realm, now more and more detected and confirmed; and an Army being put to Sea for that Purpoſe, which ſhe doubted not nevertheleſs through Gods goodneſs ſhould prove fruſtrate; She thought good therefore to require them forthwith, with all the Speed they conveniently could, to call together the beſt Sort of Gentlemen under their Lieutenancy, and to declare unto them theſe great Preparations, and arrogant Threatnings, now burſt forth in Action upon the Seas: Wherein every Mans particular State in the higheſt Degree would be touched, in reſpect of Country, Liberty, Wives, Children, Lands, Lives, and, (which was eſpecially to be regarded) the Profeſſion of the true and ſincere Religion of Chriſt. And to lay before them the infinite and unſpeakable Miſeries, that would fall out, upon any ſuch Accident and Change. Which Miſeries were evidently ſeen by the Fruits of that hard and cruel Government holden, where ſuch Change happened, *&c.*

“ That ſhe expected therefore, on this extraordinary Occaſion, a larger Proportion of Furniture, both for Horſemen and Footmen; thereby to be in their beſt Strength againſt any Attempt whatſoever: To be employed, whether about her own Perſon, or otherwiſe. And the Number ſhe required them to ſignify to her Privy Council. Aſſuring herſelf, that Almighty God would bleſs their Loyal Hearts born towards their Sovereign. The whole Letter, whereof theſe are but ſome ſhort Minutes, deſerves to be preſerved: And ſo it may be found in the *Appendix.*

Num. L.

The Nobility required to repair to the Queen in their Arms.

Nor was this all the Strength ſhe expected from her Subjects, in the ſeveral Counties, but ſhe required moreover the higheſt Rank of them, her Nobility, to provide themſelves, and their Servants and Dependents in like Manner, with Horſes and Armour, to be ready to repair upon Summons, to the Queen, for Defence of her Perſon. And to this Purpoſe Letters were addreſt to them from the Lords of the Council by her Command. The Minutes whereof, as I tranſcribed them from the Lord Treaſurers own Pen, were as follow.

The Councils Letters to them.

“ Although we doubt not, but your Lordſhip heareth daily the Reports made from the Parts beyond the Seas, what great Preparations of Forces are made, as well in *Spain*, as in the *Low Countries:* And that in common Judgment of Men the ſame may be intended againſt the Eſtate of this Realm: Yet becauſe in the Directions given theſe late Years through the whole Realm, for Muſtering, Arming and Training of all Perſons for to bear Armour, there hath been no Special Directions given, to require any Nobleman to prepare himſelf with any Furniture for the War for himſelf, his Servants, and Tenants; but that her Majeſty did certainly ſuppoſe, that it was the Natural Diſpoſition of the Nobility without Direction, to be armed, both for themſelves, and for Furniture of Horſemen and Footmen, according to their Ability:

“ Therefore We, that have Cauſe, by our Calling in the Service of her Majeſty, to have a more certain Knowledge, than by

“ common Reports, what Preparations are already made in the Parts “ beyond the Seas, very likely to the Offence of this Realm; for “ the Defence whereof, conſidering, that her Majeſty hath very “ providently ordered, that her People in all Parts of her Realm, “ ſhould be in readineſs under Captains and Leaders; and that it “ is the Part of Wiſdom that her Majeſties Perſon ſhould have, in “ ſuch a Time of Danger, a ſpecial Army to reſort to her Perſon; “ to be directed by her Majeſty, where Cauſe ſhall require; in “ which Service none are more meet to be truſted, than her Nobility: We have thought it not impertinent to this Purpoſe, to impart thus much to your Lordſhip, as one whom we know her “ Majeſty doth truſt. And therewith do require your Lordſhip to “ take it for an Argument of ſpecial Love to your Lordſhip in advertiſing you of the Premiſſes. And in regard thereof we do not “ doubt, but that your Lordſhip, with all the Speed you can poſſible, will be furniſhed with Armour and Weapon meet for your “ Calling, and of your Servants and able Tenants, that are not already enrolled in the general Muſters of the County, as ſpecial “ Trained Perſons, to make as many Horſemen as you can, both “ for Lances, and Light Horſemen. And for the more encreaſe of “ Horſemen, for want of ſufficient Number of great Horſe or Geldings, We think your Lordſhip may do well to encreaſe your “ Number, if you ſhall provide able Men with Petronels upon “ Horſe of ſmaller Stature.

“ And your Lordſhip being thus furniſhed (as we hope you will) “ we think her Majeſty will make good Account of you among “ other Noblemen, to repair to her Perſon, when you ſhall be called. And your Lordſhip ſhall ſingularly content us, to let us “ know by your Letter, as ſoon as you may, what ſhall be the “ Numbers which your Lordſhip ſhall account to have furniſhed; “ and of what Condition for this Service. Whereupon we may according to the good Will we bear you, impart the ſame unto her “ Majeſty.

A Loan to the Queen from the City of London.

The Queen alſo, to ſtrengthen herſelf in this Emergence, took up great Sums of Money of her City of *London*; which they lent her readily; each Merchant and Citizen according to his Ability. And ſo did the Strangers alſo, both Merchants and Tradeſmen, that came to inhabit there for their Buſineſs or Liberty of the Proteſtant Religion. In all to the Sum of 4900 *l.* Whereof among the Strangers, *John Houblon* was one; (of whoſe Pedigree, no Queſtion, is the preſent worſhipful ſpreading Family of that Name.) Who lent for his Part 100 *l.*

Joh. Houblon.

Prayers and Faſtings enjoined.

And together with all other humane Means, Orders were iſſued throughout the Nation for publick Prayers, on *Wedneſdays* and *Fridays* Weekly, in all Pariſh Churches, to be uſed, for Deliverance and good Succeſs. And an *Office* was compoſed for that Purpoſe. And a Citation went forth, to ſummon the Clergy of the City of *London* to meet: When a ſtrict Charge was given them for the due Obſervation thereof. For ſo I find in a *Diary* of one of the City Miniſters, *viz.* “ That being called together, they were required “ to be zealous in Prayers and Almes-giving: Namely, on *Wedneſ-*

MSS. *D.* Joh. *nuper Epiſc.* Etien.

ANNO 1588. "*days* and *Fridays*; and to ſtir up the People thereunto. And "proper Homilies to be read, for Faſting, Praying and Almes-giv-"ing. Other Particulars concerning Prayers enjoined on this Oc-caſion may be read in the Hiſtory of Archbiſhop *Whitgifts* Life. Book III. Ch. 19.

One of theſe Prayers deſerve to be recorded, in eternal Memory of this imminent National Danger; intitled, *A Prayer, to be delivered from our Enemies*; which I take out of the Book then ſet forth, called, *A Form of Prayer, neceſſary for the preſent Time and State*. It ran as follows,

A Prayer on this Occaſion.

"O Lord God of Hoſts, moſt loving and merciful Father, we "thy humble Servants, proſtrate ourſelves before thy Divine Maje-"ſty, moſt heartily beſeeching thee to grant unto us true Repent-"ance for our Sins paſt: Namely, for our Unthankfulneſs, Con-"tempt of thy Word, Lack of Compaſſion toward the Afflicted, "Envy, Malice, Strife and Contention among ourſelves, and for "all other our Iniquities. Lord, deal not with us, as we have de-"ſerved; but of thy great Goodneſs and Mercy, do away our Of-"fences; and give us Grace to confeſs and acknowledge, O Lord, "with all humble and hearty Thanks thy wonderful and great Be-"nefits, which thou haſt beſtowed upon this thy Church and Peo-"ple of *England*, in giving unto us without all Deſert on our Part, "not only Peace and Quietneſs, but alſo in preſerving our moſt "Gracious Queen, thine Handmaid, ſo miraculouſly, from ſo many "Conſpiracies, Perils, and Dangers; and in granting her good Suc-"ceſs againſt the Attempts of our Enemies. For the which ſo "wonderful and great Benefits, we humbly beſeech thee to ſtir up "our dull Minds to ſuch Thankfulneſs, and acknowledging of thy "Mercies, as becomes us, and as may be acceptable unto thee.

"We do inſtantly beſeech thee of thy gracious Goodneſs, to be "merciful to thy Church Militant here upon Earth, many Ways "vexed and tormented by the Malice of Satan, and his Members: "And as at this Time as it were compaſſed about with moſt ſtrong "and ſubtle Adverſaries. And eſpecially, O Lord, let thine Ene-"mies know, and make them confeſs, that thou haſt received "*ENGLAND*, (which they, moſt of all for thy Goſpels ſake do "malign) into thine own Protection. Set, we pray thee, O Lord, "a Wall about it, and evermore mightily defend it. Let it be a "Comfort to the Afflicted, an Help to the Oppreſſed, a Defence to "thy Church and People perſecuted abroad.

"And foraſmuch as thy Cauſe is now in Hand, we beſeech thee "to direct and go before our Armies, both by Sea and Land. "Bleſs and proſper them; and grant unto them, O Lord, thy good "and honourable Succeſs and Victory; as thou didſt to *Abraham* "and his Company againſt the four mighty Kings; to *Joſhua* a-"gainſt the Five Kings, and againſt *Amalek*; to *David* againſt the "ſtrong and mighty armed *Goliah*: And as thou uſeſt to do to thy "Children, when they pleaſe thee. We acknowledge all Power, "Strength, and Victory to come from thee. Some put their Truſt "in Chariots, and ſome in Horſes; but we will remember thy "Name, O Lord, our God. Thou bringeſt the Counſil of the "Heathen to nought, and makeſt the Devices of the People, to be

“ of none Effect. There is no King that can be ſaved by the Multitude of an Hoſt; neither is any mighty Man delivered by much Strength. An Horſe is but a vain Thing to ſave a Man. Therefore we pray unto thee, O Lord, Thou art our Help and our Shield.

“ O Lord, give good and proſperous Succeſs to all thoſe that fight thy Battle againſt the Enemies of thy Goſpel. Shew ſome Token continually for our Good. That they who hate us may ſee it, and be confounded. And that we thy little and deſpiſed Flock may ſay with good King *David*, Bleſſed is the People, whoſe God is the Lord, *Jehovah*, and bleſſed are the Folk whom he hath choſen to be his Inheritance. Theſe, and all Graces neceſſary for us, grant, O! Heavenly Father, for Jeſus Chriſts ſake, our only Mediator, and Redeemer.” This we may call a Prayer of Faith, in regard of the ſtrong hopes of Succeſs to be granted to this Kingdom profeſſing the Goſpel: Which accordingly happened.

A Book of the Armada *ſet forth in* Spaniſh.

And the Queen had good Reaſon to make all the Proviſion that poſſibly ſhe could againſt this mighty Force, both by Land and Sea, that was coming with ſo much Fierceneſs againſt this Land; and reckoning themſelves ſure of a Conqueſt by reaſon of their vaſt, and (ſuppoſed) *invincible* Strength. Which the *Spaniard*, the more to advance his Glory, and terrify his Enemies, had cauſed to be known abroad in all Languages, not only in *Spaniſh*, but in *Latin*, *Italian*, *French*, and *Dutch*, excepting *Engliſh*. That written and printed in *Spaniſh*, ſhewed diſtinctly all the Preparations of Ships, their Burthens and Men belonging to them: Written, as it ſeemed, in a *Bravado*, and Confidence of Victory. For they called it, *The moſt happy Armada*. Bearing this Title, *La feliciſſima Armada, que el Rey* FELIPE *nueſtro Senior mando juntar en el Puerto de la Ciudad de Lisboa en el Reyno de* Portugal; *En anno de mil e quinientos y ocenta y ocha. Hecha por Pedro de Pas Salas.* Which Book nevertheleſs ſoon came into the Hands of the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*. In which Book in divers Places I have ſeen Notes added by the Pen of that Nobleman, ſoon after the Defeat: As, what Captains were taken or ſlain, or what Ships were ſunk, or taken, *&c.* Another Copy of this *Spaniſh* Book *J. Stow* the Hiſtorian, ſaw in the Hands of the worſhipful Mr. *Anthony Radcliff*, Alderman of *London*; as he writ in his *Annals*, under that Year, upon occaſion of Sir *Francis Drakes* taking the great Gallion, being of 1150 Tuns. Wherein was *Don Pedro De Valdes*, one of their Generals, as he found in that Book.

The Spaniſh *Book put into* Engliſh.

But this Book ſoon came out in *Engliſh*; tranſlated from the *French*, and printed this Year by *J. Wolf*, a noted *London* Printer. Whence it may not be amiſs to take ſome Notes, that we may the better obſerve and wonder at a Superior Power interpoſing and over-ruling, on *Englands* Behalf at that perilous Time.

The Book tranſlated bore this Title, *A Diſcourſe of that Armada, which the King of* Spain *cauſed to be aſſembled in the Haven of* Lisbon, *in the Kingdom of* Portugal, *in the Year* 88. *againſt* England. *The which began to go out of the Haven the 29th and 30th of* May. The Tranſlator was one *Daniel Archdeacon*. Where in the

Preface the Tranſlator obſerved, “How that *Spain* had publiſhed his Preparations, not to the Queen, but to all beſides ourſelves, in *Italian*, *Spaniſh*, *Dutch*, *French*; and ſtill by them thereby to diſcourage us.” For thus he tells the World: “He hath many huge Ships, ſo many thouſands of armed Men, ſuch Multitudes of Munition, as no Man could deliver us out of his Hand. As if he cried out (with *Rabſhekah* to the *Jews*,) Let not *England* deceive you. For it cannot deliver you out of my Hand. Nor let *ELIZABETH* perſuade you to truſt in the Lord: Saying, Doubtleſs the Lord will deliver us, and not give us over into the Hands of the King of *Spain*:” As the Writer aptly uſeth the Words of *Rabſhakah* ſent by *Senacherib* to good King *Hezekiah*, and his People, in ſuch a Streight as *England*, and Queen *Elizabeth* now was in.

The Contents thereof.

Numb. LI.

In this Book thus tranſlated is ſet down (according to the *Spaniſh* Copy) “The Number of Gallions, Ships, Pinnaces, Zabres, Galiaces, Gallies, and other Veſſels, which were aſſembled in the River of *Lisbon*; whereof was Chief and General, the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*: Together with the Burthens of them, the Land Soldiers, Mariners, Munitions, Weapons, Artillery, Powder, and other Furnitures for War, which they brought, and for what Time the ſaid Munitions ſhall ſerve. It would be too prolix to enter the Particulars here, but too remarkable to be wholly omitted, as it is, I think, by our Hiſtorians. And therefore I have comprized the Sum of it ſhortly from the *Spaniards* themſelves in their ſaid Book. See the *Appendix*: Hence it appears that Fleet conſiſted of 130 Ships, of 57868 Tuns, 19295 Soldiers, 8450 Mariners, and 2088 Slaves; beſides many other leſſer Veſſels of Attendance.

Friars of the Religious Orders in the Fleet.

And further for their ſurer Succeſs, their Ships were furniſhed with abundance of Friars, and Religious Men of the ſeveral Orders, of St. *Francis*, St. *Dominic*, &c. and of the Society of *Jeſus*; to the Number of an 180. And there was a *Latin* Litany, called *Litaniæ*, compoſed and printed for the proſperous Iſſue of this Expedition, to be uſed for a Week together; each Day having its diſtinct Office. And moreover, for further good Fortune, and to ſpeed the better, their Ships had each their Tutelary Saints and Guardians: As St. *Martin*, (in which Ship the Captain General was,) St. *Philip*, St. *James*, St. *Anne*, St. *Mary*, St. *Chriſtopher*, &c. By whoſe Names all their Ships were called.

A Litany *for their Fleet.*

Numb. LII.

But concerning the foreſaid *Litany*, (which I found among ſome Authentick Papers of that Time, brought over hither, or found perhaps in ſome of their Ships) I cannot but take ſome particular Notice. It bare this Title, *Litaniae & Preces pro felici ſucceſſu Claſſis Catholici Regis noſtri* Philippi *adverſus* Angliæ *Hæreticos, veræ Fidei impugnatores*. I will give ſome brief Account of it, and the Prayers there framed againſt us, as Hereticks; as being the pretended grand Cauſe of our threatned Deſtruction. See the *Appendix*.

A Conqueſt of Great Britain *intended.*

The mighty Intent of this Fleet, (and ſo it was publiſhed in ſome of their Books, and that not improbable) was, not to make a Conqueſt of *England* only, but of the whole Iſle of *Great Britain*. And that from the *Spaniards* printed Deſcription of that *Armada*. Wherein

ANNO 1588.

Copy of a Letter from Mendoza.

in were ſpecially named ſuch a Number of Noblemen, Princes, Marqueſſes, *Condes* and *Dons*, that were called *Adventurers*, without any Office or Paſs. And that ſuch another Number of Men alſo, named *Captains*, and *Alferez*, without Office, and called *Entertenedos*. As all thoſe being in no Service in the *Armada*, might be well preſumed to have come with Intention to have poſſeſt the Rooms of all the Noblemen in *England* and *Scotland*; And thoſe Preparations for Invaſion, as ſhewn in their ſaid Books printed, were ſo grand and extraordinary, containing the particular long Deſcription and Catalogue of their *Armada*, together with a Maſs of all kind of Proviſions, beyond Meaſure, as ſufficient in Eſtimation to be able to make a Conqueſt of many Kingdoms and Countries; as a Catholick unknown here wrote to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador at *Paris*.

Admonition to the People of England. *By Biſhop* Cooper.

In what a dreadful Conſternation the whole Nation was now, upon this Hoſtile Appearance on our Seas, and our weak Strength and Oppoſition in compariſon with them, is lively ſet forth in a Book of one of our Biſhops ſoon after. “ Oh! my good Brethren and loving Countrymen,—— the View of that mighty Navy of the *Spaniards* is ſcarce paſt out of our Sight, the very terrible ſound of their Shot rings as it were ſtill in our Ears: When the certain Purpoſe of moſt cruel and bloody Conqueſt of this Realm is confeſſed by themſelves, and blazed before our Eyes, [in their Books printed and diſperſed] when our Sighs and Groans, with our Faſting and Prayers, in ſhew of our Repentance, are freſh in our Memory; and the Tears not waſhed from the Eyes of many good Men.

Joy for the Overthrow of that Army.

But upon that grand Defeat, the Biſhop repreſents *England* in another View: “ When the mighty Work of God, and his mervailous Mercies in delivering us, and in ſcattering and confounding our Enemies is bruted over all the World, and with humble Thanks renounced by all that love the Goſpel, our Chriſtian Duty requires, for Joy and Thankſgiving, that we ſhould be ſeen yet lifting up our Hands to Heaven, with thanking Minds, ſetting forth the Glory of God; and with *Moſes* and the *Iſraelites*, ſinging Praiſes unto his Name, and ſaying, The Lord hath triumphed gloriouſly; the Horſe and his Rider, the Ships and the Saylers, the Soldiers and their Captains, he hath overthrown in the Sea. The Lord is our Strength, the Lord is become our Salvation.

For notwithſtanding the prodigious Strength of this *Spaniſh* Army, conſiſting of ſuch vaſt Numbers of Gallions and Galliaſſes, and Ships of great Burden, repleniſhed with ſuch crouds of armed Men, for landing and invading this Country; all was but an Arm of Fleſh; and in ſhort, after divers Engagements by Sea, were utterly overthrown, and glad to fly away by the *Orcades* on the North of *Scotland* in their ſhattered Ships that were left; till after infinite Hazards, Shipwrecks and Loſſes in thoſe Seas, ſome of them landed on the North Parts of *Ireland*.

Shipwreck of the Fleet in Ireland.

Our Hiſtorians are very brief and defective in their Relations of the ſaid ill Succeſs and dreadful Shipwrecks and Miſeries of that Fleet, that happened to them in thoſe Northern Parts. Which may deſerve to be ſupplied. Which therefore I ſhall do from

ANNO 1588.

the Epilogue of a Letter ſent from one in *England* to *De Mendoza*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *Paris*, A Copy whereof was printed in *Engliſh* ſoon after. It related, " How that famous Fleet was driven out of our Seas to the further North Parts of *Scotland*, and driven by Tempeſts beyond the Iſles of *Orkney*, a Place above 60 Degrees from the *North* Pole; an unacquainted Place for the young Gallants of *Spain*, that never had felt Storms on the Seas, or cold Weather in *Auguſt*. And about thoſe *North* Iſlands their Mariners and Soldiers died daily, by Multitudes, as by their Bodies caſt on Land did appear." But I leave the whole Relation of theſe their Miſeries to be read in the *Appendix*. [Numb. LII.]

A Paſquil ſet up at Rome. Cott. *Libr.* Titus *B.* 2.

Upon the Scattering and Diſappearance of this mighty Fleet, this Writing was faſtned up to *Paſquil* in the City of *Rome*, to be read by all; as though the Pope were in great Concern (as no doubt he was) for the Fleets Flight: *Pontificem mille annorum Indulgentias largiturum eſſe, de plenitudine poteſtatis ſuæ; ſiquis certò ſibi indicaverit, quid ſit factum de Claſſe Hiſpanicâ: Quò abierit; in cœlûmne ſublata; an ad Tartara detruſa; vel in aëra alicubi pendeat; an in aliquo mari fluctuet.*

They land in Ireland.

The Forces that got on Shore in *Ireland*, after ſome brisk Skirmiſes, were defeated, and beat by a much leſs Force of the Queens there. A particular Account whereof I do not find in our Hiſtorians; and therefore I ſhall alſo give ſome relation of it, ſent to the Queen by the Governor and her Officers there, in the Month of *September*, ſoon after the Action: Which was to this Tenor:

Many of them Land, but are beaten.

" By other Advertiſements of the 14th of *September*, it is certified to the Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, from the Earl of *Tyron*, being at his Caſtle at *Dungannon*, that upon Intelligence brought to him of the Landing of certain *Spaniards* in the *North* of *Ireland*, he ſent two *Engliſh* Captains, with their Bands, towards them, to the Number of an Hundred and Fifty; who found them at Sir *John Odognerties* Town, called *Illagh*; and there diſcovering their Number to be about ſix hundred, did that Night encamp within a Muſket Shot of them. And about Midnight did ſkirmiſh with them for the Space of two Hours. In which Skirmiſh the *Spaniſh* Lieutenant of the Field, and twenty more of the *Spaniards* were ſlain, beſides many that were hurt.

" The next Day following they did offer ſkirmiſh again to the *Spaniards*. Whereupon they all yielded. And ſo, as Priſoners, were carried to *Dungannon* to the Earl: Who meant to ſend them to the Lord Deputy, being judged to be Men of good Value; and one thought to be a Man, that had ſome great Charge and Conduct of Men for many Years. Whereof the Lord Deputy will give Knowledge, as ſoon as they ſhall be brought to *Dublin*."

Then follow a Liſt of the Ships and Men ſunk, drowned and taken upon the Coaſt of *Ireland*; Namely, 17 Ships, and 5394 Men. [Num. LIII.] For the Particulars I refer the Reader to the *Appendix*. To which I ſhall add from the ſame Paper *Spains* Loſs of Ships and Men in the Coaſt of *England*, namely 15 Ships, and above Ten Thouſand Men, in a particular Liſt: That we may as it were in one View, ſee

Englands never to be forgotten Deliverance by the ſignal Hand of God againſt that inſulting, cruel Prince, King *Philip.*

ANNO 1588.

Many of theſe *Spaniards* thus diſtreſt and taken in *Ireland*, were brought over Priſoners into *England*; and committed under Cuſtody to *Bridewel* in *London:* Where we find them in *September* the next Year. Concerning one of theſe I make a Remark by the Way. One *Giles Corit*, of *Britany* in *France* by Birth, belonging to the Sea, putting in at *Lisbon*, when the *Spaniſh* Navy was there ready to Sail for *England*; was compelled to leave his Ship, and to go with them in that unhappy Expedition; (on this Occaſion getting up all the Seamen they could poſſibly lay their Hands on.) This Man at this Time endeavouring to obtain his Liberty, got a Teſtimonial from *Cyprian de Valera*, a great *Spaniſh* Officer, (now as it ſeems in Cuſtody,) who teſtified concerning this Man, as is aforeſaid: And withal, that he was a poor Sailor, an old Man, and had a Wife and three Children, and was ſick. And that all this Account he, [the ſaid *Cyprian*] had from the Relation of all the *Spaniards*, that were with him. And this he teſtified the 13th of *Septemb.* 1589. under his Hand,

Spaniſh Priſoners in Bridewel.

Cyprianus de Valera.

In this grand deciſive Action, ſome particular Information two Letters will communicate; written at that very Juncture, by two Men of Eminence, the one Sir *Fra. Drake*, from on board his Ship, the *Revenge*, and the other, Sir *Henry Killigrew*, the Queens Ambaſſador, then with the States of *Holland*. In *Drakes* Letter, which was written to the Lord Treaſurer, dated *June* 6. he ſhewed, how the Queens Fleet then at *Plimouth* was in every Moments expectation of the *Spaniard*; and that when they were in Sight, what Courage and Bravery appeared in the *Engliſh*, however prodigiouſly great the Enemies Navy appeared: That a Skipper of an Hulk that gave them the firſt Notice of them, could not number them. but ſuppoſed them to amount to 150 or 200 Sail. And that the Lord Admiral ſtood ſo well affected for all honourable Service, as aſſured his Followers of good Succeſs, and hope of Victory. And ſo ending with his Prayers, not doubting of the Enemy. But take the Letter, as I offer it from the very Original. See the *Appendix*; concluding piouſly, “That he daily prayed to God to bleſs her Majeſty, and to give them Grace to fear him. For ſo ſhould they not need to doubt the Enemy, although they were many.

Letter from Sir Francis Drake *to the Lord Treaſurer from aboard.*

Numb. LIV.

When the Fleets were in Face of one another on our Seas, and ſome Engagements paſſed between them, (wherein one of the Enemies great Ships was deſtroyed near *Calice*) *Killigrew* the Queens Ambaſſador in *Holland* thought it neceſſary to excite the *States* now to aſſiſt, and particularly to be ready, and to watch the Duke of *Parma*, who with his Forces was going to carry Aid from *Dunkirk*, and to join the *Spaniſh* Fleet: And when he returned was like to attack ſome of their Towns. For this Purpoſe *Killigrew*, being now at *Leyden*, diſpatched a Letter, dated *Aug.* 3. to *Vander-Myle*, Preſident of the *States* at the *Hague*, wherein (with the Preface of *Illuſtriſſime Domine*) he acquainted him, “That coming to *Leyden*,

Letter of Sir H. Killigrew, *Ambaſſador to the States.*

ANNO 1588.

"*Narratum eſt a quodam, qui ſe intra biduum* Caletis *profectum, &c.* It was told him by one [probably his Spy] who but two Days paſt came from *Calice*, that the *Monday* before, there was a terrible Fight between her Majeſties Fleet and that of *Spain*; when, he ſaid, he ſaw one great Gallias taken, although he thought the Ship itſelf periſhed, but all the Goods carried off: [This was the Veſſel wherein *Don Hugo de Moncada* was ſlain, and 686 Men beſides periſhed.] "And that it was done within a Gun Shot of *Calice*: That the ſame Perſon further informed him, that on *Wedneſday* following her Majeſties Commiſſioners [who were the Earl of *Derby* and others, that had been ſent to treat with *Parma* about Terms of Peace in Shew] "came all ſafe to *Calice*, in order to their coming home. On which Account, that now all Treaty of Peace being broke off, the Ambaſſador beſeeched *Vander Myle*, that the States would haſten with all Diligence the ſending away the Letters to her Majeſty which were that Morning read in their Council. And added, That all thoſe Forces which went aboard at *Dunkirk*, in order to ſtrengthen the *Spaniſh* Army, were landed again by order of the Duke, as reckoning it not ſafe to go from Shoar, the *Engliſh* Fleet being ſo near. And that this was Matter, the Ambaſſador ſaid, he doubted not, ſufficient to admoniſh him [the ſaid Preſident] how neceſſary it was, that *Oſtend* and *Berghen* [two ſtrong Places, being Garriſons, held by the *Engliſh*] ſhould be provided for. Wherefore he earneſtly entreated his Excellency, that he would perſuade Count *Maurice*, to ſolicite the States of *Zealand*, that there be ſent in Time to thoſe Cities, Proviſions and other Neceſſaries for their Aid.

Concluding in theſe Words. "In which Things, as I require, moſt confident in your Pains and Induſtry; ſo I would you ſhould be perſuaded, that in the like Caſe I ſhall never be wanting to ſerve you. Farewel. Dated from *Leyden, Aug.* 3. 1588.

And this Warning of the Ambaſſador was not without Ground. For the Duke of *Parma*, ſoon after his Departure from *Dunkirk*, made uſe of his Forces, and ſet upon *Bergen*, and laid cloſe Siege to it, but was ſeveral Times beat by the *Engliſh* Garriſon there. Inſomuch, that he brake up the Siege after the Loſs of 400 Men, as our Hiſtorian tells.

Rogers *Ambaſſador in* Denmark.

The Queen had another Ambaſſador now at the Court of *Denmark*, viz. *Daniel Rogers*: Who by his Prudence ſtopped an hired Fleet of Ships going from that Kingdom, to advance the Power of the *Spaniſh* Navy with greater Numbers. For as it had joined with it Ships from *Naples*, *Sicily*, *Venice*, ſo more Strength was endeavoured to be procured from this Country. But the ſaid *Engliſh* Ambaſſador upon Knowledge thereof, ſeaſonably applied to that Court to forbid the Departure of thoſe Ships for that Purpoſe; as being a Violation of the good Friendſhip between the two Kingdoms. This Tranſaction I chuſe to give in the Words of the ſaid Ambaſſador, in his Letter writ in *Auguſt* to the Lord Treaſurer.

His Letter to the Lord Treaſurer thence.

"There were certain who had received Commiſſion from the King of *Spain* to ſerve him with certain Ships, Mariners and Soldiers

“ upon the Seas. Which being invited with great Stipends thought
“ they might ſo do. But being advertiſed of this Matter, as they
“ were ready to depart, I complained unto the Governours [of the
“ King, now a Minor] declaring, how far the Attempt of ſuch Men
“ was againſt the Leagues which were between the Crowns of
“ *England* and *Denmark*; and nothing conformable unto the ſincere
“ Friendſhip which had been between her Majeſty, and the King,
“ their Maſter. Upon this Complaint of mine, although the Parties
“ pleaded their Privileges, the Governors took ſevere Order, that
“ neither they, nor any other of the Subjects of the Crown of *Denmark*,
“ or *Norway*, or appertaining to the Dominions of the King,
“ ſhould either at this Preſent, or hereafter, ſerve againſt her Majeſty.

News of the Defeat brought to King Philip.

Camd. Eliz. p. 418.

It would be worth knowing how this haughty King *Philip* took the firſt News of the *Engliſh* Conqueſt of his *Invincible Armada*. Our Hiſtorian in the Life of Queen *Elizabeth*, writes, that he bore it patiently, and thanked God it was no worſe. But it is otherwiſe more probably told in a Paper, written by a Fugitive Gentleman that lived in thoſe Times, namely, *Anthony Coppley*: Being his *Declaration of Practices againſt her Majeſties Perſon and Government*.
“ That he ſaw it writ in a Letter out of *Spain* to a *Spaniard* in
“ *Flanders* to this Effect; That when News of the Diſgrace of the
“ Kings late *Armada*, or Fleet, was brought unto him, being at
“ Maſs at that very Time, in his Chapel, he ſware (after Maſs was
“ done) a great Oath, that he would waſte and conſume his Crown,
“ even to the Value of a Candleſtick (which he pointed unto,
“ ſtanding upon the Altar) but either he would utterly ruin her
“ Majeſty and *England*, or elſe himſelf and all *Spain* become Tributary
“ to her. Whereby, as he gathered, it was moſt evident,
“ that his Deſire of Revenge was extreme and implacable towards
“ *England*.

The Prieſts Reaſon, why the King ſucceeded not.

But his Prieſts could have told him the Reaſon, why he was no more ſucceſsful in that Expedition againſt the Hereticks in *England*.
“ That it was a viſible Judgment on the *Spaniard*, for not expelling
“ the *Moors* out of his Country. For God would never make
“ uſe of the *Spaniard* to reduce Hereticks to the Boſom of the
“ Church, ſo long as they ſuffered ſo many *Mahometans* Apoſtates
“ to live among them:” As it is told us in the Hiſtory of the *Expulſion* of the *Moriſcoes* out of *Spain*.

Pag. 90.

Thankſgiving Sermons.

Upon the firſt News of this wonderful Deliverance and Victory, the Kingdom was filled with Joy, and a Senſe of Gratitude to God; and that expreſt by ſpecial Offices to be uſed in all the Churches of the Nation. The firſt Notice given of it in publick, was, as I find, on the 20th of *Auguſt*, when *Nowel*, Dean of St. *Pauls*, preached at the Croſs a Sermon of Thankſgiving, the Lord Maior and Aldermen preſent: Moving them and all the Auditory to give Praiſe and Thanks to God for the great Mercy. Again, *Sept.* 8. being another and chief Day of Thankſgiving, the Preacher at St. *Pauls* Croſs moved the People to give God Thanks for the late wonderful Overthrow of their Enemies, the *Spaniards*. There was then openly ſhewed eleven Enſigns, being the Banners taken in the *Spaniſh* Navy; and particularly one Streamer, wherein was an Image of our Lady, with

ANNO
1588.

with her Son in her Arms: Which was held in a Mans Hand over the Pulpit. The ſame Banners the next Day were hanged on *London* Bridge towards *Southwark*. Again *Novemb.* 17. was another Day of Joy celebrated, as well for the Queens Acceſſion to the Throne, as alſo for the ſaid Victory: When *Cooper*, a very learned and worthy Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, was appointed then the Preacher at the Croſs. At which Aſſembly her Majeſty was to have been preſent. But upon ſome Occaſion ſhe came not. And ſo her coming was deferred till the *Sunday* following. The 19th Day, being *Tueſday*, was kept Holyday throughout the Realm, with Sermons, ſinging of Pſalms, Bonfires, *&c.* for Joy, and Thankſgiving unto God for the Overthrow of the *Spaniards*. And the Citizens of *London* then appearing in their Liveries; and had another Sermon at St. *Pauls* Croſs.

The Queen comes in Triumph to St. Pauls.

But *Novemb.* 24. being the *Sunday* following, the Queen, (attended upon by her Privy Council, the Nobility, the *French* Ambaſſador, the Judges, the Heralds, with Noiſe of Trumpets) ſitting in a Chariot, like a Throne, made with four Pillars, drawn with four white Horſes, came to the Cathedral Church of St. *Pauls*; and joined in the Thankſgivings there made, and heard the Sermon, made by *Pierſe*, Biſhop of *Sarum*, her Lord Almoner. And then returned through the Church, to the Biſhops Palace; and there dined.

There was a Prayer and Pſalm, appointed to be uſed duly in the Pariſh Churches on this joyful Occaſion. And as there was a Prayer to be ſaid for Gods Aſſiſtance of the Queens Forces, and their good Succeſs, when they went out, and to be continued, while they were abroad; which was ſet down before; ſo the Prayer and Thankſgiving for the happy Iſſue may deſerve to be repeated and preſerved here; as an eternal Record of Gods Goodneſs and *Englands* Gratitude. It was as follows.

The Thankſgiving uſed in the Churches after Deliverance from the Armada.

“ We cannot but confeſs, O Lord God, that the late terrible intended Invaſion of moſt cruel Enemies was ſent from thee, to the Puniſhment of our Sins, our Pride, our Covetouſneſs, our Exceſs in Meat and Drink, our Security, our Ingratitude, and our Unthankfulneſs towards thee for ſo long Peace and other thine infinite Bleſſings, continually poured upon us; and to the Puniſhment of other our innumerable and moſt grievous Offences, continually committed againſt thy Divine Majeſty: And indeed our guilty Conſciences lookt for, even, at that Time, the Execution of that terrible Juſtice upon us, ſo by us deſerved. But thou, O Lord God, who knoweſt all Things, knowing, that our Enemies came not of Juſtice to puniſh us for our Sins committed againſt thy Divine Majeſty, (whom they by their exceſſive Wickedneſs have offended, and continually do offend, as much or more than we) but that they came with moſt cruel Intent and Purpoſe to deſtroy us, our Cities, Towns, Countries and People; and utterly to root out the Memory of our Nation from off the Earth for ever. And withal wholly to ſuppreſs thy Holy Word, and bleſſed Goſpel of thy dear Son, our Saviour *Jeſus* Chriſt. Which they being drowned in Idolatry and Superſtition, do hate moſt deadly;

“ and as likely only for the Profeſſion of the ſame, and not for any “ Offences againſt thy Divine Majeſty, or Injuries done to them- “ ſelves.

“ Wherefore it hath pleaſed thee, O Heavenly Father, in thy Ju- “ ſtice to remember thy Mercy towards us; turning our Enemies “ from us, and that dreadful Execution, which they intended to- “ wards us, into a Fatherly and moſt merciful Admonition of us, “ to the Amendment of our Lives, and to execute Juſtice upon our “ cruel Enemies; turning the Deſtruction that they intended againſt “ us, upon their own Heads. For the which the ſame thy moſt “ gracious Protection and all other thy Graces; without our de- “ ſerts, continually and moſt plentifully poured upon our Church, “ our Queen and Realm, and People of the whole Land; we be- “ ſeech thee, add and pour alſo the Grace of Gratitude and Thank- “ fulneſs into our Hearts: That we never forgetting, but bearing “ in perpetual Memory this thy merciful Protection and Delive- “ rance of us from the Malice, Force, Fraud, and Cruelty of our “ Enemies, *&c.*

An earneſt Exhortation to the People of *England.*

Soon after this notable Exploit of the *Engliſh* Arms, and Deliverance from their late Danger, the Kingdom was ſtill upon their Guard, for fear of their implacable Enemy, the enſuing Year. And for this Purpoſe a well-diſpoſed Gentleman of the Queens Houſhold ſet forth, *An earneſt Exhortation to the Queens Majeſties Subjects: To ſtir up the Minds of all faithful Subjects, to defend their Country in this dangerous Time from the Invaſion of Enemies.* And as it is added, *Faithfully and zealouſly compiled by* Anthony Marten, *Sewer of her Majeſties moſt Honourable Chamber.* I take Notice of it here as a notable Diſcourſe, ſhewing and juſtifying the Queens Proceedings in her making War with *Spain*, ſoon after the Defeat of their *Armada.* “ Wherein, as the Author writ, they would not “ ſeem to War with a Woman, but to prepare ſo invincible a Force “ againſt her, as might devour her and her whole Kingdom in a “ Day, without any War at all. But he, as he proceeded, that ſit- “ teth above caſteth out the Counſil of Princes, and bringeth their “ Devices to none Effect: He hath deſtroyed their Forces, and ſunk “ into the Sea their huge and ſtrong Veſſels.

The Cauſe of the Invaſion.

And then going on, he gave ſome particular and remarkable Relation of this fortunate Expedition. “ When the greateſt Princes “ in *Chriſtendom* had with one Conſent conſpired with the See of “ *Rome* to make War upon all the Profeſſors of the Goſpel, and to “ reduce them again to their abominable Idolatry, or elſe to deſtroy “ them; that their Name ſhould be no more remembred upon “ Earth; but eſpecially perceiving the Queens Majeſty to be moſt “ zealous of the Truth, and the principal Pillar, on whom the “ Church of Chriſt did depend; they deviſed many ways to de- “ prive her of her Life and Kingdom. *Come*, ſay they, *this is the* “ *Heire; let us ſlay her, and the Inheritance ſhall be ours.* Then “ her Majeſty knowing from whence the chief Cauſe of their Ma- “ lice proceeded, and that the Matter moſt of all claimed the Glory “ of God, and next unto that the Life of her own ſelf, and of in- “ finite Thouſands of her Subjects; ſhe hath ſince that Time taken

The Queens Cauſe for taking up Arms.

“ into her Poſſeſſion (though not the hundredth Part of that which ſhe might, and hath been offered her) [*viz.* by the oppreſſed in the *Low Countries*] Yet ſome Part of her Enemies Weapons, as was lawful for her to do, for the better Defence of her Kingdom, and more Safety of the Church of Chriſt: Since without thoſe Helps ſhe had no ſafe Way to defend herſelf. [That is, taking the Government of thoſe Countries upon her.] Yet have theſe Things been done of her Majeſty with ſuch Deliberation, Adviſement, and long protracting of Time, as it might be evident unto all the World, that ſhe ſought nothing more, than to have her Enemies by ſome Means or other reconciled unto her, before ſhe would enter into any new Occaſion for her own Defence. And undoubtedly, but that it ſo much concerned the Cauſe of God, and the Kingdom of her antient Allies: All which ſhe was bound to defend, when ſhe took upon her the Imperial Crown; and that ſhe ſaw, that if ſhe did take whole Kingdoms from her Enemies by Violence, they could never have been enraged more againſt her, than before: She would rather have loſt a Thouſand Lives in her own Perſon, than have touched any Thing that ſhould offend her Neighbours, or might ſeem to belong to another. But when ſhe ſaw that no other Means would prevail: When her Highneſs ſaw, the *Turks*, *Jews*, and *Infidels* were ſuffered to live quietly among them, without Compulſion of Conſcience, but her poor Subjects brought into Servitude, unleſs they would ſubmit their Souls to the Power of Antichriſt: When for a moſt courteous Entertainment of all their Subjects within her Dominions, all hers among them were either made Gally Slaves, or elſe brought within the Compaſs of their cruel *Inquiſition*: When neither her own friendly Letters might be received, as they ſhould, nor her Meſſengers of Account regarded, as they ought: Finally, when they had decreed, that no Faith was to be kept with us, and made us worſe than Infidels, becauſe we have fled from their Superſtition, and followed the ſincere Faith of *Jeſus* Chriſt:

“ Then her Majeſty with all Princely Courage and Magnanimity, began to ſtretch forth her Power, to defend the Cauſe of God, and her own Right. And theſe be the ſtrong Cauſes of their Tragical Dealings with us. Awake now therefore, my Countrymen; pluck up your Spirits, *&c.*

A Prayer uſed in the Queens Chapel.

This pious, and well diſpoſed Writer, with his *Exhortation*, had compoſed a ſuitable Prayer to be uſed on this Occaſion. Which was read, during this dangerous Seaſon, at the Queens Chapel, and elſewhere. Which I have thought not unworthy to be preſerved among our Records in the *Appendix*. [Numb. LIV.]

CHAP. XVI.

The Spaniards, *after their Overthrow, ſpread lying Reports of their Victory. Books thereof printed in* Spaniſh. *One intitled,* Advice from London. *Sir* Francis Drakes *Narrative of this Engagement.* Don Pedro de Valdes *taken Priſoner by* Drake. *His Examination: And Ranſome. His Letter from* Bruſſels, *ſent to the Queen. His Complaint to Her concerning his Ranſome to be paid to Sir* Francis Drake: *The Lords Anſwer in the Queens Name. The Queens Preparations againſt the next Year. Requires a Loan of her Subjects. The Councils Letters to the Lords Lieutenants of the Counties for that Purpoſe.* Don Antonio *offers Articles to the Queen. Reports at* Rome, *that the Queen was taken, and to be ſent to the Pope. Triumphs there for this falſe Victory. Intelligence from* Rome, *and other Places abroad, of the King of* Spain; *and his Purpoſes againſt the Kings of* Scotland *and* Navarr. *A Seſſions of Parliament. Bills brought in. Speeches made for and againſt them. Declaration of the Houſe of Lords to her Majeſty, to aſſiſt her.*

BUT now let us look on the other Hand, and ſee how the Enemy behaved himſelf after this mighty Diſappointment, and what Courſe was thought fit to be taken, upon this their miſerable Overthrow and Defeat.

Spaniſh *News printed of the Overthrow of the* Engliſh *Fleet.*

Their next Care was to impoſe Lies upon the World, to conceal their Shame, and the Diſgrace of their proud King. For they ſtudiouſly gave out nothing but Glory and Victory in their News. Such a Relation was written and printed in *Spaniſh*, of their great Succeſs againſt the *Engliſh* Fleet, and againſt the Lord *Howard* of *Effingham*, Lord Admiral, and Sir *Fra. Drake*, Rear-Admiral. And this News was pretended to be ſent from the chief City in *England*, viz. *London*, ſoon after the Action, to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, Reſident at *Paris*.

This Pamphlet was brought from *Flanders* to *England* by a *Spaniard*, who had removed himſelf and Family, about this Time, hither. And being ſoon tranſlated into *Engliſh*, was as followeth, with this Title,

Advices from London, *which our Ambaſſador, Reſident for our King in* Paris, *received.*

Pretended Intelligence from London.

"By News from *London* of the 26th of *Auguſt*, it is certainly "known by Perſons of Credit, that the Queens Admiral General "was arrived in the River of *London* with 25 or 26 Ships, without his Admiral [Ship] that he went forth in. The which was "taken by our Admiral, St. *John*. And it is publick in *England*, "that to cover the Loſs of his ſaid Ship, he gave out, that he had "changed Shipping for one that was ſwifter of Sail; the better to "follow our *Armada:* Being notwithſtanding certainly proved, "that he ſaved himſelf in a Boat, when he loſt his Ship. And "that *Drake* was either taken or ſlain. The very ſame was con-"firmed by the way of *Holland* by a Pinnace of theirs. And "from *Amſterdam*, that the Queen had commanded upon Pain of "Death, that there ſhould be no Speech of her Navy. And that "there was great Sorrow in her Kingdom. And that ſhe had "30,000 Men in Field, between *Dover* and *Margate*, very raw "Soldiers. And that the Catholicks, perceiving her Navy to be "ſpoiled, had made a Mutiny. Which cauſed the Queen to go in "Perſon into the Field. And they affirm for moſt true, that there "is no Ship or Boat of ours carried into *England*, more than the "Ship of *Don Pedro de Valdes*. And that our *Armada* was gone for "*Scotland:* Where they had taken a Port, called *Trepena Eux-*"*aten*.

There were alſo other *Spaniſh* Letters ſtuffed full of lying Intelligence, writ in *September* and *December*: Which were brought into *England* by the foreſaid *Spaniard*, and put into *Engliſh*. Which may be found in the *Appendix*. Num. LV.

Mendoza *the ſpreader of the pretended* Spaniſh *Victory.*

The chief Inſtrument of theſe vain and falſe Reports, and the ſtudious ſpreader of them in Print, was *Don Bernardine de Mendoza*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *France*. And who particularly was the Publiſher of the Victory of *Spain*. Of whom one of our Writers at that very Time thus charged him: "That he was ſo "impudent, or at leaſt ſo blindly raſh, as to diſperſe in Print, both "in *French*, *Italian* and *Spaniſh*, moſt falſe Reports of a Victory "had by the *Spaniards*, even when the Victory was notable on "the Part of *England*, and the *Spaniſh* vanquiſhed. Warning "him henceforth to beware, not to be ſo haſty of himſelf, nor yet "to permit one *Capella*, who was his common Sower of Reports, "to write theſe falſe Things for Truths.

Sir Francis Drakes *Report of this Engagement.*

Voyages of the Engl. *p.* 169.

But a truer and brief Relation of this Engagement, and the Succeſs on the *Engliſh* Side, Sir *Francis Drake*, who himſelf was a great Captain in this Fleet, gave ſoon after, being penned by himſelf, upon the vain-glorious, falſe Reports of the *Spaniards*. "That "they were not aſhamed to publiſh in ſundry Languages, in Print, "great Victories in Words: Which they pretended to have obtain-"ed againſt this Realm; and ſpred the ſame in a moſt falſe Sort "over all Parts of *France*, *Italy*, and elſewhere, when ſhortly after "it was happily manifeſted, in very deed, to all Nations, how

"their

ANNO 1588.

“ their Navy, which they termed *Invincible*, conſiſting of 140 Sail
“ of Ships, not only of their own Kingdom, but ſtrengthned with
“ the greateſt *Argoſies*, *Portugal* Carracks, *Florentines*, and huge
“ Hulks of other Countries, were by 30 of her Majeſties own Ships
“ of War, and a few of our own Merchants, by the wiſe, valiant,
“ and advantageous Conduct of the Lord *Charles Howard*, High
“ Admiral of *England*, beaten and ſhuffled together, even from the
“ *Lizard* in *Cornwal*, firſt to *Portland*. Where they ſhamefully
“ left *Don Pedro De Valdez*, with his mighty Ship, from *Portland*
“ to *Calice*; where they loſt *Hugo de Moncado*, with the *Gallias*,
“ of which he was Captain. And from *Calice* driven with Squibs
“ from their Anchors, were chaſed out of the ſight of *England*,
“ round about *Scotland* and *Ireland*. Where for the Sympathy of
“ their Religion, hoping to find Succour and Aſſiſtance, a great Part
“ of them were cruſht againſt the Rocks, and thoſe other that land-
“ ed, being very many in Number, were notwithſtanding broken,
“ ſlain and taken. And ſo ſent from Village to Village, coupled in
“ Halters, to be ſhipped into *England*, where her Majeſty of her
“ Princely and invincible Diſpoſition, diſdaining to put them to
“ Death, and ſcorning either to retain or entertain them, they were
“ all ſent back again to their Countries; to witneſs and recount the
“ worthy Atchievements of their *invincible* and dreadful Navy. Of
“ which the Number of Soldiers, the fearful Burthen of their
“ Ships, the Commanders Names of every Squadron, with all other
“ their Magazines of Proviſions, were put in Print, as an Army
“ and Navy irreſiſtable, and diſdaining Prevention. With all
“ which their great, terrible Oſtentation, they did not in all their
“ Sailing round about *England*, ſo much as ſink or take one Ship,
“ Bark, Pinnace or Cockboat of ours: Or ever burnt ſo much as one
“ Sheepcote of this Land.

Examination of Don Pedro, *Priſoner.*

That *Don Pedro de Valdez* ſpoken of before, was Sir *Francis Drakes* Priſoner; and after ſome Years Impriſonment here in *England*, paid a round Ranſome to him, before he had Deliverance, and Liberty granted him by the Queen to return into his own Country. While he was detained here, he was often under Examination concerning the *Spaniſh* Fleet, and the Kings Purpoſe and Deſign, *&c.* And in order thereunto a great Number of Articles were drawn up, (which I believe were done by the Lord Treaſurer) containing Queſtions, whereunto he was demanded his Anſwers. As, who had the Kings Commiſſion. How many were Counſillors to the General by that Commiſſion. If the General ſhould miſcarry, who ſhould ſucceed in his Place. Who the Admiral General was: Concerning the Kings ſending a Commiſſion to the Duke of *Parma*, to treat and conclude a Peace with *England*. What Opinion was had of the King of *Scots*, or any of his Realm, to join with this Enterprize, or to favour it. What Opinion was had of landing in *Ireland*. How many Places they had Information of, to land in *England*; and what Succours promiſed to be had here. Whether any Promiſe was made to have Rebellion ſtirred in *England*; and in what Places. Several Queſtions concerning the Duke of *Parma*; as, what Power was thought to come with him; and upon what Occaſion the King writ a particular Letter to him. But I had rather transfer this whole Paper, both Queſtions, and *Don Pedro*'s Anſwers, to the *Appendix*.

Numb. LVI.

I ſhall only ſet down the laſt Queſtions, (whence we may gather, what was deſigned in this Invaſion.)

" What Determination was there for the Proceeding againſt the " Queen, and the Nation of *England*. To which *Don Pedro* only " anſwered warily, That *he would not touch that String*.

" How would they have known the Catholicks from the Prote- " ſtants.

" To whom in the Land ſhould Favour have been ſhewed.

" Who ſhould have had the Title to this Crown.

Whether ſhould the Nation have been ruled, by the Rulers of the *Engliſh* Nation, or the Government changed.

What would follow had the Spaniard *ſucceeded.*

By which State Queſtions, it may appear evidently, what was to be looked for from *Spain*, had their Fleet proſpered, and their Army landed in this Kingdom: As, that a fearful Maſſacre would have followed of Proteſtants every where; only Catholicks ſecured by ſome particular Diſtinction made, to know them. The Queen muſt have been not only depoſed, but undergone ſome direful Uſage. New Rulers, that were Strangers to be ſet over the Nation. And the antient Government, and Conſtitution overturned.

Don Pedro *upon his Ranſome returns home.*

The foreſaid *Spaniſh* Commander remained here three or four Years; and now paying, or being bound to pay for his Randſome and of two Captains under him, and other Charges, the Sum of 3500 *l.* to Sir *Francis Drake*, (whoſe Priſoner he was) he took his Leave of the Queen and Court, and ſo departed for *Bruſſels*: Having been very courteouſly and reſpectfully entertained, while he remained here; and ſo he confeſſed and reported to his Friends, when he was gone; and profeſſed himſelf ready to do all good Offices between the Queen and his King: Writing thus to the Lord Treaſurer ſoon after his coming to *Bruſſels*, according as his *Spaniſh* Letter tranſlated, ran, *viz.*

De Valdez *Letter from* Bruſſels *to the Lord Treaſurer.*

" That coming to that Court [at *Bruſſels*] he found in it the " *Conde Defentez*, who was a great Lord, and his very Friend. " For it was 30 Years ago that they knew one another; and ſigni- " fied unto him with what good Entertainment he departed out of " that Kingdom, and the great Favour he found with her Majeſty, " and the great ones of her Highneſs Council. He told him alſo, " how his Excellency [meaning the Lord Treaſurer, to whom he " was writing] at his Departure, offered him to receive his Letters " in good Part, if he wrote to him; and recommended him to pro- " cure with his King all the good Offices he might, when Occaſion " offered. To the End that this Kingdom and the Kingdom of " *Spain* might return to the antient Friendſhip and League, that " it was wont to have. Which, as he added, he then offered unto " his Excellency, as he was Agent, to do his Part, the beſt he " could; as he ſhould ſpy Steps open, that he might treat thereof, " without looſing the leaſt Occaſion. And promiſing for the ef- " fecting of this, he would be always ready to give his Excellency " Account thereof: So that he would ſhew him the Favour to an-

“ ſwer his Letters, which ſhould be for his Service. And that in ſo doing, as he added, he had an Intent to follow it earneſtly, as he was bound. This was dated from *Bruſſels March* 21. 1593.

His Letter of Thanks to the Queen.

About a Week before, he alſo addreſt a Letter to the Queen, in acknowledgment of his favourable Dealing in her Kingdom, and by herſelf for his Liberty: Beginning with theſe Words, as they were tranſlated from the *Spaniſh*; “ I well acknowledge the Goodneſs, that your Majeſty hath done for me, in ſuffering me to have my Liberty. For the which I am ſo thankful, that all the Days of my Life I will have it before my Eyes, to do your Majeſty Service, ſo far forth as my ſmall Power ſufficeth, *&c.*

Complains to her about his Ranſome taken by Sir Francis Drake.

But there was another Reaſon, why *Don Pedro* made this Addreſs to her Majeſty: Which was a Complaint againſt Sir *Francis Drake* for his very unjuſt Dealing with him in taking ſuch a Sum of Money for his Ranſome: When there was formerly an Agreement (to which, he ſaid, the Queen herſelf condeſcended) for the Exchange of one Mr. *Winter*, (a Priſoner under the *Spaniards*) and him, as he related it in his Letter to her; *viz.* For the Payment of 3550 *l.* of which Sum *Winter* was to pay 2500 *l.* and *De Valdez* was bound for the other 1500 *l.* whereas the Burthen of the whole Payment now was laid upon him. It is too long to relate the Matter, as repreſented by him. It is certain, that ſoon after *Don Pedro*'s being taken, an Endeavour was uſed to get his Liberty, by an Exchange for him with an *Engliſh* Gentleman that had been taken going by Sea into *France*, and was now a Captive under the Duke of *Parma* in *Flanders*. His Name was *Edward Winter*, Son, or Relation (as it ſeems) of Sir *William Winter*, ſometime the Queens Agent, or *John Winter*, the famous Sea Captain. The Matter was tranſacted between ſome of *Don Pedro*'s Friends and *Winter*, who was held in ſome cloſer Reſtraint by the *Spaniard*, that he might be the more willing to get his Liberty, and obtain this Favour from the Queen. *Winter* hereupon ſent two of his Servants to the *Engliſh* Court: Eſpecially, their Terms with him being, not to grant him his Liberty, unleſs by ſuch Exchange. And the Report went, that the Queen was enclined thereto. But in Truth ſhe would not yield to it. And why, the enſuing Letter from the Lords of the Council to Mr. *Winter*, will ſhew, (and is worthy inſerting here) by me tranſcribed from the Lord Treaſurers own Minutes.

An Exchange moved for him with another Priſoner in Flanders.

That the Queen was not conſenting to it. The Lords Letters.

“ Where, by two of your Servants, named *Thomas Hall* and *William Meredith*, we underſtand, that you are there retained Priſoner; and that in a very ſtrait Manner, without yielding to you any reaſonable Compoſition for your Ranſome, or rather none, unleſs that *Don Pedro De Valdes*, a principal Captain in the King of *Spains* Army, on that Side, here Priſoner in *England*, may be put at Liberty for you; and that they which pretend Intereſt in you affirm, that there hath been an Intention here for the Queens Majeſty to yield thereto: Whereof becauſe we never heard of any ſuch Diſpoſition in her Majeſty, but thought the Information thereof to be untrue, we moved her Majeſty to know her Opinion therein. Who for Anſwer ſaid, That ſhe never meant to yield thereunto, nor (to avoid an evil Example) to

“ ſuffer

ANNO 1588.

The Change unequal.

" ſuffer ſuch an unequal Change to be made, could in Honour aſſent thereto. For ſhe ſaid, as we know it alſo to be true, that " *Don Pedro* was a principal Captain, and a *General* of a Squadron, " of the great Squadron of the Ships of War of *Andalouzia*, armed, brought to have invaded this Realm. Of which Attempt he " was alſo a Principal; yea, almoſt, as is reported, the only Perſuader of the King of *Spain* to adventure that Enterprize. And " beſides, that he was a Perſon, that before Time had Charge as " a General, on the Seas. And therefore a Man far exceeding, for " Action, Value and Credit, you, Mr. *Winter*; whom we know " never to have had Charge at all in any Martial Service; but to " have lived as a private Perſon. And now, when you were taken, " had no Direction to ſerve, but that reſolutely of your honeſt Deſire intended to paſs into *France*, to ſee the Manner of Service " there; and by contrary Winds and Tempeſts, was driven from " *Depe*, where you meant to have landed. And thereby taken, " and ſold over to the *Spaniards*. In which Caſe Reaſon and good " Uſage of War required, that you might have been, as a private " Man, being no Captain, delivered upon ſome reaſonable Recompence to your Taker; as many Hundreds of *Spaniards*, yea, " many that have had good Charge in the late Wars, and have been " known to have been of Honourable Families, have been put to " Liberty upon ſmall Ranſoms, and very many for no other Charge, " but for their Diet.

" And theſe Things thus conſidered by her Majeſty, in Conference with us, ſhe commanded us to ſignify thus much to be " ſhewed to ſuch as with whom you are to compound for your Liberty, which we know by no better Means to do, than by this " our writing to yourſelf. Which you ſhall do well to ſhew, " where you ſhall think meet. For to that End we have written " this our Letter, by her Majeſties expreſs Command, in the *French* " Tongue: Not doubting, but that when *Seignor Mount Dragon*, " in whoſe Cuſtody you are, ſhall ſee the ſame, being a Nobleman, " of good Wiſdom, and of long Experience in the Wars, as any now " liveth in thoſe Parts, he will further your ſpeedy Delivery upon " reaſonable Conditions; for your Degree, and for the Quality of " the Manner of your Taking; without giving Credit to any Informations that have been given, [*viz.*] that for your Delivery, " *Don Pedro* ſhould be delivered. Which was never meant, nor " with any Reaſon ought to be accorded; having Reſpect to ſo " great a Difference of your Perſons, your Actions and Eſtimation " for Martial Service: Although her Majeſty indeed is very deſirous " of your Delivery, as of a Gentleman to be favoured, both for " your own ſake, and for your Father, that ſerved her Majeſty " very worthily of long Time.

Letter to Lords Lieutenants for a Loan to the Queen.

We have ſeen, how exceeding diligent the Queen and her Council were in their Preparations againſt *Spain*; and how ſucceſsful (by the Bleſſing of God) it proved in the Event. But ſhe counted not herſelf ſecure after that ſignal Conqueſt late obtained; but like a wiſe and provident Prince judged it neceſſary, to make Proviſion ſtill againſt any future Attempts, which ſhe was apprehenſive of from that malicious and haughty King. And therefore in order to get in a readineſs Arms and Men againſt any danger of Invaſion, having pretty well exhauſted her Treaſure, borrowed Money of her Subjects, as ſhe had done before upon like Occaſion. And which ſhe promiſed faithfully to repay again; as ſhe had done always before in the like Caſe. And accordingly Circular Letters, dated *December* the 4th, were ſent to the Lords Lieutenants of the Counties from the Lords of the Council; for this Loan, with Directions for the raiſing of it. Which being a notable Letter, and giving ſuch Light to the State of the Nation, and containing Expreſſions obliging to the Subjects, I will tranſcribe it here from the very Pen of the Lord Treaſurer; who beſt knew in what Condition the Treaſury now was.

" After our very hearty Commendations to your good Lordſhip, " we doubt not, but both to your Lordſhip, and alſo to others that " have had any Charge this laſt Year in any Part of Government " within this Realm; it is manifeſt, how neceſſary it was, that this " Realm was defended both by Sea and Land, in ſuch Sort as had " been ſeen, againſt the common Potent Enemy, attempting to " have invaded, and made a Conqueſt of the ſame. Wherein the " Queens Majeſty, with the Aſſiſtance of Gods ſpecial Favour, and " by Expences of great Treaſures, which ſhe had moſt Princely re- " ſerved for the Maintenance of the State of this her Realm; hath " received great Honour to herſelf, to her People ſingular Comfort " and Safety: And hereby her Enemies repulſed with great Loſſes, " Ignominy and Diſhonour:

" Yet neverthleſs her Majeſty in her Wiſdom ſeeth it moſt ne- " ceſſary to make new Preparations, for the Strengthning of all her " Forces, both by Sea and Land, to ſerve to withſtand the new " Attempts of the Enemy this Year following. Whereof ſhe hath " great Cauſe to doubt, that he and his Confederates, the Enemies " of the Goſpel, will ſpare no Coſt and Labour, to renew, or rather " encreaſe his former Forces. For which Purpoſe her Majeſty is " preſently, not only of her own Treaſure, but other extraordinary " Means, to diſburſe great Sums of Money, about the repairing of " her Navy, or enforcing thereof by building and furniſhing of di- " vers Ships of War, and with other great Proviſions of Armour, " Weapon, Ordnance, Powder, and ſundry other Furnitures for " the Wars, and Defence of the Realm, and all her Subjects.

" And for the more ſpeedy Help to this, it is thought by her " Majeſty, and us of her Council, that preſently Means be made, " to provide ſome convenient Sum of Money by way of *Loan*, or " lending of her good and faithful Subjects, as heretofore hath been " yielded unto her Majeſty in Times of leſs Need and Danger: " And yet always fully repaid. And to this End we have thought " meet by her Majeſties Direction to commend the Care hereof to " your Lordſhip, having Charge by her Majeſty, as her Lieutenant " in the ſaid Shire: Praying your Lordſhip, that without any De- " lay, your Lordſhip will conſider, either by your own Knowledge, " or with ſecret Conference with ſome ſuch in that Shire, as you " think to be well affected to this Service, and are of Knowledge to " inform your Lordſhip therein; how of each particular Perſon,

" being

ANNO 1588.

“ being Men of Lands, or of Wealth in Goods, ſuch particular “ Sums might be reaſonably required by her Majeſties Letters under her Privy Seal, in way of Loan, in that whole County, her “ Majeſty might be aſſured upon her Demand by her ſaid Letters “ to every ſeveral Perſon, to have the Total Sum within that Shire, “ of —— or rather more.

“ And to this Purpoſe we require your Lordſhip to conſider of “ the Number of all ſuch as are known to be of ſufficient Livelihood and Wealth within that Shire, of whom you ſhall think “ her Majeſty may readily have by way of Loan, only for the “ Space of one whole Year, ſuch particular Sums of 100^s of Pounds, “ or of half 100^s of Pounds, or at the leaſt not under the Sum of “ 25 *l.* according as the Abilities of the Perſons ſhall ſeem meet to “ yield.

“ And in this Matter we require you to forbear none that hath “ any Reſidence within that Shire, being in your Opinion able to “ ſatisfy this Purpoſe. And yet if there be any Perſon of Ability, “ that is an Officer to her Majeſty in any of her Courts of *Record*, “ or of her *Revenue*, that hath any Fee, or yearly Profit, by any “ ſuch Office, we require you to make a ſpecial Note of ſuch, with “ your Opinion of the Sums to be demanded. For that we are “ purpoſed, that if the Sums noted by you upon them ſhall not “ ſeem to us ſufficient for her Majeſties Service, the ſame ſhall be “ by us aſſeſſed to ſuch Sums as we ſhall think reaſonable.

“ And to conclude, we require your Lordſhip, with all ſpeed “ that you can, to enter into Conſideration hereof; and to ſend to “ us in Writing the Names and Surnames, with Addition of their “ Dwelling Places, of all ſuch as ſhall ſeem meet and able to make “ this manner of Loan: So as the Total Sum above-mentioned, or “ a greater Sum may be duly had.

And upon the Strength of theſe Sums raiſed, and the Valour of the *Engliſh* by Sea and Land, with the Bleſſings of God favouring them, what Damage happened to that quarrelſome inveterate King *Philip*, and the Havock made at *Cales* the next Year, and other Places of his Dominions afterwards, our Hiſtorians relate at large.

Don Antonio's *Articles offered to the Queen.*

And here falls in another Addreſs of *Don Antonio*, the expulſed King of *Portugal*; of whoſe Application to the Queen for her Aſſiſtance, we gave ſome Account the laſt Year. Who, ſoon after the ſignal Overthrow of King *Philips Armada*, took this Opportunity to renew his Motion to the Queen for her Aid, to recover his Kingdom. His Propoſals and Terms offered were very large. Which he thought fit firſt to propound to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, in a Letter writ in the *Portugueze* Language, all by his own Hand, and ſubſcribed *REY.* [The King.] Which being tranſlated into *Engliſh*, I found among that Stateſmans Papers, and ſhall here enter it as Authentick: Moving that Lord to prevail with the Queen (whom he ſtiled his *Patroneſs*) to accept them in his Behalf, as well as her own. Declaring the particular Advantages he was willing to agree and conſent to, for the making a firm Friendſhip and League with her. And theſe I rather ſet down, there being no mention made of them in our Hiſtorian, but in general Terms, *Don Antonio* made the *Engliſh* great Promiſes.

Camd. Eliz. *p.* 429.

His Letter to the Treaſurer.

“ Moſt Illuſtrious Lord Treaſurer, conſidering the great Love and Zeal, which your Illuſtrious Lordſhip hath towards your moſt Serene Queen, my Patroneſs, and the common good of her Realms, I reſolve to beſeech you to do me the Favour to preſent to her moſt Serene Majeſty the humble Atteſtation of the Will which I have to ſerve her; if God do me that Favour to reſtore me to my Kingdoms of *Portugal*, with the Help and Aſſiſtance of her Serene Majeſty, as I have hoped in her Greatneſs. So that your Illuſtrious Lordſhip being my *Mecænas* with her moſt Serene Majeſty, you may preſent my poor, but thankful Offer to her.

“ I will never make Peace, League nor Accord with King *Philip*, without her Knowledge, and her Conſent. Whenſoever her moſt Serene Majeſty ſhall make War, either Offenſive or Defenſive with the ſaid King, I will aſſiſt her with all the Force, and Succour that ſhall be in my Power.

“ The Fleet of her moſt Serene Majeſty and her Subjects, which, with the Leave and Order of her Majeſty, ſhall make War with the ſame King, ſhall have free Acceſs to all the Ports of my Kingdom and Dominions, both in *Portugal*, and in *Africa* and *Aſia*, and in *Guinea*; and ſhall be treated and entertained in the ſame, as her own natural Subjects and Brethren. And from thence they ſhall exerciſe all that Hoſtility which they ſhall pleaſe to make againſt the ſame and the Subjects. And they ſhall have Proviſion and Ammunition, which can come from the ſaid Parts, for her Money, as to her own natural People. The *Engliſh*, which, with her Serene Majeſties Leave, ſhall go into *Portugal* upon the Occaſion of their Merchandize and Buſineſs, ſhall live there, and ſhall have a *Conſul* of her own Nation; which ſhall be Judge among them of all Occurrences, as well Criminal, as Civil, without my Nations meddling with any of their Matters.

“ When they ſhall make a Houſe of Contraction of the Spicery of the *Eaſt Indies*, from *Portugal*, I will eſtabliſh it in this Kingdom of *England*. And for the Service of her Majeſty they ſhall have a Part of the Sea for her beſt Convenience through both theſe Kingdoms.

“ To all Strangers and Merchants that ſhall aſſiſt in Ships, Plate or other Things neceſſary for the Voyage, I will appoint, and gratify them according to the Contracts which they ſhall make with me.

“ The *Engliſh* which ſhall accompany me, or upon ſome Occaſion ſhall be willing to live in *Portugal*, and all other my Realms and Dominions, ſhall have in their Houſes Freedom to uſe the Exerciſe of their Religion particularly; and in no wiſe ſhall the *Inquiſition* have any Superiority over them.

“ This, and whatever elſe ſhall ſeem good for the Service of her Majeſty, I am ready to do, upon this Condition, That her moſt Serene Majeſty may be ſerved; and to grant reciprocally a Friendſhip, and a correſpondent Fraternity in the ſame Articles. So as in my Judgment I do eſteem, it may concern her Service, as I

“ ſhall treat by Word of Mouth with your Illuſtrious Lordſhip, or with her Majeſty here, and when ſhe ſhall be ſerved.

“ And further, I beſeech her moſt Serene Majeſty, that ſhe will command all her Subjects by an inviolable Law, that between them and my Subjects there may be a perpetual and reciprocal Friendſhip and Concurrence, that in no wiſe may be expoſed or troubled by Sea, nor by Land. Which Thing will be the Occaſion of perpetual Union.

“ Moſt Illuſtrious Lord, I beſeech your Lordſhip to excuſe the Trouble which I may chance to give you with theſe ill compoſed Lines; ſince the Occaſion of them was the moſt ſincere Will, which I have to her moſt Serene Majeſty; and in the mean Time commending me to the good Favour and Grace of your Lordſhip.

“ I beſeech God to give you long and happy Life. This I cauſed to be ſealed, that your Lordſhip may be more ſecure of my Promiſe. From *London*, the 23d of *Octob.* 1588.

R E Y.

Theſe Articles, and the Queens Acceſs to them, produced that noble Expedition the next Year, *viz.* 1589. under Sir *John Norris* and Sir *Francis Drake*, together with other private Gentlemen, at their own Charges, the Queen lending them ſome of her Ships, *Don Antonio* being with them: When they aſſaulted *Groyn*, and took *Penicha*; the Caſtle whereof ſurrendred to *Don Antonio*. And afterwards ſailed thence, and aſſailed *Lisbon*. All which I leave to our Hiſtorian to relate.

And let me here inſert an Information brought into *England*, taken from an *Engliſh* Gentleman in the *Spaniſh* Service; that will ſhew what great Reaſon the Queen ſtill had to ſtand upon her Guard againſt *Spain*: Shewing the Reſolution her implacable Enemy had to ſet upon her the next Year, or Years, with greater Strength and Violence. I ſhall but tranſcribe the Paper as I found it among the Lord Treaſurers *MSS.*

“ *A Declaration of one* Pitts, *the 29th of* July 1589.

Intelligence of the King of Spains *Preparations.* MSS. Burghlian.

“ The 14th Day of *July*, 1589. there arrived in St. *Maloes* one *Giles Billet*, an *Engliſh* Man, who then came from the Court of *Spain*, as he ſaid, bringing with him great Store of Money, (as it was told me by a Man of *Vittore*, called *Henry de Geanes*, a Proteſtant) to buy Victuals and Munition for the *Spaniſh* Kings Fleet, which he ſaid, comes for *England* this next Year.

“ The ſaid *Billet* further reported, That there are making ready Twenty great Ships at St. *Androes* for the ſaid Fleet. That Sir *William Stanley*, [a notable Traitor that had betrayed a ſtrong Town in *Flanders* to the *Spaniard*] “ is ſent for out of *Flanders* to go in the ſaid Fleet. That the Country of *Spain* hath given to their King 14 Millions of Money, towards the ſetting forth of the ſaid Fleet. That the King of *Spain* hath ſworn, not to leave

“ himſelf worth a Candleſtick that ſtood on the Table, till he had “ been revenged of *England*.

“ He told further in my Hearing (ſaith the Informer) that if he “ might procure his further good Will in *England*, and have ſome “ Matters of his ended; thereupon he would come for *England*, “ and would certify the Council of ſuch Matters, touching the “ *Spaniſh* King; as he would deſerve well at their Hands thereby.

“ That alſo the ſaid *Giles Billet* doth ſpeak very much of Mr. “ *Richard Burley*; and is in great Credit in the Court of *Spain*. “ And the ſaid Mr. *Burley* was in the *Spaniſh* Fleet the laſt Year. “ And at his Return home again, as before he had 20 Crowns a “ Month, he hath now 40 Crowns a Month.

This Informer *Pitts* added, “ That the ſaid *Billet* had been at “ the Court of *Spain* three Years, and ſeemed to have been a Merchant. “ And that at his Arrival at St. *Maloes* he came aſhoar in “ Mariners Apparel; and the next Day he went in his Silk and “ Sattin very brave. And ſaid, that before his Return to *Spain*, “ he was to go to *Newhaven*: [to gather undoubtedly more Ships and Forces thence, or to aſſiſt in the *Holy League*.]

Diſcourſe at Rome, *about the* Spaniſh *Invaſion.*

Let me add the following Memorial of this *Spaniſh* Victory, vainly blazed over the World; that when it was known to be but a falſe Report, and the Truth came to be known as far as *Rome*; ſome Diſcourſe happened there about it between two Perſons, one an *Engliſh* Man, whether a Traveller, or a Spy, rather; and the other; whoſe Name was *Joh. Dutche*, and formerly had been of the Queens Guard, but now advanced to the Honour of Macebearer to Cardinal *Allen* at *Rome*.

Cardinal Allens *Macebearer.*

Of which Place under the Queen, he would glory, that his *Dame* of *England* (for ſo he always termed her Majeſty) did often ſay, that *Dutch*, her antient Servant, was the only Pilgrim ſhe had beyond the Seas.

The Occaſion of their Acquaintance was, That this Traveller had a Chamber in the Houſe where this Officer of the Cardinal inhabited. What the Particulars of ſome of their Diſcourſes were, this Perſon gave Intelligence afterwards to the Lord Treaſurer; as I find them among that Counſillors Papers. Some of theſe I ſhall briefly rehearſe.

The Gentleman and this *Dutche* being together in Company on St. *Peters* Eve at *Peter Montauro*. (where, they ſay, that Apoſtle was martyred) to behold the Fire-works that Night diſcharged from the Caſtle St. *Angelo*, they fell into Talk of the Overthrow of the *Spaniſh Armado*, and of the Kings Loſſes ſuſtained in that Attempt. When *Dutch* told him, that he had heard the Cardinal ſay, that the King gave great Charge to the Duke of *Medina*, Admiral of his *Armado*, and the reſt of his Captains, that they ſhould by no Means harm the Queen, when taken, [as if they had been ſure of her and Victory beforehand:] And that after they had taken her, to look well to the Cuſtody of her; and that the Duke, as ſoon as might be, ſhould convey her to *Rome*, [to be brought as it were in Triumph there] that the Pope might diſpoſe of her, as it ſhould pleaſe him. And what the Pope ſhould have done to her, beſides the putting her into the *Inquiſition*, we are left to gueſs.

King Philip *intends to ſend the Queen to the Pope.*

ANNO 1588.

At another Time being together at a certain Place between the Caſtle of St. *Angelo* and St. *Peters*, where there was a great Number of fine Pictures hanging up, (belonging to ſome great Painter) of Emperors, Kings, Queens, and other Noblemen, and Women, (all done by ſome great *Italian* Painter.) Among the reſt was the preſent King of *Spain*, and next him happened to be placed Sir *Francis Drake:* Who had made himſelf famous through the World for his Valour and notable Succeſſes againſt the King, eſpecially his late *Armado*. At the Sight of this, the Cardinals Mace-bearer was enraged with many paſſionate *Italian* Words, as an inſufferable Indignity offered to that great Catholick King. And this was not all, but Notice was immediately given by him to the Cardinal at the Palace; and a Meſſenger diſpatched back to put *Drakes* Picture down; though the Painter himſelf out of fear preſently did it: And notwithſtanding came to trouble about it. 'Tis well, if *Drake* were not now burnt in *Effigie*.

Sir Francis Drakes *Picture at* Rome.

This Intelligencer alſo obſerved, how the Picture of Queen *Elizabeth* was not extant among all this Shew of Kings and Princes, being not permitted at *Rome* that Honour, to have ſo much as her Picture there publickly ſeen.

A great Triumph in Rome.

He related alſo from the ſaid *Dutche*, that at the firſt News of the *Invincible Armada* brought to *Rome*, there had been a great Triumph there, for the Taking of her Majeſty, and ſubduing this Realm. And that the ſaid *Engliſh* Cardinal then made a great Feaſt, and invited to it all the *Engliſh*, *Scots* and *Iriſh* then at *Rome*.

The Purpoſes of the King of Spain.

Other Informations this Gentleman gave of Diſcourſes he had heard at *Liega* and *Liſle* in his Travels: Namely, concerning the King of *Spain*, and his Counſils and Counſillors: What his Purpoſes now were, and what Deſigns were now in Hand concerning *Scotland*. That meeting with Dr. *Marſhal*, a *Scotch Jeſuit*, at *Liege*, he told him, that King intended to invade *Scotland*, in order to oblige the King of *Scots* to bring in the Catholick Religion in that Land. And of his going againſt the King of *Navarr*, a Proteſtant King, for the ſettling a Catholick King in *France*. And that for theſe Purpoſes *Spain* depended upon great Sums of Money from Pope *Sixtus:* But that his Death prevented. What Talk likewiſe he met with abroad concerning the Wiſdom and Policy of the Queens Lord Treaſurer and other of her Council; and of their Advantage over the King of *Spain* and his Counſillors, in regard of their Quickneſs and Expedition of their Buſineſs, and ſecret carrying on of their Deſigns and Purpoſes. Whereas the Council of *Spain* gave out now what they would do a Year hence, *&c.*

Numb. LVII.

All theſe are but brief Hints of this notable Paper, which muſt not be deprived of a Room in the *Appendix*. The whole whereof there I have tranſcribed from the Original.

Cott. *Libr.* Julius *F. 6.*

And having told ſo much of the Enmity between *Spain* and *England*, the Queen being ſtill on the Defence, before I go off from this bright Part of her Hiſtory, it will be worth ſhewing the Juſtice of her Proceedings againſt that injurious King. And that I ſhall take from a Paper found among the *MSS.* in the *Cotton* Library. Which Paper I verily believe was of the Lord *Burghleys* own compoſing;

poſing; one very well acquainted with the Caſe from the very Beginning. It was occaſioned from a railing Libel againſt the Queen, with reſpect to her Dealing with King *Philip*; and her Aſſiſtance given to the *Low Countries*. The particular Tranſactions all along between both Princes, will receive much Light hence. And it bare this Title, *Proceedings between* Spain *and* England. This Paper being ſomewhat long, I choſe to diſpoſe of in the *Appendix*.

[Numb. LVII.]

A Parliament. Speeches made there.

In this dangerous Time the Parliament (that had been prorogued) was thought neceſſary to be called together again: Chiefly about the *Spaniſh* Quarrel; the Queen, watchful, and her Council prudently ſtanding on their Guard, in the Proſpect of ſo implacable an Enemy, as that King. And however ſucceſsful ſhe had hitherto been againſt him, a large Subſidy was therefore thought neceſſary to be raiſed of her Subjects for this Purpoſe, to ſerve againſt him, not only the next Year, but ſome Years after. That they might not be ſurprized, if unprovided. The Subſidy required was for 4 Fifteens and 10ths, Payable for four Years, the 20th of *November* yearly. Two Subſidies likewiſe in four Years, the 12th of *February* yearly, for the better Proviſion ready againſt the *Spaniard*. This Bill was brought in the 17th of *March*; diſguſted by many, and what was ſpoken againſt it by ſome of the Members, I collect from an authentick Paper among the Lord Treaſurers MSS. One of them had theſe Expreſſions,

A Speech againſt the Subſidy.

“As all Honour and Reverence is to be given to the firſt Founders and Furtherers of any laudable or profitable Art, Science or Cuſtom; ſo are the firſt Forgers of any new, unneceſſary, or ſnaring Law or Cuſtom, moſt juſtly to be reproved of all their Poſterity.

“If a Benevolence ſhould be demanded hereafter, it would be much leſs by reaſon of this Subſidy, [ſo large in reſpect of ſo many Years payable.]

“I find only two Caſes, which may neceſſarily impel us thereto. The one, our Sovereigns Commandment. The other, a deſperate, or at leaſt dangerous Eſtate of our Commonwealth. Which cannot by any other Means be relieved.

“It was well ſaid of *Seneca*, *Bis dat, qui cito dat*. So it was well ſaid of another, In the inflicting of Puniſhment, that *Dilatio pœnæ* is *Duplicatio pœnæ*. And of another, That the irrevocable Sentence of Death being pronounced, it is *Miſericordiæ genus, citò occidere*.

“*Anno* 39 *H.* 3. A Parliament was called, to let the Commons underſtand the Kings Need of Money for diſcharge of his Debts, and to require their Aid towards the ſaid Debt. But denied of the Commons. For that that Demand was greater than had been accuſtomed.

“*Anno* 15. [25] of *Henry* 8. the Spirituality granted half their Revenues, payable in five Years. Of the Commons was this demanded by the Cardinal *Wolſey*, and furthered by the Speaker, Sir *Thomas More*, 4 Shillings in the Pound for Goods and Lands; or in a groſs Sum, 800,000 *l.* Committees were ſent to the Cardinal, to entreat him to perſuade the King, that he would accept a leſs

ANNO 1588.

“ a leſs Sum. He anſwered, that he would rather have his Tongue “ plucked out, *&c.* The Parliament notwithſtanding agreed to a “ Subſidy of 12 *d.* in the Pound, for all under 20 *l.* 2 *s.* from 20 “ to 50. And 3 *s.* above 50 *l.* The Commons threatned them, “ not to grant 4 *s.* leſt they could not go home in Peace.

“ *Fuage*, *Fumage*, or *Chimnage* denied to King *Edward* 3. Seeing “ it is *tributum*, and not *impoſitum*. Seeing it cannot be *Subſidium*, “ becauſe it is not *Opportunum* —— *Malorum Senſus accreſcit* “ *die*—— *Leve eſt miſeriam ferre*; *perferre grave*.

“ Samuel *Tributum*, *pro pœnâ* Iſraelis proponit. [by that Word meaning a continued, yearly Tax.]

“ *Pœna apud Inferos ideo miſerrima*, *quia perpetua*. If the *Invaſion* “ hold not, yet the Money to be paid. *Id juſtiſſimum eſt*, *quod* “ *neceſſarium*.

“ *Pia ſunt*, *quæ Civibus imperantur Tributa*, *ſine quibus Civitas* “ *ipſa funditus ſit interitura*.

“ *Multuum jam a ſubditis acceptum*. [Meaning the Loan that “ the Queen had already taken of her Subjects, to enable her againſt “ any ſudden Attempt of the Enemy.]

“ *Cum Hannibal* Italiam *bellis vexaret*, *Senatus nova Tributa* “ Subditis *imperari noluit*. *Nihil enim hoſtibus nos prementibus jam* “ *periculoſum*. —— *Mutuum quàm tributum*, *melius*, *&c.* The “ many more grave Sentences, and Allegations, from antient Writers, produced by this learned Member of the Houſe, I omit; only ſetting down the Words, with which he concluded.

“ *Principis Divitias in Subditorum opibus conſiſtere debere*---- “ *Singulorum Opes divitiæ* ſunt *Civitatis*. *Cic.*

“ *Diuturnitas temporis efficere poteſt*, *ut quod pernicioſo more &* “ *exemplo inveteravit*, *potentius ipſa Lege Dominetur*.

These are but ſome ſhort, imperfect Collections of this Members Speech, taken, as it ſeems, by ſome then preſent in the Houſe. But I have met with the whole Speech againſt this double Subſidy. The Argument whereof was, Whether it were neceſſary or convenient at this Time to tender unto her Majeſty ſuch a Subſidy to be paid in four Years, in reſpect of any Neceſſity thereof: But this ſpoken with all the Deference and Obedience imaginable towards her; in theſe Words, “ That if it were a Charge impoſed upon “ them by her Commandment, or a Demand, proceeding from her “ by way of Requeſt, he thought there was none among them all, “ either ſo diſobedient a Subject, or ſo unthankful a Man, in reſpect “ of the ineſtimable Benefits, which by her, and from her, they “ had received; which would not with frank Conſent, both of “ Voice and Heart, moſt willingly ſubmit himſelf thereunto, without “ any irreverend Enquiries into the Cauſes thereof. For that “ it was continually in the Mouths of them all, that their Lands, “ Goods and Lives were at their Princes Diſpoſal. ” I have tranſcribed the whole Speech from the Original Copy of him that ſpake it, as appeared by Interlinings and Corrections in ſome Places of it: It is ſomewhat long, but wiſe and learned, and ſeemingly loyal, and gives ſome Account of the preſent State of *England*, as of *Spain*. And therefore I give it a Place in the *Appendix*.

A Speech in Parliament againſt the Subſidy Bill.

Num. LVIII.

I ſhall

A Bill againſt Strangers.

I ſhall alſo mention another Bill, that more nearly concerned Religion, which cauſed much arguing: Namely, brought in againſt Strangers and Aliens, that came from abroad, from *Flanders*, *France*, and other Countries; generally ſuch as were Exiles for their Religion; and came into theſe Parts to avoid the cruel Perſecution inflicted upon them on the Account of their Adhering to the Proteſtant Religion. And here they lived very thriftily and followed their Trades, their Occupations and Traffick, for their Livelihood. But this diſguſted many *Engliſh* Traders, complaining thereof, as prejudicial to their Calling and Buſineſs: Eſpecially, the Retailers. One who had ſpoke for the paſſing of this Bill againſt the Strangers, in Behalf of our own Country, concluded with theſe Words: (Having reherſed all the Degrees of Conjunction and Society) *Omnes omnium Charitates una Patria complexa eſt. i. e.* All the Inſtances of Charity that can be ſhewn to others, Charity to ones Country comprehends them all.

A Speech in their Behalf.

Upon which Words another Member, who ſpake next, thus diſcanted, "That the very Name of his Native Country and Nation "was ſo pleaſant to his Ears, and ſo delightful to his Heart, that "he was compelled to ſubſcribe to that which had been ſpoken, *&c.* "But that on the other ſide, when in the Perſon of that Stranger, "he conſidered the miſerable and afflicted State of thoſe poor Exiles, "who together with their Countries, had loſt all, or the greateſt "Comforts of this Life; and ſo lay ſubject and expoſed to the "Wrongs and Injuries of the malicious and evil affected ---- That "the Condition of Strangers was, that they had *multa Hoſpitia*, "but *paucos amicos: i. e. many Harbours, but few Friends:* That "he was moved with a hearty Commiſeration of them, and felt in "himſelf a Sympathy and Fellow-ſuffering with them, *&c.* That "as he had laid before them his Affection to the Party, ſo now he "prayed he might with Brevity lay before them his Judgment. "That the Bill required, that it ſhould be enacted, That no Alien "born, and not being Deniſon, nor having ſerved as Apprentice "ſeven Years, ſhould ſell any Wares by Retail. Whereupon he "conſidered, how it might ſtand with the Grounds and Foundations of all Laws: Which Laws are the Laws of Nature, and the "Laws of God. And ſecondly, with the Profit and Commodities "of the Commonwealth. For the management of theſe Arguments I refer the Reader to the Speech which he ſhall find in the *Appendix*, as I tranſcribed it from an original Paper: Wherein will appear the hearty Love and hoſpitable Spirit the Nation had for theſe afflicted People of the ſame Religion with ourſelves. For this Bill againſt them did not paſs. At the End of the ſaid Speech are added ſeveral wiſe and weighty Sentences in *Latin*, in favour of the Strangers; ſpoken then as it ſeems in the Houſe. Which will be read there.

Numb. LIX.

To which former Bill againſt Strangers was added another Bill againſt their Children; that they ſhould pay Strangers *Cuſtoms.* But that alſo was daſhed at the ſecond Reading.

A Bill againſt Pluralities and Non-reſidences.

There was another Bill brought in, and laboured hard to be paſſed. Which was againſt *Pluralities* and *Non-Reſidences*, Which was brought into the Upper Houſe *March* the Tenth. And what

ANNO 1588.

the Sum and Contents of it was, I have from ſome Minutes thereof taken by the Lord Treaſurer under his own Hand Writing, whereupon we may depend. Thus endorſed:

MSS. Burghlian.

A Sum of the Act againſt Pluralite of Benefices with Cure of Souls, and Non-reſidence.

“ *The Conſiderations.* Maintenance of Divine Service. Preaching of the Sacred Word. The Diſcharge of the Duty of Paſtors, Encreaſe of Hoſpitality for the Poor. The Benefices and Livings Eccleſiaſtical may be employed to a greater Number.

“ *The Act.* If any Perſon, having no Benefice with Cure of Souls, ſhall hereafter take any Benefice with Cure, and after that ſhall take another with Cure; or if any having, at the End of this Seſſion, one or more Benefices with Cure, ſhall accept another ſuch Benefice, then immediately after Poſſeſſion there, his firſt ſhall be void; a Diſpenſation to the contrary notwithſtanding. And it ſhall be lawful for the Patron to preſent.

“ 2. All Perſons having any one Benefice with Cure of Souls ſhall be Reſident upon the ſame. And if he have mo than one, he ſhall be Reſident upon one of them. If any Perſon, not being in the Queens Service, keep not Reſidence, but ſhall be voluntarily abſent by the Space of three Months, at one or ſeveral Times in the Year, ſhall forfeit for every Month over and above the three Months, 10 *l.*

“ 3. If any Perſon, have at the End of this Seſſion mo Benefices than one, he ſhall maintain, where he ſhall not he Reſident, one ſufficient and able Perſon, authorized to preach Gods Word, and to inſtruct the People in the ſame, upon pain of 5 *l.* for every Months Defect.

“ 4. All Diſpenſation againſt any Proviſion of this Act, to be void.

“ 5. *Proviſo* for any Perſon to take any two ſmall Benefices, with Cure of Souls, being of Value 16 *l.* within three Miles.

On the Backſide of this Paper the beforeſaid Lord tranſcribed in favour of the ſaid Bill certain Paſſages out of ſome former Synod, not mentioned, *viz.*

“ *Sexta Seſſione Cap. primo, Monet, ut attendentes ſibi, & univerſo gregi, in quo Spiritus San. poſuit eos, regere Eccleſiam Dei, quam acquiſivit Sanguine ſuo, vigilent: Sicut Apoſtolus præcepit, in omnibus Laborem & Miniſterium ſuum impleant. Implere autem illud nequeunt, ſi greges ſibi commiſſos, mercinariorum more, deſerant; & ovium ſuarum cuſtodiæ minimè incumbant. Certiſſimum ſit, non admitti Paſtoris Excuſationem, ſilupus oves comedit, & Paſtor neſcit.*

“ *Vic. quart. Seſſio. Cap. 17. Eccleſiaſticus Ordo pervertitur, quando unus duas Eccleſias occupat.*

“ *Omne Beneficium quamlibet [quantumlibet] tenue, jure communi requirit Reſidentiam.*

Declaration of the Houſe of Lords.

At the Diſſolution of this Parliament, (which was near the Beginning of next Year, *March* the 29th, 1589.) there was a very Loyal Declaration prepared by the Houſe of Lords, to aſſiſt her Majeſty with their Lives, Lands and Goods in her Quarrel, with the King of *Spain:* Which I ſhall the rather add here, being omitted in *D'Ews Journal*; and of ſuch Remark. It was drawn up by the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, and thus endorſed, *The Heads of the Declaration and Offer to be made by the Lords, Spiritual and Temporal, to her Majeſty, of their Readineſs to ſerve her Majeſty in this Sort. To be delivered by Speech of the Lord Chancellor.*

To aſſiſt the Queen againſt Spain.

" Although upon great Conſiderations, appearing to them, of " the mighty and reſolute Determination of the King of *Spain*, in " making of open War againſt her Majeſty and the Realm for Gods " Cauſe, and to extirpate the Chriſtian Religion in this Realm: " And eſpecially upon the Sight of the laſt Years open Invaſion attempted againſt this Realm, with Intent to have conquered the " ſame: The Lords and the Commons of the Realm have willingly yielded to a kind of Subſidy, though in their Opinion not ſo " ſufficient to anſwer her Majeſties Charge to be ſuſtained, as were " requiſite. Yet for a further Manifeſtation and Declaration of their " moſt bounden Duties, both towards the Defence of her Majeſty " and the Realm againſt ſo mighty Attempts; and alſo to offend " her ſaid Enemy; they do offer with all manner of Duty and " Willingneſs to her Majeſty; that whenſoever ſhe ſhall find it meet " and profitable for her Realm to denounce an open War againſt the " ſaid King and his Adherence, they ſhall be ready with all their " Power, their Bodies, their Lives, Lands and Goods, to ſerve her " Majeſty therewith, as well by Offenſive Wars abroad, as Defenſive at home, againſt the ſaid King, and all his Adherents.

CHAP. XVII.

Conteſt between the Church of Norwich *and Sir* Thomas Shirley, *upon pretence of Concealment: A Book drawn up, in Order to Agreement. The Dean and Chapter diſallow thereof. And why. The Deans Application by Letters to the Lord Treaſurer. His Complaint of the ſaid Patentee. Articles of Agreement between them offered: But refuſed. The Lord Treaſurer takes the Caſe before him. The Concluſion of it. Endeavours to get the Archbiſhop of* Yorks *Houſe at* London. *His Conteſt with the Dean of* Durham. *This Archbiſhop dies. His Laſt Will. His Pedigree; And Poſterity. Some Paſſages in his Sermons, before the Queen; concerning the Reformation, Schiſm, ſpoiling the Church of its Revenues.* Cooper, *Biſhop of* Winton, *ſlandered by* Marprelate. *Vindicated. Endeavour of Long Leaſes from the Dean and Chapter of* Ely. *Dr.* Pern *the Dean, his Letter thereupon.* Scambler, *Biſhop of* Norwich, *condemns one for Hereſy. His Letter to Court for Execution. The Archbiſhop of* Dublin, *Lord Chancellor, commends Sir* W. Herbert, *for his promoting of Religion in* Ireland.

AND now we turn to the Church of *England*, and the Religion profeſſed therein; the main Ground of all the forementioned Malice towards the Queen and Kingdom.

A Plat for a new Eſtabliſhment of the Cathedral of Norwich.

I ſhall begin with the Church of *Norwich*. Between the Dean and Chapter of which Cathedral Church, and Sir *Tho. Shirley*, and other Patentees for *Concealments*, there had been long Conteſt. Whereof divers Things were related before under the Year 1586. But it ſtill depended. Yet it came ſo far, that *Popham*, the Queens Attorney General, had drawn up a Plat for eſtabliſhing that Church anew; with reſpect alſo to the Benefit of the ſaid Patentees. Which Writing he ſent to the Lord Treaſurer, encloſed in a Letter to him; importing, "That according to his Lordſhips Di-"rection, he had ſent a Plat concerning the re-eſtabliſhing of the "Church of *Norwich*. And that his Lordſhip might pleaſe to re-"form it, and amend, as ſhould ſeem beſt to him. Dated from the "*Middle Temple*, Jan. 24. 1586.

The Dean of the Church diſallows thereof.

But a new Controverſy aroſe from this Book then drawn up, and that by Warrant from the Queen, for putting an End to that Conteſt, under Terms of Agreement by both Parties. But it ſeems, it was not drawn after the Manner accorded between them, chiefly on the Churches ſide. So that when the Lord Treaſurer had ſent a Copy of the ſaid Book to Dr. *Gardiner*, the Dean, who, having been a long Time affected with the Gout, and ſo not able to mind Buſineſs, could not till now acquaint the ſaid Lord with his Thoughts thereof. Which he did by his Letter dated the 1ſt of *October*, from *Norwich:* Shewing therein, how different it was drawn in many Reſpects to what had been accorded between them. The Tenor of the Deans Letter I will give, as communicating more Light and Knowledge into this Matter.

His Letter to the Treaſurer.

“ That his Gout holding him with ſo great Extremity, almoſt an whole Year together, (though with ſome little Eaſe at ſundry Times) he could not attend upon his Honour, for the finiſhing of their long continued Troubles for the Lands of their Cathedral Church, *&c.* That in the mean Time Sir *Thomas Sherlow* [*Shirley*] had procured a Warrant from her Majeſty to his Honour and Sir *Walter Mildmay*, to finiſh the ſame; pretending an Agreement between them both, *viz.* Sir *Thomas* and the Dean. That in the Meeting they had before his Lordſhip at *Tybalds*, in *Auguſt* was Twelve-month [*viz.* 1587.] In Truth, my Lord, (ſaid the Dean) after divers Meetings of our learned Counſil, to obtain our Quietneſs, we did agree upon theſe Conditions; that the Patentees, and all the Intereſſed under them, ſhould ſurrender up into her Majeſties Hands, their ſeveral pretended Titles. And then her Majeſty poſſeſſed of the Whole, her Highneſs might be moved to paſs a Leaſe in Truſt to Mr. *Fanſhaw*, and Mr. *Osborn* [that had Places in the Exchequer or Treaſury] “ in Truſt of 600 *l.* by Year, of Lands within the Counties of *Suffolk* and *Norfolk* for 99 Years. And the Fermours in Poſſeſſion to have theſe, aſſured over unto them upon ſuch of the Patentees, as to your Honour ſhould ſeem convenient. And her Majeſty likewiſe might be moved, newly to erect and to endow our ſaid Church with all our Lands and Liberties; which the Prior and Monks had in Poſſeſſion the 30th Year of King *Henry* VIII.

“ But that contrary to this Agreement, a Book was drawn and engroſſed without their Privity, and ſent down under Mr. Atturney his Hand: And they [of the Church] commanded by Sir *Tho. Shirleys* Letters, either to ſurrender, or to ſend him an Anſwer, that they would not, that he might take another Courſe. He added, “ That he had anſwered his two ſeveral Letters. And he wiſhed to God, it would pleaſe his Honour to call for the Sight of them both: And he ſhould perceive by them, what great Cauſe they, poor Men [the Dean and Chapter] had to complain for their Church. Yet fearing, that Sir *Thomas* would not ſhew them, and would take ſome Courſe ſecretly, that might tend to their Prejudice, if not to their utter undowing, he was bold to move his Honour by the Bearer, Mr. *Edmund Suckling*, one of their Prebendaries, to ſtand ſo much their good Lord and honour-

ANNO 1588.

" ed Patron, as that nothing might paſs to the Hurt of their " Church, to the next Term, or to ſuch Time as it ſhould pleaſe " his Honour to command ſome of their Company to attend upon " his good Leiſure, *&c.*

" And in the mean Time he was bold to preſent to his Lordſhip, " the Copy of one of his ſaid Letters to Sir *Thomas*; whereby he " might underſtand the Reaſon, wherefore they could not allow of " Mr. Atturneys Book. Subſcribing

Your Honours for ever, as Duty bindeth me,

George Gardiner.

The Deans Letter to Sir Th. Shirley.

The Sum of which Letter to Sir *Thomas Shirley*, now ſent by the diligent Dean to the Lord Treaſurer to peruſe, I ſubjoin; wherein he told Sir *Thomas*, " That the Book engroſſed, which he " had ſent to him, in no Point agreed with the Book drawn at his " [the Deans] laſt being in *London*; and that as it varied much " from their Agreement; ſo it anſwered not her Majeſties gracious " Meaning in the Warrant under the Broad Seal. And that if " the ſame ſhould paſs in that Manner, it would not only be much " prejudicial to himſelf [Sir *Thomas*] but be a Spoil, and undoing " of their Church, and Poſterity. And therefore, that he ſhould " perſuade himſelf, that the ſame would never be received of him, " the preſent Dean and Chapter of *Norwich*; nor no Act would be " done by them by Surrender, or other Means for the ſtrengthening and allowing of the ſame Book.

" Then he proceeded to let Sir *Thomas* underſtand the groſs " Faults eſcaped in that Book, by following a Charter of King *Edwards*, too haſtily hatched, and clouted together at the firſt, to " the Spoil of that Church too. And laſtly, adding, that where " her Majeſty had referred the ordering of the whole Matter to the " Right Honourable the Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and Sir *Walter Mildmay*, as two Honourable Perſonages moſt indifferent, " they ſaw nothing done by them, or either of their Hands to the " Book. And then begged Sir *Thomas*'s Pardon, that they ſtayed " in a Matter of ſo great Weight:" Concluding with theſe Words to him, " Aſſure your ſelf of me, that I am, and always will be " a faithful Friend to Sir *Thomas Shirley*, and ſtand to my Agreement without wavering. Even ſo all the World ſhall not move " me to violate one jot of Duty that I owe to the Church, to which " I am bound by Oath. It was dated from *Norwich*, the laſt of *Septemb.* 1588.

And as Dr. *Gardiner* had found *Shirley* a ſtrange Man before againſt the Intereſt of that Church for his own Ends, ſo this ſtop of that Book ſo drawn up, gave great Diſguſt to him; pretending that they were but ſo many Trifles that were objected to the Book. Therefore to give more perfect Knowledge to the Lord Treaſurer what his Objections were, he haſtened up one of the Prebendaries to him with another Letter: Whereby he might underſtand how the Matter proceeded upon this Book, ſent to them to *Norwich*.

ANNO 1588.

This Letter will more particularly open the Complaint on the Churches Side.

The Import thereof was: “ That he had appointed Mr. *Caſtelton*, one of their Prebendaries, to attend his Honours good Pleaſure with all convenient Speed; and that, if he had been able any way to have travailed, he would, (moſt willingly his own lame Body) in this Service: And would ſo ſoon as God ſhould enable him. For that he could not ſee, how the Cauſe could receive any good End, unleſs ſome Body were preſent, that could perfectly inform his Honour of every Circumſtance; and how far the Matter had proceeded hitherto. Which none of their Company could do beſide himſelf, who had travailed ſo long as his Body was able to undergo that Travail: And that he had always found Sir *Thomas* a very ſtrange Man to deal withal; promiſing much, but of a contrary Mind to perform nothing; but ſeeking the perpetual Overthrow of their Church and Poſterity.

The Deans Objections to the Book.

The Deans Diligence.

Shirleys *Character.*

“ That the Book he had ſent down by his Servant, one *Gartwick*, [drawn up for the Settlement of their Church] razed and interlined, was by them of that Church peruſed. And then the Servant departed to his Maſter with this Anſwer, that they could not like of that Book for thoſe Reaſons which were contained in the Letter ſent him.

“ That hereupon he, the Dean, received an angry Letter from him; and withal *Shirley* returned him back his Letter, wherein he had made thoſe Objections with Truth and Credit. Then (as the Dean proceeded) let him ſay, [as it ſeems he did] that they were but *Cavillations*; and that his Book could not be excepted againſt.” But the Dean, uttering his different Judgment of the Book, writes thus; “ In the mean Time it muſt remain a very vile Book, penned for the utter undoing of our Church, and moſt contrary to her Majeſties Warrant and moſt gracious Meaning: As I ſhall [added the earneſt Dean] by Gods Help, moſt plainly prove before his Face. And I know, that all he can object againſt our Church, are indeed more *Cavillations*, and Matters of no Moment.

Shirleys *angry Words.*

“ That yet to procure their Peace, they were content to yield ſome Things, and a large Benefit unto him. Concluding, That he, and all his Company moſt humbly proſtrated themſelves at his Honours Feet: Beſeeching the ſame, as the only Patron of their Church, now miſerably diſtreſſed, to deliver them from the Extremity, that Sir *Thomas* imagined againſt them. And ſo with the Remembrance of their humble Duties, *&c.* This Letter was dated *Octob.* 4.

This, and what follows, may be worthy recording for the Church of *Norwich*'s grateful Remembrance of that Dean, and his good Service to it. Now what Terms of Agreement between the Church and the Patentees were, which was mentioned above, and which the Dean ſo much inſiſted upon, and the preſent Book now offered them to ſubſcribe, and ſo varying from, I have entred in the *Appendix*; being a Paper ſigned by the Dean himſelf, thus endorſed,

Numb. LX.

Articles

ANNO 1588.

Articles of Agreement between the Church and Patentees.

Articles of Agreement between the Dean and Chapter and the Patentees, drawn up by the Atturney and Sollicitor; and offered to the Dean: And ſhewing on what Terms he accorded.

They refer their Cauſe to the Lord Treaſurer.

Upon the aboveſaid Complaint of the Dean to the Lord Treaſurer, of this Book, ſo injurious to their Church, and his earneſt Appeal to him, to judge between both Parties; that Lord took it upon him, according to their Deſire. And thereupon gave Order, that the Dean, not being by reaſon of Sickneſs able himſelf to come up, ſhould ſend ſome of their Body to tranſact their Buſineſs before him. Whereupon in the Month of *November*, two of them, *viz. Caſtleton* and *Suckling*, had Commiſſion from the reſt ſo to do. With whom the careful Dean ſent another Letter to that Lord, with Warrant under their Chapters Seal, to proſecute the Cauſe of their Church: And by the Advice of his Lordſhip, and ſome other learned in the Law, to finiſh the Matter: Having found hard Meaſure (as he ſignified) from the Patentees: Divers of their Church Lands ſold away for ever: And one Parcel ſold to five ſeveral Perſons: Some violently entred upon, without Payment of Rent or Ferme: One had paid none, ſince the Controverſy began; the Houſes within the Cathedral Church offered to Sale; or Money taken beforehand, *&c.* And after a Relation of all this, they did moſt humbly beſeech his Honour, that they might ſeek for Succour under his Wing. The whole Letter I have thought worth preſerving among the other Papers of Note in the *Appendix*. Num. LXI.

The Concluſion of this Suit.

And having brought Matters thus far, the good Dean deceaſed the next Year, *viz.* 1589. And ſoon after, this long Suit ſeemed to come to an Iſſue and Concluſion: Nothing wanting to be done, but the Deciſion of the Lord Treaſurer, the Differences between both Parties being compremiſed: Sir *Tho. Shirley* petitioning the ſaid Lord for the ſame, both Parties agreeing upon the Points. I refer the Reader to the State of the Caſe now drawn up briefly; and the Patentees Petition at the End. See the *Appendix*. Numb. LXII. And ſo he ſeems to have a Leaſe granted him for the foreſaid Deans and Chapters Lands for 99 Years.

Endeavours to get the Archbiſhop of Yorks London Houſe from him.

As I have related ſeveral Hiſtorical Remarks of *Sandys*, that eminent Confeſſor, Biſhop and Archbiſhop of this Church; ſo I ſhall join to the reſt one or two more, which fell out this Year, which put a Period to his holy Life. A hard Demand, or Requeſt was made to this Archbiſhop of *York*; which was not the firſt Time ſuch uneaſy Applications were made to him, for the impairing of his Biſhoprick. It was required, that by Leaſe or ſome other way, he ſhould part with his Epiſcopal Houſe, ſituate in *London:* Which I ſuppoſe ſtood there where now are *York Buildings*. This Requeſt (for ſo he called it) had been made to him by the Queen herſelf, in Behalf, as it ſeems, of ſome of her Courtiers or Noblemen. But he then declared unto her, his unwillingneſs to do ſuch a Wrong to his Church, and which would be alſo ſuch a laſting Reflection upon him, and his Memory. And being now in his Dioceſs, the Requeſt was again renewed. But he was reſolute, not to yield. Yet writ his Mind to his Friend, the Lord Treaſurer; thinking, that ſome Words of his to the Queen, in repreſenting his Reſolution

tion tenderly, ſhe might paſs it over without much Diſpleaſure towards him. His Letter wrote in the Month of *June*, (which ſeemed to be one of his laſt Letters, for he died the next Month) was in theſe Words:

ANNO 1588.

His Reſolution thereupon.

" As for my Houſe at *London*, a Thing moſt unreaſonable is re-" queſted of me. I cannot well deſire your Lordſhips Help herein, " yet one Word of your Lordſhip to her Majeſty, would do me " much good. I cannot in Conſcience yield that Requeſt. I re-" main reſolute. I am only to entreat your Lordſhip to be a " Means, that I may ſo do without Offence unto her Majeſty. " Yet her Highneſs Speech unto me touching the ſelf ſame Matter, " hath been ſuch, that I am fully perſuaded, her Majeſty will not " deal againſt me in it. " And then making a ſad Reflection hereupon, uſed theſe Words: " Theſe be mervailous Times. The Pa-" trimony of the Church is laid open, as a Prey, unto all the " World. The Miniſters of the Word, the Meſſengers of Chriſt " are become *Contemptibiles omni populo*, and are eſteemed *tanquam* " *excrementa mundi*. This was foreſhewed, and in our Time per-" formed. It may be feared, God hath ſome great Work in Hand. " For this Ignominy is done unto himſelf, *&c.* Dated from *Southwel*, the 1ſt of *June* 1588.

Your Lordſhips moſt bound,

E. Ebor.

More is ſaid of this Matter in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*.

Diſſenſion between the Archbiſhop and Dean of Durham.

Yet another Trouble vexed this good Archbiſhop, now at the latter End of his Life; namely, a Conteſt between *Toby Matthew*, the Dean of *Durham*, and him. What the Cauſe was I know not; whether it were concerning the Viſitation of that Church, or ſomewhat elſe, uncertain to me. But the Archbiſhop ſeemed to have the Right of the Cauſe; and the Dean put to Shifts in maintaining his. But in this Diſcord he addreſt himſelf to the ſaid Lord in theſe Words, " My honourable good Lord; Sundry great Wrongs are " offered me, *&c.* What manifeſt Wrongs the Dean of *Durham* " offereth me, and by what indirect Dealings he proceedeth againſt " me, with a big Mind to maintain a bad Cauſe; and what Shifts " and Delays he uſeth, that his evil Cauſe come not to Trial, this " Bringer, your Servant, can declare unto you. " And the Archbiſhop might the rather betake himſelf to this Lord in this Difference between the Dean and him; the Deanry having been chiefly obtained by his Intereſt with the Queen on his Behalf. And ſo he gratefully profeſſed to the Treaſurer, ſoon after he became Dean; to be always ſenſible of his Favours. And ſo in a Letter to him, he promiſed, " That if any Defect ſhould happen at any Time in him " in the Diſcharge of that Duty, and coming to his Lordſhips Ear, " he beſeeched him to make him know it; and promiſed to be re-" formed by his Authority, and directed by his Wiſdom.

Dean of Durham to the Lord Treaſurer.

The Archbiſhop of Yorks Death.

This Archbiſhop died the 10th of *July* this Year; and was interred in the Choir of the Collegiate Church of *Southwel*, in *Nottinghamſhire*,

ANNO 1588.

Intitled Darby *and* Nottinghamſhires C. 34.

Book III *Ch.* 21.

tinghamſhire, under a fair Monument, with the *Effigies* of his Children, kneeling round the Sides of it. The Picture of which Monument remains in a Viſitation Book in the Heralds Office. The Epitaphical Inſcription thereon may be found tranſcribed at length in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. Which will explain his extraordinary Character. But his Laſt Will and Teſtament will further diſcover, from himſelf, the holy, and divine, the pious and humble Spirit of this excellent Prelate. Which inclines me, to let the Chriſtian Reader, (that deſires to look on the good Biſhops of that Age) to be acquainted with it. It will ſhew us what his Thoughts were of the Reformed Religion and Church eſtabliſhed among us, and of ſome Rites and Uſages therein, and of the Differences among the Profeſſors of the Goſpel on that Account. But being ſomewhat long, I leave it to be read in the *Appendix*; being an Authentick Copy of it, taken by the Pen of an exact Perſon.

Num. LXIII.

Rev. T. B.

The Archbiſhops Family and Poſterity.

The Archbiſhops Stock and Family (which was from S. *Bees* in *Cumberland*) was antient and worſhipful; and the Collateral Branches ſpread into the Counties of *Darby*, *Lancaſter*, *Bucks*, *Worceſter*, and *Kent*. He was ſecond Son of *George Sandys*, and *Margaret*, Daughter of *Dixon* of *London*; married *Cecilia*, Daughter of *Thomas Wilford*, of the County of *Kent*, Knight. His Children were, *Henry*, the eldeſt; *William*, his ſecond Son, Knight. His third Son was, Sir *Samuel Sandes*, of *Omberſley*, in the County of *Wigorn*, Knight; who married *Mary*, Daughter of *Colpeper*, of the County of *Kent*, who had *Edwin Sandes*, Knight, and a numerous Iſſue. Other Sons of his, were *George*, and *Miles* of *Wilberton* in the County of *Cambridge*, in the Iſle of *Ely*, Knt. and Bart. Beſides Daughters, *Heſter* and *Bridget*. A young Brother of our Archbiſhop was *Miles* of *Latymers* in the County of *Bucks*, Eſq; Clerk of the Crown to Queen *Elizabeth*, and died 1601. And left Sir *Edwin Sandes*, his Son and Heir: Dubbed in *Ireland* for his good Service there.

Her. Office. Certificate of Funerals. Camd.

Of this Family of *Sandes*, Sprange *William Sandes*, Knt. firſt Lord *Sandes of the Vine*, in the Reign of *Henry* VIII. *An.* 1523. Who was *Camerarius Hoſpitii Regis*, i. e. Chamberlain of the King's Houſhold. Beſides, of the ſame Family were Collaterals numerous.

His Education.

The Archbiſhops Education was in St. *Johns* College, *Cambridge*, where he proceeded Maſter of Arts: And was afterwards Proctor of that Univerſity, and Vicechancellor; and was preferred to be Maſter of *Katharine Hall* there: As appears by a Catalogue (ſtill remaining) of learned Men, Benefactors, *&c.* of the ſeveral Colleges, given in to the Queen, by that Univerſity, when ſhe honoured them with her Preſence; which was in the Year 1564. and of the Fellows of that Houſe.

Rev. T. Baker S. Th. B.

The Archbiſhops Deſcription of the Reformation.

And now for a Farewel of this Venerable Archbiſhop, I will leave, for a Memorial of him, ſome Periods of a Sermon or two, preached upon ſome ſpecial Occaſions. And the rather, becauſe they will tend to enlighten the Hiſtory of the *Engliſh* Church in thoſe Times. In one of them preached before the Queen, he thus deſcribed the *Reformation*, with the Queens Influence therein.

“ Our

ANNO 1588.

"Our gracious Governour laboured moſt earneſtly to cleanſe this "Ground, [*i. e.* the Vinyard of the Church of *England*] and to "purge it; had cauſed the Stones to be picked out, Brambles and "Briars to be pulled up, all Rubbiſh, and whatſoever was hurtful, "to be removed. The Den of Thieves to be diſperſed: Buyers "and Sellers of Popiſh Traſh; Monks, Friers, Maſs-mongers, with "like Miſcreants to be hurld, and whipt out; the ſtumbling Stones "of Superſtition, the Baggage of Mens Traditions, with all Monuments of Idolatry, to vaniſh, and Popery to be caſt out of the "Houſe of God and Vinyard of the Lord. So that the Field of "God is cleared, the Vineyard cleanſed, the Church purged; "ready for the Seed to be ſown, and the Vine to be planted. And "all this without Reſiſtance or Tumult. It was the Kingdom of "God, and it was marvailous to as many as conſidered it.

And then concerning the Queens Hand in this Reformation, thus he went on: "Our ſkilful Houſholder, our wiſe Governor, hath "planted in this our Vinyard, neither Thorns nor Thiſtles, but "the true Vine, *Chriſt*, growing in the Hearts of the Elect. This "Vine hath been diligently watered with the Dew of Gods Truth "ſincerely preached; it hath been cheriſhed with the Sacraments, "reverently adminiſtred according to his Will. It hath been underpropped with the Countenance of Authority, and Defence of "zealous Chriſtian Magiſtrates; pruned with the two-edged Sword "of Gods Spirit, working by the Miniſtry of his Servants; who, "with the ſweet Promiſes of the Goſpel have reared up the drooping Branches over-burthened with Sin, and the ſharp Threatnings "of the Law; have cut off thoſe laſcivious, wild Boughs of Wickedneſs. No Flock better fed, no People more inſtructed, and "Vinyard in the World more beautiful, or goodly to behold, *&c.*

For a further Account of this Church, and the Diſcipline and Government of it, take it in theſe his Words. "This Vineyard ſo "prepared, this Vine ſo planted, watered and underſet, hath alſo "been ſtrongly hedged and fenced with godly Laws, of good Diſcipline; to put back all Enemies, to puniſh all Tranſgreſſors, to "bridle the Unruly, and to keep Men in Order; that the Church "of God may live in all Tranquility, with all Piety and Honeſty. "No Church under Heaven more enriched with Treaſures and "Gifts of God.

The Bleſſings and Benefits accompanying this Church, are thus further deſcribed: The Ground where this Vinyard is planted, "hath brought forth many goodly and pleaſant Grapes. The "Goſpel hath chaſed away walking Spirits. It hath caſt out Devils; baniſhed much Ignorance and Blindneſs; put horrible "Blaſphemy in manner to flight; utterly cleanſed that Sink, the "*Stews*, [a Place near *London*, of open Wickedneſs and Uncleanneſs:] "made vain and filthy Songs leſs current than they have "been in former Times, and cauſed Sin to be more ſhunned. But "one pleaſant Grape, eſpecially the Goſpel, the Word of Reconciliation, hath brought forth; and that is, the ſweet Fruit of "Peace: Peace towards God, and Peace among ourſelves.----The "God of Peace hath done this for us, to our ſingular Commodity

“ and Benefit; that he hath given Peace in our Days. *England*
“ never had ſo long taſted the like.

His Diſſuaſive from Schiſm.

His Diſſuaſive from Schiſm for ſome *Rites* uſed in this Reformed
Church, ran in theſe Words in another Sermon preached before the
Queen. “ And here we have to praiſe God, that in publick Doc-
“ trine touching the Subſtance of Religion, we all agree in one
“ Truth; we all build upon one Foundation, Chriſt *Jeſus*, ſlain
“ and offered up for our full Redemption, according to the Doctrine
“ of the Scriptures. So much the greater Pity is it, that there
“ ſhould be ſuch Diſſent in Matters of ſmall Importance, Rites and
“ Circumſtances. That by Contentions in ſuch Things the Courſe
“ of the Goſpel ſhould be hindred, Chriſt's Adverſaries ſtrength-
“ ned, and his Church offended. The Miniſtry cannot be well exe-
“ cuted without her *Rites*. Which *Rites* are left indifferent to
“ every Policy. So that they be not diſagreeing to the Word; ſo
“ that they tend to Edification; ſo that they be ſeemly, and accord-
“ ing to decent Order.

Rites of the Church, what.

“ Be it granted, that ſome Rites upon ſome Conſiderations might
“ be bettered, or omitted; yet can I not ſay, neither any Man, I
“ ſuppoſe, can prove, that any Thing is ſet down to be obſerved
“ in the Church, wicked, or contrary to the Word. It were
“ ſcarce Wiſdom, when as in many Years a beautiful and a coſtly
“ Houſe is builded, if a Window be ſet a little awry, or ſome
“ ſmall Eye-ſore do appear, in reſpect thereof to diſturb the whole
“ Houſe, to pull it down, and lay it flat with the Ground. For
“ every Change being ſo full of Peril, ſurely, theſe great Altera-
“ tions, upon light Advice; theſe new Commonwealths, howſo-
“ ever they be ſhaddowed with the pleaſible Name of *Reformation*,
The Platformers Reformation.
“ yet in ſeeking (for undoubtedly this is ſought, and that by many)
“ to have the Patrimony of the Church divided, mangled and em-
“ paired, they threaten the utter Overthrow of Learning and Re-
“ ligion. For take any Livings, at which this Axe eſpecially
“ ſtriketh, and ye take away Learning, and ye overthrow Teaching.
“ Take away Teaching, and what ſhall become of the Church of
Prov. 29.
“ Chriſt. Where there is no Viſion, there the People cannot chooſe
“ to come to decay.

The Right of Miniſters Maintenance.

“ There is no State, (no, not the State of a Prince excepted) to
“ whom Fear, Honour, Obedience and Tribute is due, that may
“ more rightly challenge a competent and ſufficient Living, than
“ the Miniſters of the Word of God. They ſeem to have put out
“ the very Light of Nature in themſelves, who repine at the rea-
“ ſonable Maintenance of them that miniſter before the Lord in
“ theſe ſanctified Labours. For who doth plant a Vinyard, and
“ doth not eat of the Fruit thereof? Or who feedeth a Flock, and
“ eateth not of the Milk of the Flock. Mark, how the Scriptures,
“ both in the Law and in the Goſpel, do beat upon this Point. In
1 Cor. 4.
“ the Law it is ſaid, *Thou ſhalt not muzzle the Mouth of the Oxe.*
“ *Doth God take care for Oxen?* No, his Care is for us. For our
“ Cauſe it is, that he hath ſaid, *The Labourer is worthy of his*
“ *Hire*. For our Cauſe he hath ordained, that they which preach
“ the Goſpel ſhould live of the Goſpel. He had a Care of his

" Church. And therefore gave Charge, *Let him that is taught in* " *the Word, make him that taught him partaker of all his Goods.* " This is large, yet but reaſonable. *For if we have ſown unto you* " *ſpiritual Things, is it a great Matter, if we reap your carnal* " *Things?* Is it much to make us partakes of all your Goods, *&c.* " It was foreſeen, no doubt, by the Spirit, how Gods Portion ſhould " be pinched: How the Miniſters of the Word ſhould be contemned; how injuriouſly Men, in theſe laſt uncharitable Days, would " ſeek for the Havock and Spoil of the Church.

1 Tim. 4. Gal. 6.

This moved this moſt Reverend Man, now he was preaching before the Queen, (who wanted not for Solicitation for ſuch Injuries) in ſo large and ample Sort to ſpeak of Maintenance and Honour due to the Miniſters. Adding, " That if any were ſlow and wretchleſs " in doing his Office: If there be any Idol Shepherd, that feedeth " himſelf only, and not his Flock; let him be reformed, or removed. But for the Fault of a few, that the whole State ſhould " be ſubverted, and the Patrimony of the Church of Chriſt " ſpoiled and devoured, it were very hard. No Prince nor People, Chriſtian or Heathen, would ever conſent to ſuch a Thing " without Sacrilege.

And returning to the Differences then among thoſe of the ſame Reformed Church, he concluded thus: " Well, as we are at Unity " in Subſtance of Religion, ſo God grant, that at length in theſe " Things alſo we may agree, and be as one, even as becomes the " Congregation of Chriſt. Which is a Society, linked and knit together; not ſundred by Diviſion, nor rent in Pieces by variety " of Opinions and Judgments.

Thus this good Archbiſhop ſpake his Mind concerning ſuch as endeavoured to impoveriſh the Church, and the Miniſters of it; as it had been before in the Times of Popery by *Impropriations:* As he fell in another Sermon, upon the Need of Preachers in thoſe Northern Parts of the Kingdom: Uſing theſe Words, " The Mother City of the Realm [*London*] is reaſonably furniſhed with " faithful Preachers: Certain other Cities, not many in Number, " are bleſſed too, though not in like Sort. But the ſilly People " of the Land otherwhere, eſpecially in the *North* Parts, pine " away and periſh for want of this ſaving Food, they are much decayed for want of *Propheſy*. Many there are that hear not a " Sermon in ſeven Years, I might ſay ſafely, ſeventeen. Their " Bloud will be required at ſome Bodies Hand.

Want of Preachers in the North.

" And why doth the Country want Preachers? The People pay " Tithes of that they have. Therefore there muſt needs be ſufficient to maintain them. If Things were well ordered, this " Sequel were good. But the chiefeſt Benefices were by the Pope " long ſince impropriated unto Monks: Which devoured the Fruits, " and gave a ſilly Stipend unto a poor Sir *John*, to ſay Maſs. And " as they left it, ſo we find it ſtill. Where Livings were not impropriated by the Pope, there they are for the moſt Part ſo handled, that Patrons maintain themſelves with thoſe Tithes which " the People give; and Miniſters have that which the Patrons leave. " ——To take from them that live idly and ſuperſtitiouſly in the

Impropriations firſt made by Popes.

Patrons.

“Church, they plead it to be lawful; becauſe thoſe unprofitable Members were unworthy to enjoy the Fat of the Earth. But when Abbies were taeen up, and other Profits gone, now as greedy Cormorants they ſeize alſo upon the Church of Chriſt. It is not fit, forſooth, [ſay they] that Men ſanctified unto Heavenly Things, ſhould be over-incumbred with theſe earthly Commodities. And therefore, even of great Devotion, and as they will eaſe the Church of theſe her Burthens, *&c.* Thus by Men that cannot ſtand without the Fall of the Church of God, all Means are invented to begger the Miniſtry. A Deviſe, no doubt, of Satan, and a Practice of his Imps, to cauſe a Famine of the Bread of Life, by ſtarving the Ox that ſhould tread out the Corn; and to withdraw Gods People from ſeeking the Lord, by weakning and diſcouraging ſuch, as ſhould guide them in the Way of Life.” Thus did the zealous Archbiſhop repreſent publickly theſe Wrongs to the Diſcouragement of the Miniſtry: And which he himſelf had felt and ſtruggled with.

The Biſhop of Wincheſter *ſlandered.*

To proceed to what I have to add concerning ſome others of the Epiſcopal Order, falling out this Year. One of theſe was *Cooper,* formerly Biſhop of *Lincoln,* now of *Wincheſter.* Somewhat of whoſe Character we here take Notice of, by occaſion of a baſe, unworthy Slander of him by *Penry,* the Author of *Martin Marprelate,* a Book levelled againſt the Biſhops. Who in one of his ſcurrilous Libels, had much undervalued this Biſhops Learning and good Abilities: And, “That he was a very Dunce, and not able to defend an Argument; but till he came to the Pinch, he would cog and face it out, *&c.*” The good Biſhop being thus openly in Print abuſed, thought fit, in a ſeaſonable Book by him ſet forth about this Time, thus modeſtly to give ſome Account of himſelf, in theſe Words:

Admonition to the People of England. *p.* 77.

His true Character.

“That as for that Reproach he would not much ſtrive with them. That he had not uſed, he thanked God, to vaunt himſelf of great Learning, neither did he diſdain to be accounted unlearned of theſe Men: Who many Years ſince contemned Biſhop *Jewel,* as a Man of no deep Learning; and even of late Days could ſay, that *Eraſmus* was no Divine. But, (the ſaid Biſhop ſubjoined) that his Prayer was, that the ſmall Meaſure of Knowledge that it pleaſed God to give him in the Continuance of Fifty Years Study, might be employed to the Glory of God, and the Benefit of his Country. That it was known forty five Years ſince, that he was Maſter of Arts, and Student of Divinity, and diſputed in that Faculty. That ſince which Time he had never been drawn from the Exerciſe of good Learning. And that this was his greateſt Comfort, that ſince he was a young Man in *Magdalen* College in *Oxford,* he had been brought up in the Love of the Goſpel; and was reaſonably able to confirm his Conſcience, and repreſs his Adverſary, not only by the Holy Scripture, but alſo by the Writings of the antient Fathers, and the beſt Authors of this Age, ſince the renewing of the Goſpel; as, he ſaid, he had many honeſt and learned Men, Witneſſes, then alive.

A N N O
1588.

Leaſes and Lands of the Church of Ely, *endeavoured to be got.*

During the Vacancy of the rich Biſhoprick of *Ely*, there wanted not Applications to the Queen, and ſome of her Court, for ſome of the Revenues of it upon long Leaſes. As there was one Letter the laſt Year obtained from the Queen to the Dean and Chapter, for *Aſhley*, Eſq; a Servant of her Majeſty, for the Manors of *Dunnington*, *Thriplow*, and the Parſonage of *Hinckſton*. Which Letter of the Queens was accompanied with another from Secretary *Walſingham*. So again this Year the Lord Treaſurer ſent his Letter to the ſaid Dean and Chapter of *Ely*, for the Leaſe of *Wentworth*, belonging to them, upon Lives, for one *Medley*, a famous Chymiſt, and Retainer to that Lord. Which they could not grant by their Statute, and being their Patron, and high Steward of their Church, they hoped he would not require it of them. And what the Occaſion was, Dr. *Perne*, the Dean and Chapters Letter enſuing will ſhew: Importing;

The Dean of Ely *to the Lord Treaſurer, about granting a Leaſe.*

" That they had received a Letter from him in Behalf of *William Medley*, his Lordſhips Servant, for the renewing of his " Leaſe of the Manor of *Wentworth*, for three Lives, whereof he " had already two in being. They prayed him to underſtand, that " about 4 or 5 Years paſt, this *Medley*, with two or three others " of their Tenants, having Leaſes belonging to their Church, for " many Years to come; and they finding the Imperfection and Inſufficiency of their ſaid Leaſes, for want of Words of their Incorporation, they made Suit to take the ſame for the Term of " three Lives. Which Thing they [the Dean and Chapter] willingly conſented unto, in reſpect of their many Years to come: " But which Leaſe for three Lives they never granted to any other " Tenants before. That many other of their Tenants, by this Example, ſued for three Lives. The Inconvenience whereof they " found ſo great, and ſo prejudicial to their Succeſſors, as immediately after thoſe new Grants, they made a Decree with the " whole Conſent of the Chapter, not to make any Grant above the " Term of one and twenty Years, which Thing was ſo ordered at " the firſt Erection of the Dean and Chapter by the Princes Commiſſioners.

And this being their Caſe, they addreſt to that Lord in theſe Words, " That herein, if it might pleaſe his Lordſhip to ſtand " their honourable good Patron, for the firm Maintenance of that " neceſſary Order and Decree, for the good Preſervation of their " Church, they and all their Succeſſors ſhould acknowledge themſelves no leſs bounden unto his Honour, than they and their Succeſſors were, for the obtaining of her gracious Grant and Confirmation of all ſuch their Lands, as were intended to be given " by her Majeſties noble Father, their gracious and honourable " Founder. And ſo praying his Honour to have due Regard therein." This was ſigned by *Andrew Pern*, the Dean, and ſeven of the Prebendaries.

Ket, *a Heretick, ſummoned before the Biſhop of* Norwich.

Scambler, Biſhop of *Norwich*, was employed this Year in a very irkſome Buſineſs, required by his Epiſcopal Office. Which was the ſummoning of an Heretick in his Dioceſs to his Court: Whoſe Opinions were found ſo vile and horrible concerning *Chriſt*, that the

ANNO 1588. Biſhop was forced to condemn him for a ſtubborn Heretick. His Name was *Francis Ket*, Maſter of Arts, and ſeems to have been a Miniſter. The Biſhop acquainted the Lord Treaſurer with what he had done, in a Letter dated from *Norwich*, *Octob.* 7. *viz.* "That "he had lately condemned for Hereſy *Francis Ket*, M. A. whoſe "baſphemous Opinions he had thought good to acquaint his Honour "with; and referring to his Wiſdom the ſpeedy Execution of, he "being ſo dangerous a Perſon. And accordingly (as it ſeems by Order from Court) he was burnt at a Place near *Norwich*, as our Hiſtorian, *Stow*, writes: For *divers deteſtable Opinions againſt Chriſt, our Saviour*. But what thoſe particular Opinions were are not ſet down: Nor do I find the former Letter of the Biſhop wherein they were ſpecified: Perhaps ſo vile and wicked, that it was thought beſt to ſtifle and burn the Paper. 'Tis likely he was ſome *Arian*, or of the *Family of Love*.

A Remark of Ireland. And as I do not uſe to omit *Iriſh* Church Matters, when in my Collections I meet with them, ſo here may fall in a Remark of an Archbiſhop of *Dublin*, Lord Chancellor of *Ireland*. There was a Letter of his wrote this Year to the *Engliſh* Court. The Occaſion this: The Queen had diſpoſed of the forfeited Eſtates of her great *Iriſh* Traitor, the Earl of *Deſmond*, and his Complices; which were vaſtly great; conſiſting of an infinite Number of Acres of Land in many or moſt of the Counties of that Kingdom. Thoſe to whom the Queen had granted theſe Lands, were Perſons of Honour and Quality of the *Engliſh* Nation, and that had done good Services in that rebellious Kingdom. But theſe Eſtates together with many Privileges, were granted them upon certain Conditions. The Queens great Purpoſe at this Time was the peopling of the County of *Munſter*, and furniſhing it with Inhabitants from *England* that were Proteſtants: That Popery and Rebellion might at length ceaſe, or be diminiſhed in thoſe Parts. And the Gentlemen, on whom the Queen had beſtowed theſe Eſtates, undertook the doing of it. But what Succeſs they had in this Undertaking, is out of my Way here to relate: Though there wanted not Informations and Complaints to the Court, of theſe *Undertakers*, (as they were called) and thoſe concerned in the Lands, and the Bounds thereof.

But one of theſe *Undertakers* was Sir *William Herbert*, Knight, (which gives the Cauſe of my Mention of this *Iriſh* Affair.) The Queen had granted him in the County of *Kerry*, 13276 Acres of Land, to the yearly Rent of 221 *l.* and upwards. He was a Gentleman of good Deſert in this Charge, and had been at Pains and Coſt, to promote the Queens good Ends there: And being now ready to go for *England*, he took with him (and perhaps to clear himſelf of ſome Miſinformations againſt him) his Character to the Lord Treaſurer, from the ſaid Lord Archbiſhop of *Dublin*. Which ran to this Tenour: Cox. *Hiſt. of* Ireland, *p.* 393.

"That this Gentleman, Sir *Will. Herbert*, having purpoſed to "return into *England*, he thought it fit to acquaint his Lordſhip "with his good Endeavours there, [in *Ireland*.] That he had in "all his Proceedings held a very orderly and commendable Courſe; "regarding eſpecially the planting of Religion, as the chiefeſt

" Means to prepare that Place to the Conſideration of their Duty " to her Majeſty, and Obedience to her Laws. Herein (God Bleſſing his great Care and Induſtry) he had ſo much prevailed, as " in few Places in that Kingdom, there was the like Reformation. " That his being there had been both chargeable and troubleſome " to him. Which he regarded not ſo much, as that he was given " to underſtand, that ſome Things contrary to his good Meaning, were aggravated againſt him there; eſpecially, that which " concerned the Lady *Denny* [the Wife or Widow of Sir *Edward Denny*, who partook of ſome of the Queens Grants aforeſaid.] " Which he had dealt in, no otherwiſe than a diſcreet and " wiſe Gentleman. For perceiving, that ſome Things, either by " evil Advice, or open Stomach were done, not only in Diſgrace " of his Authority, and the reſt of the Juſtices, but very hurtful " to the common Good; they ſent an ordinary Proceſs, yet adviſedly qualified, with a private Letter to her Ladyſhip; whereby they declared, that there was no Neceſſity of her Appearance; " but that ſhe might ſend her Agent inſtructed.

And then, in Favour of that Gentleman, adding; " Surely, " my Lord, both in this, and in all other his Proceedings, he hath " great Temperancy and Steadineſs. And now, if he might receive deſerved Countenance, he would do her Majeſty great good " Service in thoſe Parts: And ſo, wiſhing with his Heart, that " his faithful and honeſt Dealings might be free from all Croſſes " there, he humbly recommended him to his Lordſhips honourable " Favour: Whereby, as he perceived by himſelf, he greatly depended. Dated from *Dublin*, the 17th of *March*, 1588. Subſcribed,

Your Honours humbly at Commandment,

Ad. Dublin. Canc.

CHAP.

ANNO 1588.

CHAP. XVIII.

Popiſh Books. The Popes Bull brought in and diſperſed: To encourage the Invaſion intended. Cardinal Allens *Books.* Bennet, *a Prieſt; his penitent Letter to the Earl of* Arundel, *for a falſe Information againſt him. Sir* Tho. Treſhams *Proteſtation of Allegiance.* Francis Blount, *a Catholick at* Paris, *deſirous to come home, writes to the Queen for the Liberty of his Religion. A Caſe of Conſcience propounded by ſome Catholicks, whether they might take up Arms under the* Spaniard *againſt the Queen; Reſolved by a Prieſt, at large. Divers Liſts of Prieſts, and other* Engliſh *Catholicks, at home and abroad.* Engliſhmen, *Penſioners of the King of* Spain: *A Proclamation againſt the bringing in the Popes Bull; and other Popiſh Books: Such to be puniſhed by Martial Law.*

NOW to take ſome View of the Enemies or diſaffected to the eſtabliſhed Church, both Papiſts and Proteſtant Schiſmaticks.

The Popes Bull, for the Catholick King to invade England.

Popiſh Books flew abroad this Year, in order to the great Deſign now on Foot. The chief Writers, as well as Tranſactors on that Side, were *Allen*, made a Cardinal by the Pope for his Deſerts that way, and *Parſons*, a *Jeſuit*. One of this Cardinals Books ſet forth this Year, or hereabouts, was a large Explanation of the preſent Popes *Bull*, publiſhed at *Rome*. Which I will briefly mention, and then ſhew, how the Cardinal backed it with his own Comment and Explanation. This *Bull* had more Severity than that of his Predeceſſors, *Pius Quintus*, that came forth near twenty Years before, that excommunicated the Queen; as I have from the Copy of a Letter ſent hence to *Mendoza* at *Paris*, by one of that Sort here, " Whereby the Queen was accurſed, and pronounced " to be Deprived of her Crown; and the Invaſion and Conqueſt of " her Realm, committed by the Pope to the King Catholick, to execute the ſame, with his Armies, both by Sea and Land, and to " take the Crown to himſelf, or to limit it to ſuch a Potentate, as " the Pope and he ſhould name.

The Explanation of it in a Book by Cardinal Allen.

This Bull was followed by a great Number of Copies of an *Engliſh* Book, printed at *Antwerp*, ſent into *England*, even when the Navy of *Spain* was daily lookt for. The Original of which Books was compoſed and writ by the abovesaid Cardinal in *April*, called by

ANNO 1588.

by himſelf, *the Cardinal of England*, to add the greater Authority to his Book: Which was ſo violently, ſharply, and bitterly written, "Yea, (ſaid the Writer of the Letter to *Mendoza*) ſo arrogantly, (charged by the Adverſaries) falſly and ſlanderouſly, againſt the Perſon of the Queen, againſt her Father King *Henry* VIII. againſt her Nobility and Council, as in very Truth he was heartily ſorry to perceive; that ſo many good Men of his Religion offended therewith: That there ſhould be found in one, accounted a Father of the Church, who was alſo a born Subject of the Crown, ſuch foul, vile, irreverent and violent Speeches, ſuch ireful and bloudy Threatnings, of a Queen, of a Nobility, yea, and of the whole People of his own Nation." This was the Account of the Cardinals Book by one of themſelves. And, to ſubjoin what many of them thought of the Cardinal himſelf, "That he was very ſorry to report the general evil Conceipt of thoſe unordinate and unadviſed Proceedings of this Cardinal; of whoſe raſh Choice to ſuch a Place, the World ſpake ſtrangely.

Copy of a Letter to Mendoza.

Another Book of Allens.

But beſides *Allens* former Book, he had alſo prepared another, ready to be publiſhed, intended for the Service of the *Spaniſh* Invaſion. It was printed in *Engliſh*, and ſhould have been preſently divulged, if the *Spaniards* could have ſet Footing in *England* this Year. *Meteran*, in his Hiſtory hath preſerved it; and there it may be ſeen and read Word for Word: I will give ſome Account of it from Dr. *Geo. Abbot*, in his Book writ againſt Dr. *Hill*. "Among other Matters are theſe. The Queen is called, The *pretended* Queen, and the preſent Uſurper. She muſt be deprived of the Adminiſtration of the Kingdom. She is an Heretick, a Schiſmatick: Uſurping the Kingdom againſt all Right; as for other Cauſes, ſo becauſe ſhe had not the Conſent of the great Biſhop of *Rome*. That ſhe moved the *Turk* to invade *Chriſtendom*. She had ſet at Sale, and made a Market of Laws and Rights. Some of her Facts make her uncapable of the Kingdom. Some others make her unworthy of Life. That therefore Pope *Sixtus* V. had renewed the Excommunication againſt Her, and deprived her of her Title and Pretences to the Kingdom of *England* and *Ireland*, and declaring her illigitimate, and an Uſurper, and abſolving all her Subjects from the Oath of Fidelity to her. And then he charged all Perſons to withdraw their Aid from her; that worthy Puniſhment might be taken of her. And that they join themſelves with the Duke of *Parma*. Alſo, it was proclaimed lawful to lay Hands upon the Queen; and a very great Reward was promiſed to them that did ſo. And a ſafe Conduct was then given to as many as would bring a Warlike Proviſion to the *Spaniſh* Camp; and to all who would aſſiſt that Enterprize, the Pope doth by Indulgence give full Pardon, and plenary Remiſſion of all their Sins, *&c.*

Belgic. Hiſtoria Libr. 15.

Dr. Abbot *againſt Dr.* Hill.

On all theſe Words, and the Cardinals Approbation and Aſſertions of this Bull, *Abbot* deſervedly made this Reflection, "That this ſhewed the Mind of the lewd Cardinal, againſt the Prince, that his diſengliſhed, woolfiſh Deſire was, that the Natural Place of

Abbots *Reflection.*

“ his Education ſhould have been in the everlaſting Bondage of the *Spaniard.*

Other Books publiſhed by Card. Allen.

Nor were theſe all the Books, that this malicious, unnatural *Engliſhman* wrote againſt his Queen and Country, but others were ſet forth by him before: Which I ſhall here take Leave to add, as we have them reckoned up by *Parſons*, the *Jeſuit*; and from him mentioned by the aboveſaid Dr. *Abbot*. 1. *An Anſwer to the* Engliſh *Juſtice*. 2. *The Defence of the twelve Martyrs in one Year.* 3. The Epiſtle allowing Sir *Will. Stanleys* delivering up of *Deventer* to the *Spaniard*. Of which Place he was Governor for the Queen. 4. *A Declaration againſt her Majeſty and the States*, in the Year 1588. which was the ſame, taken Notice of afore.

*Some Account of them. p.*215.

Some brief Account of each of theſe Books I ſhall give from our forementioned Author, *Abbot*, in his Controverſy with *Hill*. In the firſt of theſe Books there is a Proteſtation of *James Layborn* delivered, who was executed at *Lancaſter*; *viz.* that he took two Exceptions, why the Lady *Elizabeth* was no Queen. One, by reaſon of her Birth: The other, for that ſhe was deprived by the Pope. That this was firſt related by *Sanders*, *De Schiſmate Anglicano*, *Lib.* 3. And repeated again by *Allen*: That as Occaſion ſhould ſerve, it might be imitated by other Papiſts. And the whole Treatiſe, however it ſeem to be more cloſely conveyed, than ordinary, is forged with peſtilent Calumniations. Of the ſame Nature is the whole Subject of the ſecond Book; penned on purpoſe to direct Mens Affections from the State.

Allens *Anſw.* 1584.

“ The third was a little Pamphlet, ſhort; but not ſhort; maintaining the treaſonful Act of Sir *William Stanley*, by many an unchriſtian Cenſure, and moſt ſlanderous Imputation. As for Example, that our Country is fallen into Atheiſm. That the Queens Confederacies were only and always with Chriſts Enemies. That the Wars of the *Engliſh* in the *Low Countries* were ſacrilegious Wars, and of an Heretical Prince. And that all the Acts in this Realm, ſince the Queen was excommunicate, and depoſed from Royal Dignity, were void. Therefore ſhe could denounce no War; neither might her Subjects there ſerve her, when a Prince was become an open Rebel to the See Apoſtolick. And he wiſhed, that the reſt of the *Engliſh* would do, as they with Sir *William Stanley* did. And that the *Engliſh* took no Quarrels in Hand, but for the diſhonourable Defence of Rebels, Pyrates and Infidels.” Upon all theſe groſs Imputations, thus Dr. *Abbot* deſcanted: “ That wicked Man [the Author] made no Conſcience to ſtain his whole Country with horrible Defamations. I would hear any ſecular [Prieſt] in the World, that could excuſe this curſed Fellow, [of the *Jeſuitical* Order.]

To what hath been ſaid of *Allen*, I ſhall ſubjoin a Remembrance of one *Bennet*, another buſy Prieſt, (as well as ſome others of that Religion) that occurs within this Year. The ſaid Prieſt with ſome others (as Sir *Tho. Gerrard*, and *William Shelly*) had given Information againſt *Philip*, Earl of *Arundel*, (privy to a Popiſh Plot carrying on in Favour of the *Scots* Queen.) As that upon that Earls

Motion to him, he had ſaid a Maſs of the Holy Ghoſt, for the good Succeſs of the *Spaniſh* Fleet. But not long after, *Benet*, hoping to pacify the Earl, accuſed himſelf for what he had ſaid, in a moſt penitent and ſorrowful Letter to him, as a falſe Accuſation of him, and moſt earneſtly bewailed his Frailty in ſo doing: And with very paſſionate Words expreſſing his Sorrow, and begging the Earls Pardon, revoking all what he had declared before. The Earl had endeavoured to take off all the Evidences that had been brought againſt him by the former Witneſſes; and particularly *Bennets*. To weaken whoſe Evidence, he deſcribed him as a Man of doubtful and ſlippery Credit, and had confeſſed Things contradictory. But the ſuggeſting of *Bennets* Letter to the Earl might have proved more ſerviceable to him. Which Letter our Hiſtorian ſaith nothing of. But I conjecture this Letter of Remorſe, whether real or pretended, was either intercepted, or rather ſent to the Lord Treaſurer to take off *Bennets* Evidence. For I find it among the ſaid Lord Treaſurers Papers.

Bennet, *a Prieſt, his Letter to the Earl of* Arundel.

Camd. Eliz. *p.* 428.

" Therein he bewailed to the Earl what he had done. That up-
" on his Knees, before God and all his Angels, and before all the
" World, with a moſt penetent, rent, and afflicted Conſcience,
" craved Mercy and Forgiveneſs for the great Offence he had com-
" mitted againſt his Honour, in his [*Bennets*] late Troubles and
" Confeſſions —— That with many fair Speeches and Allurements,
" together with great weakneſs of Body and Mind, he was ſtricken
" with ſuch Aſtoniſhment and Maze, that he confeſſed every Thing
" that ſeemed to content their Humour; (which he perceived not
" at firſt,) altogether tending to the Earls Ruin. But I leave the whole Letter to be read in the *Appendix:* Which may be depended on as the Original, being endorſed by the Treaſurers own Hand.

Num. LXIV.

Yet among the Catholick Gentry there were ſome better affected towards the Queen. Here follow Notice of two ſuch Perſons. The one a Knight, and the other a Gentleman of Worth. The one by a Proteſtation, profeſſing all Allegiance and Loyalty to her Majeſty. And the other, who had been abroad in Travail, now by another well penned Letter to the Queen, deſiring to return ſafe home to his Country, and to enjoy the Liberty of his Conſcience in the Exerciſe of his Religion.

Two Catholick Gentlemen, Loyal.

The former was Sir *Tho. Treſham.* Who was now under Confinement in the Iſle of *Ely.* Where he had Conference with the Dean, Dr. *Perne*, and Dr. *Legg*, another learned Man of *Cambridge*; from whom he ſeemed to have been ſatisfied, and confirmed in his Allegiance and Duty to the Queen. And to give Aſſurance of his Fidelity and ſincere Obedience to her, he wrote a Proteſtation, and ſigned it with his Hand: With this Sentence Prefaced, *Appendat me in Statera juſta, & Sciat Deus Simplicitatem meam.* The Endorſement of the Proteſtation was:

The humble Proteſtation of my Allegiance to her Majeſty, exhibited by me unto Mr. Dr. Pearne, *Dean of* Ely, *and Mr. Dr.* Legg, *Vicechancellor of* Cambridge: *Authoriſed by the Lords of her Majeſties moſt Honourable Privy Council, to receive the ſame of me, Sir* Thomas Treſame, *Knight, Priſoner in the Palace of* Elye.

Sir Tho. Treſhams *Proteſtation.*

" In the ſimplicity of my Heart, I do unfeignedly proteſt before " the Majeſty of Almighty God, that Queen *Elizabeth* is my undoubted Sovereign Lady and Queen, *De Jure & de Facto.* That " her Highneſs alſo is Supreme Governor of this Realm of *England,* " and all other the Dominions belonging to the Crown of *England,* " as of all her Subjects within the ſame. Among which, I acknowledge myſelf her Highneſs native Loyal Subject. Whereby " I am religiouſly bounden in Chriſtian Duty, either readily to do, " or humbly to endure her Sacred Highneſs Will: And for no " Cauſe whatſoever to be ſtirred to lift up my Hand againſt her " Majeſty, Gods Anointed; but in all readineſs defending her " Royal Perſon from Violence, and preſerving this Realm, and " all other her Highneſs Dominions from Invaſion, againſt all Perſons without Exception; be it Prince, Pope or Potentate whoſoever, or under what Colour or Pretext ſoever the ſame ſhall " be attempted: I offer and avow myſelf to ſerve therein in Perſon, and to ſpend my Lands and Life in ſo juſt and honourable a " Quarrel.

" Finally, if any ſhall attempt to murther, wound or hurt her " Majeſty, my righteous and reverenced gracious Lady and Queen, " that I in true Subject-wiſe, will to my uttermoſt Might and Ability, proſecute ſuch wicked Wretch to Death. In faithful Teſtimony of all and every the Premiſſes I have written this with " my own Hand; and thereto ſubſcribed my Name: Moſt humbly " beſeeching the Almighty to preſerve this Realm, and all other " her Majeſties Dominions, and particularly her Excellency, in all " Felicity, long Time to reign over us, to his good Will and Pleaſure, and to the unſpeakable Content of us all, her faithful Subjects. Who wiſheth otherwiſe, God turn their Hearts, or elſe " ſhortly ſend them Shame and Confuſion. *Elye, Octob.* the 22d, " 1588.

Whoſe Hand and Heart herein agreeth,

Thomas Treſame.

Fra. Blounts *Letter to the Queen from* Paris, *deſires Liberty of his Conſcience, being a Catholick.*

The other Gentleman I ſpake of before, who ſeemed to be of loyal Principles, though a *Roman* Catholick, was one *Francis Blount,* a Gentleman of Quality. Who had gone abroad without Leave in order to Travail, and perhaps to avoid Dangers, incident to thoſe of the Religion at home. And ſome Informations were brought to the Court, while he was abroad, that created ſome Jealouſies of him. But being now at *Paris,* and minded to return into *England,* the *Spaniſh* Fleet being in Motion, he addreſt a Letter to the Queen for her Leave to Return, and to enjoy the Liberty of his Religion; eſpecially ſince ſhe proteſted to oppreſs none meerly for their Conſcience; and that he was not of the Principles of ſome that had lately been juſtly executed, and was ready to do her all Service to his utmoſt.

But take his Letter, which ran in this Tenor; dated *July* 24. “To the Queens moſt excellent Majeſty. Although, moſt renouned Sovereign, when I conſider what juſt Occaſion your Highneſs hath to be offended with ſome Catholicks of your own Country, in reſpect of their Miſdemeanours towards your Majeſties Perſon and Fame, I may be therefore afraid, being a Catholick, to approach now your Dominions; much leſs your Grace: Yet when I do ſearch the ſecret Corners of my Conſcience, and find that none, whom the Law juſtly executed, or now have in Priſon, have, can, or may charge me, either to be privy, or to conſent to any ſuch Fault; I may therefore, your accuſtomed Clemency conſidered, and a Number ſurmounting me in fault, (although in Vocation my Inferiors) be induced to hope for the like Mercy. The rather ſeeing your merciful Majeſty hath proteſted to hurt none for their Conſcience. Which Proteſtation of ſo juſt and merciful a Prince, may be a ſufficient Warrant to any Loyal Subject. But when I conſider the watchful Care of your grave Council, together with the ſevere, ſharp Laws made againſt Catholicks, and impoſſibility for any to avoid the Danger of them travelling through thoſe Countries where I have been, I can no leſs do, than humbly to beſeech your Majeſties merciful Pardon only for rude Faults, as of myſelf I ſhall voluntarily confeſs. By the granting of the which, as it ſhall be a manifeſt Teſtimony, that your Magnificence deſireth not the Puniſhment of poor Catholicks for their Zeal and Profeſſion, but for their Sins and Vices, ſo ſhall your Highneſs bind me to extend all my Powers and Senſes to the utmoſt, to do you all Honour and Service, according as Duty bindeth me, whenſoever I ſhall be employed.

“Thus moſt humbly proſtrating myſelf before your Majeſties merciful Feet, to hear of ſome Anſwer agreeable to ſo Royal and merciful a Queen, which I nothing deſpair of, ſeeing my Confeſſion ſhall manifeſtly declare my moſt humble Heart and Contrition. Which with the Mightieſt was always accepted.

A Caſe of Conſcience concerning taking up Arms for Spain *againſt the Queen.*

This leads me to a notable Tract writ in *Latin*, by one *Wright*, a Prieſt of the *Romiſh* Religion; occaſioned by a Deſire of ſome *Engliſh* abroad of the ſame Religion, to reſolve them in a Caſe of Conſcience, *viz.* Whether it were lawful for Catholicks to take up Arms for the King of *Spain*, againſt the Queen, and *England*, their native Country. The ſaid Queſtion being propounded ſome Years after the Defeat of the *Spaniard* in 1588, when another Attempt againſt *England* was reſolved upon. The Anſwer was in the Negative: And the Reaſons for *Engliſh* Subjects to take up Arms under the *Spaniard*, learnedly diſproved. The Writer (whoſe Name is endorſed on the Backſide by the Lord Treaſurer) ſeems to be the ſame with *Wright*, alias *Dobſon*, an *Engliſh* Prieſt of the College of *Doway*; as I find in a Liſt of *Engliſh* Prieſts beyond the Seas.

Which makes this Loyal Diſcourſe the more worthy to be taken Notice of; and to ſhew that ſome of the *Engliſh* Catholicks abroad could not come into thoſe *Spaniſh* Meaſures.

A Prieſts Solution thereof, to certain Engliſh *Catholicks.*

It is a MS. which I have ſeen among the Lord Treaſurer *Burghleys* Papers, (and I believe was never printed) with his own Hand on the Backſide thus writ, *Argumenta cujuſdam Papiſtæ, nomine Wryght*. It began with theſe Words: *Petierunt a-me*, &c. "That "certain *Engliſh* Catholicks asked of him, when they ſaw War "hung over *England* and *Spain*, to which Part eſpecially they "were bound in Conſcience to adhere; ſince it was concerning the "Queen and the Kingdom; whether they might defend the Part "of *England*, and by any Manner and Way, as they were wont, "to ſet upon the *Spaniard*, to offend and overcome him. For the reſolving of this Queſtion, he firſt laid down the Reaſons that moved this Doubt; and inclined the Catholicks on the Part of *Spain*, and ſome Propoſitions on which depended the Knot and the Reſolution thereof. The Diſcourſe is large, and intermixed with many Matters Hiſtorical between the two Kingdoms, and the Queen and King *Philip*. Which therefore I leave tranſlated into *Engliſh* in the *Appendix*.

Num. LXV.

Liſts of Names of Catholicks in England, *or abroad.*

When ſo much Danger happened by Papiſts about theſe Times to the Queens Safety, and quiet and peaceable State of her Kingdom, a careful Eye was had over her Popiſh Subjects, and how they ſtood affected: And ſeveral Liſts were taken all over the Nation, of the Names of ſuch Perſons under theſe Ranks; namely, of ſuch as were Recuſants in *England*, or abroad; whether Gentlemen, Ladies, Seminary Prieſts: Whether at Liberty, or in Priſon, or in what Foreign Parts, as at *Rome*, *Rheims*, *Doway*, *Paris*, &c. ſuch as by their own Confeſſions were guilty of Treaſon or Felony: Such as were reconciled: Again, the Names of ſuch as were reconciled to the Pope before the Statute, and refuſed to take the Queens Part: Alſo, ſuch as refuſed the Oath of the *Leet*, and ſaid, that they would not take the Queens Part againſt the Popes Army. Another Liſt was of Perſons only Recuſants. Such a Catalogue was brought in *Anno* 1579. Whereof Account was given in one of the Volumes of my *Annals*. The Perſons under theſe various Characters, contained in divers Liſts of them, taken in the Years 1587, and 1588. may be found in the *Appendix*.

Numb. LXVI.

Engliſh *Penſioners of the King of* Spain.

Theſe Certificates of *Engliſh* Subjects of the *Romiſh* Religion, brings on the mention of ſuch *Engliſh*, who, for Pretence of the Liberty of their Religion, took Shelter under the King of *Spain*; and were entertained in *Flanders*, and other Places, as his Soldiers. And had Penſions yearly allowed by him for their Subſiſtance and Service. Theſe I find *Aug.* 1. 88. (now the great Invaſion of *England* was entred upon, and in Action) had granted them a general *Liberanca:* Which was a Bill of Aſſignation to receive their Penſion Monies: Which was three Months Pay a-piece. But their Paymaſters uſed ſuch crafty Delays in the Matter of Payment, that if they had not ſpecial Favour, (as was writ by one that had been a Fugitive himſelf, and knew the State of the *Engliſh* Fugitives under that King) it would be ſix Months after the Grant thereof, (do what

State of the Engliſh *Fugitives.*

ANNO 1588.

what they could) before it would be further ſigned; and in Condition for them to demand their Money. And till *October*, in the Year 1590, this Author ſaith, he was ſure, they had not received a Penny. And how long they ſtayed afterward without it, he knew not. Their Neceſſity was great. They followed the Duke of *Parma*, (the Governour of *Flanders* under the King of *Spain*) from Town to Town, importunately requiring Payment. But eſpecially they never left *Coſmo*, the Dukes Secretary in quiet. Who to rid himſelf of their troubleſome Importunacy, addreſt them to *Baptiſta Spinola*, a Banker dwelling in *Antwerp*, giving them his Letter, and ſending the ſame by one *Henry Haſlewood*, requeſting him to relieve theſe diſtreſſed *Engliſh* Gentlemen, and to buy their *Liberanca*. Which he doubted not they would ſell good cheap to his Profit. The whole Sum was 10,000 Crowns, which *Coſmo* promiſed him ſhould be allowed him, and paſt in the Reckoning, which he had with the King. *Haſlewood*, in the Name of the reſt, offered him the ſaid Sum for 6000 Cr. But *Spinola* utterly refuſed the ſame, ſaying, he would not take it for 2000. And withal, he deſired he might not meddle with the King: Wiſhing, that he had not meddled with him ſo much. So that they were fain to return poor and penniless. And did in that Inſtant live in ſo poor and pitileſs a Sort, that truly it was a Grief to ſee it, ſaid the Writer of this Paſſage. And he added, that he knew a Gentleman, that ſold his Part there, amounting to 24 *l.* for 3 *l.* I leave others to make Obſervation hence of the Generoſity of this rich King towards theſe Fugitives; and of their miſerable Condition who had changed their Loyalty to their Natural Prince, and had yielded it to an implacable Enemy to her, and their Country.

Speeches of ſome of theſe Penſioners.

State of Engliſh *Fugitives.*

And what ſort of evil and maliciouſly diſpoſed Perſons ſome of theſe Penſioners were, will appear by the Speeches of two of them, famous for their Treachery in betraying certain Places in *Flanders* to the *Spaniard*, viz. *Stanley* and *York:* As I take it from an Account given of them by one in thoſe Times, and a Fugitive, and what Checks they received from *Spaniards*, with whom they converſed. That *Verdugo*, hearing Sir *Will. Stanley*, with Paſſion tranſported into violent Speeches againſt his Country, wiſhed him to uſe Moderation. And that though he had offended his Country, his Country had never offended him. And the other, *viz. Rowland York*, at Dinner one Day with Count *Charles* of *Mansfelt*, at his Houſe in *Bruſſels*, beginning to uſe unbecoming Speeches of the Queen, was commanded of the Count to hold his Peace: Praying him thence forward to be better acquainted with the Cuſtoms of that Table, which did not give any Man Privilege to ſpeak unreverently of Princes.

Seditious Books brought in from Rome.

And beſides open Wars and ſecret Conſpiracies, there was another Method the *Romaniſts* made much uſe of, for the promoting their Purpoſes, to infect the People of this Land; and that was by Books diſperſed in the Nation; from *Rome*, and other Places abroad: Serving to inſtruct and perſuade their Party; and more and more to diſaffect them, and to excite them to make Diſturbances, and to confirm them in their dangerous Practices. Inſomuch that it was thought

ANNO 1588.

thought neceſſary to ſet forth a ſevere Proclamation this Year againſt bringing Books from the See of *Rome*; that ſo coming thence they might have the Stamp of his Holineſſes Authority, and Infallibility: Which was enough to make them believe and undertake any Thing. Theſe that were thus prohibited were as well Traiterous as threatning Books and ſeditious Libels, as Pope *Sixtus* his Bull particularly; (whereof Notice was taken before:) And likewiſe againſt diſperſing, uttering, or keeping of them, and that under Penalty of Martial Law.

A Proclamation againſt them.

Popiſh Contrivances.

Jeſuits. Seminaries.

Rumours. Libels.

In this notable Proclamation, the Queen firſt declared the wicked Enterprizes of the Papiſts againſt her Life and Kingdom. “That conſidering with herſelf, how mercifully Almighty God had by the Space of many Years preſerved her Highneſs moſt Royal Perſon, and this her Realm and other her Dominions, againſt divers and manifold moſt dangerous Practices, as well of the Pope, and other Foreign Enemies, as of ſundry diſloyal, rebellious and traiterous Perſons, being Natural-born Subjects of this Realm; who had not ceaſed by all poſſible Means they could deviſe, to compaſs the Deſtruction of her, and the utter Ruin and Overthrow of this State and Commonwealth: For the effecting whereof, they had contrived and laid ſundry Complots, not only for the Invaſion of the Realms by Foreign Enemies, but alſo to move and ſtir up Rebellion at home, by withdrawing her Subjects from their loyal and due Obedience, and by preparing them to betray their own Natural Country; and moſt unnaturally to join with Foreign Enemies in the Spoil and Deſtruction of the ſame. For which ungodly and wicked Purpoſe (as it had evidently appeared, and been fully proved) ſo many *Jeſuits* and Seminary Prieſts and other Perſons of like Quality, had by Direction of the Pope, been of late Years ſent into the Realm. By whom and their Adherents, ſundry falſe, ſlanderous and ſeditious Rumours and Reports (tending wholly to move the Peoples Hearts to Diſcontentment and Offence;) had been commonly bruited and given out; and divers ſeditious and traiterous Libels, Books and Writings had alſo by them been publiſhed and ſcattered abroad:

The Means uſed againſt them.

Armies and Forces to invade.

“Whereupon her Majeſty perceiving, in her Princely Wiſdom, the dangerous Conſequences of ſuch malicious and traiterous Purpoſes, had heretofore by ſeveral Proclamations, noted the ſame to her Loving Subjects; forbidding thereby the publiſhing, having or keeping of any ſuch ſeditious Libels, Books or Writings within her Realms or Dominions; and her Majeſty now finding, that the Malice as well of the Pope and other Foreign Enemies, as of her rebellious and traiterous Subjects, living in the Parts beyond Seas, was more and more encreaſed, and that they had been of long Time ſecretly levying and preparing great Forces and Armies to invade this Realm and other her Majeſties Dominions, with Purpoſe to put the ſame in ſpeedy Execution by all poſſible Means; thereby utterly to overthrow her moſt happy State, and this flouriſhing Commonweal, and to ſubject it to the proud, ſervile and ſlaviſh Government of Foreigners and Strangers: And having alſo certain Intelligence, that *Sixtus* the Fifth, now

Pope

ANNO 1588.

Sixtus V. *Bull.*

" Pope of *Rome*, had of late publiſhed and ſet forth a moſt malicious and deteſtable Bull or Libel againſt her Majeſty, and her moſt gracious and peaceable Government, and againſt all loving, dutiful and faithful Subjects, and that ſundry other moſt falſe, ſlanderous and traiterous Libels, Books and Pamphlets were alſo lately contrived, written and printed by divers ſeditious and traiterous Perſons, with Purpoſe to be in cover and ſecret Manner diſperſed through this Realm: Wherein they did not only go about, with moſt falſe and abominable Lies, to ſlander and diſhonour her Majeſty, and the preſent moſt happy and quiet State and Government, but alſo, by ſubtil and peſtilent Perſuaſions, to withdraw her Highneſs Subjects from their due Obedience, and to excite and ſtir up the People to take Arms againſt God and their Sovereign, and to join with the Foreign Enemies; and ſo to betray and yield themſelves, their Parents, Kindred and Children, and their Religion and Country, and Commonweal, to be Subjects and Slaves to Aliens and Strangers.

The Queens Admonition.

" That therefore her Highneſs thought good to admoniſh her loving, good and faithful Subjects, to continue in humble Fear and Service to Almighty God, in their loyal and dutiful Obedience to her Majeſty, and in their faithful readineſs to defend themſelves and Country againſt all Foreign Enemies, and rebellious Traitors whatſoever; and ſhe doubted not, but Gods merciful Goodneſs, (upon which ſhe had always, and did only depend) with the Strength, which God had given her, to withſtand their Malice, and to preſerve her good Subjects, and her Realms and Dominions from all Dangers.

What to be done with theſe Bulls.

" Nevertheleſs, leſt any of her People ſhould be ſeduced, or their Simplicity abuſed by the falſe Perſuaſions, or malicious Surmiſes contained in the ſaid infamous and ſlanderous Bulls, Libels, Books and Pamphlets, ſhe did, by this her Majeſties Proclamation, ſtraitly charge and command, That no Perſon whatſoever ſhould convey, carry or bring into any of her Majeſties Realms and Dominions any of the ſaid Bulls, or any Tranſcript or Copy thereof, or any the ſaid Libels, Books, Pamphlets or Writings; nor ſhould in any wiſe diſperſe, or utter any of the ſame: And that all ſuch Perſons, to whoſe Hands ſuch Bulls, or any Tranſcript or Copy thereof, or any of the ſaid Libels, Books, Pamphlets or Writings, either had come, or ſhould hereafter at any Time come, preſently with all convenient Speed, without ſhewing the ſame to any Perſon, ſend or deliver it to ſome one of her Highneſs Privy Council, if any ſuch were within twenty Miles; or if it were above that Diſtance of twenty Miles from the Court, then to the Lieutenant, or to his Deputy, of the ſame Shire, for the Time being, where the Party ſhall be, that had, or ſhould have any ſuch Bull, or any ſuch Tranſcript or Copy thereof; or any ſuch Libel, Book, Pamphlet or Writing. And that the ſame Lieutenant or his Deputy, to whoſe Hand any ſuch Bull, or any ſuch Tranſcript or Copy ſhould come, ſhould without delay, and with all convenient Speed, ſafely ſend the ſame to the Lords of her Majeſties Privy Council. And that every Perſon,

ANNO 1588.

“ to whom any ſuch Bull, or any Tranſcript or Copy thereof, or any ſuch Libel, Book, Pamphlet, or Writing, ſhould be hereafter delivered, offered or ſhewed, ſhould immediately apprehend and put in ſafe keeping the Party ſo delivering, offering or ſhewing the ſame, if he were in Power or able ſo to do. To the End that every ſuch Offender might be forth coming, to be ſpeedily proceeded upon, and puniſhed for the ſame Offence, according to the Tenour of this her Majeſties Proclamation. Or, for lack of ſuch Ability, ſhould with all convenient Speed diſcloſe the Name or Dwelling-Place, or Place of Reſort, of the Party ſo offending, to ſome Juſtice of Peace of the Shire, where any ſuch Offence ſhould be committed. Who ſhould thereupon immediately cauſe the Party ſo offending, to be apprehended, and put in ſafe keeping, as aforeſaid.

Law Martial the Puniſhment.

“ And her Majeſties further Pleaſure and expreſs Commandment was, that if any ſuch Perſon ſhould wittingly and willingly offend in, or touching the bringing in, diſperſing, uttering, or malicious having or keeping of any ſuch Bull, or of a Tranſcript or Copy thereof, or of any the ſaid Libels, Books or Pamphlets, contrary to this her Majeſties Proclamation; that every ſuch Offender ſhould with all Severity, be proceeded againſt and puniſhed, according to the *Martial* Law, by her Majeſties Lieutenants, or their Deputies, by Direction from the ſame Lieutenant in that Behalf, within the ſeveral Limits and Precincts of their Commiſſions of Lieutenancy; and ſhould ſuffer ſuch Pains and Penalties in that Behalf, as by the ſaid Lieutenants, or their Deputies, by ſuch Direction as is aforeſaid, or any of them within their ſaid Limits and Precincts ſhould be inflicted upon them. And that thereupon alſo the Goods and Chattels of every ſuch Offender ſhould be confiſcate and forfeited to her Majeſty.

To proceed with Severity.

“ And for the better Execution of this preſent Proclamation, her Majeſty did not only grant and commit full Power and Authority to all and every her Lieutenants and their Deputies, having ſuch Direction as was aforeſaid; but alſo hereby ſtraitly charged and commanded them, and every of them, to proceed againſt the Offenders aforeſaid with all Diligence and Severity, according to the ſaid *Martial* Law. And further granted by theſe Preſents, that none of her ſaid Lieutenants, or their Deputies be any wiſe impeached, in Body, Lands or Goods, at any Time hereafter, for any Thing to be done, or executed in the Puniſhment of any ſuch Offender, according to the ſaid Martial Law, and the Tenour of this her Highneſs Proclamation, any Law or Statute to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding.

Diſcovery.

“ And for the better Diſcovery of the ſaid Offences, and the ſpeedy Apprehenſion of ſuch traiterous, ſeditious, and wicked Perſons, as after Admonition given by this her Highneſs Proclamation, ſhould preſume maliciouſly and willfully to offend againſt the ſame, her Majeſty ſtraitly charged and commanded, as well all her ſaid Lieutenants and Deputies, and every of them, as all and every her Judges, Sheriffs, Juſtices of Peace, Maiors, Bailiffs, and all other her Officers and Miniſters, and good and loving

“ Subjects: That they ſhould with all Care and Diligence, in all Places (as well exempt, as not exempt) enquire and ſearch for all ſuch Bulls, Tranſcripts, Copies, Libels, Books and Pamphlets, and for all ſuch Perſons whatſoever, as ſhould bring, publiſh, diſperſe or utter any of the ſaid Bulls, Tranſcripts, *&c.* and them to apprehend, and put in ſafe keeping, that they might be ſpeedily proceeded againſt for the ſaid Offences, according to the *Martial* Law, as is aforeſaid.

Reward.

“ And her Majeſty was pleaſed, that all ſuch Perſons as ſhould apprehend or detect any ſuch Offender againſt this Proclamation, whereby the ſaid Offender might be forth coming to be proceeded upon, and to receive Puniſhment according to the Quality of the Offence, ſhall have the Moiety of all the Goods and Chattels of the ſaid Offender, which ſhould be ſo apprehended or detected by them. And, in Caſe any Sheriff, Maior, Juſtice of Peace, or other publick and inferior Officer, or any other to whom it ſhould, or might appertain, ſhould be found remiſs or negligent in the due Execution of this Proclamation, then the ſaid Party ſo offending was to be brought before the Lords and others of her Highneſs Privy Council, to receive Puniſhment for the Remiſsneſs and Contempt, as ſhould appertain to the Nature, and Quality of the ſame Offence.

Mercy.

“ And finally, her Majeſty of her moſt gracious, merciful Diſpoſition, hereby ſignified to all her loving Subjects, that her Will and Pleaſure was, that neither they, nor any of them ſhould be moleſted, troubled or impeached for any Offence heretofore paſt in the receiving or having of any of the ſaid Bulls, Tranſcripts, Copies, Libels, Books or Pamphlets; ſo as they do deliver the ſame, according to the Effect and true Meaning of this Proclamation; and ſo, as it appeared that they were no Authors, Bringers in, Setters forth, Diſperſers or Maintainers of the ſame Bulls, Tranſcripts, *&c.* And her Majeſty willed and granted, that this her Proclamation ſhould be a ſufficient Warrant to all her ſaid Lieutenants and all their Deputies, and all and every her Judges, Sheriffs, Juſtices of Peace, Miniſters and Officers, and all other her loving Subjects whatſoever, to proceed in the due Execution of the Premiſſes, according to the Tenour of the ſame Proclamation.

“ And that therefore her Majeſties Will and Pleaſure was, that the ſame ſhould be made and publiſhed under the Great Seal of ***England.*** **Given at her Highneſs Manor of *Greenwich*, the firſt Day of *July*, 1588. and in the XXX Year of her Reign.**

ANNO 1588.

CHAP. XIX.

Scoffing and railing Books of Puritans. Martin Marprelate. *He is brought before the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. A falſe Report he had ſpread of the Biſhop of* Winton. *His abuſive Book againſt Dr.* Bridges. *Dr.* Bancrofts *Sermon of the* Jus Divinum *of Epiſcopy.* Penries *Confutation. Dr.* Raynolds *Judgment of that Point; upon the Motion of Sir* Fra. Knowles. *Examination of ſome concerned in* Marprelates *Preſs. Their Confeſſions. Secret Conventicles: Diſcovered. Their Worſhip, and Opinions. Another Sort of Sectaries. Allow Diſſimulation. The ſame practiſed by Papiſts.*

SUCH of the Queens Proteſtant Subjects, that laboured for a new Reformation of this Church, both of the Government of it by Biſhops, and of the Divine Service by the Book of Common Prayer, did at this Time mightily beſtir themſelves, by publiſhing divers Books and Libels full of ſcurrilous Language, and Slanders, chiefly againſt the Hierarchy: But thoſe of *Martin Marprelate* made the greateſt Noiſe.

Slanderous Books publiſhed by Puritans.

Admonition *to the People of* England.

Some Account of theſe malicious printed Tracts and Pamphlets, I ſhall give in the Words of an eminent Biſhop then living: " That " at that very Time (when the Nation was thanking God for their " Deliverance from the *Spaniſh Armada*) that even then they ſaw " in Mens Hands and Boſoms commonly ſlanderous Pamphlets, " freſh from the Preſs againſt the beſt of the Church of *England*; " and that they heard at every Table, and in Sermons and Lectures at private Conventicles, the Voices of many, not giving " Thanks to God, but ſcoffing, mocking, railing, and depraving the " Lives and Doings of Biſhops and others of the Miniſtry, and " contemptuouſly defacing the State and Government of the Church, " begun in the Time of that godly and bleſſed Prince, King *Edward* VI. and confirmed and eſtabliſhed by our moſt Gracious " Sovereign—— That there were of late Time, even within a few " Weeks, three or four odious Libels againſt the Biſhops and others " of the Clergy, printed and ſpread abroad almoſt in all Countries " of this Realm, ſo fraught with Untruths, Slanders, Reproaches, " Railings, Revilings, Scoffings, and other intemperate Speeches, " as, he thought, the like was never committed to Preſs or Paper; " no, not againſt the vileſt Sort of Men that have lived upon the " Earth. And ſuch a Prejudice this was to the Honour of this

" State and Government, as never was offered in any Age. The " Author of which called himſelf *Martin Marprelate.*

Letter to the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, to ſearch for Marprelates *Books.*

Theſe Books were ſo full of Sedition, and tending ſo profeſſedly to the Overthrow of the eſtabliſhed Government of the Church, that a Letter was writ from the Lord Chancellor and Lord Treaſurer, to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, with the Aſſiſtance of ſome others of the Privy Council, to ſearch for the Authors and Abetters of them; as giving great Provocation to the Queen and State. Of this *Marprelate* I have given a large Account in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. And thither I refer the Reader.

Book II. *Ch.* 21.

Penry *before the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion.*

Only of *John Penry*, the chief that bore the Name of the Author of thoſe ſlanderous Books, being ſo infamous, I ſhall add one or two more Notices, as I met with them: When *Penry* was brought before the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, where ſate the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, *Cooper*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and other Biſhops, they objected to him, one of his Aſſertions in his Book, That *Readers* were no Miniſters; meaning ſuch of the Clergy as did not, or could not preach, but only read the Holy Scriptures, the Homilies, and other good Books appointed to be publickly read to the People, when there were no Sermons. This *Penry* aſſerted in his Book was not preaching the Word: And ſo the ordinary Means of Salvation was wanting, which was the Word preached. And that upon this Saying of his, it was reported, that the abovesaid Biſhop ſhould ſay, that this was next Door to an Hereſy. This Matter thus did *Penry* abuſively relate in a Book that he afterwards publiſhed:

A falſe Report rais'd by Penry *againſt the Biſhop of* Winton.

" That where he ſaid, that the preaching of the Word was the " only ordinary Way of Salvation, the Archbiſhop counted it a Hereſy, and that every Mortal condemned it: *Penry* wrote, that this " Caſe ſtood thus: That he was brought in the Year 87 before the " Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, where ſate the Archbiſhop, the Biſhops " of *London*, *Winton*, and others; and by them was examined " about his Book. That ſoon after it was reported by him, and the " Report ſpread, that the Archbiſhop and the Biſhop of *Winton* had " ſaid, that ſomething that *Penry* had ſaid, *viz.* That preaching the " Word was the only Means of Salvation, amounted to Hereſy, or " came very near it." Which was falſly reported and carried abroad. But *Penry*, to vindicate himſelf and his Report, gave ſome Account of that Conference after this his cuſtomary ſcurrilous Manner. The Diſcourſe was about *Non-reſidence*, which *Penry* had ſeverely invayed againſt in his *Marprelate*. " When the Biſhop of *London* then had asked him, what he could ſay againſt " ſuch; he ſaid, They were odious in the Sight of God and Man. " Becauſe as much as in them lay, they bereaved the People, (over " whom they thruſt themſelves) of the ordinary Means of Salvation; which was the Word preached. That the Biſhop of *London* " demanded of him, whether Preaching was the only Means of Salvation. *Penry* anſwered, it was the only ordinary Means. And " confirmed it by three Texts. *Rom.* X. 14. *How ſhall they hear* " *without a Preacher?* 1 *Cor.* I. 21. *It pleaſed God by the Fooliſhneſs of Preaching, to ſave them that believe.* The third Place " was *Epheſ.* I. 13. *In whom alſo ye truſted after ye heard the Word*

Epiſt. to the Prieſts in the Convocat. p. 30.

“ *of Truth.* That the Point being long canvaſed, the Biſhop of “ *Winton* (whom he called *His Worſhip of Winton*) roſe up, and “ mildly after his Manner braſt forth in theſe Words, I aſſure you, “ My Lords, it is an execrable Hereſy. An Hereſy, ſaid *Penly*; [as he relates his Story] “ I thank God, that I ever knew that Hereſy. It is ſuch a Hereſy, as I will, by the Grace of God, ſooner leave my Life than I will leave it. Then the Biſhop ſaid, I “ tell thee, it is an Hereſy. And thou ſhalt recant it, as an Hereſy. Then, ſaid the other, never ſo long as I live, God willing. “ And adding, that he was weary to hear his Grace ſo abſurd.

Admonition to the People of *England.*

It is pity, it was not related, what the Archbiſhop and Biſhop had ſaid more at large in this Matter, to explain their Words; ſince all this Account given by *Penry* and his Brethren, was toſſed about in Speeches and common Talk againſt them. But the Biſhop of *Winton* thought fit, in a Book writ by him about this Time, thus to vindicate himſelf from this Slander, by relating the Truth. “ That “ he ſhould ſay, that Preaching of the Word to be the only ordinary Way to Salvation, was Hereſy; this he never thought, nor “ ſpake, either then, or at any other Time of his Life. And that “ in that Controverſy, *Penry* had ſpoken Things ſo ſtrange and ſo “ obſcure, that he ſeemed to attribute that Effect to the preaching “ of the Word only, and not otherwiſe uſed, by reading it. [For indeed one of this Mans Doctrines was, that Readers were no Miniſters.] “ And that being urged by the Queſtion, by occaſion of reading the “ Scripture in Churches, his Anſwer was ſuch as he evidently ſhewed himſelf not to mean, that that Effect of Salvation could “ not be wrought by hearing of the Word of God read; with ſome “ other Words, giving ſuſpicion of worſe. And then indeed, he [the Biſhop] “ roſe, not out of his Place, (as this honeſt Man did “ carp) nor ſpake in ſuch cholerick Manner, as was pretended. “ But that he quietly ſaid, My Lord, [ſpeaking as it ſeems to the Archbiſhop then in the Commiſſion.] “ *This is not far from Hereſy.* Thus the Biſhop more truly repreſented himſelf and the Caſe. I have not yet done with *Marprelate:* Which gave ſuch high Offence to the Clergy eſpecially, that it received Anſwers by ſome of them; but to their Coſt, if Railing and foul Language could move them. One of theſe was Dr. *Bridges*, Dean of *Sarum.* Who ſoon by *Marprelate* and his Club, had a whipping Reply given him, which will appear by the Title Page: Which I will here ſet down for the peculiar Style of theſe Men.

Anſwer to Dr. Bridges *Book againſt* Marprelate.

“ *O! read over Dr.* John Bridges. *For it is a worthy Work.*

“ Or, an *Epitome* of the firſt Book of the right worſhipful Vo- “ lume, written againſt the *Puritans*, and the Defence of the Noble “ Clergy, by as worſhipful a Prieſt, *J. Bridges*, Presbyter, Prieſt, “ or Elder, Dr. of Divilitie, and Dean of *Sarum.* Wherein the “ Arguments of the *Puritans* are wiſely prevented; that when they “ come to anſwer Mr. Doctor, they muſt needs ſay ſomething that “ hath been ſpoken.

“ Compiled for the Behoof and Overthrow of the Parſons, “ Fickars and Currats; which have learnt their Catechiſms, and

“ are paſt Grace. By the Reverend and worthy *Martin Marprelate*, Gentleman. And dedicated to the Confocation Houſe, *&c.* Printed over Sea in *Europe*, within two Furlongs of a bouncing Prieſt.

“ It is dedicated to the right Puiſſant and terrible Prieſts, my Clergy Maſters of the Confocation Houſe, whether Fickers General, Paltripolitans, or any other of the Holy League of Subſcription. The Date he gives his Epiſtle is, *Anno Pontificatus veſtri Quinto* [meaning the Archbiſhop *Whitgift*, who had now *An.* 1588. been five Years removed to the See of *Canterbury*] “ and I hope *Ultimo* of all the *Engliſh* Popes: By your learned and worthy Brother, *Martin Marprelate.*

This Book peruſed by the Archbiſhop. Admonit. p. 38.

This Book of Dr. *Bridges* is of the more Account, and juſt Eſteem, having been peruſed by the Archbiſhop himſelf, before it was ſent to the Preſs. Who himſelf gave this Commendation of it, *viz.* “ That he knew the Sufficiency thereof cauſed theſe Men thus to ſtorm; as not being able otherwiſe to anſwer it. Which made them ſo bitterly to inveigh againſt his Perſon. And therefore, *Si inſectari Perſonam deploratæ Cauſæ ſignum eſt* (as it is indeed) *iſtorum Cauſa eſt deploratiſſima.*

Martins *Threatnings of the Biſhops.* p. 4.

In this Book thus *Martin* threatned the Biſhops: “ That he would make open War againſt them, unleſs they would agree to let the *Puritans* alone: That he intended to work their Woe two manner of ways, Firſt, to watch them at every half Turn. And whatſoever they did amiſs, he would preſently publiſh it: That they ſhould not call one honeſt Man before them, but he would get their Examination, and publiſh it. That he would place for this Purpoſe a young *Martin* in every Dioceſs, to take Notice of their Practices. And rather than he would be diſappointed of his Purpoſe, he would place a *Martin* in every Pariſh. And in Part of *Suffolk* and *Eſſex*, he thought it were beſt to have two in a Pariſh. Secondly, That all the Books he had in ſtore already of their Doing, ſhould be publiſhed. His Books he pretended were many. And what they were are mentioned elſewhere.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. *p.* 288.

Bancrofts *Sermon of the Superiority of Biſhops.*

Theſe Books of *Marprelate* ſo ſevere upon the Biſhops, and their very Order, and Superiority in the Church of *England* ſo maliciouſly inveyed againſt, gave occaſion to a Sermon in the chief Auditory of *London*, namely, at St. *Pauls* Croſs, preached by a very learned Divine, Dr. *Rich. Bancroft*, Chaplain to the Archbiſhop; and ſo (likely) by ſome Order from him. The Purpoſe of this Sermon was to prove the *Jus divinum* of Epiſcopacy, with a Refutation of thoſe ſcurrilous Libels againſt them of that Dignity; and withal diſproving the new Diſcipline. But thoſe of the *Puritan* Party could not away with it; who were of another Opinion, holding that Biſhop and Prieſt were equal, and of one and the ſame Order.

Penries *Confutation of* Bancrofts *Sermon.*

His Sermon was grounded upon this Text, *Beloved, believe not every Spirit; but try the Spirits, whether they be of God; becauſe many falſe Prophets are gone out into the World.* 1 John IV. 1. The forwardeſt that ſet himſelf to confute this Sermon, was our buſy *Penry*. Who firſt began to anſwer it more briefly, to be anſwered more fully and largely by others afterwards. His Book was to be, *A brief Diſcovery of the Untruths and Slanders againſt the true Government of the Church of Chriſt, contained in a Sermon* preached, *&c.* The Sum of this Sermon under divers Heads, I will repeat from this Writers own Pen, as I find it. Whereby we may in Part know, what this learned Sermon was that had not a few angry Opponents.

“ There be many now a-days, who do affirm, that when Chriſt uſed theſe Words, *Dic Eccleſiæ*, he meant thereby to eſtabliſh in the Church for ever the ſame Plot of Eccleſiaſtical Government to be erected in every Pariſh, which *Moſes* by *Jethroes* Counſil appointed in Mount *Sinai*, and which after the *Jews* did imitate in their particular Synagogues. ” And again, ſhewing, how they affected a *Jewiſh* Church Government, “ They had, ſay theſe Men, in their Synagogues their Prieſts: We muſt have in every Pariſh our Paſtors. They their *Levites*, we our Doctors. They their Rulers of their Synagogue, we our Elders. They their *Levitical* Treaſurers; we our Deacons. Again, This Form of Government they call the *Tabernacle* which God hath appointed; the Glory of God, and of his Son Jeſus Chriſt; the Preſence of God, that Place which he hath choſen to put his Name there; the Court of the Lord, and the ſhewing forth of Gods Glory.

“ Again, where this Eccleſiaſtical Synod is not erected, they ſay, Gods Ordinance is not performed, the Office of Chriſt, as he is a King, is not acknowledged in Effect, that without this Government we can never attain to a right and true Feeling of Chriſtian Religion, but are to be reckoned among thoſe who ſay of Chriſt, *We will not have this Man to Reign over us:* Again, in the ſame Sermon, “ There was never antient Father, I think, ſince the Apoſtles Time, that did thus expound that Place, *Matth.* 18. Beſides, there hath been a divers Government from this uſed in the Church, ever ſince the Apoſtles Time. And theſe Men do confeſs, that this Government of God, before the Council of *Nice*, began greatly to decay: And that ſince the ſaid Council it was never heard of in the World, until theſe their Times. [And for this he alledged *Cartwright*.] “ A very ſtrange Matter, if it were true, that Chriſt ſhould erect a Form of Government until his Coming, and that the ſame ſhould never be once put in Practice for the Space of 1500 Years, or at the leaſt, to take them at their beſt, that the Government and Kingdom of Chriſt ſhould then be overthrown, when the Divinity of his Perſon, the Honour of his Kingly Authority, *&c.* was eſtabliſhed at the Council of *Nice*. All theſe Paragraphs were taken by *Penry*, out of that Sermon, in order to confute it.

The Biſhops repreſented by Penry.

I ſhall ſay nothing more of this *Penry*, ſurnamed *Marprelate*, but only mention a Clauſe or two in his Epiſtle to his Reader; ſhewing what his and his Parties Opinion was of the Biſhops, that then were. “ They ſeem at this Day, to have great Liberty to wound the Church than any they had ſince the Beginning of her Majeſties Reign. They make uſe of the Time and the Opportunity which they have gotten, to keep the Truth and the Church in their Bondage. He ſpake of murthering Tables ſet up againſt

ANNO 1588.

“ them by theſe Tyrants [meaning I ſuppoſe the Eccleſiaſtical Com-“ miſſion.] The Devil indeed hath within theſe Twelve Months ſhewed “ himſelf to be grievouſly wounded in their [the Biſhops] Perſons. “ Becauſe he hath raged ſo mightily, as this 32 Years [ſince the “ Queen came to the Crown] his Fury was never ſeen ſo great “ againſt the Truth, as at this preſent. More of this Anſwer to Dr. *Bancroft*'s Sermon is related elſewhere.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. *B.* 4. *ch.* 3.

Among others that took Diſpleaſure at this Sermon was Sir *Francis Knowles*, a Courtier, and Treaſurer of the Queens Houſhold: Who upon this Sermon of the Superiority of Biſhops, thought fit to ſend his Letter to Dr. *John Raynolds*, a learned Profeſſor in Divinity, and Head ſometime of *Corpus Chriſti* College, *Oxon*, putting the ſaid Queſtion to him, and to take *Bancrofts* Aſſertion into his Examination, and communicate what his Judgment was therein; and in ſhort to confute it.

This Letter will be found in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*; and therefore I here omit it. But the Judgment of Dr. *Raynolds*, in his Anſwer to Sir *Francis*, may deſerve to be here added. The Original whereof I have ſeen thus indorſed by the known Hand of the ſaid Knight. *The 19th of Septemb.* 1589. *Mr. D.* Raynolds *Anſwer to two Points of Dr.* Bankrouts *Sermon.* It was as followeth. “ Albeit, Right Honourable, I take greater Comfort, in la-“ bouring to diſcover and overthrow the Errors of *Jeſuits* and Pa-“ piſts, Enemies of Religion, than of Miniſters of the Goſpel, and “ Brethren, profeſſing the true Faith of Chriſt; yet ſeeing it hath “ pleaſed your Honour, to require me to ſhew mine Opinion of “ ſome Things, which certain of theſe maintain and ſtand in, I “ thought it my Duty, by the Example of *Levi*, who ſaid of his “ Father and Mother, *I regard him not*, nor acknowledged he, his “ Brethren, to declare the Truth without reſpect of Perſons. That “ of the two Points of Dr. *Bancrofts* Sermon, that your Honour “ mentioneth; one, that he ſeemeth to avouch the Superiority “ which Biſhops have among us of the Clergy, to be of Gods own “ Ordinance, though not by expreſs Words, yet by neceſſary Con-“ ſequence. In that he affirmeth their Opinion, who impugn that “ Superiority, to be Hereſy. Wherein I muſt confeſs, that he hath “ committed an Overſight in my Judgment, &c.” And then at laſt modeſtly concluding this Point, he uſed theſe Words, “ That “ he had ſignified his Opinion of the Point, which his Honour had “ ſpecified in D. *Bancrofts* Sermon. Which yet if he or any did “ prove that he had erred in, or took him otherwiſe, than he ought, “ he ſhould be very willing (by Gods Grace) to correct; remembring “ the Apoſtles Leſſon, that *the Spirits of the Prophets are ſubject* “ *unto Prophets*.

Book III. **Ch.**

Dr. Raynolds *Letter to Sir* Fran. Knolles, *concerning that Sermon.*

Deutr. xxxiii. 9.

Two Points.

1 Cor. xiv. 32.

“ The latter Point is, concerning that, as he affirmeth, That “ St. *Jerom* ſaith, and that Mr. *Calvin* ſeemed, on his Report, to “ confeſs, that Biſhops have the ſaid Superiority, ever ſince the “ Times of St. *Mark*, the Evangeliſt: Of which Point I think as of “ the former: Sith neither *Jerom* ſaith it; neither doth *Calvin* “ ſeem to confeſs it on his Report, &c. The Diſcourſe is very large and learned, with the Senſe of many of the Fathers, and particularly concerning the Hereſy of *Aerius*, with Allegations of Canons and Councils; too long for the Room I have. And at laſt the Dr. concluded in theſe Words: “ So for this preſent I recommend your Honour to the Grace and Mercy of Almighty God; “ who always bleſs, preſerve and proſper you and yours. At *Queens* “ College in *Oxford*, *Sept.* 19.

Your Honours in Chriſt at Commandment,

John Rainoldes.

This Letter with ſome other Tracts of that learned Man, was printed in the Year 1641.

Knolles *delivers a Paper concerning the Biſhops to the Lord Treaſurer.*

Among the Papers of the ſaid Sir *Fra. Knolles*, I muſt add another of the ſame Subject, *viz.* Againſt the Superiority of Biſhops *Jure divino*, both in the antient and modern Church of Chriſt. Which Paper he delivered himſelf this Year to the Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*; out of that Courtiers Zeal, as it ſeems, to the Queens Supremacy, leſt it might be leſſened by that Superiority. This Paper being not long, and ſo much now a controverted Point by the *Puritans*, I leave to be read in the *Appendix*. It begins with ſome Allegations of St. *Hierom*; and then of ſome more modern Writers, as *Calvin*, *Muſculus*, *Beza*, &c.

Numb. LXVII.

But I have not yet done with *Marprelate*, whoſe Books gave Occaſion to this Controverſy about *Biſhops*. Upon the Letters from the Court abovesaid, and the diligent Search thereupon made, many Perſons were taken up, and afterwards ſo effectual an Examination made, both of the ſecret Printing Preſs, and of the Printers, and likewiſe of the Perſons at whoſe Houſes both were harboured and concealed, that at length all was diſcovered, and came to Light: As alſo were certain private Conventicles, where theſe *Martiniſts* and the like Sort of Sectaries met together for Religion, and what their Way of Worſhip and Doctrines were. Of all which I ſhall give ſome particular Relation from certain curious MSS. ſometime belonging to Sir *John Puckring*, the Queens Serjeant at Law, concerned in theſe Enquiries, and one of the Commiſſioners appointed for that Purpoſe: Being the beſt and moſt authentick Account of theſe Matters, and a great Part thereof Originals: Kindly communicated to me by a known worthy Perſon ſome Years ago.

R. T. *Baker.* S. *Th.* B.

Examination of Martins *Printing Preſs, and Books printed.*

I proceed therefore to relate the Examination taken of the Printing Preſs and the Books there printed, and alſo of Sir *Rich. Knightley*, Kt. *John Hales*, *Roger Weekſon*, or *Wigſon*, at whoſe Houſes that Preſs was brought; as likewiſe of *John Penry*, the chief Author, *Rob. Walgrave*, the Printer, *Humfrey Newman*, alias *Brownbread*, Cobler, the Diſperſer, and others. For theſe Examinations, as they were found in the ſaid Serjeant *Puckrings* Papers, and taken at *Lambhith* in the Month of *February*, 1588. being ſomewhat long I refer the Reader to the *Appendix*.

Num. LXVIII.

Secret Conventicles, and their Doctrines.

Among theſe Papers was another Set concerning the ſecret Conventicles of theſe Sectaries, now diſcovered. And what was found upon

ANNO 1588.

upon Examination concerning them, and their Doctrines at thoſe Meetings: Which I ſhall inſert; having this Endorſement: *Certain wicked Sects and Opinions* An. *Eliz.* 31. 1588, 1589. *taken from the Confeſſions of ſome of them, the manner of the Aſſembly of the Secret Conventicles: Together with ſome Collections of their Opinions.*

MSS. Puckring. *Confeſt by* Clem. Cambel.

“ In the Summer Time they meet together in the Fields, a Mile
“ or more. There they ſit down upon a Bank. And divers of
“ them expound out of the Bible, ſo long as they are there
“ aſſembled.

Confeſt by Cl. Cambel.

“ In the Winter Time they aſſemble themſelves by five of the
“ Clock in the Morning to the Houſe where they make their Conventicle
“ for the Sabbath Day, Men and Women together. There
“ they continue in their kind of Prayers, and Expoſition of Scriptures,
“ all the Day. They Dine together. After Dinner, make
“ Collections to pay for their Diet. And what Mony is left, ſome
“ one of them carryeth to the Priſons, where any of their ſort be
“ committed.

Confeſt by Cl Cambel.

“ In their Prayers, one ſpeaketh, and the reſt do groan and ſobb,
“ and ſithe, as if they would wring out Tears. But ſay not after
“ him that prayeth. Their Prayer is *Extemporal.*

Confeſt by Joh. Dove.

“ In their Conventicles they uſe not the Lords Prayer, nor any
“ Form of ſet Prayer. For the Lords Prayer, one, who hath been
“ a daily Reſorter to their Conventicles this Year and an half on
“ the Sabbeth Days, confeſſeth, that he never heard it ſaid among
“ them. And this is the Doctrine of the Uſe of it in their Pamphlets:
“ To that which is alledged, that we ought to ſay the Lords
“ Prayer, becauſe our Saviour Chriſt ſaith, *When you pray, do*
“ *you ſay thus:* &c. We Anſwer, he did not ſay, *Read thus, or*
Pray theſe Words. For that Place is otherwiſe to be underſtood;
“ namely, all our Petitions muſt be directed by this general Doctrine.
“ Neither can we gather, that there is ſet down all Chriſts Words,
“ but rather a brief ſum of Doctrine. Taught in one of their
“ Writings; taken from *Smith* of *Black-friers.*

Confeſt by Cl. Cambel.

“ For the Uſe of ſet or ſtinted Prayers, as they term it, this
“ they teach, that all ſtinted Prayers, or ſaid Service, is but babbling
“ in the Lords Sight, and hath neither Promiſe of Bleſſing,
“ nor Edification. For that they are but Cuſhions for ſuch idle
“ Prieſts and Atheiſts, as have not the Spirit of God. And therefore
“ to offer up Prayers by reading, or by Writ unto God is plain
“ Idolatry.

Taught in the ſame Pamphlet.

“ In all their Meetings they teach, that there is no Head or Supreme
“ Governour of the Church of God, but Chriſt: And that
“ the Queen hath no Authority to appoint Miniſters in the Church,
“ nor to ſet down any Government for the Church, which is not
“ directly commanded in Gods Word.

Confeſt by Cl. Cambel.

“ To confirm their private Conventicles, and expounding there,
“ they teach, that a private Man, being a Brother, may preach, to
“ beget Faith, and now that the Office of the Apoſtles is ceaſed,
“ there needeth not public Miniſters: But every Man in his own

ANNO 1588.

Confeſt by Joh. Dove.

Calling was to preach the Goſpel. Taught in another of their Writings, taken from the foreſaid *Smith*.

“To come to our Churches in *England*, to any public Prayer or Preaching of whomſoever, they condemne it as utterly unlawful. For that they ſay, as the Church of *England* ſtandeth, they be all falſe Teachers and falſe Prophets, that be in it. Their Reaſon is, for that our Preachers, as they ſay, do teach us, that the State of the Realm of *England* is the true Church, (which they deny.) And therefore they ſay, that all Preachers of *England* be falſe Preachers; ſent in the Lords Anger to deceive his People with Lies: And not true Preachers, to bring the glad Tidings of the Goſpel. And all that come to our Churches to publick Prayers, or Sermons, they account damnable Souls: Taught in one of their fond Pamphlets.

Confeſt by Joh. Dove, *and* Cle. Camb.

“Concerning the Authority of Magiſtracy, they ſay, that our Preachers teach, we muſt not caſt our Pollutions out of the Church, until the Magiſtrate hath diſannulled the ſame. Which, they ſay, is contrary to the Doctrine of the Apoſtles; who did not tarry for the Authority of the Magiſtrate; they ſay, our Preachers teach, that we muſt not put the Diſcipline of the Church in Practice, till the Magiſtrates begin. And therefore our Preachers be falſe Prophets. For that we ought to reform without the Magiſtrate, if he be ſlow. For that they ſay, the Primitive Church, (whoſe Example ought to be our Warrant) ſued not to the Courts and Parliaments, nor waited upon Princes for their Reformation. When the Stones were ready, they went preſently forward with their Building. Whereon they conclude againſt all our Preachers thus: That you might enjoy this Worlds Peace, you care not to make Chriſt attend upon Princes, and to be ſubject to their Laws and Government. Taught by one of their Pamphlets, in another Writing taken from *Roger Jackſon*.

“Touching the Book of *Common Prayer*, this is their Doctrine, Let the great pregnant Idol, that Book of your Common Prayer, which is ſo full of Errors and Abominations, be examined. At every Part thereof; when they have railed, calling the Collects therein *Heretical*, thus they conclude of it: Neither can the cunningeſt of you make the beſt Part of it other than a Piece of Swines Fleſh, an Abomination to the Lord. Neither can the Perſuaſion of your Conſcience, either juſtify your Worſhip, or clear or ſatisfy others. Taught in the Pamphlet taken from *Roger Jackſon*: Confeſſed in Mr. *John Doves* Examination; a Maſter of Arts, who was at one of their Conventicles.

Some fall off from them of theſe Conventicles.

“Thoſe that have been of their ſecret Brotherhood, and ſeeing their Errors, do fall from them, and ſubmit themſelves, to be Partakers of publick Prayers, and hearing of Gods Word with us, they condemn, as Apoſtates. And they ſay, it is a greater Sin to go to our Churches to publick Prayers, than for a Man to lie with his Fathers Wife.

“And when as one of late forſook their Conventicles, they ſent for him; and when he gave them many Reaſons, why he could not hold their Opinions for good, as namely, that they

“ rejected the Lords Prayer. That they were Diſſemblers; in that two of them had a Deed of Gift of all their Lands, to deceive the Queen : And a number of other Reaſons, which he alledged to them. When they ſaw they could not win him, they gave him over to the Hand of Satan, till he ſhould ſubmit himſelf to the Church again. And they all kneeling, he that gave that Sentence made a Prayer, to deſire God to ratify that Cenſure againſt him. Confeſt by *Love*, who is the Party, whom they ſo uſed; and by Mr. *Dove*, who was preſent at this Action, *&c.*

“ They hold it unlawful to baptize Children among us, but rather chuſe to let them go unbaptized. As in *Summer* 1588, a Child of theirs, being twelve Years of Age, was known not to have been baptized. And when the poor Infant deſired often, that it might be baptized, ſhe ſaid, it was born of faithful Parents; which was enough for it. Which Child was by the Chamber of *London*, cauſed to be publickly baptized, at a Sermon made for that Purpoſe the laſt Summer. And the Mother ran away for fear of Puniſhment. It was the Widow *Unyon*, one of their chief Conventiclers. His Child was baptized in the Church of St. *Andrew Wardrope*.

“ It cannot be learned, where they receive the Sacrament of the Lords Supper. And one, who never miſſed their Meeting-Place a Year and an half, confeſſeth, that he never ſaw any Miniſtration of the Sacrament, nor knoweth where it is done. *Confeſt by* C. C.

“ For Marriage, if any of their Church marry together, ſome of their own Brotherhood muſt marry them. As of late a Couple were married in the *Fleet*. *Confeſt by* C. C.

Another Sect. Their Compliance.

Another Sort of Diſſenters from the Church, there was in theſe Times. And they were ſuch as could agree and come in outwardly with this, or any other Denomination of Chriſtians; keeping their Opinions privately to themſelves. Theſe were ſome of the *Family of Love*. Theſe I mention here, meeting with a Sermon of Archbiſhop *Sandys*, preached before the Queen this Year, or near it: Wherein he thus deſcribed them: “ That they were Men, who for Commodity could transform themſelves into all Colours and Conditions, and in open Shew profeſs any Religion; inwardly keeping their falſe Hearts to themſelves. Which Practice the *Family of Love* had lately drawn into a Precept, and had newly broached it, as ſaleable Doctrine, that Men need not openly to be of any Religion, whereby they might endanger themſelves. That it was good *Chriſtendome* to lie, ſwear, and forſwear, to ſay and unſay to any, ſaving ſuch, as were of the ſame *Family*. With whom they muſt only uſe all Plainneſs, and keep their Myſteries ſecret from all others to themſelves: Of theſe Men thus the Archbiſhop gave a further Account, proceeding thus in his Sermon; “ That they might do any Thing to avoid Affliction; and they had Scripture for that Purpoſe. *Your Bodies are the Temples of the Holy Ghoſt.* 1 Cor. 6. You may not ſuffer Gods Temples to be touched. As fitly alledged, added the Preacher, as *Scriptum eſt* by the Devil.

ANNO 1588.

Diſſimulation diſpenſed with by the Pope.

This Diſſimulation occaſioned the Archbiſhop to mention another Sort of Men, though of a different Religion, yet were allowed upon occaſion, to diſſemble too. And that warranted by his Holineſs of *Rome:* Which Matter I cannot omit. " In a Paper (they are " the Archbiſhops Words) which of late came from the Pope, as " a Token to his dear Children, there were printed the five Wounds " of Chriſt, with this Poeſy, *Fili, da mihi cor tuum, & ſufficit:* " That is, *Son, give me thy Heart, and it ſufficeth.* Whether his " Holineſs did mean thereby to allow Diſſimulation, or no, I will " not define. His Practices are myſtical, and his Brood is ſo " throughly framed in this Way, that they ſeem to take the Popes " Emblem in no other Meaning. That they halted on both Sides. " They ſerved all Times, and turned with all Winds; and by " profeſſing ſuch a Religion, they ſhewed themſelves plainly to be " of none. That they had double Hearts; one for the Prince, " another for the Pope: One for Chriſt, and another for *Baal:* " One for a Communion, another for a Maſs. Theſe diſſembling " Wolves put upon themſelves Sheep-Skins, to deceive withal. " Now they are mild and gentle; flattering and promiſing all " Loyalty to the Prince, Conformity to Government, and Conſent to Religion. But if the Times ſhould turn, they would " turn off the Sheeps Coat, and play the Wolf in his right " kind. They would ſhew their ravenous Nature by their cruel " Deeds. Then would they fill their Bellies after which they " now thirſt. They would find ſwift Feet to ſhed the Blood " of Innocents." (And then concludes with a ſuitable Prayer againſt Diſſemblers.) " From the Mouth of the Lion, O Lord, " deliver us.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

Digby, *a Senior Fellow of St.* Johns *College,* Cambridge, *expelled. Appeals to the Viſitors. Reſtored. Dr.* Whitaker, *Maſter of that College, to the Lord* Burghley *hereupon.* Digby *Popiſhly affected. The Earl of* Leiceſters *Letter to the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury *in this Cauſe.* Hickman *of* Benet *College expelled: And why. Reſtored. The Foundreſs of* Sidney Suſſex *College. Her Will.* Bainbrig *and* Johnſon, *of* Chriſts *College; cited before the Vicechancellor, for their Sermons. Their Proteſtations. The Heads to their Chancellor.*

NOW to gather up what I find of Remark tranſacted this Year in our Univerſities.

Digby, *Fellow of St.* Johns Cambridge; *expelled; appeals.*

There was one *Everard Digby*, a Senior Fellow of St. *Johns* College in *Cambridge*, who was obſerved to be Popiſhly affected; and to have taken Opportunity both in his Sermons, and Converſation with ſeveral of the Houſe, to ſpeak favourably of the *Romiſh* Religion; and ſome of the Scholars had left the College and gone over to that Church, and particularly one *Smith*, moved thereunto by his Means, and was guilty of divers other Misbehaviours in the College. Dr. *Whitaker*, the Maſter and Fellows, took Occaſion upon his Breach of College Statute, (which was Non-payment of Commons) the Penalty whereof was Expulſion, to diſcharge the College of him, which accordingly was done by the Preſident and Seniors, and afterwards declared by the Maſter. But how the ſaid *Digby* had appealed to the Lord *Burghley*, High Chancellor of that Univerſity, and the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, both Viſitors (before whom he had ſo fairly repreſented his Caſe, and they willing favourably to interpret the ſaid Statute) and by an Order from them, was required to be readmitted, hath been at large related elſewhere. But Dr. *Whitaker*, notwithſtanding declined, or at leaſt delayed this Order; yet with all due Reſpects and Submiſſion. And for what Reaſons he had ſo proceeded, and in Vindication of himſelf in the Courſe he took, there are certain Letters of his extant to the ſaid Lord, which will give much Light in this Matter. Which Letters from ſo learned an Head of the Univerſity, and the Queens publick Profeſſor of Divinity, deſerve the more Regard. I ſhall therefore give the Contents thereof from the Originals.

Life of Archbiſhop Whitg. *B.* III. *ch.* 19.

Upon the Chancellors Order for the reſtoring of *Digby*, the proceeding againſt him as not regular (as the ſaid Lord had judged, accord-

ANNO 1588. according to the Report made to him) the Maſter addreſt to him in this Tenor. "That he profeſſed to be ready to ſhew all Obedience "to him: But beſeeching his Honour not to think, that in this "Proceeding he had dealt upon any Malice; which aſſuredly he "had not done; but underſtanding at his Return to the College, "how Mr. *Digby*, for his Contumacy againſt a Statute, had re"ceived three Admonitions, and taking Counſil with his good "Friend, Dr. *Byng*, (a learned *Civilian*, and one of the Heads of "that Univerſity) whether they were lawfully given, and that be"ing adviſed by him, both in this and other Points, that then were "in queſtion; and certified, that *Digby* had incurred the Danger of "the Statute: And that further he being urged by his Oath to "ratify an Act lawfully done; he had condeſcended to his De"privation, thinking that he had no juſt Reaſon to ſtay him from "ſo doing eſpecially, being ſo aſſured, that he might lawfully do "it. And furthermore, conſidering how unprofitable a Member "he was in the College; having alſo a Benefice abroad, and never "almoſt coming at it.

The Lord Treaſurer had communicated to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* theſe Proceedings of the College with *Digby*'s Objections, and deſired his Grace's Judgment therein: Who did not approve of that they had done; and ſo in a Letter he had ſignified with his Reaſons, to the ſaid Lord: Who thought it convenient to diſpatch the ſaid Letter to Dr. *Whitaker*. That ſo underſtanding what Anſwer he could make, he might be the better enabled to make a final Deciſion of this Controverſy. Accordingly *Whitaker* ſent that Lord his Anſwer to thoſe Reaſons in Vindication of what they had done. And then went on, uſing theſe Words to his Lordſhip. "Beſeeching his Honour for Gods ſake to examine "his Anſwers, which had truly and ſufficiently ſatisfied all the ſaid "Objections, not in his Opinion only, but alſo Dr. *Bynges*; who "peruſed the ſame; and (to confeſs the Truth to his Honour) "penned them himſelf, he truſted upon Sight thereof his Honour "would find, that *Digby* was lawfully deprived, and that he would "not conſent to his Reſtitution. Which, as the Maſter ſuggeſted, "would be a great wounding of his Government in a Man that "was ſo untowardly diſpoſed. Who had alſo but that Morning, "both privately and publickly charged him (the Maſter of the "College) in his Honours Name (as he ſaid) to accept him, as "Fellow. That his Anſwer to him both privately and before the "Seniors, was this, that in all dutiful Obedience he ſubmitted "himſelf to their Honours, (the Viſitors) and to the Authority of "their Viſitation. But that he had ſent their Honours an Anſwer "to all thoſe Reaſons alledged in the Letter, and had deſired to "hear further upon the peruſing thereof. And that whereas he "(Mr. *Digby*) had appealed to the Viſitors of their College, he "would accept them willingly, if after they had conſidered his "Anſwers, they ſhould conſent to his reſtoring." He added, that if any thing in his ſaid Anſwer were not proved ſufficiently, "he "deſired but only that ſome might be appointed for the further "hearing of it. And that if he juſtified not, both the Admoni-

“ tions and all other requiſite Points, he would give over quietly “ the whole Cauſe.

“ In the mean time (as he concluded) I beſeech your Honour, “ ſtand my honourable Lord in this Caſe; upon whom alone in “ this Earth I moſt rely; and ſuffer me not to be overborn by “ Mr. *Digby*, and his manners, to my Diſcredit and Confuſion “ greatly. And thus he humbly took his Leave. From St. *Johns*, “ the 13th of *April*, 1588.

Information of Digbies *Behaviour.*

“ In another Letter to the ſaid Lord, *Whitaker* thus informed him againſt *Digbies* Return to the College. “ That the peaceable “ Government of the College ſhould be utterly overthrown, if “ *Digbies* Suit might prevail. Yea, the State of the whole Uni- “ verſity was ſuch at that preſent, that his Cauſe being heard, if he “ were relieved and reſtored by ſuperior Authority, it would not be “ an eaſy Matter to reſtrain the Inſolency of a Number with whom “ he had to deal in that College; and other Colleges too much re- “ pleniſhed, (meaning with Popiſh affected Perſons.) Papiſtry at “ this Time had ſecretly encreaſed in *Cambridge*; and particularly “ in that College, as appeared ſince his (*Whitakers*) coming into it. “ And among others *Digby*, a Man notoriouſly ſuſpected; and one “ that by Confeſſion of ſome had given Encouragement to Papiſts “ in their Opinions, in that Houſe. Beſides, a Man continually “ ſcandalous, as he ſaid, he would declare to his Honour.

“ That for theſe Reſpects he was willing to have the very Ex- “ tremity of the Statute to paſs againſt him: Which yet was not “ without Advice of Dr. *Byng*, one of their Viſitors. And ſuch “ Commiſſioners were appointed to hear *Digbies* Cauſe, as he moſt “ deſired. Which made *Digby* boaſt at his Return (from *London*, “ where the Cauſe had been heard) that he was reſtored *in Statu* “ *quo*. And that he had preſumed to come into the Hall, and to “ ſit down at Dinner, not only as Fellow, but took the Place of “ the Preſident: And this, added *Whitaker*, was ſuch an Affront “ unto him, that he had declared to be *non Socius*, ſhould ſit down “ in the Preſidents Place, that if this were allowed, it were good “ for him to depart, and leave both College and Univerſity.

The Maſters Reſentment.

But notwithſtanding the Maſters Letters and Endeavours to the contrary, after ſome Months, *Digby* was actually reſtored. But how the ſaid Maſter reſented it, he expreſt in another Letter to the ſaid Lord: “ Malice to *Digby* he bore none, as God knew, who “ only was καρδιογνωστὴς. Neither did he ſeek any Revenge of him- “ ſelf at his Hands, having he truſted, learned *Chriſt* better than “ ſo. But only propounded in this Act the Glory of God, and the “ Good of that Society, and that, as he was perſuaded at the firſt, “ not only of his own Mind, but of others, that he might juſtly “ declare the Sentence of Deprivation againſt him. And ſo, notwith- “ ſtanding any thing that had been objected, he was perſuaded ſtill, “ and would not otherwiſe once have opened his Mouth in the Cauſe. “ Wherefore he humbly beſeeched his Honour to look into this “ Cauſe, that did ſo narrowly concern not only the good Govern- “ ment of that worthy College, but the good Eſtate of the whole “ Univerſity. That he muſt, and willingly did refer it to his ho-

" nourable Conſideration. He asked nothing in reſpect of himſelf; " and deſired only to retain his Favour..... That it was a common " Cauſe, that made him to deal as he had done. Wherein if he " ſhould be aſſiſted by his Honour, he ſhould humbly praiſe God, " and doubted not the whole Univerſity ſhould have Cauſe, for his " Honour. If otherwiſe, he ſhould ſubmit himſelf to Gods Provi- " dence, and his Honours Determination. This was dated *June* 1.

Earl of Leiceſter *to the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury *in this Cauſe.*

Let me here inſert a Letter from a great Man at Court in Dr. *Whitakers* Favour. After this Buſineſs between Dr. *Whitaker* and *Digby* had been ſufficiently heard, examined and determined, the Earl of *Leiceſter* thought fit to interpoſe a Letter to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, againſt *Digbies* abiding in the College. That though by his, and the Lord Treaſurers Decree he was reſtored to his Fellowſhip, yet that it might be provided that ſo dangerous and troubleſome a Fellow might be ſoon diſcharged the College, or loſe his Seniority. The Letter ran in this Tenor:

" My very good Lord, Whereas there are very ſtrong and cre- " dible Informations, that this *Digby* is a very unſound and factious " Fellow, I am to make a new and earneſt Requeſt unto your Grace, " that ſeeing Matter hath been ſo deliberately, and thoroughly " heard, that you may not undo it, you will limit this *Digby* " ſome ſhort Time of Stay in that College. So that he be gone " within a Quarter of a Year. Whereby neither this your Graces Action " ſhall be undone, and the College ſhall be diſburthened of a leud " Fellow; which diſturbeth the Government, and hath empoiſoned " their Youth. Your Grace may very well know, that this Matter " ſhould not ſo far be urged, but for Religions ſake. Which muſt " needs receive a Blow, if ſuch a Fellow remain among them. Or " if you ſhall deny me this Requeſt to appoint him this Time to " go away, and to depart; yet I will truſt, that you will grant " me thus much, ſo to receive him, that he be at laſt removed out " of the Seniority; that he may have the leſs Strength to do harm. " I aſſure your Grace he is a very naughty Fellow, from divers " Inſtructions which I have received of honeſt Men. Which may " not here be commenced againſt him without Prejudice of their " Places, which do commence them. Thus truſting, that he ſhall " looſe, for his Demerit, either his Fellowſhip or Seniority. I bid " your Grace right heartily Farewel. From *Wanſted*, the 6th of " *May*, 1588. *Your very loving Friend*, **R. Leyceſter.**

Cauſes offered by Whitaker *for the Deprivation of* Digby.

This *Everard Digby* is ſuppoſed to be the Father of Sir *Everard Digby*, concerned in the Gunpowder Plot. But the Unſoundneſs of this *Digbies* Religion, and his inſolent Carriage in the College with other Informations concerning him, are at large declared in a Paper, ſent by Dr. *Whitaker* to the Lord *Burghley*: Shewing that Lord the Cauſes in Vindication of his Proceedings, and moving him thereunto: As, that he was vehemently ſuſpected, upon great Preſumptions, to be of corrupt Religion. That he preached a Sermon at St. *Maries*, wherein he ſo commended voluntary Poverty, that Dr. *Fulk*, preaching in the ſame Place, confuted him ſhortly after. But ſee this Paper tranſcribed from the Original in the *Appendix*. Num. LXIX.

ANNO 1588.

Hickman of Benet College expelled; and why.

Such another Caſe happened this Year in *Benet* College in the ſame Univerſity, when a Fellow, named *Hickman*, was expelled that Houſe by the Maſter, Dr. *Copcote*, and five of eight Fellows, being the Majority of the Fellows then Reſident. His Fault was, that he was proud, idle, contentious, that ſtudied not, and contemned ſuch as did, contrary to ſome Statute of the College. This Proſecution ſeems to have been made by the Maſter and his Party of the Fellows: Who bore an ill-will indeed to him, occaſioned by his oppoſing the Election of the ſaid Maſter this Year. But *Hickman* making his Complaint firſt to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, the Queens Secretary, on whom he had ſome Dependance, the Matter at laſt came to the Chancellor of the Univerſity. Who referred the Conſideration thereof, (depending upon the Meaning of a College Statute) to the Archbiſhop. In the Life of whom ſome Account was given of this Buſineſs. To which I add, that when the College, upon this Appeal, was required to give the Reaſon of their thus dealing with *Hickman*, the Maſter and the five Fellows, gave it in a Letter to their Chancellor in theſe general Words;

Book III. *chap.* 19.

Quem approbatorem Domicilij noſtri literarij olim habuimus te nunc ejuſdem Conſervatorem fore ſperamus & Defenſorem. Itaq; cognoſce, quæſumus, Vir Nobiliſſime, non nos Anthonium Hickmanum, *ſed leges noſtras, quæ faſtum ubiq; & otio erudito immicos deteſtantur, ejeciſſe. Qui ut ſemper, dum nobis, cum vixit, tutum eorum qui literis operam dant, receſſum, concordiam, contemptui habuit.* The Sum of which Words was, That not they, but their Laws had expelled him: Who while he was among them, made but a Matter of Contempt of the Retirement and Concord of thoſe that followed their Studies.

But this was too general a Charge againſt *Hickman*, to enable the Chancellor to judge of the Juſtice of his Expulſion: Who ſhould have had the very Words of the Statute laid before him, which they ſeemed not to care to do. But *Hickman* tranſcribed the ſaid Statute at length, for the pretended Breach whereof they had ſo proceeded againſt him; and ſent it up to that Lord, with theſe Words, "The Statute of our College, whereby the Maſter and "Five of the Fellows claim Authority to proceed to my Deprivation. "And having *de facto* deprived me, refuſe to yield a Reaſon thereof "to any other ſuperior Judge.

The College Statute whereon they proceeded.

Quod ſi publica turpitudinis nota eorundem Sociorum, ſive Scholarium aliquem involverit, aut in ipſa Domo prædictorum aliquem, grave ſcandalum fuerit ſuſcitatum, vel adeo impacificus, & dyſcolus erga præfatum Magiſtrum & Socios, ſeu jurgiorum aut litium creber ſuſcitator extiterit, ſeu de Hæreſi, perjurio, Sacrilegio, furto, rapina, homicidio, adulterio, vel incontientia ſuperlapſu carnis, notoriè defamatus fuerit. Ita quod per Socios dictæ Domus, ſtatuto ſibi termino per Magiſtrum, ſe purgare non poſſit, dicta ſuſtentatio omnino ſubtrahatur, & ipſa ſicut ovis morbida, quæ totum gregem inficit, a dicta Domo juxta diſcretionem Magiſtri, & majoris partis Societatis prædictæ, penitus excludatur Nec alicui è Domo prædicta ſic ejecto actio competat contra Magiſtrum, &c. agendo, appellando, conquerendo, &c.

Hickman reſtored.

In ſhort, *Hickmans* Caſe, notwithſtanding any thing in the aboveſaid Statute to the contrary, proved ſo fair, that he had the Judgment of two learned Doctors of the Law, *Hamond* and *Forth* in his Favour. But it was not before three Years after, *viz.* the Year 1591, that he was reſtored to his Fellowſhip; when Dr. *Some* Vice-chancellor, and ſome of the Heads, *viz. Goad*, and *Whitaker*, gave a Letter to their Chancellor in that Behalf. And he was reſtored, Dr. *Jegon* being now Maſter of that College.

The Will of the Foundreſs of Sidney Suſſex *College.*

MSS. Burghlian.

Frances Counteſs of *Suſſex*, Relict of *Thomas Ratcliff*, Earl of *Suſſex*, died *March* the 9th this Year. Who was the Foundreſs of *Sidney Suſſex* College in *Cambridge*. And meeting with an Authentic Copy of her laſt Will, wherein is related this her Noble and Chriſtian Benefaction, ſhewing her pious Deſire for promoting Religion and good Learning, I ſhall here tranſcribe it, in Memory of her, beſide the monumental Memorial of her in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*. Which College accordingly was begun to be built *Anno* 1595.

“ Alſo where Sithence the Deceaſe of my ſaid Lord, the Earl of *Suſſex*, I have, in Devotion and Charity, purpoſed to make and erect ſome good and godly Monument, for the Maintenance of good Learning; and to that Intent have yearly gathered and deducted out of my Revenue ſo much as conveniently I could; I do therefore now in accompliſhing and performing of the ſame my charitable Pretence, what with the ready Money, which I have ſo yearly reſerved, and with a certain Portion of Plate, and other Things which I have purpoſely left, will and ordain, that my Executor ſhall beſtow and employ the Sum of 5000 *l.* over and beſides all ſuch my Goods, as in my preſent Will remain unbequeathed, for the Erection of a new College in the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, to be called, *The Lady Frances Sidney Suſſex* College; and purchaſing ſome competent Lands thereunto, to be annexed for the Maintenance of the Maſter and of ten Fellows, and twenty Scholars, Students there, according to the laudable Cuſtoms of the ſaid Univerſity; if the 5000 *l.* and remainder of my ſaid Goods unbequeathed will thereunto extend. And if the ſaid Portion of Money and Goods ſhall not be thought by the Judgment of my Executors to be ſufficient for that Purpoſe as to erect and found a new College in my Name, for the Maintenance thereof, as I before intended, then my Will and Mind is, that my ſaid Executors, by their beſt Adviſement and good Diſcretion, ſhall beſtow and employ the ſaid Sum of 5000 *l.* for the enlarging the College or Hall, called *Clare-Hall*, in the ſaid Univerſity of *Cambridge*; and for the purchaſing of ſome ſuch Lands, clear of Incumbrance, as the Reſidue of the ſaid Money will, or may purchaſe by their beſt Endeavours, to be annexed to the ſaid College or Hall for ever; for the Maintenance of ſo many Fellows and Scholars, to be kept and maintained there, as is now uſed; as the ſame Livings and Lands ſo purchaſed will conveniently maintain and keep, according to the ordinary Rate and Allowances, now uſed and appointed in the ſaid Univerſity: Which College or Hall from thenceforth perpetually ſhall be named, *Clare and Lady Frances Sidney Suſſex*

“ College or Hall; and the Scholars and Fellows, which ſhall be “ placed there in my Name, to have and enjoy ſuch and like Liberties, Cuſtomes and Privileges in the ſame Hall, as others the “ Fellows and Scholars there in every reſpect. And whatſoever “ my inſufficiency of Knowledge hath omitted for the orderly and “ ſtrict Directions of the Proceedings herein, I refer and commit to “ the further Diſcretion, Knowledge and Adviſement of my ſaid “ Executors; by whoſe Care, and with the Aſſiſtance of others my “ well and godly diſpoſed Friends, my ſpecial Will herein may be “ ſpeedily and truly performed, eſtabliſhed and done.

“ Requiring the Earl of *Kent* principally, and the reſt of my ſaid “ Executors, with the Aſſiſtance of my ſaid Superviſors and Aſſiſtants “ before named, for Gods Cauſe, and in diſcharge of their Conſciences, to execute and accompliſh this my preſent laſt Will and “ Teſtament in all things, and with all convenient Expedition, according to my Intent and Meaning; even as they will anſwer it “ at the dreadful and laſt Day of Judgment before the Throne of “ Gods divine Majeſty: Where the Secrets of all Hearts ſhall be “ opened and revealed.

Bambridg *and* Johnſon *cited before the Vice-Chancellor for their Sermons.*

There were two Fellows of *Chriſts* College in the ſaid Univerſity, *viz. Cutbert Bambridg*, and *Francis Johnſon*, *Diſciplinarians*, that this Year came into Trouble and Reſtraint, for certain Tenets and Doctrines preached and publiſhed in their Sermons at St. *Maries*, reflecting upon the Church eſtabliſhed, and containing ſome dangerous Poſitions. For which they were both cited by the Vice-Chancellor and Heads; and divers Articles framed out of their Sermons againſt them. To which they were required to anſwer upon Oath. But they refuſed ſo to do. And were both thereupon committed to Cuſtody, *Jan.* 23. Some Account whereof was given elſewhere, to which I refer the Reader; but I ſhall further enlarge this Univerſity Concern, with the Conſequences and Proceedings; which ſtuck a great while before the Heads, and afterward removed to a ſuperior Cognizance. Upon the Demand of the Heads, why they refuſed to give their Anſwers to thoſe Articles before-mentioned, they made theſe three Proteſtations. I. That we do from our Hearts reverence your Authority ſet over us by God. II. We refuſe not an Oath, as thinking it ſimply unlawful upon all Occaſions. III. That we are not afraid, nor unwilling to acknowledge and defend that which we openly taught, if any Man ſhall impugn it, or charge it to be unlawful, or unlawfully done.

Lif. Archbiſhop Whit. *Book* III. *ch.* 21.

Their Proteſtations.

Another Proteſtation.

The next Time they were called before the Heads (which was *March* the 13th) they made another Proteſtation, beſides thoſe they made before, namely, That their only Stay was, that in this their Caſe, having preached publickly, they might not be conſtrained under their own Oaths to give Matter of Accuſation and Proof againſt themſelves, if any Crime were committed, it being contrary to the Word of God, and Law. But to continue a further Relation of this remarkable Univerſity Occurrence:

The next Day of their Appearance (which was *April* the 18th 1589) they made this Proteſtation, that if the Oath offered in this their Cauſe could be ſhewed to be warrantable by the Word of God and Law, they were always ready to receive it.

The Cauſe is brought before their Chancellor.

By this Time the Cauſe between theſe Preachers and the Heads was ſent up to the Lord *Burghly*, their Chancellor. And ſoon after at another Appearance, they, hoping for ſome Advantage to themſelves by this ſuperior Judge, made theſe two Proteſtations more. Firſt, that they were ready, if they might be ſuffered, to come before the Lord Treaſurer, their honoured Chancellor, (which they thought they might do in this Caſe not infringing their Privileges,) to clear themſelves of the Matter informed to his Honour concerning their Sermons, and the whole carrying of themſelves in this Caſe. Or elſe, if they could not do it, they refuſed not to ſuffer any condign Puniſhment. And further ſecondly, if any there would charge them with the ſame things where withal his Honour had been informed, or with any thing in their Sermons, they did there offer ſufficiently to anſwer it by themſelves, or by Witneſſes; or elſe to ſuffer any Puniſhment due unto them. And that this they were ready to anſwer, according to their honourable Chancellors Letter, which required their Anſwer ſimply, not mentioning an Oath. All theſe Proteſtations were regiſtred.

Their Caſe ſtated by themſelves.

And then this was their Caſe, as they ſtated it. “After a Sermon required by Duty, and made at the wonted Time in the public and ordinary Place, and in the hearing of the known and uſual Auditory of the Univerſity and Town, conſiſting of many Hundreds; who are able to ſatiſfy of the Matter delivered at that Time: For the Judge in ſearching of what was ſpoken in the Sermon *ex mero Officio* to theſe, by extorting the Preachers by Oath, ſo as only out of his own Confeſſion under Oath to matter of Accuſation and Proof of his own Crime, (if there be any by him committed ſhould be drawn) we take to be againſt the Word of God, and the Law eſtabliſhed in this Realm.

Dr. Bynges *Reſolution.*

To which I might ſubjoin the Reſolution of Dr. *Bynge*, (a learned Civilian, and one of the Heads) to three Queſtions ſtarted upon this Caſe. I. Whether the Judge might proceed *ex Officio*, or no. II. Whether the Judge may begin with the Anſwer of the Party principal, before he proceed to convince him by Witneſſes. 3. Whether the Judge may compel the Party to Anſwer on the Oath. The Affirmative to which Quſtions he learnedly proved.

Letters from the Heads to the Chancellor. His Advocate.

The Caſe being now before their High Chancellor, the Heads ſtood firmly in requiring the Oath to be taken; and the two Fellows as ſtoutly refuſing to do it. And both the Heads and thoſe Fellows had addreſt their Letters to him. Who gave his Letters again to the Heads by way of Advice, and what his Thoughts were concerning their dealing with and proceeding againſt them, and that they, the Fellows, ſhould not be dealt rigorouſly withal. To which they anſwered, “that they dealt with them in civil and courteouſwiſe, with offer of Conference; as of Intent to perſuade, not to force them.” But when they had kindly communicated to *Bambrig* and *Johnſon* the Tenor of that Lords Letter, they took Advantage thereat; and made their Conſtruction of it, that his Lordſhip would not have them ſworn at all; becauſe there was no expreſs mention of receiving their Anſwer upon Oath. The Heads upon this Interpretation made by theſe Men of that Lords Advice, ſent up certain Meſſengers to wait upon him with their Letter, to acquaint him herewith. And becauſe theſe Fellows ſtood ſo much upon it, they took it to be their Duty, not to conceal this from him; and attended his Lordſhips further pleaſure therein. This was the ſum of their Letter, that they might more perfectly know his Mind concerning adminſtring the Oath: Signed by *Nevyl* Vice-chancellor, *Perne*, *Still*, *Tyndal*, *Copcot*, *Bynge*, *Preſton*, Heads. In anſwer the Chancellor wrote plainly concerning their Proceedings, that it ſeemed to be a very hard Courſe taken by them; meaning by detaining them ſo long in Priſon.

ANNO 1588.

Whereupon in their next to him, " They acknowledged it ſo to " have been, if they (the Vice-chancellor and Heads) had not firſt " aſſayed, by all good and gentle Means to prevail with them. " But that when they ſaw, they were wilfully bent to withſtand " their Government, and that others, who in like Caſe had been " before produced for Accuſers, were afterwards, not only by private Speech, but alſo public Reproches, very injuriouſly dealt " withal. And knowing, that whatſoever they pretended to the " contrary, that in this Caſe they ſhould do nothing but according " to Law, both eſtabliſhed by her Majeſty, and likewiſe to be juſtified by the Word of God: That they thought they were " bound, as in Convenience and Equity, ſo in Diſcretion and Duty " thus to procede. And the rather they had been induced thereunto by reaſon of ſome Speeches uttered by themſelves, and other " their Adherents (of whom they ſaid there was no ſmall Number) " that it might be, that God had herein revealed that unto them " which he had not done before unto any others, and that that " which had been long before in Darkneſs ſhould now by them be " brought unto Light; and that there was Hope, that this Action " of theirs ſhould reform the Abuſe, not only of this, but of others " Places where had been and was the like Proceeding. The which, " as they added, if it were an Abuſe, as they would be glad, " withal their Hearts, of due Reformation; ſo when the ſame belonged not unto them, but was to be done by more ſpecial Authority, they thought it their Parts not to ſuffer any Example " (there in that Place eſpecially) ſo prejudicial. And found by Experience of this one Dealing, that the ſame had done no little " good in their Univerſity. For that ſince that Time ſome ſtirring " Tongues had been very quiet, who before ſpared neither State, " nor Perſons of the greateſt Honour and Merit, living nor dead.

" We had much rather, our very good Lord, (as they proceeded) have concealed theſe Matters, than thus to have diſcovered " them, but that we be verily perſuaded, that they, together with " their Complotters, do practiſe hereby not only the Alteration " but ſubverſion of our Government; thereby to procure unto " themſelves Liberty without Controulment; (when they know, " how hard and odious a Matter it will be, upon every ſuch Occaſion to inforce Accuſers,) to ſpeak what they liſt, and againſt " whom they liſt. And therefore, as your Honour hath been ever " heretofore very careful for the ſuppreſſing of ſuch contentious " Perſons, and Maintenance of Peace and all good Order amongſt “us, ſo at this Time, and in this Particular, which doth ſo highly concern us, both in the public Cauſe, and our own private Credit, we do nothing doubt, but that your Lordſhip will allow of our Proceedings. And that not only, but alſo aſſiſt us by further Authority, as ſhall ſeem good unto your Honours Wiſedome.

“In the mean Seaſon they acknowledged themſelves moſt bound unto his Honour for the concealing of his Mind in this Matter from them. Becauſe they found them to be Perſons of that Diſpoſition, who took Encouragement by any Countenance that could be given them. And thus ſory they had this Occaſion to trouble his Honour; reſting herein upon the Knowledg of his further Pleaſure; and humbly took their Leaves. Dated from *Cambridge* the 4th of *May*, 1589. Subſcribed by *Nevyle*, Vice-chancellor, *Tyndal*, *Legg*, *Preſton*, *Bell*. I give the whole Letter, that the Knowledg of this Univerſity Controverſy carried on by the Diſciplinarian Faction there, might the better appear. But two Heads, Dr. *Goad* and *Chaderton*, openly, and one, *viz.* *Whitaker*, privatly proteſted againſt theſe Procedings.

The Judgment of this Caſe given by the chief Civilian.

The Cauſe at length was laid before divers Civilians of the greateſt Note, for the Uſe and Information, as it ſeems, of the Chancellor, and what the Judgment and Deciſion of ſo many learned Men was, take in their own Words, and Signed with their Hands, as I have it from an Original. And therefore may deſerve a Place here: Upon their due weighing of the Caſe drawn up by Dr. *Bynge*, and his Opinion thereupon, and the Fellows Anſwer thereunto; together with the Reſolution of divers Docters of the Arches; all laid before them, they writ thus.

“Having adviſedly peruſed all the Premiſſes here ſet down, notwithſtanding any Matter we have here ſeen, we are of Opinion, that the Parties here are bound by Law to anſwer upon their Oaths. And we find it harder in our Learning to give a good Reaſon of Doubt, than to yield any other Reſolution, tho' there preceded in ſuch a Caſe neither ſpecial Accuſation, nor Denuntiation.” Signed by *Bar. Clerk*, Dean of the Arches, *Aubrey*, *Drury*, *Jones*, *Lloyd*, *Stanhope*, *Forth*.

Bambrig *and* Johnſon *give Account of their Sermons.*

In ſhort, theſe two Fellows, however refractory they had been to the Heads, were afterwards brought to give Account of their Sermons; that made all this ſtirr; and to anſwer to certain Doctrines or Expreſſions therein that gave the Offence, and which were comprized in certain Articles, that had been offered them by the Heads. Theſe their Anſwers were probably ſent by them to the Chancellor, upon his Deſire. And they may be found tranſcribed in the *Appendix*. The Peruſal of which will ſerve to let in more Knowledge of theſe Mens Troubles. Num. LXX.

Bambrigg was at laſt reſtored to his College. For I find him Fellow there *An.* 1590. But *Johnſons* Fortune was ſevere; as his Temper and Principles were more dangerous. Holding our Archbiſhops and Biſhops, Antichriſtian: a *Browniſt*. I find him a Priſoner in the *Clink*. *An.* 1593.

CHAP. XXI.

The Death of the Earl of Leiceſter. *Some Remarks of him. The Lord* Burghleys *Meditation upon the Death of his Lady. Her Benefactions. Her Learning. An* Engliſh *Gentleman, viz. Sir* Edward Kelly, *in* Germany, *reported to have found the Art of making Gold; invited by the Queen into* England. *The Lord Treaſurers Letter to* Dyer, *to perſuade him. His Learning, and Deſerts towards* England. *Made a Baron by the Emperor. By his Order is ſeized.*

AMONG Matters Perſonal and Domeſtic that occur this Year, theſe following may be inſerted.

Death of the Earl of Leiceſter.

The Beginning of *September* put an End to the Life of the great Earl of *Leiceſter*, Maſter of the Queens Horſe, and Lord High Steward of her Houſehold; and had enjoyed many other high Places and Honours, being the Queens Favourite. Of whom much is told in our Hiſtories of the Times of Queen *Elizabeth*; and concerning him, ſeveral Relations have been made before in theſe *Annals*. His Diſeaſe was occaſioned by cold Rheums which troubled him about the beginning of this Year. For remedy whereof he ſeems to have repaired to *Buxton* Well in *Darbiſhire*, then in great Requeſt. And ſo he writ in a Poſtſcript to a Letter of his in *April*, to the Earl of *Suſſex*, whoſe Seat was in thoſe Parts: "My Lord, I doubt, I ſhall be driven to "come this Year to your Bath at *Buxton*. I have this Year been "troubled with Colds and Rheumes, that was never troubled "with them before. I had rather try this Remedy than other "Phyſic." Our Hiſtorian writes that he dyed of a continual Feaver. And his notable Character (none of the beſt) he gives at large.

Camd. Eliz. ſub ann. 1588.

Sometime under the Queens Diſpleaſure.

I ſhall inſert a Note or two more of him here. He often had the Misfortune to lie under the Queens Diſpleaſure, tho' he were ſo great a Favourite. But he had theſe humble ſelf-debaſing Appearances, that he ſoon recovered her Favour again. And thus he once told the Lord *Burghley* in a Letter, what he found by his own Experience; "God be thanked her Blaſts be not the Stormes "of other Princes, tho' they be very ſharp ſometimes to thoſe "ſhe loveth beſt. This he wrote *Anno* 1572.

A Receiver of Suits.

He was a great Receiver of Suits; thinking thereby to render himſelf gracious unto the People. And herein he made great Uſe of the ſaid Lord Treaſurer, in forwarding ſuch Requeſts of Suiters to the Queen in his Abſence. His laſt Letter written to that Lord, was dated from *Maydenhead*, *Auguſt* the 27. (not much above a Week before his Death) being gone then from his Houſe

ANNO 1588.

in *Wanſtead* in *Eſſex*, towards his Seat, *Kenelworth*, but dying in an Inn before he came thither. The Buſineſs of which Letter conſiſted of a Requeſt to him, in behalf of Sir *Robert Jermin*, to be moved to the Queen. As almoſt all his former Letters to that Lord commonly imported; namely, for preferring one or other of his Friends, or Allies, or Dependents. Whereby he ſtrengthned his own Intereſt by getting ſo many of his own Creatures preferred.

His End ſudden.

When he wrote this Letter he little thought he was ſo near his End. For he was then very well; and his Death was ſudden: And ſuppoſed by ſome to be brought about by ſome unlawful Arts. He went away into the Country in haſt. And made an Apology in his ſaid Letter, that he took not his Leave of his Lordſhip at his Departure: Hoping, as he added, to ſee his Lordſhip ere long again. And this openeth another Remark concerning his End.

A Conjuration about the Death of the Earl.

There was a ſtrange Paſſage of a Conjuration uſed about the Death of the ſaid Earl; whether to procure it, or ſome foreboding of it, I leave to the Judgment of the Reader. But the Matter (however ſecretly done) came at laſt before the Privy Counſil. The Occaſion of it was the Impriſonment of Sir *James Crofts*, Kt. Comptroller of the Queens Houſe, and one who had been employed in her Service abroad, and one of her Commiſſioners the laſt Year, ſent over to treat of a Peace with the Duke of *Parmas* Commiſſioners: When going ſomewhat beyond his Commiſſion, (as was told before) was committed to Cuſtody when he came home, chiefly by Means of *Leiceſter*, who was his Enemy; and ſo *Crofts* remained. But his Son (*Edward Crofts*) grieving for theſe Sufferings of his Father, applied himſelf to one *John Smith*, a famous Conjurer, expecting ſome Deliverance for his Father by his Art, by bringing Death upon the Earl. For which he was brought upon Examination before the Lords; and what that was, take his own Confeſſion; as I tranſcribed from the Original.

Chap. xv.

Crofts *Examination*, MSS. Burghlien.

"Being examined concerning the Earl of *Leiceſters* Death, he "ſaith, that after his Father, Sir *James Crofts*, was committed, "this Examinate came home to his own Houſe at *Charing-Croſs*; "and lamenting ſaid unto *Smith*, and *Pilles* Wife, that he and all "his were undon, except he had Help. And *Smith* ſaid, He "would do what he could. And willed this Examinate to give "him the Names of all the Council, which he did. And *Smith* "promiſed to tell him, who were his Fathers Enemies. And "did after tell him, that the Earl of *Leiceſter* was his great "Enemy. Within two or three Days after, *Smith* walking "up and down by this Examinate, made a Flirt with his "Thumb, and bade him be of good Comfort; *for the Bear is tyed to the Stake, or muzzled*; whether, he doth not remember. "And in what manner or ſort the Earl was dealt withal, he doth "not know.

"That *Smith* told him, that his Father ſhould not remain in "Priſon a full Month. And that this Examinate ſhould be the "Man that ſhould obtain the Warrant for his Delivery; and ſo he "did. Then follows *Smiths* Examination taken, and of ſome

“ others upon the ſame Conjuration, which I leave among the Records in the *Appendix*.

ANNO 1588.

Numb. LXXII.

Of the Death of *Mildred*, a very pious and learned Lady, Wife of the Lord *Burghley*, notice muſt be now taken. And meeting with a Meditation of that Lord (retired from Court) writ by him *propria manu*, occaſioned by her Death, in memory of ſo ſingularly excellent a Woman, I ſhall here leave it to Poſterity, tranſcribed from the Original.

L. Burghleys *Meditation upon the Death of his Lady.*

“ There is no Cogitation to be uſed with an Intent to recover that which never can be had again; that is to have my dear Wife to live again in her mortal Body, which is ſeparated from the Soul, and reſteth in the Earth dead, and the Soul taken up to Heaven; and there to remain in the Fruition of Bleſſedneſs unſpeakable, until the general Surrection of all Fleſh. When by the Almighty Power of God, (who made all Things of Nothing) her Body ſhall be raiſed up, and joyned with her Soul in an everlaſting, unſpeakable joy, ſuch as no Tongue can expreſs, nor Heart can conceive.

“ Therefore my Cogitation ought to be occupied in theſe Things following. I. To thank Almighty God for his Favour, in permitting her to have lived ſo many Years together with me, and to have given her Grace to have had the true Knowledge of her Salvation by the Death of his Son JESUS, opened to her by the Knowledge of the Goſpel; whereof ſhe was a Profeſſor from her Youth. I ought to comfort myſelf with the Remembrance of her many vertuous and godly Actions, wherein ſhe continued all her Life: And ſpecially, in that ſhe did of late Years ſundry charitable Deeds; whereof ſhe determined to have no outward Knowledge, while ſhe lived. Inſomuch as when I had ſome little Underſtanding thereof, and asked her, wherein ſhe had diſpoſed any charitable Gifts, according to her often wiſhing that ſhe were able to do ſome ſpecial Act for Maintenance of Learning, and Relief of the Poor, ſhe would always only ſhew herſelf rather deſirous ſo to do, than ever confeſs any ſuch Act. As ſince her Death is manifeſtly known now to me; and confeſſed by ſundry good Men, (whoſe Names and Miniſtries ſhe ſecretly uſed) that ſhe did charge them moſt ſtrictly, that while ſhe lived, they ſhould never declare the ſame to me, nor to any other.

“ And ſo now have I ſeen her earneſt Writings to that Purpoſe of her own Hand. The Particulars of many of theſe hereafter do follow. Which I do with mine own Hand Writing recite for my Comfort in the Memory thereof: With Aſſurance, that God hath accepted the ſame in ſuch favourable Sort, as ſhe findeth now the Fruits thereof in Heaven.

I. “ About ——— Years ſince ſhe cauſed Exhibitions to be ſecretly given by the Hands of the Maſter of St. *John*'s in *Cambridge*, for the Maintenance of two Scholars. For a Perpetuity whereof to continue, ſhe did cauſe ſome Lands to be purchaſed in the Name of the Dean of *Weſtminſter*. Who alſo in his own Name did aſſure the ſame to the College, for a perpetual Main-

ANNO 1588.

Her Benefaction.

tenance of the two ſaid Scholars. All which was done without any Signification of her Act or Charge, to any manner of Perſon; but only of the Dean, and of *William Walter* of *Wymbleton*: Whoſe Advice was uſed for the Writing of the Purchaſe and Enſurance.

II. “She alſo did, with the Privity of Maſters Deans of *Pauls*, and *Weſtminſter*, and of Mr. *Alderſey*, being free of the *Haberdaſhers* in *London*, give to the Company of the ſaid *Haberdaſhers* a good Sum of Money: Whereby is provided, that every two Years there is lent to ſix poor Men of certain ſpecial Occupations, as Smiths, Carpenters, Weavers, and ſuch like, in *Romford*, in *Eſſex*, 20 *l.* a piece. In the whole an 120 *l.* And in *Cheſthunt* and *Waltham*, to other ſix like Perſons, twenty Mark a piece; in the whole 80 *l.* which Relief by way of Loan is to continue.

III. “By the ſame Mean is provided for twenty poor People in *Cheſthunt*, the firſt Sunday of every Month, a Meſs of Meat, in Fleſh, Bread, and Money for Drink.

IV. “And likewiſe is provided four Mark yearly, for four Sermons to be preached quarterly, by one of the Preachers of St. *Johns* College. And theſe Diſtributions have been made a long time (while ſhe lived) by ſome of my Servants, without giving me knowledge thereof. Tho' indeed I had Cauſe to think; that ſhe did ſometime beſtow ſuch kind of Almes. But not that I knew of any ſuch Order taken for Continuance thereof. For ſhe would rather commonly uſe Speeches with me, how ſhe was diſpoſed to give all ſhe could to ſome ſuch Uſes, if ſhe could Deviſe to have the ſame faithfully performed after her Life. Whereof ſhe always pretended many Doubts.

“And for that ſhe uſed the Advice of M M Deans of *Pauls*, and of *Weſtminſter*; and would have her Action kept Secret, ſhe forced upon them ſome fine pieces of Plate to be uſed in their Chambers, as Remembrances of her good Will for their pains.

“She alſo did four Times in the Year ſecretly ſend to all the Priſons in *London*, Money to buy Bread, Cheeſe and Drink commonly, for four hundred Perſons, and many times more, without Knowledge from whom the ſame came.

“She did likewiſe ſundry times in the Year ſend Shirts and Smocks to the poor People, both in *London*, and at *Cheſthunt*.

“She gave alſo a Sum of Money to the Maſter of St. *Johns* College, to procure to have Fires in the Hall, of that College, upon all Sundays and Holydays, between the Feaſts of *All-Saints*, and *Candlemas*, when there were no ordinary Fires of the Charge of the College.

“She gave alſo a Sum of Money ſecretly towards a Building, for a new Way at *Cambridge* to the common Schools.

“She alſo provided a great Number of Books. Whereof ſhe gave ſome to the Univerſity of *Cambridge*: Namely, the great Bible in *Hebrew*, and four other Tongues. And to the College of St. *John* very many Books in *Greek*, of Divinity and Phyſic,

“ and of other Sciences. The like ſhe did to *Chriſts Church* and St. *Johns* College in *Oxford*. The like ſhe did to the College of *Weſtminſter*.

“ She did alſo yearly provide Wool and Flax; and did diſtribute it to poor Women in *Cheſthunt* Pariſh: Willing them to work the ſame into Yarn. And to bring it to her to ſee their manner of working. And for the moſt part ſhe gave to them the Stuff freely, by way of Almes. For ſhe cauſed the ſame to be wrought into Cloth, and gave it to the Poor, paying firſt for the ſpinning more than it was worth.

“ Not long afore her Death, ſhe cauſed ſecretly to be bought a Quantity of Wheat and Rye, to be diſpoſed among the Poor in time of Dearth: Which remained unſpent at her Death. But the ſame confeſt by ſuch as provided it ſecretly. And therefore in Conſcience ſo to be diſtributed according to her Mind.

“ *April the* 9, 1588. *Written at* Collings *Lodge by me in Sorrow*, W. B.

Another Paper of the ſaid Lords writing contained his Advice to the Dean of St. *Pauls* before his Sermon to be preached at her Funeral. Which was as follows.

His Advice about her Funeral Sermon.

“ *April* 21. 1589. I am deſirous to have it declared, for the Satisfaction of the Godly, that I do not celebrate this Funeral in this ſort with any Intention thereby, as the corrupt Abuſe hath been in the Church, to procure of God the Relief or the Amender of the State of her Soul; who is dead in Body only. For that I am fully perſuaded by many certain Arguments of Gods Grace beſtowed upon her in this Life, and of her continual vertuous Life, and godly Death, that God of his infinite Goodneſs hath received her Soul into a Place of Bleſſedneſs; where it ſhall remain with the Souls of the Faithful, until the general Day of Judgment, when it ſhall be joyned with her Body. And with that Perſuaſion I do humbly thank Almighty God by his Son Chriſt, for his unſpeakable Goodneſs towards the Salvation of her Soul: So as I knew no Action on Earth can amend the ſame.

“ But yet I do otherwiſe moſt willingly celebrate this Funeral, as a Teſtimony of my hearty Love, which I did bear her, with whom I lived in the State of Matrimony 40 and two Years alſo, without any Unkindneſs, to move ſeparation, or any Violation of Matrimony at any Time.

“ Further, this that is here done for the Aſſembly of our Friends, is to teſtify to the World, what Eſtimation, Love and Reverence God bears to the Stock whereof ſhe did come, both by her Father and Mother: As manifeſtly may be ſeen about her Hearſe, by the ſundry Coats of noble Houſes joyned by Blood with her. Which is not done for any vain Pomp of the World, but for civil Duty towards her Body; that is to be with Honour regarded, for the aſſured Hope of the Reſurrection thereof at the laſt Day.

Her Learning.

The Learning as well as Piety of this Lady appeared hence; that with the great Bible in *Hebrew* and other Languages which ſhe

ANNO 1588.

ſhe preſented to the Univerſity Library, ſhe ſent an Epiſtle written in *Greek* with her own Hand: Which I have ſeen. She uſed for her Prayers and Meditations a ſmall Pocket Book in Latin, richly bound, intitled, *Pſalmi ſeu Precationes* Johannis *Epiſcopi* Roffenſis. To which Book of Devotions ſhe ſet her own Name thus, *Mildreda Cicillia*, 1565.

Character in Print of this Lady, Printed 1595.

I cannot but add what Account was had of this Lady in the Times wherein ſhe lived, by the Character that was given of her not long after her Death by the Tranſlator of the Hiſtory of *France*, in his Epiſtle Dedicatory to two ſuch great learned Court Ladies, the one the Lady *Anne* Counteſs of *Warwick*, and the other the Lady *Katharine*, Baroneſs *Howard* of *Effingham*. Where ſpeaking of the accompliſhed Ladies then about the Queen, for Piety and Learning, he ſubjoyned. "That no ways he might
" here pretermit in this Liſt the famous religious and learned Lady,
" Flower of her Family [a Daughter of Sir *Anthony Cook* of
" *Guidy Hall*] provident Mother, bleſſed in her Poſterity, *Mildred*
" Baroneſs of *Burghley*, who beſides her Knowledge in the *Latin*
" Letters (wherein of a Subject ſhe excelled) ſuch were her Studies,
" Exerciſes and continual Meditation in the *Greek* Doctors of the
" Church (eſpecially *Baſil. Cyril*, *Chryſoſtome* and *Nazianſen*) as
" a chief Reader in that Tongue (*Laurence* by Name) had confeſt
" unto him, that in his Judgment ſhe equalled, if not over-matched,
" any, in whoſe Profeſſion moſt was to be required. Neither were
" theſe excellent Parts of hers only *Theorical*, but ſtill put in Prac-
" tice, like another *Dorcas* full of Piety and good Works, as with-
" out any Oſtentation or κενοδοξία, beſides her Readineſs in ſoliciting
" for poor and diſtreſſed Suitors unto her dear Lord (the auntien-
" teſt Councillor of *Europe*, *Pates Patriæ*, Pillar of the State, *&c.*)
" in her Life time, ſetting, on her own Charge, ſo many poor on
" Work, her Exhibition to Scholars, Liberality to Univerſities,
" bountiful to exiled Strangers, and moſt abounding Charity every
" quarter to all the Priſons about *London*, had manifeſtly declared.

An Heroic Poem Dedicated to her.

And ſuch was her Fame particularly for Learning, that *Chr. Ockland*, an eminent Grammarian made choiſe of her to Dedicate a *Latin* Heroic Poem, called ELIZABETHA, to her, printed firſt *An.* 1582. In theſe Words: *Ad prænobilens & in primis eruditam Fæminam, utriuſq; Literaturæ, & Græcæ & Latinæ, peritiſſimam, Dnam.* MILDRIDAM, *Dynaſtæ* BURGHLÆI, *magni Angliæ Theſaurarij, Conjugem laudatiſſimam.* Beginning,

Græcia *Virginibus doctis inclaruit olim,*
Quarum Scripta maneut hodie, &c.
O! Nymphæ, Vos, O! illuſtres dieo ſorores,
Quatuor, ante alias tibi ſed MILDRIDA, *celenda*
Attribuo primas, &c.

Sir Edwart Kelly *famed for making Gold, ſent for.*

There was an *Engliſh* Gentleman, called Sir *Edwart Kelly*, now or late at *Prague* in the Parts of *Germany*, that was confidently reported to have, as we ſay, the Philoſophers Stone; and by a certain Powder by his hidden Art prepared, by tranſmutation of baſer

Mettal to make Gold and Silver. The Fame of this Perſon made the Queen and others of the Court earneſtly endeavour his Return into *England*; eſpecially ſince Mr. *Dyer*, an Agent (as it ſeems) of the Queen in that Country, that knew him well, had aſſured the Lord Treaſurer of his Skill obtained thereof by his great Study, and of his Deſire to come and pay his Service to the Queen. Letters had paſt between them for this Purpoſe. And the Queen had appointed that Lord to write to the Agent to prevail with *Kelly* to come over, with Aſſurance of all Reſpects and an honourable Reception from her. For when he had been moved by *Dyer* upon the Queens Invitation to go into *England*, ſome there were, (that had no mind he ſhould) had thrown Doubts into his Head of the danger he might incurr of Trouble, if he went. To take off this Scruple from *Kelly*, that Lord in a Letter to the ſaid *Dyer*, gave him all Aſſurance to the contrary, and that from the Queen herſelf; whoſe Word might be taken, being ſo vertuous, ſo Noble and ſo Honourable a Princeſs. And ſo he was deſired to acquaint that Knight; to remove any ſuch Jealouſies out of his Mind. He proceeded, “ That there were indeed ſome in *England* that ſpake “ againſt him, as pretending to do a thing impoſſible; and others “ had ſaid, that ſome ſuch there had been, that pretended to that “ Skill, that proved but Cheats. But that they at the Court had “ a more honourable Opinion of him. That his coming would “ now eſpecially be ſeaſonable to her Majeſty, being now ready to “ encounter the King of *Spain*, that was advancing towards *England* with his mighty Preparations. And ſo *Kelly* might be very “ inſtrumental by his admirable Art, in reſcuing his Native Country from that imminent Danger.

At the Concluſion of his Letter he deſired *Dyer*, for the fuller Satisfaction of the Queen, “ To obtain from *Kelly*, to be ſent over “ to the Queen, a very ſmall Portion of that Powder, which he “ uſed in his Art; to make a Demonſtration to the Queen. “ On ſight of the Perfection of his Knowledge. Or, that, if he “ [the Lord Treaſurer] might have his Wiſh, to ſend, for a Token “ to her Majeſty, ſuch a Portion of it in a ſecret Box, as might “ ſerve for a reaſonable Sum to defray her Charges that Summer, “ for her Navy. ” All this and a great deal more did that Letter of the Lord Treaſurer contain, which in reſpect of the Curioſity of the Subject, and Eminency of the Perſon, I could not but give it a Place in the *Appendix*. Numb. LXXIII.

Kellies *great Abilities to ſerve his Country.*

What Belief the Queen and Court indeed had of this Gentlemans extraordinary Skill, is uncertain, but the important Reaſons that moved them to draw him into *England*, were, his ſingular Parts and Abilities in Learning, Experience in Foreign Courts and Dominions, and his good Deſerts to his Native Country. This I gather from a ſecret Letter writ the next Year to Secretary *Walſingham*, by D. *Dee* (probably the famous Aſtrologer of that Name) who was now abroad in ſome Place in the *Low Countries*; and gave the Secretary Intelligence of Affairs. Wherein among other Things he ſpake of Sir *Edward Kelly* with much Honour and Deference, for his Informations ſent from abroad, out of his Favour to the

ANNO 1588.

the *Engliſh* Nation in theſe critical Times. And, that as he D. *Dee*] had underſtood divers Things of dangerous Conſequence againſt the good State of his Native Country from divers, ſo particularly from Mr. *Edward Kelly:* “ One, who of all the Strangers and “ Inhabitants of that City [whence D. *Dee* now wrote, perhaps *Antwerp*] “ was the ſharpeſt witted, the greateſt Underſtander of “ all Occurrents general, yea, of very ſecret Purpoſes of divers “ great ones; the beſt Languaged *; one heretofore employed in “ Conſultations between the Orders of both Parties [*Spain*, and thoſe of the *Low Countries*] “ one who had been tried couragious “ in their firſt Bickrings againſt the *Spaniard* at *Antwerp:* And “ one, who ſeemed to have obſerved (of thoſe Innovations in the “ *Low Countries*) the Beginnings, Proceedings and Errors; Political and Military; committed on divers Parts. Adding, that “ this Man's Counſil he had required upon his own grave Declaration of ſuch Matters before ſpecified, by way of familiar Diſcourſe, as they now and then viſited one another. ” And that *Kelly* had ſhewed him, “ How in his Judgment, with her Majeſties Royal Honour and Indemnity, the unquiet and alienated “ Minds of this common and inferior Sort of People might receive “ Conſolation aſſured, and be recovered to due Love and Fidelity “ to her Majeſty; and alſo the Heads (called the *States* or *Orders*) “ might be reformed: So as finally theſe *Provinces* firſt might find “ and account themſelves happy under her Majeſties Government “ Royal.

* *As in* Hebrew, Greek, Latin, French, Italian.

The Emperor makes Kelly *a Baron.*

This Period of a private Letter to Secretary *Walſingham*, will let in ſome Light to the Character of this Man, and of the Deſire that was had of his Return into *England*. I add the Honour this *Engliſh* Gentleman had abroad. Living at *Prague* in *Germany*, he was known to the Emperor, who made him a Baron. For thus did D. *Dee* ſignify in his aforeſaid Letter: “ Mr. *Edward Kelly*, now “ in moſt favourable Manner created a Baron of the Kingdom of “ *Boemia*; with the Grant of a Coat of Arms; as I have ſeen in a large Seal, being a Lion Rampant with [the Lion of *England*] in a Bordure, with the Year on the Seal, *viz.* 1573. and a Motto round it.

Kelly *ſeized by the Emperors ſpecial Order.*

I do not find, notwithſtanding the aforeſaid honourable and earneſt Invitation given him by the *Engliſh* Court, that *Kelly* came into *England*. And indeed it appears, that he was not long after put under Cuſtody by the Emperor. And that as it is likely, to hinder his Journey. But this will deſerve a more particular Relation, which I am able to give from a Letter of an *Engliſh* Merchant, (as it ſeems) at *Frankford*, to Mr. *Edward Wotton*, an eminent Gentleman and Courtier in *England*; wrote in the Year 1591. *viz.* That he was ſeized by a private Order from the Emperor (the Cauſe concealed) in *April* the ſaid Year, ſeveral great Officers coming to his Houſe in *Prague* for that Purpoſe; and where Mr. *Dier* was with him: But he, without acquainting any one Perſon in his Houſe, on a ſudden conveyed himſelf away with all Secreſy; and ſo eſcaped for two or three Days: Till being ſearched for and purſued, was afterwards taken, going, as he pretended, only to viſit his Patron, the

ANNO 1588.

the Earl of *Roſembergh*. And ſo he was committed Priſoner to the Caſtle. This was ſurpriſing News in thoſe Parts; eſpecially towards a Perſonage that had been ſo highly valued, and innobled by the Emperor himſelf. And various Conjectures were made of the Reaſons that moved him to proceed in this manner. It was at firſt generally thought, that the Invitation (whereof ſome pretended to have ſeen the Letter) of his Return into *England*, occaſioned it. Other Cauſes thereof were talked of. As though it were ſome Crime intended to be committed againſt the Emperors own Perſon. Some, that it was upon Account of a great Debt of 32000 Dollers, which he owed to two Merchants in *Colen*, with whom he traded for Jewels. But that could be no Cauſe; for that he was known to be well able to diſcharge that Debt, being rich in Money and Lands. And to the Emperor he owed nothing, nor ever put him to any Charge; except for Coals and Houſe-room, [for his Employment in his Chymiſtry.] Another Reaſon given out for this his ſurprizing Apprehenſion, and that one of the chief, was, that the Emperor having been troubled a great while with a Throbbing in his Heart, which cauſed him ſoon to fall into a Swoun, and ſeemed to be a Diſtemper hereditary; Sir *Edward Kelly* had diſtilled an Oil for his Uſe in that Caſe. But ſome of *Kellies* Enemies being by, perſuaded the Emperor that he had intended to poiſon him with it. Theſe, with other Reaſons of this Dealing with this Man were reported about. All which, with the ſeveral Circumſtances of his being taken, and further Remarks of him and his Misfortune, I leave to be read at large in the aforeſaid Letter.

The Cauſe thereof.

Numb. LXXIV.

But to bring together ſomething more of this famous *Engliſh* Chymiſt, and the high Eſteem the Queen had of this her Subject; She diſpatched an Agent, one *Webb*, in the Year 1591. on Purpoſe, with her Letters to the Emperor in *Kellies* Behalf. And he had alſo Letters of Credence, and Inſtructions for his Demeanour in this Affair. And that he ſhould get all the Information he could from Mr. *Dyer*, who ſtill, (and as, it ſeemed, under Reſtraint) remained there, for whom alſo was part of his Meſſage: The Inſtructions were as follow; which I tranſcribe from the Lord Treaſurers own Hand:

The Queens Letter to the Emperor.

“ You ſhall have her Majeſties Letter to the Emperors Majeſty, to the Duke of *Saxe*, the Elector, and to the *Landſgrave Van Heſſe*, and a general *Salve Conduct* for you to all Princes and States; to permit you to paſs ſafely through their Dominions. When you ſhall arrive on the other ſide the Seas, you ſhall endeavour yourſelf to underſtand the Truth of the Country Report made of Mr. *Edward Dyers* Stay or Arreſt; and accordingly thereto you ſhall direct your Journey towards him. And if he ſhall be ſtayed in *Prague*, or in any other Place in *Bohemia*, or elſewhere, by the Emperors Commandment, you ſhall do the beſt you can, to give him Knowledge, that you are ſent to him by her Majeſty, to procure his Liberty and Return. And for that Purpoſe to let him know, that you have her Majeſties ſpecial Letter to the Emperors Majeſty, which you ſhall, if he ſo

Inſtructions to an Agent ſent to the Emperor about Kelly *and* Dyer.

" will, carry to his Majeſty, and ſollicit his Delivery. And " therein you ſhall uſe ſuch Reaſon to the Emperor in Defence of " Mr. *Dyers* Cauſe, as he ſhall inform you to be meet.

" But if Mr. *Dyer* be not arreſted by the Emperor, but ſhall be " ſtayed in any other Place in the Territories of any other Prince " of the Empire, as the Duke of *Saxe*, or the *Lantgrave*: Then " you ſhall do as the Letters to them directed. Or if he be out of " their Juriſdiction, yet you ſhall conſider, either in your own " Judgment, or from Knowledge had from Mr. *Dyar*, whether you " ſhall ſeek a *Mandate* from the Emperor, from her Majeſties Letters, or from the Favour of the Duke of *Saxe*, or the *Lantgrave*. Both which her Majeſty is well aſſured will further " her Majeſties Requeſt.

" You ſhall alſo enquire diligently, where Sir *Edward Kelly* is " arreſted, or for what Cauſe; whereof there are divers Reports. " Some, that he is arreſted at the Suit of ſome to whom he is " endebted in a Sum of XXV Thouſand Crowns. Some, that the " Emperor hath made him a Priſoner for abuſing of his Majeſty, " with Profeſſion that he could multiply Gold, and found therein " to have deceived many. By ſome, that his Intention was, ſecretly to have come into *England*, and here to have ſerved her " Majeſty with his Science: And that by Malice of the Popes " *Nuncio*, or the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, or otherwiſe by the Emperor; as unwilling to have her Majeſty benefited by him with " his Science. And ſo in doubtful Sort the Reports are made: " Whereof you ſeek to enquire the Truth. Whereof none ſhall " better inform you, than Mr. *Edward Dyar*. If there be any " other *Engliſh* Man ſtayed with Mr. *Dyar*, you ſhall do your beſt " to recover their Liberty. And as ſoon after your Arrival in *Germany*, you ſhall underſtand the Truth of Mr. *Dyars* State, you " ſhall advertiſe hither.

CHAP. XXII.

Books this Year ſet forth. Some relating to the Spaniſh *Invaſion: Some* Puritanical: *With Anſwers to them. An* Exhortation *to the Queens Subjects to defend their Country.* Anſwer *to certain* Spaniſh *Lies. Certain Advertiſements out of* Ireland. ELIZABETHA Triumphans. *The Coronation of* David. Penries *Supplication: And his Appellation to Parliament. His* Epitome. *A godly Treatiſe againſt the* Puritans. *An* Admonition *to the People of* England. *An Anſwer to Ten frivolous Reaſons, ſet down by the* Rhemiſts, *Tranſlators of the New Teſtament from the* Vulgar Latin. Diſputatio de Sacra Scriptura, contra hujus Temporis Papiſtas: Imprimis Robertum Bellarminum, Jeſuitam, &c. *by Dr.* W. Whitaker, *Regius Profeſſor of Divinity in* Cambridge.

THE *Spaniards* Invaſion of *England*, and the *new Reformers* Endeavours to promote their Diſcipline, gave Occaſion to the writing and publiſhing many Books this Year. Whereof theſe that follow were ſome of the Chief.

Books ſet forth.

An Exhortation to the Queens faithful Subjects.

An Exhortation to ſtir up the Minds of all her Majeſties faithful Subjects, to defend their Country in this dangerous Time, from the Invaſion of Enemies. Faithfully and zealouſly compiled by *Anthony Marten*, Sewer of her Majeſties moſt honourable Chamber. *Meliora ſpero.* This Book I have mentioned before; and therefore I ſhall only add a Period taken thence, to ſhew the Strain of the Writer.

" They [the *Spaniards*] for the greedineſs of a Kingdom; for " Deſpight they bear to our Religion; for Vain-glory, Pride and " Preſumption; for Maintenance of the Popes Kingdom; againſt " God, againſt his Word and Troth, againſt our bleſſed Queen; " againſt all Reaſon, Conſcience and Humanitie; do offer all this " Violence unto us. And we on the other Side, in Defence of our- " ſelves, our Native Country, our anointed Prince, our holy Re- " ligion, our own Jeſus Chriſt, his holy Word and Sacraments; " againſt very Antichriſt, and all the Pillars of his Church, and " againſt thoſe that have curſed and indighted the Kingdom; do " withſtand the Injury done unto us.

" We that have done ſo valiantly at other Times, when the " Quarel was but for Money, or other ſmall Matters, is it poſſible "but we ſhould be much more forward now in ſo great and weighty Cauſes? When had ever *England* ſo juſt a Cauſe to fight, as now? When did we ever more infinitely feel the Mercies of God, than now? When had we ever a more loving Prince to her Subjects, than now? When were ever any Subjects more obedient to their Prince, than now? When were there ever ſo many luſty and gallant Gentlemen to defend the Realm, as now? When were we at any Time better acquainted with the Sleights, and Cunning of our Enemies, than now? When had we more Skill in martial Actions and Trainings, than now? Finally, When had ever our Enemies more unjuſt Cauſe to deal againſt us, than now? and we more lawful Cauſe to defend ourſelves, than now? And therefore, when ſhould we ever have greater Hope of Victory, than now?

"If ever therefore ye bear any Affection to your Country: If ever any Love to Religion: If ever any Obedience unto a good and natural Prince: If ever you would venture your Lives for your Fathers and Mothers, your Wives and Children, or beſt deſerving Friends, *&c.* If ye have any Comfort in the Promiſes of Chriſt Jeſus: If you have Hope to receive Salvation by his Merit, and as ye will anſwer before God at the Coming of his Son; now ſhew yourſelves like Men, courageous and forward, prompt and willing to do all the Parts of Chriſtian Soldiers. ——Let neither the greedy Deſire of Money, nor the leud conſuming of Riches, nor the wanton Exceſs of Apparel, nor the Superfluity of Meats and Drinks, nor the coſtly Buildings, and curious Triming of Houſes, be any Hindrance to ſo honourable Actions.

An Anſwer to Untruths printed in Spain.

Another Book bare this Title, "*An Anſwer to the Untruths publiſhed, and printed in* Spain; *in glory of their ſuppoſed Victory*, achieved againſt our *Engliſh* Navy; and the Right Honourable, *Charles*, Lord *Howard*, Lord High Admiral of *England*, *&c.* Sir *Francis Drake*; and the reſt of the Nobles and Gentlemen, Captains and Soldiers of our ſaid Navy.

"Firſt written and publiſhed in *Spaniſh*, by a *Spaniſh* Gentleman, who came hither out of the *Low Countries* from the Service of the Prince of *Parma*, with his Wife and Family, ſince the Overthrow of the *Spaniſh Armada*: Forſaking both his Country and *Romiſh* Religion. As by this Treatiſe againſt the barbarous Impiety of the *Spaniards*, (and dedicated to the Queens moſt excellent Majeſty) may appear. Faithfully Tranſlated by *J. L.*

As the Author had dedicated this his Book to the Queen, ſo the Tranſlator (whoſe Name was *James Lea*) made his Dedication of it to the Right Honourable *Charles*, Lord *Howard*, Baron of *Effingham*, Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter, and Lord High Admiral of *England*, *&c.* In his Epiſtle he acquainted that Lord with the Occaſion of his ſaid Tranſlation; namely, "That lighting upon a *Spaniſh* Book dedicated to the Queen, containing an Anſwer againſt certain Untruths, publiſhed and printed in *Spain*, he noted, that Vertue could not but be praiſed even by

“ a late Enemy, (though now reconciled) a Stranger, nay, a *Spaniard*; forced by Truth itſelf to defend the Worthineſs of our *Engliſh* Nobility againſt his own Countrimen. And that he could not, but for the Benefit and farther Encouragement of his Country, publiſh his Work in *Engliſh*.——That as the *Spaniard* ſetting out ſuch Hyperbolical *Trophies* of their Conqueſts, ſought by ſuch Praiſe to encourage their Nobility, it behoved us not to be ſtained with Ingratitude; but to publiſh the Proweſſe of ſuch worthy Men, as ſtill with their Bloud painted out the worthineſs of their Reſolutions. Among whom his Honour had the chiefeſt Place, as High Admiral of ſo victorious a Fleet, and performed in his own Perſon ſuch honourable Service.

An Anſwer to certain Spaniſh *Lies.*

The running Title of this Book was, *An Anſwer to certain* Spaniſh *Lies*. For the Deſign of the Book was to expoſe the palpable Falſhood of divers Intelligences ſent to *Spain*, and to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *France*, of the mighty Victory the *Spaniard* had gotten over the *Engliſh* Fleet. Which News and Advices were writ ſeveral Times in the Months of *Auguſt* and *September*. Accounts of which have been given before. And becauſe *Mendoza*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *Paris*, was the Promoter and Divulger of theſe falſe Reports; the Author thus addreſt himſelf to him in the Beginning.

Chap. 16.

Mendozas *Credulity reproached.*

“ I marvail, good Sir, to ſee a Man of ſo noble a Lineage, and no leſs endued with Gifts of Nature than others, ſhould have your Ears ſo opened, to hear the Rumours and Lies which the ſcoffing and gybing Flatterers do write you. And I wonder not ſo much in that you credit them, as at the Speed wherewith your Honour doth write them,——— Your Honour writeth to *Spain*, that it is a Matter moſt true, that the Lord High Admiral was come, running away with 25, or 26 Ships, unto *London*, and that he had loſt his Ship that was Admiral, and that *Drake* was Priſoner: And that this was written for a Matter moſt certain by Perſons of Credit from *London*, &c.” Another Book of this Subject was,

A Copy of a Letter to Mendoza *from* England.

The Copy of a Letter ſent out of England *to* Don Bernardine *de* Mendoza, Ambaſſador in *France* for the King of *Spain*: “ Declaring the State of *England*; contrary to the Opinion of *Don Bernardine*, and of all his Partizans, *Spaniards* and others.

“ This Letter, although it was ſent to *Don Bernardine*, yet by good Hap, the Copies thereof as well in *Engliſh* as in *French*, were found in the Chamber of one *Richard Leigh*, a Seminary Prieſt: Who was lately executed for High Treaſon, committed in the Time that the *Spaniſh Armada* was on the Seas.

Thus the Writer beginning his Addreſs to *Mendoza*; “ My Lord Ambaſſador, though at the Time of my laſt large Writing to you of the State of this Country, and of our long deſired expectation of Succours promiſed, I did not think to have had ſo ſorrowful an Occaſion of any ſecond Writing, as now I have of a lamentable change of Matters of Eſtate here. Yet (as he proceeded) he could not forbear, (though it were with as many Sighs as Lines) to advertiſe him of the Truth of their miſerable

ANNO 1588.

" Condition, as now to him, and others of their Partie, the ſame appeared to be. That by comparing of all Things paſt in Hope; with the preſent now in Deſpair, his Lordſhip, who had the principal Managing to that Time of all their Cauſes, both here [in *England*] " and there in *France*, between the King Catholic, aſſiſted with the Potentates of the *Holy League*, and all his Countrimen [the *Engliſh*] that had profeſt Obedience to the Church of *Rome*, might now fall into ſome new and better Conſideration, how their State, both for themſelves at home, and their Brethren abroad, now at this preſent, fallen, as it were, into utter Deſpair, might be revived and reſtored to ſome new Hope, with better Aſſurance of Succeſs, than had happened hitherto.

" For which Purpoſe he had thought it neceſſary to advertiſe him in what Manner this Country [of *England*] then ſtood; far otherwiſe than of late, both they at home and others abroad made Account of. That he [*Mendoza*] knew how long they had depended in firm Hope of a Change of the State of this Country, by the Means of the devout and earneſt Incitations of the Popes Holineſs, of the King Catholic, and of the Potentates of the *Holy League*, to take upon them the Invaſion and Conqueſt of this Realm; and by his [*Mendoza*'s] Aſſurances and firm Promiſes they were, now of a long Seaſon paſt, perſuaded, that the King Catholic had taken upon him the ſame glorious Act; and thereof from Year to Year they looked for the Execution; being continually fed and nouriſhed from him to continue their Hope, and ſundry Times ſollicited by his earneſt Requeſt and Perſuaſion, to encourage their Party at home, not to waver, but to be ready to join with the outward Forces that ſhould come for this Invaſion, - - - That until this laſt Spring they were in Deſpair: At which Time he advertiſed them with great Aſſurance, that all the Kings Preparations, which had been making ready three or four Years together, were then in full Perfection, and without fail, would that Summer come into our Seas, with ſuch mighty Strength, as no Navy of *England*, or of *Chriſtendome*, could reſiſt, or abide their Force. And that to make the intended Conqueſt ſure, the ſame ſhould have joined to it the mighty Army, which the Duke of *Parma* had made ready, and kept in readineſs in the *Low Countries*, to land: And ſo both by Sea and Land this Realm ſhould be invaded, and a ſpeedy Conqueſt made thereof. " ———And that there would be a ſtrong Party in this Realm to join with the Foreign Force. After this Manner did that *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *Paris* raiſe the Expectation of the Papiſts in *England*.

" But alas! (as it follows) and with a deadly Sorrow, we muſt all, at home and abroad, lament our ſudden Fall, from an immeaſurable high Joy, to an immeaſurable deep Deſpair: And that ſo haſtily fallen out, as, I may ſay, we have ſeen in the Space of 8 or 9 Days in this laſt Month of *July*, which was from the Appearance of the Catholic great Navy upon the Coaſt

“ of *England*, - - - all our Hopes, all our Buildings, as it now appeareth, but upon an imaginary Conqueſt, utterly overthrown, as it were with an Earthquake: All our Caſtles of Comfort brought to the Ground; which now, as it ſeemeth, were builded but in the Air.” Then he proceeded to tell *Mendoza*, how the Catholics began to doubt of their Cauſe, and to attribute this ill Succeſs to the Hand of God. “That he was aſtoniſhed, what he might beſt think of ſuch a Work, ſo long Time in framing, to be ſuddenly overthrown, as by no Reaſon could proceed of Man, or of any earthly Power, but only of God. And thereupon many *Engliſh* Catholics miſliked of the Popes way of Reformation by Force. That the untimely publiſhing of the intended Conqueſt, before the *Spaniſh* Navy was ready, did great Hurt: That the Hearts of all ſorts of People were enflamed againſt the *Spaniards* vaunting to conquer *England*.

The Popes Bull.

“ The Writer of this Letter took Notice with Diſlike, of a new *Bull*, (which he had ſeen) lately publiſhed at *Rome*, by the Popes Holineſs, with more Severity than others of his Predeceſſors. Whereby the Queen here was accurſed, and pronounced to be deprived of her Crown, and the Invaſion and Conqueſt of the Realm committed by the Pope to the King Catholic, to execute the ſame with his Armies both by Sea and Land; and to take the Crown to himſelf, or to limit it to ſuch a Potentate, as the Pope and he ſhould name. And ſecondly, there followed a large Explanation of this Bull; by ſending hither a Number of *Engliſh* Books printed in *Antwerp*, even when the Navy of *Spain* was daily lookt for; the Original whereof was written by Cardinal *Allen*.—— [who ſtiled himſelf the *Engliſh* Cardinal.] Which Book was ſo violently, ſharply and bitterly written — againſt the Perſon of the Queen, againſt her Father King *Henry* VIII, againſt all her Nobility and Council; as in very Truth (as he added) I was ſorry to perceive ſo many good Men of our own Religion offended therewith: In that there ſhould be found in one accompted a Father of the Church, who was alſo a born Subject of the Crown, ſuch foul, vile, irreverent and violent Speeches, ſuch ireful and bloudy Threatnings of a Queen, of a Nobility, yea, of the whole People of his own Nation.

The Letter is continued with Account of the Preparations made by the Queen againſt the *Spaniard*, and her mighty Succeſs. To this Paſs came all *Mendozas* Zeal againſt *England*. Which divers of theſe *Engliſh* Catholics, upon the ill Concluſion of theſe threatning Projects, reproached him with.

Advertiſements out of Ireland.

Another Book of this Subject now came forth, bearing this Title. “*Certain Advertiſements out of* Ireland, concerning the Loſſes and Diſtreſſes that happened to the *Spaniſh* Navy, upon the *Weſt* Coaſts of *Ireland*, in their Voyage intended from the *Northern* Iſles beyond *Scotland*, toward *Spain*.

This Book relates from Day to Day, beginning at the 7th of *September*, and ſo on for ſome Days, the Loſſes of Ships and Men, the Wrecks and Miſeries, and the Perſons of Quality, and others taken on that Coaſt. And then follow Examinations of ſeveral eminent

ANNO 1588.

The Examination of J. Anthonio, *taken in a Ship ſunk.*

eminent Perſons in that Fleet, that were taken and ſaved, according to the Reports ſent from *Ireland.* Whereof one of the examined was *John Anthonio De Monona*, an *Italian*, Son to *Franciſco De Monona*, Pilot of the Ship, called *Sancta Maria de la Roſe*, of a Thouſand Tuns, caſt away in the Sound of *Bleſkey.* “ Who, “ examined the 11th of *September*, ſaid, that he and the reſt part- “ ed from the *Engliſh* Fleet, as he thought, about the Coaſt of “ *Scotland.* And that at that Time they wanted of their whole “ Fleet four Gallies and ſeven Ships, and one Galliaſſe, which was “ the Captain Galliaſs. And there were then dead, by Flight and “ by Sickneſs, eight Thouſand Men at the leaſt. Where he left “ the Duke [Admiral] he knew not, but it was in the *North* Seas “ about 18 Days ſithence. That he ſaw then no Land; and “ therefore could name no Place. But they ſevered by Tempeſt. “ That the Duke kept his Courſe by the Sea. They drew toward “ Land to find *Cape Clere.* So did divers other Ships, which he “ thought to amount to forty Ships. And with the Duke there “ went Five and twenty.

He informed further, “ That two Ships were ſunk upon the “ Coaſt of *Scotland*, by reaſon of Shots received from the *Engliſh* “ Ships. The one, called St. *Matthew*, of 500 Tuns, wherein “ were drowned 450 Men: The other Ship a *Biskey* of St. *Sebaſtian*, of 400 Tun; wherein were drowned 350. And the Ship “ wherein he was, called S. *Maria Roſe*, of one Thouſand Tuns. “ Wherein of 500 there eſcaped but himſelf. In which, of prin- “ cipal Men, there were drowned theſe principal Men following; “ the Prince of *Aſcule*, baſe Son to the King of *Spain:* Captain “ *Matuta*, Captain *Convalle*, a *Portugal*, and the Captain of the “ ſaid Ship; three were more of Note of *Caſtile:* The General of “ all the Fleet of *Guipuſque*, called *Don Michael d'Oquendo:* “ And twenty other Knights and Adventurers upon their own “ Charges.

And being examined, what Ordinance, Wines or other Matters of Moment was in the Ship here caſt away, ſaid, “ There were “ fifty great Braſs Pieces, all Canons for the Field, twenty-five “ Pieces of Braſs and caſt Iron, belonging to the Ship. Alſo there “ was in her fifty Tons of Secke; in Silver 15000 Duckets; in “ Gold as much more; much rich Apparel, and Plate, and Cups “ of Gold.” There were ſeven other Examinations taken of ſeveral Perſons of Note in that Fleet; (which I omit, being too large to ſet down here) which give a particular Account of thoſe Loſſes and Diſaſters. At the End of this Tract is added a Liſt of the Ships and Men ſunk, drowned, killed and taken upon the Coaſt of *Ireland*, in the Month of *September.* The Number of Men amounted to 5394. Ships 17. Which may be found before in the *Appendix.*

Elizabetha *Triumphans.*

Another Book of this Subject now alſo appeared, Intitled, “ *ELIZABETHA triumphans. Containing the damned Practices,* “ *that the deviliſh Popes of* Rome *have uſed ever ſithence her firſt* “ *coming to the Crown:* By moving her wicked and traiterous “ Subjects to Rebellion and Conſpiracies. Thereby to bereave her “ Majeſty

ANNO 1588.

"Majeſty both of her lawful Seat, and happy Life. With a Declaration of the Manner, how her Excellency was entertained by her Soldiers in her Camp Royal at *Tilbery* in *Eſſex:* And of the Overthrow had againſt the *Spaniſh* Fleet. Set forth, declared and handled by *J. A. Poſt Victoriam Gloria.* The Author dedicated this his Work, *To the Right Worſhipful, indued with all Singularity,* Julius Cæſar, *Dr. of the Civil Law, chief Judge of her Highneſs Honourable Court of Admiraltie, and one of the Maſters of the* Requeſts *to the Queens moſt excellent Majeſty:* Shewing his Patron, That the Intelligence of the Commonneſs of Ballads, with Books to this Purpoſe, cauſed him to publiſh this his Work; truly and effectually declaring the wicked Attempts of the deviliſh Pope, with his damned Adherents practiſed, rather than to let ſuch broken Tales, told in plain Ballads, expreſs the unſpeakable Acts, and wondrous Overthrows had againſt the Pope, by this our Royal Queen, and her (by this made famous) Iſland." Subſcribed *Ja. Aske.* It is all in blank Verſe; and begins thus:

I write not of the Labours (paſſing ſtrange)
Which Joves *baſe Son with wondrous Fame atchiev'd;*
Ne of the Acts, the never dying Acts,
That Engliſh *Kings have done long Time ago,*
But all my Drift is to declare the Deeds,
The famous Deeds that this our Sacred Queen
Performed hath, ſince Sol *hath paſt the Signes*
Juſt thirty Times with thoſe his ſhining Lights, &c.

This Heroic Poem contains a moſt particular Deſcription of the Expedition againſt *Spain* both by Sea and Land; and chiefly of the Camp at *Tilbury*, of the Queens coming thither, and of her Acting, Speeches and Behaviour there; more than any other Hiſtory of that Subject, I think, extant.

The Coronation of David.

There came forth likewiſe this Year a Book, called, "*The Coronation of* David. Wherein, out of that Part of the Hiſtory of *David*, that ſheweth, how he came to the Kingdom, we have ſet forth unto us; What is like to be the End of theſe Troubles that daily ariſe for the Goſpels ſake. By *Edm. Bunny.*" Who was an eminent Divine and Writer in *Yorkſhire*. The Book is dedicated to the Right Honourable *Henry*, Earl of *Huntingdon*, Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter, and Preſident of her Majeſties Council, in the North Parts eſtabliſhed, and Lieutenant General of her Majeſties People and Forces there. In his Epiſtle the Writer made a Remark, "Of the dangerous, ſtrange and unnatural Practices againſt the Queen, tending to the Overthrow of them all; and of late, that God had threatned them with Hoſtility and Foreign Invaſion, and with the worſt, that a proud and idolatrous, and an inſolent People was able to do. Wherein he had not clean forgotten them [the *Engliſh* Nation] but in the midſt of thoſe Threatnings, had hitherto uſed great Mercy towards them.

Theſe Aſſaults upon this Proteſtant Kingdom, profeſſing the Goſpel, and Queen *Elizabeth*, the great Defender of this Faith, and the continual Troubles raiſed to overthrow it, gave Occaſion to the writing this Book, the Author obſerving, “ The great Broils at that “ Day raiſed in theſe Parts of *Chriſtendom* againſt the Goſpel of “ Jeſus Chriſt; and like to continue; becauſe new and freſh Troubles did continually follow hard upon ſuch as had gone before:” Comparing their preſent Condition to the Storms in the Lake of *Genezareth:* “ When the Wind and the Sea did both together “ ſeem to conſpire againſt that Bark, wherein Chriſt was with his “ Diſciples, for to have drenched and drowned them; the Wind [*i. e.* the Pope] “ ſtirring and raiſing the Sea; [*i. e.* the *Spaniard*] “ the Sea getting up and growing rageous, and both together furiouſly beating with all their Might on the ſeely Veſſel. Even “ ſo now alſo, ever ſince it had pleaſed the Lord to vouchſafe “ them the Goſpel again in ſo plentiful Manner, all the People “ and States of the World had bent themſelves againſt it.

The Purpoſe of that Book, of the Coronation of David.

So that the Purpoſe of this Book of the *Coronation of* David, was to ſhew the State of the Reformation of Religion, or the Goſpel, under the Hiſtory of *David*, and his Troubles, and the happy Iſſue of them. “ That for the Comfort and Inſtruction of thoſe “ that were ſo poſſeſt with Fear, when Tyrants ſo threatned, and “ made ſuch Preparations, he had made choice of that Part of the “ Story of *David*. For ſeeing *David* was a Figure of Chriſt, and “ ſuch as was the State of Chriſt here on Earth, ſuch alſo muſt be “ the State of the Goſpel, whenſoever it is ſent to us; how great “ Reſiſtance for a Time it findeth, and how, notwithſtanding it is “ moſt ſure to prevail in the End. ” So that the Contents of the Authors Diſcourſe were, That as *David* was grievouſly perſecuted, before he could attain to the Kingdom, ſo it hath been, and yet is, with the Goſpel of Chriſt. And that as *David* was afterwards brought, firſt to one Part of it, and then to the Whole: So the Goſpel, being in ſuch Manner advanced as it is already, is therein alſo as likely to be further advanced. But yet that we are to await the Goodneſs of God in ſuch a Courſe, as *David* did. Divers Examples brought of the like Works of God, and applied to our Comfort. And laſtly, there is a Prayer to that End, going upon the whole Story, all taken out of *Davids* Pſalms.

Schiſmatical Books ſet forth.

Pag. 420, 421.

Puritans writ divers Books this Year againſt the Archbiſhops and Biſhops with much bitterneſs; as condemning the preſent Government of the Church by ſuch. The Titles of ſome of theſe Tracts are mentioned by *Camden* in the Life of Queen *Elizabeth: Viz. Martin Marprelate*, *Minerals*, *Diotrephes*, *A Demonſtration of Diſcipline*, &c. Concerning which, thus the ſaid *Camden* writes; “ That in theſe Libels they belched forth moſt virulent Calumnies, and opprobrious Taunts and Reproaches in a ſcurrilous “ Manner, the Authors thereof *Penry*, and *Udal*, Miniſters of the “ Word, and *Job Throgmorton*, a learned Man, and of a facetious “ and gibing Tongue.

This *Penry*, the chief of them, framed a Book, called, *A Supplication* to the Parliament now ſitting; and another, being his *Appellation* to them, in regard of himſelf, falling into Trouble for the former Book.

Penries *Supplication.*

From his *Supplication*, I collect theſe Paſſages. “That God would, it was to be feared, enter into Judgment with the whole Land, and make his Sword drunk with Blood, *&c.* for eſtabliſhing ſuch Inſtitutions [meaning Epiſcopal Government] as were directly againſt his Majeſties revealed Will. - - - - *Penrie* ſets forth his Undertaking in theſe Words: “I do, for the Diſcharge of my Duty and Conſcience toward the Lord, his Church, my Country, [*Wales*] and the whole Eſtate of the Kingdom, taking my Life in my Hand, teſtify unto you [the Parliament] before the Majeſty of God, *&c.* that our dumb Miniſters, that the Calling of our Lord Biſhops, Archdeacons, Commiſſaries, and all other Remnants of that Sacrilege brought into the Church by that *Romiſh* Strumpet, and now remaining in *Wales*, are intolerable before the Lord. - - - - The Truth whereof I do briefly make known by Reaſons following, and offer to prove them more at large, even upon the Peril of my Life, againſt our four Lord Biſhops [*i. e.* of *Wales*] all their Chaplains, Favourers, and Well-wiſhers; whether in either of the two Univerſities of this Land, or in any Place elſewhere ſoever.” Take his Threatning too: Speaking to the Parliament: “Truly for mine own Part, God aiding me, I will never leave the Suit, though there ſhould be a Thouſand Parliaments in my Days, until I either obtain it at your Hands, or bring the Lord in Vengeance and Bloud to plead againſt you, for repelling his Cauſe.

His Words of Convocations.

Once more, theſe were his Thoughts of *Convocations*. “If indeed the Convocation-Houſe were ſuch as it ought to be, *viz.* a Synod of ſincere and godly learned Miniſters: Wherein Matters of Religion were determined of according to the Word, and Cauſe of God heard without Partiality; then indeed were it their Parts, to ſet down for the Direction of the Parliament, ſuch Things as were behoofful for the Glory of God, and the Good of the Church. And the Parliament by their Direction, according to the Word, ought to enjoin all the Miniſters and People, whatſoever ſhould be thus enacted by the Civil State. And if the Convocation-Houſe were ſuch an Aſſembly, then were it not lawful for the Parliament to eſtabliſh any Thing in the Matter appertaining, unto the pure Worſhip of God among their People, but that wherein they ſhould be directed by the Advice of the Church Governors. - - - - But you ſhould not permit them to enact what they would by their own Authority; eſpecially, their Decrees being now as they are, to the ratifying of Corruptions, and to the Continuance of ungodly Callings within theſe Dominions. - - - - Small Hope there was to be conceived of reforming the Abuſes of the Church, if the Redreſs be committed unto that Meeting. And that they of the Honourable Court of Parliament were to underſtand, that the Convocation-Houſe condemned this Cauſe of Chriſt, then in Hand, before it was heard;

ANNO 1588.

“ and that their own Endeavours, who were there met, was, how to prevent him [Chriſt] from bearing Rule in the Church by his own Laws. For that it was well known, that all of them had banded and linked themſelves together, to maintain the Corruptions of our Church.

The Parliament addreſt to for Religion to be reformed.

And then for bringing the Cauſe of Religion before the Parliament, he addreſt himſelf to the Parliament after this Manner: “ When you ſay, that you may not deal in Matters of Religion, becauſe the Determinations of that Cauſe is referred unto the Biſhops aſſembled in the Convocation-Houſe; which in their Canons are to provide and ſee, that the Church be not in any decayed State; do you not thereby think, you rob yourſelves of your own Prerogative and Liberty, and take Order, that the Church without Controverſy may be ſtarved and ſpoiled?

This *Supplication*, containing all theſe Expreſſions, and many more ſo reflecting upon the preſent Government of the Church eſtabliſhed, awakened the Biſhops, and the Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical, and particularly the Archbiſhop; ſo that diligent Search was ordered to be made for the Author and his ſaid Books. And at length he was taken and the Books too. And then being in hold for ſome Time, ſoon after took the Confidence to write his own Vindication thus intitled:

Penry *taken up.*

His Appellation.

The Appellation of John Penri *unto the High Court of Parliament, from the bad and injurious Dealing of the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury, *and others of the High Commiſſion.* “ Wherein the Complaint humbly ſubmitting himſelf and his Cauſe unto the Determination of this Honourable Aſſembly, craveth nothing elſe, but either Releaſe from Trouble and Perſecution, or juſt Trial. This he writ when he abſconded, being ſearched for by the ſaid Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, the enſuing Year, 1589. In this *Appellation* he thus declared himſelf, and what he had done.

“ That in the 29th Year of her Majeſties Reign, the Lord vouchſafed to uſe him, as an Inſtrument to motion the Parliament, holden by Prorogation, in the Cauſe of God's Truth; not known unto the Archbiſhop, or any others of the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion before. That his Suit then that he made to the Parliament, was, that the Goſpel of Chriſt might in a ſaving Manner be made known and publiſhed among the Inhabitants of *Wales*, his dear and native Countrymen. That the Equity of this Petition he manifeſted in a publick Treatiſe, allowed to be printed by publick Authority. And the *Supplication*, together with the printed Treatiſe, was preferred by a worſhipful Gentleman, himſelf a Member of the Houſe: - - - - That the Parliament ſhewed no Diſliking thereof, though they ſinned in the careleſs Reſpect they had thereto.

“ But (as he went on in his *Appellation*) the Archbiſhop and his Aſſociates [the Commiſſion] thought the Enterprize to be intolerable. Their diſlike of the Petition they did not conceal, but preſently diſpatched their Warrants, to call in the printed Books; and to make Enquiry for the Author. And that the Books in

ANNO 1588.

“ Number about 500, together with himſelf, were faſtned upon by “ the Wardens of the Stationers, accompanied with the Purſevant. And that thereupon being carried before the High Commiſſioners, he was (as he ſaid) for enterpriſing the former Action “ charged by the Archbiſhops own Mouth, not only to be a factious Slanderer of her Majeſties Government, but alſo to have “ publiſhed flat Treaſon and Hereſy in his ſaid Treatiſe. That he “ was threatned very bloudily, and reviled in a moſt unchriſtian “ Sort, with earneſt Proteſtation, that they wondred, how he durſt “ ſollicit the Parliament in that Petition. And then he makes this Reflection, “ See the curſed and outragious Profanation of theſe, “ whom the Lord in his juſt Judgment had given over to withſtand “ the mighty Power of the Word.

He went on to relate what further happened to him: “ That he “ was kept twelve Days at his Keepers utmoſt Peril. ” And after a Months Impriſonment he was delivered without Examination. And ſo was releaſed. But he ſoon drew more Troubles upon himſelf. “ Becauſe (as he gave the Reaſon) he ſaw himſelf bound in “ Conſcience not to give over his Purpoſe, and as it pleaſed the “ Lord to encreaſe his Care in ſeeking the good of his Countrimen, “ ſo his Adverſaries augmented their Fury and Rage towards him, (as he ſtiled, the Care of the Commiſſioners Eccleſiaſtical) in ſending an Officer to ſearch for him, as far as *Northampton*, where his Abode then was with his Printing-Preſs. Where his Writings were ſeized, but him they found not.

And then after ſome further Narration of this Buſineſs, he (thinking by this Means to eſcape the Danger of the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion) appealed to the Parliament in theſe Words: “ That “ he did, in moſt dutiful Sort make this his juſt Appellation from “ the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and the reſt of his Collegues in “ Commiſſion, unto the Honourable and High Court of Parliament.

The Epitome.

The *Epitome* was one of the Books ſet forth by *Martin Marprelate*, writ againſt Dr. *Bridges*, who had printed ſomething againſt him and his Party. To which *Epitome* he ſet this fantaſtical Title, in ſcorn and deriſion of his Adverſary, *Oh! read over* Dr. John Bridges. *For it is a worthy Work: Or, an Epitome of the firſt Book of that right worſhipful Volume* writ *againſt the* Puritans, *&c.* Of this Book I have taken Notice before.

A godly Treatiſe touching the Miniſtry, &c.

Some Books alſo on the other Side in juſtification of the Church Government, as this for one, writ by *Some*, a learned Dr. of Divinity of *Cambridge*. Which bore this Title, *A godly Treatiſe, containing certain Queſtions moved of late in* London, *and other Places, touching the Miniſtry, Sacraments and Church.* Written by *Robert Some*, D. D. His Preface to the Reader will inform us what Adverſaries he is to deal with; and the Contents, what Subject he is to treat of againſt them: He tells the Reader, “ There “ were two Sorts of Recuſants in this Land, the one Popiſh, the “ other Anabaptiſtical: They gave out, that we have no Miniſtry, “ no Sacraments, no viſible Church. Theſe, that other Sort of “ Men, laboured of two Diſeaſes. The one was great Pride, the

“ other

ANNO 1588.

“ other groſs Ignorance. Their Pride appeared in their Behaviour, “ which was void of Humility. Their Ignorance in their Arguments. Which hung together as a ſick Mans Dream.

The Table of ſuch Points as were contained in this Treatiſe, followed. 1. “ A godly Prince, may and ought to compel his “ Subjects (if any refuſed) to the external Service of God. 2. A “ godly Prince may not ſuffer any Religion, but the true Religion, “ either publickly, or privately, in his Dominions. 3. Able “ Teachers ought to be provided (ſo much as can be) for the “ Churches. 4. The Teachers of Religion muſt have Maintenance. “ 5. Almighty God bleſſeth thoſe Kingdoms with Peace, which “ promote and embrace his Religion. 6. The Child of God is not “ polluted, though he be preſent at, and partaker of the publick “ Prayers, Sacraments, *&c.* at ſuch Time as wicked Men are preſent at, and partakers of them. 7. They which were baptized “ in the Popiſh Church by Popiſh Prieſts, received true Baptiſm, “ touching the Subſtance of Baptiſm. 8. They are the Sacraments “ of Baptiſm and the Holy Supper, which are delivered in the “ Church of *England*, by unpreaching Miniſters. 9. The Godly “ are not polluted which receive the Sacrament at the Hands of an “ unpreaching Miniſter. 10. The Church of *England* is the viſible Church of Chriſt.” Under theſe Heads Dr. *Some*, the Author, contended with thoſe of *Penries* Puritan Sect, that held againſt thoſe Points.

A Defence of Dr. Somes *Treatiſe.*

The ſame Author (upon ſome Anſwer of *Penry*) publiſhed the ſame Year, “ *A Defence of ſuch Points in D.* Somes *laſt Treatiſe,* “ *as M.* Penry *hath dealt againſt.* And Refutation of many *Anabaptiſtical*, Blaſphemous and Popiſh Abſurdities, touching Magiſtracy, Miniſtry, Church, Scripture and Baptiſm, *&c.* contained “ in *M. Penries* laſt Treatiſe.” The Occaſion of this *Defence* the Author tells the Reader, “ That having publiſhed a ſhort Treatiſe, “ *May* laſt, it pleaſed one M. *Penry* to examine one Part of it, and “ (as another *Ariſtarchus*) to cenſure it. That his Book was ſent “ him, and he viewed it, and found ſtrange Things in it. That “ Advice was given him not to vouchſafe an Anſwer; becauſe “ *Penry* was very ignorant, and his Treatiſe very ſilly and corrupt “ Stuff. But that certain Reaſons induced him, to take ſome Pains “ about it. As St. *Paul* vouchſafed in Gods Cauſe to deal with “ *Demetrius*, and *Alexander*. And becauſe many had been miſlead “ by his abſurd Fancies. And that he was perſonally both charged “ and challenged by him. That *Penries* Book was a Fardle of “ groſs Errors: That none accounted of it, but ſuch as were of “ the fantaſtical Crew.——— That *Calvin*, *Beza*, &c. Men of “ excellent Learning, were caſt off by him, even in thoſe weighty “ Cauſes, wherein they ſhook Hands with all the Churches of “ God - - - - That the Queſtion between them, was not, whether “ ignorant Men might either enter into, or continue in the Holy “ Miniſtry (for his Reſolution was Negative, that they ought not) “ but the Queſtion was, Whether ſuch as were and are baptized “ by Popiſh Prieſts and ignorant Miniſters, had and did receive a “ Sacrament; and whether the godly Communicant is polluted by

" receiving the Sacrament at the Hands of unpreaching Miniſters. " That the moſt famous Men and Churches were peremptory for " him, and againſt *Penry*, &c.

" And that his Reader might ſee clearly, and feel ſenſibly *Penries* " groſs Errors and *Anabaptiſtical* Fancies, he had ſet down in a " Table divers ſtrange Particulars. Which if they ſeemed hard " and rough hewn, blame M. *Penry*. For they came out of his " Forge." And then concluded with his Prayer, " That the " Lord would give us Grace to ſee and know our Ignorance, to be " truly humble, to grow in godly Knowledge, and not in *Anabaptiſtical* and blaſphemous Fancies. Dated from *London*, *Sept.* 19.

Admonition *to the People of* England.

To this I add another Book in Vindication of the Hierarchy of the Church againſt *Martin Marprelate*, and the reſt of the ſlanderous Libellers. And that was, *An Admonition to the People of England*. " Wherein are anſwered not only the ſlanderous Untruths, reproachfully uttered by *Martin*, the Libeller, but alſo " many other Crimes by ſome of his Brood, objected generally " againſt all Biſhops, and the chief of the Clergy. Purpoſely to " deface and diſcredit the preſent State of the Church. Seen and " allowed by Authority." The Author of it was the learned and Right Reverend *Cooper*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*: Who himſelf had been unworthily miſrepreſented and wronged by them: Let me give an Extract or two out of his Epiſtle.

He tells his Reader, " That he was not ignorant what danger " he drew upon himſelf by this Attempt, to anſwer the Quarels " and Slanders of late Time publiſhed in certain Libels againſt the " Biſhops and other chief of the Clergy of the Church of *England*. " Men ſaw the eagerneſs and boldneſs of their Spirit, that were " the Authors of them. They [the Biſhops and Clergy] taſted already the Bitterneſs of their Tongues and Pens. The raging " Fury of their Revenge upon all whom they miſlike, themſelves " diſſemble not, but lay it down in Words of great Threatnings. " And therefore he expected all the Hurt that venomous, ſcoffing " Tongues could work againſt him. And how could he hope to " eſcape it, when the *Saints* of God in Heaven did feel it. For " in the Courſe of their whole Libel, when they ſpake of *Peter*, " *Paul*, and the bleſſed Virgin, *&c.* whom others juſtly call *Saints*, " their Phraſe in deriſion was, *Sir* Peter, *Sir* Paul, *Sir* Marie.----

He asked, " What the Cauſe was, why they [the Biſhops] were " with ſuch Spight and Malice diſcredited? Surely, becauſe as the " Duty of faithful Subjects bound them, (living in the State of a " Church Reformed) they endeavoured to preſerve thoſe Laws, " which her Majeſties Authority, and the whole State of the " Realm had allowed, and did not admit a new Platform of Government, none could tell by whom. That the Reaſons, that " moved them ſo to do, were theſe two. Firſt, That they ſaw no " Proof brought out of the Word of God, that of Neceſſity ſuch " Form of Government ought to be. Secondly, that by placing of " the ſame, it would bring ſo many Alterations, and Inconveniencies, as, in their Opinion, would be dangerous to the Prince,

ANNO 1588.

“and to the Realm. Some of which Inconveniencies he had in this Treatiſe laid down. Some of the Contents of this ſeaſonable Treatiſe are theſe:

“1. An Admonition to beware of the Contempt of the Biſhops, and other Preachers. 2. The Ends which the Enemy of the Church of God reſpecteth, in working their Diſcredit. 3. Anſwers to the Untruths and Slanders uttered in *Martins* late Libel, againſt the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, the Biſhops of *London*, *Rocheſter*, *Lincoln* and *Wincheſter*. 4. The Cauſes, why the Biſhops deſired to maintain the preſent State of the Government of the Church. And what Inconveniencies they feared, upon the Alteration thereof, would come to the State of the Realm. 5. Anſwer to certain general Crimes objected to all the Biſhops without Exception.

I cannot omit one Period more of this excellent Book, as it reſpects the freſh Deliverance of the Kingdom at this very Time; and how unſeaſonably ſuch Libels were now uttered, under the fained and fond Name of *Martin Marprelate*.

“Oh! my good Brethren, and loving Countrymen, what a lamentable Thing is this, that even now, when the View of the Navy of the *Spaniard* is ſcant paſt out of Sight; when the terrible Sound of their Shot ringeth yet, as it were, in our Ears; when the certain Purpoſe of moſt cruel and moſt bloudy Conqueſt of this Realm is confeſſed by themſelves, and blazed before our Eyes; when our Sighs and Groans, with our Faſting and Prayers, in ſhew of our Repentance, are freſh in Memory; and the Tears not waſhed from the Eyes of many good Men; when the mighty Works of God, and his marvailous Mercies in delivering us, and in ſcattering and confounding our Enemies, is bruted over all the World, and with humble Thanks renowned by all them that love the Goſpel; when our Chriſtian Duty requireth, for Joy and Thankſgiving; that we ſhould be ſeen yet ſtill lifting up our Hands and Hearts to Heaven, and with thankful Minds ſetting forth the Glory of God, and with *Moſes* and and the *Iſraëlites*, ſinging Praiſes unto his Name; and ſaying, *The Lord hath triumphed gloriouſly, the Horſe, and the Rider*, the Ships and the Sailors, the Soldiers and their Captains, *he hath overthrown in the Sea: The Lord is our Strength; the Lord is become our Salvation*, &c. That even now, I ſay, at this preſent Time, we ſhould ſee in Mens Hands and Boſoms commonly, ſlanderous Pamphlets, freſh from the Preſs, againſt the beſt of the Church of *England*, &c. What Unthankfulneſs is this? What a Forgetting of our Duty towards God, and towards our Brethren? What a Reproach to our Profeſſion of the Goſpel?—

But notwithſtanding this *Admonition*, and all that the Author had writ in vindication of the pious Biſhops and their Government, it ſtopt not the Pens of theſe abuſive Malecontents; but ſoon fell foul upon Biſhop *Cooper*, and this his Book, with the like ſcurrilous Titles to their Libels againſt him, as they uſed to do. As, *Work for a Cooper*. *More Work for a Cooper*, &c.

ANNO 1588.

An Anſwer to the Reaſons of the Rhemiſh *Tranſlators.*

This Year alſo came forth, "*An Anſwer to ten frivolous and* "*fooliſh Reaſons, ſet down by the Rhemiſh Jeſuits and Papiſts, in* "*their Preface before the New Teſtament*, by them lately tranſlated "into *Engliſh*. Which have moved them to forſake the Original "Fountain of the *Greek*; wherein the Spirit of God did indite the "Goſpel, and the Holy Apoſtles did write it: To follow the "Stream of the *Latin* Tranſlation: Tranſlated we know not when, "nor by whom. With a Diſcovery of many great Corruptions "and Faults in the ſaid *Engliſh* Tranſlation; ſet out at *Rhemes*." The Author was *Edward Bulkely*. Who dedicated this Book to the Right Honourable Sir *Francis Walſingham*, Knt. chief Secretary to her Majeſty. To him he declared the chief Reaſon of publiſhing his Book, "For that it was thought, the ſaid Tranſlation and "the Annotations had ſeduced ſome, and confirmed others in Error; and many did not a little glory of them. And that as ſome "had already in Part diſcovered the Abſurdity of the Annotations, "ſo this, he truſted, might ſufficiently ſhew the Weakneſs of thoſe "Reaſons, and Corruption of that Tranſlation.

Dr. Reynold.
Dr. Bilſon.
Mr. Prime.

The Reaſons urged by the *Rhemiſts*, why they tranſlated the old *Latin* Text, and not the *Greek*, were, "Firſt, Becauſe it was ſo "antient, and uſed in the Church of God above 1300 Years ago. "And that it was the common received Opinion, that it was that "which St. *Hierom* afterward corrected according to the *Greek*, by "the Appointment of Pope *Damaſus*. And conſequently, that it "was that which St. *Auguſtin* commended and allowed of, in an "Epiſtle to St. *Hierom*. And that it was that which for the moſt "Part had been uſed in the Churches Service, expounded in Sermons; alledged and interpreted in Commentaries, *&c.* And "the Council of *Trent* had declared, and defined this only, of all "other Tranſlations, to be authentick, *&c.*" All theſe learnedly confuted by this Author.

Another Part of this Book contains, *A Diſcovery of Corruptions in this* Rhemiſh *New Teſtament.* And this divided into three Parts. 1. Such Places as be divers and contrary to the *Greek*. 2. Places wherein Words and Sentences be omitted; expreſt in the *Greek*. 3. Places wherein be Superfluities, *viz.* Words and Sentences, which do abound, and be not in the *Greek*. And the *Greek* Text approved and juſtified by the Teſtimonies of antient Tranſlations in the *Spaniſh* Tongue, and *Arabian*. Then he gave "A Catalogue of abundance of ſtrange Words and affected Phraſes, which "the *Jeſuits* in this their *Engliſh* Tranſlation had uſed; firſt, to "ſhew their fine Eloquence, to move their Readers to admire them. "Secondly, To make the Scripture dark, and hard to be underſtood of the unlearned People. And laſtly, For that they would "as much diſſent, and as little agree with us, as they might.

As for Example, ſuch Words as theſe: *Superſubſtantial, Loaves of Propoſition, Paſche, Day of Azymes. Paraſcheue, Syndon, Victimes, Holocauſts, Refertory, Exprobated, Impudicities, make Obſecration, Supererogate; Paraclete, Indurated their Heart. Contaminated:* And abundance more ſuch like obſcure Words.

ANNO 1588.

The laſt Buſineſs of the Author of this good Book, was to lay before the Reader many Places of Scripture, and likewiſe out of the antient Fathers; ſhewing, " How requiſite and profitable it is " for all Men diligently and reverently to read the Word of God. " And this, to oppoſe what the *Rhemiſts* had aſſerted in their Preface, *viz.* " That it was neither neceſſary, nor profitable, to have " the Holy Scripture in vulgar Language, to be read and heard of " all People. And that the godly and faithful might be ſtirred " up to the daily, diligent and reverent Reading of them. That " they might thereby daily more and more encreaſe in the Know- " ledge and Fear of God.

To which Books I add, the Diſputations concerning the ſacred Scriptures, againſt *Bellarmine* and *Stapleton*, Jeſuits, by Dr. *Whitaker*, publick Profeſſor of Divinity in *Cambridge*, and Maſter of St. *Johns* College there. Printed at *Cambridge* this Year. The Title whereof was:

Diſputatio de Sacra Scriptura.

Diſputatio de Sacra Scriptura, contra hujus Temporis Papiſtas; Imprimis Robertum Bellarminum *Jeſuitam, Pontificium in Collegio* Romano, *&* Thomam Stapletonum, *Regium in Schola* Duacena *Controverſiarum Profeſſorem. Sex Queſtionibus propoſita, & tractata, a* Gulielmo Whitakero *Theologiæ Doctore, ac Profeſſore Regio, & Collegii D.* Joannis *in* Cantabrigienſi *Academia Magiſtro.* The Queſtions were:

1. *De numero Canonicorum Librorum Scripturæ.*
2. *De Editione Authentica Scripturarum, & Verſionibus, ſacriſque Vernaculis.*
3. *De Authoritate Scripturæ.*
4. *De Perſpicuitate Scripturæ.*
5. *De Interpretatione Scripturæ.*
6. *De Perfectione Scripturæ: Contra non ſcriptas Traditiones.*

The Epiſtle Dedicatory is writ to *Cecil*, Lord Treaſurer *Burghley*, and Chancellor of that Univerſity.

ADDENDA.

ADDENDA.

THERE is an Omiſſion at Pag. 178, which after Line 5, is thus to be ſupplied: *Viz.*

Wincheſter *College to the Queen, about a Leaſe required of them.*

But now we turn to a Matter of Religion and Learning in a College in this Realm. The College of *Wincheſter* had Occaſion this Year, or ſome Year near it, to make an Addreſs to the Queen. For ſhe had required of the Warden and Fellows to grant the Rectory of *Downton* in *Wilts*, for a long Leaſe, to her; for the Benefit of *Thomas Wilkes*, a Gentleman of Deſert, whoſe Service her Majeſty had made uſe of in Embaſſies to *France* and *Spain*, and the *Low Countries*. Which Leaſe they of the College yielded to her: But feared, that other Suitors to the Queen might take Occaſion to obtain another Letter or Letters for ſuch another Leaſe or Leaſes. And ſo in Effect to leſſen their Maintenance thereby; and prove a great Diſcouragement to Learning, and ſome Infringement to their Oath; as they ſignified in their Anſwer to her Letter.

Suggeſting, “The great Inconveniencies that accrued to their College by ſuch Grants, which ſhe would not want Sollicitations for from thoſe about her, to obtain. And by which Leaſing out their Revenues they ſhould trangreſs their Oath and Obligation to their Foundation. Humbly therefore beſeeching her excellent Majeſty, that this their Grant might not, for the Time to come, be prejudicial to them. But by her Highneſſes Affection towards the Maintenance of Learning, it might be a ſufficient Occaſion to make a Stay of the like Suits that might hereafter be tendred by any Perſon unto her Highneſs. They mentioned her Promiſe alſo that had been hereunto graciouſly yielded them.

“And for this Purpoſe they deſired her Letters effectually ſignified, to remain with them, as a particular Act of her gracious good Meaning; to diſcharge them of the Hazard of the Decay of their Maintenance, the hurting of ſo worthy a Foundation, and the Burthen of their Conſciences, being ſworn to the Preſervation thereof, as far forth as the Authority of their Founder extended, and their Oath as dutiful Subjects might be meaſured by her Majeſty, and the Laws of her Realm.” The whole Letter is worth our preſerving and placing among the other Originals. *Vid.* Append. Numb. XXXII.

This following to be added at the End of Chap. VI. Book II.

The dangerous State of the Realm. MSS. Burghlian.

The Growth of Popery, and the Falling away of the Queens Subjects from their Loyalty and the Religion eſtabliſhed, by Means of Popiſh Prieſts and *Jeſuits*, privately diſperſing themſelves every where, gave Occaſion now of deep Conſultation, for the Redreſs thereof. And here for the letting in ſome Light in this Matter, I ſhall inſert a Paper thus indorſed by the Lord Treaſurers Hand. *The dangerous Eſtate of the Realm.* To which were *Remedies* ſubjoined in the ſame Paper: The Whole ſeems to be of the ſame, or ſome other wiſe Counſillors drawing up. The Year is not ſpecified. But I conjecture to be this Year, or perhaps ſome Year before. And though it be ſomewhat long, may well deſerve a Place in our Hiſtory. It was as follows, tranſcribed by me from the Original Paper.

The dangerous Eſtate of the Realm.

“IN every Part of the Realm are certain Perſons, covertly wandring from Place to Place, that labour to move the People, by colour of Holineſs, and Commendation of the *Roman* Religion, to miſlike of the Order of the Religion of this Realm.

Old Prieſts.

“ Theſe Perſons, that are Perſuaders, are ſome old Prieſts of the Realm, that were Prieſts in Queen *Maries* Time, and have not, during the Queens Reign, profeſt to be Perſons Eccleſiaſtical; but lived with old Men and Women that were of the ſame Religion; and have in ſome Parts taught Mens Children in private Houſes, as Serving Men by Shew of their Apparel.

Jeſuits. Seminaries.

“ Some alſo are ſuch as have been beyond Seas, and have been nouriſhed at *Rome*, at *Rheims*, at *Doway*, and have been by our Rebels, as *Weſtmerland*, *Norton*, *Markenfield*, Mr. *Englefield*, and ſuch like, inticed with the Popes Bleſſing, and ſome Money, and with Advices from the Seminaries at *Rheims* and *Rome*, and partly by Commandments from their *Superiour*, to come into *England*, and to reſort into Places, eſpecially noted, where there are known profeſſed Papiſts. By whoſe Direction they have ſcattered themſelves abroad; and with their ſuperſtitious Trumperies, as *Agnus Dei*, and other Books, ſeduced People, that were not before inſtructed in our Religion, to yield their Conſciences ſubject to theſe Papiſtical Motions. So as the Perſons ſeduced are led in Conſcience to miſlike of our Religion, and of our Biſhops and Clergy.

The Haunts of the old Papiſt Seductors.

“ It is to be noted, that theſe *Seductors* have haunted Countries where leaſt Preaching hath been; as in *Lancaſhire*, and in other Places, where moſt notable Papiſts do dwell: As in *Berkſhire*, *Hampſhire*, and *Herefordſhire*.

Diligence of the Jeſuits more than of our Clergy.

“ And while theſe Perſons have uſed great Diligence, and Secreſie, to win our People, our Biſhops and Clergy have nother ſecretly nor publickly, uſed any Diligence to teach the Unlearned, or to reform ſuch as they have committed to Priſon for Recuſants. So as the Papiſts have gained from theſe few Years, more than in many Years before.

The Peril.

Example of the principal Offenders.

“ Now follows, that the principal Men of Wealth, being Papiſts, do give Comfort and Example to many Inferior to follow them. And of Conſequence their Tenants are forced for their Livelihood to follow them.

Perſuade in Conſcience againſt the Queens Authority.

“ The greateſt is, That many are in Conſcience perſuaded, that the Pope is Chriſts Vicar, and hath abſolute Power to bind and looſe. That the greateſt Part of all other Monarchies and Countries do obey them. That until King *Henry* the Eighths Time, the Pope had always Authority here. That it is an Abſurdity to the Queen, and that a Maid; to be Head or Governor in all Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes. And by that Perſuaſion they are moved to contemn all manner of Orders Eccleſiaſtical in this Realm; thinking the Foundation thereof to be unleeful. And therefore in their Conſciences they are moved to allow only of the Popes Religion.

Encreaſe of Multitudes of miſliking Subjects, ready to ſet forward a Rebellion.

“ Laſtly, The perilous Sequel that follows hereof is, which daily will encreaſe, if Remedy be not ſpeedily provided, that Multitudes of ſuch as are yet obedient Subjects, will by theſe ſecret Perſuaſions, and by Example of others that are their Superiors, as Lords of the Realm in Honour, or as their Landlords, or as Perſons of great Eſteem for their Auntienty, or for great Houſekeeping, decline from their inward Love

“ toward her Majeſty, and yield their Hearts and Devotions to ſuch Perſons, as they ſhall be perſuaded are right Heirs in this Crown. And ſo ſhall they be in no ſmall Multitudes, ready upon any Occaſion offered, by the only Shew of any outward Force to rebell ſuddenly, and put in Hazard the good Eſtate of her Majeſty, and the Realm.

For Remedy of all theſe Perils.

Remedies.

“ It is neceſſary to deviſe and execute divers Orders, whereby this Defection may be ſtayed; and ſuch as are infected with theſe wicked Opinions may alſo be cured, as much as may be. Which though they be many, yet may be reduced to theſe two Heads. That is, Firſt, Teaching the People to know theſe Errors, and to confirm the Good and Obedient in the Truth of Chriſtian Religion. And Secondly, to uſe the Help of Laws againſt ſuch, as wilfully will offend. Whereby both the Offenders, may by Awe, and fear of Puniſhment, reform themſelves: And alſo others ſtayed by like Fear, to give Ear to the Perſuaſion of others that are the Seductors.

Principal Remedies. Teaching, Laws.

The State of Biſhops.

“ For the Firſt, Her Majeſty is to be well informed of the Condition and Sufficiency of every Biſhop in the Realm. And either by Reformation or Remotion of them, that are either by their manifeſt Inſufficiency, or their corrupt and covetous Converſation, out of Credit with the People under their Charge; to cauſe the Offices of the Biſhops to be better ſupplied. And therewith alſo to have their Officers reformed, that uſe Juriſdiction under them. For certain it is, that the covetous Execution of thoſe Officers, make not only the Papiſtical Sort, but the good Chriſtian Subjects to miſlike of the Order of the Miniſtry.

Biſhops Officers.

“ There would be alſo an univerſal Information had, without any open Viſitation, (as the Biſhops and Archdeacons continually do uſe, only for Gain) how the Pariſhes of the Realm are ſerved with Curats: How many have ſufficient Maintenances, and how many have inſufficient, and how many have none at all. And thoſe want to be ſupplied, or elſe the People muſt needs be without Knowledge of God, or eaſily led into Errors, or Popery, by any that will ſecretly reſort to teach them.

The State of Curats. A perfect Book hereof to be made by every Biſhop.

“ The two Univerſities alſo would be ſeen into; and no Heads of Colleges ſuffered to remain, that are not manifeſtly ſound in Religion. None would be ſuffered to remain there, that have Benefices with Cure, diſtant more than 30 or 40 Miles from the Univerſity.

The two Univerſities.

“ None would be ſuffered to be Teachers or Inſtructers of Youth, either in the Univerſities, or in the Country in publick Places, or private Houſes; but ſuch as are manifeſt good Subjects, and ſound in Religion.

Schoolmaſters.

“ For Reformation of theſe Faults in the Biſhops, their Officers, and the reſt of the Clergy, there may be many particular Informations, and which were requiſite to be delivered to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. That by her Majeſties Commandment, he may with Conference with the beſt choice Biſhops enter into the Reformation thereof.

A particular Information to be made of the Abuſes in the Clergy.

“ It is alſo neceſſary, that the Inns of Court and Chancery be purged of all unſound Perſons. So as none be ſuffered to live there, that doth not ſhew himſelf manifeſtly a good Subject. Neither would any be ſuffered to practiſe the Law, that have been expelled out of their Houſes. Nor they ſuffered to live in or about the City; where they may eaſily corrupt others.

Inns of Court.

“ The like alſo would be of all that profeſs the Civil Law, and Exerciſe of Phyſick. Conſidering, that Profeſſors thereof have a publick Office, whereby they may eaſily ſeduce their Clients and Patients.

Civilians. Phyſicians.

“Thus far may ſerve for the Governance of the Church: For the teaching of the People; for the Inſtruction of Youth. Whereby all ſorts of Perſons may be contained in their Duties, to be good Subjects, and not to incline themſelves to Papiſtry.

Execution of Laws.

“The ſecond kind of Remedy followeth. Which is, to have the Laws duly executed, with Mercy towards ſuch as be weak in Underſtanding; who are rather to be inſtructed. And with Juſtice to ſuch as wilfully and obſtinately do offend, and do refuſe to be taught or inſtructed.

“There are divers kinds of Offenders; and ſo are they to be uſed or corrected.

Jeſuits, Seminaries, Fugitives.

“The firſt are ſuch as are come, or ſhall come by ſtealth into the Realm, from *Rome*, or from the Places where *Engliſh* Rebels, or *Engliſh Jeſuits*, or Seminary Prieſts do haunt. For the Apprehenſion of thoſe that are to come, or ſhall depart by Seas, ſome preciſe Order would be taken, that no manner of Perſon, any wiſe to be ſuſpected, ſhould come or depart in any Ship, but they ſhould be ſtayed. And for the Execution hereof, Authority would be given to Perſons of Choice, to have a Care hereof.

“For ſuch as be in the Realm Search would be had. And the Parties being taken, they would be committed to one or two Perſons only, meet for that kind of Men, and for no other Offenders. Theſe would be firſt treated withal by Inſtruction. For which Purpoſe the Clergy ought to be at the Charge, to find X or XII principal learned, diſcreet, and charitable Perſons; who by quartering the Superfluity of the Perſons having Pluralities ——— by the Year, might always attend hereupon in ſome competent Number. Such as might be reclaimed, (and the Commutation of Penance would help hereto) without Hypocriſy, ought to be relieved alſo by the common Charge of the Clergy. Such as would not after reaſonable Time be reclaimed, would be certified of what Condition they are. And according as it ſhould appear, that they have uſed their Authority to reconcile any People to the Pope, ſo would they be thereof ſtraitly examined, and with ſome compulſory Means made to utter their Actions. And then they would be judiciouſly examined, whether they do think that the Popes Bulls publiſhed, or to be publiſhed againſt her Majeſty, containing Sentence of Deprivation of her from her Crown, and Excommunication of her Subjects from obeying of her, be lawful, and to be obeyed. In which Caſes, if the ſaid Perſons ſhall refuſe to anſwer, or ſhall anſwer, that ſuch Bulls are lawful, and ought to be obeyed; then ſuch would be indicted of Treaſon; and would be thereof arraigned. And if they ſhall perſiſt in their treaſonable Opinion, they would be hanged; and the Manner of Drawing and Quartering forborn.

To be executed for Example.

“And if many of theſe ſhould happen thus to be condemned, there might be Diſcretion uſed, to ſtay the Execution of ſome of them: And by Warrant of her Majeſty to be exiled, with pain to be immediately without further Proceſs hanged, if they ſhould return into the Realm.

Baniſhment.

Recuſants of Value.

“For the reſt of the Offenders in not coming to the Church, Conſideration is to be had of their Diverſity. Some are Men of Eſtimation and Livelihood in their Countries. Some are mean Men of Livelihood, and of ſmall Freehold, or living by their Farms. Some others are but poor, or but Servants. As to the firſt, it is but reaſon, the Statute be executed upon them; as Men able to ſatiſfy the Penalties. And if any of them ſhall be proved to have ſeduced any other good Subject to offend in the like Caſe, ſuch a Perſon would be committed to cloſe Priſon for that Fact; and yet pay the Fine of the Law. And if ſuch Perſon ſhall be taken to be of good Credit in his Country, he would be removed thence into ſome other Place; where his Doings might be lookt to. And there bound to remain in a Limit; and not to perſuade

" any Perſon to be of his Opinion, upon pain to be impriſoned, and to be further dealt withal by Order of Law, to try his Allegiance. From theſe kind of Perſons alſo would be ſequeſtred all Offices, all Armour and Weapon: None alſo ſhould be ſuffered to be Officers over their Tenants, Stewards, Bailiffs, or ſuch like, but Perſons, that ſhould manifeſtly be good Subjects.

" Their Children alſo being young, would be committed to good Schoolmaſters, to be faithfully and religiouſly inſtructed. Their Preſentments to any Benefices would be duly examined by the Ordinary, to be of good Men, or elſe to reject, and to preſent good by Lapſe.

Second Sort of meaner Offenders.

" The ſecond Sort, *viz.* of meaner Perſons, and fully to ſatisfy the Penalty, ſhould be for lack of Satisfaction committed to Priſon; and there treated withal to yield a reaſonable Portion of his Fine: And ſo to be releaſed upon Bonds with Sureties to return to Priſon: There to continue one Month in every Quarter; except in the mean Time he ſhall reform himſelf.

Beggers Recuſants.

" The third Sort that have nothing to pay would be committed to Priſon, into Places, where they might work in ſome Sort for their Living, if they be able. And ſuch as be not able to work, would alſo remain in Priſon: Except they could find Sureties to be of good a Bearing in all Points; ſaving for the Offence of not coming to the Church.

" All theſe kind of Perſons, either out of Priſon, or in Priſon, would be forced and compelled to hear ſome Preachers or Inſtructors once in a Month.

" It would be notified, that as many as will come to their Pariſh Church ſhall not be compelled to anſwer to any Queſtions offenſive to their Conſcience. So as they do not by their Teaching or Speeches move any other to forbear from the Church.

" Generally none of theſe Offenders would be ſuffered to have any Books of Divinity but the Bible, or any Part thereof: Or any antient or others, Doctors of the Church, that are allowed in the Church of *England*.

" Orders would be taken for certain Houſes to be provided in ſuch Sort as *Wisbich* is, to keep only theſe kind of Priſoners for Religion; as *Quinborough* and *Portſmouth* are. And Portions of Money reſerved out of the Fines.

" It would alſo avoid a great Offence by the Papiſts, if her Majeſty would notify her gracious Diſpoſition in conveying her Portion of the Fines to publick good Uſes in the Counties where the Fines are levied: Allowing Part to the Priſons, where the poor ſort of Recuſants are kept, ſo as the ſlanderous Papiſts may forbear to publiſh, as they do, that Men are ſought after for Gain of Money, rather than for juſt Puniſhment.

Oath of Supremacy.

" Generally, where the Oath of Supremacy is to be taken, it would be taken according as it is expounded by the Queens Majeſties Injunctions, mentioned in the Act *An. 5to.* And the ſame to be in theſe kind of Words, That her Majeſty in the Right of her Crown under God, hath and ought to have the Sovereignty and Rule over all manner of Perſons, born within her Dominions of what State ſoever they be, Eccleſiaſtical or Temporal; and that no other Foreign Power, Prelate, State or Potentate, hath, or ought to have any Juriſdiction, Power, Superiority, Preeminence or Authority, Eccleſiaſtical or Spiritual within her Majeſties ſaid Realms, Dominions or Countries.

A Kalendar of Recuſants.

" There would be a Kalendar made of all Recuſants, being Men of Eſtimation and Livelihood, in every Shire, of their Habitation; and in what State they do now ſtand. A Regiſter alſo of all Parents, that have their Children beyond Seas.

To be added to the former Remedies.

“ For Terror, and for Puniſhment of ſuch Recuſants, as are of Wealth
“ and Credit, conſidering, by refuſing to come to Church the Pain is
“ but Pecuniary; ſo as thereby they may continue their Credit in the
“ Country, and keep their Armour and all other Strength: It were meet,
“ that her Majeſty would give Authority to a Number of her Council;
“ ſo as at the leaſt Six of them might tender the Oath of the Supremacy,
“ to ſuch of them as her Majeſty ſhall not miſlike. Which if they refuſe,
“ then are in danger, as of the *Premunire*: Which is, Forſeiture of the Pro-
“ fit of their Lands, and all their Goods, and Impriſonment during Life.
“ And thereby neither Bloodſhed, nor their Heirs diſinherited: And if
“ her Majeſty ſhall ſee Cauſe to proceed more ſeverely againſt them for
“ their evil Deſerts, then may they have the ſame Oath ſecondly offered;
“ whereby both their Lives, and their Lands may be loſt. Or elſe they
“ may be brought in danger of Treaſon, by Inquiſition of their Adherence
“ to the Pope, as an Enemy to the Queen by the Wars in *Ireland*.

Jeſuits. Place them in Priſon upon commonCharge.

“ For the *Jeſuits* and Seminaries, they may be proceeded withal, for
“ maintaining the Popes Authority, Enemy to the Crown; remember
“ the antient Law 25 *Edw*. III. And thereupon ſome moſt notable to be
“ executed, by hanging only; and the reſt to be burned, or otherwiſe
“ marked in ſome part of the Hand, whereby to be hereafter known; and
“ to be baniſhed the Realm, with Condition to be hanged without further
“ Proceſs, whenſoever they ſhall return without Licence; [unleſs] upon
“ Amendment of their Errors.

AN

ERRATA in the ANNALS.

PAG. 2. in the Margin at the Bottom, for *Eliz*. ſub Cam. read, *Eliz. Camd. ſub ann.* Pa. 5 in the Marg. ſet [Num. I.] P. 35. l. 25. r. *acceſſerit*. P. 44. on the Top of the Margin, add *Anno* 1581. P. 71. in the Marg. r. Num. XI. P. 80. l. 25. for Catholio r. Catholic P. 89. l. 19. ab im. for ing r. being. P. 118. Marg. near the Bottom r. *Scory* Biſhop of *Hereford*. P. 136. l. 2. ab im. for Prieſt r. Preſs. P. 147. at the Top of the Marg. for Anno 1852. r. 1582. P. 162. l. 7. r. *Randolphs*. P. 190. Marg. for Num. XXXV. ſet XXXIV. P. 195. r. Num. XXXV. without the Crotchets. P. 214. in the Marg. for Num. XXXIV. ſet XXXVI. P. 216. Num. XLI. in the Marg. miſplaced. P. 227. Marg. for Num. XXXVIII. ſet XXXIX. P. 251. Marg. near the Bottom, add Num. XLVI. Pag. 337. l. 11. for cancelled r. concealed. l. 16. ab im. r. to Sir *John Parrot*. P. 340. l. 3. for ſlightly r. ſlighly, l. 7. for *by* r. *to*. P. 343. l. 11. for *both* r. *bound*. P. 344. l. 21. ab im. for *ſammus* r. *ſumus*. P. 368. l. 17. for *actum* r. *actam*. P. 371. l. 18. r. *Ignorantiam*. P. 454. l. 19. for *Hoſper* r. *Hoſpes*. P. 470. l. 15. ab im. r. *chariſſimus*.

ERRATA in the APPENDIX.

Pag. 22. in the Marg. for *Doctor* r. *doctor*. P. 33. l. 5. for *Loughther* r. *Lougher*. P. 43. for [Num. XXIV.] ſet [Num. XXVI.] And this being miſplaced, muſt be ſet after Num. XXVI. P. 51. for [Num. XXVI.] ſet *Num*. XXVII. At P. 53. ſet [*Num*. XXVII.] with Crotchets. P. 51, and P. 53. the Numbers are miſplaced. P. 53. l. 1. r. *Syndics*. P. 61. for *Num*. XXXVI. ſet XXXIV.

B L

AN APPENDIX OF Original Papers of STATE, RECORDS, LETTERS, &c. Referred to in the foregoing ANNALS.

BOOK I.

NUMB. I.

A Letter of the Lord Treaſurer Burghly, *to Sir* Henry Unton, *the Queen's Ambaſſador in* France; *upon that King's requiring more Forces of the Queen.* The Beginning of this Letter is imperfect.

MY Lord Ambaſſador, I make account at this Time the Earl of *Eſſex*, my L. General, is arrived at the Camp for the ——— *Diep* upon *Friday* laſt, and ſo did alſo our Companies ——— And I wiſh that I have heard at this preſent by a Report ——— thither from *Diep*, that the *French* King had won Mount *Katharine*. ———

Cott. *Library.* Titus B. 2.

Your laſt Letters reporting the Conference had with you there in that Court by the *French* King, and Sir *Roger Williams* being preſent, hath been ſomewhat unpleaſant unto her Majeſty, though ſhe findeth no fault therein in you. For the whole Contents of the Negotiations have been expreſs'd at very large length, by the King's Letters unto her Majeſty; and alſo to her Ambaſſador here: Who hath delivered the ſame to her Majeſty. And after the ſame well weighed by Her, ſhe hath made Anſwer by Writing in a Letter of ſome length, (the Copy whereof I do ſend you) and therefore mean to make no Recital. But am by her Majeſty commanded to require you to deliver it to the King. And though you ſhall not uſe any Speech to him in her Majeſty's Name, as it were to participate the Contents of the Letter, yet you may briefly, after the Delivery in thereof and the King's Peruſal, ſay, That you are very ſorry, that the Time, both on his Part and the Queen's, be ſo unſeaſonable, as neither her Majeſty can yield to his Demands, nor he obtain that whereof he hath need.

And yet to deal plainly with you, her Majeſty hath great Cauſe to ſuſpect, that the Report of the King's Weakneſs of his Forces there made with good Advantage for him. For Sir *Roger Williams* coming from the King with Letters of Credit at his laſt being here, made another manner of Report of the King's Forces, by particular Denomination of all Sorts, both *French* and Strangers, treble to the Number of the King's Allegation for very Footmen.

And as to the Point, that the King maketh Doubt of the leaving of the Siege, to fight with the Duke of *Parma*; we here have good Intelligence, that the Duke of *Parma* is not yet in Perſon come from *Bruxelles*; neither are his Forces with the Duke *De Main Lorrain*: and the *Italians* not ſo great by a Third Part, as the King's Comptroler's Report was. And it may be the Duke of *Parma* will not be able to bring his Army ſo far as *Roan* for lack of Victuals; conſidering, he is to come through a Country already ſpoiled, and hurried by the *Reiſters*. And beſides, if S. *Catharines* ſhould be won, before the Duke can come near with his Army, the Town of *Roan* may be with a ſmall Number blocked up, and the King have ſufficient Forces to withſtand the Duke of *Parma*'s Aſſailing, when he ſhall have comen ſo many Miles in *March*, to encounter with the *French* King.

Theſe, and ſuch like Suppoſitions, not altogether improbable, have moved her Majeſty to think the Peril of the King not ſo great as he hath pretended. Which alſo I wiſh may prove to be true. But however it is, in Truth, the Time is not proper to levy new Numbers in *England* at this Time of the Year, [the Depth of Winter] eſpecially to be tranſported by Sea: and impoſſible to be ſent thither in Time. For that if the King recover not *Roan* before two Months, there is no hope to gain it for many reſpects.

Her Majeſty ſendeth Sir *Thomas Leighton* thither of eſpecial Truſt, to adviſe the Earl in the Actions. And hath commanded the Earl by her own Letters. And if the King ſhould depart from *Roan* to go to fight with the Duke of *Parma*, the Earl ſhould not go with him by any Perſuaſion.

I wiſh you could come to underſtand of the Truth of all the King's Forces: Whereunto I cannot preſcribe you how to obtain. But by their quartering and encamping, I think it moſt eaſy to be known, by ſome Men of Judgment that might there uſe the ſame. And thus having no other thing at preſent, I wiſh and hope ſhortly to hear ſome good News of the Fort of S. *Katharines*: Whereof I make ſuch Account, as the old Proverb is, *Dimidium plus toto*. From the Court at *Whitehall*, this 12th of *December*, 1581.

Your aſſured Loving Friend,

W. BURGHLEY.

[NUMB. I.]

Mr. Rafe Lane *to the Lord Treaſurer; Advice upon Occaſion of the Expulſion of King* Don Antonio *out of the Kingdom of* Portugal: *And what uſe the Queen might make of him, to annoy King* Philip. Dated, *March* 7. 1580.

MSS. Burgh. MOVED of Zele to her Majeſty's Safety and Service, and of dutiful Affection to your Lordſhip, I humbly offer unto your Lordſhip the Conſideration of a Plot, touching the reported State of King *Antonio* to her Majeſty for Aid. The due Execution whereof can in no ſort prejudice her Majeſty, either in Honour, Peril or Charge: and may, with her Majeſties reſtraining of the ſame, many ways get Advantage, and moſt ſingularly guard her

B L

Majeſty in this doubtful Time, from many Inconveniences, with the Favour of the Almighty. My firm Perſuaſion wherein, and the Importance of the ſame, being uſed in Time, make me bold to break it, and willing only to your Lordſhip to impart it; humbly craving favourable Acceptance of my poor good Meaning therein. And thus it may pleaſe your Lordſhip to underſtand it.

1. That the ſaid King, *Don Antonio*, crave of her Majeſty leave underhand, at his own Charge, and of ready Pay to her, 5000 Soldiers of her Majeſty's Subjects, and a Fleet anſwerable, as well for Fight, as for Portage of all kind of Munition and Victuals. But that this Levy be made altogether by her Majeſty, and altogether in her Majeſty's Name, in Shew for the Reformation of *Ireland*. And therefore that no Shew in the World be made for any Intention touching the ſaid King.

2. That the King do in like ſecret Manner covenant with her Majeſty, that if during this his Preparation in *England*, and before the Fleet here be ready to leave this Coaſt, the *Spaniſh* King, or the Pope's Powers, do fortune to arrive upon any of her Majeſty's Dominions; that then the ſaid prepared Power, at the Charge of the ſaid King, ſhall be employed indeed and moſtly in her Majeſty's Service, againſt the invading *Spaniſh*, or Popiſh Forces whereſoever. And her Majeſty for the Uſe of that his Levy in her own particular Service, to bear only the one half of the Charge of the ſame. So that her Majeſty will, in Conſideration thereof, be pleaſed to covenant with the ſaid King, *Don Antonio*, that her Highneſs will declare herſelf abſolute for him againſt the *Spaniſh* King, if it ſhall appear, that the ſaid *Spaniſh* King be in a Confederacy againſt her Majeſty, with the Pope.

3. But if the ſaid *Engliſh* Fleet ſhall be ready to depart hence before the coming abroad of the Pope's Fleet from the Coaſt of *Spain*, then the ſaid *Engliſh* Fleet to go directly to the Coaſt of *Spain*. Where, with the Grace of God, they may ſo employ themſelves, that the *Spaniſh* King ſhall have little need to ſpare any of his own Forces from his own Defence nearer home, and within his own pretended Realms.

4. Thus by diverting the *Spaniſh* King's Forces from the Shew of itſelf, in the Eye of her Majeſty's Subjects at her own Doors, her Highneſs ſhall daunt the Courage of any rebellious Mind, that otherwiſe, at the appearing of an Enemy in Sight, will eaſily be ſtirred to Miſchief. Beſide the avoiding of many other Dangers, that an Invaſion, though never ſo weak, doth draw with it of ordinary. All which ſhall be at a Stranger's Charge. Which otherwiſe her Majeſty may have good Cauſe to do at her own Charge, if ſhe will be ſafe at home: and if in the mean while her Enemy aſſail her Majeſty, as is aforeſaid, ſhe ſhall be the more in readineſs either to defend her ſelf, or offend thoſe that would offend her herein.

5. But all the Difficulty of this Action, next the King *Antonio*'s Proviſions of ready Pays, (without the which nothing can be done) reſteth chiefly, and only in the cloſe keeping ſo much of the Intention of this ſaid Levy, as ſhall concern the ſaid King, *Don Antonio*.

6. And therefore, as her Majeſty, with the only Advice and Adminiſtration of one Counſellor above, may, if it pleaſe her, within two Months, make up this Supply without further trouble to any one of the reſt of the honourable Board: So if her Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to lay that Charge upon your Lordſhip, and that without the Privity of any other, it will without all doubt, with the Bleſſing of God, every way ſerve for notable Turns for her Majeſty: What Plots or Packs ſoever, either Abroad or at Home, are made, or meant againſt her Majeſty. And the meaner Men in Shew, though not in Skill, ſhall be uſed in this Preparation: Who need not to know any other Pretence. Then Sir, I think, the better and the more cloſe will the Service be carried and covered.

I proteſt unto your Lordſhip before the Almighty, that as yet no other Creature living, but only your Lordſhip, knoweth any Part of this Plat. Neither have I ſo much as once conferred with any about the ſame; more than Yeſterday with Mr. *John S. John*: Who coming to viſit me at my Lodging, by chance told me of the earneſt Suit of King *Don Antonio* his Ambaſſador to her Majeſty, for an *Engliſh* Aid; and his earneſt Entreaty, that her Majeſty would declare herſelf againſt the *Spaniſh* King in that Action. Which I imagining that her Majeſty would hardly be brought unto, notwithſtanding the ſaid *Spaniſh* King has hoſtile Intention to her Majeſty, made apparent to all the World; I thought in this my ſimple, humain Conceipt, my moſt dutiful Meaning to her Majeſty, moſt humbly to preſent to your Lordſhip only.

And if your Lordſhip ſhall find, that her Majeſty may hereby in a ſort be ſerved, I will upon Word from your Lordſhip by Mr. S. *John*'s Means find a Mean, that the ſaid King, *Don Antonio*'s Ambaſſador, ſhall be himſelf a Mover of this Matter, if he like of it, both to her Majeſty, by his only Mediation, and Privity of that Council, whoſe only Service therein her Majeſty will be pleaſed to uſe: Which can be none other but your Lordſhip only, and alone. The 7th of *March*, 1580.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble and ready at Commandment,

RAFE LANE.

NUMB. II.

Lord Burghley, *Lord Treaſurer, his Judgment: Upon a Conſultation of the Queen and Council, concerning a Fleet to be ſent to the* Azores *Iſlands, under Sir* Francis Drake, *to aſſiſt* Don Antonio, *expulſed his Kingdom of* Portugal *by* Philip *King of* Spain. *Digeſted under certain Queſtions, with Anſwers to each.*

Articles *to be conſidered of for the Voyage of Sir* Francis Drake *to the Sea, with the Ships te ſerve* Don Antonio, *King of* Portugal.

MSS. in the Paper-Houſe.

I. FIRST it ſeems convenient, that ſeeing the 6th of *Auguſt*, the *Tercera* was in the Poſſeſſion of the ſaid King, it is no Offence to any Treaty, or League with the King of *Spain*, to permit any her Majeſty's Subjects to ſerve the ſaid King *Antonio*, to maintain him in Poſſeſſion thereof. For that her Majeſty is not bound to take Knowledge of any other Right that Kings have, but as their Poſſeſſion yieldeth Knowledge.

II. There is no Treaty or League betwen the Crown of *England*, and the Crown of *Spain*, for the Kingdom of *Portugal*, nor for any Iſles or Countries poſſeſſed by *Portugal*. So as it is no Offence to any League in any Subject of her Majeſties, to do any Service in or upon any of the Territories, Iſles or *Indies*, poſſeſt heretofore by *Portugals*.

Hereupon for a Matter of League, her Majeſty may permit Sir *Francis Drake* to ſerve the King *Antonio* to maintain that he poſſeſſeth, or to recover any thing taken from him, whereof he was, as a King, poſſeſſed.

The Second Queſtion is, What is convenient or expedient for her Majeſty to do in the Caſe; and what may be contrariwiſe inconvenient.

For the Firſt, it is profitable and convenient that the Iſlands of *Azores*, and other Territories of *Portugal*, were rather in Poſſeſſion of *Don Antonio*, than in the King of *Spain*, for many over-apparent Cauſes.

For the Second, theſe Difficulties are to be remembred. Firſt, if the *French* King will not judiciouſly deal for *Don Antonio*, as her Majeſty ſhould do, the Peril might be too great for her alone, to provoke the King of *Spain*. And alſo, without the Help of the *French* King, her Majeſty's Aid, without it be very great and royal, cannot ſuffice to procure Reſtitution to King *Antonio*, to the Kingdom of *Portugal*; which muſt be the End of his Action: Or elſe to invade the Iſles, or to keep the Poſſeſſion of ſome Part, and not of all, will be but a perpetual War and Charge. Which ought to be conſidered of in the Beginning.

Whereupon the *French* King with good Aſſurance is to be plainly underſtood, before any great Action be enterprized by her Majeſty's Subjects, to offend the King of *Spain*, by ſeeking to invade any Portion of the *Portugal* Territories, being in the King of *Spain's* Poſſeſſion. But to maintain the Poſſeſſion of King *Antonio* in any Thing held for him, ſeems reaſonable, and may in Juſtice be maintained. But how the King of *Spain* will interpret the Action againſt her Majeſty, will reſt in him.

For the Second Difficulty, it may be ſaid, that this Voyage may give Cauſe to the King of *Spain* to arreſt all the Queen's Subjects, their Goods and Ships within his Power.

Whether it be better to ſtay the Merchants Fleet thither this Year: wherein by Conference with the Merchants may be underſtood, what Damage ſhall enſue to her Majeſty for her Cuſtoms, and to her Realms and Subjects. Or whether in reſpect of the Money in the Queen's Majeſties Hands, it may be thought, that the King of *Spain* will not attempt the Arreſt. Or whether our Merchants cannot by little and little recover that they have need of, without conveying into the King's Dominions a great Number of Ships, Mariners or Goods, to the Power of the King's Arreſts.

Queſtions preſently ariſing upon theſe Preparations.

'I. Whether the Voyage ſhall procede before the Queen be aſſured, that 'the *French* King will join with her Majeſty for Defence of the Action, in 'Caſe the King of *Spain* ſhall offer any Violence for the ſame to the Queen's 'Subjects: As by Arreſt, or by Invaſion of any her Countries, or by giving 'Support to *Scotland*, to offend Her.

"It was from the Beginning concluded, *No.*

'II. What manner of Aſſurance ſhall the Queen require, or ſhall admit to 'be ſufficient to warrant the Voyage to be attempted?

'It is reaſon to have either the *French* King's Letters, or the Writing of 'ſuch as he appointeth to confer with Mr. *Walſingham* to accord thereto: And "Mr. *Walſingham* to deliver the like.

'III. What ſhall be done with this great Preparation?

'Either they muſt continue as they do: which is at about 20 *l.* the Day 'or more, by the Uncertainty of Mr. *Outred's* unknown Charge at *Hempton* [*Southampton*]. Or Secondly, There muſt be ſome Diminution of Men. 'Or Thirdly, Three Ships and a Bark might be ſent to the Iſles, to do Ser'vice there, where *Drake* and *Hawkins* aſſent, and think thereby great Ser'vice may enſue. And in this Caſe the reſt of the Ships may be reduced to 'a ſmaller Charge: and yet remain in readineſs upon knowledge from *France*. 'Or elſe the whole Preparation to be ſold. The Victuals to Merchants tra'ding Voyage: The Munition, *&c.* reſerved for her Majeſty.

'Or Laſtly, The whole to procede as they are in readineſs. So at it may 'be accorded, how the Charge ſhall be born at their coming thither. For 'which Purpoſe Mr. *Drake* and *Hawkins* ſay, That it is meant afore Mr. Se'cretary went, that ſuppoſing the Charge to be in this ſort: 5000 *l.* by the 'Queen's Majeſty to Mr. Secretary, to be accounted the Money of King *An'tonio*: 2000 *l.* to be Mr. Secretaries: The reſt according to 6 or 7000 *l.* to

K. Antonio *will not aſſent hereto, as to bear any Charges thereof.*

'belong to Dr. *Hawk* and other Adventurers. Upon this Suppoſition they would have that one half that ſhould be won from the King of *Spain*, of his Fleet, or of his Iſles, ſhould be anſwered to the King. Another half to be divided:

'One Quarter to Tunnage of the Ships, after 5 *s.* the Tun.
'One Quarter to the whole Company.

'And then half allowed to the King to be divided:

'One Part to the King himſelf.
'One Part to Mr. Secretary, and to Mr. Dr. and the other Adventurers.

'But here my Opinion, the Queen's Majeſty for her 5000 *l.* ſhould be forgotten. For it were no Reaſon that her Majeſty ſhould have either Payment of her 5000 *l.* of the Merchandize of the Iſles that ſhould come hither; or elſe to have a Portion, as Mr. Secretary, and Mr. Dr. and others ſhould have.

'*Item*, It is convenient that the 5000 *l.* ſhould be accounted for in the Name of Mr. Secretary. For that her Majeſty at the lending thereof would not have it otherwiſe accounted: and yet Mr. Secretary to render to her Majeſty that ſhould be allowed to him for it.

'IV. What Sir *Francis Drake* ſhall do, if the *French* King come into the Action?

'He may by Commiſſion from King *Antonio* juſtly do any Service againſt any that will impeach King *Antonio*'s Poſſeſſion in the *Tercera*, or in any other Iſles. 2. He may attempt upon the *Madera*, or upon any other Iſland that did belong to *Don Antonio*, as King of *Portugal*. Theſe Services he may do without Breach of League with the King of *Spain*'.

Objection. But by theſe only Actions, neither ſhall the King *Antonio* be ſo profited, as ſhall tend to bring him to Poſſeſſion of *Portugal*, or the *Eaſt Indies*. Neither is it likely that by theſe his Actions, the Charges ſhall be diſcharged of the Preparation.

Anſwer. It is true. Therefore of Neceſſity it followeth, That he muſt attempt to take any thing he can from the King of *Spain*, as his Title to the Iſlands of *Canaries*, or any Iſland on *Nova Spain*, or in *Peru*.

Whereof followeth, that though he [Sir *Francis Drake*] ſhall do this by King *Antonio*'s Commiſſion, who hath a juſt War againſt the King of *Spain*; yet if the King of *Spain* ſhall take this Action, as maintained by her Majeſty, then ſhall it be at his Will, as he ſhall find himſelf able to avenge it upon her Majeſty, by arreſting and taking all her People, Ships and Mariners, being in his Country, and coming within his Power. *Item*, He may give new Support to *Ireland*, and Relief to the King of *Scots*, to be an ill Neighbour.

If the Voyage procede not. The King *Antonio* ought to have the Jewel in good Reaſon. For he ſhall have nothing for his Jewel. The Preparations would be viewed and ſold, and diſtributed. The Loſs to be born. The King might have the Jewel; or upon ſome leſs Jewel upon his own Bond, have ſold to him the Four Ships which he deſireth, and the Munition alſo, as ſhall be thought meet to be ſpared.

NUMB. III.

A true Anſwer to the Articles exhibited by the Biſhop of Norwich, *againſt Sir* Robert Jermin, *Sir* John Higham, *Knights*; Robert Aſhfield, *and* Thomas Badly, *Eſquires*, *Juſtices of the Peace*.

I. TO the Firſt we ſay, That we countenance none but ſuch as are Lovers of God's true Religion, and dutiful Subjects to her Majeſty. If he [the Biſhop of *Norwich*] ſhall preſs us in particular, we will particularly anſwer.

Epiſt. Epiſcopal. penes me.

II. To the Second we anſwer, That *Coppin* and *Tyler*, [who were Diſperſers of *Brown*'s Seditious Books; and afterwards the former executed for the ſame, *Anno* 1583.] being committed to Priſon five or ſix Years paſt, and often convented before the Judges of our Aſſizes, ſo long as there was hope to do any good unto them by Chriſtian Perſuaſion and Counſel, we were means unto the Judges for their Freedom. But when by Experience we found, that neither our entreating, nor the often godly References and Labours of divers learned and godly Paſtors (which we only procured) could any thing prevail, we gave them up to their froward Wills; and became earneſt Suitors, both to the Biſhop and Judges, that they might be removed out of our Priſon, for fear of infecting others. Which we could never obtain at the Biſhop's Hand. But he hath kept them here, without offering them any Means for their Converſion; rather, as we preſume, for Stales to catch and endanger Men with, than for any good intended to themſelves, or any other.

For Remedy whereof we do humbly pray your Lordſhip, that the Biſhop, according to his Office, may be ordered to take them to his Priſon at *Norwich*. And for the Truth of this our Anſwer, we appeal to my Lord Chief Juſtice of *England* [Sir *Chriſtopher Wray*], and the Maſter of the *Rolls* that now is: Then Judges of our Aſſizes.

Baker, mentioned in that Article, we knew not. [M. *Paine* a Baker, was mentioned by *Day* in his Letter to the Biſhop, to have been bound over by theſe Juſtices.]

III. To the Third we ſay, That he and they who ſet down this Article for the Biſhop, (the Articles indeed being compact at *Bury*, the Biſhop being at *Ludham*, which we pray your good Lordſhip to obſerve) was much to blame to make the Biſhop a Patron of unlearned Miniſters. For it was their Pleaſures only to be true in this, and in nothing elſe. For the Biſhop indeed hath not only favoured and countenanced thoſe ignorant Miniſters which he found when he came, but added unto thoſe of his own Creation and Ordination, twice ſo many as any other Biſhop of this Londe hath had in this, as we verily think. Yet to the Point of the Article we anſwer, That we never heard any other, neither do our ſelves hold, that an ignorant Miniſter may not be tolerated. For daily Experience ſheweth, that we are preſent at the reading of the Service appointed by Authority. But we do heartily pray, that none might be now ordained, but ſuch as are both able and apt to teach.

IV. To the Fourth we ſay, That we cannot but mervail at the *Butt* of theſe Articles, that they durſt offer unto your Lordſhip a *Butt* at *Geneva* Pſalms and Sermons. [This Article ran, that theſe Juſtices were for nothing elſe, *but* the *Geneva* Pſalms and Sermons] The *Pſalms* were *David*'s and other holy Fathers, inſpired by the Holy Ghoſt. The Neceſſity of *Sermons* your Lordſhip knoweth. Surely we cannot but lament, that any pretending Religion and Obedience to her Majeſty, ſhould be ſo far carried, as to utter ſuch unchriſtian Speeches, to the Diſgracing of ſo Chriſtian and Religious Exerciſes, ſo univerſally frequented in all her Majeſty's Dominions; being Speeches proper to Scoffers and profeſſed Enemies: And therefore in theſe Articles the more inſufferable.

But to the Article. This *Wodde* was a very ſimple young Man, whom divers religious Perſons of the Town ſeeking to eſtabliſh, thinking, by retaining of him, either that their old Preachers ſhould be troubled, or made leſs able to live: and ſo by that means to beat the Miniſtry of the Word quite out of the Town, (as their Purpoſe is even ſtill.) We calling together all the Inhabitants of that Pariſh; remembring the Uſage or Cuſtom that the People of *Burie*, ever ſithence the Suppreſſion of the Abby, uſed to chuſe their Miniſters; by which Order the ſaid *Wodde* was elected to that Place. And ſo Agreement was made for Tryal of him until the *Lady-day* following: During which Time, finding him utterly unable to diſcharge the Place, about a Fortnight before our *Lady-day*, warning was given him by like Order of the Pariſh to avoid at the Day. Which becauſe he refuſed, Mr. *Badby* being a Pariſhoner and Juſtice of the Peace in the Town, adviſed him not to intrude himſelf into that Charge, without the Goodliking and Approbation of the People; being then another prepared to ſerve. For the which the ſaid *Wodde*, by the Biſhop's and Mr. *Andrew*'s Inſtinction, procured very unjuſtly the ſaid Mr. *Badby* to be indicted as a Diſturber. And where he ſaith, that all the Juſtices oppoſed themſelves againſt him in the Action: The Truth is, that Sir *Robert Jermyn* was then at *London*, and none of us which were preſent further meddled in this Action, than that we thought we had both Intereſt and Authority. But when the Biſhop, both by his Letters and his Word, had declared himſelf to have Intereſt to collate, neither we nor any other did ſtir further in that Cauſe, either to the making of Diviſion in that Pariſh, or Trouble to his Lordſhip.

V. To the Fifth we ſay, That the *Angel* is an ordinary Place, where we meet for her Majeſty's Service, directed unto us by Letters in Commiſſion, or otherwiſe. And never have proceeded to the Determination of any Cauſe Eccleſiaſtical; no, ſcarce to the hearing of any, the Biſhop only being of the *Quorum* in the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. But if we did ever deal in any, it was by his Aſſignment: As in the Caſe of *Gibbons* juſtified Adultery; who hath married a Wife, the firſt Husband yet living. Which yet remaineth unreformed, to the no little Grief of many good Men.

VI. To the Sixth we confeſs, That the Commonry was ſometime there before us, for Conference to join our Authorities together, in helping the Good and puniſhing the Wicked. Other Troubles and Complaints made againſt him by others, for divers his Abuſes. But we ſay, that to our Remembrances we never threatned to ſend him to the Jayle, if he came not preſently unto us.

VII. To the Seventh, Mr. *Blage* and the Commiſſary have often uſed hard and unkind Speeches one towards the other. But the Matters heard before the High Commiſſioners at *London*, were compounded with the Seeking and Deſire of the Commiſſary. Mr. *William Jermin*, after the firſt falling out between them (being five Years ſithence) being earneſtly required by Sir *Robert*, never offered him Violence, or violent Speech ſithence. And as for further Courſe of Juſtice, he never denied it unto him, nor to any other to his knowledge. Neither did the Commiſſary ever ſeek for further Security, at any other Juſtices Hand in the County. Which proved that he remained in no fear.

VIII. To the Eighth we ſay, That we do not remember that we uſed any Speech againſt him, unleſs it were in a Caſe mentioned in the Tenth Article. Upon the Anſwer whereof we will refer to your Lordſhip's Judgment, what Cauſe we had by his falſe and unjuſt Proceeding, ſharply to reprove him.

IX. To the Ninth Sir *Robert Jermyn* anſwereth, That to his Remembrance he never delivered any ſuch Speeches, but profeſſeth rather, that he hath often laboured the Commiſſary to join Authorities together, to the Repreſſing of Sin and Wickedneſs. And Sir *John Higham* thinketh, that both he hath ſaid, that the Commiſſary is no Magiſtrate, (though he greatly vaunteth thereof) and alſo that he may juſtify the ſame. For Proof whereof he ſaith, That none, except the Queen's Majeſty, and ſuch as hath *Jura Regalia*, can depute another to be a Magiſtrate. Which he verily thinketh the Biſhop hath not, if the Commiſſary were proper Officer under him; as he thinketh he is Officer under the Archdeacon of *Sudbury*.

X. To the Tenth we ſay, That we bound Dr. *Day* to his good Behaviour. And the Cauſe we humbly beſeech your Lordſhip to note: For that it was pertinent to the Eighth Article. We underſtanding that he hath purpoſed to elect and ſwear certain Queſtmen in *Bury*, which were ſuſpect not to favour Religion, deviſed by himſelf and his Conſort, on purpoſe to gall and annoy the Preachers, Miniſters, and honeſteſt Sort of the Town, with their continual Preſentments; We underſtanding thereof conferred with the Commiſſary, and ſhewed him the Inconvenience likely to enſue of this his Election. Beſides, we told him that the Law, in our Opinions, ſhould not bear a Commiſſary to elect Queſtmen, but that properly the Choice reſted in the Miniſter and People of every Pariſh. With which Reaſons of ours he ſeemed ſatiſfied, and promiſed faithfully not to procede to Election of them, or any other without our Privity: proteſting, that of himſelf he knew not Ten of the Pariſh. Notwithſtanding, in ſhort time after, forgetting all Duty and Promiſe, as he was going to his Court, to perform this Action, we received Intelligence, and ſent for him: who promiſed to come preſently. But before his coming he ſwore thoſe Men in that Office, contrary to his Promiſe before made unto us, and contrary to the Cauſe for the which he knew we ſent for him. And then he came unto us. And we not knowing what he had done, began again in good and loving Manner to entreat him to forbear that Election. He anſwered ſcoffingly, that he had done, and could not undoe. Whereupon, for his untrue and uulawful Proceding, not contented to break Promiſe with us, but to ſcoff and ſcorn at it when he had done, one of us called him *Jack*, and bound him to his *good Behaviour*. But we remember not the other hard Speeches mentioned in the Eighth Article. And ſuſpecting the Election to be unlawful, and knowing divers of the ſaid Queſtmen to be backward Men in Religion, we charged them to be careful how they proceeded in that Office. The one of them giving us ſuch luſty Anſwers at that time, we were enforced to bind him to further Appearance.

XI. To the Eleventh we ſay, That the ſame Mr. *Philips*, being Brother to the Commiſſary, made a Sermon at *Bury*, wherein, for the moſt Part, he was occupied in depraving the godly Preachers of the Town and Country: comparing them to unbridled Colts, ruſhing through the whole Hedge: and yet not ſo contented, called them Vipers, Serpents, Stingers, and unſatiable Beaſts. Which Sermon ended, and Mr. *Badby* aforeſaid, all the Time being preſent thereat, finding thereby that he ſought by all the Terms he could deviſe, to ſever the Hearts of the People from their faithful Miniſters, he ſent his Man to the ſaid Mr. *Philips*, requeſting him to come unto him, for Conference with him touching that Sermon. Whereunto Mr. *Philips* asked the Meſſenger, What Token his Maſter had ſent to him, that he might know that he had ſent for him? The Meſſenger anſwered, By the Token which he did wear was his Maſter's Livery. And then Mr. *Philips* anſwered, He would ſpeak with him another Time: and ſo departed and went to Dinner with Mr. *Andrews* at his Houſe. Whereupon Mr. *Badby* ſent the Conſtable for Mr. *Philips*: Who together with Mr. *Andrews* and the Commiſſary repaired unto Mr. *Badby*. And then Mr. *Andrews* demanded of Mr. *Badby*, Wherefore he had ſent for Mr. *Philips*? Who anſwered, That he thought he had not made a charitable Sermon, but an undiſcrete. And therefore he would gladly have talked with him. And Mr. *Philips* very deridingly ſaid to Mr. *Badby*, I thought you had ſent for me to Dinner, and my Dinner was provided. Mr. *Andrews* promiſing of himſelf, offering, that if he would ſend him to Priſon, he and the Commiſſary would be bound for him. Mr. *Badby* anſwered, He would take none of their Bonds; but Mr. *Philips*'s own Bond for his Appearance the next Morning before the reſt of the Juſtices. Which he did for preventing Diviſion, which he feared would enſue thereof, as in Truth there did.

Thereupon the Commiſſary (which ſheweth the Sermon to be a Matter of ſet Purpoſe) commanded Mr. *Badby*, that the ſame Morning by the Hour aforeſaid, in which he had commanded Mr. *Philips*'s Appearance, that he ſhould be at the Court. For which his Non-Appearance he was excommunicate. And after, on the *Monday* aforeſaid, upon Mr. *Philips*'s Appearance, we and divers others in Commiſſion, upon hearing the Matter, both for the Miſliking of his Sermon, for his very railing Terms before-mentioned, and for other his contemptuous Demeanour, thereupon thought good in Diſcretion, to bind him for his Appearance for further Conſideration in that Cauſe, (the Words aforeſaid being ſet down under his own Hand.) And as touching the Term in the Article ſet down, Sir *Robert Jermyn* ſaith, He remembreth he called him *Crafty Merchant*, becauſe he craftily went about by certain Queſtions to bring the Anſwerers within danger of Law. Mr. *Aſhfield*, he ſaith, that upon the hearing of the whole Matter, and underſtanding that he was and is beneficed at *Bradly* in *Suffolk*, and Non-reſident there, and had left his own Charge, and had offered the unfitting Terms before-mentioned, he uſed theſe Speeches: *Viz. We are more troubled with theſe unreſidented Knaves, than with all the Country beſide.*

And as for Mr. *Blage*, he alluded to *Plague*, whereof Mr. *Philips* is moſt abiding. And yet at that time he ſaid to Mr. *Philips*, I mean you, not a Papiſtical *Jeſuit*. And for that Cauſe was called before the high Commiſſioners: Where the Cauſe, as we are informad, took a full End.

And touching his further binding at the Seſſions for his Behaviour, we ſay, That at the ſaid Seſſions was preſent the Lord *North*, and ſundry other Juſtices; where all Matters being heard at full, and Mr. *Philips* anſwering very contemptuouſly and diſdainfully, it was thought good, by the Conſent of the whole Bench, to bind him to his *good Behaviour*. Which Cauſe hath been at large heard by the Juſtices of Aſſize.

XII. To the Twelfth Article, Sir *John Higham* denieth, that he uſed the Speech mentioned in the Article, or any to that Effect. But he well remembreth, that upon the Diſliking of the Pariſhioners of St. *James*'s in *Bury* had taken againſt *Gyles Wodde* their Miniſter, he, the ſaid Sir *John*, for the Ending of the Cauſe with moſt Quiet and Peace that might be for that Towne, perſuaded with the ſaid *Wodde* to give Place to ſome other more fit for the Pariſh, and to betake him to ſome more fit Place for his weak Gifts: *Wodde* juſtifying himſelf to be ſufficient for the Place, becauſe he could read the Service eſtabliſhed in the Book of Common Prayer. Then the ſaid Sir *John* anſwered, That if he had no better Proof of his Sufficiency than the Reading of the Service in the Book appointed, that then a Man might have a Boy of Twelve Years old to do as much as he.

Thus we have truly delivered unto your Lordſhip our Anſwer to the Biſhops untrue Accuſations. The ſeveral Matters whereof be ſome ſix, ſome five, ſome four, and the leaſt of very near two Years Continuance. Which being both ſo old and ſo weak, do ſhew, that rather to diſcredit us with her Majeſty, than to reform any Amiſſes in us, his Lordſhip hath put down theſe Matters againſt us. But being ſo old, ſo weak, and ſo untrue, do decipher his too great Malice rather to our Perſons than Actions. We are therefore very humble Suitors unto your good Lordſhip, that not for our ſake alone, but for the State of our Country, which we ſerve under her Majeſty, we may enjoy that honourable Favour, which you have always ſhewed unto all Men; that your Lordſhip would become our Petitioner unto her Majeſty, that now we have been called out of our Country, and every Street doth ſound our Diſgrace, wrought by the Biſhop, that either we may receive the juſt Deſerts of our Doings by due Puniſhment, or being cleared both in her Majeſty's Royal Judgment, and your Lordſhip's Opinion, the Biſhop, for his bold and untrue Suggeſtions, may be ſo cenſured, as we may, with the Reſtitution of our poor Reputation, attend with ſome good Comfort upon our Places. In the which we do deſire no longer to live, than we ſhould be found very loyal and dutiful to our ſo gracious Sovereign.

NUMB. IV.

John *Biſhop of* Exceſter, *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley: *To favour his Proceedings againſt one* Randal, *a Miniſter in his Dioceſe, of the* Family of Love, *holding dangerous Opinions.*

Lit. Epiſcopales pen. me.

MY Duty to your Lordſhip remembred. For that I am advertiſed, that the Lords of Council had, and yet have earneſt Complaint made unto them againſt me, for my Proceedings againſt one *Anthony Randal*, late Parſon of *Lydford* in my Dioceſe: Whom I juſtly deprived for his dampnable Opinions and Hereſies. And after his Appeal from me to the *Arches*, and from thence to her Majeſty's *Delegates*, I had my Proceedings approved and ratified; yet for that your Lordſhip may haply not be acquainted therewith, and alſo for your better Reſolution of my Doings, and the ſaving of my Credit with you; I thought it appertaining to my Duty to ſend your Lordſhip herewith a Copy of his ſtrange Opinions, truly exemplified. Which Opinions he maintaineth obſtinately at this preſent: and within theſe few Days ſubſcribed unto them again, in the Preſence of divers publick Notaries, as it may appear unto your Lordſhip by this encloſed, the Original remaining in my Regiſtry, as a perpetual Teſtimonial againſt *Randal*.

And for that *Randal* hath many Complices, and that hurtful Sect, the *Family of Love*, beginneth to creep in this Country, of the which Company Twenty are brought to open Recantation in this Cathedral Church, and my Proceedings againſt the Reſt would be much weakened, if the untrue Reports of *Randal* or his Friends ſhould be heard: In Conſideration of the Premiſſes, I do beſeech your Lordſhip, that my Sentence given againſt the ſaid *Randal*, and ratified, as aforeſaid, may have good Countenance and Liking at your Hands. Which I requeſt not ſo much for mine own Credit, as for the Peace and Quietneſs of God's Church; which, by means of *Randal* and his Adherents, is very much diſturbed. Thus fearing to be tedious to your Lordſhip, I commend you to the Protection of the Almighty. *Exceſtre*, the 6th of *June*, 1581.

Your Lordſhips to Command,

JOHN EXON.

NUMB. V.

Minutes of a Warrant to Edward Stafford, *Eſq*; *for Parſonages, Chapels, Guilds,* &c. *diſſolved, concealed. The Inſertions within Crotchets, are of the Lord Treaſurer's Hand.*

MSS. Burghlian.

ELIZABETH, by the Grace of God, &c. To our Truſty Counſellor, Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and to our Chancellor of our *Exchequer*, and Dutchy of *Lancaſter*, &c. We let ye wete, that of our ſpecial Grace and mere Motion, we are pleaſed and contented, to give and grant to our well beloved Subject and Servant, *Edward Stafford*, Eſq; one of our Gentlemen Penſioners, a Leaſe or Leaſes for Years, of all ſuch Parſonages Impropriate, Free Chapels, Guilds, Chauntries, Lay-Prebends, Colleges and Hoſpitals, relinquiſhed, diſſolved or eſcheated: [To which Hoſpitals, there have not been any Poor belonging within theſe Two and Twenty Years. For that we wiſh ſuch rather to be reſtored, than the Lands to be converted to other Uſes:] And of all Parſonages and Vicarages whatſoever, which [have not Incumbents, and] are without Cure; by Reaſon that the Pariſhes are depopulated, and the Churches thereof profaned, decayed, waſted or defaced, with all their Members, Commodities, Appendances whatſoever; which now been, continue and remain wrongfully detained, withholden or kept from us: And which of Right to me, do or may belong or appertain, [by any Title grown to our Crown, ſince the twenty ſeventh Year of our Noble Father King *Henry* VIII. *] which hereafter ſhall or may be found, or revealed, or [juſtly] challenged by the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, his Deputies or Aſſigns, or any of them.

* *This within the Crotchet added, and croſſed out again.*

YIELDING or paying therefore yearly unto us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, during the ſaid Leaſe or Leaſes, ſo much yearly Rent, and after ſuch Rate as the ſame, or any Part thereof, are, or have been valued at in our Books of Firſt Fruits and Tenths, or in any other of our Records. † And further, of our ſpecial Grace, we alſo are pleaſed and contented, to grant unto the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, as well the Advowſons, Preſentations, Nominations and Donations, of all and ſingular Parſonages and Vicarages being without Cure, profaned, depopulated, decayed, waſted or defaced: [in as ample Sort to us as the ſame doth, or may juſtly belong.] As alſo the Advowſons, Preſentations, Nominations, Donations of all other Parſonages and Vicarages with Cure, Prebends, Preſentative and Donative: Which are concealed, wrongfully detained, withholden or kept from us, by any Manner of Means whatſoever, of Right do belong or appertain to our Preſentation, Donation, Nomination or Collation: To give, diſpoſe and preſent unto the ſame, ſo often as any of them ſhall fall, be or become void, during the Term of Years, according to the true Intent and Meaning hereof. [In all which Grants of the Premiſſes, for avoiding of ancient Titles that are doubtful, we do not mean, that the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, or his Aſſigns ſhall have or inherit in any Kind of the Premiſſes, by any other Right or Title due to us, but that which hath grown due to our Crown, from the twenty ſixth Year of the King our Noble Father.]

† *It may be there were no Records, where Towns and Records were waſted in the Civil Wars, and ſome in the Barons Wars* 300 *Years paſt. Lord Treaſurer's Hand.*

Whereunto we will and command you, that you do from Time to Time from henceforth, [upon due Information given unto you by the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, or his Aſſigns of any ſaid Titles to any of the Premiſſes, and whereunto you ſhall perceive that we ought to be entitled, cauſe to be made ſuch and] ſo many Books and Writings as ſhall be requiſite and neceſſary, to be paſt by us of the Premiſſes or any Part thereof, unto the ſaid *Edward Stafford*, his Deputies or Aſſigns, for the aforeſaid Term of Years: And for the new Rent abovementioned, according to the true Intent and Meaning hereof; with a *Proviſo* to be contained in [all and every] our ſaid Grants, or Letters Patents, that if any Variance, Suite, De-

Debate or Controverſy [by the Claim or Complaint of any Perſon] ſhall happen to riſe or grow in or about any of the Premiſes, or concerning any Manner of Preſentation, removing or diſplacing of any Preacher, Miniſter, [or Scholar] Parſon or Vicar; that then the ſame [Grants ſhall be ſuſpended, until ſuch Controverſy, Claim or Complaint] ſhall be heard and determined [by Order of our Laws, or otherwiſe in Equity,] in our Court of *Exchequer*, by you the Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and Chancellor of our *Exchequer* for the Time being [for any Matter belonging to the Revenues of our Crown : And by you, our Chancellor of the *Dutchy*, and our Atturney there, for any Cauſe, *&c.*] if the Parties grieved ſhall require. And theſe our Letters ſhall be your ſufficient Diſcharge for the doing thereof.

NUMB. VI.

Campion*'s Letter to the Privy Council; Offering to avow and prove his Catholick Religion before all the Doctors and Maſters of both Univerſities; and requiring a Diſputation.*

In Nomine JESU, *Amen.*

RIGHT Honourable, whereas I came out of *Germany*, and *Boëmland*, Foxij *MSS.* being ſent by my Superior, and adventured my ſelf into this Noble Realm, my dear Country, for the Glory of God, and the Benefit of Souls; I thought it like enough, that in this buſy, watchful, ſuſpicious World, I ſhould, either ſooner or later, be interrupted, and ſtopp'd of my Courſe: Wherefore providing for all Events, and uncertain what ſhall, or may become of me, when God ſhall happily deliver my Body into Durance; I ſuppoſe it needful to put this Writing in a Readineſs, deſiring your good Lordſhips to give it the Reading, and to know my Caſe. This doing ſhall eaſe you of ſome Labour; for that which otherwiſe you muſt have ſought for by Practice of Wit, I do now lay into your Hands by plain Confeſſion. And to the Intent this whole Matter may be conceived in Order; and ſo the better underſtood and remembered, I make therefore all my Points and Articles directly, truly and reſolutely, opening my full Enterprize and Purpoſe.

I confeſs, that I am (tho' unworthy) a Prieſt of the Catholick Church, and through the great Mercy of God, vowed now theſe eight Years to the Society of *Jeſus*: And thereby have taken upon me a ſpecial Kind of Warfare under the Banner of Obedience, and have reſigned all my Intereſt and Poſſibility of worldly Wealth, Honour and Pleaſure, and other worldly Felicity.

At the Voice of our *General Provoſt*, which is to me a Warrant from Heaven, and an Oracle from Chriſt, I took my Voyage from *Prague* to *Rome*, where our ſaid *Father General* is always Reſiant, and from *Rome* into *England*; as I muſt and would have done joyouſly into any Part of *Chriſtendom* or *Heatheneſs*, had I been thereto aſſigned.

My Charge is, of free Coſt to preach the Goſpel, to miniſter the Sacraments, to inſtruct the ſimple, to reform Sinners, to confute Errors; in brief, to cry *Alarme* ſpiritually, againſt foul Vice and proud Ignorance, wherewith many my poor Countrymen be abuſed.

I never had mind, and am ſtraitly forbidden by our Father that ſent me, to deal in any Reſpect, with any Matter of Eſtate or Policy of this Realm, as thoſe Things that appertain not to my Vocation, and from which I gladly eſtrange and ſequeſter my Thoughts.

I do aſcribe to the Glory of God, with all Humility and your Correction, three Sorts of indifferent and quiet Audience. The firſt before your Honours;

nours; wherein I will diſcourſe of Religion, ſo far forth as it toucheth the Commonwealth, and your Nobilities. The ſecond; whereof I make moſt Account, before the Doctors and Maſters of the choſen Men of both Univerſities; wherein I undertake to avow the Faith of our Catholick Church by Proofs invincible, Scriptures, Councils, Fathers, Hiſtories, natural and moral Reaſon. The Third; before the Lawyers Spiritual and Temporal; wherein I will juſtify the ſame Faith by common Wiſdom of Law, ſtanding yet in Force and Practice.

I would be loth to ſpeak any thing that might ſound of an inſolent Brag or Challenge, eſpecially being now as a dead Man to the World, and willing to caſt my Head under every Man's Foot, and kiſs the Ground they tread upon: Yet have I ſuch a Courage in advancing the Majeſty of Jesus my King, and ſuch Affiance in his gracious Favour, and ſuch Aſſurance in my Quarrel, and my Evidence ſo impregnable; that becauſe I know perfectly, that none of thoſe *Proteſtants*, nor all the *Proteſtants* living, nor any Sect of our Adverſaries, howſoever they face Men down in their Pulpits, and over-rule us in their Kind of *Grammarians*, and unlearned Sort, can maintain their Doctrine in Diſputation. I am moſt humbly and inſtantly for the Combat with them all, or every of them, or the Principal that may be found: Proteſting that in this Trial, the better furniſhed they come, the better welcome they ſhall come to me.

And becauſe it hath pleaſed God to enrich the Queen my Sovereign Lady, with notable Gifts of Nature, Learning, and princely Education; I do verily truſt, that if her Highneſs would vouchſafe her Royal Perſon and good Attention, to ſuch Conference as in the ſecond Part of my firſt Article I have mentioned and requeſted; or to a few Sermons, which in her and your Hearing I am to utter: Such a manifeſt fair Light by good Method and plain Dealing, may be caſt upon thoſe Controverſies, that poſſibly her Zeal of Truth, and Love of her People, ſhall encline her moſt Noble Grace to diſfavour ſome Proceedings hurtful to the Realm, and procure towards us oppreſt, more Eaſe.

Moreover, I doubt not, but her noble Counſellors, being of ſuch Wiſdom [and Religion, *added in another Copy*] in Cauſes moſt important, when you ſhall have heard theſe Queſtions in Religion opened faithfully; which many times by our Adverſaries are huddled up and confounded, will ſee upon what ſubſtantial Grounds our Catholick Faith is builded, and how feeble that Side is, which by Sway of the Times prevaileth againſt us.

So at laſt, for your Souls Health, and for many Thouſand Souls that depend upon your Government, will diſcountenance Error, when it is betrayed, and hearken to thoſe that will ſpend their beſt Blood in their Bodies for your Salvation. Many innocent Hands are lift up to Heaven for you, daily and hourly by thoſe *Engliſh* Students, whoſe Poſterity ſhall not die: Which beyond Sea gathering Virtue and ſufficient Knowledge for the Purpoſe, are determined never to give over, but either to win you to Heaven, or die upon your Pikes.

As touching our *Society*, be it known unto you, that we have made a League, all the *Jeſuites* in the World, whoſe Succeſſion and Multitude muſt over-reach all the Practices of *England*, chearfully to carry the Croſs that you ſhall lay upon us, and never to deſpair your Recovery, while we have a Man left to enjoy your *Tyburn*, or to be racked with your Torments, or to be conſumed with your Poyſons. Expences are reckoned; the Enterprize is begun: It is of God; it cannot be withſtood. So the Faith was planted; ſo it muſt be reſtored.

If theſe my Offers be refuſed, and my Endeavours can take no Place; and I having run Thouſands of Miles to do you good, ſhall be rewarded with Rigor, I have no more to ſay, but to recommend your Caſe and mine to Almighty God, the Searcher of Hearts; who ſend us of his Grace, and ſet us at Accord, before the Day of Payment. To the End at laſt we may be Friends in Heaven, where all Injuries ſhall be forgotten.

NUMB.

NUMB. VII.

A Relation of the cruel Burning of Richard Atkins, *an* Engliſhman, *in* Rome: *Put into the* Inquiſition, *for diſturbing the Prieſt carrying the Sacrament.*

HE was ſet upon an Aſs without any Saddle, being from the Middle upward naked, having ſome *Engliſh* Prieſts with him. Who talked to him, but he regarded them not, but ſpake to the People in ſo good Language as he could; and told them they were in a wrong Way: and therefore willed them for Chriſt's Cauſe, to have regard to the ſaving of their Souls. Engl. Roman *Life.* *Chap.* iii. *Pr.* 1590.

All the Way as he went, there were four, who did nothing elſe but thruſt at his naked Body with burning Torches: Whereat he neither moved, nor ſhrunk one Jot: but with a cheerful Countenance, laboured ſtill to perſuade the People: After bending his Body to meet the Torches as they were thruſt at him, and would take them in his own Hand, and hold them burning ſtill upon his own Body; whereat the People not a little wondered. Thus he continued almoſt the Space of half a Mile, till he came before St. *Peters*, where the Place of Execution was.

When he was come to the Place of Execution, there they had made a Device, not to make the Fire about him, but to burn his Leggs firſt, which they did, he not diſmaying any whit, but ſuffered all marvellous cheerfully; which moved the People to ſuch a Quandary, as was not in *Rome* many a Day. Then they offered to him a Croſs, and willed him to embrace it, in Token that he dyed a Chriſtian. But he put it away with his Hand; telling them, that they were evil Men to trouble him with ſuch Paltry, when he was preparing himſelf to God, whom he beheld in Majeſty and Mercy, ready to receive him into the Eternal Reſt.

They ſeeing him ſtill in that Mind, departed, ſaying, *Let us go, and leave him to the Devil whom he ſerved.* Thus ended this faithful Soldier and Martyr of Chriſt, who is no doubt in Glory with his Maſter.

This was faithfully avouched by *John Young*, who was at that Time, and a good while after in *Rome*, in Service with Maſter Dr. *Moorton*; who ſeeing the Martyrdom of this Man, when he came Home to his Houſe, in Preſence of Mr. *Smithſon*, Mr. *Creed*, and the ſaid *John Young* his Servant, ſpake as followeth: ‘Surely this Fellow was marvellous obſtinate. He nothing regarded the good Counſel was uſed to him, nor never ſhrunk all the Way, when the Torches were thruſt at his naked Body. Beſide, at the Place of Execution, he did not faint, or cry one Jot in the Fire, albeit they tormented him very cruelly, and burned him by Degrees, as his Legs firſt, to put him to the greater Pain; yet all this he did but ſmile at. Doubtleſs, but that the Word of God cannot but be true, elſe we might judge this Fellow to be of God: For who could have ſuffered ſo much Pain as he did? But truly I believe the Devil was in him.

On which Words the Writer makes this Reflection: Behold, good Reader, how they doubt among themſelves. And becauſe they will not ſpeak againſt their Maſter the Pope, they inferr the mighty Power of God upon the Devil.

NUMB. VIII.

Academiæ Oxonienſis *ad D.* Burghleum. *Epiſtola Gratulatoria.*

MSS. Burghlian.

QUàm ſit beata & fœlix reſpub. literaria (Illuſtriſſ. Domine) quòd te virum prudentiâ ornatum ſingulari, & ſummâ præditum authoritate, nacta ſit patronum & defenſorem; teſtis eſt, non illa modò *Cantabrigienſis* Academia, quæ in tuo patrocinio & tutela fæliciter acquieſcit; ſed & *Oxonienſis* noſtra, quæ nuper è turbulenta tempeſtate, proſpero bonitatis tuæ flatu curſum accelerante, in tranquillitatis portum devecta eſt. Nam cum Academia noſtra nihil habeat ad ſuam dignitatem tuendam, nihil ad pacem eam quâ Muſæ delectantur, ſtabiliendam utilius, privivilegiis illis auguſtiſſimis & antiquiſſimis, quibus eam nobiliſſimi principes ad religionis, virtutis, bonarumq; literarum propagationem donarunt, anxerunt, exornarunt: quodnam potuit ab honore tuo beneficium in eam majus, aut præſtantius conferri, quam ut ope tuâ, ſolùm ipſa privilegia graviter oppugnata, ab injuriâ honorificentiſſimè vindicarentur: ſed etiam ut Vicecomes comitatus *Oxonienſis*, pro eo ac debebat & ſolebat, in eorundem non ſolùm obſervationem, ſed defenſionem etiam & tutelam, ſit ſemper in poſterum juraturus? Quo ſanè ſingulari, perpetuóque beneficio, cum ſatis exploratum habeamus, honorem tuum non minùs eſſe de Academiâ noſtrâ tuendâ ſtudioſum, quàm de tuâ *Cantabrigienſi* ornandâ ſollicitum, (ſic enim non ſolùm reipſa cognovimus, ſed perhonorifico Procancellarii noſtri ſermone accepimus) æquum eſt, ut nos te majori fide, ardentiore ſtudio, fideliore obſerventia, colamus & revereamur; quibus naturæ tuæ bonitate invitatis, (tam benignè conſulas; quàm illi, quos ſuſcepti muneris ratione adductus, amplectcris. Quare gratias habemus honori tuo & humillimas, & plurimas, & maximas, quòd nobis ſtudiiſque noſtris tam honorificè proſpexeris; ſanctiſſiméque pollicemur, nunquam nos ne *Cantabrigienſibus* quidem tuis, in te colendo, honorando, ſuſpiciendo, & omni officii genere tibi ſatisfaciendo ulla re, ullo tempore conceſſuros. Deus Opt. Max. qui te ad ampliſſimum honoris gradum evexit, & in excelſo loco collocavit, ut graviſſimorum negotiorum pondus & onus ſuſtineres, ab omni periculo incolumem te conſervet, noviſque indies honoribus cumulet, ut tuo conſilio & auxilio non ſolùm Academiæ magis magiſq; floreant; ſed politia etiam hujus regni, & eccleſia Dei, novis quotidie fælicitatis acceſſionibus augeantur. *Oxon.* 5° Cal. Julii. 1581.

Illuſtriſſ. viro D. Guil. Burghleio
Summo Angliæ *Theſaurario, &*
Academiæ Cantabrigienſis *Cancellario Digniſſimo.*

Amplitudini tuæ deditiſſima.

ACADEMIA OXONIENSIS.

NUMB. IX.

Exemplum Chartæ An. 29. Edwardi Tertii. *Pro juramento Vicecomitis.* Touching the Univerſity of *Oxon.*

Ex Rotulo Cartarum de anno viceſſimo nono regni Regis EDWARDI *Tertii. Pro Cancellar. & Scholaribus,* Oxon.

ITEM, ad majorem ſecuritatem &quietem Studentium in Univerſitate predicta pro perpetuo ordinamus & concedimus, pro nobis & heredibus noſtris, quod quilibet Vicecomes *Oxon.* qui pro tempore erit in receptione Commiſſionis ſue, juramentum preſtet corporale, quod Magiſtros & Scholares Univerſitatis *Oxon.* & eorum Servientes, pro viribus ab injuriis & violenciis proteget

get & defendet, & pacem in Univerſitate predicta quantum in ipſo eſt, faciet conſervari, præfatiſq; Cancellario & Scholaribus, ad puniend. perturbatores pacis ibm. juxta privilegia & ſtatuta Univerſitatis predcta, ſemper cum opus fuerit, praſtabit conſilium & juvamen, & ad privilegia, Libertates, & conſuetudines dict. Univerſitatis defendend. pro viribus opem feret. Et quod a Vicecomite ſuo, & aliis Miniſtris ſuis in Com. prædicto ſtatim cum poſt ſuſceptum Officium ad Caſtrum vel villam *Oxon.* declinaverit in preſentia alicujus ex parte Univerſitatis ad hoc deputandi conſimilier recipiet juramentum, ad quod ipſos miniſtros per eundem Vicecomitem compelli volumus & arturi.

Hanc etiam formam jurandi volumus exnunc addi formæ juramenti Vic. dicti loci in receptione Commiſſionis ſuæ preſtari conſueti. Ceterum quia ſuper penis pro ſecuriori conſervatione pacis ipſius Univerſitatis ſtatuend. ac ſuper aliis quæ juxta ſubmiſſiones predictas ad perpetuam præmiſſorum memoriam pie per Dei gratiam facere proponimus jam ordinare non poſſumus, variis & arduis negotiis prepediti, ordinationem hujuſmodi nobis ſpecialiter reſervamus. His teſtibus venerabilibus patribus, *Johanne* Archiepiſcopo *Ebor. Angliæ* Primate, Cancellario noſtro *Willielmo Winton.* Epiſcopo, Theſaurario noſtro. Magiſtro *Miche de Northburgh* Electo *London* Confirmato, *Henrico* Duce *Lancaſtr. Willielmo de Bohun Northampton. Richardo Arundel, Thmæ de Bello campo Warr. Rogero Marſh, Willielmo Sarum, Johanne de Vere, Oxon.* Comitibus, *Galfrido de Saye*, & *Johannæ de Greye, de Rotherfeild*, Seneſcallo hoſpitii noſtri & aliis, Dat. per manum noſtram apud Turrim *London.* viceſſimus ſeptimo die Junii. Anno regni noſtri *Angliæ* viceſſimo nono, regni vero noſtri *Franciæ* Decimo Sexto.

Per ipſum Regem.

NUMB. X.

Sales of Edward *Earl of* Oxford. *And Names of the Purchaſers. And his Debts to the Queen.*

Lands.	Purchaſer.	Lands.	Purchaſer.
LANHAM *Camps* *Fulmer*	Mr. *Skinner*	*Bumſted*, alias *Bunſted Helion*	*Will. Stibbing.*
Wivenhoe *Bentley* *Baterſwick* *New-years* Farm	Mr. *Glaſcock.*	*Over Geldam* *Nether Geldam* *Little Geldam*, alias *Teldam*	*John Mabb.*
Tolebury *Northtofts* *Skaths*	*Irael Amys.*	*Teldam Hall* *Brownes Barn* *Pool Farm* *Bovelay Farm*, and *Bennets Lands*	*Robert Plumbe.*
Stanſted Montfitchets *Burnels* *Bury Lodge* *Benfield Bury*	Mr. *Hubbard.*		

All theſe Lands and Manours the Lord Treaſurer gave Warrant, for the extending them, *July* the 23. 1590.

Where the Park and Manour of *Lanham* was let for 100 Marks *per Annum.*

The Manour of *Fulmer*, Forty Pounds *per Annum.*

The Manour of *Camps*, an Hundred Pounds *per Annum.* Whereof Mr *Skinner* was rated at Four Hundred Pounds for his Share.

Debts to the Queen. Forfeitures,

In the Court of Wards 11000 *l.* that is,
Forfeiture of Covenants upon the Livery, 4000 *l.*
Upon his Wardſhip, 3000 *l.*
And other Obligations, 4000 *l.* odd Hundred Shillings more.
All this appeared on Record.

More, Sold to *Roger Herlakendon*,
Coln Park, and a Parcel of Meddow, for 2000 *l.*
The Manour of *Earls Coln*, for 500 *l.*
Coln Priory alſo.

NUMB. XI.

Thomas Sampſon's *Account of the Converſion, and divers Hiſtorical Remarks of the Holy Life of* J. Bradford, *Martyr.*

Preface to Bradford's *Sermon of* Repentance.

I, Which did know him familiarly, muſt needs give to God this Praiſe for him; that among Men, I have ſcarce known one like unto him. I did know When, and partly How, it pleaſed God, by effectual Calling, to turn his Heart unto the true Knowledge and Obedience of the moſt Holy Goſpel. Of which God did give him ſuch a heavenly Hold, and lively Feeling, that as he did then know that many Sins were forgiven him, ſo ſurely he declared by Deeds, that he loved much. For where he had both Gifts and Callings to have employed himſelf in Civil and Worldly Affairs profitably, ſuch was his Love of Chriſt, and Zele to the promoting his glorious Goſpel, that he changed not only the Courſe of his former Life, as even his former Study.

Touching the Firſt, After that God touched his Heart with that Holy and Effectual Calling, he ſold his Rings, Chains, Brockets, and Jewels of Gold, which before he uſed to wear: And did beſtow the Price of this his former Vanity in the neceſſary Relief of Chriſt's poor Members, which he could hear of, or find lying ſick, or pining in Poverty.

Touching the Second, He ſo declared his great Zele and Love to promote the Glory of the Lord *Jeſus*, whoſe Goodneſs and ſaving Health he had taſted, that to do the ſame more pithily, he changed his Study of the Common Laws; He went to *Cambridge*, to ſtudy Divinity, where he heard Dr. *Martin Bucer* diligently, and was right familiar and dear unto him. In this godly Courſe he did by God's Bleſſing ſo profit, that the bleſſed Martyr Dr. *Ridley*, then Biſhop of *London*, did as it were invite him and his godly Companion, Mr. *Thomas Horton*, to become Fellows of *Pembroke Hall* in *Cambridge*. And after, the ſaid Dr. *Ridley* called our *Bradford* to *London*, to give him a Prebend in *Paul*'s Church, lodged him in his own Houſe there, and ſet him on Work preaching: And beſides, after preaching in *London*, and *Paul's Croſs*, and ſundry Places in the Country, and eſpecially in *Lancaſhire*, [being a Native of *Mancheſter* in that County.] He preached before King *Edward* VI. in the *Lent*, in the laſt Year of his Reign, upon the Second *Pſalm*. And there in one Sermon ſhewing the Tokens of God's Judgment at hand, for the Contempt of the Goſpel. As that certain Gentlemen upon the Sabbath day going in a Wherry to *Paris-Garden* to a Bear baiting, were drowned: And a Dog was met at *Ludgate* carrying a Piece of a dead Child in his Mouth; he with a mighty and prophetical Spirit ſaid, *I ſummon you all, even every Mother's Child of you to the Judgment*

ment of God, for it is at hand. So it followed ſhortly after, in the Death of King *Edward*. In which State and Labour of Preaching, he continued till the Cruelty of the Papiſts cut him off; as thou mayſt read in the Hiſtory of his Life and Death, by that faithful Servant of the Lord *Jeſus*, Mr. *John Fox*.

Indeed he had many Pullbacks; but God ſtill helped forward his choſen Servant in that Trade of Life to which he had called him. In which he ran forward ſo happily, that he outrun me and others his Companions. For it pleaſed God with great Speed to make him ready and ripe to Martyrdom.——But in all Stops and Stays he was mightily helped forward by a continual Meditation and Practice of Repentance and Faith in Chriſt, in which he was kept, by God's Grace, notably exerciſed all the Days of his Life.

Even in this mean time he heard a Sermon, which the notable Preacher, Mr. *Latymer*, made before King *Edward* VI. in which he did earneſtly ſpeak of *Reſtitution* to be made of Things falſely gotten. Which did ſo ſtrike *Bradford* to the Heart, for one Daſh with a Pen which he had made, without the Knowledge of his Maſter, (as full often I have heard him confeſs with Plenty of Tears) being Clerk to the Treaſurer of the King's Camp beyond the Seas; and was to the deceiving of the King: That he could never be quiet, till by the Advice of the ſame Mr. *Latymer*, a Reſtitution was made. Which Thing to bring to paſs he did willingly forbear and forgo all that private and ſorry Patrimory which he had on Earth. Let all Bribers and poling Officers, which get to themſelves great Revenues in Earth by ſuch ſlippery Shifts follow this Example; leaſt in taking a contrary Courſe, they take a contrary Way, and never come where *Bradford* now is.

But beſides this, *Bradford* had his daily Exerciſes and Practices of Repentance. His Manner was, to make to himſelf a Catalogue of all the groſſeſt and moſt enorme Sins, which in his Life of Ignorance he had committed, and to lay the ſame before his Eyes, when he went to private Prayer; that by the Sight and Remembrance of them, he might be ſtirred up to offer to God the Sacrifice of a contrite Heart; ſeek Aſſurance of Salvation in and by Faith; thank God for his Calling from the Ways of Wickedneſs, and pray for Encreaſe of Grace to be conducted in holy Life, acceptable and pleaſing to God. Such a continual Exerciſe of Conſcience he had in private Prayer, that he did not count himſelf to have prayed to his Contentation, unleſs in it he had felt inwardly ſome ſmiting of Heart for Sin, and ſome healing of that Wound by Faith; feeling the ſaving Health of Chriſt, with ſome change of Mind into the Deteſtation of Sin, and Love of obeying the Good Will of God——as appeared by this: He uſed in the Morning to go to the Common Prayer of the College where he was. And after that, he uſed to make ſome Prayers with his Pupils in his Chamber. But not content with this, he then repaired to his own ſecret Prayers; and exerciſed in Prayer by himſelf, as one that had not yet prayed to his own Mind. For he was wont to ſay to his Familiars, *I have prayed with my Pupils, but I have not yet prayed with myſelf.*——

Another of his Exerciſes was this: He uſed to make unto himſelf an *Ephemeris*, or a *Journal*, in which he uſed to write all ſuch notable Things, as either he did ſee or hear each Day that paſt. But whatſoever he did hear or ſee, he did ſo pen it, that a Man might ſee in that Book the Signs of his ſmitten Heart. For if he did ſee or hear any good in any Man, by that Sight he found, and noted the Want thereof in himſelf; and added a ſhort Prayer, craving Mercy, and Grace to amend. If he did hear or ſee any Plague or Miſery, he noted it as a Thing procured by his own Sins; and ſtill added, *Domine, miſerere mei*: He uſed in the ſame Book to note ſuch evil Thoughts as did ariſe in him, as of envying the Good of other Men; Thoughts of Unthankfulneſs; of not conſidering God in his Works; of Hardneſs, and Unſenſibleneſs of Heart, when he did ſee other Men moved and affected. And thus he made to himſelf, and of himſelf, a Book of daily Practices of Repentance.

Beſides this, they that were familiar with him might ſee, how he, being in their Company, uſed to fall often into a ſudden and deep Meditation; in which he would ſit with fixed Countenance, and Spirit moved, yet ſpeaking nothing for a good Space. And ſometime, in this ſilent ſitting, plenty of Tears would trickle down his Cheeks. Sometime he would ſit in it, and come out of it with a ſmiling Countenance. Oftentimes I have ſitten at Dinner and Supper with him in the Houſe of that good Harbourer of many Preachers and Servants of the Lord *Jeſus*, Mr. *Elſing*; when either by occaſion of Talk had, or ſome view of Benefits preſent, or ſome inward Cogitations, and thoſe of his own, he had fallen into theſe deep Cogitations. And he would tell me in the End, ſuch Diſcourſes of them, that I did perceive, that ſometimes his Tears trickled out of his Eyes, as well for Joy as for Sorrow.

In all Companies where he did come, he would freely rebuke any Sin and Misbehaviour, which appeared in any Perſon; eſpecially Swearers, filthy Talkers, and Popiſh Praters. Such never departed out of his Company unreproved. And this he did with ſuch a Divine Grace, and Chriſtian Majeſty, that ever he ſtopt the Mouths of the Gainſayers. For he ſpake with Power: And yet ſo ſweetly, that they might ſee their Evil to be evil and hurtful unto them; and underſtand that it was good indeed, to that which he laboured to draw them in to God.

NUMB. XII.

A Copy of Verſes, ſet before a Book of Martial Diſcipline; *exciting the Nation to exerciſe Armes; Conſidering the preſent Dangers from foreign Enemies. By the Author,* T. Styward, *Generos.*

AS Wiſdome wills us to regard, what Plagues in time do hap,
On ſuch as ſeek for to be rockt always in Pleaſures Lap:
And Neighbours Harms bid us take heed, all Perils to prevent;
Leſt careleſs Sleep do Dangers bring, and then too late repent.
So, *England*, take thou heed in time, leſt thou too ſoon do rue
The wicked Harms deviſ'd by Foes; which ſhortlie may enſue:
If that Regard of Martial Laws, be had no more in price,
And Souldiers Lore deſpiſed thus, amongſt the Grave and Wiſe.
Behold! how Foreigns are abus'd, that ſcorn'd this Martial Law;
And are by Warlike Wights oppreſt, and brought to live in Awe.
Their Goods, their Wives, their Virgins fair, are ſpoil'd and brought to Thrall:
Miſus'd before their Parents Face: Such is their grievious Fall.
Caſt off therefore your ſluggiſh Life; call home your Hearts agen:
Let *Venus* paſs; deſpiſe her Laws: Live now like valiant Men,
As heretofore your Fathers did: Whoſe Acts each where did flow:
From Eaſt to Weſt, from North to South, as Stories plainly ſhow.
Two Books I have therefore ſet forth, to ſhew thee how to traine,
To March, Encampe, and Battles make, with Tables very plaine;
Which tho' they be not as I wiſh, accept them as they are:
And thou ſhalt Profit reap thereby, of Policies of War,
Whereby to ſhun the Slights of Foes; Who *hope but for a Day*, †
For to pervert this quiet State, if poſſible they may.
Regard therefore your Countrie Soil, your Parents and your Wives,
Your Children and your Lands and Rents; ſeek to defend your Lives.
And leave off Pride and Luſtineſs, your great and much Exceſs,
Your deintie Fare, your coſtlie Raie, your Carpet Wantonneſs.
Prepare you Horſe and Lance to Field; for now the Time is come:
Take Pike and Sword in hand again: liſt now to Sound of Drum.

† Viz. *The* Papiſts; *whoſe Saying that commonly was.*

Hark, how the Trumpet warning gives, to haſte us to the Wars,
That we our *Britiſh* Soyle may keep from Death and bloody Jarrs.
In haſte prepare, ye *Engliſh* Hearts, to tread this Path aright;
Which doth inſtruct a ready Way, to put our Foes to Flight.
Thus ſhall we do our Country good, and pleaſe the mighty God,
Who hath, and will preſerve us ſtill from Scourge of mighty Rod.
The Zeal I owe to native Soile, hath forct my ſimple Hand,
To publiſh this my ſlender Skill, our Enemies to withſtand.
Not ſeeking Praiſe for any thing, nor yet aſpecting Gaines;
I crave in lieu of my good Wlil, thy Favour for my Pains.

Virtus vulnere vivit.

T. S.

NUMB. XIII.

Theodore Beza *to the Lord* Burghley: *Preſenting him with an ancient* Pentateuch *in ſix Languages, towards the furniſhing of the new Library in* Cambridge.

Illuſtri Domino, Domino Gulielmo Cæcilio *Baroni* a Burley, *ſummo* Angliæ *Theſaurario, Domino mihi ſummè obſervando.*

SIQUID pecco, Illuſtris mi Domine. Amplitudinem tuam interpellans, teipſum pænè accuſes oportet, cui Pietas & Doctrina cæteræque Virtutes tantum in me ſalutandi tui deſiderium jampridem accenderunt, ut accedente præſertim lectiſſimi juvenis, & verè εὐγνώστου καὶ ἐξόχου Affinis tui Domini *Antonij Baconi*, Cohortatione continere id amplius non potuerim. Accedo verò ad te, occaſione fretus, quam tibi injucundam non fore confido. Nactus nimirum quinque *Moſis* Librorum exemplar, ſive *Conſtantinæ* in *Africa*, ſive *Conſtantinopoli*, a multis jam Annis excuſum. Quod mihi liceat ἑξάγλωσσον, *Arabica* Lingua nimirum, *Perſica*, *Græca* barbara, & *Hiſpanica* vetere, in Uſum *Judaicarum* Synagogarum, ſupra *Hæbraicam* & *Chaldaicam* editum, appellare. Quod propter raritatem, & vetuſtam, ut ita loquar, Novitatem, quàm dignum mihi Conſecratione quadam videretur, tuæ potiſſimum Amplitudini mittendam exiſtimavi. Quod præſertim intelligam digniſſimum Sapientia præſtantiaque tua Monumentum, id eſt, inſtructiſſimam Bibliothecam abs te in inclyta *Cantabrigienſi* Academia, cui ſumma tibi Procuratio commiſſa eſt, apparari.

Peto igitur abs te, Illuſtris mi Domine, ut & Audaciam hanc meam æqui bonique conſulas, & iſtud qualecunque ſummæ in te obſervantiæ Teſtimonium ac pignus, non invitus accipias. Quod ſi abs te impetrâro, ſingulari beneficio me abs te affectum exiſtimabo: Benè vale. Dominus JESUS magis, ac magis tibi ſanctiſque conſiliis tuis benedicat, teque quàm diutiſſimè ſuis Eccleſiis incolumem ſervet. *Genevæ* VIII. Idus Decembris Anno Dom. CIƆ IƆ LXXXI.

Illuſtri Amplitudini tuæ addictiſſimus

THEODORUS BEZA.

NUMB.

NUMB. XIV.

Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley: *Moving him to procure the printing of that ancient* Hexaglot *Tranſlation of the* Pentateuch, *likely to prove ſo highly uſeful to the Chriſtian World.*

Gratiam & Pacem a Domino,

Epiſt. Doctor Peregrin, *pen. me.*

SPERO ad te perveniſſe, Illuſtris mi Domine, *MOSIS* illud quod vocant πεντάβιβλον maximè peregrinis Linguis aliquot expreſſum. Quod Munuſculum utinam tuæ Amplitudini tam gratum fuiſſe intelligam, quàm eſt a me tibi prompta obnixaque Voluntate miſſum; ut hoc quoque Sacræ Bibliothecæ illi tuæ, quaſi auguſtiſſimo Templo, conſecraretur. Quod ſi tibi quoque in Mentem veniret, mi Domine, ut illa ſaltem *Perſica* & *Arabica*, & *Græca* Vulgaris, verſibus adjectis *Hebræis*, incuteretur (quod non ita magno ſumptu *Plantinus Autuerpius* confecerit) tibi perſuaſum eſſe velim, eam Editionem & reipub. Chriſtianæ Utilitatem maximam, & tibi privatim, immortalem Celebritatem Nomini conciliaturam. Qua de re, ut cogiteſ-ne graveris, etiam atque etiam te rogo, *&c.* *Genevæ*, 10. Octob. 1582.

NUMB XV:

Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley; *to favour the Requeſt of the Council of* Geneva, *for a Loan of Money in their preſent Diſtreſs, by the Means of the Duke of* Savoy.

Gratiam & Pacem a Domino,

MSS. Burghleian.

ILLUSTRIS mi Domine--------Quiddam mihi, illa tua quæ ab omnibus etiam externis certatim prædicatur, Benignitate freto, Amplitudinis nunc interpellandæ tuæ Occaſionem præbuit: Quod etſi minus verecundè factum videri poteſt, tamen partim Æquitas illa tua, partim ipſa, ut ſperem, Neceſſitas facile excuſabit.

Quibus inſidiis tentata, quibus Viribus impetita, quàm admirabiliter a Deo liberata hæc Civitas *Genevenſis* hoc Anno fuerit, iſtuc renuntiatum fuiſſe non dubito. Quæ ſit autem iſtius Urbis ſitus Opportunitas ab Evangelij hoſtibus avidiſſimè expetita (hæc enim certe quicquid in contrarium prætexatur, alios habet Hoſtes, quàm qui Evangelio bellum ἄσπονδον indixerunt:) quantum denique in hujus Urbis ſit poſitum, ſatis etiam tibi perſpectum eſſe puto. In hoc quidem certe rerum ſtatu, quamdiu iſtud *Helveticarum* Eccleſiarum propugnaculnm & *Gallicarum* opportuniſſimum Perfugium ſtabit, Pontificii de Concilij *Tridentini*, ſive in *Gallia*, ſive in his Regionibus, Executione, (qui verus eſt omnium iſtarum Molitionum Scopus) deſperabunt. Nec, ut ſpero, nobis a tergo relictis, quicquam apertè, niſi fortè *Belgia* (quod Dominus avertat) ab ipſis perdomita, trans mare aggredientur.

Amabò igitur, Illuſtris mi Domine, Civitatis & Eccleſiæ, non malè de cæteris meritæ, & veſtræ quoque aliquando gentis hoſpitæ, Cauſam in te agendam recipe: *i. e.* hoc illi præſta, ut in ſumma rei nummariæ Difficultate verſanti, & maximam hoſtium Impreſſionem expectanti, ſeſe, quâ polles, apud ſereniſſimam Regiam Majeſtatem Authoritate adjutam fuiſſe, ſentiat.

Memini quidem ego aliquando audire iſtuc renuntiatum, *Genevam* eſſe quorundam improborum Receptaculum. Quæ quum impudens ſit Calumnia, (quam ſit ſub cælo Civitas in qua accuratiore cum examine peregrinirecipiantur, vel jus ſeverius dicatur) Veſtrates omnium Ordinum homines, qui hanc Rempublicam & Scholam præſentia ſua cohoneſtarunt, teſtes appello. Memini quoq; infelicibus illic *Marianis* temporibus editum hic Libellum a peregrino quodam veſtrate, qui poſtea Sereniſſimam pientiſſimæ Reginæ Majeſtatem offenderit. Sed cum Libellum ſimul atque innotuit, & hujus Eccleſiæ judicio, & noſtri Magiſtratus authoritate, damnatum & ſuppreſſum fuiſſe conſtat. Illa denique nonnulla Rituum ἀδιαφόρων diverſitas; atque adeo noſtrarum in Eccleſiaſtica conſtituenda gubernatione ſententiarum repugnentia, abſit, ut animos in ipſius Doctrinæ Conſenſu planè conſentientes, ſcindat; neq; obſcurum eſſe Amplitudini tuæ poteſt, quàm de rebus iſtis moderatè ſemper & locuti ſimus, & ſcripſerimus rogati.

Quæſo rurſum igitur, Illuſtris mi Domine, ut ſiquid fortaſſis iſtorum animo tuo inſidebit, illud totum ſeponas, & non indignam eſſe Patrocinio tuo eam Rempublicam exiſtimes: In qua conſervatâ merito non unum oppiduium, ſed Chriſtianas omnes, & *Gallicas* & *Sabaudicas*, Eccleſias tibi maximo beneficio devinxeris. Quod quum te, perſpectis iſtis, ultrò facturum mihi pollicear, non committam, ut accuratiore utens commendatione, videar de optima voluntate tua dubitaſſe. Benè vale, Illuſtris mi Domine, Dominus JESUS, Deus ille & ſervator noſter exauditis ſuorum gemitibus, rabiem Sathanæ compeſcat; Eccleſias ſuas adverſus exteros ac domeſticos omnes Hoſtes, quàm potentiſſimè tueatur; Amplitudinem tuam magis ac magis donis omnibus cumulatam, quàm diutiſſimè conſervet. *Geneva*, 10. Octobr. 1582.

Quod alterius nunc manu ad te ſcribam, rogote, mi Domine, ut tremulæ nunc meæ & vecillanti adſcribas.

Illuſtri Amplitudini tuæ addictiſſimus,

THEODORUS BEZA.

NUMB. XVI.

The Syndics *and Council of* Geneva *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley: *To promote their Suit to the Queen for a Loan of Money. Sent by* Maillet *their Meſſenger.*

A Monſieur, Monſieur Le Baron Bourgley, *grand Trezorier d'Angleterre.*

Monſieur,

MSS. Burgh.

CEST une choſe ordinaire, que ceux, qui ſont en neceſſité cherchent quelque ſoulaigement & aſſiſtance vers ceux, aus quelz Dieu a donne plus de moyens & Commodites. Ce que nous diſons, Monſieur dautant que vous aurez entendu les grandz maux & calamités, ou nous avons eſté reduitz depuys huiet moys en ca: ayans eſté primierement aſſailis par entrepriſés couvertes par Monſieur Le Duc de *Savoye*, incité par les enemis de noſtre Religion. Puys apres ouvertement ayant ſon Armée campé au tour de nous Ceſpace d'environ cinque Moys. Et Jacois, que Dieu nous ayt preſervés de ce mau, de nos enemis. Nous avons toute fois ſouffert de grandes incommoditez en nos biens, le plat pays eſtant gaſté & deſtruict oultre la deſpenſe exceſſive, & ſurmontant nos moyens, que nous avons eſté contrains ſupporter pour noſtre conſervation.

Deux choſes neantmoigns nous conſolent. En primier lieu, que nous ſcavons; que nous ſommes aſſaillis & perſecutes a tort, & plus toſt en haine de la Religion, dont nous faiſons profeſſion, que non pas, qu' on nous puiſſe alleguer, que nous detenions les autres. Et d'autre part Dieu nous a tellement favoriſes, que pluſieurs amys ſe ſont preſentés; & meſme employes pour noſtre ſeccours; Cognoiſſans bien l'equité de noſtre Cauſe.

Nous avons toute fois eſté reduicts en grande neceſſité a cauſe de nos petis moyens; tellement que nous pourrions difficilement reſiſter a un ſecond effort (dont toutefois nous ſommes encore-menaces) ſans l'aide & ſecours des plus puiſſans. Ce qui nous fait paſſer par deſſus la conſideration, qui nous pourroit autrement arreſter cognoiſſant noſtre petiteſſe pour nous addreſſer a la Majeſté de La Royne, la ſuppliant de nous vouloir ſoulager en noſtre neceſſité & nous eſlargir de grandz moyens, que Dieu luy a donnée en abondances, en accommodant noſtre Publique de quelque preſt deniers, permettant auſſi ſil ſe trouve de particuliers, qui veuillent uſer de Liberalité enver nous, il leur ſoit permis ſoubs ſa bonne Volonté.

Et daut-ant, Monſieur, que l'acces, que vous avés a ſa Majeſté nous peut grandement ſervir, en cette Affaire, ayans auſſi eſté aſſures de l'affection que vous portéz generalliment a ceux qui ſouffrent a tort, & en particulier que vous eſtés deſplaiſant de nos afflictions; nous nous addreſſons a vous pour vous prier d'employer voſtre Credit envers ſa Majeſté, a ce que nous puiſſions obtenir ce dont nous la requirons tres humblement. En quoy faiſant, Monſieur, vous vous obligeres de plus en plus une ville de *Geneve*, laquelle taſchera de conſerver la Memoire d'un tel bienfaict, & la perpetuer a ceux qui viendront apres nous.

Aureſt, le Seigneur *Maillet*, noſtre Citoyen & Conſeillier en noſtre grand Conſeil, qui nous envoyens expreſs par de la, vous fera entendre au long l'eſtat de nos Affaires, ſi vous plaiſt en eſtre informé par le menu.

Monſieur, a pres vous avoir preſenté nos affectuenſes recommendations, nous prions Dieu, quil vous accroiſſe de plus en plus ſes dons & graces, & vous face jouir de longue & heureuſe vie ſoubs ſa ſaincte garde & protection. Ce Septieſme Octobre, 1582.

NUMB. XVII.

The Anſwer of Dr. Beacon, *to the Three Reaſons propounded by the Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield; *Why he ſhould not be Chancellor of that Dioceſe.*

See the Biſhop's Reaſons in the Book, Chap IX. *The Anſwer followeth.*

MSS. Epiſcopal. pen me.

TO the Firſt, *B.* [Dr. *Beacon*] doth ſtill hold the *Right of the Patent* [for the Chancellorſhip] good, even as the Biſhop himſelf ſets down the Caſe; although touching *B*'s Procurement of the Condition is not Truth. 2. As for the late pretended Forfeiture of *Non uſer*, beſides, that it ſtandeth not with the Gravity, Conſcience and Profeſſion of a Biſhop, it was directly contrary to his Lordſhip's faithful Promiſe made to the Maſter of the *Rolls*; at whoſe earneſt Requeſt, upon the firſt Riot committed, Dr. *B.* yielded to forbear: The rather for that as well his Lordſhip, as the Maſter of the *Rolls* did aſſure Dr. *B*'s Security of *Non uſer*, until further Order taken. 3. To take ſo nice Advantage, when the Patentees, by Order of that moſt honourable Table, were neceſſarily to attend, wanteth Judgment to conſider with whom his Lordſhip doth dally, and argueth ſmall Conſideration of their moſt honourable Care to ſupply his Lordſhip's former Overſight and Defect, for the publick Good and Peace of his Church; even amidſt their great and weightier Affairs, to the Biſhop's Comfort and Credit: if God's Judgments do not ſtill blind his Lordſhip's Eyes. 4. The Biſhop hath in all theſe Devices rather encumbred and entangled himſelf, and bewrayed his unconcionable Deſire to ſupplant the Patent, than obtained his Purpoſe. Whereupon Dr. *B.* will ſtand under indifferent Hearing and Judgment of Law. What thoſe publick Inſtruments are, and how authentical, upon the Sight and Scanning, will plainly appear. Whereunto Dr. *B.* referreth himſelf.

To the Second ; The Patent remaining good and ſound for his *Sufficiency in Skill of Law*, it is either more than the Biſhop's hard Opinion and Judgment can diſgrace, with the Teſtimony of the Univerſity, and the beſt Learned of that Profeſſion, and his former Services in other Places do afford him : Or elſe, but his own avouching it cannot receive further Credit. Would to God, both the Biſhop and every Man elſe were groundly furniſhed according to the Profeſſion of their Calling. But thus much Dr. *B.* may truly ſay without Offence, he diſpatched one Hundred *Sentences* without reverſing, before his Lordſhip was towards his Biſhoprick. And thus not altogether ſo rude a Chancellor.

Touching *B's Corruption* and *hunting after Bribes*, whereby Juſtice may be perverted ; if his Lordſhip mean ſince I was his Officer, I anſwer, I never yet was ſuffered to intermeddle with his Juriſdiction. And therefore need no further Tryal. If his Lordſhip mean in *Norfolk* and *Suſſex* ; to his Lordſhip's general Plea, I can ſhew ſo ſufficient a Diſcharge for both, as that he could do me no greater Pleaſure, than bring me into Queſtion. And to any Particulars his Son in Law, or others, have lately hunted out, I am moſt ready and deſirous to anſwer.

The favouring of ſuch as are *Enemies to the Queen's Proceedings*, when other Slanders will take no hold, is commonly informed againſt the beſt Subjects, and Lovers of the Goſpel, by the profeſſed Enemy, and fained Friend. Dr. *B.* thus anſwereth for himſelf to this Point, That he did always according to his Duty execute her Majeſty's Laws : Making yet in Diſcretion much Difference between the Enemy and Friend to her Majeſty's Eſtate, ſo far as it pleaſed God to give him Grace. As for *Marberie*, *B.* never knew the Man, before the very Day he was convented before his Lordſhip at *Litchfield*, nor ſaw him ſince. And although his Lordſhip, upon long and publick Conference before many, grew into ſo great Liking of *Marberie's* Anſwers to all Points then moved, that he not only offered him his Licenſe to Preach within his Dioceſe, but alſo wiſhed him S. *Michaels* in *Coventry* : Promiſing him to certify the Lords of the Council of his well ſatisfying his Lordſhip in thoſe Points whereof he was unjuſtly charged. Yet *B.* in Love and Deſire the Man's Gifts might be profitable to the Church of God, ſo preſt him in reaſoning, that his deareſt Friends there preſent, and hearing, thought well of his Lordſhip, were greatly in Diſlike of Dr. *B.* And therefore in publick Aſſembly at Home to ſeem ſo plauſible, and ſo bitterly ſevere here, is ſcarce anſwerable to the ſound, conſtant Reſolution of a Biſhop : and to charge a Man ſo heinouſly now of ſo dangerous Matters, whom his Lordſhip in publick Audience did ſo greatly comfort then, (the Time being one and the ſame) ſavoureth not of that Chriſtianity whereof Biſhops ſhould be Fathers and Nurſes ; eſpecially, when it tendeth to the unjuſt Accuſation and Prejudice of another.

To the Third ; B. *is the Biſhop's deadly Enemy.* And therefore though he had right, and were fit, yet not to be truſted. For *B.* defaceth the Biſhop in every Place. Where manifeſt Wants and Blemiſhes in private Dealings and publick Government do proclaim open Diſcredit, there a Man may lament, cannot deface : B. *calleth the Biſhop Beaſt.* What *Beaſt* (but that the Judgments of God are above Reaſon, in beſotting Mens Underſtanding and Senſes ſometimes) would call an honeſt Gentlewomans good Name in queſtion, who throughout her whole Life was never noted with any Suſpicion of Lightneſs ; bewraying thereby a bitter Deſire of Revenge, and a foul Corruption and Uſage of a ſenſual Man ? And although his Lordſhip's Letters written unto her with his own Hand, *April* 15. 1580. to *Lewys*, [a Town in *Suſſex*] doth apparently juſtify the Oath ſo ſolemnly, with ſuch Execrations before the Lords denied, yet what is *ſcelus ſceleri addere*, if this be not, to recompence ſo great an Untruth with ſo heinous a Slander ? Otherwiſe, perjured Men, Knaves, Horeſon Knaves, are not to be juſtified.

If his Lordſhip hath *Simoniacally* laid Hands upon Miniſters ; or by exceſſive encroaching, where Law directeth Service (*gratis*) be culpable, it is his Lordſhip's Guilt, not mine Accuſation. If his Lordſhip's own Folly and Conſcience burſt not forth to his further Condemnation, I charge him not. It is happy the pretended Conſpiracy was the very next Day, with all their Circumſtances committed to Writing: When his Lordſhip, by the humble and dutiful Letters of the Dean and Chapter, was jointly beſeeched to Conference touching ſuch untrue Suggeſtions, informed his Lordſhip for that timely Satisfaction. Which was by hard and ſharp Letters unchriſtianly refuſed. At which I ſaid thus much only, by occaſion of his manifold Vexations and Deprivations of my ſelf, and a great many more intended, *If her Majeſty's Hand were as readily to be obtained, as the Hand and Seal of ordinary Patrons, it might by the Biſhop's Title fall out as doubtful as his Lordſhip made many poor Men's* : The very next Morning the Biſhop himſelf publiſhing to Dr. *Bickley* and others, a ſurmiſed Effect [Defect] in his Election, whereby he might be avoided from his Biſhoprick. When his Lordſhip pleaſe to ſet down the particular Devices to intrap him within Danger of Law, I will anſwer a Truth.

B. in his own Defence at the Council Table juſtified the great Diſorders committed, in making ſuch a Rabble of moſt diſorderly Miniſters, contrary to all God's [Word] forbid ; and his Lordſhip's publick Advertiſements, with ſuch Exactions as were ſtrange and ſlanderous throughout the whole Dioceſe. For Reformation whereof he had divers Times before by Letters and otherwiſe, had humbly beſeeched his Lordſhip in vain. When his Lordſhip firſt provoked the Dean of *Litchfield* by foul Accuſations at the Council Table, what Time I diſcontinued one whole Year out of the Country, wiſe Men may eaſily conſider what moved Mr. Dean to take the Courſe he did. If his Lordſhip term the Dean and Chapter his Enemies, and reckoneth my poor Advice to avoid the firſt Encounter with them for a Money-Matter, both by Words and Letters joyning with them, I hope his Lordſhip now finding the Truth by Experience, will alter his Opinion.

B. thinketh, as *Tully* ſaith, *Chari amici, chari propinqui*; *ſed omnes omnium Charitate, una Patria, & Eccleſia Chriſti, complexa eſt.* A Biſhop in Watching and Prayer, in Preaching and Zele, in comforting the Good, and diſcouraging the Enemy, going before in a painful ſtreight Courſe, I account him a treacherous and perfidious Varlet, that will not, with all faithful Heart and Service attend him. If his Caſe be contrary, in Ambition, Vanity, Covetouſneſs, *&c.* whereby he becometh a Step-Father to the Church of God; I hold it ever a moſt perfidious Treachery both to God and the Party, to ſooth & follow his Humour. God muſt judge every Mans Heart. I thank God for that Portion of his Favour and Bleſſing, that my Services have not been altogether unprofitable to his Church: and the better ſort have received ſome Comfort and Liking of them. Now how *B.* is to be truſted with publick Government, his Lordſhip is ſcarce an indifferent Judge.

Men commonly lie rebuked in the Cradle of Security, when they may do what they liſt without Eſpial or Controulment. An Enemy maketh more upright, watchful and circumſpect Dealing. The Truſt that is required in a publick Perſon is, ſo to diſpoſe his Government, *Ut nulla alia Poteſtas ab iis quibus præeſt, deſidiretur.*

To underſtand more Particulars of this Controverſy between the Biſhop and Beacon, *who ſided with the Dean and Chapter againſt the Biſhop:* See the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*, Book II. Chap. 3.

NUMB.

NUMB: XVIII.

The Complaints of the Biſhop of Coventry *and* Litchfield, *concerning the hard Dealings with him. The Earl of* Leiceſter *his Adverſary. In a Letter to the Lord Treaſurer.*

Litræ Epiſcop. penes me.

I Humbly beſeech your Honour to give me Leave a little to lay forth unto you, the manifold Griefs and Oppreſſions that are ſought, and brought upon me by my Adverſaries, and to crave Help at your Honour's Hands for an End to be had therein, if by any good Means you may work it. My Lord of *Leiceſter*, for what Cauſe I know not, except for *Apoſtacie*, (wherewith both by his Letters and Speeches he hath divers times charged me very ſore) hath given, and doth ſtill give great Countenance to thoſe that work me all my Sorrow; a Nobleman, as your Lordſhip knoweth, far above my Power and Ability to withſtand. And therefore like ſure to undoe me, if he will; if I ſhould hold out, and have no Stay. How his Lordſhip made himſelf a Party againſt me, in Mr. *Boughton's* Caſe, openly before you all at the Council Table, when I firſt complained of him, your Lordſhip and the reſt of that Honourable Table cannot but remember. Since which time Mr. *Boughton* hath been ſo emboldened, that he careth not what Suits he attempteth againſt me, nor what Trouble and Charge he putteth me to, to conſume me. It is not enough for him to toſs and tumble me at Quarter Seſſions and Aſſizes in the Country, and prefer Bills againſt me in the *Star Chamber*, to my great Vexation and Diſcredit; but alſo he doth perſecute me with Actions of the *Canſe* in the Court of *Common Pleas*, taking the Ground of all out of my Letters to my Lord of *Leiceſter*: And that grieves me moſt of all, mine own Counſil, for fear of Diſpleaſure, ſcarce dare encounter him in my Cauſes; ſo that almoſt I may ſay, I am denied that which every common Subject may claim, the Courſe of Juſtice, and Benefit of her Majeſty's Laws. I ſpeak it with Grief; I receive Injuries, and yet dare not complain, for fear of the Exaſperation of Mens Minds, and mine own further Trouble.

Beſides Mr. *Boughton*, Mr. *Beacon* alſo, who before feared me, doth now triumph over me; and upon the Jollity that he hath conceived by the Countenance of ſuch as have ſet him on, maketh bold to ſue and trouble me every where at his Pleaſure: In the *Star Chamber*, in the *Chancery*, at the Council Table, before the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, in the *Common Place*, at Aſſizes and Seſſions in the Country, yea, and in my own Conſiſtory, in my own Houſe; and is not afraid to bring Action upon Action againſt me almoſt for every Thing that I do, and for every Word that I ſpeak: Such a Glory he is in by the Diſgraces which he ſeeth are offered unto me by his Friends; and yet his Friends, but for this Time, only to diſpleaſe me by him.

The Lord *Paget* alſo and his Confederates are not idle, but attempt moſt unjuſt Suits and Indictments againſt me and mine. Every Clergyman almoſt that I deal withal in the way of Juſtice, is ready to quarrel with me, and to vex me with Suits; ſo that there is, at it were, a Conſpiracy of my Adverſaries to load me with Troubles all at once, and ſo to bear me, or rather beat me down. In the mean time, I ſay nothing of the Dean and his Suits, which by your Honourable Order are at a Point now to be ended; nor of the City of *Litchfield*, which by your Honourable Letters is likewiſe grown to Agreement with me.

But the Suits that were, and the Suits that are ſtill, have and will ſo conſume me, that I ſhall hardly be able to recover it of long time, without ſome good Way and Means to be made by your Honourable Lordſhip for the ending thereof: And therefore I am moſt humbly to beſeech your

Lordſhip, as you are of your ſelf, and have been always ready to do me good, ſo by your Honourable Motions and Perſuaſions, to draw others that are not of like Minds not to hurt me. For mine own part, though I never before the time I was Biſhop, received any Benefit by my Lord of *Leiceſter*, either for the Advancement of my Living or Credit, as I have done by your Lordſhip and others; yet for that I devowed my ſelf unto him at the firſt, and have profeſſed his Name, I bear him that dutiful Heart that becometh me, and will not touch his Honour any way, nor wiſh him in Honour to be touched. But yet, I muſt needs ſay, his Lordſhip hath caſt me off without Cauſe, and I will win him again by your Honour's Means if I can; only I muſt crave Pardon of his Lordſhip, if I bear a dutiful Heart unto others that have deſerved of me as much, and more than he hath done; and beſeech him to think of no *Apoſtaſie*, if I depend upon thoſe that have been my antient Honourable Friends, and ſtick to me; ſtill when my later Friends, of whom I have deſerved better, ſhall ſhake me off without any Cauſe in my moſt Need.

I received in King *Edward*'s Time, by your Lordſhip's Means, when I was Scholar in *Oxenford*, one of his Highneſs's Exhibitions, given out of the Abbey of *Glaſſenbury*, to my great Relief and Comfort. I obtained in the beginning of the Queen's Majeſty's Reign that now is, by your Lordſhip's Means, one of the beſt Prebends in *Winchester*. I had given me of her Majeſty not long after by your Lordſhip's Means, the Parſonage of *Rotherfield* in *Suſſex*, a Thing better worth than 200 *l.* by the Year. Let my Lord of *Leiceſter* ſhew any one Thing worth two pence that ever I had by his Means, either of the Queen or of any body elſe, and I will confeſs my ſelf his Debtor for all. And as for the Biſhoprick I now have, if it be any Benefit unto me, your Lordſhip knoweth, and I know, and muſt confeſs, I had it as much by your Lordſhip's Means, as by his; altho', I muſt needs ſay, firſt intended unto me by him.

And becauſe I report this to thoſe that object his ſingular Deſerts unto me, and withal do ſeek Comfort and Defence where I have moſt found it; I am called an *Apoſtata*; but how unjuſtly your Lordſhip and others may judge.

Now becauſe I am bound both to your Lordſhip for your many Benefits, and to his Lordſhip alſo; becauſe by firſt Profeſſions I have vowed my Service and Good will unto him, and may not looſe him, if I may keep him; In all humble ſort I beſeech your Lordſhip to recover and retain him my honourable good Lord and Friend as he hath been. And both to your Lordſhip and him I ſhall ſhew my ſelf every way in Duty ready to perform that in Duty I owe unto either.

And for the Debt which I am caſt into by theſe Suits and Troubles unto her Majeſty, I likewiſe humbly beſeech your Lordſhip I may have the Favour, by your Honourable Means, that may be had in this Court: And that mine Arrearages, when I ſhall have made mine Account, may be anſwered and ſatisfied upon the Extent of my Lands by 3 or 400 *l.* by the Year, till the whole ſhall be diſcharged, if ſo much ſhall remain behind, and unpaid.

Thus bold to lay out my Griefs before your Lordſhip, and withal to crave your Honourable Help; I ceaſe any furthur to trouble your Lordſhip at this Time, moſt aſſuredly continuing a poor Orator unto God for you during my Life. From my poor Lodging in *London*, this 20th of *February*, 1582.

Your Honour's always moſt bounden,

W. Coven. & Litch.

I would not willingly have named, in theſe my Letters, my Lord of *Leiceſter*, but that he hath gone about, as your Lordſhip knoweth, to draw you from me by hard Information; which forceth me to write, to ſay more than otherwiſe I would gladly do.

I would humbly beſeech your Lordſhip to put your Hand, if it might be your Pleaſure, to the Letters here encloſed; or to write elſe to the Judge in my Behalf, what ſhall ſtand with your Honourable Liking.

NUMB. XIX.

Overton, *Biſhop of* Coventry *and* Litchfield, *to the Lords of the Privy Council; with a Certificate of Convicted Recuſants; and concerning the ill State of his Dioceſs.*

MY moſt humble Duty premiſed, tho' long firſt, yet at laſt I have accompliſhed your Honour's Letters, for the certifying of ſuch *Convicted Recuſants*, as were to be found within my Dioceſs: A Matter, ſurely both for the ſhortneſs of the Time, and for the untowardneſs of the People, ſo hard to be compaſſed, that almoſt I was in Deſpair to have done any thing at all. As alſo now when I have done all I can, it is nothing in compariſon of that I might have done, if I had not been hindred in the Service. The *Peculiar* Juriſdictions within my Dioceſs are very many; and the Recuſants, either the moſt part or the chief of them, ſo hid and harboured therein, that I cannot, without further Authority and Aſſiſtance, ſearch them out, much leſs certify them in ſuch due Sort and Order as I ſhould.

Epiſt. Epiſcopal. penes me

The Dean of *Litchfield* hath a *Peculiar Juriſdiction* by himſelf; every Prebendary of that Church (being well nigh Forty in Number) have *peculiar* Juriſdictions by themſelves; the Dean of *Windſor* hath a great *peculiar Juridiction*; a Number of Gentlemen, which have purchaſed the Lands of the late diſſolved Abbeys and Collegiate Churches, have divers *peculiar* Juriſdictions. To be ſhort, there are ſo many Exemptes within my Dioceſs, that I cannot do as I would; and though I did, they would not obey. And yet were not this ſo much, if only they did withſtand mine Ordinary and Epiſcopal Juriſdiction; but they will not yield, nor ſtoop to your Lordſhip's Letters, nor to ſuch ſpecial Commiſſions as you ſend unto me from time to time, for the Execution of theſe Services.

And therfore I moſt humbly pray your Honours to pardon me, if either not ſo ſoon, or not ſo exactly as I ought, I have performed my Duty herein; nor to blame me hereafter, if you ſee not ſuch Fruits to riſe of my Labours and Travails, as peradventure you will look for: Sith my Power in mine own Dioceſs is ſo ſhort and ſlender as it is. I have been, and will be always ready to do the uttermoſt I can: And when I can do no more, I muſt ſtay there. Only it may grieve me to ſee things ſo far out of Order as I do. But when I would remedy them and cannot, I truſt I have diſcharged a good Conſcience in the Sight of God, and ſhall reſt blameleſs in the Judgment of all the Godly. I am the bolder to run out thus far in mine own Excuſe, becauſe I know my Predeceſſor was touched with too much Idleneſs, or at leaſt with too much Softneſs in this Place. But I perceive he and I had both one Lett: And therefore I muſt needs deliver both him and my ſelf of this undeſerved Blame.

And as in Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical, ſo alſo in Civil Government, the Charters and Liberties granted unto us by her Majeſty's moſt noble Progenitors, are ſo uſurped on, but impeached by others, that not only in the Country, wheretoſore we might have done much good, but even in the City of *Litchfield* alſo, where moſt need is, both I and my Predeceſſors have of late been utterly barred from the Execution of our Charge: Whereby hath grown much Decay both of Life and Religion in either Place. And becauſe I have Occaſion now to ſpeak of *Litchfield*, I truſt you will pardon me, if I report unto you, that I have heard, and partly alſo do know my ſelf; and therefore dare avow to be true.

Litchfield.

The City of *Litchfield*, ſince the Temporal Government hath been divided from the See, and tranſlated from the Biſhop to the Citizens (which nevertheleſs hath not been long) is in ſo far worſe Caſe than it was, as there is odds almoſt between ſomewhat and nothing; or at leaſt wiſe between Beggery and Welfare, or between happy and unhappy Eſtate. I ſpeak, I ſay, upon the Report of others that knew it then; and upon mine own Knowledge, which ſee it now: It is not the City it hath been. If your Lordſhips ask me the Reaſons, Why? I might particularly ſet down divers Cauſes of this Decay; but to avoid Tediouſneſs, I will generally anſwer in one. Their Government is too too bad. To uſe Extortion, Oppreſſion, cruel dealing with the Commons, regrating, foreſtalling the Markets, Liberty in the Syze of Bread and Drink, with ſuch other like, to favour themſelves in Searſements, [Seſſements] to lay the heavieſt Burdens on poor Men's Backs, to impannel themſelves upon Juries in their own Cauſes, to be Inquiſitors, Preſenters, Judges and Lords in one Court: To reſtrain the Commodities into few Men's Hands, to breed Beggery in the City, and ſet none aworke: every Man to ſeek his own private Gain, and no Man to regard the publick State. If this be not bad Government, What is bad? And yet this is their Doing, and no Man may coutroul them for it. To be ſhort, they live as they liſt, both in the City, and in the Church. And therefore little Reformation to be looked for, if it go on as it doth.

But you will ſay, Theſe Matters are impertinent. Moſt Honourable, I will now draw them to the Purpoſe ye know. Ye look for at my Hands in all Commiſſions a principal Care, Overſight and Furtherance of her Majeſty's Service in Cauſes, as well Spiritual as Temporal. Ye know alſo, I muſt begin firſt at the Head and Spring it ſelf; which is the Church and City of *Litchfield*: And then afterwards deal with the reſt of the Shire and Dioceſs, where I am, as I may. Now if the Church and City, with whom I ſhould firſt begin, and from whence the reſt are to fetch their Light, ſhall be ſo exempted from my Juriſdiction, that I may have no Power and Authority to look into their Matters, nor once to meddle with them; no, nor your Commiſſions, which you ſend forth, may aucthorize me ſo to do, my Labour is ſoon at an End, and my Service ſooner done than begun.

And therefore if now, for the better Performance of my Duty, I reſume into my Hands again my auncient Liberties, which of late Days have been but ſlenderly conveyed from me, or rather not at all conveyed, but encroached upon by evil Neighbours; I ſay, If I reſume them again into my Hands, and uſe the Benefit of mine own Charters for the better Service of her Majeſty, and more profitable Government of her People, as now I have begun to do: I truſt your Lordſhips will likewiſe hold me excuſed, and pardon me in ſo doing. Yea, that you will give me your lawful Countenance and Aſſiſtance therein, ſo far as my Right and juſt Title ſhall reach. It may be they have prevented me in Complaint, becauſe I have already attempted Suit againſt them for Redreſs of their Government, and Recovery of mine own Right. But I hope your Lordſhips will ſuſpend your Honourable Opinions, till you hear further of the Matter; and I deſire no better Judges than your ſelves, if it would pleaſe you to be troubled with it.

Stafford-ſhire. Litchfield.

Surely, the whole Dioceſs is to be looked unto in Time, (for we have many things amongſt us far amiſs) but yet *Staffordſhire* more than any Part elſe; and moſt of all, the City and Church of *Litchfield*, with their *peculiar Juriſdictions*. Out of which, as out of a full Fountain, floweth all Corruption, both of Life and Religion in my Dioceſs. We had here in *Staffordſhire*, even the laſt Day amongſt us, ſuch a notable bold Attempt made, and ſo daungerous for the Example of others, as I may not paſs it over with Silence. The Matter is this: Sir *Walter Aſton* and I, with divers other Juſtices, being met together at *Sondon* Church, on *Wedneſday* laſt paſt, for the publick Service of the Country; and having a great Part of the County before us, one *Hugh Eardeſwick*, Lord of that Mannor, and the ſoreſt and dangerouſeſt Papiſt, one of them in all *England*; who otherwiſe cometh neither to the Church nor Churchyard, but keepeth himſelf and his Family cloſe at Home from the Divine Service, in Contempt of her Majeſty's Laws: Yet at this Time in the Church yard, and before us that were Juſtices, and openly in the Sight of the whole Country, was not afraid to ſtrike a Juſtice of Peace upon the Pate with his Crabtree Staff. Whereupon immediately began a Number of Swords and Daggers to be drawn: And had we not with Diligence applied our ſelves forthwith to appeaſe the Outrage; or rather, had not God bleſſed our Buſineſs at that Time, and ſtayed the Hands and Hearts of the People from further Miſchief, I think there had been ſuch a bloody Day, as hath not been ſeen this great while in *Staffordſhire*. A Matter, doubtleſs, worthy ſharp Puniſhment and Animadverſion. A Papiſt to ſtrike a Juſtice of Peace, ſitting in the Queen's Service, and the Affairs of his Country, and in the Churchyard, and before the whole Multitude: It was a very bold and malicious Part. And what further Reach they had in their Heads that begun it, God knoweth, and I leave to your wiſe Conſiderations: Only we have bound him in two hundred Pounds, to make his Perſonal Appearance at the next General Aſſizes, before the Juſtices that then ſhall ſit. If in the mean Time, your Lordſhips think good to have him further called and dealt withal, we would be glad to know your Pleaſures therein.

Hugh Earſdiſwick, *Papiſt.*

And upon *Eaſter* day laſt, being not long before this Broyl, there was ſuch Diſturbance likewiſe in a certain Church of this Shire at the Time of Divine Service, and at the very Communion Time, when ſome had already received, and ſome were to receive, that (if ſuch Boldneſs of Men be not repreſſed and puniſhed with Speed) the Example will grow very far, and be very daungerous. Certain of the Lord *Pagett*'s Servants or Officers (by whoſe Commaundment and Appointment I cannot tell) under the Pretence of ſerving of Writs, came into *Colewich* Church that Day, and arreſted divers Perſons, ſome that had received, and were newly riſen from the Lord's Table; ſome that were coming to the Table, and ready to receive. And beſides this, made ſuch a courſing of the People that were in the Church at the Time of the Epiſtle and Goſpel reading, that it is wonderful to ſee the Bouldneſs and Spitefulneſs of the Papiſts, if they may have any Colour at all to bear them in their violent and contemptuous Behaviours againſt the Service of God and his Holy Sacraments. I am credibly informed, and by Examination alſo have tryed it out, that the Parties arreſted were every Day paſſing to and fro by the ſaid Officers which did arreſt them: And yet having the Writs in their Hands a Month or two, or more, would find none other Time to work their Feate, but on *Eaſter* day in the Morning, and at or about the Communion Time.

L. Paget.

Much like Part alſo was played by others of the Lord *Paget*'s Officers within this Shire at *Burton* upon *Trent*, about the ſame Time of *Eaſter*: At which Time there was great Diſturbance of the Communicants. For that the Lord *Paget* being bound to find the Pariſhioners Communion Bread, his Officers would have forced them to uſe little *ſinging Cakes* after the old Popiſh Faſhion; varying nothing at all in Form from the Maſſing Bread, ſave only ſomewhat in the Print. A Patterne whereof I my ſelf do keep, to ſhew to your Lordſhips if need be, being brought me by the Lord *Paget*'s Officer his own ſelf, whom I called before me for the ſame Matter.

Surely, this argueth great Courage in the Adverſaries if they may be ſuffered: And for mine own Part, I dare not meddle with them, as Ordinary, becauſe they pretend *peculiar Juriſdiction* within themſelves; but am feign to uſe the ſecular Power committed unto me; and to deal with them as Juſtice of Peace: By which Authority nevertheleſs, I cannot do much good in ſuch Matters. And ſome indeed think, I am buſier than I need to be; and ſo I get great Diſpleaſure for my Doings; but I weigh not Men's Diſpleaſures. I ſeek to pleaſe God, and the Queen's Majeſty that is appointed under God; and your Honours that are appointed under Her, to govern the People of God, to his Glory, and the Comfort of his Church. As for me, I ſeek not to pleaſe them: And if I did, I could not, but be evil as they are. And therefore, howſoever they report me from hence (as I am ſure they will ſay the worſt they can) I beſeech your Lordſhips, judge of me as you find me. And I deſire nothing more, than to have your ſelves the only Judges of all mine Actions. For ſo my Troubles ſhould be the leſs, and my Credit the greater: Where now I ſpend and toyl, and do all I can to little Effect; and yet am ill ſpoken of when I have done. For if I correct for their evil Life (as no Country I think, is more out of Frame that Way) the worſt I can do them is Excommunications, and then they appeal, to mine infinite Trouble and Charges, if I follow it.

Excommunication of Recuſants. If I correct them for Religion (wherein they are more out of Frame) they ſit out the Excommunications willingly, and are glad they have ſo good Occaſion to be cut off from the Church; thinking to avoid the Penalty of the Statute, becauſe we forbid them *Ingreſſum Eccleſiæ*, when indeed they meant not to come there at all, tho' they had been bidden never ſo much. For if by the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures they be excommunicated out of the Church, they think it no Reaſon to puniſh them for not coming, when by our ſelves, and by our own Laws they are forbidden to come. And ſo they make our Excommunications to ſerve their Turn. And yet, as I ſay, in the mean time they cry out upon me, as an hard and cruel Man, and do laugh ae my Doings to Scorn.

I eſtſoons moſt humbly deſire your Lordſhips to deviſe the Means, I may be better ſtrengthned and comforted in theſe my Toyles; or elſe I ſhall never be able to hold out, the Troubles and Charges are ſo great. I truſt you are not ignorant of this Dioceſe, that it is large and wide; of the People, that they are ſtubborn and quarrellous; of my Living, that it is very ſmall for ſo great a Charge, ſcantly four hundred Pounds by the Year, for theſe firſt Years. I truſt likewiſe that you conſider, that my Dioceſs is the Den of *Fugitives*, the very Receptacle of all the Refuſe that is thrown out of other Dioceſſes round about me. *Fugitives.* They fly hither out of *Cheſhire*, out of *Lancaſhire*, out of *Yorkſhire*, out of *Lincolnſhire*, out of *Huntingtonſhire*; yea, and from *London* Side, and from all Places. And ſuch as other Biſhops drive away from them, I muſt harbour here with me, whether I will or no, except I ſhould write up to your Honours for every particular Perſon that I hear of: Which would be infinite Trouble and Charge unto me; neither were I able to undergo the Burthen of it.

And therefore, if I ſhall not have the Helps that other Biſhops have, (all the Premiſſes conſidered) I muſt give over my former Travails and Charges, which are intolerable, and only wiſh all were well; and ſo reſt there, as my Predeceſſor did before me. Thus much I am bold to write unto your Honours, to ſhew you the State of my Country, and mine own hard Caſe; and would be glad to amend it if I knew how; or will hereafter, if I ſhall be better enabled.

Muchmore I had to write unto your Honours at this Time, but I am afraid to be over tedious. Only it may pleaſe you to conſider of the Certificate, which I have here ſent you, touching the *convicted Recuſants*, and to pardon me, (for the Cauſes premiſed) if not ſo ſoon, or not ſo perfectly as you look for, my Duty to be performed in that behalf. And ſo I humbly commend your Honours to the gracious Protection of the Almighty, and moſt bleſſed Government of his Holy Spirit. From *Eccleſhal* Caſtel, the 20th of *May*, 1582.

2 *Your Honours moſt dutiful to Command,*

W. Coven. *and* Lichf.

NUMB. XX.

Interrogatories miniſtred to Sir Robert Stapleton, *Kt. in the* Star Chamber: *Concerning Abuſes done to the Archbiſhop of* York *at* Doncaſter, *by* Sciſſon *the Hoſt, himſelf, and others.*

Imprimis, DID not you in *Lent* laſt make Means to the Biſhop by his Chancellor, [Dr. *Lowther,*] that he would account of you, as one that greatly honoured him, and eſteemed greatly his good Nature; and therefore was very ready to ſhew him any Pleaſure or Service you could; which you deſiered might be ſignified unto the Biſhop?

MSS. Burghlian.

2. *Item.* Did not you in *May* laſt, know, believe, or hear ſay, that *Sciſſon*'s Wife of *Doncaſter*, by the Allowance and Conſent of her Huſband, and in the Night time, came to the Biſhop's Bed, her Huſband immediately following, his Dagger naked in his Hand, which he laid unto the Biſhop's Breaſt, his Man *Alexander* being in the Company [with him?]

3. *Item,* Did not *Sciſſon* ſend for you immediately by his Man; and you forthwith came in your Apparel as in the Day before.

4. *Item.* Did you, being then Sheriff of the Shire, and one of the High Commiſſioners for Matters Eccleſiaſtical, denounce this Fact to the Preſident there; or to any Magiſtrate elſewhere?

5. *Item.* Did *Sciſſon* that Night beat his Wife, as you believe; or rather went not to Bed to her, as at other Times.

6. *Item.* Did you after this time diſlike the Biſhop; or rather knowing his Innocence, did not you offer your ſelf, and your Service to the Archbiſhop, and ſignify that you were careful to get his good Opinion?

7. *Item.* After your Return from *London*, did not you often and friendly frequent the Biſhop's Houſe? And as though you had travelled with *Sciſſon* for the Biſhop, at length brought *Sciſſon* to the Biſhop's Houſe: When *Sciſſon* ſeemed inexorable, called him aſide; and having him under you on the Ground, drew your Dagger, held it to his Throat, as though you would kill him?

8. *Item.* Did not you ſhortly after come to the Biſhop, and ſaid, that you had ended all Matters with *Sciſſon*; and that whereas he asked 600 *l.* you had brought him to 400 *l.* having received before at *Doncaſter* of the Biſhop 50 *l* and in that Lodge after Breakfaſt, brought the Biſhop to a Chambre, where only *Sciſſon* and his Man were; and after their Denial to receive 500 *l.* you ſaid, that you would pay the odd 50 *l.* of your own Purſe rather than they ſhould break; and the Day following did not you ſend your Man *Conſtable*, to the Biſhop to his Houſe to receive the 50 *l.*

9. *Item.* Did not you then and there give an Oath to *Sciſſon* and his Man upon a Bible, that they ſhould not by Word, Writing, or any other Means utter this Matter, during their Lives; and if they did ſo, by what Authority?

10. *Item.* Did you not then take a Bond of *Sciſſon*, made to your ſelf in 600 *l.* leaving out the Condition, which was by *Word* recited, that he ſhould forfeit that Bond to the Uſe of the Biſhop, if he performed not his Oath? And did not you then and there ſwear upon the Bible, that you

in your Conſcience believed, that the Biſhop was moſt clear in that Cauſe; and no Cauſe why he ſhould pay one Penny?

11. *Item.* Did not you after this a good while, break with the Biſhop to have a M. £. [a Thouſand Pounds] on a Lordſhip? which being denied you, did not you will the Biſhop to ſee to himſelf; you would keep your own Promiſe for concealing, but you would take no Charge of any others; and ſo departed?

12. *Item.* After this, when *Sciſſon* had received 200 *l.* of the Biſhop at *Biſhopſthorp*, did not *Barnard Mande* borrow to your Uſe of the Biſhop 200 *l.*

NUMB. XXI.

The publick Confeſſions at the Aſſizes at York, *made by Sir* Robert Stapleton *hnd others, of their Slander and Abuſes of the Archbiſhop. And his Anſwers to each of them.*

Sir Robert Stapleton*'s Submiſſion and Confeſſion.*

MSS. Burghlian.

WHEREAS by ſpecial Order of the Queen's moſt Excellent Majeſty, I appeared lately in *Eaſter* Term laſt before the Lord Chancellor and Honourable Lords Counſellors of the State, in the *Star Chamber*; and there was, by her Majeſty's Attorney General, charged with ſundry Conſpiracies by me and other evil diſpoſed Perſons, Aſſociates with me, moſt maliciouſly and unjuſtly practiſed againſt your Grace, my Lord Archbiſhop of *York*; tending to the great Diſcredit of your good Name and Eſtimation; your ſelf being innocent, and guiltleſs of any unhoneſt Attempt or Meaning in that Fault and Crime, that I and my Aſſociates, for Gain to ſome of our ſelves, and Spoil to your Grace, and for the Revenge of ſome, of our cruel Malice conceived againſt your Grace, ſought moſt unjuſtly to lay upon you, to your utter Confuſion in this World; if God of his Goodneſs, through her Majeſty's great Care in ſearching out the Truth, had not otherwiſe provided. Which things being proved moſt evidently againſt me, I have been juſtly found guilty of the ſaid malicious and injurious Dealings in the Judgment of the ſaid moſt Honourable Court.

I do therefore upon my Knees moſt humbly confeſs, that forgetting of my Duty to God, and the due Reſpect and Regard of your Grace, I was thereby lead to the ſaid malicious and wrongful Dealings, purpoſed and put in Practice by me, and my Aſſociates againſt your Grace, without any Deſert thereof offered on your Grace's Behalf; whom I acknowledge to be moſt innocent and guiltleſs of that wicked and vile Matter at *Doncaſter*; whereof the Purpoſe of our ungodly, unjuſt and unadviſed Dealings tended to have burthened your Grace. For which my ungodly and unadviſed Dealings, as I have been moſt juſtly puniſhed, ſo am I moſt heartily ſorry for them; and before you all here preſent, do aſk Forgiveneſs; firſt, at the Hands of Almighty God, whom I beſeech his Mercy to pardon theſe mine Offences: Then to her Majeſty, whom I have greatly offended herein: And laſtly, of your Grace, whom I have very wrongfully and unjuſtly ſought to ſlander and abuſe And having none other Way to make Amends for the great Slander, which by me and others, might have moſt wrongfully touched your good Fame and Credit; I do earneſtly, and from the Bottom of my Heart deſire your Grace, that it would pleaſe you to accept this mine humble Submiſſion, and forgive me theſe my bad Attempts and Dealings againſt your Grace.

The Archbiſhop of York's *Anſwer to Sir* Robert Stapleton's *Submiſſion.*

Sir *Robert Stapleton*,

YOU have greatly wronged, and given a great Wound by your late ungodly Practice to yourſelf, to me, and eſpecially to the Church of God. I am right ſorry for all. *For you*, in reſpect you were a Gentleman of a good Houſe and Countenance, towardly in the Actions of the Common-Wealth: One that profeſſed the Goſpel, and pretended to be my Friend.

To my Self: That having lived all my Life hitherto without Spot or Touch that way, after my long Travail in the Word of God, having preached the Goſpel theſe xxxv Years, and ſuffered for the ſame as great Perſecutions, as any *Engliſhman* now living hath done; as Loſs of my Livings and Goods, long and hard Impriſonment, Exile, with other Afflictions of like quality; that now when I am in Body ſo feeble, and by number of Years ſo aged, that I am daily hereby put in Remembrance of my Grave, I ſhould by your Means, or rather by the Means of Satan, the original Author thereof, be ſet upon the Stage of the whole World to be wondred at, as a vile wicked Man; and yet (God witneſſeth with me) without Deſert of mine; nay, not only to be called into Queſtion, and arraigned in all Conſiſtories of *Chriſtendom*, in all Aſſemblies, in all Taverns and Alehouſes; but to have been condemned and judged as guilty, and faulty of that wicked Crime, by you and others deviſed, and laid upon me: If the good God, the God of my Righteouſneſs, (who yet never failed me) had not, chiefly by the Means of her Majeſty, my moſt Gracious Sovereign, and by the careful Diligence and great Wiſdom of the Lords and others of her Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council deciphered this wicked Counſil, ſo ungodlily deviſed, and unchriſtianly practiſed againſt me.

For the Church of Chriſt. A Thing that hath moſt greatly grieved me, both in reſpect of the Enemies of the Truth, who building chiefly upon the Credit of you, Sir *Robert*, mine Accuſer, the reſt being Men of no Credit, took Occaſion not only to condemn me, but to inſult againſt the Goſpel of God, of long Time by me profeſſed and preached: And alſo in reſpect, that the Weaklings, and ungrounded Scholars in the Truth, began to hold the Doctrine ſuſpected, when one of the chiefeſt and aunclenteſt Teachers, was ſet forth to be vile and wicked.

This Offence and Injury to me was great; the greateſt that ever I felt; yea, a greater than Death itſelf could have been unto me. But as the Teſtimony of mine innocent Conſcience to my great Comfort, ever kept ſafe that perfect Peace which is between God and my Soul; ſo praiſed be that Lord for ever, which of his great Goodneſs hath ſo brought it to paſs, that this Day, even in this Place, even by your own Mouths that ſtounge me, I am cleared before the World, as I was at all Times before my God; And may now think and ſay, The Church hath taken no Hurt. For God, by diſcloſing this malicious and unchriſtian Attempt, hath delivered the Innocent, comforted and ſatisfied the Church, and gotten to himſelf the Glory.

To conclude, Sir *Robert*, Touching mine own Perſon, though, as Fleſh and Blood, it is hard for me to bear this Injury far ſurmounting all Injuries, that can be imagined; yet as a Chriſtian, as a Child of God, I did at, the firſt, for his Cauſe that commanded me to forgive, as I will be forgiven, baniſh from me all Rancour of Mind, and ſet aſide all Malice and Deſire of Revenge. And therefore this which you do is ſeemly in you, yet it is needleſs in reſpect of my ſelf; for I have forgiven it, as it is Perſonal to me, long ſince. But that which is done, or hereafter further to be done, touching the better ſatisfying of the Church, in further clearing of me by

Occaſion of the vile Slander you have laid upon me; or the Order ſet down by the Honourable Court of *Star Chamber*, either touching her Majeſty, or me; I may not, nor do not, preſume to meddle with it, but leave it in the Form of their Honourable Order. Only this I ſay now, I do not, nor will not malice you. I will pray for you, and I do pray to God even now, that in his Mercy, and for his Chriſt's ſake, he will forgive you, and never lay this Fault to your Charge. And for my Part, ſo far as God requireth of a Charitable and Chriſtian Conſcience, I do heartily forgive you.

The Archbiſhop's Anſwer to John Malory.

THERE hath been great Cauſe, why you ſhould favour me: Never any Cauſe given by me, why you ſhould malice me, or deal ill with me. But evil Company, wicked Perſuaſion, and your own frail youthful Nature, hath brought you to ſo great Inconvenience; and in ſuch vile ſort to practiſe againſt me. A plain Declaration, that you were too careleſs in ſerving God, and too ready to caſt his Fear from you. The prodigal Child ran far, anb followed his youthful and unbridled Luſts, yet God called him back, let him ſee himſelf, repented and was received unto Mercy. God ſtill continueth merciful. Turn home unto him; forſake your lewd Life; flee unto him for Mercy, and no doubt, you ſhall find Mercy.

And as touching your Offence committed againſt me, ſo much as appertaineth unto me privately, as a Chriſtian, not preſuming by remitting to alter or change the Order of the ſuperior Magiſtrates, I freely forgive you; God make you his Servant.

The Archbiſhop's Anſwer to Barnard Mawde.

Mawde,

IT is true, that you confeſs, you have greatly, and in the higheſt Degree offended God, the Church, the Queen's Majeſty, and me. At Requeſt I took thee into my Service, when thou waſt in baſe State: I put great Truſt in thee; and thou untruſtily ſervedſt me, by indiſcrete getting, enriching thy ſelf. And livedſt in great Countenance and Jollity, far paſſing the Meaſure of thy Calling. At length thou ranneſt from me, and robbeſt me of my Revenue. Which with other By-Helps maintainedſt thy great Prodigality. Thou felledſt into further Fault; thou hatedſt me without Cauſe; thou ſlanderedſt me every where; threatning, that thou couldſt and wouldſt deprive me; practiſing with other thy Companions to that End. At length thou greweſt into ſuch perfect Hatred againſt me, that thou deviſedſt, by what Means thou couldeſt, to work my Confuſion. And that which thou hadſt long before deviliſhly deviſed, by Aid of others at *Doncaſter* thou puttedſt in Practice; traiterouſly conſpiring againſt me; yet not ſo much for Revenge, as to rob and ſpoil me.

But God hath in his good Time revealed this monſtrous Treachery, and forced thee to confeſs thy great Fault, to clear me from Crime, and to acknowledge mine Innocency. And if this Confeſſion proceeded from a penitent Heart, no doubt but God according to his Promiſe would ſhew Mercy: Chriſt died for great Sins, and his Mercy paſſeth all his Works; ever ready to forgive all ſuch as ſhall truly repent. But alas! there appeareth no ſuch Mind in thee, which thou doſt evidently declare. And I perceive, and I doubt not, but my Lords are of the ſame Judgment, I fear me, God hath ſtricked thee with his grievouſeſt Judgment, and given thee *Cor pœnitere neſcium*: A Heart unpenitentable.

Divers of my good Friends, and of great Honour, abuſed by thy feigned Shew of great Repentance, have written to me in thy Behalf, upon thy moſt humble and unfeigned Submiſſion, to ſpare thee the Pillory. I never ſought nor wiſhed thy Puniſhment for my private Revenge, (far hath that been from me) but for the publick ſatisfying of Chriſt's Church. And now, tho' thou give Cauſe of the contrary; yet will I not requite thy Evil with Extremity. I have long ago learned another Leſſon. *Non quid alii meruerint, ſed quid nos decet, ſpectandum eſt.* I will reſpect that which is fit for me to do, following my Maſter's Example, not what thou deſerveſt to ſuffer. Therefore for this private Practice by you wrought againſt me for my utter Diſcredit, ſo much as appertaineth to me as a Chriſtian, (not preſuming, by remitting to alter or qualify any thing pertaining unto me, laid on you by the Honourable and grave Judgment of the Lords of the *Star-Chamber*, ſpecified in the Orders, or competent unto me hereafter upon your ill Behaviour by the Benefit of the Law) I do freely forgive you; and requeſt you, my Lords, to ſpare him the Pillory; which he hath well deſerved.

The Archbiſhop's Anſwer to Alexander Farby *the Scot.*

YOUR Villany hath been great; but God's Mercy is greater. God for his Chriſt's ſake forgive you and your Offence againſt me, ſo much and ſo far as appertaineth to me in Charity and Chriſtianity.

This was the only Man that ſhewedhimſelf penitent.

NUMB. XXII.

The State of the Biſhoprick of St. David's, *and Revenues thereof: Sent up to the Lord Treaſurer, upon the Deceaſe of the Biſhop.*

THE Biſhoprick of St. *David*'s was by Commiſſion *Ann.* 27. *R. Reg. Henrici Octavi*, valued *De claro* CCCCLVII *l.* 22. *d. obq.*

According to which Rate and Value, the Firſt Fruits, Tenths and Subſidies have ever ſince been paid.

And yet hath it been ſince that Time ſo decayed, fleeced and impoveriſhed; that at this Day, beſides Tenths, Subſidies and Fees going out of it, it is not *de claro* CCLIII *l.* *MSS.* Burghlian.

For firſt, whereas in the ſame 27th Year of King *Henry* VIII. the Biſhop had *Jura Regalia*, and *Perquiſiones Seſſion*, &c. thoſe Royalties and Prerogatives have been taken away by Act of Parliament.

Item, by the Suit of Mr. *Edward Carey*, one of the Grooms of her Majeſty's Privy Chamber, and Mr. *Dodington*, his Sollicitor; not only the Gift and Patronage of *Llandewy Braby*, and twelve other Churches, have been taken away from the ſaid Biſhoprick; but alſo the Parſonage of *Llanarth*, and Chapel of *Llanyna*, being of the yearly Value of 32 *l.* and for the Space of divers hundred Years, appropriate *ad Menſam Epiſcopi*, and united to the Biſhoprick: And for which the Biſhop for the Time being, paid always Firſt Fruits, Tenths and Subſidies; hath alſo been by the ſaid Suit of the ſaid Mr. *Cary*, and Mr. *Dodington*, evicted from the ſaid Biſhoprick, in this Manner following.

Firſt, the ſaid Mr. *Cary* informing, that the Parſonage of *Llandewy brevie*, of the Biſhop of St. *David*'s Dioceſs and Parſonage, was a College, and concealed from her Majeſty; he obtained a Leaſe thereof *cum pertinentiis*, *An.* 8° of her Majeſty's Reign for 40 *l.* paying 40 *l.* Rent *per Ann.* being the Value of her Highneſs Records of that Church only.

Whereupon he brought a Writ of Intruſion againſt Mr. *Lewis Gwin*, the Parſon and Incumbent of the ſaid Church. And after long Pleading, and Iſſue joyned, a Jury of ſubſtantial Gentlemen out of *Herefordſhire* gave Verdict with the Incumbent: and found it to be no College, nor concealed.

But the Verdict notwithſtanding, the ſaid Mr *Carie* began again; and upon the ſame Matter and like Evidence, obtained another Jury to paſs againſt the former, and to find it concealed.

Afterwards, he took a new Leaſe of the Premiſſes with larger Words; and for the Term of fourty Years. And under the Rent of 40 *l.* by Colour and Vertue whereof he obtained Twelve Prebends and Churches more; ſuppoſing them to be appertinent and belonging to the ſaid Church of *Llandewy Brevie.* And not thus contented, he brought a Writ of Intruſion againſt the Biſhops Farmers of the ſaid Rectory of *Llanarth* and Chapel of *Llanyna*: ſuppoſing that alſo to be Parcel and Member of *Llandewy brevie.*

But after long Suit, a Verdict paſſed at the Exchequer for the Biſhop and Farmers. Whereby it was found no Parcel, nor Concealed. Yet Mr *Cary* by his ſaid Solicitor Mr *Dodington*, revived a new Suit, and continuing the ſame many Years againſt the ſaid Biſhop and the Farmers, at laſt in *Trinity* Term, *Anno R. Rnæ Elizabethæ*, &c. 23° recovered the ſaid Parſonage of *Llanarth* alſo. And now ſueth the poor Widow and Executrix of the ſaid Biſhop, for the Arrearages of the ſaid 32 *l.* Rent for many Years.

For theſe Fourteen Churches being valued in her Highneſſes Records to 181 *l.* 15 *s.* there is 40 *l.* Rent anſwered to the Queen's Majeſty; Her Highneſs loſeth much more, *communibus annis*, in Firſt fruits, Tenths and Subſidies.

How theſe Churches are let, and for what Rent, to particular Tenants and Farmers, I cannot preſently advertiſe your Lordſhip in Certainty. But I am ſure they are worth by Year about the Sum of one Thouſand Marks. For that one Church and Rectory of *Llandewy brevie* it ſelf is worth between two or three Hundred Pounds by Year. And for the Parſonage of *Llanarth*, now laſt recovered from the Biſhoprick, Mr *Cary* refuſeth an 100 *l.* Fine, and 100 *l.* Rent *per annum.*

And now as it is reported, he hath all the ſaid Churches in Fee-Farm for the Rent of 40 *l.* So that the Biſhoprick at this Day is in Value about —————— £. 383 — 23^d

Inde, Pro x^a [*Decima*] *Epiſcopatus per ann.* ——————	46	7	4
Pro Subſid. quando conceditur ——————	41	14	7
For Fees, about, to divers ——————	32	0	0
Remains ——————	263	0	0

H. Rhylyfnwyd.

NUMB. XXIII.

Wright *a Puritan, his Anſwers to the Matters urged againſt him, upon his own Anſwers in the Conſiſtory: By Notes thereof taken by the Regiſter.*

MSS. Burghlian.

FIRST, he moſt humbly deſired, that it might be conſidered, Whether any man by our Laws be bound to accuſe himſelf upon his Oath, for any Deed or Word; much leſs to declare his Thoughts. *Item*, Foraſmuch as he was driven to anſwer at the firſt by Word; and not ſuffered leiſurely to peruſe the Anſwers which the Regiſter ſet down; and for that theſe Notes did much reſpect thoſe Anſwers; he therefore with like Duty deſired, that both his Anſwers before might be poiſed with the Weight of the former Circumſtances; and alſo that if his Memory failed him now in any Point, which then was anſwered, he might be charitably judged of, as he proteſted before Almighty God, that he meant well to ſpeak the Truth. Thirdly, he deſired that it might be noted, that the Collector of thoſe Notes dealt partially.

Then follow the Contents of his Anſwers.

To ſpeak in general of the Book of Common Prayer; he thought it *good and godly*.

His Practice of reſorting to Churches where Ceremonies have been uſed, did ſuffiiciently clear him in that Point [When being before Demanded, what he thought of Ceremonies, he was Silent.]

About the *Form* of Ordination, he anſwered, he remembred not that he had read and peruſed any ſuch Form. He ſent for it to the Stationers, and could not get it: but he judgeth ſo reverently of thoſe Rites, that he acknowledgeth, there is the Subſtance of the Miniſtry.

He did that private Duty [of Preaching and Catechizing in my Lord *Rich*'s Family] being thereunto requeſted by the Houſeholders, for their own and their Families Profit; and other Means of Inſtruction failing them. For where they had means to be inſtructed, they were reverently uſed: As Mr *Berriman*, Miniſter of *Rochford* muſt needs teſtify; that both the Prayers and Preaching were reſorted unto. And *Wright* conferring with him at firſt, meant no otherwiſe to deal in my Lord's Houſe, being there, but with the Miniſter's Leave; and for his Aſſiſtance, in diſcharging the Duty.

He prayed as Preachers uſe to do in all Places, and altogether in preſcript Words; but as the Occaſion fell out in ſome Points. Yet he ever prayed for the Queen's Majeſty, and for the Lords of the Council, and for all Miniſters of God's Word. And ſo for Archbiſhops and Biſhops, ſeeing they be Miniſters. [This was in Anſwer to that Article, that he uſed Prayer of his own Deviſing: and never uſed to pray as in the Book of Common Prayer: nor for Archbiſhops and Biſhops.]

To the Article that he had no *Licence* to Preach; he knew no Law, that requireth Licence for thoſe private Duties, which had been uſed in King *Edward*'s Days; and all the Time of our Queen in many Places. And without which, he doubted not but it may well be proved, that there had been many more Papiſts in this Land, than are. If it be ſaid, that it is inconvenient, tho' not unlawful, he deſired firſt, that it might be conſidered, how he had Preached ſeven Years before, by Order of her Majeſty's Injunctions with approbation in the Univerſity. Which conſidered with his full Purpoſe of ſerving in the Miniſtry, when God ſhould call him thereto, he was not altogether in the common Degree of Laymen, as they call them. Secondly, that he uſed to repair both to Sermons and Sacraments, ready to ſhew the ſoundneſs of his Belief, &c. That the Want of others teaching might, as he hoped, procure a Diſpenſation in ſome greater Inconvenience. That when Order hath ſet Order herein, he will moſt reverently obey it, [that is when this private Teaching, Catechizing and Preaching ſhould be forbidden.]

To the Article, That he ſaid, the *Election of Miniſters ought to be by the Flock*; he only ſaid, that he ſuppoſed it not to be an Error, that the Miniſters ſhould be choſen with Conſent of their Flock; ſo that their Flock were firſt well taught.

To the Article, That he was choſen in this Sort [by the Family] in the Houſe of the Lord *Rich*; he confeſſeth that the late Lord, calling his Houſehold together, (in the Abſence of the ſaid *Wright*, and not moving him thereto) to the End it ſeems that they might more willingly harken to good Inſtruction, having one to teach them, whom themſelves had before approved; Asked, whether any of them could ſhew any Reaſon, for Life or otherwiſe, why he might not be their Teacher. Whereupon no man objecting any thing, my Lord ſent for him, and perhaps eſteemed him as his Paſtor. But that he took not himſelf to be any other than a private man to do them ſome good, till they might have a ſufficient Paſtor. For at *Rochford*, the Miniſter was diſtracted between his two Benefices. And at *Leez* his Proviſion was worſe.

It is true, that of the Houſe of this Lord *Rich*, he ſaid, he took them for his Flock; not by Vertue of the former Choice, but having been called ſince the Death of the old Lord, unto the Miniſtry. And this [preſent] Lord being deſirous to uſe his Miniſtry, with Promiſe that he would labour to have it public: and my Lord of *London* not utterly denying Licence; but ſaying, he would firſt ſee ſome Teſtimony, that the ſaid Miniſter was ordained Miniſter. But he only did the Duty of a private man, neither preached he publickly, nor miniſtred any Sacrament.

To the Article, That he preached on a Holy day, *Jan.* the *24th. Reginæ*, in the Hall at *Rochford*; and divers People thereabouts reſorted to his Preaching: He anſwered, we did then, as at other Times; neither drawing, nor ſhutting out any Man, nor omitting any publick Duties in the Church.

Concerning his *Ordination* at *Antwerp*, he ſaid, not that he went over for that End: but being at *Antwerp*, whither he went to ſee the Churches from whence Idolatry had been lately driven; and *Engliſh* Merchants deſiring him to aſſiſt in the Miniſtry; he was religiouſly ordained thereunto; and there did execute it. As alſo at *Vilfort*, where was a Garriſon of 600 *Scots*, by the earneſt Suit of their Band, and a Collonel, one Mr *Bombridge*, Governor of the Town; and with Conſent of the Miniſters of the three ſeveral Languages in *Antwerp*. The Manner alſo of his admitting, he declared, ſo long as they would hear him. And he is ready to declare it at all times, when it ſhall be demanded of him.

Touching that he ſaid, *Every Miniſter is a Biſhop*; it is true that he ſaid, he is Ἐπίσκοπος, which we call *Biſhop*, according to the Word of God. But he ſaid not, every one is a *Lord Biſhop*. My Lord of *London* himſelf ſaid as much in effect, when I was laſt before him in the Conſiſtory. For rebuking Mr *White* for ſmiting one of his Pariſhioners, he alledged that Scripture, μὴ πλήκτην, 1 *Tim.* iii. 3. That *a Biſhop muſt be no Striker*, there had been no reaſon in the Speech, if Mr *White* only being a Miniſter, had not been a Biſhop.

Firſt Monday in Lent. 1581.

To the laſt Article, that Mr *Greenwood* ſerved the Lord *Rich*, and did that which he did for him only: that he uſed the Book of Common Prayer: ſaving, that for Brevity ſake, he read not all. He hath anſwered himſelf, that he continued not a Curate, for want of Audacity and Utterance: he being otherwiſe both godly and well learned.

NUMB. XXIV.

Wrights *Anſwers to the Notes of Matters proved againſt him by ſworn Witneſſes.*

HE humbly craved, that the Manner uſed in proceeding againſt him might be conſidered of. That the Commiſſion was ſent down whilſt he was in Priſon, [in the *Gatehouſe.*] The Commiſſioners were Men appointed by ſpecial Choice, that they might ſerve ſuch a Turn. Dr. *Walker* Archdeacon, who was never injured by him, had before notoriouſly ſlandered him. Others whom he knew not: but the one was a Commiſſary, allied to the Biſhop, the other a Gentleman, of whom he had heard indeed, that he went to the Church. That the Examinants which were godly diſpoſed were ſharply rebuked, when they would not ſpeak that which they knew not againſt him.

That they which were brought in for Witneſſes were the only men that bare him Diſpleaſure. And his humble Suit was, that the Cauſe might be weighed. That he never abuſed any of them in Word or Deed: But they being all Miniſters, partly ſtomached him, becauſe he ſhewed a Miſlike of thoſe which had two Benefices; partly for that he lovingly admoniſhed one Mr. *Barwick*, his firſt Accuſer, who laboured to prove that God delighted in *Mediocrity*, by theſe Reaſons : *Viz.* Man was put *in Medio Paradiſi.* A Rib was taken out of the *Midſt* of Man. The *Iſraelites* went through the *Midſt* of *Jordan*: and the *Midſt* of the Red Sea. *Sampſon* put Firebrands in the *Middeſt* between the Foxes Tails. *Davids* men had their Garments cut off by the *Middeſt*. Chriſt was hanged in the *Middeſt* between two Thieves.

Preached in 2. or 3. Several Pariſhes.

Another great Cauſe of their ill will ſeemed to be this, That my Lord, that was then with God, uſed him with great Favour; as he did alſo all Preachers whom he ſaw to be diligent in their Function. But contrarywiſe he ſhewed ſmall Countenance to theſe men. Yet lovingly (yea, perhaps alſo vehemently) told them of ſuch things, as he thought to be Faults and Negligencies in their Miniſtry. And this they falſely attributed, as coming from him [*Wright.*] Now the chief Cauſe of ſhewing this Envy, was the great Perſon, who deſired to have Mr. *Rich* and him out of my Lords Houſe: as Mr *Barwicks* Letter did ſhew.

That touching the Collections, [ſpecified in thoſe Notes of what was ſworn againſt him] altho the Witneſſes indeed were as aboveſaid, yet he could not think ſo ill of them, as that they would affirm the Things which were there ſet down. Some being ſuch as he never thought in his Life to his Remembrance; as that *there were no Lawful Miniſters in England.* That he was likewiſe charged, as it had been depoſed againſt him, that he ſhould ſay, *To have a Sermon on the Queens Day, and to give God Thanks for her Majeſty, was to make her a God.* He thought at the firſt, that perhaps corrupt men had teſtified ſo much: but when by Gods Grace he got a ſight of the Commiſſion returned, there was no ſuch Matter.

That here was a Witneſs oft named, one Mr *Wardal*: with whom he never talked but once only. And he had no other talk with him, but only where he had preached againſt my Lord, and the Exerciſes in his Houſe. He ſaying, he did it upon my Lords Words: who told him and the other Miniſters, that he ſhewed in preaching, that *they were all Dumb Dogs*, &c. He told *Wardel*, that firſt he ſhould have talked with him privately, before he had preached againſt him openly. Secondly, that he never ſpake any thing of him, or his Neighbour Miniſters, but only ſpake generally againſt the Faults of Miniſters, as his Text led him, *John* x. *A Thief cometh not but to kill*, &c. ſhewing, that indeed of ſuch as ſought only their own Commodities and not Gods Glory, nor the Profit of their Flock; of them he ſaid, as the Text ſaith, *They were Thieves and Murtherers.* At which Time Mr. *Wardel* ſhewed no Miſliking of him, of his Speech; but ſpake very gently unto him. Neither yet Mr *Harris*, a Juſtice of Peace, who as he thought talked with them all the while.

And therefore he moſt humbly ſued, that firſt the Collectors Faith [who had gathered theſe Notes of the Depoſitions] might be tryed.

And then *Wright* proceeded to give his Anſwer to each Article ſet down in the Notes, of Matters depoſed againſt him. Which follow.

Ad. 1. The Phraſe of *Dumb Dogs* (tho' uſed in the Scripture) is, and always hath been, very ſeldom in my Mouth in any Sort. But I ſuppoſe it cannot be proved, that ever I called any Man ſo, much leſs a Preacher, and that (as the Collector ſetteth it down) as if it were only for following the Book of Common Prayer. Not preaching at all, when a Man is a Paſtor, or ſo preaching for Faſhion, that the Wolf is not known, much leſs barked at, I think this in the Prophet's Speech, may deſerve the Term of a *Dumb Dog.* But I have always reverenced every godly and watchful Miniſter, that followeth the Book of Common Prayer: as alſo Mr *Dent*, and Mr *Barker*,

ker, named in the laſt Note (I perſuade my ſelf altogether contrary to their Teſtimony) can well Witneſs: and all other both in *Eſſex* and elſewhere, that ſhew forth the Fear of God in their Miniſtry.

Ad. 2. This doubtful Speech argueth ſome evil Affection. The Collector or the Witneſs would have an Indefinite to be generally taken; for to ſay ſome Miniſters are Thieves and Murtherers; I would to God, all fed their Flock ſo well as it might be falſe. But that he would not have it underſtood of all, it may well appear. The Maſter and Fellows of *Chriſt*'s College in *Cambridge*, being all, as I think, Miniſters, that time when I had lived there about fourteen Years amongſt Miniſters, with one Conſent ſealed the Teſtimony of my good Behaviour. In *Eſſex*, I doubt not to bring twenty godly Miniſters, all Preachers; which ſhall teſtify, that they love me, and have Cauſe to think, that I love and reverence them. I know not how my Speech may be taken, but I crave your Lordſhips Pardon, if being thus preſſed, I ſpeak that which otherwiſe might ſeem arrogant: for if a Queſt of godly and preaching Miniſters be requird to quiet me in theſe and ſuch like Notes,

Ad. 3. I would be content to be condemned, if I bring not two Hundred for my Diſcharge. I truſt this may well declare, that I take them not for Thieves and Murtherers; and yet I think not there are no Lawful Miniſters in *England*. For I do as certainly believe there are lawful Miniſters in *England* as I believe there is a Sun in the Sky.

Dent. Backer.

Ad. 4. I deſire that this Note may be anſwered by that which goeth next before. As for this *common Fame*, it muſt be taken from theſe Perſons, Vicars or Curates, that have ſet their Hands to theſe Notes: and yet I am ſure two of them at the leaſt will fail them. Touching thoſe that are defamed in the Judgment of thoſe Deponents, they are ſuch Miniſters as being idle altogether, and unmindful of their Duty, are ſpoken of according to their Deſerts. As if a man ſhould ſay, the Prophet *Zachary* was a Defamer of Prieſts, when he cryed, ſaying, *Woe be to the Idol Sheephard, that forſaketh his Flock:* Or St. *Paul* a Defamer of Preachers, becauſe he writ of ſome ſuch, that they were *Enemies of the Croſs of Chriſt*: *whoſe God was their Belly, their Glory their ſhame*: *which minded earthly things*.

Ch. xi. 16.

Phil. iii. 19.

Ad. 5. That which is ſaid here to have been in *January* laſt, was done *January* was Twelvemonth: the Matter was thus. My Lord thinking on Sunday at night to have one Mr. *Dent* preach on the Monday Morning, warned the Clark over night to toll the Bell: Mr. *Dent* either was weary, or otherwiſe unwillingly: my Lord alſo was not well. Thereupon my Lord would have his ordinary Exerciſe in the Houſe: and ſuch as were in the Church and would hear, came and heard it. Otherwiſe we knew of none that was to preach in the Church; neither was it a Day of any Church Service.

Ad. 6. No Magiſtrate examined me, by what Authority I preached; unto whom I might give any ſuch Anſwer. Neither is it ſet down, where or when I ſpake the Words. If I ſaid any ſuch thing in private Speech within this Year (which I remember not) I might juſtly ſay it; tho' I took not upon me thereby to do any publick Duty. But I hope this Church will no more diſallow the Miniſters of other Reformed Churches, (if in Life and Doctrine ſufficient) than they diſallow ours.

Ad. 7. The thing being good and godly which we did (tho' I remember not when I ſhould uſe theſe Words) yet I truſt in ſome ſort, tho' not in general, I might ſpeak them in Truth, and with their Honours good Leave. But it is ſtrange, they ſhould put up this as heinous to my Lord of *London*, ſeeing he himſelf knew well of my being with my Lord *Rich*: and was laboured to both by my Lord *Rich* that dead is, and by very Honourable and Worſhipful Knights, to have given me his Licenſe to preach publickly. Which when he underſtood I was no Miniſter, he would not grant. Yet ſpake he nothing that I heard of, to forbid me to do that which I did in my Lord's Houſe. But I continued without his Check from *Chriſtmas* was two Years, till *Michaelmas* laſt.

Ad. 8. I hope no indifferent man can charge me with unmodeſt Speech: But if when they gave occaſion, which were mentioned in the Fourth Note, (for no other hath ever yet complained) ſome Fault of theirs happened to be touched, tho' lovingly, it ſeems they took it as a Taunt.

Ad. 9. I truſt, ſeeing no *ſpecial* is here mentioned, the Things already aid may meet ſufficiently with this *general*.

Ad. 10. When theſe Preachers oft ſpoken of, left the profitable expounding of the Scriptures, and gave themſelves chiefly to inveigh againſt my Lord, and the good Exerciſes of his Houſe; as if we had been *Anabaptiſts*, or other *Hereticks*, I deſired my Lord, that he would neighbourly confer with them, to know, whether they could charge us with any Erroneous Doctrine, that we might amend it. If not, that they might bend their Wits to ſpeak more for the Edifying of the People, and not to the diſcouraging of any, nor to the defaming of my Lord's Houſe. Which Scope if my Lord chanced in any Word to paſs, I truſt they will pardon him, being dead eſpecially.

ROBERT WRIGHT.
Who moſt humbly craveth Pardon;
if in the Writing there have
been any Want of Duty.

[NUNB. XXIV.]

Declaratio eorum quæ circa Mendozæ, *Catholici Regis Legati, miſſionem acciderunt; Unà cum Reſponſo ad ejuſdem Objecta contra ſuam Majeſtatem.*

Chart. Burghlian.

CUM *ita inciderunt*, &c. In *Engliſh* thus. WHEN the Times ſo fell out, that her Majeſty of *England* ſaw, that ſhe muſt neceſſarily reſolve with her ſelf concerning ſending home *Bernardine de Mendoza*, now for ſome Years tarrying with her in Quality of the *Catholick* Kings Ambaſſador; and that the Sentence of that Decree might ſeem to his Maſter too ſudden, and beſides Expectation, by reaſon of paſt Letters on the Behalf of her Majeſty, ſignificatory of ſo unthought on a Chance, as Letters Revocatory by the ſame Catholick King to his Ambaſſador: whence it might be feared, leſt that Friendſhip might with neighbour Nations and Monarchs be rendred ſuſpected; which from antient Times was between the Kings of *England* and the Kings of *Spain*;

It ſeemed worth the Pains to her Majeſty, as well publickly to teſtify a fuller Belief of her Purpoſes, as on that Part to explain to the Catholick King the Cauſes of that ſufficiently ſudden Decree, and to inform the King, what the Thing is; that ſhe, overlooking all thoſe Acts that were committed by *Mendoza*, and commending them to perpetual Oblivion, was ready to cultivate that antient and long paſt Amity, which both their Majeſties drew by an antient hereditary Right from their moſt excellent Anceſtors, to the Good and Profit of both Nations: to cultivate I ſay, by all the beſt Offices, as always hitherto, ſo for the Future; if the Catholick King will not be wanting in performing like good Deſerts with her Majeſty, as well in her own Cauſe, as in that of her Subjects.

It is confeſt, that it can lie hid from none to whom the Report of Things done here in *England* hath come; how that, beſides all Duty due to the Queens Majeſty, certain wicked Plotters, as well Domeſtick, as thoſe that lie abroad, have ſtirred naughty and more than wicked Enterprizes, againſt the Queens Majeſty, and againſt the Crown, to diſturb the Peace of the moſt happy *Engliſh* Empire, ſo odious and damnable in themſelves, that no Laws (the Revengers of Wickedneſſes and Abominations) may bear many of them; and from which her Royal Majeſty eſcaped ſafe and unhurt, only by the ſingular Goodneſs of God.

Mendoza. Which things while they were openly diſcovered and brought to the Light, *Mendoza* was found: who, beſides the Office of an Ambaſſador, to which he was given by the King, and accordingly the Affairs of his Lord, concerning which now for many Months he had no Diſcourſes with her Majeſty, (but followed thoſe Studies by which he might leſſen the Amity and Peace conſtituted between theſe Crownes) he is found a moſt diligent Head and Ringleader, by Witneſs clearer than Noon light, and by Arguments beyond all Exception, to diſturb the quiet ſtate of the Common Wealth.

Which Deed, as being barbarous in its ſelf, and againſt the Law of Nations, and contrary to his Office, and quite eſtranged from it, her Majeſty doubted not, how rejected and hated it was of his Catholic Majeſty.

But according to that Study of Juſtice and Honour that is in her Majeſty, She would not reſolve to ſend back the Man, before that ſhe had made it to be demonſtrated to him, and that from the Confeſſions of thoſe whom he hath aſſociated in this Conſpiracy, the Counſels which he had attempted and acted: having given for that Purpoſe certain Commands by the Counſil of his Secretary to the Chief men; which lay the Crimes to *Mendoza*, that are in the next Place recited.

To wit, That for ſome Months he had communicated more ſecret Counſils, as well by Letters, as by Meſſengers, with the Queen of *Scots*, and her Miniſters. That he conferred frequent Diſcourſes with ſome of her Majeſties
Queen of Scots. Subjects: and ſo was Author to them concerning Means whereby the foreſaid Queen might be conveyed out of Cuſtody, in which She is detained by her Majeſtys Order, and recover her Liberty. That as well by himſelf as by his Meſſengers, he hath not deſiſted to ſollicite the Minds of thoſe to revolt, whom he thought to be Favourers of the *Roman* and *Popes* Religion, and that they ſhould joyne Hands together in Society, to the exerciſing Foreign Soldiers, if any were ſent by thoſe Princes, whom he named *Catholic*, to make an Irruption into this Kingdom; giving his Faith, that the Catholic King his Maſter would ſend Auxiliary Forces, and would bear half the Charge of the Soldiers. That he was conſcious and knew of his Secretary the Return into *England* of *Charles Paget*, a Runnagate out of this Kingdom. Which ſaid *Charles* being of the more ſecret Service of the Queen of *Scots*, being ſent into theſe Parts, came to *Mendoza*, (*Francis Throgmorton* relating the Matter) as well to ſolicite the Minds of the *Papiſts*, as aforeſaid to make a Rebellion: and to deſcribe the Ports, which ſeemed moſt convenient for Landing Foreign Soldiers; as alſo to note their Names who were Favourers and Aiders of the deſigned Invaſion. This the foreſaid *Throgmorton*, altho' a ſtrong and weighty Teſtimony againſt himſelf, and that would touch his Life, moſt freely confeſſed. Which may be for an Argument, that it was not maliciouſly made by the Man, nor ſought out by himſelf for ſome bad Purpoſe. Laſtly, that he had received a little Cheſt or Box from the ſaid *Throgmorton*, being in fear of taking; which contained his foreſaid Deſcriptions and other Writings: In which were noted the ſingle Heads of their Conſpiracies and Practices; to wit, for that End, that the ſaid Cabinet or Box ſhould be preſerved with him, as the Head and Chief of this Conſpiracy. For ſo *Throgmorton* related the Thing.

Theſe things, when they were repeated to his Face from the Confeſſion of the Conſpirators themſelves, he was ſo far from leſſening them by ſome honeſt Anſwer, that ſo immodeſtly, and beſide the Duty of an Ambaſſador, boldly bawling out, *Dreams and Trifles; and nothing elſe*; the Point of his Speech being turned againſt Her Majeſty; loaded her by falſe Accuſations with ſome Injuries, which he feigned to himſelf, proceeding from her Majeſty towards the Catholick King. The Heads of the Calumnies are theſe. That beſide the Faith of Friendſhip, and the Laws of Nations, her Majeſty put under

der Arreſt the Kings Treaſure, put in at certain Ports of this Kingdom: that ſhe helped the States of *Holland* with Soldiers and Mony, at the Interceſſion of the Marqueſs *Hautrecht*, and others: that ſhe affected Prince *Anthony* with very many Honorary Gifts and Benefits: that ſhe had ſent ſome Thouſands to the Duke of *Anjou* in his Expedition at *Cambray*: that ſhe had ſent ſome Noblemen of her Kingdome in the ſaid Dukes March to *Belgium*, that for Honours ſake they might be preſent at the Auguration of the Duke for Duke of *Brabant*: that a certain Counſillor of her Majeſty, *with the Brother of a certain Earl*, entred into hidden Counſils, with the Brother of a certain Earl, concerning killing of *John of Auſtria*. Laſtly, that one *Drake*, a Subject of her Majeſty, in *May* plundred the Catholic King and his Subjects, to the Sum of 200,000 Crownes.

Earl of Suſſex.

But now altho' the haſty and raſh Conveyance of falſe Crimes againſt her Majeſty, ſignifieth nothing at all to waſh off ſo wicked a Practice, where he is held bound in the Court of all Judgments, and moreover to be paſt over as unworthy of Anſwer: yet it hath ſeemed good to her Majeſty to teſtify to all men the honeſt Conſcience of her doings, and to draw down thoſe Objections with the Faith of Honour and Sincerity, that it may appear to the Catholic King and others, whoſoever are not averſe to Truth; how beſides all her Deſerts, *Mendoza* hath endeavoured to draw her Majeſty into Hatred with good Princes. Which that it may be, let it firſt be allowed to run over more ſparingly, and leſs largely than is fit for the Truth of the Matter, the ingrateful Deſerts (as ſhe perſuades her ſelf) which the Catholic King and his Miniſters, provoked with no Injuries before given, have laid down to her Mtjeſty.

Let firſt occurr that well known Peace by the Catholick King made with the *French* King, not much after the Death of his Wife, and the Queen's Majeſty's Siſter, Queen *Mary*. Which Peace was very gainful to him, for the reſtoring of many Things; but very dammageable to her Majeſty, and the Crown of *England*; by reaſon of the reſtoration of *Calais*, deſpiſed by him. Which yet he ought not to have neglected; becauſe of the very freſh Memory of the Benefit of the Auxiliary Forces, which he had received from her Majeſty's Siſter. And that at his Prayer and Entreaty alſo, the Crown of *England* had joyned it ſelf in his War with *France*. Whence followed the taking of that Town out of the Hands of the *Engliſh*, after the Kings of *England* had poſſeſſed that Town with much Honour for the ſpace of Years.

Calais.

Add, becauſe that when the Crown of *England* lived in the fulleſt Peace with its neibour Nations, and ſo with all the Princes of *Europe*, yet for the ſake of the Catholic King alone, before that Siege which was at St. *Quintins*, it caſt it ſelf into Enmity with the King of *France*; whence that War broke out, which preſently followed with the *French* and *Scots*, at one and the ſame Time the Realm of *England* bearing the Aſſault of both: to which nevertheleſs afflicted for his ſake alone, the Catholic King was ſo far from being an Help.

That he favoured the *Scots*: permitted them free Traffic in the *Low Countries*; paſſing by the moſt equal Demands of the Crowne of *England*, of not following the *Scots* with ſo great Deſerts; who had been Enemies to her Majeſty by reaſon of the Auxiliary Bands, joyned with the Catholic King againſt the *French* King. Strange things might be related, that the Kingdom of *England*, ſo very wel deſerving of the Catholic King, that it caſt it ſelf into the Hatred of the *French* and *Scots*, might be objected againſt their Arguments, to be forſaken in their Straits and Afflictions, unleſs, the open Deſertion, and the Kings Decree concerning the *Scots* mens Friendſhip teſtified it.

Scots.

D'Aſſonville, who now lyeth in the *Low Countries*, and took by the Kings Command Count *Feria* his Colleague of this Office .... was come into *England*, [ſomething here wanting] hereafter after this maner, being compelled by very unequal Conditions, to make Peace with the *French* and *Scots*. In the mean time the Catholic King and the Duke of *Savoy* ...... [Imperfect.]

Behold! in one Moment the Crown of *England* placed in a double Miſfortune: *Calais* loſt, an antient Poſſeſſion; and two neibouring Nations, not to be deſpiſed, of Friends made Enemies: and in ſhort a Third, from the Memory of man not eaſily to be wiped out, without a Compenſation of Benefit.

Her Majeſty born and made to all Humanity of Nature, who is wont to forget nothing but Injuries, according to that Study wherby ſhe maintaineth Amities with Neibour Princes; but ſo chiefly with the Catholic King, for that Friendſhip which from antient Times was betwixt this Crown and the Houſe of *Burgundy*, the foregoing unkind Deſerts neglected, firſt by the Lord *Cobham* mediating, who was Queen *Maries* Ambaſſador with the King; after that by two Ambaſſadors of the Queen with the ſame King, each in their Time Reſident, *Tho. Chaloner*, and *Tho. Chamberlain*, Knts. She tryed the King's Mind, and of ſome of the chief men that were preſent with him in his Councils, of renewing the antient Leagues made between the Kings of *England* and the Houſe of *Burgundy*; but in vain; neither the King, nor the Counſillors having Regard to that Matter. Not much after, her Majeſty reneweth her Purpoſe; Vicount *Mountagu*, and *Tho. Chamberlain*, Kt. being ſent away into *Flanders*, *Re infectâ*.

If thoſe things do not openly enough ſhew the King's Mind not well affected towards her Majeſty, Mr. *Man* ſucceded the former. Who how friendly he was received, and with what wonderful Expreſſions of Humanity, in his firſt Entrance upon his Ambaſſy in *Spain*, Witnes the opening of his Cheſts and Coffers; his Acceſs to the King put off to the Third Week from his Coming into the King's Court; His Servants compelled to hear Maſs: hie Son and Steward were compelled, with Wax Candles in their Hands, to be preſent at their Service; from his firſt coming into *Spain* to his Return out of *Spain*, loaded with no better Rewards. Theſe things proceded from the King himſelf to her Majeſty, deſerving and expecting better Offices: and was any thing better or more courteous from the King's Miniſters?

In the Year 1568 which followed the former, the Duke *D'Alva* in the *Low Countries*, put in Arreſt not only the Goods and Merchandizes of whatſoever Subjects of *England*, but alſo the Merchants themſelves; pretending certain Ships here [ſtopt] and of ſome Merchandizes of *Genoa*, to belong to the Catholic King. There came forth into Light, now a good while ago, a moſt equal and ful Defence of this Arreſt don by her Majeſty; which ſo far commendeth the Faith and Integrity of her Majeſty, that there is no body of all Men, who can want therefore Reſtitution from her Majeſty in whole. For the Letters of the *Genoans* (which are ſtil kept) are Witneſſes, that nothing in that Caſe was don by her Majeſty, but by the Requeſt of the Catholic Ambaſſador, and at the Prayer of the Catholic Ambaſſador, and at their Prayer, who thought it as a thing very profitable to eſcape the Hands of the *French* Pyrate, who at that time roving in the Seas, laid wait for them. Of the Arreſt don by the Catholick King [towards the *Engliſh* Merchants Goods] it ſeemed not ſo clear.

In the Year 69 the Civil Fire brake out here into Flames, within the Kingdom of *England*. Whoſe Torches and Foreign *Flabella* by certain were diſcovered. Duke *D'Alva*, and that *Guenes Deſpenſis*, Ambaſſador of the Catholick King, (both whom are dead) but both conſcious Witneſſes of their own Wickedneſs, to be condemned by their own free Confeſſions: altho' they have left very many alive in the *Low Countries*, yet the Head and Chief among the reſt, *Monſieur De la Moth*, Governour of *Graveling* at that Time, being ſent out by Duke *D'Alva* into *England* to further thoſe Buſineſſes. It is certain indeed that the Catholic King for that Time, in Word diſproved the Deed, as don without his Knowledg: altho' he make it believed on the contrary, that he did as yet, maintain at his own Coſt the chief Incendiaries and Rebels in his Dominions with him; where they fearing, withdrew themſelves from the Danger of their Lives. And but a little while ago uſed, for that Matter, the Pains of ſome who are with him in the chief Magiſtracy.

He that perſuaded ſome of the former Incendiaries to paſs over into *Scotland*, to ſtir up Innovation in thoſe Northern Parts: where they were thought to be provided with the Patronage and Tuition of Friends. The later Wounds of violated Friendſhip, are thoſe in confirming the Minds of the Rebells in *Ireland*, and by affording help to them.

And now the Things being recited more diſcourteouſly don againſt her Majeſty by the Catholic King, which it is enough ſhortly to have touched, let him weigh them with himſelf; and what may ſeem to have given the Cauſe: and of thoſe Things in the next Place, which are. ſaid to have proceded from her Majeſty towards the Catholick King, he will judge moſt rightly and eaſily; the Kings Conſcience being Witnes, that no Prince ever, or any where, prepared and furniſhed ſo well to revenge Injuries brought upon Her, would or could ſo temper her ſelf in ſo ſingular a Number of the greateſt Wrongs, as her Majeſty hath tempered herſelf. But of theſe enough.

Now let us ſee concerning the Calumnies of *Mendoza.* He objecteth Firſt, That the States, at the Requeſt of *Hautretcht*, were aided with Men and Mony. Concerning this Head enough hath been anſwered already of the Queen's Majeſty by *Tho. Wilks*, one of her Secretaries, being ſent, at the ſame time and for the ſame Purpoſe, Ambaſſador to *Spain.* To which Anſwer if any now ſhould be added, what hindred (by how much the leſs he hath taken all *Belgium*) her taking the *Low Countries* into her Power, on their own accord offered to her by the Conſent of the greateſt Part of the Nobles, Common People and Cities; if ſhe had carried in her Mind the ſevere Revenge of ſeverer Revenge. Add, that there were not wanting Abetters, and ſuch as perſuaded to that thing, which at this Day are in ſome Place, and obtain Countenance with the King.

But as her Majeſty is more deſirous of good Deeds, Conſcience and Honour, than of Profit, ſhe could be perſuaded by none, neither Perſuaſion, nor the Tears of thoſe that were oppreſt with his Tyranny by the Kings chief Officers, nor by the Surrender of all the *Low Countries*, throwing themſelves down at her Feet, to uſurp to her ſelf the antient and hardeſt Poſſeſſions of the Catholic King; or ſuffer it to be uſurped by others, that were ambitious of it. Wherefore that ſhe might as well preſerve intire to the Catholic King that which was his, as ſhe might not be wanting, more than too much, to the afflicted *Belgic* People, and might reſtrain them from caſting off their Obedience and Allegiance due to the Catholic King, and might keep them in their Duty; miniſtred ſome Mony to maintain an Army, and helped them by ſome other not diſhonorable Means. In the mean time by frequent Embaſſies moving their Minds to yield Obedience to the Catholic King, to come into Favour with him: and on the other ſide by entreating the King to ſuffer himſelf to be bent by the Prayers of his Friends, to forgive his People their Error, to receive them into Favour, to protect them in the good Fortune of their Laws and Privileges. That he ſhould give Governours in the *Low Countries*, who ſhould be diſpoſed to Peace, not to Civil Broils; by ſuch Offices on the one ſide, and on the other, that the *Low Countries* might be preſerved ſafe: which otherwiſe enclined to a Change of their Lords. Which was indeed afterwards don by ſubmitting themſelves to the Rule of the Duke of *Anjou*, when they ſaw their Prayers, and the Prayers of their Friends deſpiſed by the Catholic King, and the Queens Majeſty withdrawing her Auxiliary Forces from their Afflicted Concernes.

But as to the ſending over of 3000 Soldiers into the *Low Countries*, whom her Majeſty is ſaid to ſend for the Uſe of the *States* to rule his Subjects; (whence he [*Mendoza*] by a certain Study of Evil-ſpeaking would caſt a Blot upon her Majeſty) who is there ſo averſe to Truth, ſo mad, ſo ignorant of things done in *England*, who doth not underſtand, or might, if he would, that the tranſporting of Soldiers out of this Kingdom into the *Low Countries* had been prohibited from the firſt Time of the Civil Tumults in *Holland* to this very Day? That it is ſo far from it, that any at any Time ſhould be furniſhed with Royal Authority ſent for the *States*, that they waited for the Expedition privately, and without the Queens Knowledg: having gotten for that Purpoſe Means very Secret, not out of the Public Ports, but out of obſcurer Creeks.

'Tis true, the moſt fortunate Times of happy Peace, which her Majeſty obtaineth by the ſingular Goodneſs of God, now Five and Twenty Years and 1583. more, have begot a very numerous People. It is true; and that Eaſe and great Minds do not...... eſpecially where things flowing according to Peoples Wills are wanting, or where there be but narrow Circumſtances at home. Hence it hath come to paſs, that ſome few, the Barrs of Obedience broken, being not made for Idleneſs, have withdrawn themſelves from *England* to Armes, and ſerved in the *Low Countries*: ſome on the States, and ſome on the Kings ſide. Not, as he [*Mendoza*] raſhly, inconſiderately, and without Thought, hath dared to affirme.

NUMB: XXV.

Ocklands Character of Sr. *William Cecil*, Lord *Burghley*, Lord Treaſurer. In Heroic Verſe.

ANTE alios, iſtóſq; omnes, inſtante ſiniſtra
Fortuna, cujus Princeps, inſtante periclo,
Eſt experta Fidem, ſincero corde profectam;
Primus adeſt, ducens fidos CECILIUS Heros,
Complures ſecum; ac in Sacrum voce Senatum
Principis eligitur primus. Nunc grandior ævo,
Confectus ſenio, ſtudijs maceratus, & æger
Sæpc ſuis pedibus, graviora Negotia, canos
Ante diem accerſunt crines, curvámq; Senectam,
Qui quater eſt decimus vix tunc expleverat annum.
Somni perpaucus, parcè Viniq; cibiq;
In menſa ſumens, ſemper gravis atq; modeſtus.
Nulliúſq; joci, ſemper Sermone retractat
Seria; ſive ſilet, meditatur ſeria ſemper.
Religionis amans veræ, ſtudioſior æqui;
Ad magnas natus res noſtra ætate gerendas,
In Patriam cujus Studium propenſa voluntas,
In Cives amor, atq; fides in Sceptra tenentem.
In magnis regni ſolers Sapientia rebus,
Ultra *Europam* illi peperit memorabile nomen.
Nec jam conſilijs pollens floreſcere primò
Cæpit, in *Edvardi* defuncti claruit Aulâ
Regis, Conſultor prudens juvenilibus annis.
Inter Primores regionis quando procellis
Exortis, cautus ſtuduit ſedare tumultus.
Dúmq; alij ſulco ſubſident gurgitis imo,
Et puppim feriunt ſtridenti flamine venti,
Prona ruit celeri Lapſu pars una deorſum,
Ipſe Decus, ſedémq; ſuam, noménq; tuetur.
Quo pacto MARIA prudens ſe geſſerit *Anglis*
Imperitante, focos velo obducente, quod alto
Pendebat malo (magnis quia cedere præſtat
Fluminibus contrà niti aut obſtare furori
Currenti, certum & parit exitiale perîclum)

Denotat indicijs hominem apparentibus illum
Verè prudentem, medijs quod in hoſtibus annos
Sex totos *Cayphæ* multum exoſúſq; Cohorti
Degeret illæſus, per vicos, compita & urbem
Se oſtendens populo, cum pars bona longius exul
Tempora contereret, Deus hunc ſervavit in almæ
Principis obſequium, noſtriq; in commoda regni.
Regum legatos orantes audijt aure
Attendâ; reſponſa quibus dedit ore diſerto.
Neſtor conſilijs qui nunc *Burghleius* Heros,
Sylvis, prædiolis lætis, & ab arce vocatur.
Et fiſci Cuſtos æraria publica curat:
Cognoſcens Cauſas ſummo, (res digna relatu eſt)
Et ſtudio & cura lites ſecat ocyus, ut non
Præſtolans ſpatium bidui triduiq; moretur:
Omnes exuperans hac laudis parte priores:
Ni poſcat plures magni res ponderis horas,
Nec queat exculpi longo ſine tempore verum,
Jure ſit hæc magni laus prima & vera Dynaſtæ.

NUMB. XXVI.

A Catechiſm, Containing certain Queſtions and Anſwers touching the Doctrine of Predeſtination, *the Uſe of God's Word and Sacraments. Formerly bound up with ſome Bibles.*

Q. WHY do Men ſo much vary in Matters of Religion?

A. Becauſe all have not the like Meaſure of Knowledge. Neither do all believe the Goſpel of Chriſt.

Q. What is the Reaſon thereof?

A. Becauſe they only believe the Goſpel and Doctrine of Chriſt, which are ordained unto Eternal Life.

Q. Are not all ordained unto Eternal Life?

A. Some are Veſſels of Wrath, ordained unto Deſtruction; as others are Veſſels of Mercy, prepared to Glory.

Q. How ſtandeth it with Gods Juſtice, that ſome are appointed unto Damnation?

A. Very well: Becauſe all Men have in themſelves ſin: which deſerveth no leſs. And therefore the Mercy of God is wonderful, in that he vouchſafeth to ſave ſome of that ſinful Race, and to bring them to the Knowledge of the Truth.

Q. If Gods Ordinance and Determination muſt of Neceſſity take Effect, then what need any man care? For he that liveth well, muſt needs be damned, if he be therunto ordained: And he that liveth ill muſt needs be ſaved, if he be therunto appointed.

A. Not ſo: for it is not poſſible, that either the Elect ſhould always be without Care to do well, or that the Reprobate ſhould have any will therunto. For to have either good Will, or good Work is a Teſtimony of the Spirit of God; which is given to the Elect only: whereby Faith is ſo wrought in them, that being grafte in Chriſtt, they grow in Holineſs to that Glory, whereunto they are appointed. Neither are they ſo vain, as once to think that they may do as they liſt themſelves, becauſe they are Predeſtinate unto Salvation. But rather they endeavour to walk in ſuch good Works, as God in Chriſt Jeſus hath ordained them unto, and prepared for them to be occupied in, to their own Comfort, Stay and Aſſurance; and to his Glory.

Q. But

Q. But how ſhall I know my ſelf to be one of thoſe, whom God hath ordained to Life Eternal?

A. By the Motions of Spiritual Life: which belongeth only to the Children of God. By the which that Life is perceived: even as the Life of this Body is diſcerned by the Senſe and Motions therof.

Q. What mean you by the *Motions* of Spiritual Life?

A. I mean Remorſe of Conſcience, joyning with the loathing of Sin, and Love of Righteouſnes: the Hand of Faith reaching unto Life Eternal in Chriſt; the Conſcience comforted in Diſtreſs, and raiſed up to Confidence in God by the Work of his Spirit: a thankful Remembrance of Gods Benefits received, and the uſing of all Adverſities as occaſion of Amendment ſent from God.

Q. Cannot ſuch periſh, as at ſome time or other feel theſe Motions within themſelves?

A. It is not poſſible that they ſhould. For as God's Purpoſe is not changeable, ſo he repenteth not the Gifts and Graces of his Adoption. Neither doth he caſt off thoſe whom he hath once received.

Q. Why then ſhould we pray by the Example of *David*, that he caſt us not from his Face, and that he take not his Holy Spirit from us?

A. In ſo praying we make Proteſtation of the Weakneſs of Fleſh, which moveth us to doubt. Yet ſhould not we have Courage to ask, if we were not aſſured, that God will give according to his Purpoſe and Promiſe, that which we require.

Q. Do the Children of God feel the Motions aforeſaid always alike?

A. No, truly. For God ſometime, to prove his, ſeemeth to leave them in ſuch ſort, that the Fleſh over matcheth the Spirit. Whereof ariſeth Trouble of Conſcience for the Time. Yet the Spirit of Adoption is never taken from them, that have once received it: elſe might they periſh. But as in many Diſeaſes of the Body, the Powers of Bodily Life are letted; ſo in ſome Aſſaults theſe Motions of Spiritual Life are not perceived: becauſe they ly hidden in our manifold Infirmities, as the Fire covered with Aſhes. Yet as after Sickneſs cometh Health, and after Clouds the Sun ſhineth clear; ſo the Powers of Spiritual Life will more or leſs be felt and perceived in the Children of God.

Q. What if I never feel theſe Motions in my ſelf, ſhall I deſpair, and think my ſelf a Caſt-away?

A. God forbid. For God calleth his at what time he ſeeth good. And the Inſtruments whereby he uſually calleth, have not the like Effect at all Times. Yet it is not good to neglect the Means, wherby God hath determined to work the Salvation of his. For as Wax is not melted without Heat, nor Clay hardned, but by means thereof: ſo God uſeth Means both to draw thoſe unto himſelf, whom he hath appointed unto Salvation; and alſo to bewray the Wickedneſs of them whom he juſtly condemneth.

Q. By what Means uſeth God to draw Men to himſelf, that they may be ſaved?

A. By the preaching of his Word, and the Miniſtring of the Sacraments therunto annexed, &c.

[NUMB. XXVI.]

Epiſtola Sereniſſimæ Scotorum *Reginæ* MARIÆ; *ab Epiſcopo* Roſſenſi, (*ut videtur*) *miſſa.*

Rob. Turn. *Profeſſor.* Ingolſtad. *Epiſt.*

CUM permulti (Sereniſſima Regina) me narrante, cognoviſſent, quibus Miſeriis implicita, quibus fraudibus petita, quàm variis undiq; Calamitatibus obſepta fueris, intimis ſanè ſenſibus angebantur. At cum id intellexiſſent te in iſtas moleſtias eo maximè nomine incidiſſe, quòd in Catholica Religione tenenda conſtans, defendenda magnanima ſemper fueris, tantum aberat, ut tuam vicem dolerent, ut abſterſo penitus dolore, pietati, conſtantiæ, magnanimitati tuæ gratularentur. Siquidem verè ſtatuebant in calamitatibus iſtis poſſe te eſſe ærumnoſam, cum homo nata ſis, ſed nullo modo miſeram, cum piè Chriſtiana ſis. Quis enim a Chriſti mente tam abhorret, ut quem Chriſtus beatam appellet, hanc ipſam miſeram putet? Nam ſi illi, qui propter Religionem carceris pœnam, propter Chriſtum capitis periculum, propter juſtitiam perſecutionum procellas adierint, beati dicendi ſint, qua ratione tu miſera dici aut cogitari queas? Quæ iſta omnia tanta mentis alacritate ſubiiſti, ut nec carceris, nec exilii, nec alias fortunæ difficultates, aſperas putâris, & duras; ſed incredibili potius dulcedine delinitas; quaſi eſſent non pœnæ ab hominibus, ſed præmia a Deo meritis tuis, propoſita & conſtituta.

Unde venerat mihi in mentem cogitare hanc tantam mentis tuæ æquabilitatem non aliunde fluere, quàm quod Virtus quædam in animum tuum cœlitus illapſa, ita omnes tuas cogitationes occupârit, ut rem non humano ſenſu, ſed divina mente metireris. Nam ſupra humanam naturam, aut ſaltem ſupra hujus ætatis Virtutem videtur eſſe; Mulierem in flore ætatis, & regiæ dignitatis ſplendore conſtitutam, habere animum patientia ita vallatum, ut in acerrimis angoribus læta, in arctiſſimis Cuſtodiis libera, in ſummis miſeriis felix ipſa ſibi videretur: itaq; tanta conſtantiæ ſignificatione, ut hoc modo videretur velle ſemper eſſe felix; id eſt, propter Chriſtum miſera. Quæ res facit, ut credam, futurum brevi, ut ne ſperanti, nec cogitanti iſtæ tibi miſeriæ condiantur ſuavitate, & carceres periculáque compenſentur ſummâ felicitate. Deus enim ſuos, cum omni planè ſpe excidere judicantur, è periculis vindicat; ut & arctiori eos ſibi beneficio devinciat, ut clarius ejus in ipſos emineat bonitas.

Quare etſi non videmus, cur nobis, ſi rerum humanarum Lance omnia ponderemus, ſit ſperandum; tamen cum ad Deum animum cogitationemq; meam refero, inducor, ut nullam cauſam putem eſſe, cur aut nos, qui Dei & tua cauſa libentiſſimè omnia ferimus, de ſummis Reip. bonis deſperemus; aut tu (Sereniſſima Regina) in extremis iſtis malis extabeſcas planè. Idem namq; Deus qui *Davidem* graviſſimis *Saulis* vexationibus oppreſſum, *Manaſſem* carceris ſquallore penè confectum, & Apoſtolum *Paulum* immaniſſimo *Neronis*, tanquam Leonis, furori objectum, liberârat, te quoq; poteſt Reip. & Rempub. tibi, & utriq; Eccleſiam, & in Eccleſia ſummam libertatem, & in ſumma Libertate ſummam jucunditatem, reſtituere.

Quid enim frangaris, aut animo concidas? Nonne idem Deus, *Malcolmum*, *Robertum* & *Davidem Bruſios*, *Jacobum* tritavum tuum, alioſq; majores tuos arctiſſima apud *Anglos* cuſtodia comprehenſos, in libertatem aſſeruit; ac amplioribus quam antea honoribus cumulavit? At quam, quæſo, ob cauſam iſtorum fortunam, penè proſtratam erexit Deus? Ut tibi & omnibus ſuis oſtenderet, ſe illis nunquam defuturum, quam diu manent ſui. Macte igitur animo, (piiſſima Regina) horum exemplo ſpera meliora, pacatiora, ampliora. Non te frangant, ſed, ut antea ſemper, ſic nunc maximè excitent, curæ, labores, pericula. Omnipotens enim Deus, multorum precibus in humilitate cordis, toties rogatus te ex iſtis periculis ereptam, honoribus longè majoribus, ornabit; ac horum laborum curarúmq;, quibus aliorum mentes frangi ſolent, tua ne angi quidem poteſt, præmium longè ampliſſimum proponet, libertatis ſuavitatem augebit, regni fines proferet: nunquam deniq; deſinet tibi eſſe pater, ſi tu illi pergas eſſe filia.

Quare ut id, quod ſumma quadam cum laude nunc facis, ſeriò & conſtanter ſemper facias, & literis abſens, & verbis præſens, ſæpiſſimè tecum egi. Ad quam rem, cum plurimum momenti allaturam Hiſtoriæ lectionem putarem, res geſtas poſteriorum regum, quas nullus antea tetigerat, *Anglicè* Scriptas, cum Legationis munus apud *Anglos* obirem, ad te miſeram. Verùm cum temporis noſtri calamitas me publicis Reip. muneribus excluſerat, nolui in hoc meo otio ita languere, ut nulla planè ex meis laboribus utilitas ad Rempublicam noſtram manare videretur. Quare nè hoc meum otium ſine ullo fructu Reip. periiſſe exiſtimetur, non ſolum quæ lingua *Anglica* feſtinans effuderam, *Latino* Sermone explicavi; verum etiam anteactæ ætatis integram Hiſtoriam in unum Volumen ad noſtrorum utilitatem, arctius compreſſi.. Quæ eo nomine ad te jam mitto, ut inde ſeligas exempla, quibus te ad pietatis & religionis ſtudia magis & magis inflammes; & Virtutes, quibus tu flores maximè, in aliis tuis majoribus admireris, in te autem ames: ea quoq; ex hoc noſtro Labore effluet utilitas; quòd ille optimæ ſpei ac indolis Princeps, filius tuus (quem Reip. noſtræ ſalvum, & Eccleſiæ Chriſti ſalutarem fore, quotidianis a Deo precibus ſuppliciter contendo) hinc promat, & vitiorum, quæ fugiat, & virtutum, quas ſequatur, præclariſſima exempla.

Is namq; finis exemplis proponi & ſolet & debet, ut bonos bonorum præmiis ad virtutum ſtudia, & malos malorum pœnis ad vitiorum fugam, incendant. Quæ domi apud nos potius naſcantur, quàm foris ab exteris petantur; aculeos in animo tenelli tui filii relinquent, altius defixos. Veriſſimum enim eſt, quòd trivit communis doctorum ſermo, majorem habere vim ad movendum, domeſtica quàm externa exempla. Quare cum omnes jam ubiq; te ſuſpiciant, ut piam, ut conſtantem, ut religioſam, id ſi tua diligentia effeceris, ut religionis & pietatis exempla in filii tui mentem inſtilles, non minorem profectò laudem conſequeris, quàm ſi ipſius Imperium alio regno amplificandum curares. At cum id pietatis Officium præſens præſenti non poſſis præſtare, in eam curam incumbe ſedulò, ut illum ad Parentum ſuorum Veſtigia in religionis & Virtutum ſtudiis perſequenda literis & ſcriptis, ſi languet, excites; ſi currat, incites. Neq; ſanè ſatis fuerit, te illum in tuis viſceribus deliteſcentem, ab hoſtium inſidiis ac furore immunem conſervaſſe, niſi editum jam, & præclara ſuæ indolis indicia præ ſe ferentem, pietate & virtute inbuendum opportunè, importunè, ſcriptis, nuntiis, omnibus deniq; modis, elabores.

Id quod ſi feceris, (facturum te ſpero) futurum eſt, ut qui, anticipato regii honoris tempore, omnium in ſe oculos converterit, omnium item judicium & expectationem de ſua virtute conceptam, non ſolum præclarè ſuſtineat, ſed etiam creſcente ætate, multis quoq; partibus vincat & ſuperet. Verùm ſi hoc pietatis officium nullo modo ex te, omni opportunitate excluſa, proficiſci poterit, nos, quicunq; utriq; veſtrûm, ac in vobis Reip. toti proſpectum eſſe cupimus, hanc illi operam ſcriptis ac libris, qui ad virtutem incitent, fortaſſe navabimus. Vale feliciter, & hoc noſtros labores boni conſule.

NUMB. XXVII.

The Syndincs *and Council of* Geneva *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley; *To move the Queen to relieve them againſt the Army of the Duke of* Savoy.

MSS. Burghlian.

MONSIEUR, Nous avous entendu par le raport de Seigneur Maillet, noſtre bien Aymé Conſeillier l'affection, quil vous a pleu employer pour donner ſucces a ce que nous avons pourſuivy vers ſa Majeſté. Et comme nous vous recognoiſſons des principaux Inſtruments de bien faict & Liberalité de ſa Majeſté envers nous; Auſſi n'avons nous voulu obmettre de vous teſmoigner L'obligation, que nous ſentons avoir a vous, nous taſcherons de conſerver & perpetuer la Memoire aux noſtres, qui auront aveq nous tousjours une tresjuſte occaſion de louer Dieu de ce quil luy a pleu ſuſciter tel Seigneur de merite, que vous, Monſieur, pour favoriſer ceſt Eſtat en une telle occaſion. De cecy nous concevons eſperance, que Dieu nous continuera ſon aſſiſtance ſelon les Commencemens, quil nous en faict veoir, & ne permettra point, que ceux qui nous perſecutant a cauſe de la Religion, dont nous faiſons profeſſion, triomphent de nous. Ains prendra la cauſe des ſiens en main, & fera paroir ſa vertu & puiſſance en noſtre petiteſſe.

Cependant il luy plaiſt, que nous ſoions de preſent exercez par diverſes menaces de nos enemis, leſquels taſchent d'amener a chef la mauvaiſe Volonté, quils ont des long temps concevé contre nous. On mect de garniſons pres de noſtre Ville, & faict on paſſer de gens de guerre, qu'on entretient aſſes pres de nous. Ils empeſchent auſſi de nous apporter des granies: & en oultre ſommes advertis du paſſage prochain de douze mil *Eſpaniolz* par la *Savoye* & *Bourgogne*. Ou ils doivent faire quelque ſejour, pour dela (comme on dict) ſe rendre au *Paijs bas*.

Toutes leſquelles choſes concurrentes enſemble ne nous permettent aulcunq repos du coſte des nos ennemis Mais oppoſans a toutes ces conſiderations humaines la paiſſance de Dieu, par laquelle nous ſubſiſtons, nous eſperons, que nous garentira & conſervera par ſa gloire, comme nous l'en Supplions.

Et quant a moyens humains, dont il plaiſt a Dieu ſe ſervir pour la Deliverance deſſiens, nous nous aſſurons, Monſieur, que vous & autres Seigneurs, qui vous eſtes monſtres affectiones envers nous, continuerez de plus en plus a nous favoriſer ſelon les occaſions, qui ſe preſenteront, & aurez noſtre Eſtat en recommendation, comme luy qui ſera tousjours dedie a vous faire Service; priant ſur ce Dieu,

Monſieur, qu'en vous accroiſſant ſes graces. Il vous conſerve longue & heureuſe vie. De *Geneva* ce xxv^{e} de Decembre, 1583.

Les Syndiques & Conſeil de
Geneve, *Vos bien volontaires & affectionez Amis,*
a vous faire Service.

NUMB. XXVIII.

A Proclamation againſt Retainers.

THE Queen, weighing the great Inconveniences, and Enormities that have univerſally grown within her Realm by unlawful retaining of Multitudes of unorderly Servants by Liveries, and otherwiſe, contrary to the good and antient Statutes of this Realm; hath therefore by her Proclamation notified the ſame, and the Dangers and Penalties of the ſaid Laws, unto her Loving Subjects: giving them expreſs Admonition, that if they ſhould not therupon forbear any further to offend therin, Her Will and Pleaſure was, that the ſaid Laws and Statutes ſhould be ſtraitly put in Execution; and the Penalties and Forfeitures growing thereby to her Highneſs for the Offences committed againſt the ſame to be duely levyed. Whereof notwithſtanding their neither hath followed ſuch Reformation in that Behalf, as was expected; but the ſaid Miſchiefs and Enormities have rather more and more encreaſed. Neither have the ſaid Laws hitherto been duely put in Execution, according to the former Proclamation. Wherein had appeared moſt wilful Contempt in the Offenders, and great Negligence and Lack of dutiful Care in thoſe, to whom the Execution of the ſaid Laws was committed: which might juſtly move her Highneſs to uſe herein hereafter all Severity and Extremity. Yet nevertheles her Majeſty having an earneſt and moſt godly Intention to procure ſpeedy Reformation of ſo pernicious a Sore in this Commonwealth, and of her Gracious and merciful Diſpoſition, tendring more the quiet Reformation of the Faults, than to enrich her Treaſures by the great Forfeitures, which by Juſtice are due unto her, Meaneth to make ſome further Tryal, before ſhe procede to ſevere Execution of the ſame.

And therefore to the End, that ſuch as have offended in this Behalf (either by unlawful *retaining*, or by being unlawfully *retained* by Livery, Badges, Promiſe or otherwiſe) being eftſones admoniſhed of the Dangers and Penalties of the ſaid Laws and Statutes, and of her Majeſty's Will and Pleaſure for the ſtrait Execution of the ſame hereafter, may have convenient Time and Reſpit to reform themſelves, and to eſchew the Peril and Dangers of the ſaid Laws; ſhe doth by her Proclamation Notify to all Her Loving Subjects, of what State or Degree ſoever they be, that whoſoever after the laſt Day of *May*, next coming, ſhall unlawfully *Retain*, or be *Retained*, *&c.* ſhall not have any manner of Favour or Grace of her Majeſty for any ſuch Offence committed, or to be committed againſt the Laws and Statutes; but that the whole Penalties, Forfeitures and Puniſhments, limited and appointed by the ſame Laws, ſhall with al Severity be extended againſt them, as well for their Offences committed before the ſaid laſt Day of *May*, as after, *&c.* And ſhe charged all her Juſtices and Officers, to whom the Execution of the ſame appartained, to cauſe Inquiſition and Examination, according to the ſame Laws, to be made in all Places of the Realm, aſſoon as conveniently they might after the ſame laſt Day of *May*, *&c.* And in every Seſſions Inquiſition to be made by a ſufficient Jury of all Points and Articles of the Statutes in force againſt unlawful *Retainers*: eſpecially of the Statute 8. *E.* 4. and the 3d. of her Majeſty's moſt Noble Grandfather, King *Henry*, 7. *&c.* Given at her Manour of *Greenwich*, the 19. of *April*, the 25. Year of her Reign. 1583.

NUMB.

NUMB. XXIX.

Archiepiſcopus Eborum Ceſtrienſi *Epiſcopo.*

Gratia, Pax & Salus à Deo Patre & Domino noſtro Jesu Chriſto.

Biblioth. *Coll.* Gonv. & Cai.

INtuenti mihi, (Frater Venerande) Curſum & Conditionem hujus impietate perditi ſeculi; quantos agat Triumphos *Satan*, quàm longè lateq; dominetur ſcelus, quàm, innumeri ſunt ac frequentes improborum hominum flagitioſi greges, quàm exilis, quàm arida, vel potiùs quàm nulla, ſit in terris Fides, nulla Pietas, videmus, in ultima & impia mundi hujus, jam interitui vicina tempora, deveniſſe:

Cum porrò mihi in mentem venit, zizaniam, horum peccatorum Semen, nullâ re magis in agro Domini vel ſpargi, vel ſuccreſcere, quàm Agricolarum ſomnolentiâ, colonorum deſidiâ, nec aliunde tantam cladem invectam eſſe *Hieroſolymæ* noſtræ ſanctæ civitati (quâ & muri ſui evertuntur, & ipſa pœnè capta cedit inimicorum violentiæ) quàm quòd excubiæ, quæ deberent vigilare ſomno ſopitæ, ſuis muneribus deſunt:

Adhæc, cum recolo, nos etiam ipſos, quibus curam ſuæ vineæ commiſit Dominus, officio noſtro parùm ſatisfeciſſe, vitas nimium ſecurè, tanquam in alta pace tranſegiſſe, neq; hoſtibus Chriſti ſatis fortiter reſiſtendo, neq; Domini fundum arando ſatis diligenter, neq; paſcendo gregem ſatis fideliter, neq; ſatis vigilanter in ſpecula conſiſtendo, munus noſtrum prout decuit, adimpleviſſe; uti meipſum negligentiæ coarguo, teſtéq; Conſcientiæ cogor ſuccumbere veniámq; petere, (quanquam diſſolutum, & penitus deſidem me nunquam fuiſſe, novit Dominus; ita charitate piâ fraternáq; benevolentiâ commotus, meum eſſe duco te cohortari: uti quemadmodum idem nobis incumbit onus, eadem eſt adminiſtrandæ provinciæ reddenda ratio, ſic conjunctis animis, quales nos eſſe decet ponderemus, ſecuritatem & ſomnolentiam diſcutiamus, redimamus tempus, accingamus nos ad prælium, gladios & Arma Spiritus capiamus, hoſtem communem profligamus, & Chriſti fidem, vel ad ſanguinem & cædem, defendamus.

Præfecit nos Deus gentibus & populis, ut extirpemus, & eradicemus, ut perdamus & dejiciamus, ut ædificemus & plantemus. Ideóq; noſtrum eſt, fibras Superſtitionis & Idololatriæ radices falce Divini verbi reſecare, bonas etiam fruges Evangelii propagatione per animos hominum conſerere, arces & turres *Jericuntis* tubâ cœleſtis Spiritus evertere; muros autem *Jeroſolymæ* Sacrúmq; Templum, quantum in nobis eſt, erigere; Sævitiam & Tyrannidem *Antichriſti* ſumma contentione convellere, Regnum autem & Imperium filii Dei ſedulâ prædicatione ſtabilire.

Neq; vero ſolum hunc in paſcendo ſuo grege laborem, videtur Dominus à nobis poſtulare, verum etiam flagitat; ne ſolutis legum ſacratarum vinculis, impunè peccatum volitet. Vult enim Dominus libidinem comprimi, ſcelus conſtringi, diſſolutos mores contineri, quœq; dilapſa jam defluxerunt ſeveris legibus, & dignis ſuppliciis, coerceri. Ita & ſaluti præcipitantis Patriæ melius conſulemus, & eorum furorem, qui afflictam eam cupiunt, opprimere, felicius concutiemus. Hic igitur fideles & juſtos nos eſſe convenit, æquâ lance quod ſuum eſt cuîq; tribuentes. Non debemus nos quenquam, vel ob opes divitem, vel ob authoritatem potentem, vel ob amicitiam charum, vel ob commoditatem utilem, ſic reſpicere, quo minus opus Domini ſtrenuè compleamus.

Qui ergo ſunt contumaces & præfracti hoſtes, virgâ ſunt ferreâ comminuendi; ſaltem, nè leprâ ſuâ ſanos inficiant, conſtringendi. Capiendæ ſunt Vulpeculæ, quæ demoliuntur vineam, & pandenda venabula, quibus errones *Papani*, ſeditionum faces, & Eccleſiæ peſtes, irretiti cadant. Hoc enim genus hominum peſſimum eſt, & noſtri fundi calamitas; qui nimia licentiâ fiunt deteriores, & impunitate jam feroces, audacter cum ſummo diſcrimine bonorum

rum omnium inſoleſcunt. Eſt miſericordia crudelis: & cur non cogeret Eccleſia perditos filios ut redirent, ſi perditi filii cogerunt alios, ut perirent? Ut autem hæc omnia facilius eveniant, ac partetis operibus facilius optatos exitus ſortiantur, non alienum arbitror, ſi pro authoritate nobis conceſſâ, quiſq; noſtrum quos apud ſe noverit pietate præſtantes & fide ſanos, convocet, eorumq; ſtrenuam & diligentem operam in his Eccleſiæ Reíq; publicæ, tam incertis & dubiis rebus, expoſcat. Lumbis enim ſuccinctis (Frater) oportet nos ſedulò negotium Domini conficere. Multi ſunt hoſtes; multa nobis quærenda ſunt conſilia. Nec in hiſce difficultatibus omittendum quicquam, quod ullo modo Saluti communi poſſit conducere. Neq; debemus extimeſcere quenquam, cujus eſt in .... ipſius Spiritus. Dominus omnipotens nobis aderit & Dux & Vindex; ſimus modo pro Domo Dei zelo ferventes, flagrantes ſtudio neq; aliqua neceſſitudine complectamur, quos alienâ in Dominum noſtrum & ſuam Eccleſiam eſſe mente. Nam qui perfidi ſunt in Deum, in Principem fideles eſſe non poſſunt. Quas nacti ſumus Provincias ornemus eas, nobiſq; ipſis, & univerſo gregi diligenter caveamus. Aderit enim proculdubio brevi Dominus; qui nos præfecit Eccleſiæ ſuæ, proprióq; Sanguine redemptam eam è gehennæ faucibus eripuit. Ante cujus Tribunal ſtare nos oportet, noſtræq; diſpenſationis diſtrictam rationem reddere. Quâ tempeſtate felix ille, qui intrepidè coram filio Dei mortuorum & viventium Judice, poterit conſiſtere.

Hæc mihi in mentem venerunt, de quibus tuam Dominationem admonere, mei eſſe officii putavi. Sperans humanitatem tuam fidele hoc meum conſilium & amicam animam, bonam in partem eſſe accepturam. Deus Opt. Max. Eccleſiam ſuam protegat, hoſtes veritatis conterat, noſtríſq; piis ſtudiis felices & proſperos exitus concedat. *Amen.*

Buſhopthorpiæ, 13. *Febr.* 1583.

Tuus in Chriſto Frater,

E. Ebor.

To the Right Reverend in Chriſt,
my very good Lord, the Biſhop
of Cheſter.

NUMB. XXX.

The Lord's of the Council to the Earl of Darby *and Biſhop of* Cheſter*: Concerning the Weekly Collections to be made in his Dioces: for maintenance of Popiſh Recuſants in Priſon.*

After our hearty Commendation to your good Lordſhips.

WHEREAS, by Direction from us heretofore by Sundry Letters written unto you, you have proceded to the levying of a certain Contribution by 8 d. by the Week upon every Pariſh within the Dioceſs of *Cheſter*; Levyable by the Statute of the XIVth Year of her Majeſty's Reign, for the feeding and Maintenance of Priſoners, committed to the Common Goals of the Counties within that Dioceſs: which Contribution not having been, ſithence the ſtabliſhing of that Statute, collected, and (as we have been informed) we did conceive, that the ſame might have been gathered, and employed in the Maintenance of ſuch Priſoners, as being Perſons dangerous to the State, and committed to ſafe Cuſtody; to the End they ſhould not pervert her Majeſty's Subjects with *Popery* and Diſobedience: but that certain

of the Juſtices of the Peace of the Counties of *Lancaſter* and *Cheſter*, have been here with us, and declared unto us, that the Inhabitants of either County do murmur and find themſelves grieved with the Payment of that Contribution, as well for that the ſame is conceived, not to be agreeable with the Meaning of the Statute, as that it is not indifferently laid among them in reſpect of the Pariſhes, being of unequal Numbers of Houſeholders; ſome containing many, and ſome but few: and yet the Tax equal, both to the great and to the leſs.

Upon Conſideration wherof, we think it not convenient to lay any Charges upon her Majeſty's Subjects more than the Law may Warrant, or the Neceſſity of her Majeſty's Service, with regard to her Prerogative, may be allowed. So in caſe of ſuch Neceſſity as this is, the ſame tending to the Benefit of her Majeſty and her Eſtate; we did little expect any ſuch Diſliking of the Inhabitants of the ſaid Counties, as by ſome of the Juſtices hath been declared unto us. And ſo much the leſs, becauſe we never underſtood thereof from your Lordſhips, and the greateſt Number of the beſt affected of the Juſtices of thoſe Counties. Who, as we are informed, did joyne with your Lordſhips in the aceſſing of the ſaid Collections. Of whom many have lately written unto us for the Continuance therof; ſhewing the Benefit already grown thereby. Conſidering alſo, that by yielding thereunto, the whole Dioceſe was to have been eaſed of the Number of Rogues, Vagabonds, and maſterleſs Perſons, wandring and peſtring the ſame. Who, by the erecting certain Houſes of Correction, were to have been ſet on Work and employed in honeſt and commendable Arts and Exerciſes.

And albeit upon this Information upon the pretended Grievance of her Majeſty's Subjects, Wee do think it convenient to have the ſaid Collection of 8 d. by the Week to be ſtayed; yet before we would give any Direction therunto, not knowing what your Lordſhips and the reſt, by whom the ſame hath chiefly been dealt in by our Directions, can ſay to the Information in that behalf delivered unto us; we have thought good, Firſt to acquaint you therewith, that we might receive your Anſwer, Knowledg and Opinion therof. Which we pray you to Certify with as convenient Speed, as you may. And ſo we bid your good Lordſhips right hartily Farewel. From the Court at *Greenwich*, the 6 of *July*, 1583.

Signed *Tho. Bromeley*, Canc. *W. Burghley*, *A. Warwike*, *Rob. Leyceſter*, and divers more.

[NUMB. XXX.]

The Biſhop of Winton *to the Lord Treaſurer. Clearing himſelf againſt Sir* Richard Norton, *his Officer, that had accuſed him, that he was covetous.*

MY Credit Right Honourable, hath ever been more dear unto me, than either Living, or other worldly Benefit; eſpecially with them that I know to be Honourable and Wiſe. Wherefore I deſire your Lordſhips favourable Interpretation, if at this Time I ſhew my ſelf ſomewhat more jealous than needeth in this reſpect.

Sir *Richard Norton*, my Officer, hath threatned, that he would complain of me unto your Honour; and it is given forth in the Country, that he hath ſo don. I know your Honour always keepeth one Ear for the Defendant. My onely Deſire is, if any ſuch Information be made, that it may pleaſe you to be ſo good to let me underſtand the Particulars, and I doubt not, but I ſhall

Anſwer them with good Credit. Becauſe I will not ſuffer Sir *Richard* to overrule me in mine own, and to make a Benefit with my great Charges, he ſpreadeth in all Places of the Country, that I am hard and covetous, and maketh many to conceive that Opinion of me, to my great Diſcredit. If I were as far from all other Faults, as I thank God I am from that, I ſhould be far a better Man, than I am.

I never yet was Whorder of Money, or Purchaſer of Lands; nor ever mean to be. My only Deſire is, moderately, without Waſte, ſo to maintain *Cautè & prudenter.* the Countenance of my Place, as I may not run in Debt in mine Old Age. I thank God, I am out of Debt, and ſo I mean to keep me. But that I have ſome Cauſes extraordinarily to make ſomewhat of that which is mine own, your Honour may in part gather from the Scedule here encloſed. Where it is evident, how ſmall a Portion of the Revenue of the Biſhoprick remaineth to me, toward all Charges.

If any Siniſter Information hath been made, this Bearer is ſo well acquainted with my State, as I doubt not, but he will reaſonably ſatiſfy your Honour. Sir *Richard Norton* is nigh [a neer man] himſelf, and of a great Stomac, and uſeth broad Speech, thinking belike to make me afraid; as he doth ſome others. But I cannot be feared of him, ſo long as my Conſcience doth not accuſe me of any Offenſive Matter don, either againſt Law, Honeſty or Conſcience. But I ceaſe to trouble your Honour; Deſiring Almighty God to preſerve the ſame to his Glory. This 3d of *July*, 1587.

Your Honour in Chriſt to Command,

THOMAS WINTON.

The Scedule was as followes.

The whole Charge and Value of the Biſhoprick of *Wincheſter*,	3114	—	5 *ob.q.*
Ordinary Reprizes and Allowances deducted,	3389	—	11 *ob.q.*
Remain of Rent of Aſſize of the ſame Biſhoprick,	2773	10	6 *ob. q.*
Paid to her Majeſty for *Taunton*,	400 £.		
My Lord of *Leiceſters* Fee,	100 £.		
The principal Officers of the ſaid Biſhoprick yearly,	99	7	6
Paid yearly in Annuities, granted by Biſhop *Gardiner*, and Biſhop *White*: Wherin Sir *Fr. Walſinghams* Fee is contained.	218	6	8
The Firſt Fruits after 3 Years,	837 £.		
The Tenths.	279	6	6 *ob.*
The Subſidies,	250 £.		
A yearly Almes to the Poor of *Magdalens* by *Wincheſtre*,	25	19	4
The Expence of the *Audit*.	26	13	4
For ingroſſing the Great Pipe, and ſome other things at the ſame time.	7	1	4
The Benevolence lately granted,	133	6	8
Sum Total	2377	1	4 *ob.*
Sic remanet clarè of Rent of Aſſize.	398	9	2 *q.*

NUMB.

NUMB. XXXI.

The Biſhop of Meath *in* Ireland *to the Lord Treaſurer: For the erecting of a Free Grammar School.*

MSS. Burghlian.

MAY it pleaſe your Honour to give me Leave, to remember your Lordſhip, that at my laſt being in *London*, in two ſeveral Sermons at Court, I moved her Majeſty to begin the Foundation of an Univerſity in this barbarous and unhappy Land. With what Joy and general Liking of the Matter, that cauſe was heard, both of her Highneſs and You, the Lords of the Council and Court, and in what good and great Forwardneſs it was to be performed, your Lordſhip I know can beſt remember, being chief Patron and beſt Furtherer therof. Inſomuch as your Lordſhip (upon ſome Speeches had with me) did make Choice of Mr. *Elmer* (now Biſhop of *London*) to be the fitteſt Man for to be, as it were, *Provoſt* or chief Overſeer of the whole Work and Cauſe.

But alas! my Lord, who would have thought, that a Matter ſo grateful to her Majeſty and you all; ſo requiſite and neceſſary to Gods Glory, and comfortable to his Church; and ſo highly advancing Her and Your Everlaſting Fame and Praiſe, ſhould ſo ſuddenly be daſhed: and not only daſhed for a time, but alſo as it were buried in everlaſting Oblivions. But ſuch is the malice of that common Enemy of man againſt this miſerable and woeful Country; and ſo great is the heavy and juſt Diſpleaſure of God againſt us, as that which is beſt meant for us commonly taketh leaſt Effect: What good would have come to this ruinous State by Performance of that Motion, your Honour, as chief Patron and Favourer of Learning, can beſt judge. And what Tumult and Rebellion, what Calamity and Miſery hath happened here ſince, and with how much Bloud of her Subjects, and Charge of her Treaſure, things have been pacified, your Honour, a chief Pillar of both States, needs not to be informed by one that have had more Leiſure to bewail it, than any wiſe Foreſight to prevent it. This I hope I may, with your Lordſhips Leave and Liking, ſafely and truly advouch, that if that good Work had gon forward, the Living therunto appointed had been better beſtowed then ſince it hath been: Leſs Tumult had happened to the State, and many a young Gentleman had there been taught to know his Duty to God, Prince and Country, that now, for lack of good bringing up, remaineth void and barbarous.

And therfore again, my good Lord, I have undertaken a Suit to that End. And tho' the Succeſs of my firſt Motion diſcourageth me to ſue again for the Beginning and Foundation of an Univerſity, yet I have preſumed to become humble Petitioner to her Grace for a private Grammar School. Wee have had an Act of Parliament paſſed for Erection of Grammar Schools: but ſo ſmall hath it prevailed, as at this day within the whole *Engliſh* Pale, there is not ſo much as one *Free School* where a Child may learn the Principles of Grammar. Yet have the Deputy and Council here from Time to Time, both by Exhortation and Commandment, don their beſt for Execution of that Statute. Yet ſuch is the Miſery of our State, that no Good can be don: And therefore if now, after ſo many and long Troubles, it would pleaſe her Highneſs to grant me Authority and ſome help, to build a School in her own Name and Foundation, in the poor Town where I was born, lying in the very midſt of the greateſt Part of our beſt and moſt civil Gentlemen of the Pale, I do not doubt, but erelong her Majeſty and you, the Lords of her Honourable Council, ſhall perceive it to be worthy to be accounted among the beſt and moſt gracious Grants that ever her Grace gave to this woeful People, both for the Good of the Church and Commodity of the Country. For I doubt not, but her Majeſty beginning ſo graciouſly, the Nobility and Gentlemen of our Country will to their Power go forward, for Maintenance and Encreaſe of Learning.

And in this Suite, My good Lord, which, God is my Witneſs, I undertake rather for my Countries Relief, than my own private Gain, I am enforced of very need to crave Help and Ability of her Majeſty. For, I hope, all thoſe which have ſerved her Highneſs, both in higheſt and meaner Calling, will bear me Witneſs, that that Portion of Living her Grace beſtowed upon me, hath been wholly ſpent both in Entertainment of the State, and in the Relief of my poor Neighbours. And am therefore moſt humbly to crave, your Honours good Help and Furtherance to her Majeſty for ſomewhat wherewith to enable me to perform this good and godly Work. For of my ſelf, God he knoweth, I am not able. What it is I ſeek for, and in what ſort, the Bearer hereof ſhall give your Lordſhip to underſtand.

It is the Firſt Suit that ever I had to her Grace ſince my Coming hither; and I hope not the worſt that came to Her out of our Country. I humbly beſeech your Honour, even in the Behalf of our poor Church and Common Wealth, to grant your helping Hand. I am not able any way to deſerve to be ſo bold with your Lordſhip. Only my Prayer ſhall be continually to God for Encreaſe of Honour and Happineſs to you and yours. And I hope the Goodneſs of my Cauſe, and the unfeigned Care you cary to Learning, and Maintenance therof, ſhall eaſily procure Pardon for me. And ſo, with Conſideration of my Duty, I take Leave. *Dublyn*, the XV. of *October*, 1583.

Your Lordſhips ever in his Prayer to God,

H. Miden.

NUMB. XXXII.

The Warden, Fellows and Scholars of Winchester *College, to the Queen: Upon her Requeſt of a Leaſe to be granted her by them.*

Paper Houſe Eccleſiaſtical.

IT May pleaſe your moſt excellent Majeſty, Anſwering the Requeſt your Majeſtys Letter, and our willing and moſt dutiful Diſpoſition, and Promiſe to accompliſh the ſame, Wee, the Warden, Fellows and Scholars, Clerks, of this College, have ſealed and confirmed the Leaſe unto your Highneſs for Fourty Years, of the Parſonage and Rectory of *Downton* in the County of *Wiltes*; the rather, our Duties with all Humility conſidered, for that we are given to underſtand, that the ſaid Leaſe is by your Majeſty intended to be conferred upon Mr. *Wilkes*, one of the Clarkes of your Majeſties moſt Honorable Privy Council; in Conſideration of his Service don unto your Majeſty and the Realme: which with our ſaid Duty we have herein eſpecially conſidered. And do moſt humbly deſire and beſeech your moſt Excellent Majeſty, that this our Grant may for the Time to come, by your Majeſties Princely Affection towards the Maintenance of Learning, be a ſufficient Occaſion to make Stay of the like Suits to be hereafter tendred by any Perſon unto your Highneſs, as our Hope conceived, and your Majeſtys Promiſe therunto moſt graciouſly yielded, may by your Highneſs Special Letters be effectually ſignified, to remain with us, as a particular Act of your Majeſtys moſt gracious good Meaning; to diſcharge us of the Hazzard of the Decay of our Maintenance, the Hurting of ſo worthy a Foundation, and the Burthen of our Conſciences; being ſworn to the Preſervation thereof, as far forth as the Authority of our Founder might extend, and our Oaths as dutifull dutiful Subjects may be meaſured, both your Majeſty and the Laws of your Realm in that Behalf provided.

And therefore with the Performance of our Duties and Promiſe as is before mentioned, we do eſtſoons moſt humbly, and with al dutiful Submiſſion, very earneſtly deſire your moſt Excellent Majeſty to have a gracious Conſideration of our preſent Eſtate; and as a true Mother of all vertuous and good Learning, to yield unto us a ſpeedy Defence againſt all other Attempts, as may be intended to the opening of ſo large a Gap, as by this our extraordinary Grant unto your Majeſty, may hereafter by your Authority be entred into. Wherein hoping to find your Majeſty, our Gracious good Lady, we beſeech Almighty God to preſerve you in Health and Happineſs long to reign over us, to the Overthrow of your Enemies, and the Comfort of us all, your dutifull Subjects. From your College neer *Wincheſter*, 13 of *March*.

Your Majeſty's moſt humble
and Obedient Subjects:
The Warden, Fellows and
Scholars, Clerks, of St.
Mary *College of* Wincheſter.

NUMB. XXXIII.

Dr. Tobie Matthew, *Dean of* Durham, *to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley. *Thanks for his Counſil, upon his going to* Durham. *The Condition of the Deanry.*

Epiſt. Epiſcop.

RIGHT Honourable, and my ſingular good Lord. As I cannot but acknowledge my ſelf moſt bounden to your Lordſhip for my Placing here, and for that ſundry Letters your Honour wrote thither in my Behalf, ſo do I take your late Honorable Letter I received by Mr. *Tonſtal*, for one of the greateſt Arguments of your ſpecial Favour towards me, agreable to that grave and godly Counſil it pleaſed your Lordſhip to give me at my Departure from the Court. Al which I truſt, the Grace of God will as well enable me to follow to the Diſcharge of my Calling, as it hath perſuaded me to like therof, to the Contentation of my Mind. Wherin if any Defect ſhall at any Time appear, ſpecially coming to your Lordſhips Ears, I ſhall moſt humbly beſeech your Lordſhip to make me know it: and do promiſe, and deſire to be reformed by your Authority, and directed by your Wiſdom therin, and in all things elſe, even as by the *Socrates*, or *Solomon* of our Age.

Concerning *Pittington*, mentioned in your Lordſhips ſaid Letter, I did, according to your Lordſhips Appointment, conferr with Mr. *Tonſtal*, as by our Letter joyntly written by him and me unto your Lordſhip, it may appear more particularly. I was moſt glad at the firſt, that any Occaſion was offered me, to ſhew the Readineſs of my Service to your Honour: which I would have made as willingly, as ever I did otherwiſe in my Life. And ſo I preſume of my Brethren of the Chapitre, who are all, tho not ſo deeply as I, much bounden to your Lordſhip: But when I perceived, both by View of the Regiſter, and by Speech with Mr. *Anderſon* of *Newcaſtle*, that there is a Leaſe or two of the ſaid *Pittington* for many Years enduring; I thought it not meet to make your Lordſhips Motion a Chapitre Matter, until Mr. *Tonſtal* and I had certified the State therof; and received ſome further Notice of your Lordſhips Pleſure.

For mine own part, bethinking my ſelf very ſeriouſly of the Cauſe, I mervail they would give your Lordſhip the Note of that Mannour; which altho' it be ſimply the beſt thing belonging to this Church, and lying within two Miles therof; yet they could not but know it is in Leaſe, ſingle or double: and at what Time they made in Dean *Whittington* his Days, a Lottery, as they termed it, of threeſcore Leaſes at the leaſt: And again, in Dean *Wilſons* Time demiſed threeſcore and twelve Leaſes or thereabouts, within the Space of one Month, or not much more: ſome preſently to commence, and ſome in Reverſion. It is nothing probable, under your Lordſhips reformation, they ſhould ſo careleſly have over paſt *Pittington*, but that they believed the Eſtate therof in Poſſeſſion to be good enough. Eſpecially being by the Nowe Surveyor ſo diverſely, conveyed over by ſundry Aſſignments, as I hear it is. Howbeit I have purpoſed for the better Inſight into the Caſe, before your Lordſhip ſhall be ſeen therin, to hold a Court of Survey there, before my Return to the next Term. That I may the more likely declare, how it ſtands; and take your Lordſhips beſt Directions, how to procede.

And thus till then and ever, I humbly betake your Honour to the Grace of Almighty God, From *Dureſm.* the 28 *Sept.* 1583.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble,

TOBIE MATTHEW.

NUMB. XXXVI.

George Withers *of Danbury in* Eſſex *to the Lord* Burghley: *Concerning Church Controverſies; And Subſcription to the Book of Common Prayer.*

MSS. Eccleſiaſt.

MY Duty unto your Honour in moſt humble maner premiſed, with moſt earneſt Prayer to God for your Health, with Encreaſe of Heavenly Wiſdom, and all other Gods moſt excellent Gifts: wherewith he hath moſt plentifully endued your Lordſhip for the Benefit of his Church, and his Common Wealth: You may juſtly mervail, what Toy hath taken me in the Head, to trouble you that are ſo greatly preſt with Weight and Multitude of the common Affairs, with theſe alſo our Eccleſiaſtical Contentions. But the general Care of the Church, which you have evidently declared unto the whole World, together with your ſpecial Good Will towards my ſelf, which by good Experience I have found, have partly encouraged me, and chiefly the Importunity of ſome of my Friends, ſuffering no Repulſe, nor taking any Nay, hath enforced me thus to paſs my Bounds, and to be too bold with your Lordſhip, in writing theſe few Lines, Concerning our Church Controverſies.

The Devil, whenſoever God bridleth his open Rage in giving ſome Peace and Reſt unto his Church, always hath politickly deviſed to ſet Debate, Strife and Diſſenſions in the Boſome and Bowels of it. Which thing as it cannot be unknown to the Learned, ſo I much mervail, that ſo few take heed of it; and that generally inſtead of ſeeking the Peace of the Church, φιλονεικία is planted and rooted almoſt in every Breaſt. I have long time wiſhed the Church rid of ſome things, in the having whereof I ſee no Profit. But ſeing God hath not granted that Deſire, I have with all my Heart wiſhed, that in theſe outward things (Contention layd apart) men would conform themſelves to her Majeſtys Law and Pleaſure. And herein there have been Faults on all Sides. For as in the one there hath been an over-earneſt ſtanding in Trifles; ſo in the other too ſevere and ſharp Puniſhment of the ſame. For wheras they that omitted the chief Duties of good Miniſters laid upon them, both by Law of God and Man, eſcaped freely unpuniſhed, the only ſticking at Trifles is ſeverely puniſhed; as tho' that only and alone were Diſobedience. Secondly, the manner of the Puniſhment is ſuch, as that the innocent People not offending, are rather puniſhed, than the Perſon faulty. For he, retaining his Charge, is ſuſpended from executing his Office. Which is all one, as if a Man being angry with his Shepheard, forbids him to deal with his Sheep, and appoints none other: And ſo they ſterve in the Fold, afore they be let forth to paſture.

The Care of your Honour to have inſufficient Miniſters removed is commendable and godly. And herein I wiſh that Reſpect in your Articles had been as particularly had to the Book of *Conſecration* of Miniſters, as to the Statute of 13 *Reginæ*. For by that Book it will appear that all unpreaching Miniſters are *inſufficient* Miniſters. And that this Fault hath been in the Makers of them, and not in the Law. But how ſhall your Honours be certified of them? Sure, it is hard for them that made them to accuſe themſelves.

But now to the chief Occaſion of this my Letter; which is the preſent *Subſcription* to the Book of Common Prayer, now urged; I do think reverendly of the Book, and of the Authors therof: and yet notwithſtanding I think with *Auguſtine*, that it is a Reverence due only and alone to the Canonical Books of Scripture, to think, that the Authors of them in writing of them, erred in nothing; and to none other Books of Men, of what Learning or Holineſs ſoever. The things in that Book which I wiſh to be amended be of two Sorts. The Firſt ſuch as cannot be defended. The Second be ſuch as tho' with favourable Expoſition they may ſtand and remain, yet they give the Adverſary ſhrewd Advantage, as well to confirm in Popery them whom they have already won; as alſo to allure and intice others therunto. Beſides; ſome other Inconveniences of the firſt Sort are *Private Baptiſm*; and the laſt part of the Rules for the Communion of the Sick. For where there are none Preſent, but Women, it is all one to ſay, a Woman ſhall Baptize, as one of them that are preſent ſhall Baptize. And the Imagination that a Miniſter may be ſent for, cannot ſtand with the Words of the Book. For what time can they have to ſend for any, which have not Leiſure to ſay the Lords Prayer, before they baptize? Beſides, that Miniſter, which (if any be) is moſt likely to be ſent for, muſt by the Book be ignorant of the whole Action, til the Child be brought to Church. Further, how the Neceſſity to baptize at home can ſtand with the Doctrin of our Church publickly by Law eſtabliſhed, I ſee not.

The other, that the Miniſter may with the Sick Man receive alone, is contrary to the nature of the Communion; contrary to the Doctrin eſtabliſhed; and is Coſin German to the *Private Maſs*. And therefore is by the Defence therof, as an old Corruption, alledged by Mr. *Harding*, and his Fellows, as well generally againſt our Doctrin, as eſpecially againſt Mr *Juels Chalenge*. The which things with ſome others, in the Beginning of her Majeſty's Reign, ſome of the Biſhops then being, were charged with by the Learned of Foreign Churches. Who in this wiſe excuſed themſelves, as I my ſelf ſaw in their Letters of Anſwer, which by Mr. *Bullinger*, and *Gualter* were ſhewed me at *Zuric Anno* 1567. Namely, that they nor none of them were of the Parliament Houſe, at the paſſing of the Book: and that therefore they had no Voice in making of the Law: But after it was paſt, they being choſen to be Biſhops, muſt either content themſelves to take their Places as things were, or elſe leave them to Papiſts, or to them which are not much better, that is, to *Lutherans*. But in the mean ſpace they both promiſed, not to urge their Brethren to thoſe Doctrines; and alſo when Opportunity ſhould ſerve, to ſeek Reformation of them.

The Second ſort of Things, being taken out of the *Portuiſe*, and tranſlated into the Book of Common Prayer, the Papiſts urge in that Senſe in the which they were uſed by themſelves, from whom they were taken. And theſe Expoſitions which we now give, they ſay, they are violent, and wreſted from the true, native, natural and ordinary ſenſe. Wherby they make the Ignorant believe, that the Book favoureth divers of their Errors. Which Weapon I wiſh were pulled out of their Hands.

Further, it is an inconvenience that the Tranſlation of the Scripture, in the firſt Great Bible is by the Biſhops corrected, and yet remaineth in the Book [of Common Prayer] uncorrected. Likewiſe, that the Interrogatories in Baptiſm in the Primitive Church directed to men, are now directed to Infants. Laſtly, where Unity is to be Sought, the urging of this Subſcription, I fear, will make our Diviſion greater. For I think, that many who both in their Miniſtry obediently uſe the Book, and in other Things ſhew their Conformity to the Laws preſent, will hardly yield to Subſcribe in that Form which is ſet down.

Thus beſeeching your Lordſhip to pardon my rude Boldneſs, I commit you to the Protection of Almighty God.

At *Danbury*, the 19 of *February*, *Anno*. 1583.

Your Lordſhip always in Chriſt to Command,

GEORGE WITHER.

NUMB. XXXV.

A private Letter of one Touker *to the Lord Treaſurer, Lord* Burghley; *Informing him of* Engliſh *Men in* Rome: *And of ſome Matters relating to them.*

MSS. Burghlian.

RIGHT Honourable, ſince my laſt being with your Honour I have been three times at the *Marſhalſai's*. Where I find one *Tither*, who was acquainted with me in *Rome*. This *Tither* at my Requeſt, profered *Chriſtophur Taters* Wife to write unto the Rector of the *Engliſh* Seminary in *Rome* for the Delivery of her Husband out of the Gallies: who was condemned with *Peter Backer*. He ſaid alſo, with ſome Travail ſhe might have the Queen of *Scots* Letter to the Pope, or *Fecknams* to the Cardinal. He profered me to convey my Letters at any Time, to *Nicholas Fitz Harbord* in *Rome*: I think the Conveyer of theſe Letters would be known with ſome diligence. *Tither* hath written two times ſince his Impriſonment; but not anſwered. He warned me to beware of one *Robert Woodward:* who ſerved ſometime D. *Wenden* in *Rome*. They have great Intelligence, and fear hlm much.

In *April* laſt, there came from *Rome* to *Naples* an *Iriſh* Man, whom the Pope created Biſhop of *Roſs* in *Ireland*; and gave him Authority to make Prieſts. By which Authority he gave Orders to as many as came; and got mich Money: The Archbiſhop of *Naples* forbad him. But the *Nuntio* maintained his Doings: This Biſhop ſtayed in *Naples* only for Paſſage into *Spain*: and ſo directly for *Ireland*. He caried with him great Store of Pardons and *Agnos Deis* to the Popes Friends in *Ireland*. He hath to his Servant one *Thomas Galtrope*, a Merchants Son of *Dewlin*. This *Galtrope* pretendeth to leave the Biſhops Service, and Return to his Father at their coming home.

Alſo there dyed one *John Davies* in *Rome*: Who ſerved the Lord *William Howard*, as he ſaid. This *Davies* ſaid in *Rome*, That happy ſhall they be one Day that have Languages. For when God taketh our Prince from us, there will be mich Trouble in *England*, and great revenging of old Quarels. But he ſaid, if the Earl could get *Norwich* on his Head, they did not care; with many like Words.

Upon Sunday next I go towards *Exeter*, and return by the End of *Auguſt*. If it be your Honours Pleaſure, that I ſhall come to you before I depart, Mr. *Cope* may let me know of it.

FRANCIS TOUKER.

[NUMB. XXXV.]

The Vicechancellor and Head of the Univerſity of Cambridge *to their High Chancellor: Concerning their Printing-Preſs: hindred by the* Stationers *of* London.

Our moſt humble Duties to your Honour remembred.

MSS. Burghlian.

WHERAS we underſtand by your Honours Letters, that certain of the Company of the *Stationers* in *London*, have ſought to hinder the erecting of a Print within this Univerſity of *Cambridg*, and to impugne that antient Privilege, granted and confirmed by divers Princes for that Purpoſe; to the great Benefit of the Univerſity and augmentation of Learning; Theſe are in moſt humble manner to deſire your Honour, not ſo much in reſpect of Mr. *Thomas* [their Printer] who hath already received great Injury and Dammage at their Hands; as in behalf of the Univerſity: which findeth it ſelf very much aggrieved with the wrongful detaining of thoſe Goods, wherewithal, as we are perſuaded in right and Equity they ought not to meddle, to continue our Honorable Patron, and to direct your favourable Warrants to the Warden of the *Stationers*, that he may have his Preſs delivered with Speed; leſt that by their means, as he hath been diſappointed of Mr. *Whitakers* Book, ſo by their Delays he be prevented of other Books made within the Univerſity, and now ready for the Preſs.

As for the Doubts which they cauſed, rather in reſpect of their private Gain and Commodity, and to bring the Univerſities more antient Privileges in this behalf than theirs, under their Juriſdiction at *London*, than for any other good Conſideration, the deciding or Peril wherof alſo pertaineth not to them; we dare undertake in the behalf of Mr. *Thomas*, whom we know to be a very godly and honeſt Man, [It was in reſpect of *Schiſmatical* Books, in danger to be here Printed] that the preſs ſhall not be abuſed, either in publiſhing things prohibited, or otherwiſe inconvenient for the Church and State of this Realm. And this we promiſe the rather, for that his *Grace*, [*Viz.* His Grant to Print] (wherof we have ſent a Copy to your Honour by himſelf) was granted unto him upon Condition, that he ſhould ſtand bound from time to time, to ſuch Articles as your Honour, and the greateſt part of the Heads of Colleges ſhould ty him unto.

And for the Conference, wherunto your Honour moveth us, if it ſhall be your Honours pleaſure, wee, as deſirous of Peace and Concord, (the Premiſſes conſidered) ſhall be ready to ſhew our Willingneſs therunto; if it ſhall pleaſe the Company of *Stationers* in *London*, to ſend hither ſome certain Men from them with ſufficient Authority for that Purpoſe. Thus moſt humbly deſiring,

ſiring, that the Preſs may no longer be ſtayed, and hoping that your Honour will further our Deſire herein, we do in our daily Prayer commend your Lordſhip to the Bleſſed Tuition of the Almighty.

From *Cambridge*, this *14th* of *June*,

Your Lordſhips moſt bound,

JOHN BELL. Vicechancellor.

Robert Norgate, *Andrew Perne*, *Thomas Legg*.
Edmund Hownds, *William Fulke*, *Edmund Barwel*.
Thomas Nevyle, *John Still*,

NUMB. XXXVI.

An Abſtract taken by the Lord Treaſurer Burghley *out of the* Inſtructions, *given to* Monſieur De Gryces *and* Ortel, *Agents from* Holland *to the Queen: To take on her their Protection.* In Four Papers.

MSS. Burgh. THE Firſt Paper contained theſe Heads. *Viz.* The Anſwer of the States to her Majeſtys Propoſitions. That Count *Maurice* is chief of the Affaires, with a Council adjoyned. That her Majeſty would Send Aid Speedily. The States mind to yield 330,000 Florens Monthly.

Whereof	*Brabant*.	60000	Monthly.
	Holland, *Zealand*, *Utretcht*.	200000	
	Frize.	36000	
	Gueldres, *Overiſſel*.	30000	

The Enemies Forces

Beſides the Garriſon, are in three Bands.
In *Gueldres* and *Zutphen* 3000 Footmen, 23 Com. of Horſe.
About *Antwerp* 5000 Foot and Horſe.
About *Gaunt* 3000.
At the Siege of *Dermont* 5000.

The States Forces

In the Field about *Zutphen* 3000 Foot. 25 Com. of Horſe.
They look for Forces out of *Almain* 3000 Foot. 300 Horſe.
Their Power by Sea certifyed by Mr. *Edward Dyer*.

The Second Paper.

Anſwer of the *Hollanders*; a Part to *Ortelius*. They require her Majeſty to receive in general all the *Provinces United*, into her Protection: or particularly *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Freezland*, and *Utrecht*: and that in general. That the *French* King laboured to be accepted, as their Lord in general. Therefore to prevent this, that the Queens Majeſty will ſend 3 or 4000 under a good Conduct.

The Third Paper

For *Zealand*. The Hearts of the People will be the more inclinable to her Majeſty; if her Majeſty will preſently aſſiſt them with 4000 Footmen, and Munitions of War.

The Fourth Paper.

Out of private Inſtructions by *Ortel*. To ſet the Elector *Truwis* in his Seat of *Colen*. To ſend Forces ſpeedily: For the Country will yield to them that will ſend Forces firſt. To joyn with the *French* King with like Conditions, as *Monſieur* [the Kings Brother] had by the Treaty of *Bourdeaulx*: Or elſe to yield 20 or 30000 £. Monthly to the Contribution of *Holland*, *Zealand*, &c. Without intermeddling with the *French*.

The Demand of three Townes by her Majeſty ſhall not be hard to grant hereafter. But without the Conſent of the Common, the ſame cannot be don; for that Miſtruſt is had of the *Engliſh*, that rendred *Aloſt* * to the Enemy. But her Majeſty may have Aſſurance, in taking the Oaths of the Magiſtrates and Garriſons. Which may be don in beſtowing upon the Collonells 2 or 3000. --- at the firſt Pay, beſides their Ordinary.

* Vid. *Camd. Elizab. Anno.* 1383

To have Conſideration of the Houſe of the late Prince of *Orange*.

To grant Licence for 3 or 4000 Tun of Munition of Iron.

NUMB. XXXVII.

Queen Elizabeth *to the* Duke *of* Monpenſier: *Upon the Murther of the Prince of* Orange. *For the bringing up of his Daughters.*

MSS Princip. pen. me.

MOMSIEUR, Mon Couſin. Comme le feu Prince *D'Orange*, prevoyant le danger imminent, auquel il eſtoit tousjours ſubject par le Secretes menees & embuſches que luy tendoyent ſes Enemys, nous euſt de ſon vivant bien inſtanment prié d'avoir ſes filles pour recommendees, & de les prendre en mon Protection, ſil luy advenoit de les laiſſer ſans pere: ſe repoſant (comme a bon droit il pouvoit faire) ſur la Faveur & Affection, que luy avons du tout temps portee. Nous avons adviſe apres ceſt infortune Accident de la mort dudit Prince de ...... *And then follows the Queens Appointment of the Princes Daughters to divers Ladies of great Proteſtant Families.*

Dont vous avons bien voulu particulierement advertie pour L'Intereſt qu'avez en elles par le Droit de Nature. Eſperant que ne trouverez mauvaiſe la Diſpoſition qu'en avons faicte; ains pluſtoſt quaures pour agreable le Soing quavons délles. En quoy vous de nous ſeconder, & y aporter auſſi de voſtre Part tout ladvancement que pourrez, comme leur plus proche Parent du coſté maternel: Prenant & acceptant la Tutele de vos dites Niepces; & vous rendant Protecteur & Conſervateur de ce qu'elles ont de bien en *France*: a fin qu'elles en puiſſent eſtre ſubvenues pour leur entrenement. Et que a ceſte fin il vous plaiſe requerir le Roy de ſon Commandement & Autorité pour leur faire ſavé, ſil en ſera de beſoing, &c. Eſcript a noſtre Maiſon de *Hampton Court*, le 16 *Oct*. 1584. Voſtre tres affectonée bonne Couſine, & tres aſſurée amye a jamais.

ELIZABETH.

NUMB. XXXVIII.

Petitions digeſted into 34 Articles, to be humbly offered unto the Queen and Parlament: For a learned Miniſtery to preach the Goſpel, and to be Reſidents in every Pariſh: And for further Regulation of the Biſhops, Officers, and Governors of the Church.

MSS. Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

Certain humble Petitions, which are in moſt humble manner to be preſented to the godly Conſideration of our Sovereign Lady Queen *Elizabeth*, &c. for the Help of the poor untaught People of this Realm: and for the reforming of ſome other Diſorders, which are in it.

I. That there may a View be taken of all the Market Townes, and other Townes of moſt Inhabitants within the Realm of *England*; to ſee what hable preaching Paſtor is now reſident among them, and in every of them. And alſo to know, what Sufficiency of Living there is now provided in them, and in every of them, for the Maintenance of ſuch a learned, godly, preaching Paſtor, to be reſident among them. And what Want there is in every of them, as well of ſuch a Paſtor, as alſo of a ſufficient Suſtentation or Living of a meet Paſtor. Thus ſhall the Truth of our former Complaint appear concerning the Want of *Teaching*. Which we *Engliſh* Subjects of this Land do not endure.

II. That there be alſo a Conſideration had of other little Townes and Pariſhes; that they may by ſome Union of two or three Pariſhes together, be made ſufficient Congregations; and have a competent Living appointed in them for a Preaching Paſtor to be reſident on them, being ſo united.

III. That if in this View there be found a Want of hable Perſons fit for to ſupply the Office of Preaching Paſtors in every Congregation, this Want be helped by ſome of theſe Ways. Firſt, It is known there are at this Time in this Church of *England* ſome godly, approved and allowed Preachers; which are not tyed to any ſpecial Charge of any particular Congregation; if to every one of theſe Preachers, a ſeveral Pariſh, which is now unprovided of a Paſtor, were aſſigned: and each one of them tyed unto a ſpecial Congregation, ſome Churches would be well provided of meet and ſufficient Perſons, which are now unprovided. Then, if both the Univerſities may be diligently ſearched; and ſuch Men be taken out of them, as are to be found in the Colleges, or ſtudying in the ſaid Univerſities out of the Colleges; ſuch Men as are endued with Gifts meet for a Preaching Paſtor; and be orderly called, and placed, each of them in a ſeveral Charge; they will yield ſome Help to fulfil this Want.

Article 31.

Grammar Schools.

There are alſo other Men to be found, both in the Court, and in the Services of ſome Noblemen, or in the Innes of the Court, or ſome godly Gentlemen dwelling in Country, or elſewhere, Men which are godly, learned, and apt to ſerve the Church of Chriſt: Which if they were ſought out, and had every one of them a lawful Calling to the Miniſtry, and a Charge committed to them, in which they may exerciſe their Gifts; there will be found greater Store of meet Men to ſerve the Church of Chriſt in *England*, than is now thought on. To that, if that be liked of, which is hereafter ſet down, concerning the Families of Biſhops; and alſo, if all the Free Grammar Schooles, which have been decayed ſithence the Firſt Year of King *Henry* VIII. may be by his Daughter, our Queen, repaired and reſtored into their old State: Furthermore, if there were good Order taken for the maintaining and promoting of ſuch Scholars in godly Learning, as after this Time ſhall be left remaining, or ſhall come to the Univerſities; (which may be well done by ſome Exhibition to be miniſtred unto them, not only out of the Cathedral

Churches, but alſo by the Biſhops and other Churchmen, which do enjoy Livings Eccleſiaſtical of great yearly Revenues, if they be bound for every one 100 *l.* they may diſpend by the Year, to give yearly 10 *l.* towards the finding of ſome poor and towardly Scholar in the Univerſity; there to be maintained in the Study of Divinity;) there ſhall, God willing, hereafter be found no Want of godly Miniſters, for to exerciſe the Paſtoralty of the Congregations of this Church of *England*. Thus meet Paſtors being had to execute the Paſtoral Office, the Want that ſhall be found of ſufficient Living for their Maintenance, may in this wiſe (if it be ſo thought good to them which are in Authority) be ſupplied.

IV. That it be ordained, That every Dean and Chapter of every Cathedral and Collegiate Church of *England*, which do now pay yearly Wages to Singing Men, Choriſters, and Muſicians in their Church, do ceaſe to pay the ſame in ſuch ſort any longer. And that they be appointed from henceforth to pay the ſame Wages in yearly Penſions to ſuch Paſtors, being reſident on their Benefices, which ſhall be found to want ſufficient Suſtentation of Living, in ſuch Portion of Money yearly, as the Queen by her Commiſſioners, appointed to take Order herein, ſhall limit and aſſign to them. We do humbly deſire, that this little Help to maintain neceſſary Preaching among us, may by Authority be drawn out of all Cathedral Churches which are in *England*. And alſo we pray, that they that are in Authority will, by a godly Viſitation, take Knowledge of the whole State of the ſaid Cathedral Churches. And then we believe there will be found ſome other Helps, which they may miniſter yearly to maintain godly Preaching among us; if the *Quotidians*, Dividents, and ſuch like Commodities, which they now receive among themſelves to maintain their Reſidence, may be employed to maintain true and diligent Preaching, in ſuch Places as ſhall be found to want the ſame. All this is by Authority to be ordered and commanded to be done, any Ordinance heretofore made in the ſaid Cathedral and Collegiate Churches, to the contrary notwithſtanding.

V. If this will not ſuffice for the Proviſion of all the Reſident Preaching Paſtors, which ſhall be found to want a ſufficient Living, then let the Prebends of all the Cathedral and Collegiate Churches, by the Biſhops of the Dioces, or by him or them, in whom the Gift of ſuch Prebends are, be annexed to the ſaid Offices of the Preaching Paſtors, which do remain unprovided of ſufficient Livings. That by this Annexion a further Proviſion for a ſufficient Living may be made for the ſaid Preaching Paſtors. And in this Behalf it would be provided, that thoſe Prebendaries, which have not any Benefices impropriate belonging to their Prebends, either ſhould be compelled to be reſident upon the ſame Benefice, to teach and guide the People in underſtanding there by the Word of God, or ſevering the Benefice from the Corps of the Prebend, the ſame Parſonage *Impropriate* ſhould be united with, and joined unto the Vicarage of the ſame Benefice. So that he, the ſaid Vicar, having the whole Charge of his Flock, may have alſo the whole Living appointed to the Teaching Paſtor.

VI. And if all this will not ſerve for a Sufficiency for all the reſident preaching Paſtors, then let the Biſhops be appointed to pay yearly ſome ſuch Stipends out of their own Lands and Revenues, as ſhall ſuffice to make a full and ſufficient Living to ſuch reſident preaching Paſtors, as ſhall want the ſame within their Dioceſſes.

VII. And if by all theſe Means a full Sufficiency cannot be provided for every reſident preaching Paſtor, to be maintained ſufficiently upon his Charge; then we deſire the Rulers, which are godly wiſe, to take Order, that of the *Impropriations* a full Supply of Living may be made for all ſuch reſident preaching Paſtors as ſhall want. If none of all theſe Ways be ſufficient;

nor the Reſtitution of *Impropriations* to the Paſtors or Vicars, which have the Charge of the Pariſhes, will ſuffice, to make a ſufficiency for the neceſſary ſuſtentation of all preaching, reſident Paſtors; then we do pray the godly Rulers by their Authority, to Tax the People of the Pariſhes, among whom the ſaid Paſtors do labour, in ſuch ſort as to make up that which wanteth for them.

VIII. And for the avoiding of the great Danger which the People of Chriſt do ſuſtain in this Church of *England*, by the *Nonreſidence* of them which are their ordinary Paſtors; we do humbly beſeech, that it may by ſtrait Law be ordained, that none of theſe preaching Paſtors, which are to be furniſhed with a ſufficient Proviſion of Living in any of the Maners or Formes aforeſaid, do abſent themſelves from the Benefices and Flocks, whereof the Charge is committed to them, nor to make any Abode, either at the Cathedral Churches, out of which they do receive the Augmentations of their Livings, either with any of the Biſhops by whom they do receive the Encreaſe of their Livings, as is aforeſaid. Nor that any of them, nor any other Paſtor of a Congregation, do abſent himſelf from his Flock and Charge of his Pariſh, to make his Abode in any College of either of the Univerſities, *Cambridge* or *Oxford*, in any Reſpect; or in any other Places in reſpect of Service, in the Court, or in the Houſe of any Nobleman. But that all and every Paſtor do remain upon his own Charge; doing diligently his Office, in feeding the People committed to his Cuſtody, according to the Word of God.

IX. That every Archbiſhop and Biſhop of this Church of *England* and *Ireland*, if it be found by the Examination, (of which mention is made hereafter) that the Office of the Archbiſhop or Biſhop, as it is now, is both neceſſary and profitable for the Church of Chriſt in *England* and *Ireland*; then that every one of the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops, ſhall within the Space of ſix Weeks, next after his or their *Conſecration* (as it is called) have aſſigned, nominated and appointed unto him (by the ſame Authority, by which he is choſen Archbiſhop or Biſhop,) eight, ten, twelve or more, preaching Paſtors, Doctors and Deacons, ſuch as are Reſident on their own Pariſhes and Charges, within his and their Dioces, together with ſome other grave and godly Men of Worſhip, or Juſtices of Peace within that Shire, in ſuch a certain Nombre, as ſhall be thought good to the Queen and her Council, which may be aſſiſtant to him, the ſaid Archbiſhop and Biſhop, in the Government, of all thoſe Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical, which now the Archbiſhop or Biſhop with his Chancellor or Archdeacon, do uſe to hear and order alone. And that the ſaid Archbiſhop and Biſhop ſhall with them and by their Counſil, Adviſe and Conſent, hear and determine every Cauſe Eccleſiaſtical; which is now uſed to be heard before any Archbiſhop and Biſhop or Ordinary. To the End that he, the ſaid Archbiſhop and Biſhop, and they with him, as his Senate Eccleſiaſtical, may call before them all Controverſies, touching Religion; which ſhall be found to ariſe in the Dioces of the ſaid Archbiſhop and Biſhop, and to decide the ſame by their common Conſent, according to the Word of God.

Article 29.

X. And that it may be lawful for every Paſtor reſident on his Charge; and that all and every ſuch reſident Paſtor, within ſix Weeks next after that he be inducted into his Benefice, ſhall by the Advice and Direction of the Biſhop of the Dioces, and of his Aſſociates preſent to the ſaid Biſhop, and his Aſſociates, 4. 6. or 8. Inhabitants of his Pariſh, ſuch as ſhall be thought by their Age, Wiſdom, Godlineſs and Knowledge, to be meet to be the Aſſociates and *Seniors* to and with the ſaid Paſtor, to govern his ſaid Pariſh with him: To hear and order with him ſuch Quarals Offences and Diſorders in Life and Maners, as ſhould be among the ſame Pariſhioners. And if the Cauſes and Quarels ariſing in his Pariſh be ſuch that the ſame Paſtor and his Aſſociates or *Seniors* cannot Determine the ſame among themſelves in the Pariſh, then ſhall the ſaid Paſtor and his Aſſociates and *Seniors*, bring the ſaid Cauſe before the Biſhop of the Dioces and the Elders, which are to him aſſociate, as is before ſaid; that he and they may hear and determine the ſame.

XI. And wheras now there are in this Realm of *England* ſome Cities, which have many Pariſhes in them; Boroughs, Townes and Towns Corporate, which alſo have many Pariſhes in them; and alſo many great Townes in the Country, which have divers Hamlets and little Villages belonging to them, and depending upon the Charge of the Paſtor of the chief Church which is in the Townes; We do humbly beſeech them which are in Authority, to deviſe, how each of theſe Pariſhes, having in them a Reſident preaching Paſtor, to inſtruct them by Doctrin, may al have a ſufficient *Seignorie*, to joyn with the Paſtor, not in Teaching, but to have a Care with him, that the Doctrin may have the Courſe which it ought to have. To take Care alſo with him, how to remove ſuch Offences, as do riſe among the People againſt the Doctrin. For ſurely each Pariſh and Paſtor have need of ſuch Help as is to be had by a godly *Seignorie*.

XII. That all and every of the ſaid Paſtors be bound to be reſident upon his own Charge; to teach and to govern the People committed to him, according to the Word of God. That not only he, but al other Paſtors do both faithfully preach the Word of God in his and their Congregations or Pariſhes, and alſo Catechize the Youth, and all the People committed to his and their Charge, diligently. That by the diligent Travail of the Paſtors, the Lord bleſſing their Labours, we which are the People of God and your Subjects, may be brought to ſome good Underſtanding of the Truth of the Religion of God; both to believe it in Heart, to confeſs with Mouth, and to practice it in doing, in our Lives reformed. That by this Means Blaſphemy and al abominable Looſneſs of Life, with al kinds of Bribery and lewd Doing, may be utterly baniſhed from us which are Subjects, as out of the Court, and out of the Houſes and Families of Noblemen.

That alſo no Popiſh Idolatry be ſuffered to be exerciſed in them, nor by any of thoſe Perſons which do ſerve our Sovereign or them, in any Office. And to this End we do humbly beſeech her Highneſs and every one of them, with godly Judgment deeply to conſider, that which the Kingly Prophet *David* doth write in that Pſalm which is in Numbre CI. That we all thus being godly and diligently taught, and exerciſed in the Word of the Lord, may the better ſee, hate, and with ſorrowful Hearts lament our former Ignorance and Blindneſs, in which we were carried away in Popery, to adore that ſhameful Idol of the Popiſh Altar, with that blaſphemous Maſs, and to admit the intolerable Tyranny of the Primacy of the Biſhop of *Rome*, with the whole Abhominations of Popery, as we did of late. That we now ſeeing our former Fall herein, may both penitently confeſs our ſaid former Faults, and alſo publickly proteſt to ſtand hereafter againſt all Popery: promiſing with all our Hearts al dutiful Obedience to the Lord our God according to the Truth of his moſt Holy Word. That by this Means we who are the People of this Land may be brought at length to have a ſtayed, grounded and ſettled Conſcience in the Religion of God; and not be left wavering and inclinable to all ſuch Chaunges in Religion as men ſhall make. There are at this Time ſome to be found in this Land, which do fully content themſelves to be ſo religious as the Politique Laws do preſcribe: But they procede no farther. Their Loyalty to good Laws is not to be diſcommended; but they muſt in Religion procede further, with Deſire to attain to that Faith, which is firm, ſure, ſtable and conſtant in God, and in Chriſt our Saviour. Otherwiſe theſe Loyal and Politique Subjects are not unlike to chaunge their Faith and Religion ſo oft as politique Laws are chaunged. Which is indeed to have but a Temporary Faith: It is not to be faſt in the Religion of God.

A Solemn Proteſtation.

A fearful Example of this Chaunge was given in this Land, when Queen *Mary* did ſuccede her Brother King *Edward*. Now if there be no more ſure Hold taken of the Religion of God by us, nor that his Religion doth take more ſure Hold in us, than politique Laws can procure, we may fear, that if another *Mary* ſhould ſuccede our Queen *Elizabeth*, the like Chaunge would follow. Therefore we humbly deſire our Rulers, which are godly, to deviſe, how by al godly Means we al, and every one of us, may be bound to the true Religion of God, now received and profeſſed among us. So that as God himſelf is one, and not to be chaunged; and his Religion is one, and not to be chaunged; even ſo we, by Gods Grace and good Means, may be faſt tyed to God and his true Religion; that we do never depart from it, nor chaunge it for any other. It hath been the dutiful and neceſſary Care of them which do bear rule over us, under the Queens Highneſs, to prevent al ſuch daungerous Practices, as have been attempted againſt her Royal Perſon, State, this Church and Common wealth. And it hath pleaſed God to bleſs their Labours ſo, that all theſe do ſtand ſafe and firm this Day. Now we humbly beſeech our Queen and the Rulers, that She and they will together conſult and deviſe, how the Kingdom of Chriſt *Jeſus* may remain fully eſtabliſhed among us and our Poſterity ever, to the end of the World. That as we are taught to pray, *Thy Kingdome come*, ſo al humain Policy and Power may ſerve to maintain and advance the Kingdom of Chriſt *Jeſus* among us, and to withſtand all the Tyranny of that Popiſh Antichriſt of *Rome*, and al that is contrary to the Kingdom of Chriſt, our Lord.

2 *Paralip.* 35. In this neceſſary Duty we do humbly deſire, that both Prince and People
2 *Reg*, 23. 3. may openly and religiouſly enter into an Holy League with the Living God,
2 *Paralip.* 34. after the godly Examples of King *Aſa*, of King *Joſiah* and other godly Ru-
A holy League. lers. It is well known what ſolemn and juſt Oaths were required, and in Policy taken of us in the Days of that famous King *Henry* the eight, and of his Son King *Edward* the Sixth, a King of moſt bleſſed Memory. It is alſo well known, how the whole State of this Realm openly, and that in Parliament, in the Days of Queen *Mary*, did unjuſtly depart from their ſaid moſt lawful Oaths. Our unfeigned Repentance for this foul Fall is to be put in practice before God and his whole Church. In which whiles we do not ſhew our ſelves hearty, bold, forward, zelous and ready, nor do give that open and full Defyance to *Rome*, which we ought to give, but do ſhew our ſelves faint, cold, and not fervent herein, we ſeem not to ſeek, how to pleaſe the Majeſty of God, as we ought to do. And we do give Courage to that *Romiſh* Antichriſt, our antient and capital Enemy, to feed himſelf with an Hope to recover us once again, to be his Prey; at leaſt when the Chaunge of the Prince doth come, if not before. And therfore he is buiſy even now in this bleſſed Time, not only to ſend forth his *Curſes*, but to uſe alſo curſed Means by his Eſpials, to ſteal the Hearts of the Subjects of this Land to him: and ſo to make the Way open and eaſy for his more ful Return to his old Place.

And Experience hath taught, and daily teacheth, what Miſchief is wrought in ſome unſtable Minds, whilſt that Antichriſt of *Rome* doth ſow by his *Seminaries* the Promiſes of his Popiſh Abſolution among them, which do not know the Poiſon of it: and doth promiſe his Favour to them which wil be reconciled to him. A Thing which none can accept, but they that wil fal from God, from their Prince and natural Country: And ſo become *Apoſtates* from God, Rebells to their Prince, and common Deſtructions to their Country. It is Time therfore, and it is our bounden Duty, ſolemnely in the Sight of God to confeſs and lament our former Fall: and therewith both to give an open and ful Defyance to the Antichriſt of *Rome* for ever; and alſo to bind our ſelves again, both by Oath and Promiſe to the Lord our God moſt Gracious; ſeing that his Mercy is ſuch towards us, that he doth ſtil, (and hath done now many Years) call us by the Voice of the Goſpel to be reconciled to him.
Pſal. 95. *This Day therefore if yee hear his Voice, harden not your Hearts*, &c. We do with dutiful Thanks acknowledg, that by publique Laws made in Parlament, holden in this bleſſed time of our Queens Government, the old Laws made ſometime for Popiſh Idolatry and Tyranny, are wel revoked; and that new

Laws made for the Freedom and Sincerity of Gods moſt holy Religion, are by juſt Authority made and eſtabliſhed: which is ſome Fruit of open Repentance. But our Repentance hath not yet proceded ſo far as it ought: ſeing that notwithſtanding thoſe Laws, the People once offending in Popery, are not yet brought to the Practice of a ful, publique and perfect Repentance.

For a Nombre of us do not only hange doubtful between Popery baniſhed, and the Goſpel now by Gods Grace reſtored; but are inclinable to Popery. Becauſe we do not yet taſt the Power of the Truth of God. We do not embrace it heartily, and only. We want that hearty Calling upon us al, to come cloſely to the Lord, and to joyn our Hearts to him only: and that by his Word. This requireth a Practice of our ſelves inwardly, and publicly in the open Congregation of God. It is not wrought by publique Lawsonly, but by the Power of the Word of God, taught and preached with Power, believed heartily, and confeſſed freely. To bring this to paſs is a Service verily, which we al do owe to the Lord. It hath been of us al too long neglected. It hath not been called upon earneſtly. It hath not yet been don ſo fully as it ought. The Lord forgive this and al other our Sinns, for Chriſts ſake.

Now therefore it is high time, that the godly Rulers do themſelves yield thir Obedience herein to the Lord God Almighty; and alſo do both require and exact the ſame of us, who are the People of God committed to their Government and Direction. And likewiſe, that they do by their Authority command al the Paſtors of this Church of *England* to do their Office accordingly: and to give them full Authority by godly Law to execute the ſame: So that we may attain by Gods Grace, working with this profitable Miniſtry, to a Conſcience bound to the Religion of God taught us in his Holy Word. And that by this Mean we may in true Underſtanding be hable to diſcerne the Difference which is between the holy Religion of our Lord God, and the filthy Superſtition and ſtrong Abhomination of Popery. That we may cleave faſt to God by his Word, and depart wholly from all Popery with ful Deteſtation of it. So ſhall our Rulers and Miniſters do their bounden and dutiful Service, to the Lord God Almighty, and draw us by their good Example and Order, to do the like. So ſhall the wretchleſs, careleſs and wilful People be brought into the dutiful Obedience of the Lord God Almighty, according to his holy Word: and ſo that Antichriſt of *Rome* and his Supports may be put out of al Hope to recover the Place, for which he practiſeth in *England*, ſo long as there is left any one *Engliſh* man alive to withſtand his Popiſh Attempts.

XIII. That no one Biſhop do hereafter procede in admitting, or depriving of any Paſtor, by his Sole Authority: Nor in excommunicating any faulty Perſon; nor in abſolving any Perſon that is excommunicated: nor in the deciding and determining of any Cauſe Eccleſiaſtical, without the Advice and Conſent of the aforeſaid *Seniors* and Aſſociates joyned with him. And that their Conſent may be teſtified by their own Names in Writing, ſet to every Act and Actes, which ſhall be determined and ordeined by their common Conſent.

XIV. Moreover, that it be eſtabliſhed, that it ſhall not be lawful for any man to appeal from the Sentence and Judgment of the Biſhop, given with the Advice aforeſaid, to any maner of Perſon or Perſons, but only to the next Provincial Synod, which ſhal be kept in this Church of *England*.

XV. And that it may be lawful for the Provincial Synod, being called by the Queen, her Heirs or Succeſſors, to admit every Appeal ſo made. To hear, decide and determine the Cauſes; and to give Sentence upon it by the Word of God. From the which Sentence of the Provincial Synod, it ſhall not be lawful for any man to appeal in any Reſpect, but only to a National and general Council of the whole Nation.

XVI. That ſuch a ***Provincial Synod*** be called every Year once, both in the Province of *Canterbury*, and alſo of *York*. And that the ſaid Synod may have ful Authority to cal before them any Diſorder or Controverſy, which ariſeth in any Cauſe or Matter Eccleſiaſtical within that Province. And to hear and determine the ſame according to the Word of God and the Laws of this Realm. And that a National or general Council, for the whole *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* Nations, be called ever hereafter once in Seaven Years, by the Queen, her Heirs and Succeſſors, in ſuch Place as She or they ſhall appoint. And that from henceforth the yearly Synods, Viſitations and Courts, kept ordinarily for Mony by the Sole Authority of Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Archdeacons, Chancellors, Officials, and other like Officers, do ceaſe.

XVII. That it be commanded to the Archbiſhops and Biſhops of *England* and *Ireland*, that neither the ſaid Archbiſhops within their Provinces, nor the Biſhops within their Dioceſſes, do hereafter by their Sole and private Authority, make and publiſh any Injunctions touching Religion or Church Government; nor by their Authority cal and command the Paſtors, Preachers and Clergy, ſubject to them, to ſubſcribe to the ſame their Devices, with ſuch Interpretations or Qualifications, as they ſhall think good to make, or to allow of the ſame: Nor to compel men to yield to their Devices by Threats of Suſpenſion or Deprivation. Neither that they, nor any of them, do ſet forth any other Injunctions, than ſuch as have been beforehand conſulted upon, and concluded according to the Word of God, by common Conſent in a Chriſtian and free Synod, holden and approved by Royal Authority in this Church of *England*.

XVIII. That it be utterly forbidden to any Biſhop hereafter with his Aſſociates, and that upon ſome great Penalty, to give the Holy Orders of the Church to any unlearned Perſons, or to Perſons unmeet for the ſame, or to any that is not by juſt Examination found ſufficient in Knowledg to do that appertaineth to the Duty of a Paſtor: And that hath not ſufficient Teſtimony by the Judgment of the Biſhop, and his Aſſociates or *Seniors*, of his honeſt and godly Converſation of Life. And alſo that no Biſhop with the Conſent of his Aſſociates, or without it, do hereafter give the Title of any of the Offices of the Miniſtry of the Church to any Perſon, before there be ſome Place provided within the Dioces for the Perſon ordained: in which he may exerciſe the ſame Order of Miniſtry, to which the Biſhop doth cal him.

This Order being obſerved, a Nomber of unmeet and vagaring Miniſters in Calling (as they are called) ſhall be cut off, with which the Church of *England* is now peſtered.

XIX. That it be by ſome ſharp Law provided, that Patrons of Benefices do give their Preſentations to ſuch men only, as ſhall be found meet, by the Biſhop and his Aſſociates, to take upon them that Paſtoral Charge, to which the Patrons do preſent them. And that the ſaid Biſhop and Biſhops, with his and their Aſſociates, be charged that they ſhall to the uttermoſt of their Power, examine and try, whether the Patron doth give his Preſentation freely, ſimply and only regarding the edifying of the Flock in the Knowledg of Almighty God. That ſo it may be well and plainly known, that neither he the ſaid Patron himſelf, nor any other Perſon for him, or by his Means, do reap any worldly Commodity for the ſame Preſentation: nor that he, nor they, do thruſt upon the People of the Pariſh any ſuch Perſon for his, or their own private Gain, Affection or pleaſure; againſt whom either any of the Pariſh, to the which the Patron doth preſent his Clerk, or any of the *Seignorie* of that Pariſh can take any juſt Exception before the Biſhop of the Dioces and Aſſociates or *Seniors*. That the Biſhop of the Dioces with his Aſſociates, aſſiſted by the *Seignory* of every Pariſh, to which any Perſon is preſented by any Patron, or by Colour of any Advocation, be commaunced both diligently and publickly to try and examine every Perſon ſo preſented to any Benefice: And alſo that they may have Authority by their mutual Conſent and Aſſent, teſtified by Writing, Subſcribed with their own Hands, to admit al and every Perſon ſo preſented, if they do find in him the Sufficiency and Fitneſs which is meet for the Office, or to reject him for the Inſufficiency and Want of Fitneſs which they ſhall find in him. And that neither the ſaid Biſhop and his Aſſociates, nor any of them be moleſted, ſued, or vexed with Suit in Law, by the Patron, or any other, that claimeth by Advocation or otherwiſe, for their juſt and lawful Doing in this Behalf.

XX. That it be forbidden, that any man, having one Benefice with Charge of Souls, do either take any other ſuch Benefice to it, or be abſent from it unleſs it be for a Time. And that by the Advice of the Biſhop of the Dioces and his *Seniors*; and with the Conſent alſo of his own Congregation, and his own Aſſociates there.

XXI. That al and every Parſon and Vicar, that is now Reſident upon his Cure, being for his Ability approved by the Biſhop of the Dioces and his Aſſociates, to preach the Word of God, do himſelf in his own Perſon preach to his People, and Catechize them and their Youth diligently and truly, according to their Duty. Or if he be not, either thorow Age, Impotency or Want of Skil hable not to do his Duty himſelf in his own Perſon: then we pray, that it may be commanded by Authority, that the ſame impotent and unable Perſon may and ſhall, by the ſaid Biſhop of the Dioces and his Aſſociates, be conſtrained to ſeek and find out ſome other Learned Man, who is not otherwiſe tyed to any other Charge. Which ſaid Perſon ſhal be by the Advice and Approbation of the ſaid Biſhop and his Aſſociates, authorized to joyn with the ſaid impotent Parſon or Vicar in his Charge, to be his Coadjutor in the Diſcharge of his Duty, and execution of his Office, during all the Time of his Impotency. And that the ſame his Coadjutor may have allotted unto his Sufficient Maintenance out of the Living of the ſaid Parſon or Vicar, that is found unhable to do his Duty himſelf. And that this Coadjutor may enjoy the ſame Portion of Living, ſo long as he doth help the ſame Parſon or Vicar in his Office, as is aforeſaid.

And if any Parſon or Vicar, Reſident on his Cure as is aforeſaid, refuſe to do any of theſe former Things, then we pray, that the Biſhop and his Aſſiſtants may be authorized and commaunded by Law, to expel the ſaid Parſon or Vicar out of his ſaid Benefice for ever. And alſo to provide and put in the ſaid Office ſome other meet man, to occupy and diſcharge the ſame Office; notwithſtanding the Right or Claime that any Patron can make to preſent his own Clerk to that Benefice, or that may be made by any former Advocation to the ſaid Benefice.

XXII. That it be not Lawful from henceforth for the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, nor for any Biſhop of this Church of *England* and *Ireland*, nor for any Judge of the Court of *Faculties*, *Audience*, *Prerogative*, or other Court whatſoever, now eſtabliſhed in the ſaid Realms, to grant any Licence of Plurality of Benefices, nor any Diſpenſation, to any Beneficed man, of Non-reſidence; nor to any Man that doth enjoy any Living Eccleſiaſtical, a Licence to keep that Living, and not to take the Orders of the Church, if he be found meet to ſerve in the Miniſtry of the Church. Nor by Inhibition to let or hinder the Proceding of any Cauſe which doth hang in Controverſy before any Biſhop and his *Seniors*, or Aſſociates in his Dioceſs, any Act, Law, Conſtitution or Proviſion in this Behalf heretofore made to the Contrary notwithſtanding.

XXIII. That ſuch as either are unwilling, or unmeet to ſerve the Church of God in the Miniſtry of the Word and Sacraments, be not ſuffered to enjoy any Living Eccleſiaſtical; whether it be Prebend, Benefice, Deanery, Parſonage, Vicarage, or any ſuch like: And again, that from henceforth no ſuch Living Eccleſiaſtical be given to any other Perſon, but to ſuch as have already taken ſome Degree of the Orders of the Church: and hath alſo given ſome open Shew and Token by public Preaching (being therunto lawfully called) of their Forwardneſs and Meetneſs to ſerve the Church of God in the Holy Miniſtry.

XXIV. That at, and in every Synod, hereafter to be called by the Authority of the Queen, her Heirs and Succeſſors, the Biſhops, Deans, Archdeacons, Clerks, and ſuch as ſhall be called by Order to the Synod, do all ſit together brotherly in one Houſe. And that they do chuſe one of themſelves to be the *Moderator* or *Prolocutor* of the Synod. That the ſaid *Moderators or Prolocutors* may have Power to ſe comely Order kept amongſt them in ſitting, each one according to his Degree in Learning and godly Gravity. And that they of the Synod may and do, orderly and freely give each one of them his Advice and Sentence in any Matter that ſhall be brought before them, or that is to be handled among them. That there may be alſo by the Appointment of the Queen and her Council, joyned to them, to ſit with them in the Synod or Convocation, ſome other godly learned men, which are not in the Order of the Miniſtry; to hear the Cauſes in Controverſy, to reaſon with them, and to give their Conſent to the Concluſions which ſhall be made in the ſaid Synod, as the reſt of the Miniſters there do.

Common Prayer.

XXV. That it may alſo be Lawful for the ſaid Synod (after that all former Reſtraints of the Liberty of Synods or Convocations be by ſome new repelled; and the Synod now to be reſtored to that Chriſtian Liberty, which a Chriſtian Synod ought to have) to cal any Cauſe or Controverſy Eccleſiaſtical which now is, or hereafter ſhall be in this Church of *England* and *Ireland*, to their Examination; which do touch any Part of Doctrine, or Ceremonies of the Church, and namely, the Book of *Common Prayer*, which is now eſtabliſhed to be the Book of *Common Prayer* of the Church of *England*. That they of the Synod may be commaunded to try and examine the ſame Book, and every Part of it, by the Holy Word of God; and both to cut off that which is doubtful or Superfluous in it; and to add to it that which is neceſſary and wanting to it. So that the Blockes that are in it, at which ſome godly men do now ſtumble, may be removed; and ſuch a Book of Divine Service be framed, commended and commaunded to the Church of *England*, and to all the Members of it, as is wholly founded upon true Divinity, taught in the Word of God: and ſo be commaunded to us Subjects, by Royal Authority; as a thing commaunded firſt of God, and then of the Prince.

That we the People, may both underſtand what it is that the Majeſty of God doth commaund, and what it is that the Queen by Royal Authority doth commaund: and ſo to be taught in true Underſtanding, to give *Cæſar* the Things which are *Cæſars*, and to give to God thoſe things which are Gods. That we may religiouſly do that which God commaundeth, and alſo dutifully that which in this Behalf the Queen commaundeth.

The Book of ordering Biſhops, *&c.*

Rights and Ceremonies.

We do alſo humbly deſire, that the other Book, in which the Order of making of Biſhops and other Eccleſiaſtical Miniſters, in this Church of *England*, is ſet down, may alſo by a Chriſtian and free Synod, be examined and rectified, where it departeth from the right way of the Lord. And that the ſaid Synod may have full Authority to call before them all ſuch other Controverſies, which do touch the Ceremonies and Rites of the Church of *England*, and the Conformity or Difference in the ſame: And all Doubts which do touch the State of Marriage, and Divorcement or Contract of Marriage. And that the Synod may without Reſtraint of Liberty or preſcribing what the Pleaſures of men are, freely debate, order and determine the ſame according to the Word of God. That they may alſo preſent the ſame their Determination to the Queen, her Heirs and Succeſſors, to be by Her and their Royal Authority ratified and confirmed. And that every Thing and Cauſe ſo concluded by them, and ratified by Royal Authority, may be of ſufficient Force to bind al the Subjects, the Members of the Church of *England* and *Ireland*, to obey the ſame: any Act or Acts, Statute, Privilege or Reſtraint whatſoever, heretofore made to the Contrary notwithſtanding.

XXVI. That in every Congregation and Pariſh there may be ſuch godly Order taken for the Proviſion of the true and very poor People of God, by the common Almes and Offerings of the Rich, and by the godly Miniſtry of the *Deacons*, as is ordeined in the Word of God. And that Biſhops and Cathedral Churches may be charged by ſuch Commiſſioners as the Queen ſhall appoint for the ordering of this Affair; to pay yearly Penſions towards the ſupply of the Want which ſhall be found in thoſe common Almoſſes, in ſuch a Proportion as ſhall be thought meet by the ſaid Commiſſioners. To ſatisfy that old Order taken and concluded of the Fourth Part of the yearly Revenues of the Churches: which were wont to be paid by them to the Poor yearly.

Deacons.

C. 12. Q. 2. Moſ.

XXVII. That by Law ſevere Puniſhment be appointed to be laid upon them, which do uſually in ſwearing take the Name of God in vain; and upon Blaſphemers, Common Swearers and perjured Perſons: as alſo upon common Drunkards.

Swearers, Blaſphemers, &c.

XXVIII. That it be not ſuffered, that any maried man do hereafter put away his Lawful Wife from him. Nor that any maried Wife do depart from her Husband, upon their own private Wil: And ſo live ſeparate the one from the other, as many now do. But that ſuch Perſons living one from another be by Law compelled to bring their Cauſe to be heard before ſome competent Judge, as the Provincial Synod, or the Biſhop and his Aſſociates of the Dioces, where the Parties ſo ſeparated do dwel. Who may have Authority to compel them to live together, as Man and Wife ought to do: Or elſe by Order of Law, upon juſt Cauſe alledged and proved, to ſeparate and divorſe them the one from the other.

And that known Adultery, and ſufficiently proved by two or three Witneſſes, may for ever hereafter be puniſhed by Death: and the faultleſs Party have free Liberty to mary again in the Lord. That alſo al Inceſts, and al unnatural and beaſtly Copulations againſt nature, be likewiſe puniſhed by Death without Redemption. And that ſome more ſharp Law be made for the Puniſhment of Fornicators, than is only to ſtand in a White Sheet, as the Maner is now.

Adultery, Iuceſt, &c.

XXIX. That there may be ſome godly, learned and zealous Men appointed by the Queens Highneſs, with the Advice of her Honorable Council; to Viſit the preſent State of all Archbiſhops and Biſhops of *England* and *Ireland*. And firſt, to conſider of ſuch Doings and Actions as have paſſed by the Authority of the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops, and through the Hands of their Officers, under the Name of the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops, ſithence the Beginning of her bleſſed and peaceful Government. That ſo the Queens Highneſs may perfectly underſtand, how the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops have, ſithence the Beginning of her Majeſties happy Reign, behaved themſelves in their Offices. And whether they have in all Actions faithfully diſcharged their Duty, according to the Truſt which was repoſed in them, ſerved the Church of God faithfully, or have don unfaithfully, and neglected their Duty to God, to his Church, to her Highneſs, or not.

The State of Archbiſhops and Biſhops to be Viſited.

Again, that the ſaid Commiſſioners or Viſitors may have Authority, and that it be given in ſtreight Charge to them, to look godly into the very State it ſelf of the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops, as it is now: And to conſider, whether it be ſuch as the State of thoſe old true Biſhops was, of whom God himſelf doth ſpeak by St. *Paul* in his Holy Word, and of ſuch other Paſtors as were called *Biſhops*, in the firſt and ſincere Age of the *Primitive* Church. And if by juſt Examination they do find, that it was the Device of the Devil in Popery, to transform the holy Office of the firſt Chriſtian Biſhops into a profane Office; and to draw that Order into ſuch Diſorder, that it ſhould be moſt unlike to that Order of godly Biſhops which the Holy Ghoſt hath ordained, as we are taught in the Word of the Living God; and that they do find in the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops, and in their Offices, more ſtately and worldly Pomp, than becometh a Chriſtian Biſhop, les Paſtoral Care and Diligence, than ought to be: Then let the ſaid Commiſſioners and Viſitors make true Report therof to her Highneſs, according to their godly Wiſdome, Learning and good Conſcience.

Upon which their faithful and ſincere Report, conſidering that by Gods great Grace, under the Happy Government of our Sovereign Lady Queen *Elizabeth*, Chriſts Goſpel is now preached, and by it both Biſhops, Miniſters of the Word, and al other Chriſtians are taught their Duties, Chriſtianly and truly; we do humbly pray and deſire that, as the Lord God Almighty hath by the Service of his choſen Servant, our Sovereign Lady Queen *Elizabeth*, baniſhed the Head, the Heart, and other great Parts of Popery, ſo She may do the Lord God this Princely Service, yet remaining to be don; that all ſuch Officers and Offices, as in the Abuſe of Popery, crept into the Church and are yet after a Sort retained in it, under a Pretence to ſerve God in his Holy Goſpel, may have their Diſcharge. For it is meet, that the Lord be ſerved with his own Officers. And then is his Holy Majeſty beſt ſerved of men, when his own Officers, by himſelf ordained to be his Officers, do execute their Offices faithfully, according to his holy Wil, written in his moſt holy Word.

Stately Biſhops.

Therefore may it pleaſe the Queens Highneſs, with the Advice of her Honorable Council, and Authority of Parliament, to take Order for the removing of all that which ſhall be found but Abuſe in the Offices of the ſaid Archbiſhops and Biſhops of this Church of *England* and *Ireland*; and provide that hereafter Biſhops may be Paſtors, in Humbleneſs, Diligence and Sincerity to feed the Flock of Chriſt. And not be *Stately Biſhops*, bearing Lordſhip among Politic Lords; Overlooking the Flock of Chriſt, more like Stout Prelates, than Fatherly Paſtors. And to the End, that the ſaid Biſhops may hereafter do that Office, which ſhall be committed to them, the more ſincerely, we deſire, that all they and every one of them, may be delivered from the Burthen of all worldly Pomp, Honour and Charge; and not to be puſt up any longer with the ſwelling Titles and Dignities of worldly Honour and Lordſhip. And that they alſo be ſet ſo free from the Adminiſtration of all Civil Cauſes and Offices, that they may wiſely apply themſelves to the Labour of the Goſpel and Eccleſiaſtical Function, in Diligence and Sincerity.

That Biſhops, by doing the Duty of Biſhops Evangelical, may get themſelves the Honour meet for a Biſhop, by doing themſelves the Buſineſs of the Goſpel, and by helping others to do the ſame: As did the old godly Biſhops in the Primitive Church. That ſo the Lord God Almighty may be ſerved in his Church with his own Officers. So ſhall Chriſts Church in *England* and *Ireland* be better ſerved; and the Deſire of the Queens Highneſs to have her People wel taught, be better ſatisfied. And to be ſhort, ſo ſhall our Biſhops depart clean from al that Perverſity of Antichriſt which doth yet remain; and ſubmit themſelves to do their Duties according to the Rule of the Lord *Jeſus* Chriſt, whoſe Goſpel they do now profeſs.

The Sabbath.

XXX. That the Lords Day, even the Sabbath Day, which we do barbarouſly cal *Sunday*, may hereafter be kept ſo holily, that it be not abuſed, nor miſpent, neither in open Feaſting, nor in making or uſing any public Shews, Plays or Paſtimes. Nor that there be any Fairs or Markets kept upon anc Sabbath Day hereafter. But that if any Fair or Market hath been heretofore ordained to be kept upon a Sabbath day, either it may be put off to be kept within the next two Days aſten the ſaid Sabbath day: or if, by the long accuſtomed Continuance of the Time of any Fair, a Sabbath day do fal in the Time of the wonted Continuing of the Fair, the Rulers of it be commaunded and Authorized to ſtop the Courſe of all buying and ſelling publickly, during the Time of the Sabbath day. And that al Games and Paſtimes of Shooting, Bowling, Cocking, Bearbaiting, Dancing, Prices of Defence, Wakes, Maygames, and al other ſuch rude Diſports, be utterly forbidden to be uſed upon any Sabbath day: And that upon great Puniſhment to be laid upon the Offenders. So that the Lords day may be kept holy, as it is commaunded. That then the People may learn, as the Prophet ſaith, in the Name of God, *to chooſe the Thing that pleaſeth God, and to take hold of his moſt holy Covenant.*

Iſay. 56.

XXXI. That Biſhops, being enriched with ſuch Lands and Livings as now they do poſſeſs and do enjoy, be not compelled, either by Law or Cuſtom hereafter to keep in their Family ſo great a Nombre of idle Gentlemen and Serving Men, as now they uſe to do. But that they be commaunded to take into their Families a ſufficient Nombre of ſuch young Men, as are the Sons of poor Fathers, and ſuch as have good Capacity, and are apt to receive Learning. That they, the ſaid Biſhops, may be commaunded to traine up theſe Youths in Learning, and in the moſt profitable Exerciſes of all kind of good Learning in their Houſes and Families. That ſo by ſerving the ſaid Biſhops for their Living, and by learning in their Families, they may be framed to be in time meet Miniſters, to ſerve the Church of Chriſt in the Miniſtry of the holy Word and Sacraments.

Biſhops Families.

And ſo ſhal our Biſhops Houſes become more like to Chriſtian Schools, than to Princes Courts, as now they are. So ſhall the Biſhops alſo have a Store of wel framed and tryed Youth, to be preferred to the Miniſtry of the Church, when it ſhall have need. And ſo ſhall the Goods of the Church, which are in the Biſhops Hands, be hereafter profitably beſtowed; which are now for the moſt part unprofitably and prodigally ſpent, ſpoiled and waſted.

XXXII. That the Chancellors of the Univerſities may be appointed to take ſuch Order with the Heads, and the Fellows of the Colleges, which are in the ſaid Univerſities, that neither they, nor any of them, nor any other Perſon for them, do hereafter admit or receive any Scholar or Fellow into any of the ſaid Colleges for Mony or Reward. And that no Fellow nor Scholar of any of the ſaid Colleges, do reſign or ſel the Place which he hath in any of the ſaid Colleges, to any other Perſon for Mony. For it is meet, that all Elections of Fellows and Scholars into the ſaid Colleges be made freely: and that the Electors have a reſpect to the aptneſs ſimply, and to the Poverty of them which are to be elected and choſen; according to the good Meaning of the firſt Founders of the ſaid Colleges. And that like Order may be taken with the Provoſts of the Colleges of *Eaton* and *Wincheſter*; And with the Poſers yearly appointed for the Election of Scholars in the ſame.

Univerſities.

XXXIII. The Church of Chriſt is to be governed by ſuch Chriſtian Laws, as are meet for the Government of the Church of Chriſt. Therefore ſeeing that the Church of Chriſt in *England* is once again by Gods Grace, crept out of the Payles of Antichriſt, and hath need of ſuch Chriſtian Laws, as are meet for the Government of it; May it pleaſe the Queens Highneſs, and the Parliament, to aſſign ſome learned Preachers, and ſuch other Men of godly Wiſdome and Learning, as ſhall be thought to their godly Wiſdomes, to be moſt fit for this Purpoſe; in ſuch a competent Nombre alſo as ſhall bee deemed to ſuffice. And to give to theſe choſen Commiſſioners Power and Authority,

thority, to conſider firſt and principally, of the Laws of Almighty God, which are ſet down in the Word of God, for the Government of the Church of Chriſt; Then, of ſuch Laws as our Neighbours and Brethren in *Germany*, *Zuitzerland*, *Savoy*, *France*, *Scotland*, and other Churches reformed by the Goſpel, have ſet down for the Government of the Church of Chriſt, which is with them. Laſt of all, to conſider as well of ſuch Laws as are already eſtabliſhed for the Government of this Church of *England*, by public Authority, as alſo of that Book intitled, *De Regno Chriſti*: which that worthy Servant of God, D. *Martin Bucer*, did once make for the Church of *England*, to have been preſented to King *Edward* the Sixth, of Bleſſed Memory. And alſo of other ſuch Books, as have been written ſithence that Time, as well by ſome of our Countrymen, as by other Learned Men, born out of this Land, touching the Church, the Diſciplin and Government therof. And that the ſaid Commiſſioners may be commanded to gather out of all the ſame Books, one Book of ſuch Canons and Rules, as they ſhall think to be moſt meet for the Government of this Church of *England*. Which their Collection, by them ſigned, they may be commaunded to preſent to the firſt Synod, which ſhall be kept in *England*, next after the compiling of the ſaid Book; that the ſame their Book and Collection may there be examined, tryed, corrected, or approved.

Diſciplin of the Church.

After which Examination, Correction or Approbation, we deſire that the ſame Book of Collection may, by the ſame Synod, be preſented to the Queens Highneſs and the High Court of Parliament: that the ſame Book of *Canons* may be by their Authority ratified and authorized, to be the Law Eccleſiaſtical. Whereby this Church of Chriſt in *England* and *Ireland* may be thorowly governed and ruled, touching all Perſons, al Cauſes, and all Places, none exempted. So that all *Peculiars* (as they are called) and Places priviledged, and the Perſons dwelling in them, may be brought under the Government of the ſaid Law. And that all other Conſtitutions, Cuſtoms, Ordinances Eccleſiaſtical, heretofore eſtabliſhed or uſed, may be utterly void and of none effect. That ſo the Church of Chriſt in *England* and *Ireland* may be fully freed from the *Canon Law* of the Popes making. By which now the Biſhops and their Officers do order Cauſes Eccleſiaſtical, tho not in the Popes Name: yet, as Officers, they put his Laws in Execution.

Book of Canons.

Peculiars.

For it doth not agree with the Nature and Majeſty of Chriſts Kingdom, that the Laws of Antichriſt ſhould be the Laws of his holy Church, which is his Kingdom. Let us at length ſhake off all the Tokens of the Tyranny of Antichriſt; and yeild that whole Glory to *Jeſus* Chriſt, which is due unto him, according to our Duty: And in humble Obedience let us *Kiſs the Sonne*, as we ought to do.

Pſal. 2.

XXXIV. Laſt of all, we *Engliſh* Subjects moſt humbly beſeech the moſt High and excellent Majeſty of the Lord our God, by whom all Kings do reign, and Common Wealths do ſtand, to move the Hearts of our Noble Queen *Elizabeth*, and her Nobility, and of the High Court of Parliament, with due Care to provide in Time for the ſure eſtabliſhing of the Goſpel among us, and our Poſterity: and alſo for the Continuance of Civil Peace in this Land among the Inhabitants therof; by ſetting the Succeſſion of the Crown of *England* ſafely, ſurely, and in Quiet; where it may reſt after the Death of our Sovereign Lady, Queen *Elizabeth*. And that they may both foreſee carefully, and prevent ſpeedily, all ſuch Daungers as do now draw nigh to us; threatning to bereave us of all the Benefits which we do enjoy, by the ſingular Goodneſs of God, under the happy Government of our Dear Sovereign, Queen *Elizabeth*; and do menace to bring upon us the Plague of Popiſh Idolatry, foreign Government and Tyranny, with ſuch other Calamities, as we by our manifold Sins do juſtly deſerve.

O! Lord God Almighty, Wee do humbly beſeech thee in the Name of thy beloved Son our Saviour JESUS, *to ſave our Queen* Elizabeth; *and to be merciful to our Country,* England. *Amen.*

NUMB. XXXIX.

A Writing of the Biſhops, in anſwer to the Book of Articles, offered the laſt Seſſions of Parliament, Anno. Regin. 27. *for Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes: Concerning Miniſters, Excommunication, Diſpenſations,* &c.

I. *Concerning Miniſters.*

The Firſt Article.

THAT it may be enacted, that none be admitted to be Miniſter of the Word and Sacraments, but in a Benefice having Cure of Souls, then vacant in the Dioces of ſuch a Biſhop, as is to admit him. *MSS.* Epiſ. cop.

Anſwer to the Firſt Article.

This cannot poſſibly be performed, withour altering the whole State of the Church of *England.* Firſt, becauſe there muſt be *Curates*; and that of Neceſſity. Secondly, becauſe there are other Eccleſiaſtical Livings, which require Miniſters of the Word and Sacraments, as well as Benefices with Cure: As Deanries, Prebends, Maſterſhips, and Fellowſhips in the Univerſities; and Petty Canons in Cathedral Churches.

The Article is grounded upon a falſe Principle of T. C. [*Tho. Cartwright.*] againſt Miniſters having no Paſtoral Cure. Which neither he, nor any Man elſe is able to maintain, either by the Word of God, or antient Authority. For by *Miniſterium vagum,* the old Councils and Canons did always underſtand ſuch as were ordained, *ſine Patrimonio aut Titulo*: that is, not having any Stay of Living. As 'tis manifeſt in the Council of *Chalcedon.*

Such as have great Cures ſhall be overburthened with ſaying of Service, Preaching, Miniſtring of Sacraments, al themſelves. For they ſhall be deſtitute of a Curate to help them to ſay Service, to Viſit the Sick, to adminiſter the Sacraments, to Catechize, &c. By this Means Fellowſhips in Colleges, which by their Statutes muſt be in Orders, are overthrown.

The Second Article.

That before the Admiſſion of ſuch Miniſter, the Biſhop give public Notice by Writing under his Seal, to be fixed on the Church Door, that is Deſtitute of a Paſtor, upon ſome Sunday or Holy day, in the Time of Divine Service; ſignifying the Name of the Perſon preſented to that Church, or there to be admitted: With Intimation, that ſuch as within 26 days after, wil object againſt the Admiſſion, ſhal appear at a Place certain before him; and alledg ſuch Matter, as ſhal only concern his Converſation of Life: and therby his Inſufficiency for that Place.

The Third Article.

That the Biſhop ſhal not procede to the Admiſſion of any to be Miniſter of the Word and Sacraments, before due Certificate made in authentic Form, and public Place, by him to be aſſigned, that the Proceſs of Notice and Intimation, was executed in Form aforeſaid: nor before the Expiration of the ſaid 26 Days: nor without calling for, and hearing of ſuch, as upon Return of the ſaid Proceſs ſhal and will object, as aforeſaid.

The Anſwer to the 2d *and* 3d *Articles.*

This is unneceſſary and in vain, unleſs he that is to be admitted had been dwelling in that Pariſh before. Which wil happen very ſeldom. The Writing and ſending to the Benefice void; and the Return therof in Authentic Form, wil be very chargeable to the Miniſter; eſpecially where the Place is far from the Biſhops Manſion Houſe. It alſo protracteth Time and will adminiſter Occaſion of Quarelling.

The Charges alſo and Delay will be alſo encreaſed, if the Party to be admitted do ſtand upon the Purgation of the Objections layd againſt him.

This Teſtimony required of the Pariſhoners, lacking their Paſtors, is an Introduction to bring the Patronage to the People; and to ſet a Fire among them, for teſtifying, or not teſtifying; and that many times of a Perſon they know not.

The objecting of the People wil fal out many times to be mere Malice. Whereby immortal Hatred wil riſe among them.

The Perſon indeed had need be a very ill man, that a Number of the Pariſh wil come a long journey to the Ordinary, on their own Coſt, to object againſt him that is to be admitted.

What if the Pariſh wil be negligent, and wil not return? Shal they lack a Paſtor ſtil? The Patron, if he be mighty, may enter; let the Return, or procure ſuch as he ſhal like of. And who, and how many of the Pariſh ſhal return?

The Fourth Article.

It is here to be provided, that where in certain Colleges, and Cathedral and Collegiate Churches, the Foundation or Statute require ſuch as are there placed, to be Miniſters; it ſhal be Lawful for ſuch as are known to profeſs the Study of Divinity, or otherwiſe be Lawfully diſpenſed withal, to retain, as before this Act they might, any Fellowſhip or Prebend within the ſaid Colleges, notwithſtanding they be no Miniſters.

The Anſwer to the Fourth Article.

1. This utterly overthroweth the Foundation and Statutes of almoſt all the Colleges in *Cambridge* and *Oxford*, being founded principally for the Study of Divinity, and Encreaſe of the Number of learned Preachers and Miniſters. And therfore not only the Maſter, Provoſt, Warden, Preſident, &c. by the ſaid Foundations and Statutes are bounden to be Miniſters, but divers others alſo of ſuch Societies are likewiſe bounden to enter into the Miniſtry by a certain Time, or elſe to yield their Places to others.

2. It wil deprive the Church of *England* of the Worthieſt, beſt learned and wiſeſt Miniſters and Preachers. For there is no Compariſon between ſuch Miniſters and Preachers as the Univerſities continually yield, in reſpect of ſuch Foundations and Statutes, and others, being no Univerſity men, or not entring into the Miniſtry, while they remained there; as at this day it is notorious. For altho' there are divers, that can Preach, *&c.* yet they have no Subſtance of Learning in them, neither are they able to ſtand with the Adverſary, either in Pulpit or Diſputation: a thing as wel required in a Miniſter, as Exhortation is.

3. If this Device take place, where the Univerſities yield now great Number of Preachers and Miniſters, they would not then yield one for Twenty. And ſo the Number of Preachers, which now are thought to be very few,

would then be much leſs; and at length the utter Decay of the Study of Divinity; and the very next way to bring in Popery and Ignorance again.

4. It overthrows the Degrees of the Univerſity, which are taken in Divinity: as the Bachelourſhip and Doctorſhip. For even ſithence the firſt Foundation of them both, it hath been perpetually uſed, and it is by Statute required, that none ſhould take any of theſe Degrees, but ſuch as are in the Miniſtry. And indeed it is both inconvenient and abſurd, that it ſhould be otherwiſe.

5. At this day there are in the Univerſity of *Cambridg*, an Hundred Preachers at the leaſt, very worthy Men, and not many leſs in the Univerſity of *Oxford*. And the Number daily encreaſeth; both to the great Benefit of the Church. But if this might take place, within this Seven Years there would not be five Miniſters in either of them.

6. It would cauſe Men all their Life time to remain in the Univerſities. So that there ſhould be no Succeſſion.

7. It alſo overthroweth the Foundation and Statutes of all Cathedral and Collegiate Churches: and taketh away the chief and principal Reward for learned Preachers: For the beſt Livings for worthy Men are in ſuch Churches.

8. It taketh away the wiſeſt, beſt, learned and graveſt Divines; ſuch as do and are moſt able to withſtand not only Papiſts, but other Sectaries alſo.

9. Every one to keep theſe Places, would openly profeſs the Study of Divinity, and ſecretly Study the one Law or the other, or Phyſic, or ſome trifling Study al his Life long.

10. There will be no Care of profiting, when there is no Tryal therof. Which is moſt ſpecial by open preaching: which were abſurd to be don by no Miniſters.

11. Any which hath been a Student may, under pretence of Studying Divinity, without any Tryal obtain Deanries, Provoſtſhips, Prebends, *&c.* And being a Layman may live idly on the ſpoil of the Church al his Life, except he taught a Benefice.

12. There ſhal want ſufficient Tryal of the Abilities of Preaching of ſuch as are to be Biſhops, except they be be choſen from ſome Benefice. Which breedeth ſmal Experience for Governance.

13. It would greatly diminiſh the Number of Preachers and Sermons; which the Univerſities, Colleges and Cathedral Churches do yield, both at home and abroad in every Country; in the reſpect that thoſe which now have the Livings are bound to be Miniſters.

14. It taketh away daily Service uſed in theſe Churches (which were Impiety) unles it might be ſaid or ſonge by ſuch as are now Miniſters: which is abſurd.

15. To conclude, it wil breed a beggerly, unlearned and contemptible Clergy and Miniſtry. It is the very way to overthrow al Colleges, Cathedral Churches and Places of Learning. It will extinguiſh the Study of Divinity; diminiſh the Number of Preachers, and breed a great Confuſion and Alteration in the Church and Common Wealth. And it is a Piece of *T. C.* his Platform.

16. By this the Reward of Divinity will be taken away; and the Divine thruſt to a Benefice of 40 £. This is covertly to ſhove at the Goſpel, to place the Lawyers and others as they pleaſe.

17. Note, that hereby they would have Diſpenſations to take Place againſt the Statute of Colleges and Cathedral Churches.

The Fiſth Article.

That none be made Miniſter, but upon ſome Sunday publicly, in the Cathedral Church of the Dioces, where the Miniſter is admitted.

Anſwer. That he be made public, it is not amiſs; but to obſerve the preciſe Place of the Cathedral Church, it wil be inconvenient; becauſe divers Biſhops dwel far from their Cathedral Churches.

The Sixth Article.

That the Biſhop make no Miniſter but ſuch as be of his own Dioces, and have there continued by the Space of one whole Year; except ſuch only as come from the Univerſities, and bring Teſtimonials of their Meetnes under the Univerſity Seal.

The Seventh Article.

That ſuch as be of the Biſhops own Dioces, ſhal bring with them ſuch a Teſtimonial as is limited in the Statute of *Anno.* 13. *Elizab.*

The Anſwer. 1. Theſe are very expedient and neceſſary, and even ſo provided for by the Law. 2. It were more meet alſo that theſe Things were obſerved, when Patrons preſent to a Benefice: and that as the Teſtimonials do witneſs their Converſation, ſo the Biſhop ſhould without any Impeachment of *Quare Impedit*, &c. be Judge of their Ability in reſpect of the Cure which they deſire.

The Eighth Article.

That after the Receit of the ſaid Teſtimonial, the Biſhop ſhal not procede to the making of his Perſon Miniſter, which bringeth that Teſtimonial, before he ſhal declare before the Dean and Chapter of the Cathedral Church, that he wel knoweth the Perſons, by whom the Teſtimonial is made, to be ſuch as is by the ſaid Statute expreſt.

The Anſwer. This is unneceſſary and altogether needleſs, neither can it be performed.

The Ninth Arcicle.

That he ſhall not make any Miniſter, but ſuch as ſhall be by the Dean and Chapter, or the more Part of them, or Six learned Preachers of the Dioces, then preſent, be allowed for a Man meet and ſufficient, by Subſcription of their Hands to ſome Writing, declaring their Aſſent, in Allowing of him.

The Anſwer. 1. It wil breed great Trouble, and not work that Effect which is looked for; neither can it by al in Place be performed. 2. It would alſo be very chargeable, upon the Abſence of the moſt of the Chapter, if the Party ſhould procure the Hands of Six Preachers, dwelling in diſperſed Places.

The Tenth Article.

That none ſhal have a Benefice with Cure, being of the Value of 20£. yearly in the Queens Books, except he be a Maſter of Arts, or a Preacher allowed; notwithſtanding that he be made a Miniſter before of ſome Mean Cure.

Anſwer. It is to be liked of; ſo that diligent Heed be taken, that none be admitted Preachers, but ſuch as be worthy.

II. *Concerning*

II. *Concerning Excommunication.*

The Firſt Article.

Excommunication is at this Time the Pain of Contumacy; and hath Place where a Man appeareth not upon Proceſs, or ſatisfieth not ſome Order preſcribed by the Judg: as, not taking ſome Oath, or not paying Legacies, Tiths, &c.

The Second Article

The Offences that grow by the Practice hereof in this Manner, are great: One, that being the higheſt Cenſure left by the Church of God, it is profaned by applying it to temporal and Civil Cauſes. Another, that it is executed by Men that have no calling in the Church, as Chancellors, Officials, &c.

Again, foraſmuch as the Church may not be left without this Cenſure of Excommunication, it is to be provided, that for enormous Crimes, as Adultery, and ſuch other, the ſame be executed, either by the Biſhops themſelves, with the Aſſiſtance of grave Perſons, or elſe by other Perſons of Calling in the Church with the like Aſſiſtance; and not by Chancellors and Officials, as hath been uſed.

Anſwer. Excommunication hath been uſed by the Eccleſiaſtical Judge, ever ſithence there hath been either Diſcipline in the Church, or Juriſdiction in the Eccleſiaſtical Magiſtrate, and is the only Puniſhment therof. For the antient Law-makers, thinking, that Blood and bodily Pains ought to be far from Eccleſiaſtical Magiſtrates, have given them this mild Spiritual Sword, to divide that Perſon from the Eccleſiaſtical Body, that refuſeth to do his Eccleſiaſtical Duties, and to obey the Eccleſiaſtical Judge. Not excommunicating every Man for *Twopeny* Cauſes, as is ſurmiſed; (tho' indeed there be as much in *2d.* as in 200 *£.*) but in excommunicating them for not obeying the Order, Decree and Sentence of the Judge, according to her Majeſtys Eccleſiaſtical Laws. Even as in a Temporal Cauſe of *2d.* the Party is out-lawed: and conſequenrly his Fruits and Goods of his Lands, are at the Princes Pleſure, if he appear not, or obey not. And yet it is not to be ſaid, that a Man is out-lawed for *2d.* But for not obeying the Law, Proceſs and Judge in a Twopeny Matter. For the ſmaller the Matter is, the greater is the Fault of Contumacy and Diſobedience, ſaith the Law.

Excommunication for Proceſs, Order not obeyed, taking ſome Oath, &c. is not for Civil Cauſes. But theſe Cauſes are Eccleſiaſtical: and what can be more againſt the Church, than when Men will not be ordered by it, nor obey it? In Gods Law ſuch as would not be ordered by their Judg, or High Prieſt, were ſtoned.

There is no Law nor Function in the World void of Exception and Imperfection. And to have it void therof, *eſt optandum magis quam ſperandum*: as in *Plato's Common wealth*.

If Excommunication be either taken away, or changed, the whole Courſe of the Common Law of the Realm concerning that Matter, and touching the Writ of *Excomun. capiendo* muſt be changed. Wherin many things not yet thought on, may happen, and inſted therof ſome convenient Temporal Penalty muſt be deviſed. Which how unliking and unpleaſable it wil be, and how ful of Difficulties, the Wiſe can conſider.

And if Excommunication be thought fitteſt to continue, (for that there wil be as many Inconveniences, or more, in time found in other Things, as in that) and that for the better Credit of the Proceding therin, the Biſhop be Arched to ſit in Conſiſtory, his whole Life will be ſpent in his Juriſdiction, and in Study of Law; that he might be able to diſcern, whether the Proceſs be according to Law, before he inflict the Cenſure: which will be as great Decay of Preaching, as it hath been in fore time. For the Juriſdiction alone requireth, *totum & integrum hominem.*

Touching the Execution by Men of no Calling in the Country.

The Juriſdiction in the Beginning was joyntly in the Biſhop, Dean and Chapter. Which bred ſo many Opinions, ſuch Impeachments and Confuſions in Proceding, that by the general Cuſtome of the World, generally the Juriſdiction was thought convenient to be exerciſed by the Biſhop alone: which growing great, as the Church, and Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes encreaſt; and conſequently calling the Biſhop from his Function, the Law and Conſtitutions ordered, that the Official, or Vicar General of a Biſhop or Archbiſhop ſhould have the ſame Conſiſtory or Juriſdiction, that the Archbiſhop or Biſhop had, and the ſame Authority to excommunicate. Which by the Statutes of this Realm, is alſo allowed to Doctors of the Law. For that in later Times *Divines* have wholly employed themſelves to Divinity, and not to the Procedings and Study of the Law: wherunto in fore times the Clergy were more addicted than to Divinity; in reſpect of the Gain, and Offices exerciſed under Biſhops, Archdeacons, and other Eccleſiaſtical Callings, which drew them wholly from Divinity.

This Excommunication by Law was never uſed, nor could be uſed, as a Puniſhment of any Crime, ſaving of notorious Hereſy, Uſury, Symony, Piracy, Conſpiracy againſt the Perſon of the Prince, of his State, Dignity and Crown, Perturbers of the Common Peace and Quietneſs of the Church or Realm, wilful Murtherers, Sacrilegers, Perjurers, and incorrigible and notorious Committers of Inceſt and Adultery, falſe Witneſs, and Suborners therof, violent Layers of Hands upon Eccleſiaſtical Perſons; and ſuch other great and horrible Crimes: Which were called *Sententiæ Canonum.* Wherin beſides the particular Penances, that the Biſhops and their Officers did impoſe, it was for more Terror provided by antient Canons, that there ſhould be a general open Denuntiation of this Excommunication in every Cathedral Church and Pariſh Church twice in the Year.

For other light Faults there was no Excommunication permitted or uſed as a Puniſhment, other than for manifeſt and wilful Contumacy or Diſobedience, in not appearing, when Perſons were called and ſummoned for a Cauſe Eccleſiaſtical, or when any Sentence or Decree of the Biſhop or his Officer, being deliberately made, was wilfully diſobeyed or not performed.

Such wilful Contumacy and Diſobedience to Authority, is in the Law accounted ſo great, that it is called a Contempt of that *Quod eſt in Jure extremum.* That is to ſay, If the Judge cannot have Appearance of the Parties, or Execution of his Judgments, here he is at the Wal, and can go no further.

Of very antient Time this was the maner of Proceding in this Realm, and the only Mean of reducing obſtinate Perſons to the Obedience of the Law.

It may appear by the antienter Statute or Act of Parlament in the 9th. Year of *Edward* II. that it was the old Cuſtom and Uſage of the Realm long before that Time. The Words are theſe: *Si aliqui propter ſuam Contumaciam manifeſtam excommunicentur; ac poſt* 40 *dies, Dies pro eorum Captione ſcribatur; & prætendunt ſe privilegiatos; & ſic denegatur Breve Regium pro Captione Corporum; Reſponſio Regis, Nunquam fuit negatum, nec negabitur in futuro.*

It is to be conſidered, whether this manifeſt Contumacy and wilful Diſobedience to the Magiſtrate and Authority, be not as well puniſhable, when the original Cauſe or Matter is as weighty. The Difference wherof doth nothing alter the Nature of the Diſobedience.

In this our Realm of very antient Time it hath been obſerved from time to time, that there was never Alteration made of any Law Eccleſiaſtical, altho' it had Appearance to benefit the State of the Clergy; but that it turned ever to ſome notable Prejudice.

III. *Concerning*

III. *Concerning Commutation of Penance.*

That there be no Commutation of Penance for Sin, but by the Order and Appointment of the Biſhop, with the Aſſent of the Dean and Chapter, or the moſt Part of them, or with the Aſſent of Six Preachers of that Dioces.

The Anſwer. 1. The Biſhop is ſufficient for this Matter. 2. It were good to inhibit Juſtices of Peace to commute; but to permit them only to puniſh corporally. And yet notwithſtanding, the Parties offending, not to be received into the Church, til they have don ſuch Penance, wherby the Congregation may be ſatisfied.

IV. *Concerning Diſpenſations.*

The Firſt Article.

The *Faculties* which did the greateſt Hurt in the Church of God, were three; *Viz.* Diſpenſation *De non promovend.* Diſpenſation for Pluralities of Benefices, And Diſpenſation for Non-reſidence.

The Second Article.

Theſe two laſt named Faculties have bred the Diſorders of making *Vage* Miniſters. Whereof have enſued two great Incommodities: one, and the chiefeſt of al, that the People is not taught. The other, that the Miniſters placed in Benefices, where the Paſtor is abſent, and having for the moſt part ſmal Allowance, do poſt from Place to Place, for their better Preferment: and reſting no where, reſpect neither their Life, nor Encreaſe in Knowledg. For men be careful for their Converſation, where they are to have Continuance. And ſmal Account can be taken, how he profiteth, that abideth no where long.

Anſwer. The Faculty *De non reſidendo* is ſo rare, as by the preſent Archbiſhop there was never any granted. And by the laſt Archbiſhop never any yielded unto, but by ſpecial Requeſts and Warrant from my Lords of her Majeſtys Council: and that to Men qualified in her Majeſtys Service, or otherwiſe greatly employed in the Common wealth. And therfore it needeth no ſuch Proviſion by Law.

The Faculty of Non-reſidence is alſo ſo rare, and granted in ſuch Reſpects, as ſithence the Time of this Archbiſhop there hath not been above one granted; and that to a Man of 80 years old; with whom the Law it ſelf diſpenſeth.

Beſide, that the Statute of the Realm provideth ſo ſharp a Penalty for Nonſidence by the Forfeiture of 10£. a Month, to be recoverd in the Exchequer; as no man careth to ſue for the Faculty: and if they do, it profiteth nothing. For that the Statute inflicteth the Puniſhment, al Faculties and Diſpenſation notwithſtanding, And a more ſevere Puniſhment cannot wel be deviſed.

Touching the Faculty of *Pluralities*, the Ground therof is this. Men of excellent Gifts and extraordinary Vertue, oftentimes have no Livings or very ſmal Living. And when they cannot attain ſo great as their Quality deſerveth; the Policy of the Church hath thought fit to grant to ſuch an one two Livings, as an extraordinary Reward for extraordinary Vertue. For if al Men could be made fit for all Livings; or al Livings for al maner of Men, there ſhould have needed no Diſpenſation of Pluralities; but foraſmuch as that cannot be, it is Lawful in ſuch caſe of Neceſſity, and for ſuch extraordinary Cauſes, to recede from the ſtrait and common Courſe of the Law. And ſo hath it been uſed in al Ages. Neither can it bee better policed, nor more reſtrained than of late it hath been in reſpect, both of Diſtance of Places, and the Value of their Parſonage, with great Caution both for their Hoſpitality and Preachings. Beſides that the Laws being Poſitive, that forbid Plurality, the Difference in reaſon is very ſmal between the little Benefices not far diſtant, and one great Benefice. And therfore no ſtrange thing, if by like Poſitive Law, there be admitted by Mitigation a Diſpenſation of the Rigor of Law.

Moreover, the Number of Benefices in *England*, being about 18000. And the Univerſities not able to furniſh the Third Part of them with ſufficient Men, it is better that one worthy man have two Benefices, than to be unfurniſhed of Living, or be obſcurely placed in a ſmal Pariſh or poor Living; or the ſame Benefices committed to two unlearned Men.

The Third Article.

That no Chaplain have two Cures if both amount above 40 £. in the Queens Books; or be 20 Miles diſtant.

The Fourth Article.

That none enabled to have two Cures ſhall enjoy the ſame, unleſs they be under the Value aforeſaid, and within 20 Miles Diſtant; and be Reſident upon one of them.

The Anſwer to the Third and Fourth Articles.

1. The Diſtance of Miles is not to be miſliked; but the Limiting of the Value is unreaſonable, and tendeth only to the impoveriſhing of the Miniſtry: Being a State as worthy of Living in many Reſpects as others of other Calling whatſoever, in reſpect of their Calling.

2. The beſt Gifts deſerve the beſt Rewards. And therefore it were better to make a Limitation, what Degrees of Schools ſhall only be enabled for the beſt Livings.

3. Dignities, Prebends, and Places in Colleges (as before) are required by Diſpenſation for Lay-men. Here the *Divine* is ſet at 40 £. If a Man would deal covertly to pul away Religion, how could he do it better?

The Fifth Article.

That no Dean of Cathedral Church, Prebendary, or other having Dignity, ſhal have more than one Benefice with Cure, beſides his Dignity.

The Sixth Article.

That no one have mo Dignities or Prebends than two.

The Anſwer to the Fifth and Sixth Arlicles.

1. It is very unreaſonable, and tendeth to the ſame End with the Third and Fourth Article, and wil diſcourage Men from the Miniſtry, and make a beggerly Clergy: far unapt to give Hoſpitality, or to do many other things required of them, and lookt for at their Hands.

2. It is alſo very inconvenient: for moſt of theſe Dignities are decayed within theſe laſt fifty Years very much. Greater Impoſitions for the Service of the Realm are layd upon them. Every thing to be required at double or treble Prices in Reſpect of that it was then at. And yet as great or greater Hoſpitality looked for.

The Seventh Article.

That they which may have Chaplains ſhall advance no more than their Number, til the Advanced dyeth, or otherwiſe one of two Benefices become void.

The Anſwer.

1. This is not to be miſliked, unleſs the Party be otherwiſe qualified than by the Chaplainſhip.
2. And yet Inconvenience may ariſe of it. For if a Chaplain doth not behave himſelf, as appertaineth, no reaſon he ſhould be retained in Service; and it were hard, not to allow another in ſuch a Caſe.

The Eighth Article.

That none ſhal be Chaplain, enabled to two Benefices, except he be Maſter of Arts, or allowed by the Ordinary, as ſufficient.

The *Anſwer*. It is very convenient.

The Ninth Article.

That none ſhall be Non-reſident, but ſuch as be continually attendant in the Houſes of ſuch as they are Chaplains unto.

The *Anſwer*. 1. To be attendant the greater part of the Year were ſufficient. For the other part of the Year they may be at their Cure. And beſides ſome have Chaplains which attend by Courſe. Which is very convenient.

2. This is very prejudicial for grave Men, required for Government in the Univerſities. Which may very wel diſcharge both Duties.

3. This overthroweth Reſidence in Cathedral Churches, Colleges, Deanries. So that they cannot be Attendant there, except they wil leave their Benefice, tho' it be but one.

The Tenth Article.

That they ſhall preach in Perſon yearly two Sermons, and four Sermons beſide, *per ſe vel per alium*.

The *Anſwer*. It is too eaſy. It is requiſite, that they ſhould preach mo Sermons, even in their own Perſons.

The Eleventh Article.

Laſtly, To conſider, whether it were not meet to abate the Numbers of the Chaplains of the Archbiſhops, and others under that Degree, that may by the Statute keep more than one Chaplain.

Anſwer. It is not meet. For thoſe of the Clergy that have Chaplains allowed, the Statute ſets down a good Conſideration. And there are not many ſuch. Beſides, it is lookt for, that they ſhould have Preachers about them, to furniſh the Want that is in moſt Dioceſſes.

The Twelfth Article.

That in Caſes of Pluralities and Non-reſidences, the Biſhops ſhall have the allowing of the Miniſter that ſhal ſerve the Cure in the Abſence of the Incumbent:

cumbent: And the Stipend of the ſaid Miniſter to be appointed by the Biſhop, according to the ſufficiency of the Miniſter. So that the ſame Stipend do not excede the third Part of the clear yearly Value of the Benefice.

Anſwer. This is very reaſonable, and according to Law.

The Thirteenth Article.

There is one Faculty of great Inconvenience, granted not only by the Court of *Faculties*, but by the Chancellor of every Dioces, *Viz.* the Diſpenſation of *Mariage* without Banns asking. By occaſion wherof Children make diſordered Matches without the Aſſent of their Parents; and Orphans are left to the Spoil of unthrift Perſons.

The *Anſwer.* 1. It may be ſo qualified, that no Inconvenience ſhal enſue therof. 2. There be divers reaſonable Occaſions that daily happen, which may hinder the thrice asking of Banns: which Cauſes are meet to be conſidered of, and allowed by the Ordinary, or his Deputy. 3. The Inconvenience, that is propoſed, is in moſt Dioceſes already met withal, by putting theſe Conditions in the Faculty, *Viz.* That they have their Governours Conſent; that there is no ſuit for Matrimony depending; no Precontract, nor no other Impediment: which the Party is by a Bond with Sureties bound unto. So that by this Means this Inconvenience is better met withal, than by asking the Banns thrice; which may be don, and yet theſe Impediments remain. 4. And ſince the Bonds have been qualified as is above ſaid, being about one Twelvemonth paſt, Experience doth teach that none of the pretended Inconveniences have happened.

A general Anſwer to al the Articles of Excommunication, Commutation and Diſpenſation.

Generally, this Alteration, confuſion and Abridgment of Exerciſe of that Juriſdiction, wil ſhortly decay the Profeſſion of the *Canon Law* and *Civil Law* together. Whereby divers now are bred up in Learning, in Languages, in Studies: ſo that they are enabled to ſerve the Realm in any Foreign Service, as wel as any one Sort of Learned Men in the Realm beſides.

NUMB: XL.

General Propoſitions; to be ſupplied with Proofs, by ſuch as his Grace ſhould appoint: and other Particulars to be gathered. Drawn up by Dr. Drury, *a Civilian, and ſent to the Archbiſhop of* Canterbury; *in order to prevent a Commiſſion of* Melius inquirendum; *Endeavoured by a Bil in Parliament.*

Chart. Archiepiſc. Whitg.

THAT the greateneſs of the Revenues of Noblemen, Knights and Gentlemen, may more juſtly and with greater Reaſon, (if there were either Juſtice or Reaſon in the one or the other) be carped at, than the Biſhops and Clergy, for the Portion by the Conqueror, and before and ſince, committed to their Diſpenſation; if Right diſpenſeth to an Heir, ſometimes of mean Qualities, and unable to perform thoſe Parts that firſt moved the Prince to that Allotment. And it often falls out, that the infinite Charges to erect a Lay man (whoſe Wiſdome and Learning oftentimes deſcends not with his Lands) into Honour and Government, ſerveth but for one Generation:

Whereas the Biſhopric is tranſferred by perpetual Succeſſion, to the fitteſt in Wiſdom, Learning and Vertue, for Government of the Church and Commonwealth; to be nominated at the Princes free Wil and Pleaſure, without any Charge to the Prince at al. And for this Cauſe the Colleges, Biſhopricks and other Eccleſiaſtical Dignities were endowed with ſo great Revenues. Hence may be inferred, how neceſſary and profitable a thing it is, for her Majeſty and the Commonwealth, to have the Biſhopricks, Dignities, Promotions, and Perſons Eccleſiaſtical, to be raiſed to the former State and Dignity, and to ſerve in thoſe Honorable Places, as heretofore they have don.

And here muſt be collected by *Stow*, or any other, what Biſhops and Clergymen, were Counſillors or Officers in Court, and at *Weſtminſter* and elſewhere, and Ambaſſadors, ever ſince the Conqueſt.

That the taking away of the Livings of the Church, the Diſſolutions of Archbiſhopricks and Biſhopricks, and Cathedral Churches, wil bring Religion into Contempt, withdraw the Subjects, wanting Inſtruction, from their Obedience; and hazzard the Kingdom. And that Neceſſity hath enforced the Princes, where ſuch Diſſolution hath been, with infinite Charges to erect the ſame again. Here eſpecially Proof would be made out of the Scriptures, and out of the Stories of this, and all other Countries, as wel Chriſtian or others; where in all Ages a Clergy hath been, and now is ſo neceſſary, that without it the Common Wealth could not ſtand. And therfore were ever, and ſtill are in great Honour and reverend Eſtimation.

The Premiſſes being true, her Majeſty, the Great Men, and Favourers of the Church and State; have juſt Cauſe to direct or procure ſpecial Choiſe of Knights and Burgeſſes for the next Parliament. And if by Choiſe of Burgeſſes the Ruine of the Church cannot be prevented, then whether it be convenient, that the Enforcement, Proof and Publication of ſome of the Premiſſes be ſet forth by Story and Scripture, at the Court and Croſs, by ſpecial Preachers and otherwiſe by printed Books, I leave to your Graces Wiſdom and better Conſideration.

And becauſe that it may be ſuſpected, that in every Dioces Obſervation is taken of the leaſt Breach of any Law Eccleſiaſtical, and with ſingle Intent, by procuring the Offenders Puniſhment, in the natural Place, and with the expreſs Pain, to work Reformation and Amendment (which they would be loth to ſee) but of malicious Purpoſe, by Exclamation to overthrow both Law, Perſons and Juriſdiction, in the great Aſſembly of Parliament: where no particular Cauſe, unles remedileſs in ordinary Courts was (as I have heard) wont to be produced, or come in Debate: therfore to meet with ſuch Malice and Exclamation, a Collection into Briefs of al the Abuſes, Fees, Exactions and Oppreſſions in the Courts and Officers Temporal, and of al Diſorders whatſoever in this Common Wealth and in the Government, Uſes, Cuſtoms, Laws and Procedings, and touching the Counſillers, or any Matter of State; is moſt neceſſary: to the Intent, that ſome of both the Houſes may thence for one Propoſition in Parliament, againſt one petty Diſorder in the Clergy be ready with Twenty in the ſame kind, as neer as may be, againſt ſome Abuſes in the Temporalty, of more Pernition to the Common Wealth, and of greater Weight and Conſequence. That ſo good Acts may be provided for Reformation of both; or both reſt under the Coertion of the Law, ſufficiently already provided.

For there is no Abuſe in the Clergy or Church, not puniſhable, either by Statute, Canon or Eccleſiaſtical Law, or by both. And therfore it is a very malicious and perverſe Courſe, to make Complaint and Exclamation to the Law-makers againſt Abuſes in general, and not to procure the Offender in particular to be puniſhed.

If her Majeſty were truly informed in theſe, and the Notes by me delivered to your Grace the laſt Parliament, upon Petition, or otherwiſe, to be by the whole State of the Clergy exhibited, and not faintly or fearfully purſued; it cannot be, but Reſtitution of the State and Perſons Eccleſiaſtical to former Dignity and Eſtimation would follow; or at leaſt no further Depreſſion.

If in this Courſe Suſpition of Danger, or Diſpleaſure be conceived, it muſt be with ſound Judgment conſidered, whether long forbearing Complaints, and Prayer for the Redreſs of rough Dealing, and Concelement of the Difference between the Advancement and Service of the one and the other, be not far more, and down righter Danger. That it wil bring al down, as hitherto it hath don by Piece-meal one half.

Tho' the Specification of theſe Generalities, and the Proofs and Confirmations to be drawn from ſo large a Scope, ſeem tedious; yet being divided among many the Burthen wil be very light; and the Thing don, of great Uſe and Profit.

NUMB. XLI.

An Original Letter of Mary *Queen of* Scots *own Writing: to the Treaſurer* Burghley *: To favour her Cauſe, with the Queen and to aſſiſt* Mauveſier, *the* French *Ambaſſador with the Queen in that Affair.*

MSS. Burghlian.

MONSIEUR, Le Grand Theſaurier. Ayant ecrit ces jours paſſees a La Royne, Ma Dame, ma bonne Sæur, pour luy ramantenoir La ſincerité de mon Intention ver ſelle, & la grand Neceſſité que jay de ſon octroy en mes Requeſtes paſſees; je panÇois par meſme moyen vous faire ce mot pour vous prier me y ettre favourable en ſon endroit, en tant que ſelon ſon Service, & ma Commodité, elle pouroit me favorſer, & d'avantaſge obliger a elle. Mays me trouvant un peu mal, & Laſchée de ma depeſche je fus contreinte de la remettre juſques a preſent, ayant prié cepandent le Sieur de *Mauveriere*, Ambaſſadeur du Roy tres Chreſtien, Monſieur mon bon frere, de vous communiquer le tout, & impetrer votre ayde & Support vers la ditte Dame, ma bonne Sœur. Enquoy maſſurant qu'il n'aura manquér, ne vous troubleray de plus long Diſcours, ſi non vous prier d'avoir eſguard a ma longue Captivité, & a la Verité de tout ce que l'on a voulu me mettre a Subs. Et ſi je ne ſuis privée de tout ſenſe ce que je puis pretendre pour mon meilleur, & de ce que jai le plus cher voiant l'eſtaſt ou je ſuis, & a l'heure je maſſure tant de vottre ſageſſe, que vous jugeray ayſement, que je ne tands a meriter deſtre tant ſoupſonnée, & en cet endroit je finiray, par mes recommendations a vottre bonne grace, & de celle de ma Dame de *Burley* votre famme: priant Dieu vous donner a tout deux le contentement que deſirez. De *Shefeld* ce xx de Nouvembre.

Vottre entierement bonne amye.

MARIE R.

NUMB. XLII.

FRATERNUM & amicum de reſartiendâ inter Anglicanæ Eccleſiæ Doctores & Miniſtros Pace, Conſilium.

SI alii alios mordetis & devoratis (ait *Paulus*) videte, ne viciſſim alii ab aliis conſumamini. Ego verò, ſi *Gallos* a *Gallis* diſſidentes (inquam) mutuis vulneribus confectos extremam penè ruinam minitari. Si *Græcas* Eccleſias cum *Græcis* Eccleſiis de Ritibus & Ceremoniis primùm, tum verò de primis noſtræ Fidei Articulis rixantes, quaſi ex opinato miſera *Turcæ* Servitute oppreſſos, occubuiſſe, videtis; cavete, Viri Fratres, ne alienis periculis minus edocti, veſtro tandem malo ſapere cogamini. Nec vos, obſecro, decipiat, quod de ſumma Apoſtolicæ Doctrinæ inter vos convenientes, quod arctiſſimum Pacis vinculum bonis omnibus eſſe debet, de rebus minoris momenti diſcrepare videamini. Ea eſt enim in controverſiis omnibus multis periculis comperta humanæ Naturæ imbecillitas, ut ex tenuiſſimâ ſimultatis ſcintillâ diſcordiæ flagrantiſſimum incendium naſcatur. Idq; præſertim in Religionis Cauſis, ubi Dei [Gloria] ſalus propria cujuſq; & proximi Charitas prætexitur, quorum ſeu ſtudio, ſeu zelo, ut quiſq; inconſiderantius ardet, eo vehementius ſemel conceptam opinionem urget. Quam ut ponat non flagris, non flammis, ſed rectâ tantum ratione, erroríſq; patefactione, obtinebimus. Immò, quod veteri Proverbio dicitur, *Ignem gladio ne fodito*, in hoc negotio, vos id experiri non ſine mærore video; nempe lites ex litibus ſeri, & ex Logomachiis ſeria tandem diſſidia creari. *MSS.* Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

Quid? non videtis quo res veſtræ ſint progreſſæ; ex quo vis illis diſceptandis, vel potius excitandis cæpit adhiberi? Jam Factionum nomina, ſeditionis veræ faces, utriq; parti impoſita ſunt. Jam non tantum famoſis Libellis, utrâq; ex parte acerbiſſimè ſcriptis, inteſtina veſtra Diſcordia plebeculæ innoteſcit, ſed Sectatores novis nominibus comparantur, Suggeſtus ſanctiſſimo Chriſti Evangelio publicando dicati, vocibus debacchantium in fratres, rabularum inſtar, perſtrepunt. Deniq;, ut a ceremoniis, ita Sacramentis alii aliorum abhorrent Altera pars Antagoniſtarum (quos putat) fruſtraneos labores & temerarios auſus ridet. Altera Riſum iſtum, tanquam *Epicureum*, & Chriſto, de cujus ſincero cultu agitur, contumelioſum odit; & non ſine multorum Applauſu, apud vulgus traducit. Altera Regia authoritate, carceribus, proſcriptionibus. Altera querelis, contumeliis, & quibuſcunq; modis poteſt, ſuas partes tuetur, atq; defendit.

Itaq; fit, ut ſenſim malum ſerpat, & in apertum Schiſma viam ſibi clanculariam ſternat, quam niſi jam nactum ſit, vobis fore propediem, ut nanciſcatur, prædico, (utinam arioler) Et ut illi maturè occurratis per ſanctiſſimum Dei nomen, per *Angliæ* Gentis Salutem; deniq; per omnia Sacra atq; humana, quæ omnia hic periclitari videntur, obſecro, obteſtórq;. Controverſia Eccleſiaſtica eſt, eccleſiaſticè, non hoſtiliter diſceptetur, non clamoſis ex ſuggeſtu debacchationibus, non carceribus, non ferro, ſed amicâ, ſed Chriſtianâ, ſed Prophetica ſtudiorum, conſiliorum, & rationum collatione, negotium agatur & terminetur. *Spiritus Prophetarum Prophetis ſubjiciantur. Non enim eſt Seditionis author Deus, ſed Pacis; ut in omnibus Eccleſiis Sanctorum.* 1 Corinth. 14. 32, 33.

Eſt quidem (ut ingenue agnoſco) Accuſantium & Accuſatorum alia atq; alia Conditio; ſed ut omnia non omnibus licent, ſic ſunt res in Eccleſia quædam, quarum corruptelam vel minimus in regno Chriſti miniſter ſe quodam ſuo jure, & officii conſcientia arguere & reprendere putat.

Quæ autem deſiderantur in veſtris Eccleſiis ab his qui accuſantium partes ſuſtinent, ad duo genera refero.

Prius eorum eſt, quæ ipſi Miniſterio Eccleſiaſtico tam proxime cohærent, ut illa eſſentialia merito dici queant.

Poſterius ea tantum continet, quæ per ſe ἀδιάφορα, & media cum ſint, non niſi ædificationis & Pacis Eccleſiæ commodo æſtimari debent.

Prioris generis ſunt, ut cum de Fidei ſummis capitibus conveniat (ut per Dei Gratiam inter vos benè convenit) hic Apoſtolicus Ordo ſtatuatur; Nempe, ut ſint Paſtores, qui Verbo Dei explicando & applicando, publicis precibus fundendis, & Sacramentorum adminiſtrationi vacent.

Presbyteri, qui unà cum Paſtoribus, Diſciplinæ & Ordinis conſervationi præſint. Diaconi, qui menſis, id eſt pauperum Miniſterio inſerviant.

Act. 2, 42. *Hieroſolymitana* Eccleſia ipſis Apoſtolis, pro Paſtoribus, uſa eſt in quorum Act. 15. 6. Doctrina, & Oratione & Fractione panis, perdurabat. Presbiteros habuit, qui Diſciplinæ,& judicio Eccleſiaſtico præfuerunt cum Apoſtolis in Concilio *Hieroſol.* Habuit & Diaconos, *Stephanum*, *Philippum*, & alios quinq;, qui rebus pauperum operam navarunt. Servavit Eccleſia *Romana* heroico illo Apoſtolorum tempore eundem ordinem in Paſtoribus, Presbyteris & Diaconis, quibus Rom. 12. 8. ſingulis, ſui & proprii cujúſq; muneris Memoriam refricat *Paulus*, Paſtoribus, ut exhortentur, Presbiteris, ut præſint cum diligentia, Diaconis, ut diſtribuant cum ſimplicitate, & miſereantur cum hilaritate. Nec Apoſtolorum tantum ætate in Eccleſia hunc ordinem viguiſſe certum eſt, ſed aliis omnibus deinceps ſæculis, quibus illi ſua quædam conſtitit integritas. Quod in Eccleſia *Lugdunenſi* facile animadvertas, quæ altero, poſt Chriſtum paſſum, ſæculo, ſuorum Martyrum nomine ad fratres *Aſianos* ſcribens, Epiſcoporum, Presbyterorum, & Diaconorum meminit. Tertio etiam ſæculo *Romæ* idem obtinuit, ubi *Xiſtus* Paſtoris officio functus eſt, *Dioniſius* Presbyterium exercuit. *Laurentius* diſtribuit, & miſertus eſt.

Hanc Politiam ſecutæ ſunt etiam *Africanæ* Eccleſiæ. Quod S. *Cypriani* Concillii præfationem legentibus apertè conſtare poteſt. Sic enim habet. Cum in unum *Carthagini* conveniſſent Cal. *Septemb.* Epiſcopi plurimi ex provincia *Africa*, *Numidia*, *Mauritania*, cum Presbyteris & Diaconis, præſente etiam plebis maxima parte, *&c.* Sed quid tam proxima ſæculis Apoſtolicis tempora refero? *Angli* ipſi vel ſeptimo ab Apoſtolis ſæculo hanc εὐταξίαν coluerunt. Anno 664. Legantur Acta Synodi in Cœnobio *Pharenſi* Rege *Oſuio* coactæ. Illic nominatim audies cum Epiſcopis permultis *Agathonem* Presbyterum, & *Jaoobum* Diaconum iſti Synodo interfuiſſe. Hic verò Ordo, cum tota antiquitate ſummo Eccleſiæ commodo retentus & obſervatus, videtur ab Accuſatoribus meritò requiri,

Accuſati verò partim ſe illum habere, partim quæ deſunt ſine periculoſâ florentiſſimi Status mutatione in Eccleſiam veſtram invehi non poſſe reſpondent.

Inſtant Accuſantes, & Libellis & Concionibus Accuſatos, Paſtores, Presbyteros & Diaconos habere conſtanter pernegant, rem eſſe tanti momenti vociferantur, ut nulli alii poſt habenda ſit, etiamſi fractus dilabatur orbis.

Accuſati aras & focos propugnant libellis, concionibus, authoritate Regia, carceribus, proſcriptionibus.

At meo quidem judicio, utriſq; longè æquior & ſanctior, Regníq; tranquillitati conſervandæ convenientior via in promptu eſt. Nempe, ut & Chriſti ſpirituale Regnum (id eſt, Eccleſiæ Adminiſtratio) ſpiritualiter, Legibus Chriſti, & Apoſtolicis Inſtitutis funditur, & mutatio nulla inſignis Regni ſtatim inferatur, quod non adeo difficile Accuſatis fore confido, ſiquid juſtè debeant confiderent, nec Accuſantibus grave, ſiquid poſſint, non obliviſcantur. Quid quæritur? Nonne, ut Eccleſiæ *Anglicanæ* paſcantur Verbo, regantur Presbytero, ornentur Diaconatu? Age, fiat. Non habent Paſtores, fateor; ſed habent, qui Verbum prædicent Epiſcopos, Decanos, Archidiaconos, Doctores, Evangeliſtas; Habent qui Preces fundant, & Sacramenta diſtribuant; Curiones, Vicarios & Lectores. At unum eundémq; hominem, id eſt, Paſtorem tribus iſtis vacare oportet: Fateor quoq;, & id ut fiat, enitendum eſſe judicio: quod commodè meâ Sententia fiet, ſi primùm conſideremus iſta officiorum nomina eſſe partim primaria, partim ſecundaria. Primaria voco quæ primo & neceſſario miniſtro conveniunt; ut Evangeliſta, ut Doctor. Secundaria, quæ ſecundo & ultra primam Vocationem Miniſtro conveniunt, ut Decanus, & hodie Epiſcopus: Quæ non ratione

one primi Miniſterii hominibus conveniunt : Qualia ſunt omnia ſuper intendentium nomina. Nihil verò impedit, quo minus unus idemq; Miniſter duobus nominibus inſigniatur pro diverſa functione, quam exercet in Eccleſia.

Ergo ſi Epiſcopus habeat proprium gregem quem doceat, quem precibus Deo commendet, quem Sacramentis alat, erit Paſtor, quem admodum Epiſcopus eſt, ſeu Diocæſios ſuperintendens, ratione Secundarii Miniſterii, ordinis cauſa illi commiſſi. *Jacobus* præfuit (ut multis videtur) omnibus Apoſtolis in Conſilio *Hieroſol.* Fuit igitur hoc nomine Præſes, & (ut loquuntur quidam Patres) Epiſcopus Apoſtolorum : & tamen non deſtitit ab Apoſtolatu, quem ſibt commiſſum a Chriſto ipſe norat.

Ergo Epiſcopi, Decani, Archidiaconi, Nomina ſunt ſecundaria.

Primaria ſint iſta, Paſtor, Evangeliſta, id eſt, Paſtoris Vicarius. Ubi enim Paſtor adeſt, Evangeliſtæ nullus locus relinquitur. Retineatur Paſtoratus, tanquam ſolus neceſſarius, & unius Diœceſios Parœchiæ omnes in Decanatus, ſeu Archidiaconatus diſtribuantur. Decanatus, ſeu Archidiaconatus in Paſtoratus. Paſtoratus tribus aut quatuor ad ſummum parœchiis conſtent: quæ communem habeant Paſtorem, qui ſingulis Dominiis diebus harum, in prima primo, in ſecunda ſecundo, tertia tertio, quarta quarto concionetur, Catecheſin exponat, baptizet, & cænam Dominicam, tempore huic Regno ſolemni adminiſtret. Plebs ſequatur Paſtorem: Soli invalidi, ſervi & gravioribus detenti negotiis excuſentur. In quorum gratiam ordinariæ preces matutino & ſerotino temporibus fiant in tribus Paræchiis, unde Paſtor in quarto concionaturus, abeſt.

Sic diſtributis Dioceſios Paræchiis in Paſtoratus, ex illis exibilentur Vicariorum & Curionum Nomina, cum cæteris id genus Papiſticam rerum Sacrarum nundinationem redolentibus, ſoli Epiſcopi, Decani, Archidiaconi, Doctores & Evangeliſtæ habeant, quíſq; proprium Paſtoratum, cui ſpecialiter invigilent ; idq; hoc modo, Primus hujus vel illius Diæceſis Paſtoratus commendetur Epiſcopo, ad cujus Inſtructionem adjungatur illi Collega propter Epiſcopatus, id eſt, ſuperintendentiæ, diſtrahenſia negotia.

Decani & Archidiaconi habeant & proprios Paſtoratus, ubi habitent, & exequantur omnia, quæ a fido Paſtore ſuperius exacta ſunt, non obſtantibus Decanatus & Archidiaconatus ſecundariis functionibus, quibus tantum ſecundas Vigilias debent.

Reliquis verò Paſtoratibus ex Doctoribus & Evangeliſtis præficiantur Paſtores, habitâ prius ratione Doctrinæ, morum, & dexteritate in docendo. Vocentur a plebe, mittantur ab Epiſcopo hoc modo ; Plebs, cui deeſt. Paſtor, roget Epiſcopum, ut ſibi idoneum præficiat, Epiſcopus roget proximam Academiam, ut ad ſe mittat doctum & probum ; (niſi forte proponat Plebs aliquem de ſuo cætu dotibus animi commendabilem.) Ubi ad Epiſcopum, ſive ab Academia accercitus, ſive a Plebe commendatus acceſſerit, admiſſis ad cognitionem electionis, ejus Decanatus unde Plebs cenſetur, Paſtoribus examen fiet. Quod ſi idoneus compertus fuerit, deducetur ab Epiſcopo, vel ab Epiſcopi Deputato Decano, Archidiacono, aut alio aliquo Paſtore, & poſt concionem proponetur populo, conceſſo quindecim dierum ſpacio, intra quod licebit Plebi oppoſitionis cauſas (ſiquas forte habuerit) diſceptandas Epiſcopo, & ejuſdem Decanatus Paſtoribus proponere. Ubi autem approbatus fuerit, Epiſcopus, vel ab eo Deligatus Paſtor, publicè & coram tota Eccleſia Paſtorem novitium manus impoſitione, & ſolenni ritu, conſecrabit ex Formula huic Regno uſitatâ.

Hic Ordo, ut cum Apoſtolico congruit, ita aut parum, aut nihil a veſtro variat ; niſi quod in judiciis Eccleſiaſticis Paſtores Epiſcoporum Aſſeſſores conſtituuntur ; quod *Niceni* Conſilii Decretis ſancitum erat. Hactenus de *Paſtoribus*, eorum electione, approbatione & ordinatione.

Sequitur ut de *Præsbiteris* loquamur. Eorum autem duo ſunt genera. Quod *Paulus* ſignificat his verbis ; *Presbyteri qui.* (1 *Timoth.* 5.) *benè præſunt duplici honore digni ſunt* ; *maximè hi qui Doctrinæ vacent.* De his dictum eſt : Nihil enim aliud ſunt quàm Paſtores. Reſtat ergo ut de ſecundo genere dicamus.

Habet *Anglicana* Politia, & maximè *Londinenſis*, civilem ordinem, longè eximium, quem convellere, nedum evertere, nec velim, nec auſim. Immò, omnibus Civitatibus talem exemplo eſſe omnibus votis exoptem. Sed de Politia Eccleſiaſtica hic ago, quæ Presbyteros adeſſe Paſtoribus exigit, ut Majori Aldermannos (quos vocant) adeſſe videmus. Major Magiſtratus, Paſtor Chriſti Miniſter eſt. Eundem finem habet utérq; nempe Pacis & Eccleſiæ tranquilitatis, bonorúmq; conſervationis ſtudium. Sed diverſis modis mediíſq; eò contendunt. Ille minis, metu, pænis & ſuppliciis malos coercet. Hic dulci blandáq; Chriſti ſuadela; id eſt, ex verbo Dei gratuitis vitæ æternæ pollicitationibus, fraterna correctione, admonitione, & correptione; Et (ſi durities delinquentis ita exigat) Excommunicatione, in officio retinet bonos, & malos a grege ſegregat. Hoc quando, & erga quos ſit præſtandum, per Presbyteros quaſi ſuos ocellos, videt, & cum eis de eo præſtando deliberat, & ſtatuit Paſtor.

Ergo ut Paſtor *Anglicus* Presbiteros habeat, neceſſe eſt; quod facile etiam fiet, nec magnâ præſentis Formæ mutatione. Cum de Paſtoribus loquuti ſumus, reliquimus Epiſcopos, Decanos, & Archidiaconos ſuperintendentes: exegimus tantum, ut cum Evangeliſtis proprios Paſtoratus gubernarent. Presbyteros volo etiam ſumi de media Politia, quæ nunc locum habet, qui huic Provinciæ ſerviant, nempe *Churchouorneros* (quos vocant) nempe hoc ordine atq: Forma.

Parœchiæ unius cujúſq; Paſtoratus proponant ſingulæ proprio Paſtori lectum aliquem ſeniorem integritate vitæ, judicio & experientia celebrem: ita ut quatuor Parœchiæ quatuor proponant ſeniores. Eorum nomina referantur Epiſcopo; & niſi intercedat quædam oppoſitio, ut Paſtores ordinentur. Hi ſingulis Parœchiis invigilent, certis ſingulorum menſium diebus familias omnes inviſant, de dilectione mutuâ maritos, & reliquis in familiam officiis commonefaciant, ſiquid ſit Diſcordiæ aut ſimultatis, reſarciant, per ſe, aut adhibitis in Conſiſtorio Paſtore, & tribus aliis collegis, ex verbo Dei, & fraterna charitatis Regula, componant. Siquid eſt gravi cenſura dignum, aut excommunicandus aliquis videatur, res ad Epiſcopum referatur, qui cum his & aliquis Decanatus Paſtoribus & Presbyteris eam diiudicet. Hujus Eccleaſticæ correctionis defectu multi creantur infrugiferi magiſtratibus Labores, vitia domeſtica aluntur; & donec in aperta facinora erumpant, foventur, quæ omnia Seniorum opera extingui poſſent. Multæ ſimultates maritorum, levibus Suſpicionibus nixæ, ſubito ſedarentur Privatæ. Preces in familiis frequentarentur; blandæ ex Verbo Dei Admonitiones in officio multos potius retinerent, & a vitiis revocarent, quam publica ſupplicia in hoc Regno plus ſatis ordinaria; Comeſſationes, alea, Veſtimentorum a paucis annit immodicè luxurians Curioſitas, cohiberentur. Deniq; cœtus Eccleſiaſtici creſcerent, & celebriores & auguſtiores fierent.

Quod attenet ad Cauſas matrimoniales, Hæreſium & Schiſmatum diſceptationem, ordo hactenus uſurpatus in hoc Regno retineri poteſt; modo *Banna* (quæ vocant) inordinati homines, magno Eccleſiæ detrimento, matrimonii dedecore, & Familiarum injuria, redimere poſt hac non permittantur.

Sequuntur *Diaconi*, quibus caretis magno diſpendio pauperum & divitum. Patuit ſuperius hunc ordinem habere Deum authorem per Apoſtolos eum inſtituentem, non eſt mirum ſi non poſſit contemni citra multa incommoda, quæ paſſim malè ordinatæ Eccleſiæ experiuntur.

In pauperibus ſublevandis duo potiſſimum ſpectantur; prius, ne fame & nuditate pereat, qui eodem nobiſcum Chriſti ſanguine redemptus eſt. Secundum ne aut paupertatis tædio, frater Deum blaſphemet, & ut diteſcat, malis artibus ſe applicet; aut ne Chriſti eleemoſynis ſaginati ceſſatores, otio ad vitia impellantur; ut prius efficias non ſedúlo ſolum & fideli, ſed bono, & locorum conſolationis non ignaro, œconomo tibi opus eſt: ut ſecundum, prudenti & experto indiges.

Horum œconorum defectu, pereunt bona multa, collata in indignos. Qui indigent ut plurimum non juvantur; aut ea parſimonia juvantur, ut obmurmurent, deſpondeant animum, non ſolentur eos diſtributores, ſed potius irritent minis. Hinc ſit, ut mendicent & furentur, & tandem miſerè pereant. Itaq; non ſolum vobis Lictoribus opus eſt, qui mendicos & errones coerceant, ſed multo magis Diaconis, qui ſolentur, & paupertatem exhortationibus leniant. Quod ſi ea fide & diligentia præſtent, quâ *Stephanus Hieroſolymis*, *Laurentius Romæ* præſtitit, non dubito quin multo minoribus diſpendiis, quàm ſunt ea, quæ quotidie ſuſtinetis. Infinitos adoleſcentes alatis, quos aut penuria crudeliter enecat, aut ad crimina, & inde ad patibula, adigit.

Velim itaq; totidem creari, & eodem ordine in ſingulis Paſtoratibus Diaconos, quot & Presbyteros exegimus.

Hi colligant pecunias, collectas diſpenſent fideliter, & dati & accepti rationes conficiant, rationem reddant, ſingulis in menſibus ſemel, coram proprio Paſtore & tota Eccleſia. Singulis hebdomatibus viſant ſuos pauperes, conſolentur & exhortentur. Tutores ſe gerant, & procuratores Viduarum & orphanorum, A cæna paræchiam circumambulent, & palantes orphanos, & peregrinos hoſpitio excipi curent: ne tantâ ſeveritate, & citra antegreſſam admonitionem & inſtructionem pauperes pro mendicis, & deſerti pro erronibus in latumias & piſtrinum dedantur. Hoc ſi fiat, multi, qui prius facta pudoris & famæ jactura, vel in cippis, vel in *Brigdovelli*, laqueo vitam finiunt, ſervabuntur Regni defenſioni, & magnis Reipublicæ uſibus. Deus interim ſui ordinis, & Chriſti ſui vicariorum pauperum obſervatoribus benedicet.

Quia verò magna parœchiarum differentia eſt, tum in numero, tum in facultatibus parœchianorum; ſi quando neceſſitas exigat (ut exigere perpetuò ferè poteſt) Archidiaconi judicio (ut aliquid quod Nomini ſuo, & antiquis Canonibus reſpondeat faxint) ditiores parœchiæ tenuioribus de ſuis facultatibus impertiri excitabuntur.

Hæc trium in Eccleſiâ miniſteriorum ad Apoſtolicam regulam delineata reformatio, ideo, vobis facilior eſt, quod vobis veſtros Epiſcopos, Decanos, Archidiaconos, & Evangeliſtas, qui erunt vobis Paſtores, conſervet. *Churchovocueros*, qui erunt Presbyteri & Diaconi, in veram & legitimam Eccleſiæ tutelam collocat.

Eſſet verò optandum, ut ex Canonum præſcripto, & omnium etiam Eccleſiarum Papiſticarum exemplo, bis in anno ſuorum Paſtorum & Presbyterorum Synodum cogeret Epiſcopus, aut ſaltem ſemel in anno, ut ſtatuit in *Anglia* Synodus *Harnfordienſis*.

Quia verò qui Paſtores in ſingulis Eccleſiis debent indies ſtudia Theolog. ita excolere, ut magis ac magis ſuo muneris obeundo idonei reddantur; eſſet etiam optandum, ut in ſingulis Decanatibus Doctores Theologici inſtituerentur, qui locis opportunis, & diebus, in Hebdomade bis aut ter, Theologiam e ſacris Oraculis illis exponerent.

Atq; ut his ſuppeditet fundus Eccleſiaſticus, curandum eſt Authoritate Regiâ, & Regni majorum Ordinum communi Decreto; ut Eccleſiæ quæ ſupereſſe debent bona, ſarta tecta maneant, non in alios uſus ab Aulicis, Nobilibus & Mercatoribus transferantur.

Hæc ſicut quæ pertinent ad ſedandum veſtrarum Controverſiarum priorem partem; Secunda, ut jam dixi, talis eſt, ut quod Ædificationi & Paci Eccleſiæ maximè ſervit, id optimum cenſeatur. Superintendentiæ Epiſcopi, Decan. & Archidiacon. non obſunt; immò, plurimùm prodeſſe poſſunt, retineantur. De Ritibus & Ceremoniis, ſiquid ſit tale, ut facile eo careat Eccleſia, non contendant Superintendentes, ſiquid ſit non omnino ſuperſtitioſum, non turbent ob id Eccleſiam Chriſti *Accuſantes*.

NUMB. XLIII.

Cowper, *lately made Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *to the Lord Treaſurer Lord* Burghley*: For a Commiſſion to carry down with him; To make Enquiry after Recuſants.*

My Duty conſidered, Right Honorable,

Literæ Epiſcopales pen. me.

HAVING ſome Care of that Charge, wherunto it hath pleaſed her Majeſty to aſſign me, I am bold at this Time to be ſuitor to your Honour: that you would vouchſafe to be a Means, that I may go into the Country with ſuch Authority and Direction of Aſſiſtance there; that mine Endeavour may take effect among them.

I being deſirous ſomewhat to know the State of the Country, willed the Archdeacon of *Hampſhire* to make Enquiry of ſuch as be obſtinate Recuſants. And I am certified, that there be already preſented by the Churchwardens to the Number of 400: And in ſome one Pariſh 40 or 50. And yet it is thought certainly, that by the Slackneſs of the Churchwardens a great Number more are omitted. Wherefore the Country being in ſuch Caſe, I am of Opinion under Correction, that there will need extraordinary Authority: and that to be committed not to many. For I underſtand, there be divers of great Countenance will ſpeak very well, and deal very hollowly. If it might be lawful for me to wiſh, I could deſire either Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, or Commiſſion of *Oyer and Terminer*, or both. The Perſons that I can be informed of, to be the ſoundeſt, and moſt willing are the Lord *De la Ware*, living often about the City, Sir *Richard Norton* Sir *William Kingsmill*, Mr. *Kingsmil*, that is Atturney of the Court of *Wards*, Mr. *Flemming*, Recorder of the City of *Wincheſter* and uſually living there. And if it ſhall pleaſe you to have any Eccleſiaſtical Men, I think theſe very fit, Dr. *Bilſon*, Dr. of Divinity, Dr. *Ebden*, or Dr. *Reniger*.

But I muſt leave the whole Matter to the Conſideration of your Honours; only I humbly deſire you to have ſome ſpecial Order therunto. For I fear, if I bring not ſome extraordinary Direction from your Honours, they will conceive, that there is not ſo great Care taken to have diſorderly Perſons repreſt, as all good Subjects know that there is. The Lord preſerve your Honour in Health to his Glory. This 2. of *May*, 1584.

Your Honours in Chriſt to command,

THOMAS WINTON.

NUMB. XLIV.

Three Prayers uſed at Court and Parlament, after Parries *Treaſon.*

A Prayer for al Kings, Princes, Countries and People, which do profeſs the Goſpel: And eſpecially for our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth *: Uſed in her Majeſtys Chapel, and may be uſed of all Perſons within her Majeſtys Dominions.*

O! Lord God of Hoſts, moſt Loving and Merciful Father; whoſe Power no Creature is able to reſiſt; Who of thy great Goodneſs haſt promiſed to grant the Petitions of ſuch as ask in thy Sons Name; we moſt humbly beſeech thee, to ſave and defend all Princes, Magiſtrates, Kingdoms, Countries and People, which have received, and do profeſs thy Holy Word and Goſpel: and namely, this Realm of *England*, and thy ſervant ELIZABETH our Queen: whom thou haſt hitherto wonderfully preſerved from manifold Perils, and ſundry Dangers, and of late reveled and fruſtrated the Traiterous Practices and Conſpiracies of divers againſt Her. For the which and all other thy great Goodneſs towards us, Wee give thee moſt humble and hearty Thanks: beſeeching thee in the Name of thy dear Son *Jeſus* Chriſt, and for his ſake, ſtill to preſerve and continue her unto us; and to give her long Life and many Years, to rule over this Land.

O! Heavenly Father, the Practices of our Enemies, and the Enemies of thy Word and Truth againſt her and us, are manifeſt and known unto thee. Turn them, O! Lord, if it be thy bleſſed Will, or overthrow and confound them. For thy Names ſake, ſuffer them not to prevail. Take them, O! Lord, in their crafty Wilineſs, that they have invented; and let them fall into the Pit, which they have digged for others. Permit them not ungodly, to triumph over us. Diſcomfort them, diſcomfort them, O Lord, which truſt in their own Multitude, and pleaſe themſelves in their Subtil Devices, and wicked Conſpiracies.

O! Loving Father, we have not deſerved the leaſt of theſe thy Mercies, which we crave. For we have ſinned and grievouſly offended thee. We are not worthy to be called thy Sons. We have not been ſo thankful unto thee, as we ſhould for thy unſpeakable Benefits powred upon us: We have abuſed this Long Time of Peace and Proſperity. We have not obeyed thy Word. We have had it in our Mouths but not in Heart: in outward Appearance but not in Deed. We have lived careleſly, we have not known the Time of our Viſitation. We have deſerved utter Deſtruction. But thou, O! Lord, art merciful, and ready to forgive. Therefore wee come to thy Throne of Grace, confeſſing and acknowledging thee to be our onely Refuge in all Times of Peril and Daunger: and by the Means of thy Son we moſt heartily pray thee to forgive us our Unthankfulneſs, Diſobedience, Hypocriſy, and all other our Sinns; to turn from us thy heavy Wrath and Diſpleaſure, which we have juſtly deſerved, and to turn our Hearts truly unto thee. That daily we may encreaſe in all Goodneſs, and continually more and more fear thy Holy Name.

So ſhall we glorify thy Name, and ſing unto thee in Pſalmes and Hymnes and Spiritual Songs. And thy Enemies and Ours ſhall know themſelves to be but Men, and not able by any Means to withſtand Thee, nor to hurt thoſe whom thou haſt received into thy Protection and Defence. Grant theſe Things, O! Lord of Power, and Father of Mercy, for thy Chriſts ſake. To whom with thee and thy Holy Spirit, be all Honour and Glory for ever and ever, Amen.

A Prayer and Thankſgiving for the Queen: Uſed of all Knights and Burgeſſes in the High Court of Parliament. And very requiſite to be uſed, and continued of all her Majeſties Loving Subjects.

O! Almighty and moſt merciful God; who doſt pitch thy Tents round about thy People, to deliver them from the Bands of their Enemies; Wee thy humble Servants, which have ever of old ſeen thy Salvation, do fall down, and proſtrate our ſelves with Praiſe and Thankſgiving to thy Glorious Name. Who haſt in thy tender Mercy, from Time to Time ſaved and defended thy Servant ELIZABETH, our moſt Gracious Queen, not only from the Hands of ſtrange Children, but alſo of late reveled and made fruſtrate his bloudy and moſt barbarous Treaſon, who being her natural Subject, moſt unnaturally violating thy divine Ordinance, hath ſecretly ſought to ſhed her Bloud, to the great Diſquiet of thy Church, and utter Diſcomfort of our Souls. The Snare is hewn in pieces: But upon thy Servant doth the Crown flouriſh The wicked and bloud-thirſty Men think to devour *Jacob*, and to lay waſt his Dwelling Place. But thou, O! God, who ruleſt in *Jacob*, and unto the Ends of the World, doſt daily teach us ſtill to truſt in thee for all thy Great Mercies; and not to forget thy mercifull Kindneſs ſhewed to her that feareth thy Name.

O! Lord, We confeſs to thy Glory and Praiſe, that thou only haſt ſaved us from Deſtruction: becauſe thou haſt not given Her over for a Prey to the Wicked. Her Soul is delivered, and we are eſcaped. Hear us now, we pray thee, O! thou merciful Father, and continue forth thy Loving kindneſs toward thy Servant, and evermore, to thy Glory and our Comfort, keep her in Health with long Life and Proſperity. Whoſe Reſt and only Refuge is in Thee, O God of her Salvation. Preſerve her, as thou art wont, preſerve her from the Snare of the Enemy, from the Gathering together of the Froward, from the Inſurrection of wicked Doers, and from all the Traiterous Conſpiracies of thoſe which privily lay wait for her Life. Grant this, O! Heavenly Father for *Jeſus* Chriſts ſake, our only Mediator and Advocate, Amen.

A Prayer uſed in the Parlament onely.

O! Moſt Merciful God and Father; Foraſmuch as no Counſil can ſtand, nor any can proſper, but only ſuch as are humbly gathered in thy Name, to feel the ſweet Taſt of thy Holy Spirit; Wee gladly acknowledge, that by thy Favour ſtandeth the peaceable Protection of our Queen and Realm, and likewiſe this favourable Liberty granted unto us at this Time to make our Meeting together. Which thy bountiful Goodneſs we moſt thankfully acknowledging, do withall earneſtly pray thy Divine Majeſty ſo to encline our Hearts, as our Counſils may be ſubject in true Obedience to thy Holy Word and Will. And ſith it hath pleaſed Thee to govern this Realm by ordinary Aſſembling the Three Eſtates of the ſame, our humble Prayer is, that thou wilt graft in us good Minds, to conceive, free Liberty to ſpeak, and on all Sides a ready and quiet Conſent to ſuch wholſome Laws and Statutes, as may declare us to be thy People, and thy Realm to be proſperouſly ruled by thy good Guiding and Defence.

So that we and our Poſterity may with chearful Hearts wait for thy Appearance in Judgment, that art only able to preſent us faultleſs before God, our Heavenly Father. To whom with Thee our Saviour Chriſt, and the Holy Spirit, be all Glory both now and ever: Amen.

NUMB.

NUMB. XLV.

A Prayer of Thankſgiving for the Deliverance of her Majeſty from many Dangers, and Particularly from the murtherous Intention of Dr. Parry. A Manuſcript.

O! Eternal God and merciful Father; Wee thy unworthy Creatures, moſt humbly do confeſs, that we are not able with our Tongues to utter, nor in our Hearts to conceive the exceeding Meſure of thine infinite Goodneſs, Graces and Favours in this latter Age, ſhewed to this Noble Realm. In that thou, O! Lord, haſt in moſt dangerous Times, a few Years paſt, by this Goodneſs and Providence, beyond Expectation of Man, directed and preſerved the tender and noble Perſon of our now Sovereign Lady ELIZABETH by thy Grace, according to her Right, to come to this Kingdome, and Royal Seat of her Noble Father; and by her being therein eſtabliſhed, as thy beloved, choſen Servant, to deliver us, thy People, that were as Captives to *Babylon*, out of Bondage and Thraldome of the Enemies of thy true Church; and to reſtore us again to the free Fruition of the Goſpel of thy Son our Saviour, *Jeſus* Chriſt. For the enjoying wherof now theſe many Years, we do confeſs and acknowledg, that beyond all our Deſerts, yea truly, O! Lord, when we by our daily unthankfulneſs for the Benefit of thy Goſpel, and by our ſinful Lives, contrary to our holy Profeſſion; have moſt juſtly provoked thee to withdraw thy Favour from us:

Thou, O! Lord, with thy Merciful Favour, and mighty Power didſt Strengthen thy good, bleſſed Servant, our moſt Gracious Queen conſtantly, againſt the roaring and Threatnings of the mighty of the World, to perſiſt in Maintenance of us, her Subjects, and thy unworthy Servants, to draw out our Day in all maner of Proſperity, Peace and Wealth; but moſt ſingularly in a peaceable Freedom to enjoy the bleſſed Benefits of thy Holy Word, againſt the mighty Roaring of Bulls and Tygers, the Enemies of thy Church, daily conſpiring round about us; and partly among ourſelves, againſt this Realm; and eſpecially againſt the Royal Perſon of our Bleſſed Queen, thy humble Servant and true Handmaid. Whoſe Eſtate being the Expectation of a Number of wicked Perſons, manitimes in great and ſecret Dangers; yet thou, O! Lord, who art the Lord of Lords and King of Kings, of thy heavenly Goodneſs haſt always preſerved and defended Her by many miraculous Means, and as we have good Cauſe to think, by many other Means, and at many other Times, than to us are yet known.

But yet of late Time we have fully felt thy mervailous Goodneſs by the Diſcovery of ſome Attempts moſt apparently taken in hand againſt her Perſon by certain wicked, unnatural Subjects: the ſtay wherof onely hath proceded, Good Lord, by thy moſt continual tender and Fatherly Care over Her, thy Dear beloved Daughter and Servant: and not by the Wit, Providence or ſtrength of any worldly Creature. As was moſt notably to be ſeen the laſt Year to have been attempted by one malicious and furious Perſon, reſolutely purpoſed by the Perſuaſion of other wicked Traitors, to have committed a bloudy Fact upon her Perſon; but mervailouſly by thy Ordinance, O! Lord God, diſcovered by the troubled deſperate Conſcience of the very Malefactor; and ſo moſt happily ſtayed. For the which thy bleſſed Favour then ſhewed, if we were not ſo thankful to thee, O Lord, as we ought to have been, yet now, Lord God, we are moſt urgently ſtirred up to acknowledg, our bounden Duty of Praiſe and Thankſgiving, by a very late Manifeſtation of thy ſingular Favour, ſo largely above that former, as all wonderful Circumſtances conſidered, we may compare it with an Example of thy moſt wonderful Kindneſs ſhewed to any Kings or Nations of old Time, teſtifyed to us in thy Holy Scriptures. So, Lord God, what can be added to this thy Secret Fa-

Somervile.

vour, now laſtly ſhewed to Her? When neither ſhe, being the Queen of the whole Realm, nor we being in Number an exceeding Multitude of her Subjects, could imagine, or once think of the ſame; much leſs have withſtanded it. Parry. In that a miſerable, wretched natural born Subject a Man in Truth of no Religion (as now appeareth) under Colour ſeeking to be a diligent and moſt careful Servant to our Gracious Queen, and pretending to diſcover to Her by his own Privity, how her own Perſon was in danger of Murthering, and how the ſame might be withſtood; hee himſelf did of long time even while he had gotten Credit with her Majeſty and with her Court, determined very often moſt deſperately and reſolutely to have with his own curſed Hand deſtroyed her Majeſtys Sacred Perſon. And if Lord, thy mighty and unſearchable Power had not at many Times diverted his deſperate Heart, and his bloudy Hand, by Reverence of the Majeſty of her Perſon, as by his own voluntary Confeſſion is declared: We do now perceive, with Trembling of our Hearts, that ſhe could not at Sundry Times, by the Space of one whole Year, and more, have eſcaped the Danger of Violence, wickedly and reſolutely by him intended.

Whereupon we now, thy humble Creatures, acknowledging our Unworthineſs of theſe great Graces, beſeech thee, O Lord, that thou wilt, without Regard of our former Unthankfulneſs, ſhew thy Mercy upon us, and continue thy Bleſſings over us. That we may for theſe thy unſpeakable Benefits, be more thankful than we have been, not only in Word, but in Deed alſo, according to the Directions of thy Holy Word: Whereof we, under the Protection of our Gracious Queen by thy Ordinance have, by the Miniſtry of many thy good Servants, had plenteous Inſtruction. And we do firmly hope in thy great Goodneſs, that our Sovereign Lady the Queen, thy humble Servant, having ſo notable Proofs of thy ſpecial Providence in her whole Life, beſides thy unknown Works of Favour toward Her, far above that which thou ſheweſt to many other Princes, that by her continual Thankfulneſs, and by Conſtancy in ſerving of Thee, and maintaining of thy Holy Word, may procure to her ſelf and us, the Continuance of theſe thy favourable Graces; ſtil to preſerve Her from all maner of open or Secret Perils, which the Enemies of thy Word are known to intend againſt Her. Wherby her Years may be prolonged, as far as it may pleaſe thee to grant by the Courſe of Nature to any other Prince in this World, for the Maintenance of the Glory of thy Son *Jeſus* Chriſt, and of his Goſpel, and for Continuance of us thy People, her natural Subjects in the due Fear and Service of Thee, and in our natural Obedience to Her. Wherby we and our Poſterity may enjoy ſuch Peace as we have had theſe many Years under her Majeſtys Goverment, far above any like Examples in any Age by-paſt, either in this our natural Country, or any other within the Limits of *Chriſtendome*. Grant this, grant this, O Heavenly Father for *Jeſus* Chriſts ſake, thy onely Son, our Saviour. To whom with thee and the Holy Ghoſt be given all Honour and Glory World without End. *Amen.*

NUMB. XLVI.

Parries *Confeſſion in a Letter to the Queen, Written from the Tower, after his Condemnation. Exemplified from his own Paper.*

*MSS.*Parries. YOUR Majeſty may ſee, by my voluntary Confeſſion, the dangerous Fruits of a Diſcontented Mind, and how conſtantly I purſued my firſt conceived Purpoſe in *Venice* for the Relief of the Afflicted Catholics; continued it in *Lyons*; and reſolvedly in *Paris*, to put it * [*in Execution in England*] in Adventure, for the Reſtitution of *England* to the antient Obedience to the ſee Apoſtolic. And you may ſee withal, how it is commended, allowed and warranted in Conſcience, Divinity and Policy, by the Popes and ſome great Divines: tho' it be true or likely, that moſt of our *Engliſh* Divines (leſs practiſed in Matters of this Weight) do utterly miſlike and condemne it. That Enterprize is prevented, and Conſpiracy diſcovered by *an Honorable Gentleman * of great Deſcent*, my Kinſman and late familiar Friend, Mr. *Edmund Nevyl* privy and by ſolemne Oath (taken upon the Bible) Party to the Matter: Wherof I am heartily glad. But now ſorry (in my very Soul) that ever I conceived it, however comfortable or meritorious ſoever I thought it. God thank him, and forgive me: who would not now (before God) attempt it, (if I had Opportunity and Liberty to perform it) to gain your Kingdome. I beſeech Chriſt, that my Death and Example may ſatisfy your Majeſty and the World, as it ſhal glad and content me.

* Blotted out by him.

* Blotted out.

This that followes is not in the printed Letter. “ Your Majeſty may ſee
“ that there is never a Man more of our Nation abroad, or at home, privy
“ to this Cauſe, but *Thomas Morgan*, a Catholic Gentleman; ſo beloved,
“ truſted and protected in *France*, as you ſhall hardly be able to touch him
“ by any ordinary Courſe: that Proof depending upon his *Yea*, and my *Nay*:
“ and having no Letter or Cipher of his wherewith to charge him. Leave
“ him therefore to God and his Amendment.

“ Give ſome Eaſe to your Catholic Subjects. Remember the reſt of my
“ Letter; and you ſhall find, that God wil bleſs you, foreign Princes eſteem
“ you, and your Subjects obey you.

“ The Indignities paſt between your Majeſty and the King Catholic are
“ many. You have diſquieted his State, maintained his Rebels, and do bear
“ with ſuch as have robbed him and his Subjects. Many Merchants are undon:
“ ſome few are enriched. Some bad Humours pleaſed, and your ſelf
“ diſhonoured. It may coſt you dear; look to it in time. There is Poſſibility
“ to repair all.

Then the Letter Printed goes on: The Queen of *Scots* is your Priſoner. Let her be honourably entreated, but yet ſurely guarded.

This which followes is in the MS. Letter onely: “ Shee may do you good,
“ Shee will do you no Harm, if the Fault be not *Engliſh*. Satisfy her reaſonably
“ in her Keeper: [whom the Queen was now going to change.] It
“ may elſe prove dangerous. It was wel once, it cannot be bettered now.
“ A new Governour, and a new Guard may breed new Doubts. Impulſion
“ may do Harm. Pleaſe your ſelf in this Cauſe. It importeth you much;
“ So long as it is wel with her, it is ſafe with you. When ſhe is in Fear,
“ you are not without Peril. Cheriſh and love her. She is of your Bloud;
“ and your undoubted Heir in Succeſſion. It is ſo taken abroad; and will be
“ found ſo at Home. The Prince, her Son, hath been illy handled by his
“ Subjects; troubled with inlet Heretic Practices, and often endangered in
“ Perſon. Now you have him, protect him. He is your Kinſman and Second
“ Saulty.

And then the printed Letter proceeds; *Viz.* The *French* King is *French*, you know that well enough. You will find him occupied, when he ſhould do you good. He will not looſe a Pilgrimage, to ſave your Crown.

This that followeth hath a Line ſtruck through it, and is Part of the Letter omitted in the Print. “ Laſt of all, forget the glorious Title of *Supreme*
“ *Governour*. Trouble none that refuſeth to ſwear it: For that cannot agree
“ with your Sex. *Luther* and *Calvin* did not allow it. The *Puritans* ſmile
“ at it, and the Catholic World doth condemne it.

I have no more to ſay at this Time, but that with my Heart and Soul I do now Honour and Love you; am inwardly ſorry for mine Offence; am ready to make you Amends by my Death and Patience. Diſcharge me *a culpâ*, I beſeech you, Good Lady, but *non a pænâ*. And ſo farewel, moſt Gracious,

and the beſt natured and Qualified Queen that ever lived in *England*. *And ſo the printed Letter endeth. But the Autograph goes on in theſe Words*: Viz.
“ Remember your infortunate *Servant* [this laſt Word, *Servant* blotted
“ out] *Parry*; chiefly overthrown by your hard Hand. Amend it in the
“ reſt of your Servants. For it is paſt with me, if your Grace be not grea-
“ ter than I look for. And laſtly and ever, Good Madam, be good to your
“ obedient Catholic Subjects. For the bad I ſpeak not.

From the *Tower*, the 14 of *February*. 1584.

W. PA.

NUMB. XLVII.

That ſuch Papiſt as of late times have been executed, were by a Statute of Edward III. *Lawfully executed, as Traitors.* A Treatice.

Lambeth Librar. N.178. THE Statute of *Edward* the Third ſaith, that if any Man ſhal compaſs or imagine the Kings Death, or ſhall levy War againſt him; or ſhall probably be attainted to have been an Adherent to the Kings Enemies, he ſhall be adjudged a Traitor.

Now let us conſider the Papiſts Dealings. *Pius* V. (the Father in his Time of them all) calleth her Majeſtys Intereſt in the Crown *Prætenſum jus*. He declareth Her deprived, by his Authority, of the Kingdome, He abſolveth her natural Subjects from their Oath of Obedience: He curſeth all that ſhall yield Her any Princely Duty. And yet not herewith content, before the *Bull* was generally publiſhed, he ſent of his Miniſters into this Land, to ſignify, *Apoſtolicâ Auctoritate certis viris Illuſtribus*, what was don at *Rome*: how *Elizabeth* was an Heretic; that She had loſt her Crown; and that they did owe her no kind of Obedience.

Wherupon the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmerland*, with ſundry other Gentlemen perſuaded by *Morton*, the Popes principal Agent, *Catholicos omnes ſummis Viribus illis affuturos eſſe*; [*i. e.* That all Catholics would aſſiſt them with their cheifeſt Strength.] They took up Armes, and ſought by Force to have ſubdued her Majeſty. And *Saunders* yieldeth this reaſon of their ill Succeſs therin, *Quia Catholici omnes nondum probè cognoverunt* Elizabetham *hæreticam eſſe declarandam*, [i. e. Becauſe all the Catholics did not yet well know, that *Elizabeth* was to be declared an Heretic.] But for the Attempt, ſaith he, howſoever it fel out, *Tamen laudanda illorum Nobilium Conſilia erant.* [i. e. Neverthleleſs the Counſils of thoſe Noblemen were to be commended.]

Now as *Morton* and his Companion by the Popes Apoſtolical Authority wrought in *England*; ſo did *Saunders* by the ſame Authority with his Holineſs Soldiers, as you all know, work in *Ireland*, &c. Wherby, I truſt, that the Matter is evident, that the Pope is the Queens Enemy: and that by the Statute of *Edward* III. *Morton*, *Saunders*, and all their Fellows were rebellious Traitors.

But to procede a come neerer my Purpoſe, theſe Rebellions repreſt, and greater Regard being had of the Popes ſeditious Firebrand, another Courſe was taken, no leſs miſchievous, and dangerous, than the firſt. Where they could not devour like Lions, now for a Time they muſt play the Foxes. *Saunders*, *Morton*, and their Adherents profeſſed themſelves, as you have heard, her Majeſties Enemies; and hoping of a Sufficient Number to have vanquiſhed Her, moved Subjects to open Rebellion. But now the

Jeſuits and Seminary Prieſts, which of late Years came over, had learned a new Leſſon.

They all confeſſed indeed, and that ſtoutly, that their Coming over was to encreaſe the Number of Catholics, (as they term them) the Popes Retinue and Subjects: and that they had employed their Endeavour by Maſſes, Confeſſions, Reconciliations and Relicks for that Purpoſe. Mary, for her Majeſty, they ſaid, they honoured Her, and She was their Sovereign, their Lady; and they her Subjects. You hear now here a ſudden Alteration.

Fiſtula dulce canit volucrem dum decipit Auceps.

[They are good Words, but know you their Meaning?

The Pope that now is to animate his Workmen, and free them from Danger, hath agreed like a Fox, to wink at the *Bull* of *Pius* V. A Qualification is made therof in that which might touch his Brokers. The *Bull* ſhal not ſo bind them; but if they be taken ſeducing her Majeſties Subjects, and examined for their Allegiance, by Diſpenſation they may profeſs it frankly. But will you know, how long? *Donec publicè ejuſdem Bullæ Executio fieri poteſt.* [i. e. Until the Execution of the ſaid Bull may be don publicly.] Will you know, how long? Until the Catholics by competent Forces ſhall be able to reſiſt. And therefore in the midſt of their beſt Proteſtations toward her Majeſty, being asked, if the Pope, or any other aſſigned by him, ſhould invade the Realm, which Part they would take, or what Part a faithful Subject of her Majeſties ought to take, they cry out againſt the Demand. In his Matter they are mute, they anſwer indirectly. And the Reaſon is this. They had all ſworn their Obedience unto the Pope. And then both they, and all other current Papiſts living (acknowledging the Popes Authority over both Swords) are bound by Oath and Profeſſion, when Opportunity ſerveth, that the Pope have his Aſſignes, ſhall aſſault her Majeſty with the Temporal or Material Sword, to joyn with him, to their utmoſt Ability, according to their Place and Callings.

To collect therefore all I have ſaid into one Summary. The *Jeſuites* and Seminary Prieſts executed, before their Coming into *England*, did know, what *Pius* V. had done againſt her Majeſty, neither would they by any Means improve [i. e. diſprove] the Fact. They were not ignorant of the two Rebellions, ſtirred and procured by the Popes Factors in *England* and *Ireland*; wherof being urged they would ſhew no Miſlike. They knew that the Want of a ſufficient Number that would riſe againſt her Majeſty, was the Cauſe, why the *Bull* was not executed. They did confeſs, that they themſelves were ſent over to encreaſe that Number: and that therin they had laboured greatly. They were not ignorant, that the Pope now living had given them no longer Licence to acknowledg her Majeſty than *Rebus ſic ſtantibus*, than by reaſon of Power and Number *Publica Executio Bullæ fieri poterat.* [i. e. the public Execution of the Bull might be don.] And then according to their Oaths both they and their Scholars were to joyn againſt her Highneſs, their native Country and Kingdom.

I omit here Conſpiracies and Treacheries wrought beyond ſea, proved againſt them by ſufficient Witneſſes at their Arraignment. And thus I draw to an End in this Point.

For the *Jeſuites* and Seminary Prieſts executed, to give their Faith unto the Queens Enemy; who ſought her Overthrow, her Death, her Crown; to perſuade her Subjects unto a Reconcilement with the ſaid her Enemy; and ſo to encreaſe his Strength, and diminiſh her Majeſtys, &c. is to compaſs, or at leaſt imagine her Highneſs Deſtruction; is in a Sort a Levying, or Preparation of War and Rebellion. And to be convicted of the Premiſſes I am ſure is probably to attaint them for Adherents unto her Majeſties Enemies. And therefore the *Jeſuites* and Seminary Prieſts, executed by the Statute of *Edward* III. were Traitors; and ſo moſt Lawfully executed.

Wheras then their Abetters and Upholders do give it forth, they were no Traitors, but that they ſuffered Death and Martyrdom for ſaying of Maſſes, for hearing Confeſſions, for abſolving of Sinners, for *Agnus Dei's*, for perſuading men to the *Roman* Religion, for Matters of Conſcience, for Chriſtian Religion; and not for Treaſon, I anſwer,

Firſt, that if indeed they ſtill hold as the Cauſe ſtandeth, betwern her Majeſty and the Pope, that the Pope hath in himſelf the Right of both Swords, as well by the *Material* Sword through Force to ſubdue Her, as by the *Spiritual* to Excommunicate Her; then there cannot be any Caſe or Cauſe of Treaſon which may any way touch them; but being convicted of any Murther, or Miſchief, either executed or intended, or any Sedition, Rebellion, or Solicitation to every ſuch Extremity, if they followed therin the Popes Pleaſure, all ſuch Stratagems are Grounds for Religion.

But by their Leaves they muſt firſt prove unto us out of the Word of God, that, as they write, their Pope is *Rex regum, & Dominus Dominantium*, [i. e. King of Kings and Lord of Lords] that Kings and Emperors, as Feudatory Vaſſals, do owe him Homage; that he may place and diſplace, give Kingdomes and the Empire, to whom he liſt; that he doth *obtinere Principatum totius Mundi*, [i. e. obtain the Principality of the whole World,] and that Chriſt hath committed unto him *Terreni ſimul & cæleſtis Imperii Jura.* [i. e. the Rights of the Earthly together with the Heavenly Empire.] Let them, I ſay, prove this. And then for my Part I ſhall think, that our *Jeſuites* and Seminaries were no Traitors, in that they did by their God's, the Popes Commandment. Mary, if it ſhall fall out by the Authority of the Scriptures, in taking upon him to have *Regnum ſuper Reges terræ*, he prove himſelf to be *Antichriſt*. If it appears directly, that Kings in the Old Teſtament were Lords of the Temporal Sword; that Chriſt himſelf in that reſpect payd Tribute unto *Cæſar*; that his Apoſtles did the like; Obeyed the Civil Magiſtrates; prayed for them, and commanded all men to be ſubject unto them: If it prove true, that the antient Fathers, (agreeing, and generally with *Tertullian*) do confeſs, that every King and Emperor within his own Dominion, is *Homo a Deo Secundus: omnibus major, tantum Deo minor*; If it be evident, that the old Biſhops of *Rome* acknowledged with their Fellow Biſhops, *Gregory* and *Leo*, that the Emperor was their Lord, and themſelves at commandment his Servants, his Subjects; Then moſt aſſuredly for any Subject, Prieſt or *Jeſuite*, to joyn either with Pope, or any other Clergy Faction againſt his natural Prince, eſpecially touching the Temporal Sword, or any uſe therunto belonging, for the Overthrow of the ſame, is and hath been accounted a Matter of Treaſon, not only in King *Edward* III. his Time, but even, as I take it, from the Beginning among all Princes; and cannot now by any Pretence be made a Matter of Religion; except they have the Privilege that certain Heretics (as I have heard) did chalenge, *Quod volumus Sanctum eſt*: That what they liſt ſhall be a Matter of Religion.

Again, where they ſay, their Fellows were executed for ſaying of Maſſes, for Confeſſions, *&c.* they reaſon as the Witches, Inchanters and Conjurers, being convicted of the wicked Practice of thoſe Abominations, ſhould alledge for themſelves (as oftentimes they do) that they were condemned, and muſt dy, only for ſaying their *Pater noſter*, and ſome other godly Prayers. Or as tho' the Agents of ſome mighty Rebell, being attainted for labouring by Letters, Gifts and Promiſes of great Rewards, to alienate from their Kings, and joyn with their Maſters the Strength of the People; ſhould cry out and publiſh abroad, that they dyed for writing of Letters, for relieving the Poor, for promiſing Good Turnes unto their Friends and Acquaintance.

Indeed to pray, to write Letters, give Gifts, and to promiſe good Benefits, is not evil: But to uſe Prayers as Inchanters do, is wicked. To ſolicite either by Letter, Gift or Promiſe, any Princes Subjects to any Purpoſe that tendeth to their Overthrow, is Treaſon, and ſo to be puniſhed.

And even ſo our *Jeſuites* knowing there was a Time lookt for, when the *Bull* ſhould be executed, and that nothing was wanting but Number of *Stout Converts*, (as they term them) to endeavour by Maſſes, *&c.* to encreaſe that Number, by any ſuch Practice, tho' their Maſſes were good of themſelves, (as they are not) yet are their Labours wicked, treacherous, and ful of great Treaſons.

But to paſs over thoſe that be dead, and to come to thoſe that be alive; what Prince in the World liveth, that doth tolerate ſuch Subjects? For to omit, that all that are in *England* as yet alive, are in the like Condition of Treaſon with thoſe who are executed, this ſurely muſt whet me on very much againſt them and that Brood, to ſe, how ſhamefully, untruly and impudently they ſlander her Majeſty, her Government, her Miniſters, their Queen, their Rulers, their Country. There is nothing ſo villanouſly attempted againſt the State, but it is excuſed, nay, approved and commended: Nor any thing upon never ſo good Grounds, either don or ſaid againſt them, but it is is perverted, ſlandered, and condemned.

The Biſhops, who upon ſuſpicion only, that their Pomp would be exiled, refuſed to Crowne her Majeſty in the beginning of her Reign, are greatly praiſed. The Rebells in the North are highly extolled. The Popes Practices againſt her Majeſty are by all that are abroad very greatly liked of. If any be juſtly executed they write, they are *Martyred.* If any be impriſoned they ſay, they are *ſmothered* and *pined.* Nay, their moſt horrible Traitors, even ſuch as ſought to ſuck her Majeſties Bloud, are excuſed. Thus one writeth of *Somervile*, (who hanged himſelf) the Common opinion is, ſaith he, the poor Gentleman was diſpatched of Purpoſe, and by Appointment, for the Prevention of the Diſcovery of certain Shameful Practices. And of *Ardern*, that he was a Worſhipful, a valiant and innocent Gentleman, and through Practice and Envy was overthrown. And of another Rebell the ſame Author, *We need not to defend the Actions of that Noble Earl of Weſtmerland againſt malicious Envy and Detraction of Malice.* Vid. Camd. Eliz. p 289.

Briefly we ſee by daily Experience, that the more horrible their Treaſons are, the more they are accounted of. The Earl of *Northumberland* is become a Martyr and Saint. So is *Felton*, the Trumpet of all *Engliſh* Treacheries. And ſo I think ſhall all the reſt. And is not this a moſt dangerous Device againſt the Safty of all Eſtates, who ſet themſelves againſt the Man of Sin and *Romiſh* Traitors? I am perſuaded the two Attempts againſt the Prince of *Orange* would never have been made, but that the Parties were perſuaded, they ſhould be Saints. And the like I might ſay of *Somervile.*

So that if ever Prince in *Chriſtendome* had Cauſe given of Severity and Care of Guard, it is her Majeſty.

NUMB: XLVIII.

Intelligences Sent to Secretary Cecyll *by* Daniel Rogers*: Taken and tranſcribed by him from Lettets written to ſeveral Princes of* Germany *in the Year.* 1569.

From Rome Jun. 18.

THE *French* men do hope, that the Queen of *England* will ſend no Power out of *England*: nor the Princes of *Dutchland* out of *Germany*; to ſuccour the *Hugonots.* And ſo by that Means the King may eaſily over- lian.

come *Deuxponts*, [who came out of *Germany* to aſſiſt the *Hugonets*, for the Admiral.]

[It muſt be marked, that the *Hugonets* and the *Admiral* of *France* were ſuccesful in this Year 1569 againſt the *French* King. And ſeveral *Engliſh* Forces were arrived ſoon after to the Aſſiſtance of the Proteſtants.]

A Hat and Sword Conſecrated by the Pope.

The Pope doth yearly Conſecrate on Chriſtmas Eve, a Hat and Sword: the which he ſendeth to ſome ſuch Prince as in his Opinion hath done beſt Service to the See of *Rome*. This Year he hath ſent theſe Preſents to the Duke of *Alva*. For that he hath ſo manfully withſtood, and chaſed away the Prince of *Orange*. It is a certain Mean to honour Princes withal, and to encourage them earneſtly and valiantly to defend the Popes Eſtate, *&c.*

Monks taken by the Engliſh.

I have heard nothing of the *Pronothorie* Monks, and *Spaniſh* Inquiſitor, that ſhould be taken by the *Engliſh* Ships. For I can eaſily believe, that this kind of People do at this Time fly as faſt into the *Low Countries*, as Crows to a Carrion. Becauſe they are there rather preferred, than the natural People of the ſame Country.

Proteſtants in *France*.

It is needful in my Opinion that no Supplies be ſent, neither out of *England* nor *Dutchland*, to the ſuccour of the Proteſtants in *France*, if Peace be not concluded. The *French* men here [at *Rome*] do affirm, that the King refuſeth the Conditions of Peace. But the Pope feareth, that he will pacify. And therefore by public Suppliations to God he commandeth, that Victory be required againſt all *Hugonots*.

Advices 22. *of June.*

The Popes Mandate at *Bononia*.

By the Commandment of the Holineſs of our Lord *Pius* V. by the Providence of God Biſhop of *Rome*, the Right Honorable and moſt Reverend Cardinal *Paleotto*, Biſhop of *Bolonia*, doth notify, exhort and command all Perſons and Curats of what Church ſoever they be, as well Secular as Regular; and all Monks and Friars, within the ſaid City and Dioces: That they fail not to ſay every day the Litany, for the Health and Preſervation of the Commonwealth of Chriſtendom. And eſpecially, to pray to God for Help of the Kingdom of *France*; and for the rooting out of Hereſy there. And that all Prieſts in their Maſſes, do pray againſt the Perſecutors of the Church. And that other private Religious men do ſay certain godly Prayers privatly, as God ſhall inſpire them. That all Curats on the Holy days do adviſe the Houſeholder of every Pariſh to ſay daily in their Houſes ſome ſpecial Prayer: and that all Children which do begin to be inſtructed in the Chriſtian Religion, do ſay the Litany, or ſome other Prayer, as ſhall ſeem good to the Curats, every Holyday in the Church; and that the ſaid Curates, every one in his Pariſh, do exhort the People to often Prayer, Alms Deeds, and other good Works. And that all the Clergy be diligent to do the like. To the End, that Almighty God may reſpect his Holy Catholic Church of *Rome*; and give Help to the Kingdom of *France* in theſe perillous Times. Subſcribed by

Lodovicus Nuntius Secretarius de Mandatis.

From *Venice:* Ult. *Junii.*

The Queen of *England*.

The Queen of *England* hath confirmed to her Ambaſſador Ledger to the *French* King, that ſhe will not meddle with his *French* Affairs, nor help his *Hugonotes* with any Thing. But to drive out of her Kingdom ſuch as live quietly and peaceably there; that She neither can, nor will do. The *French* King doth credit Her, as much as She by her Actions doth ſhew to be believed. But he mervaileth, that She being ſo ready and furniſhed with all things, doth enterprize no more Matter in *France*. He judgeth it to be the great Work of God; and a ſingular Mercy and Favour ſhewed unto him:

that he ſhould not deſpair, but that in the End he ſhall utterly root out all that Generation of *Hugonets*: not only in *France*, but in all other Places.

The Popiſh Catholics of *Germany* are not aſhamed with moſt abominable Lyes to ſlander the Doctrin of the Count *Palatine Elector*, and ſay, that his Preachers do affirm, that Chriſt dyed only for the Salvation of *Men*; and that there is a *Woman* come, which ſhall redeem the *Women*. Which was the Dream once of *Poſtellus*. This Ly hath been reproved to ſome of the Reporters Faces here.

Catholics of *Germany*.

From Venice July 19.

The Cardinal *Commendonus*, a notable Pillar of the Popiſh Church, told *Monſieur de Foy*, the *French* Kings Ambaſſador at *Venice*, that he was ſure that all the *Hugonots* were in Armes in all Places, with Intent to root out the Catholic Religion. Whereof he ſaid he had advertiſed the Pope. To whom alſo he did write, that *France* and *Germany* were known well enough unto him: and unleſs the Pope would ſtir up the reſt, and make all the Friends and Means he could, to extinguiſh the Proteſtants there; and that withall poſſible ſpeed; that there was great Danger of the utter Subverſion and Ruine of the State of *Rome*.

The Proteſtants Intent in all Places.

Cornelius Freſco of *Genoa*, a notable Seaman, is gon to the Sea, with eight Gallies, very well appointed. Wherin are 800 Men, and three Canons, beſides other ſmall Pieces. Theſe Gallies are thought to joyn with other *Spaniſh* and *Sicilian* Gallies, and with certain great Ships of *Britany* and *Normandy*, And paſſing by *Rochel*, ſhall enterprize ſomething in *England*.

England to be invaded.

Venice July 14,

The Pope uſeth vehement Perſecution againſt the *Lutherans* in *Italy*. For no Stranger can Travail in *Italy*, but he ſhall be examined of his Belief, and what mind he hath toward the See of *Rome*.

Lutherans in *Italy*.

There is Care, Study and Endeavour taken by the Papiſts in all Places to deſtroy the *Hugonots* throughout all the World.

The Queen of *England* hath lent 50000 £ Sterl. to the Queen of *Navarr*.

They of the Religion have in all, with the *Dutchmen*, 12500 Horſemen, 34000 Footmen. The Kings Forces are as great.

From Vienna July 15.

The *Venetians* have lent the Pope 200,000 Crownes; conditionally, that the ſaid Sum be not repayd to them within Five Years, the City of *Ravenna*, (which is already mortgaged to them) to be theirs for ever.

The *Venetians*.

About two Months paſt at *Vienna* in *Auſtria*, a *Jeſuite* practiſed with a poor Man and his Wife, by a feigned Miracle to enrich them, and win Credit to his Superſtitious Religion. The Device was, that the poor Man ſhould be caried, as dead, on a Biere, to the Church. And in the way the *Jeſuite*, as it were by Chance, meeting with the Corps, and moved with the poor Womans Caſe, (who feigned piteouſly to lament her Husbands Death) ſhould ſtay the Corps, and ſay theſe Words, *Surge & ambula*. The deceaſed dead Man ſhould ariſe to the great Admiration of all the People. But the Practice turned to the *Jeſuits* Shame. For the poor Man who was kept long within the Biere without Air, was ſmothered, and found dead indeed. Whereupon the poor, Woman, turning her diſſembled Lamentation to unfeigned Tears, exclaimed on the *Jeſuite*, and uttered his Practice unto all the People; in ſuch ſort that the *Jeſuite* hardly eſcaped with Life: and is fled no Man can tell whither.

A Jeſuites Impoſture.

A Jeſuit fains himſelf a Devil.

The like Practice of another *Jeſuit* happened about the ſame time at *Auguſta* in *Germany*, in the Houſe of one *George Fowlker*, a Merchant. Who albeit himſelf is a great Papiſt, yet he had in his Houſe a Man Servant and a Maid, that were of the Religion, and would not, by any Means that their Maſter could uſe, be brought to come to the Maſs. Wher-of a *Jeſuit* hearing, cloathed himſelf like a Devil, and hiding himſelf in certain dark Places of the Houſe, where the Maid was wont to paſs about her Buſineſs, did in ſuch ſort terrify her as ſhe was at length almoſt beſide her ſelf. Which the young Man, her Fellow Servant, perceiving, watched on a Time the ſaid Jeſuitiſh Devil; who began to play the like Part with him, as he had don with the Maid; and cloſing with the young Man did ſcratch him by the Face. Wherupon the young Man feeling ſome Smart drew out his Dagger, and thruſt the Devil through the Body and killed him. After which Deed, being greatly aſtonied, he went to his Maſter, and told him that he had killed the Devil. The Truth being known, the young Man was commended; and the Deviliſh *Jeſuit* burned in his Devils Apparel.

NUMB. XLIX.

John Fox *to the Lord Treaſurer. To obtain the Queens Confirmation of his Prebend in the Church of* Sarum.

MSS Foxii.

ORNATISSIME, Illuſtriſſime. γενναιότατε in Chriſto Patrone, Sal, Mitto eximiæ tuæ Præſtantiæ per nuntium quod juſſeras. Utinam viciſſim tua dignetur Pietas præſtare indigno Clientulo tuo, quod receperas. Subſcripſere nobis promptiſſimâ voluntate Reverend. D. Epiſcopus *Sarum*, ejuſq; Eccleſiæ Sodalitas univerſa Deeſt nunc una, ſiquo modo impetrari poſſit, Clementiſſo Reginæ ἡ ψῆφος, benignaq; Subſcriptio. Qua in re, ſi non gravabitur tua Pietas præſidiariam operam tuam adjungere, vix ſcias quantum me meoſq; omnes hoc nomine tibi devincies, licet alioqui jamdiu tibi devinctiſſimos.

Invitus huc adigor, ut occupatiſſimis tuis temporibus obſtrepem tam importunè. Sed quid agam in tanta rerum neceſſitate; aut quem petam alium? Τίς γὰρ ταῦτα διαπράξαιτο τῆς σῆς συνέσεως δυνατώτερος. Scio, quàm nihil ſit in rebus meis, quod rependam rurſus Excellentiæ tuæ tanto dignum beneficio: Quod unum protero adnitar ſedulò, ne unquam in me claudicet accinctiſſimæ voluntatis ſtudium, *Ceciliano* Nominì & Splendori addictiſſimum. Διόπερ εἴ τι ἡ δέησίς μου δυνήσεται παρά σοι, εἴ τις παράκλησις ἐν χριστῷ, εἴ τις κοινωνία πνεύματος, εἴ τινα σπλάγχνα, καὶ οἰκτιρμοὶ, πλήρωσον ἡμῶν τὴν εὐχὴν, παραμυθῆσαι ἡμῶν τὴν ταλαιπωρίαν καταξίωσον. D. *Jeſus* incolumitatem τῆς μεγαλοφυΐας σου ſartam tectam ſtabiliat, ad Gloriam ipſius, & Reip. noſtræ multam utilitatem. Amen. *Lond.* April 15.

Tuus in Chriſto

JOAN. FOXIUS.

NUMB.

NUMB. L.

Adrianus Saravia *to the Lord Treaſurer L.* Burghley; *from* Leyden.

Moving him to counſil the Queen, at this dangerous Juncture, to aſſiſt the Provinces, and to tako the Government of them upon Her: His Letter accompained with their Ambaſſadors.

Nobiliſſimo ac Clariſſimo Dno. Magno Theſaurario Regni Angliæ, *Dno. meo S.*

CUM non ingratæ olim meæ Litteræ fuerint, quas *Guerzia* ad T. A. ſcribere auſus fui, de rebus parvi momenti, ſi conferantur cum harum Provinciarum Negotiis, incomitatos noſtros Legatos meis Litteris hinc abire nolui; Sperans fore, ut conſueta humanitate tuâ accipiantur. Quod officio meo hactenus defuiſſe merito videri poſſum, culpam deprecari malo, quàm pluribus excuſare. Tantum tuam Amplitud. ſcire cupio pudore id factum eſſe; & quod meis Litteris T. A, interpellandam minimè judicaverim. Nunc autem cum juſta ſcribendi mihi data videatur Occaſio, continere me diutius non debui, ut me fide mea, cum erga Regiam Majeſtatem, & *Angliæ* Regnum, tum imprimis Dei Eccleſiam, liberem. Itaq; audaciam Scribendi, humanitate tuâ fretus, qua rebus afflictis Religionis noſtri populi ſemper faviſti, nec favere deſieris, ſumpſi: Quandoquidem hoc tempore imprimis tuo favore opus eſt: eòq; magis, quod Salus & Vita Sereniſſæ. D. noſtræ Reginæ, & regni *Angliæ* incolumitas cum periculo noſtro conjuncta videatur. MSS. Burghlian.

Qui nobis inimici ſunt, non ſunt vobis amici. Conſilia communium hoſtium quotidie magis & magis pateſiunt; & quo ſpectent videre poteſtis; & ex iis quæ moliuntur, quid vos expectare debeatis, judicare. Expectandum non eſt, donec perierimus. Nam Caſus harum Provinciarum trahet ſecum ruinam *Angliæ:* Si eas ſervabitis, Pacem & Salutem veſtram firmabitis. Quare neceſſariò cum omnibus, qui Evangelium Chriſti profitentur, eſt ineundi Societas, niſi certè perire conſtitutum ſit. Et quo hæ Provinciæ vobis magis ſunt vicinæ, eo arctius vobis ſunt conjungendæ. Quod duobus modis fieri poteſt; nempe, aut arctiſſimo Fœdere Societatis, aut Imperii & Dominii earum receptione. Quorum poſterum tum tutiſſimum, tum utiliſſimum utriq; eſt futurum.

Nam etſi non ſit futura utilis Societas ipſa in hoc perturbato rerum Statu, habebit multas difficultates, quas T. D. a *Davidſono* malo intelligere, quàm hic recenſere. Tantum videndæ erunt commodæ rationes, & minimè odioſæ, quibus in Fide contineri poterunt. Duas potiſſimum examinandas tuæ Prudentiæ proponam. Primus eſt uſus promiſcuus militum *Anglorum* & Indigenarum in præſidiis: Quo ſuſpicio diffidentiæ tollatur, ut nullus miles aut præferri ſe, aut contemni præ alio arbitretur: altera obſidum exhibitio ad plures annos, donec obfirmandum hic erit Imperium. Optimatum filii humaniter accepti in *Anglia*, & ſæpe permutati, reddent tandem parentes & reliquos omnes vobis addictiſſimi. Hæc ratio nulli invidiæ eſt obnoxia. Facilis eſt, & minus ſumptuoſa, quam ſunt futura *Anglorum* præſidia, aut aliorum militum, in locis qui carere milite poſſunt Omnis Miles civibus gravis eſt & moleſtus. Unde *Julii Cæſaris* laudanda Prudentia eſt: qui acceptis Obſidibus urbes & Provincias, non impoſitis militibus, in fide retinebat.

Nota eſt T. D. Hiſtoria *Xenophontis* περὶ τῆς κύρου παιδείας, & quibus rationibus inductus crediderit, ut ejus verbis utar, πάντων τῶν ἄλλων ζώων εἶναι ῥᾷον, ἢ ἀνθρώπων, ἄρχειν. At ubi ei in mentem venit, *Cyri* tot homines, tot Urbes, tot Gentes, non invitas paruiſſe imperio, ſententiam mutare coactus eſt: utpote quod hominibus imperare, neq; impoſſibile ſit, neq; factu difficile, ſiquis prudenter id agat.

Et certé ita eſt. Nam ſiquis omnia attentus expendere velit, Defectiones populorum, & Rerum publicarum Mutationes, inveniet, non tam vitio plebis accidiſſe, quàm eorum qui Reip. præſunt: quando potius ſuarum libidinum aut cupiditatum habuerunt rationem, quàm Salutis publicæ. Nulla eſt mortalium Societas, quæ ſe regi non poſtulet, ſibiq; non præficiat Rectorem. Unde cuivis apparet, multitudinem imperium facile pati poſſe; & illud ultrò expetere; & imperitia & culpa Rectorum accidere, ſiqua imperii Diſſolutio accidat: Violentiam, quæ ab hoſte externo ſit, excipio.

Quod hanc gentem attinet, facile ſe partietur regi, modo ei nulla fiat injuria, & eam ſuis legibus vivere, Rectores patiuntur. Quemadmodum enim ad injuriam inferendam hæc Gens tarda eſt, ita eſt injuriæ maximè impatiens. Quiſquis Rector harum Provinciarum futurus eſt, leni animo ſit oportet: qui clementer hujus Gentis ferre mores ruſticos & agreſtes poſſit, facile ſic flectet & inducet quolibet. Iſthæc familiariter ſcribo, ac ſi jam omnia facta & tranſacta eſſent. Spero enim divinitus hanc vobis oblatam, & ſervandi nos & confirmandi Vos, non prætermiſſuros eſſe occaſionem. Quod ſi facitis, ſera, vereor, ne ſequatur pœnitentia. Nam poſtquam nos periimus, vos incolumes permanere non poteſtis.

Quare ego Deum Op. Max. precabor, ut menti Regiæ Majeſtatis, & Conſiliariorum ejus, inſpiret, quod utile novit futurum: & ut incolumem Amplitudinem tuam ſervet. Vale, & me in numero Clientum tuorum habe. *Lugduno Batavorum*, nono die Mens. *Junii*, 1585.

Tuæ Celſitudinis obſervantiſſimus,

ADRIANUS SARAVIA.

[NUMB. L.]

Laws and Ordinances ſet down by Robert *Earl of* Leiceſter, *the Queens Majeſty's Lieutenant and Captain General of all her Army and Forces in the* Low Countries: *Meet and fit to be obſerved by all ſuch as ſhall ſerve her Majeſty under him in the ſaid Countries. And therefore to be publiſhed and notified to the whole Armie.*

MSS. Politic. pen. me.

FORASMUCH as there is not any governed Eſtate, which in Peace or War can be accounted ſure, or preſerved from Diſhonour and Ruine, unleſs it be ſupported and born up by Juſtice duely adminiſtred, and Diſcipline orderly obſerved: and for that no Man can be ſo ignorant as not to know, that Honour, Fame and Proſperity do duely follow that Commonwealth or Nation, wherin good Laws are eſtabliſhed, the Magiſtrate miniſtring Juſtice is duely regarded, and the People fearing to offend, are drawn under the Rules of Juſtice and Obedience. And ſeeing that Martial Diſcipline above all things, (proper to Men of War) is by us at this Time, moſt to be followed, as well for the Advancement of Gods Glory, as honorable, to govern this Army in good Order: And leſt that the evil enclined (pleading Simplicity) ſhould cover any wicked Fact by Ignorance:

Therefore theſe Martial Ordinances and Laws following are eſtabliſhed and publiſhed. Whereby all good Minds, endeavouring to attain Honour, may ſtand armed, and receive Encouragement to perſevere in well doing: and ſuch as are enclined to Lewdneſs, be warned from committing Offences puniſhable. Which being embraced with careful Reſpect, and followed

with Obedience, do promiſe good Order and Agreement amongſt our ſelves, and Victory and good Event, againſt our Enemies.

1. Firſt, every chief Magiſtrate, Captain, inferiour Officer, Souldier, Pioner, or what Perſon elſe, receiving her Majeſty's Pay, in Field or Garriſon, ſhall ſolemnely ſwear, and by corporal Oath be bound, to perform the underwritten Articles; ſo far as to each, in their ſeveral Qualities ſhall appertain. The violating or breaking wherof is to be puniſhed by the Generalls Direction, according to the Quality of the Offence.

2. Foraſmuch as the Holy Name of our moſt Mighty and Invincible GOD, withal Reverence ought to be regarded, and that Deſtruction is pronounced to ſuch as blaſpheme or abuſe the ſame; it is therefore ordeined and commanded, that no Perſon whatſoever, either in common Conference or Communication, or for any Cauſe whatſoever, ſhall blaſpheme, being thus admoniſhed, or take his Name in vain; upon the Loſs of five Shilling, To the Relief of the Poor, for the firſt Offence; for the Second five days Impriſonment. For the Third, Loſs of his Place and Wages.

3 And becauſe the continual and unſpeakable Favours of our Almighty God, by our Unthankfulneſs may be taken from us; and that no good Event of any Action can be expected, wherin God is not firſt and principally honoured, and ſerved; it is therefore eſpecially ordered and commanded, that all Perſons whatſoever ſhall upon general Warning, given either by Sound of Trumpet or Drum, repair to the Place appointed, where the Divine Service is to be uſed: there to hear the ſame read and preached. Unleſs for the preſent by ſickneſs or other Service he be impeached. Upon pain to looſe his Days Wages for the Firſt, two Days Wages for the Second, and ſo to be encreaſed by the Diſcretion of the Judge. And for every ſuch default in the Souldier, as well the Captain as his Inferior Officer, to be puniſhed with the like Penalty.

4. And ſeeing it well beſeemeth all Chriſtians, eſpecially ſuch as profeſs the military Service, to paſs away the Time in Matters requiſite to their Profeſſion; and becauſe no Time can be more vainly ſpent than that which is conſumed in unlawful Games, beſides the breeding of much Contention and Quarel; and for that there be many allowable and commendable Exerciſes for all Sorts of men to uſe: Therefore it is ſtreightly commanded, that no private Soldier, or inferior Officer ſhall frequent the playing at Dice and Cards, nor any other unlawful Games; upon pain of two Days Impriſonment for the firſt Time, and for after committing the like, to be further puniſhed by the Judges Diſcretion.

5. And for that it often happeneth, that by permitting of many vagrant or idle Women in an Army, ſundry Diſorders and horrible Abuſes are committed: Therefore it is ordered, that no Man ſhall cary into the Field, or detain with him in the Place of his Garriſon, any Woman whatſoever, other than ſuch as ſhall be known to be his Lawful Wife; or ſuch other Women, to tend the Sick, and to ſerve for Launders, as ſhall be thought meet by the Marſhall: Upon pain of Whipping and Baniſhment.

6. And inſomuch as Clemency amongſt men of War, in ſome Reſpects, is a ſingular Vertue, it is ordered, that no Man, in any Part of this Service that he ſhall do, ſhall lay violent Hands upon any Woman with Child, or lying in Childbed, old Perſons, Widows, young Virgins, or Babes, without eſpecially Order from the Magiſtrate, upon Pain of Death.

7. What Perſon ſoever that ſhall be commonly given to Drunkenneſs, or riotouſly behave himſelf, ſhall be baniſhed the Army, &c.

With more ſuch like good Laws, and Orders, requiſite in ſuch an Expedition as this was, to the Number of Fifty five.

NUMB. LI.

The Speech of John Puckering, Sergeant at Law, *Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, to the Queen, at the Concluſion of the Seſſions of Parlament,* An. 27. Regin Elizab. 1585.

MSS. Burghlian.

MOST Excellent Prince and Gracious Queen. The laſt Time of my being in this Place before your moſt excellent Majeſty, and this Honorable Aſſembly of your three Eſtates, I did make my moſt humble Submiſſion and Requeſt, upon the Knowledg of my Diſability and Unworthineſs, that I might have been forborn to have occupied in this Place. But ſuch was your Majeſtys gracious Opinion, as it ſeemed, conceived of me upon the Election of your faithful and obedient Subjects, the whole Commonalty of your Realm; that I was thereto directed. And as then I beſt knowing mine own Inſufficiencies did for my Excuſe deſire your Majeſtys gracious Acceptation of that which was only in my Power; which was of my good Will, Diligence and Endeavour to be beſtowed in this Service: ſo now, if I ſhould not acknowledge in this Place, (having here in my Company ſo many Witneſſes againſt me) the Multitude of Imperfections, that I have found in my ſelf, during the Time of this my Service, I ſhould ſhew my ſelf to be overpartial to mine own Cauſe, and in ſome ſort to be void of Modeſty. But knowing your Majeſtys accuſtomed Goodneſs, to accept the good Wills and Endeavours of all Men in your Services, without any ſtrait Regard or Account of the Events or Succeſſes of their Actions; And therewith having alſo had at this Time of Seſſion of Parlament daily Proofs of the favourable Toleration of my Lacks, by the grave, wiſe and Experimented Perſons and good Will generally of the whole Body of your *Commons* towards me, in their quiet Allowauce of my Service; I am the bolder, throwing behind my Back theſe my Lacks, and Wants, as Things not now to be imputed to me; and am to preſent my ſelf in your Majeſtys Sight according to my Office, as a Perſon allowed by your Majeſtys Goodneſs only, and not by my Deſerts; and ſo to procede to preſent to your Majeſty, in the Name of all your *Commons*, Firſt, our moſt humble Thanks for the Benefits that we have received by your Majeſtys Permiſſion, to have this Aſſembly ſo long continued: Secondly, our like humble Requeſts for Pardon of any Thing, which through Ignorance, without any Intention of Offence, in our Conſultations might be, by your Majeſtys great Wiſdome, imputed to us. And laſtly, I am alſo in their Names to exhibit our moſt humble and earneſt Petitions to your Majeſty to give Life to the Works not of our Hands, but of our Minds, Cogitations and Hearts: Which otherwiſe than being lightened by the Beams of your Favour, ſhall be but vain, dumb and dead.

For the firſt I do confeſs, and that in the Name of all your *Commons* here aſſembled, and ſo I may preſume to add the like for the Lords here aſſembled in your Majeſtys Preſence; that we cannot imagine, how your Majeſty can beſtow a greater Benefit, that can deſerve more Thanks of your Subjects univerſally, than that your Majeſty, as you have heretofore at many Times, ſo now eſpecially in this Time, when our Neceſſity, for many Reſpects required the ſame, ſummoned your whole Realm, by calling your Eſtates together to this Parlament, to conſult freely, and at great Leiſure, what were firſt meet for the Furtherance and Advancement of Gods Service, by which we only have our Being; and what were alſo neceſſary for the Preſervation of your Majeſtys Perſon; by whoſe long Life and Continuance we are kept free from the Tyranny and Subjection of foreign Oppreſſion. And laſtly, to deviſe among our ſelves, and provide not only as ſhould be, both in general and particular, good and profitable for our own Eſtates, but alſo to foreſee how to avoid things hurtful to the ſame. To which good End we do acknowledg that by your Majeſtys Goodneſs and Permiſſion our Aſſembly now hath tended. And for that Good which we are to receive therby we do yield to your Majeſty our moſt humble Thanks; beſeeching God to grant to your Majeſty many happy Years, above the Term of our Lives. That as we have already, ſo after us our Poſterity may receive the like Benefits of your Goodneſs, from Time to Time, as Cauſe ſhall require; to procure to themſelves by good Laws under your Government like Means to live in ſuch Peace, Happineſs and Wealth, as we have don, from the Beginning of your Reign: And as our Forefathers never did the like with ſuch Continuance.

Secondly, after theſe our Thanks, moſt humbly preſented upon our Knees, we do both in general and particular, humbly beſeech your Majeſty to give your accuſtomed gracious Interpretations to all our Procedings. Wherein if any Speeches, Motions, or Petitions have paſt from us, that might have miſcontented your Majeſty in your great Wiſdom above our Capacities; I can aſſure your Majeſty, that in this Aſſembly, wherin I was always preſent, there was never found in any Speech, private or public, any Argument or Token of the Mind of any Perſon that ſhewed any Intention to be offenſive to your Majeſty. And for Proof hereof, when it pleaſed your Majeſty to direct me to declare your Pleaſure to the Common Houſe in what Sort you would they ſhould ſtay any further Proceding in the debating of the maner of Reformation of ſuch Things as they thought might be reformed in the Church, I found them all, generally and particularly, ready to obey your Majeſties Pleaſure therin: Which as it ſeemed to me, and ſo I have Cauſe to perſuade with my ſelf, they did. For that it was well underſtood, that your Majeſty, as having by Gods Ordinance a Supreme Authority for that Purpoſe, had ſtraitly charged the Archbiſhops, Biſhops, and your whole Clergy now Aſſembled in their Convocation, to have due Regard to ſe to the Reformation of divers Abuſes in the Government and Diſciplin of the Church. And ſo our firm Hope is, that your Majeſty will, by your ſtrait Commandment to your Clergy, continue your Care to ſe, and Command, that ſuch Abuſes as are crept into the Church by the Negligence of the Miniſters, may be ſpeedily reformed, to the Honour of Almighty God, and to your own immortal Praiſe, and Comfort of your Subjects.

The next Matter wherof I have to ſpeak, is moſt humbly to offer to your Majeſty our moſt humble Requeſt. Wherin I muſt joyn to us, your *Commons*, the State of the Lords here of that Higher Houſe of Parlament: that is, that it may pleaſe your Majeſty to yield your Royal Aſſent to ſuch *Petitions*, * both general and Particular, as have been upon long Deliberation determined and conceived in Writing, with uniform Conſent of the Lords, Spiritual and Temporal, and us your *Commons*, in this your Parlament aſſembled. Wherin your Majeſty ſhall do no leſs, than pertaineth to the Authority, which you have like to God Almighty: who as he giveth Life and being, to all his Creatures great and ſmall; ſo your Majeſty ſhall give Life and Continuance to the Fruits of our Conſultations, as well to the ſmall as to the great. Without which your Royal Aſſent with your own Breath, the ſame ſhall become without Life and Senſe, and all our Labours therin loſt, and our Expectations therin made fruſtrate. And tho' in your Majeſtys princely Sight many of thoſe our Petitions may ſeem to be of mean value, either becauſe they be, ſome of them, particular, or becauſe the Matters of ſome of them may ſeem to be of low and baſe Degree: Yet conſidering to them to whom they belong, the ſame are of as great Importance and Benefit, as to greater Eſtates greater Matters are: And the Lack of the Benefits, which to them may grow therby, ſhall be as grievous, as the Lack of greater in

* See them in *D'Ews* Journal. p. 557.

greater Bodies: And that in every natural Body, the meaneſt Parts and Members are by the Head regarded, as beneficial for one Means or other, to the reſt of the whole Body: So wee with al Humbleneſs in the Name of the whole Body, do beſeech your Majeſty, as our only Head, and Fountain of our Life, to accept the meaneſt Petitions for the Comforts of the Parts of the Body, to whom the ſame may belong: as we know your Majeſty of your Clemency is accuſtomed with your moſt gracious Eyes and Countenance, to comfort daily your baſiſt and pooreſt Subjects, ſeeking Relief at your Feet.

Next to this we do offer to your Majeſty with our whole Hearts, our Bodies and Lives, to be ſerviceable to the Safty of your Majeſtys Noble Perſon. For Defence wherof, and for Revenge of any Act imaginate againſt your Majeſty, we have by a Form of Law, if it ſhall like your Majeſty to aſſent therto, given a Teſtimony to the whole World, how dear the Safty of your Life is to us. And this I do aſſure your Majeſty, that we, your moſt Loving Subjects, were moſt willing to have extended this Ordinance to a far ſtraiter Courſe, as we thought the ſame meet for your Safty, and for terrifying of all Perſons, not well willing to you; if otherwiſe we had not underſtood, that your Majeſtys Pleaſure was, that it ſhould not be extended to any Straiter Points than it is.

And as your Majeſty hath a manifeſt Demonſtration hereby of our Hearts and Minds, ſo alſo we have added for a further outward Declaration therof by our Deeds, offered to your Majeſty of our voluntary Minds, a ſmall Portion out of thoſe Worldly Goods which God hath given us, and by the long Peace under your bleſſed Government we have encreaſt; by way of a Subſidy, and two Fifths, to be uſed by your Majeſty, as in former Times you have always don, for the Defence of this your Realm, and us your humble Subjects. Which tho' we know ſhall not amount to the Value that percaſe ſhall be needful for the Defence of your Realms, Dominions and Subjects againſt all Attempts that may be miniſtred by the Enemyes of God, and of your Majeſty; yet your Majeſty may make an aſſured Account, that beſides this our Offer, you cannot lack a further Supply of the reſt that wee have, to be ſpent, or committed to your Direction, as Cauſe ſhall require.

Laſtly, Upon our Knees we do moſt humbly yield our hearty Thanks for your moſt gracious and free general Pardon: Whereby a great Multitude of your Subjects are to be relieved of divers Pains and Penalties; which by the Order of your Laws your Majeſty might moſt juſtly have inflicted upon them. By which your Clemency we all ſhall take occaſion, beſides our Thankfulneſs for ſo great a Benefit, to endeavour our ſelves more carefully to obſerve your Laws, both to the Honour of God, and to the Comfort of your Majeſty; and, finally to the Maintenance of Peace, Tranquility and Concord among our ſelves.

NUMB. LII.

Sir Amias Paulet *to the Lord Treaſurer: For an Aſſiſtant in the Cuſtody of the* Scots *Queen. From* Tutbury.

My very good Lord,

ALTHO' I have Encreaſe in health daily, ſithence the firſt day of my Arrival here, I thank God for it, and do now find my ſelf able to go as ſtrongly, and as ſpeedily, as at any Time theſe two or three Years laſt paſt; yet being ſubject to the Gout, and conſidering the nature of the Diſeaſe, I muſt look for a freſh Aſſault in the accuſtomed Seaſon. At which Time the Importance of this Service will require the Aſſiſtance of ſome honeſt and faithful Gentleman: Who no doubt may be eaſily found both in the Court and in the Country. But becauſe your Reſolutions at the Court are not always ſpeedy; and that my Aſſiſtant may be found wanting, before he can come; preſuming upon your Lordſhips Favour towards me, I will be ſo bold to name a Gentleman, who I know will be content to come hither unto me; and to ſpend ſome long time here with me: and rabating ſome men of my Number, as he and his Servants will amount unto, which may be in all five or ſix, cannot be any way chargeable unto her Majeſty. The Gentleman is Mr. *John Colles*, a Man not unknown, I think, to your Lordſhip for his good Diſcretion; and ſo well known to me, as I will anſwer for his Fidelity at my uttermoſt Peril. And I am deceived, if he be not ſufficient to take the Charge of this Service, during my Sickneſs, when God ſhall ſend it. Eſpecially, by Living here with me, he may be truſted therin ſome little Time, before I ſhall be viſited with Sickneſs. I will ſtand alwaye anſwerable for the Charge: My Supply ſhall be in Houſe with me ready upon every Occaſion. Her Majeſtys Charge ſhall not be encreaſt on one Peny; and I ſhall have the Comfort of an honeſt, diſcrete Friend. *MSS. Burghlian.*

If your Lordſhip ſhall find this Motion reaſonable, and likely to have Paſſage, it may pleaſe you to further it; and to procede therin as your Lordſhip ſhall think good. If your Lordſhip ſhall not allow of it, then I ſhall moſt humbly pray you, that it may reſt with you in Secret. It may be, that your Lordſhip will not miſlike it; but would not be a Dealer therin. Wherfore being advertiſed, I will not fail to ſeek it in ſuch Order, and by ſuch Means, as your Lordſhip ſhall direct. It may pleaſe your Lordſhip to give me Leave to ſay plainly unto you, as unto my ſpecial good Lord, that I fear there will be ſome Cunning in the Choiſe of my Supply, if he come from the Court. This one Thing I may affirm, that Mr. *John Colles* honoureth and reſpecteth your Lordſhip before all the Noblemen in this Land.

I fear I have preſumed too far: Wherin I crave your Lordſhips Pardon. And thus reſting at your Commandment, I commit your good Lordſhip to the Protection of the Almighty. From *Tutburye*, the 26. of *July*, 1585.

Your Lordſhips to Command,

A. POWLET.

NUMB.

NUMB. LIII.

Inſtructions given by the Queen to Daviſon, *her Ambaſſador to the States of the United Provinces : Taking upon Her the Protection of thoſe Countries : Upon the* Spanyards *taking of* Antwerp. An Original.

ELIZABETH.

Cott. Libra. Titus B. 2.

I. BEING greatly in doubt, that the Loſs of *Antwerp* may breed ſome dangerous Alteration in the reſt of the *United Provinces*, eſpecially in *Zeland*, conſidering the Credit and great Acquaintance, that *S. Aldegonde* (who hath been the principal Inſtrument and Practicer in the giving over of the ſaid Town) hath had with Men of beſt Credit in the ſaid Province ; and alſo that he hath a Houſe of Reſidence in *Walcheren* ; We have thought meet, for that we underſtand, that he ſeeketh by all Perſuaſions he may, to withdraw them from depending upon our Favour and Aſſiſtance, in a kind of malicious and envious ſort ; to ſend you thither, as well to comfort ſuch as happily may have received Diſcouragement by the Loſs of the ſaid Town ; as alſo to uſe ſome Countenance againſt ſuch Perſuaſions as the ſaid *S. Aldegonde* and his Aſſociates may uſe to draw this People to Subject themſelves under the King of *Spains* Obedience, without ſufficient Caution for the Preſervation of Religion in perpetual ; and their Liberties to be free of Government of Strangers.

II. Secondly, You ſhall therfore at the Time of your Acceſs unto the *States General* of the *United Provinces*, (unto whom our Pleaſure is you ſhall addreſs your ſelf) let them underſtand, how ſorry We are for the Loſs of the ſaid Town : and that the Care we had for the Preſervation therof was not accompanied with thoſe good Effects we deſired, through the Cunning or rather corrupt Dealing of certain evil Inſtruments in the ſaid Town : who drew the Inhabitants therof to yield a dangerous Accord with the Prince of *Parma*, in reſpect to the yielding to the reception of a Garriſon, without being forced therto through any Neceſſity or Lack of Victuals, or any other Defects or Want : And alſo without Proviſion to have the free Exerciſe of the Religion Reformed. Which altho' it be in ſome part tolerate, yet ſhall be eaſy by Colour of the Popes Authority, (which is accounted above the Kings and the Princes) both to retrench the Time, and to repreſs it wholly : Therby judging the principal Miſchief unremedied. Which is, that the Countries are, and ſtill may be governed by Strangers. All which conſidered, it is evident, how full of Dangers this treaſonable Compoſition ſhall be.

III. And for that it is to be doubted, that like Practices may be ſet a foot in the principal Townes of the reſt of the Provinces, if good Foreſight be not uſed for Prevention therof ; it ſhall be therfore neceſſary for all good Patriots that deſire the Maintenance of Religion in Perpetuity, and Preſervation of their Liberties without Violation of them, (as heretofore hath been) to cary a watchful Eye over ſuch dangerous Perſons ; who having made Shipwrack of their Credit and Reputation, cannot but prove moſt perillous Inſtruments to work the Ruine and Deſtruction of the whole Country : A Matter that may the eaſier by them be accompliſhed ; for that ſome of the ſaid Parties have had heretofore the Reputation to have been the principal Pillars and Maintainers of Religion in thoſe Countries. And therfore under the Colour and ſhaddow of their Hypocriſy may do the more Harm.

IV. You ſhall therfore further let them know; that as we are careful by our Advice to forewarn them of any Miſchief we ſe likely to grow towards them, ſo ſhall they find us alſo as ready to aſſiſt them from time to time with ſuch Means as God hath given us, and ſhall be found neceſſary for their Defence againſt theſe Dangers. And therefore doubting, that now the Enemy is poſſeſt of that Town of *Antwerp*, he ſhall be enabled ſo much the more to bend greater Forces againſt them divers ways, as well by Water as by Land; We are therefore now pleaſed to condeſcend to the Number of 5000 Footmen, 1000 Horſemen, by them heretofore required, when we yielded to the Aid of 4000 Footmen, and 400 Horſe. So as there may be delivered preſently into our Hands, for our Surety the Town of *Vlisſhing* and *Briel*; as alſo ſome other principal Town in each Province at our Choiſe; at any Time when we ſhall hereafter demand the ſame.

V. And becauſe we are alſo given to underſtand, that for Lack of ſome good Head or Director, their Government there groweth to Contempt, and all things run to Confuſion; We therfore tendring nothing more than their Conſervations, are pleaſed to ſend over a Nobleman of Quality to aſſiſt them with Advice and Authority; for the better Direction of both Civil and Martial Cauſes. So as before his Repair thither, (according to their Promiſe and Offer) the ſaid two Towns above mentioned, ſhall be delivered into the Hands of ſuch well choſen and well qualified Perſons, as ſhall be by Us out of hand ſent over, to take the Charge and Government of the ſame Townes. And therefore you ſhall adviſe them to uſe ſome Expedition therin; by giving ful Authority unto their Deputies here, to conclude with us in this Behalf.

VI. We think it convenient in your way to the *Hague*, (where we are informed you ſhall find the *States General*) that you paſs by *Vliſſing*: where we think meet you ſhould impart in general Termes unto Count *Maurice*, and the Council of State there, the Cauſe of our ſending of you unto the *States General* of the Provinces United; and ſhall lay before them ſuch Reaſons as by you ſhall be thought fit: as well to lead them to accept in al thankful ſort the Offer by us now made; as alſo to beware of thoſe that ſhall think to cary them headlong into that dangerous Courſe the Town of *Antwerp* hath taken.

VII. And wheras we did give Direction unto our Servant *Norris* [Sir *John Norris*] our Collonel General there, by Letters written unto him from our Secretary, to adviſe the States of *Holland* and *Zeeland*, to take a ſpeciall Regard, that ſuch as ſhould retyre from *Antwerp* into the Provinces, under Colour of Religion, or any other Reſpect; might not be ſuffered to repair thither, nor to become Inſtruments of Practice, to disjoyne and ſeparate the Principal Townes of the ſaid Provinces from the general Union; eſpecially, the Town of *Vliſſing*: As alſo to will them to look to the Town of *Sluce*. For that Wee have been given to underſtand, that the Enemy hath ſome Intelligence in the ſaid Town. We have therfore thought meet you ſhould inform your ſelf by him, how he hath proceded therin: And accordingly to direct our Speeches both to the *States General*, and the Council of the States, as you think may be beſt for the Furtherance of our Service. And for prevention of the Danger that may come to *Sluce*, we could like well, that ſome of our Bands, ſerving there, were placed in that Town; with Care always, that the Numbers may be ſuch as may be able to Maſter ſuch Bands, as either are, or ſhall be placed by the States in the ſame Town.

VIII. You ſhall alſo adviſe them to have a ſpecial Regard to impeach, that no Victuals be caried to the Town of *Antwerp*: as alſo to inhibit under ſome great Penalty, that none of *Holland* or *Zeeland* do cary any Victuals to *Calais* or *Bulloyn*, or any other of the *French* Poſts between *Calais* and *Newhaven*. Letting them underſtand, that we are preſently in hand to take ſome Order with our Subjects in that behalf. For that Wee are perſuaded, that, the preſent State and Condition of the Enemy duely conſidered, nothing may more annoy him, than the Reſtraint of Victuals. Which if it had been carefully looked unto by them; and alſo had not been fraudulently uſed by ſome of our evil Subjects, by colourably going to *Bulloyn* and *Calais*, (which we hope to remedy) the Enemy could not have continued the Siege of *Antwerp* ſo long, as he did.

IX. Laſtly, you ſhall, for the Encouragement of the Inhabitants of *Vlisſhing* and *Briel*, to make them more willing to receive our Garriſon, deal underhand with ſome ſuch, as you ſhall learn by Conference with our Servant *Norris*, to be well affected, and to have Credit with the People there: Letting them underſtand, that Wee can be content, that ſuch Merchants inhabiting in the ſaid Towns, and have reſided there by the Space of a few Years paſt, ſhall during the Time, that the ſaid Townes ſhall remain in our Poſſeſſion, enjoy here like Libertyes and Franchices in Matters of Cuſtome for their Trades hither, both inward and outward, in our Ports of *London*, and ſome other which we ſhall appoint within this our Realm; as our now natural Subjects do: providing, that therby no other Strangers ſhall be coloured by them to our Detriment.

You ſhall advertiſe us from *Vliſſing*, how you find the State of thoſe Countries there; and what Alterations the Loſs of *Antwerp* hath or is like to work: What Order they have given for the furniſhing of ſuch Townes as they think may be attempted by the Enemy; and how they mean to preſerve *Lyllo*, and all other Places, for Commandment of the River there: † And of other neceſſary Circumſtances fit for our Knowledge.

You ſhall alſo, during the Time of your Continuance in *Zeeland*, deliver our Letters, directed to the States there, in recommendation of *Terlon*. Letting them underſtand, that we hope, that our Credit ſhall ſo prevail with them, as our Mediation for him ſhall not prove fruitleſs: and that, until Time may remove the Suſpicion had of him, we could like that he ſhould be ſent over into this Our Realm. Where we will undertake, that during the Time of his Abode here, nothing ſhall be don by him to the Prejudice of the common Cauſe. You may confer with his Friends, before the Delivery of our Letters, and take their Advice for your maner of Proceding, as may moſt further his Delivery.

And when you ſhall have delivered this your Charge in maner aforeſaid, Our Pleaſure is, you ſhall with all convenient Speed make your Repair home again: Unleſs you ſhall find ſome ſpecial Cauſe for the Continuance of your Service there.

FRA. WALSINGHAM.

---

† *The River* Scheld. *Which by* Parma *in his Siege had been barred up with ſuch admirable Works, that no Relief could be brought into the City.*

NUMB.

NUMB. LIV.

Expreſſions in Dr. Allens *Book, taken notice of in the Bill of Indictment againſt* Alfield *a Jeſuit; who had brought ſome Hundred of thoſe Books into* England, *to be diſperſed.*

THEY (meaning *Campion, Ralph Shirwyn* and other falſe Traitors, lately attainted of High Treaſon) if they might have ſpoken their Minds boldly, now at their Paſſage and Departure from this World, (as ſithence that Time, we underſtand a Worſhipful Lay Gentleman, [one *James Leyborn*, attainted of High Treaſon] did; who proteſted both at his Arrainment, and at his Death, that her Majeſty was not his Lawful Queen, for two reſpects: One for her Birth; the other for her Excommunication. Her Highneſs have ſought neither Diſpenſation for the Firſt; nor Abſolution for the Second. *MSS.* Burghlian.

And in another Place: By the Fall of the King from the Faith the Danger is ſo evident, and inevitable, that God had not ſufficiently provided for our Salvation, and the Preſervation of his Church, and Holy Laws; if there were no ways to Deprive or reſtrain Apoſtate Princes: [falſely hinting the ſaid Queen to be an Apoſtate Prince.] Wee ſee, how the whole World did run from Chriſt after *Julian* to plain Paganiſm: after *Valens* to *Arianiſm*; After *Edward* VI. with us into *Zuinglianiſm*; and would do into *Turciſm*, if any Powerable Prince will lead his Subjects that way. If our Faith or Perdition ſhould on this Sort paſs by the Pleaſure of every ſecular Prince; and no Remedy for it in the State of the New Teſtament: but men muſt hold and obey him, to what Infidelity ſoever he fall: then we were in worſe Caſe (Intimating the whole People of this Realm) than Heathen and all other Humane Common wealths; which both before Chriſt and after, have had Means to deliver themſelves from ſuch Tyrants as were intolerable, and evidently pernitious to Humane Society. [Falſely pretending by that, the ſaid Queen to be an *intolerable and pernitious Tyrant* to the Society of her Subjects.]

The Bond and Obligation we have entred into for the Service of Chriſt, and the Church far exceedeth all other Duty, which wee owe to any humane Creature. And therfore where the Obedience to the Inferior hindreth the Service of the other which is Superior, we muſt by Law and Order diſcharge our ſelves of the Inferior. The Wife if She cannot live with her own Huſband, being an Infidel or any Heretic, without Injury or Diſhonour to God, ſhe may depart from him, or contrariwiſe he from her for the like Cauſe, neither oweth the innocent Party nor the other can Lawfully claim any conjugal Duty or Debt in This Caſe.

The Bond Slave, which is in another kind no leſs bound to his Lord and Maſter than the Subject to his Sovereign may alſo by the antient Imperial Laws, depart, and refuſe to obey or ſerve him, if he become a Heretic. Yea, *ipſo facto* he is made free. Finally, the Parents that become Heretics looſe the Superiority and Dominion they have by Law of Nature, over their own Children. Therfore let no Man marvel, that in caſe of Hereſy the Sovereign looſeth the Superiority over his People and Kingdom. [intimating therby that the ſaid Queen ſhould looſe her Superiority above her Subjects.]

And in another Place: And as for his Holineſſes Action in *Ireland*, [intimating the Invaſion by the Means of the Biſhop of *Rome* made in *Ireland*] We, that are neither ſo wiſe as to be worthy, nor ſo malapert as to chaleng to know his Intentions, Counſils and Diſpoſitions of thoſe Matters, can nor will neither defend, nor condemne. Onely this is evident that theſe ſmall Succours which were given by him, [intimating the Biſhop of *Rome*] to the *Iriſh*, or rather ſuffered at their own Adventure to go into thoſe Warrs, came upon the Importunity and Suit of the ſore afflicted Catholics, and ſome of the chiefeſt Nobility of that Country. Of whoſe continual Complaint, known Calamity, and intolerable Diſtreſſes of Conſciences; and otherwiſe, it may be, was moved with Compaſſion and did that in caſe of Religion againſt one [hinting the ſaid Queen] whom he took in his own Judgment rightly by his Predeceſſors Sentence to be Depoſed; and in a Quarel in his Sight moſt juſt and godly. And perhaps he [the ſame *Roman* Biſhop] was the rather ready to do this for *Ireland*; for that the See Apoſtolic hath an old Claim to the Sovereignty of that Country.

And in another Place: And this our Countries Scourge [meaning the Realm of *England*] proceding wholly of our forſaking the Catholic Church, and See Apoſtolic, began firſt in K. *Henry* VIII. being *Radix peccati* in our Days.

And then the Indictment runs on in Latin, as it began, *Ubi re vera*, &c. That is, Wheras indeed the preſent Queen was not, nor is an Heretic, nor ſlidden from the true, Chriſtian Faith; nor was, nor is an Apoſtate Prince, nor fallen into Hereſy, nor hath loſt Superiority and Right over all her People and Realmes. And in which Kingdomes indeed no Biſhop of *Rome* hath Power to Deprive or Depoſe any Prince, Yet one *Tho. Allfield*, late of *London* Clerk, not at all weighing the ſaid Statute, feloniouſly as a Felon to the ſaid Queen, the 10th of *September*, the XXVI. of the Queen at *London*, *Viz.* in the Pariſh of *All Saints* in *Bread Street*, in *Bread Street* Ward, adviſedly and with malicious Intent toward the ſaid Queen, did Cauſe to be publiſhed and ſet forth to divers Subjects of the Queen the ſaid Book of the ſaid *Will. Allen*; Containing the foreſaid falſe, ſeditious and Scandalous Matters in *Engliſh* Words, before recited; to the defaming of the ſaid Queen, and raiſing Inſurrection and Rebellion within this Kingdom.

NUMB. LV.

Sandys *Archbiſhop of* York, *his Prayer after his Sermon at* St. Pauls Croſs, *Upon a public Thankſgiving for the Queens Deliverance from the Conſpiracy of* Ballard *and* Babbington.

THOU knoweſt, O Lord, (who haſt delivered our Sovereign Lady out of all Diſtreſs, from the Rebellion of *Abſalom*, from the Counſil of *Achitophel*, and from the Rage and Fury of all that conſpire to doe Her Harm) that She hath not deſerved this Treachery at their Hands; being moſt mild and merciful; doing good unto all; hurting none. Therefore, O Lord, according to thy merciful Wont, as thou haſt done hitherto, ſo deliver, protect and defend her ſtill. Finiſh that which thou haſt moſt graciouſly begun. Bridle, O Lord, her Enemies and ours. Let them know their Madneſs. Open their Eyes, and cauſe them plainly to ſe that they cannot prevail againſt thy choſen Servant; that they cannot caſt down, or bring into Ignominy Her, whom thou haſt ſet up, and placed in Honour. Give them Grace, O Lord, if it be thy good Pleaſure, that they may enter into themſelves, examine their own Hearts; ſe their Sins; Repent of their Wickedneſs; Abſtain from further Proceding; that thou in thy Mercy mayſt ſhew them Grace and Favour in the End.

And grant, O Lord, that we who profeſs thy holy Name, may ſtil offer unto thee the Sacrifice which thou requireſt, even the Sacrifice of Righteouſneſs.

teouſneſs. That the Miniſters of thy Word may ſincerely and diligently preach thy Goſpel. That being a good Example to the Flock, and leading a godly and upright Life, may bring thee the Offerings of many Souls ; unto the ſtretching out of thy glorious Kingdome among Men. Grant, that Princes and Magiſtrates, whom thou haſt ſet in Authority, may without Fear or Favour, offer alſo this Sacrifice, in upright deciding of controverted Cauſes, and ſevere puniſhing of Malefactors. Finally, give this Grace, O Lord, we beſeech thee, to thy whole Flock (for we are thy Flock, the Sheep of thy Paſture) that we all may offer unto thee our Goods, our Bodies and our Souls For they are thine. Grant, that we may liberally beſtow our Goods to the needful Relief of thy poor Saints. That we may mortify our Bodies, and chearfully offer them, if Need ſo require, to any kind of Torment for thy Sake. That in Soul we may offer thee the Sacrifice of true Repentance for our Sins, of hearty Thanks for thy great Grace, and of earneſt Suit for Continuance of thy mercy and Favour towards us.

We humbly beſeech thee, O Father, for the Merits of thy dear Son (upon whom, as upon our Altar, we offer up all our Sacrifice) bow down thy merciful Ear to our Petitions. Extend thy Mercyes to thy little Flock. Preſerve our gracious Queen ; and ſo direct the Hearts of all, which bear Authority under Her ; that by their good Government, we may lead a peaceable and a quiet Life in all Godlineſs and Honeſty. To thee, O merciful Father, with thy Son *Jeſus* Chriſt, our only Redeemer, and the Bleſſed Spirit, our ſweet Comforter, three Perſons and one God, be all Honour and Praiſe, both now and ever.

N U M B. LVI.

A Survey taken of the Value of the Biſhopric of Chicheſter. *upon the Death of* Curteſs, *late Biſhop there.*

Valor omnium & ſingulorum Mannerior. Terrarum, & Poſſeſſionum, pertinen. Epiſcopatui Ciceſtren.	DXVI £. xiiii.^{d} q.

Inde

In feod.	LXII £. vi *s.* viii *d.* *
Item, in Subſid. Reg.	LX £. **
Item, in diverſis Repriſis.	XX £. ***
Sum.	CXLII £. VI *s.* VIII *d.*
Sic clarè	III^{c}LXXIII £. XIIII *s.* V *d.* q.

To which are ſubjoyned theſe Notes.

* 10 £. hereof, and more, void in Law.
** This is not ordinary.
*** His Newyears Gift is but 10 £. Wherof he hath almoſt half again.

Item, More in Barly.	XXIIII Qrs.
Item, in Wheat.	XX Qrs.
Item, In Perquiſites of Court.	XXVI £. XIII *s.* IIII *d.*
Item Parcus [i. e. the Park] with ſome Meddow Ground.	

Epiſcopatus Ciceſtren. valuat. in Libris Dne. Regin.	Mille Marcas
Decimis Dne. Regin. deductis, Viz. Solvend.	C Marks
Pro primitiis.	C £.
Sum of the Charges.	VIII^{c} VI £.

NUMB. LVII.

Proofs and Evidences from antient Grants of the Liberties of the Biſhop of Elies *Manour of* Holborn *Houſe.*

MSS. Epiſcop.

SEVERAL Grants therof made.

I. King *Edgars* Grant of the ſaid Liberties, made to the Church of *Ely*, is very large: and alſo with further Words; *Viz. Quod nullus Princeps ſe intromittat*, &c.

II. *Item*, All the ſaid Grant is likewiſe confirmed by *Edward*, the *Confeſſor*, before the Conqueſt, together with that, that the ſaid King *Edward* then further more granted to the ſaid Church the ſame Liberty; *Viz. In omnib. terr. & tenement. eidem Eccleſiæ tunc dat. ſive in poſterum dandis. Et ulterius, quod nullus miniſter Dni. Regis ſe intromittat ad*, &c. *infra Inſulam Elien. & villis eid. Eccleſiæ pertinen.*

III. *Item*, All theſe Grants were as well confirmed, as alſo enlarged by King *William* the *Conqueror*; King *Henry* the Firſt, his youngeſt Son. In whoſe Time the ſaid Church was tranſlated from an Abby to a Biſhopric, in the Time of one *Harvey*, the firſt Biſhop therof: and alſo confirmed by King *Stephen*, and *Richard* I. As alſo that the ſaid King *Richard*, over and beſide all the ſame, then granted further to the ſaid Biſhoprick and Church the Liberties, *Viz. Inſulam* Elien. *& omnes Libertates ſuas, quietam ab omni regali exactione, una cum omnimodæs* [*omnimodis*] *foriſfactur. & mendabiles, &c.*

Item, Furthermore, all the ſaid Grants were likewiſe confirmed, and alſo enlarged with other mo great Liberties by King *John*, King *Henry* III. and King *Edward* I. In whoſe Time,

HOLBOVRN

Came firſt into the Biſhopric of *Ely* by one *Kirkeby*, then Biſhop therof. And ſo always the Liberty ever ſince downward from Age to Age, and Time to Time ſucceſſively, were as wel confirmed and allowed of, as alſo enlarged with further Words and Liberties by King *Edward* II. In whoſe Time likewiſe all the ſame were confirmed by Act of Parlament. And alſo allowed by King *Edward* III. Which enlarged the ſaid Liberties by general Words; *Viz. In omnib. terris & feodis dict. Eccleſiæ pertinent. cum omnimod. foriſfacturis*, &c. And ſo by the Kings, *Richard* II. *Henry* IV. *Henry* V. *Edward* IV. *Henry* VII. *Henry* VIII. *Edward* VI. Queen *Mary*: and laſtly, by the Queens Majeſty that now is, under the great Seal of *England*.

And ſo therupon accordingly unto the ſaid Grants and Confirmations, all the ſame have been always allowed of before Juſtices in *Ayere*, Juſtices of Aſſize; and all other her Majeſtys Juſtices in every her Highneſs Courts of Records, where and whatſoever, until now of late, within theſe 16 Years laſt paſt, by the City of *London* here diſturbed within *Holborne*.

The Proofs of Holbourn Houſe, with the Appurtinences, to be a Manour, and alſo a Liberty exempt from the City of London, *beſides the general Grants aforeſaid.*

Firſt, the ſame may well appear to be a Manour by ſundry Records therof made in King *Edward* the Third his Time. And alſo after him in King *Richard* the Second his Time.

Item, for further Proof of the ſame Manour and Houſe, with its Appurtinances, to be a Liberty exempt from the City, it will evidently appear by Records in King *Henry* the Fourth his Time; that the Biſhops Officers there had the Collection of green Wax: and paying therof over again by Order of the Exchequer, unto the Sheriffs of *London*; having the Fee farm granted unto them (among other Things) of all the ſame, by reaſon of the County of *Middleſex*.

Item, it may alſo well appear by divers and ſundry other Records, Dated as well in the Time of King *Henry* VII. and other Times beſide; as alſo by Uſage ever ſince; and Witneſſes; that the Biſhops of *Ely*, and others, their Officers there, within the ſaid Rents and Liberties, have had and enjoyed, to the only Uſes of the ſaid Biſhops, by expreſs Word: Viz. *Omnia bona & Catalla felonum, fugitivorum & deodand*, &c. without Comptrolment of any, until now of late diſturbed by the City of *London*: which before this Time never withſtood any of the ſaid Liberties: As might well appear by themſelves at the firſt, when they only pretended Intereſt there about the keeping the Aſſize for weighing of Bread; and no other thing. And yet ſince encroached further.

Item, for further Proof of the ſaid Liberties, it may well appear, that ever time out of mind, all the ſaid Manour Houſe, Rents, and Liberties belonging to *Holborn*, have been always railed and barred up, as a Thing exempt from the ſaid City.

Item, Alſo for further Proof, that the ſaid Manour and Houſe in *Holborn*, with their Appurtinances, be out of the Liberty of the City; it may well appear upon Search for the Grants of the Liberties of *London*, made unto the City, from the Kings and Queens of this Realm: That no mention is made by any Words in any of their Grants, of *Holborn* being within the County of *Middleſex*: but of *Fleetſtreet* there is.

Item, For further Proof of the Likliehood of *Holborn* to be out of the Liberty of the City, it is to be ſeen, that *Smithfield*, neerer to the City than *Holborn* is, in the Time of King *Henry* I. was a void Place, where Priſoners were executed, and alſo a Layſtall, altogether without the Liberties of the City: the ſame not tending and reaching then ſo far that ways: but only rather from Ludgate: And ſo through *Fleetſtreet* to *Weſtminſter*.

Item, Furthermore touching the Antiquity of the Church and Biſhopric of *Ely*, they do appear now to be more antient than the Cities are. And alſo, that there was a Biſhop of *Ely* before any Maior of *London*; being but *Portgreves* there in the Beginning of King *John* his Time. And alſo for that the Liberties of the City of *London* have been as well before as after the Conqueſt, as alſo ſince the Time of King *Edward* (when *Holborn* Houſe and Manour was purchaſed to the See of *Ely*) forfeited and ſeized. *Viz.* in the Time of King *Richard* II. King *Henry* VI. and other mo. And afterwards newly granted to them again. Wherby their Priority, if they had any, is clear gon and loſt by them.

Item, Laſtly, for further Proof of the ſaid Liberties, there were always Bailiffs and other Officers, appointed within the ſaid Manour and Liberty, from Time to Time, for the due Execution therof: as may appear by Records from the 46 *Edw.* III. until that late Diſturbance made by the ſaid City.

[NUMB. LVII.]

The State of the Cathedral Church of Norwich*: Truly ſet down by* William Downyng, *in Purſuit of his humble Petition.*

Chart. Epiſcop. FIRST, it was a Priory founded by one *Herbert* Biſhoppe of *Norwich*, by the Licence of *William Rufus*, the Right of Founderſhippe, then being and remaynyng, in and to the Biſhoppe and his Succeſſors, Biſhopps of *Norwich*. That Priory being above 200 *l. per ann.*. was never ſuppreſſed, nor ſurrendered, nor relinquiſhed, but a tranſlation from Prior and Monks to Dean and Chapter, was pretended to be done by Letters Patents in *Anno* 30. *H.* 8. and by thoſe Letters Patents, the Prior was named Dean, and the Monks were named, ſome Prebendaries, and ſome Cannons, and called Deane and Chapter; but thoſe Letters Patente, were meerly void, in Law, becauſe, the King cold not tranſlate without the conſent of the Founder, neither cold the King, erect them Deane and Chapter, of himſelf, except thold Corporation of Prior and Convent, had been ſurrendered, or otherwiſe diſſolved, which it was now, neither cold the King do it, by reaſon of Supremacy, for where the Pope Uſurped, the King, and the Pope, cold not do it without the Founder. So the old Corporation of Prior and Convent ſtill remyaned, and the Prior and Monks contynewed ſtill in their Houſe, and Church, and all their poſſeſſions, and changed only their Prayers and Service, wherunto they had collour of deſpenciation by the Letters Patents, but they contynewed Prior and Monks ſtill, till all the Monks were dead, the laſt wherof, (ſave one) died in *Anno.* 28. of her Majeſtie, and that one became an Apoſtata, in *Henry* the Eighth tyme; ſo then, that Priory came to the Crowne in *Anno* 28 of her Majeſty, when the Priorie was diſſolved by the Death of the Monkes, and not before.

Notwithſtanding, that the ſaid pretended Dean and Chapter, did in King *Edward* 6. his Tyme, ſee the weakneſs of their tranſlation, and ſought a newe Foundation, of King *Edward*, who paſſed to them newe Letters Patent, which relied upon a ſurrender made by themſelves, by the Name of Deane and Chapter, onely, and not by the name of Prior and Covent, and ſo their ſurrender and newe Foundation were alſo void, becauſe the old Corporation ſtill remayned in Lawe, and the poſſeſſions therewith alſo.

It ſemed that their Councell in Lawe, was verie weake, for, there be divers ſuch imperfections, in their Books, as might overthrow them, though the ſaid King had been ſufficiently inabled to have paſſed their Letters Patent according to their Pretences.

A Judgment is had in the Exchequer, upon the whole Matter, by true and full pleading on both ſides, and argued and greatly deliberated, before Judgment. But the old Leſſees have alledged, that the defendant, did plead of himſelf without conſent of thother Leſſes, and ſo do pretend colluſions between that Leſſee, and Sir *Thomas Sherley*. Which is not true, but though it were, yett, the pleading is as it ought to be, according to the truth of the Caſe and not otherwiſe.

But it ſemeth, that God is diſpleaſed at the cruell dealings of the Deane and Chapter, and doth ſend troubles to them, which have cauſed multitude of troubles to many other Men. For they have made many ſeveral Leſſes, of every ſeveral Farme that they had, to ſeveral Perſons, to take begynnyng, and have being all of them, before the Tearmes of the firſt Leſſes, in poſſeſſion ſhould end, without any diſtinction, or relation as had been meete. And therby their ſondrie Leſſes, entered one upon another, and have cauſed Bloodſhed and many notorious outrages, and divers ſuits in the *Star Chamber*, and multitude of ſuits otherwiſe, and ſome of their Leaſes are made for 99 Years in poſſeſſion, and 99 Years in reverſion.

Item, they greatly abuſed her Majeſty, in making a Leaſe to her Highneſs, for an 100 Years, having made many before, of the ſame things, and ſo have alſo made divers Leaſes, ſithence, of the ſame things.

And where her Majeſty, hath taken a gratious courſe, by her Majeſtyes warrant under the greate Seale of *England*, for the well ſetling of the Church, and the poſſeſſions to the ſame, and of the poſſeſſions of the immediate Tenant, and competent recompence, to the patentees, and thavoiding of the multitude of fraudulent Leaſes, and the trouble and inconvenyence, waiting upon them the Corrupt ſort of the Prebendaries, which were partakers with doctor *Gardyner* the late Dean, are afraid to agree to ſurrender, for the good ending of all things, according to her Majeſtys Warrant: as well becauſe they have taken mens moneys, and paſſed Corporation, Covenants and Bonds, which they think may better be avoided, if the Lawe agreede to overthrow their Pretended Corporation, then would be if they ſhould ſurrender, as alſo for that they think ſtill to gett more Money, by Leaſes, as indeed they have done very lately, for *Crawby* Parſonage in *Yorkſhire*; notwithſtanding, greate miſchiefes growne there already by their many former, Leaſes made of the ſame.

Item, for the better coloryng, of their doing, they have uſed ſtrange Practices, and Subornations of Jurors and other odious things, which ſeeme endleſs, if a gracious remedie be not extended, and by packing of a Jurie got a verie fowle Verdict, as the Lord Chief Juſtice of *England* knoweth well, being clean contrarie to his directions: but the Court wolde not give Judgment therupon.

The Effect of her Majeſtys Warrant is as foloweth.

The Lord Treaſurer, is authoriſed to give Warrant to Mr. Attorney, or Mr. Soliciter, to drawe and ingroſſe the Leaſe: or the Lord Treaſurer, to Signe the Leaſe, to Mr. *Fanſhaw* and Mr. *Osborne*, as Men in truſt for making out new Leaſſes, to the immediate Tenent in poſeſſion, and to rate fines indifferently for thoſe leaſes, to the Benefite of the pattentees and the Lord Chancellor is auctoriſed to Seale the leaſe, and Mr. *Fanſhawe* and Mr. *Osborne* inabled alſo, to th'effect aforeſaid and likewiſe, Authoritie is geven therby, for a newe Boke, for the well ſetling of the Church, of her Majeſtys foundation, and graunting to them, the Rents, to be reſerved upon the leaſe, and the reverſion of the Lands and their former Liberties.

Her Majeſty having paſſed awaie the Lands lieng in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, to the Lord *Wentworths* Aſſignes, the Patentees and their Aſſignes, have effectually made all their Surrenders, in redyneſs agreeable to the Courſe of her Majeſties Warrant. And therefore, do humblie ſue that the leaſe maie be finiſhed, or elſe they allowed, with favours to take the Benefite of the Lawe; for the long delais have undone divers of them.

N U M B: LVIII.

Minutes of a Letter wrot by the Lord Burghley *to a nameleſs Friend; Clearing himſelf of Sundry Slanders, raiſed of him.*

BY your Letter of the 11th, I perceive that you hear the vile, falſe, deviliſh Exclamations and execrations, made by ſuch as I know not. And *MSS.* Burghlian. therefore I can leſs judge what to think of them in their Degrees of their Malice, and the Cauſes therof: but as it ſeemeth to me, I may ſay truly, *Acuerunt linguas ſuas, ſicut Serpentes; Venenum aſpidum ſub labiis eorum.* And, as it follows in the ſame *Pſalm*, *Cognovi, quia facit Dominus judicium inopis.*

Surely if my Conſcience did not aſcertain me of Gods Favour and Protection againſt theſe Satanical and Fanatical Spirits, I ſhould think my ſelf in a moſt wretched State. For I know and have proved Gods Goodneſs ſo many Years to defend mine Innocency, that I may boldly ſay with *David*, *Factus eſt mihi Dominus Refugium*, & *Deus meus in adjutorium ſpei meæ. Et reddet illis iniquitatem ipſorum*, *Et in malitia eorum deperdet eos.*

I am therefore determined to adhere to God, my onely Patron: and ſhall be ready to anſwer all Spirits, wherſoever I may find them blazing: And doubt not, but if they would to my Self but breath any of theſe Speeches in preſence of any honeſt Company, I would with apparent Truth confound their Blaſphemies. And therfore as you ſhew your ſelf friendly in reporting theſe Villaineis to me, ſo you might ſhew your Friendſhip in effect to my Good, if you would adviſe them to charge me therewith. And if they do think me guilty therof, they need not fear to accuſe me. For I am not worthy to continue in this Place; but I will yield my ſelf worthy not only to be removed, but to be puniſhed for an Example to others, that ſhould not abuſe her Majeſty, and the Office I hold. If they cannot prove all the Lyes they remember, let them make uſe of any one Proof, wherewith to prove me guilty of Falſhood, Injuſtice, Bribery, of Diſſimulation, of double Dealing in Advice, in Counſil, either with her Majeſty, or with the Counſillors. Let them charge me in any Point, that I have not dealt as earneſtly for the Queens Majeſty to aid the afflicted in the *Low Countries*, to withſtand the encreaſing Power of the King of *Spain*, the Aſſurance of the King of *Scots*, to be tyed to her Majeſty with Reward, yea, with the greateſt Penſion that any other hath. If in any of theſe I may be proved to have been behind, or ſlower than any, in a diſcrete maner, as becometh a Servant and a Counſillor; I will yield my ſelf worthy of perpetual Reproch, as tho' I were guilty of all that they uſe to bluſter againſt me. They that ſay in a raſh and malicious Mockry, that *England* is become *Regnum Cecilianum* may pleaſe their own cankered Humour with ſuch a Device, but if my Actions be conſidered, if there be any Cauſe given by me of ſuch a Nickname, there may be found out in many other juſter Cauſes to attribute other Names than mine.

If my Buildings miſlike them, I confeſs my Folly in the Expences, becauſe ſome of my Houſes are to come, if God ſo pleaſe, to them that ſhall not have Land to make them. I mean by my Houſe at *Theobalds*. Which was begun by me with a mean Meſure; but encreaſt by occaſion of her Majeſtys often coming: Whom to pleaſe I never would omit to ſtrain my ſelf to more Charges than Building is. And yet not without ſome ſpecial Direction of her Majeſty upon Fault found with the ſmal Meſure of her Chamber which was in good Meſure for me; I was forced to enlarge a Room for a larger Chamber: which need not be envied of any for Riches in it, more than the ſhew of old Oaks, and ſuch Trees with painted Leaves and Fruit. [And Coats of Armes. For ſo he had painted this new Room for the Queen. Set forth with ſeveral Trees, of ſeveral Sorts with the Armes of the Nobility, Officers of State, the Biſhops, &c.]

I thank God, I owe nothing to theſe Backbiters, tho' indeed much to many honeſt Perſons: Whom I mind to pay without Bribery or Villany.

For my Houſe in *Weſtminſter*, I think it ſo old, as it ſhould not ſtir any; many having of later Times built larger by far both in City and Country. And yet the building therof coſt me the Sale of Lands, worth an 100 £. by Year in *Staffordſhire*, that I had of good King *Edward*.

My Houſe of *Burghley* is of my Mothers Inheritance; who liveth and is the Owner therof: and I but a Farmour. And for the Building there, I have ſet my Walls upon the old Foundation. Indeed I have made the rough Stone Walls to be of Square. And yet one ſide remaineth, as my Father left it me. I truſt my Son ſhall be able to maintain it, conſidering there are in that Shire a dozen larger, of Men under my Degree.

Now ſhortly, for my Sons adhering to *Northumberland*, I mervail, why he ſhould not bear Favour to him that was his Brother in Law, as long as he knew no faults. My Son maried his Wifes Siſter, when no body ſaw Liklihood, that Sir *Henry Percie* ſhould be an Earl. For his Purchaſes, I know, that he hath ventured upon more Bargains than I allowed. But I wiſh he had not ſold his Wifes Land of antient Title in *Weſtmerland*, in *Cornwal*, in *Northamptonſhire* and *Worceſterſhire*, of more Value than that he hath bought. They that envy him herein, if they be for thriving would not commit ſuch a Folly, to buy new racked Lands for antient. And at this day I know, he doth repent himſelf. But I will end with my Paper: Wiſhing you could procure ſome Perſon to utter theſe Things to our ſelves; and not cowardly to backbite us. *Aug.* 14. 1525.

Your Loving Friend,

W. B.

AFTER that I had ended, tho' my Letter doth and will ſerve me, yet I could not omit to anſwer a notable, abſurd, manifeſt Ly; which is, that Counſillors are forced to ſeek at my Hands Means for their Suits. If it were conſidered, how and upon whom, for theſe late Years, all manner of Offices, good and bad, Spiritual and Temporal, have been beſtowed, to whom the Perſons beneficed do belong, and whom they do follow; it will eaſily be judged, how rare I do, or have dealt therin. If great Numbers be beſtowed, and not one upon any Kinſman, Servant or Follower of mine; then how probable is it, that I had Ability to do that wherewith I am thus ſlandered. In very Truth, I know my Credit in ſuch Caſes ſo mean; and others I find ſo earneſt, and able to obtain any thing, that I do utterly forbear to move for any. Wherupon many my good Friends do juſtly chalenge me, as unwiſe; that I ſeek to place neither Men and Women in the Chamber, nor without, to ſerve her Majeſty; whereby I might do my Friends good. And therſore indeed I have few ſpecial Friends: and ſo I find the Want therof. But yet I cannot remedy it, knowing my Power not anſwerable therto.

True it is, that her Majeſty throweth upon me a Burthen, to deal in all ungrateful Actions; to give Anſwers unpleaſant to Suitors that miſs: where others are uſed to ſignify pleaſant Anſwers, affirmatively. My Burthen alſo is this, that in all Suits for Lands, Leaſes, or ſuch things, her Majeſty commands me to certify the State therof from her Under-Officers; and ſo I do, (as it becomes) truly. And if the Party obtain, I am not thanked; if not, the Fault (tho' falſely) is imputed to me.

If theſe Reaſons may not clear this Slander, I would this only Reaſon were weighed, that is true. For my ſelf I had not made, nor obtained any Suit from her Majeſty theſe ten Years. In my whole Time I have not, for theſe XXVI Years been beneficed from her Majeſty ſo much as I was within four Years of King *Edward*. I have ſold as much Land in value, as ever I had of Gift of her Majeſty. I am at Charges by Attendance in Court; and by keeping of my Houſehold, eſpecially in Term times; by reſort of Suitors at more than any Counſillor in *England*. My Fee for the Treaſureſhip is no more than it hath been theſe XXX Years. Wheras the Chancellor and others have been doubbly augmented within theſe few Years. And this I do affirm, that my Fees of my Treaſureſhip do not anſwer to my Charge of my Stable. I mean not my *Table*. And in my Houſehold I do ſeldome feed leſs than an hundred Perſons. And for that Purpoſe I buy in *London* my Bread, my Drink, my Achates, my Fewel. And in the Country I buy my Grain, my Beef, my Mutton, and all Achates: And for my Stable; I buy my Hay, for the greateſt part; my Oats, my Straw totally. For my Servants I keep none, to whom I pay not Wages: and give Liveries; which I know many do not.

Theſe things conſidered, I might not thus be ſlandered or envied. What my Pains in Service are ; and how many [houres of] Leiſure or Pleaſure I take, is too manifeſt: and indeed I condemne my ſelf therin. But I cannot remedy it, otherwiſe then I might leave my Offices. Which in the Preſence of God, I could be contented to do ; ſo as therby I might not be touched with Note of Diſhoneſty or Diſpleſure of her Majeſty. You ſe, how I am caried by theſe Provocations, to write more than I intended. And yet I write nothing, but what I will affirm in Preſence of any Company, good or bad.

NUMB. LIX.

Another Letter of the Lord Treaſurer Burghley *to his nameleſs Friend: In vindication of himſelf from a ſlander upon him, of hindring the Negotiation between the Queen and the King of* Navarr.

Ubi Supra.

I COMMEND me heartily unto you, and do thank you for your friendly Advertiſement of ſuch common Speeches as you have heard of me, falſely uttered, and ſo maliciouſly deviſed, and I hope in the Judgment of honeſt Men, not abſurdly and improbably to be believed. I have been long time acquainted, and afflicted with ſuch kind of viperous Breathing : and I have long born the ſame patiently, in reſpect I had no mind to make Quarells with ſome ſuch as I had Cauſe to ſuſpect to be the Authors therof. But yet I have ſhewed my ſelf in many Places to have miſliked and condemned theſe injurious Actions. Where alſo ſome Perſons, of whom I had ſome Doubt of good Friendſhip, have ſeemed to condemn the Authors or Reporters; and have wiſhed the Reporters to be known. And ſo have I heretofore ceaſed to purſue the Matters ; remitting always the Revenge to Almighty God. To whoſe Defence I wholly remit my ſelf.

Now in a few Words to this Matter. I know that *Segar*, the King of *Navarrs* Ambaſſador, was informed by ſome Counſillor, (as he told my Friend) that I was a hinderer of his Negotiation, even then when I did my beſt to further the ſame ; being in Conſcience moved thereto : not only for my Zele to the Cauſe of the King of *Navarr* ; but alſo in neceſſary Conſequence of the Surety of the Queens Majeſty, my Sovereign, and my native Country. And ſince that time *Segar* hath confeſſed to my ſelf, that he certainly knoweth how earneſtly and friendly I have dealt with her Majeſty for him. But yet the Scar of that falſe Report may remain, and the Untruth firſt uttered, continue, and the Truth to him revealed notwithſtanding, remaining only with himſelf, for the Satisfaction.

And the Like hath been uttered to the *Hollanders* here now, of my Hindrance of their Cauſes. And ſo I think, falſely conceived of them. And yet lately confeſſed by ſome of them, that they certainly knew the Report to be falſe and malicious.

Of my Doings I have many Teſtimonies. Firſt God ; that otherwiſe I wiſh to be confounded, if he, that only knoweth all things, knoweth not, that I am falſely Slandered. Next, mine own Conſcience ; which otherwiſe ſhould be a perpetual Sting to me. Thirdly, the Queens Majeſty, who might greatly condemn me of Unloyalty, if I did not concurr in all Actions for her Safty againſt all her known Enemies, *Popiſh* and *Spaniſh*. My Fourth Proof of my Actions ought to be ſuch Counſillors, with whom

I do joyn. But in all theſe Cauſes I do more eſteem of the Favour of God, whom I call to witneſs, than in all fleſhly Helps or Defences.

To end, I pray you adviſe the Parties that make theſe Reports, either to ſpeak with my ſelf, or Mr. S. [*Segar*] who is beſt acquainted with the Truth of my Actions in this Time.

And for the Actions concerning the *States*, both he, and Mr. 2 can tell in what Termes and ſort, I have dealt with her Majeſty often, to the offending of her Majeſty with my earneſtneſs. And I dare appeal to the Report of any Counſillor, ſo as I may be preſent at the Report. . For I know none can be ſo void of Grace, that dare ſay any thing of me herein, that becomes not an honeſt, faithful and careful Counſillor. But you may ſe, how I travail herein: Not to perſuade you to think of me otherwiſe, than I think in Honeſty you do. For I know, that you have manytimes known me heretofore in this Sort falſely Slandered. And I muſt content my ſelf to follow my only Maſter, *Chriſt*, that ſuffered alſo many ſuch, and ſo commonly do his beſt Members.

God ſend them Grace, and me ſome Reſt. For I never more toyled, nor leſs able for to do any good by reaſon of malicious, bitter Biters. Whom God amend. The 12 *July*, 1585.

Your aſſured Loving Friend,

W. B.

To which Letters there was a Third of the ſame injured Noble Perſons writing, not many days after the former: Upon another Information ſent him concerning thoſe his Slanderers. As follows.

I thank you for your Letter ſent by this Bearer, and perceive therby the Continuance of lewd Humours of riotous Tongues, that are ſeaſoned with nothing, but with Gauls. I content my ſelf to bear their Malice: knowing that God, whom I ſerve with Truth and Sincerity, will abate their cankred Furies, when it ſhall pleaſe him; and will comfort me in the mean time, to continue my ſelf rather in Fear to offend him, than in any Fear of Harm they ſhall be able to do me.

It is very ſtrange, that a Ly once a foot cannot be ſtayed with Teſtimonies of Truth, wherof I have many. And yet it ſeems Malice is ſo ſettled, as I think no body elſe muſt be believed, but the Authors of their Untruths. And yet ſuch is my Caſe, as it may be that ſome that were in Sort the Authors or Abetters, ſhall ſcantly be believed in reporting their Untruths. But of this an End.

NUMB. LX.

The Earl of Leiceſter. *In Anſwer to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghleys *Letter to him; Upon ſome Informations, as tho' the Earl were not his Friend. Juſtifying himſelf at large to the Contrary.*

MSS. Burghlian.

MY Lord, I perceive by your Letter, you were doubtful to write; but that you would avoid Miſconſtruction, it pleaſeth you rather to write, than be ſilent. I do thank your Lordſhip, that you will take that way, wherby thoſe you deal and live withall may rather know what you hear, than to concele what you Miſlike.

Your Lordſhip doth ſay, that you have been manytimes informed, that I have had miſliking of you: but the informers would never bring forth their falſe Proofs, but rather deal doubtfully. I truſt, for ſuch Informers, I ſhall need little to ſtand in anſwering them. Your own Wiſdom will eaſily diſcharge me; being ſo well acquainted with the Devices and Practices of theſe Days, when Men go about rather to ſow all Diſcord betwixt ſuch as we are, than to do good Offices: A Matter not ſtrange neither to your Lordſhip, nor me, ſince our firſt Acquaintance in Service together. And as your Lordſhip proteſteth firſt your own Innocency, ſo I hope you never yet brought in Proof, or ſo much as in Queſtion, any yll Dealing on my Part againſt you; but rather your ſelf affirmeth, you have always found me friendly, and well diſpoſed towards you. And ſo muſt I ſay truly of my ſelf; your Lordſhip hath not found a more ready Friend for you and yours than I have ever been, if you examine all the Matters wherin you have at any time employed me; whan my Credit was ſomewhat more there, than ſince it was, whether I dealt not very friendly with you, or no.

If now I may refer my ſelf thus to tryal of your own Knowledg, then is it as much as I deſire for mine own, and your Lordſhips Satisfaction. Yet do you remember me of one Token more of my good Meaning towards you: which is the honeſt Report, I perceive, in your Letter, that your own Children do make of me: A Token, my Lord, where in good reaſon ſhould ſerve for ſuch a Man againſt whom no Proof is yet had, and that never did depend upon any, but merely her Majeſty: that of like I did it not to flatter them or you. I have little any mans Favour, but to be a Friend for a Friend. I have always had a mind rather to count my ſelf with worſe than I am, than to crave Benefit by any Man. And thus much may I well ſay, that I know none able at this day, nor any heretofore, that have don me any pleſure, that I have not deſerved ſomeways a Good turn at his Hand. But I ſhall leave for this Matter every man to his own Thankfulneſs; and content my ſelf with ſuch Friends and Fortunes, as ſhall pleaſe the Lord to ſend me.

Theſe Reaſons, my Lord, that are alledged by your ſelf, and ſuch likewiſe as are affirmed by me, mythinks, ſhould be ſufficient to hold your Lordſhip from ſetting any new, ſtrange Opinion of me, what doubtful Informers ſoever you have had. For I having, as you ſay, dealt well with your ſelf and your Children, confeſſing I deal well with them, what ſiniſter way is there then, to draw another Conſtruction of me?

Your Lordſhip muſt give me Leave (tho' I ſeem tedious) thus to purge my ſelf, having ſo juſt and honeſt Cauſe to warrant me. For I mean not to ſeek any Excuſe by Untruth, albeit it were for Matter of greater Weight than theſe are.

Cauſes of Miſlik: cleared.

The firſt, as ſeems to me, which hath bred ſome Miſlike in your Lordſhip is, by the Information alſo, that I ſhould miſlike with you for Matters of the *Low Countries*, in finding Fault of like with Coldneſs, or elſe Want [of ~~Diligence] in your Dealing that way. I muſt,~~ my Lord, ſay to this, as I did in the general before, if there be any Perſon that will juſtify any ſuch Matter of my Speeches to charge you in that ſort, then you ſhall ſe what Cauſe you ſhall have hereafter to truſt Informers: Otherwiſe you ſhall do both your ſelf and me, Wrong. I have dealt, as your Lordſhip hath heard, perhaps more earneſtly in thoſe Caſes, than a wiſer man would, but I truſt without juſt Cauſe given, or prejudice either of you, or any other Counſillor. And for that manytimes you your ſelf would tel, not only among us, but to her Majeſty, how you were miſreported abroad for that Matter: I did deal plainly with your Lordſhip, even in particular, what I thought, and whom I heard, and moſt doubt of, to hinder thoſe Cauſes, which in my Opinion had been reaſonable Cauſe, ſufficient to have ſtayed your Conceipt therin, without ſome better Proof. But that is not my Fault ſeeing I was not charged: and that without Offence and in good Friendſhip you might very well have don it to me, when it was firſt informed you. I muſt needs have taken it in very good friendly part.

The Second thing being more freſh, and delivered to your Lordſhip by a Party of ſome good Credit with you, and yet but a Report, will not ſuffer you to ſmother up the Matter; (for ſo you term it) but to touch it to me; and to refer the Anſwer to me for your better Satiſfaction. I muſt needs take this maner of Dealing of yours to be very honorable and good. For you tell me both the Matter and the Party that informed you. To which I will make you a true and juſt Anſwer.

The very ſame Day I came to *London*, my Lady *Ruſſel* came to my Houſe and ſpake with me touching her Daughters Cauſes. And upon further Talk of Friends, and of your Lordſhip. I ſaid to her (leaving the Circumſtances of our Speech) that I had Cauſe, all things conſidered, to make as good Reckoning of your Friendſhip, as any other might do. And proceding further upon this Point, (my Lady then taking no Exception in the World to it, nor to take it in evil part) I did uſe theſe Words, “That albeit there “ were ſome Houſes did make ſhew to think you were more their Friend than “ me, (and named my Lord of *Somerſets* Houſe) yet my Lord of *Somer-* “ *ſet* never ſhewed more Friendſhip to your Lordſhip than my Father did. For I did not doubt but you did think ſo your ſelf. And, my Lord, I muſt think, if you do not forget it, that you do conceive ſo yet. For you do know I lived in that Time, and do well remember the Courſe of moſt Doings. I was in no obſcure Place from the diſplacing of the Duke of *Somerſet*, till the Death of our Maſter, King *Edward*. And if any Man had greater Authority at that Time to place Counſillors about the King than my Father had, I will yield to my Error. But, ſure I am, when he had moſt Authority, you were placed Secretary and Counſillor. Then, (I refer it to your better Remembrance, if your Lordſhip do not remember, as you write any more) *then* he was your good Friend, that hardly could, either you or any other Counſillor, have been then placed, without his ſpecial Means and Allowance. And more worthy of good Remembrance is it; for that this was don for you after ſome Trouble which you had been in for the D. [Duke of *Somerſet*] So I do approve the Speeches uſed. I thought I had to make as good Reckoning of your Friendſhip, as any other, if former Deſerts of my Friend [my Father] might require it.

For the other Speeches your Lordſhip doth ſet down of her Report alſo, that I ſaid, you were not my Friend. I aſſure you upon my Word and Truth, I ſpoke them not at all. The former [Words] for ſundry Cauſes I did, which I mean not here to fall into Diſputation. You know my Caſe, and can well conſider, how all things ſtand with me. I do not complain of Envy, but I may complain juſtly of Diſgraces and Want of ſuch Friends, as I have been my ſelf to others.

Your Lordſhip doth ſay, you are weary of your Places; and wiſheth another to have them, your Credit ſaved. Truly, I know none, that either ſeeketh them, or that envieth you for them. For mine own part, I will anſwer faithfully and truly for my ſelf, I more deſire my Liberty with her Majeſties Favour than any Office in *England*. Beſides your Lordſhip doth know to my poor Power, there was no Man more forwarded you unto them, than I did. Thus much have I thought good to anſwer to thoſe Parts of your Letter.

And now, my Lord, if I would ground the like Conceits upon Tales and Preſumptions, I might, I think, alledge moe juſt Cauſes of Unkindneſs, than any I yet heard of from you. As for theſe of my Lady *Ruſſels* only, that She ſaid, I ſhould name you not to be my Friend. Which is altogether untrue. The other part you have no Cauſe to miſlike of, for ought I conceive. But to enter into any particular Cauſes I will forbear here to reply, til ſome other Time. And your Lordſhip ſhall ſurely do well, having taken this Occaſion both to review, what former Tales have been told you; and that this laſt Report of my Lady *Ruſſel* doth draw you to a Confirmation of the reſt. Albeit in your Letter in ſundry Places your own ſelf doth detect them, as doubtful Informers; that yet you will, for a further Tryal of the Troth, being ſome of theſe Tales to queſtion. Which may breed you a far better Satisfaction, than otherwiſe I ſee I can do. And for the mean time I muſt, as your Lordſhip doth ſay you will do, content my ſelf with this, and more Wrong: Not being ignorant that you can, and are able to do both much good and great Hurt: But the more good you ſhall do, the more acceptable muſt it be both to God and good men.

And thus have I troubled your Lordſhip with a tedious Letter, and will pray to God, that he will give us Grace to have Minds to do that Good we ought, to the Glory of his Name, and the Service of our Sovereign and Country. And ſo committing your Lordſhip to his holy Protection. From *Cornbury* Park this 15th of *Aug.* 1585.

By him that hath given you no other Cauſe but to be his Friend,

R. LEYCESTER.

NUMB. LXI.

Philip, *Earl of* Arundel; *His Debts, Eſtate and Circumſtances.* An. 1585.

His Debts.

	£.	s.	d.
TO the Queens Majeſty.	5351	6	9
To divers Creditors, as Mony borrowed by ſpecialty	7641	15	8
To the Lady *Margaret Sackvyle*, for her Mariage Mony. She was the Earle Siſter. By the Duke his Fathers Gift 2000 £. And by the Earls 1000 £.	3000	0	0
To divers other Creditors, as Mercers, Artificers, &c.	1023	7	ob.
To divers Victuallers, and other Proviſion of Houſehold.	781	17	6
	17977	11	4ob.

It is to be remembred, that the ſaid Earl payeth yearly Intereſt for the Sum of 4666 13 4.

Parcel of the Sum of 8641 15 8, due as above by Specialty, the Sum of 466 12 0.

Breff of the Eſtate of the Earl of Arundels *Living, the* 21 *of Jan.* 1585.

	Clear Yearly Value.			
In *Norfolk*.	2086	5	1	The Sum of the Whole 4249 12 9 q;
In *Suffolk*.	516	3	6	
In *Eſſex*.	138	3	8	
Likewiſe in the Counties of *Cambridge Suſſex*, *Surrey*, *Salop*, *Lincoln*, *Middleſex*, And the Poſſeſſions in *Arundel*.	841	13	8ob.	
Revenues of the *Dacres* Poſſeſſions; there is anſwered for the Counteſs of *Arundel*, Part of his ſaid Poſſeſſions.	737	9	0	Total of the Earl of *Arundel* Poſſeſſions. 4987 21 *d.* q;

Payments out.

There is yearly paid out, as followeth

To the Queen for Tenths and Rents,	197	6	1
In Rent and Penſions to other Perſons,	6	6	4
In Annuities granted for Term of Life.	1088	1	0
Fees to Officers and Keepers of Houſes	176	15	0
The Manour of *Hayling* in the County of *Southampton*, withholden by the Lord *Lumley*.	112	0	0
	1580	8	5

And ſo remaineth yearly towards the Charges of himſelf, his Wife and Children and Houſehold. ——— 3406 13 4 q;

Whereof allowed by the Earl to the Counteſs his Wife, towards the Apparel of her ſelf, her Women, and the Charges of the Children, with other Neceſſaries. ——— 500 0 0

NUMB. LXII.

An Anthem in two Parts; compoſed for the XVIIth *Day of November: And Sung after a Prayer of Thankſgiving, uſed on that Day.*

I.

BE light and glad, in God rejoyce,
Which is our Strength and Stay.
Be joyful, and lift up your Voice,
For this moſt happy Day.

Sing, Sing, O ſing unto the Lord,
With Melody moſt ſweet,
Let Heart and Tongue in one accord;
As it is juſt and meet, &c.

II.

1

To thee, O God, we yield all Prayſe,
Thou art our Help alone.
To thee it is we ſing always,
To thee, and elſe to none.

Then bow to us, Good Lord, thine ear,
And hear us, when we cry.
Preſerve thy Church now planted here,
And watch it with thine Ey.

2

Lord, keep ELIZABETH our Queen;
Defend her in thy Right.
Shew forth thy ſelf, as thou haſt been,
Her Fortreſs and her Might.

Preſerve her Grace, Confound her Foes,
And bring them down full low,
Lord, turn thy Hand againſt all thoſe,
That would her overthrow.

3.

Maintain her Scepter, as thine own:
For thou haſt Plac'd Her here.
And let this mighty Work be known
To Nations far and neer.

A Noble antient Nurſe, O Lord,
In *England* let Her reign.
Her grace among us do afford
For ever to remain.

4

Endue Her, Lord, with Vertues Store,
Rule thou her Royal Rod.
Into her Mind thy Spirit pour;
And ſhew thy ſelf her God.

In Truth upright, Lord, guide Her ſtil,
Thy Goſpel to defend.
To ſay and do what thou doſt wil,
And ſtay where thou doſt end.

5. Her

5.

Her Council, Lord, vouchſafe to guide,
With Wiſdom let them ſhine:
In Godlineſs for to abide,
As it becometh thine.

To ſeek the Glory of thy Name,
Their Countries Wealth procure.
And that they may perform the ſame,
Lord, grant thy Spirit pure.

6.

So will we ſing unto the Lord,
Betime ere day be light:
And eke declare thy Truth abroad,
When it doth draw to night.

To thee, O Father, with the Son,
And Spirit, be therefore,
All Glory now, as hath been don,
From henceforth evermore.

After this is an *Anthem*, or Prayer for the Preſervation of the Church and the Realm ; to be ſung after Evening Prayer at all Times.

Save, Lord, and bleſs with good Encreaſe
Thy Church, our Queen and Realm in Peace.

Which is four times more repeated, as the Chorus.

1.

As for thy Gifts we render Praiſe,
So, Lord, we crave ſtill bleſſed Days.
Let thy ſweet Word, and Goſpel pure,
With us, Dear God, for ay endure.
With proſperous Reign encreaſe it ſtill,
That Sound thereof the World may fill.
Save, Lord, and bleſs, &c.

2.

That Vine thy Right Hand planted hath,
Preſerve, O Lord, from Envies Wrath.
And thoſe that practiſe *Zions* Spoil,
With mighty Arme, Lord, give them foil.
Thy Church and Kingdom, Chriſt, we pray,
Encreaſe and build from Day to Day, &c.
Save, Lord, and bleſs with good Encreaſe, &c.

There follow two *Stanzas* more.

NUMB. LXIII.

Laurentii Humfredi, in Speculum Moralium Quæſtionum *Joan. Caſæi, Præmonitio.*

RURSUS *Caſæus* variato prodit amictu
In ſcenam: rurſus perpolit ille Scholas.
Gaudeo, quòd tali membro Schola noſtra fruatur,
Quo totum Corpus pulchrius eſſe queat.

Londini cæpit Logicos excudere Libros.
   Talibus ex ſcatebris nobilis unda fluit.
Coticula eſt acuens animos *Dialectica*: Nodos
   Solvit & emuncti eſt regula judicii.
Jam verò *Speculum* noſtris proponit ocellis. *Speculum.*
   Quod verbis nitidum eſt, Ordine perſpicuum.
Hoc ſpeculum vobis nunc *Oxonienſis* Alumnus
   Porrigit En! præli dat quoq; primitias.
Ex Speculo poteris Formam Speciémq; tueri,
   Et turpes maculas tergere *Socraticum* eſt.
Eſt Speculum *Morum*, vitæ præluſtris imago. *Moralium.*
   O! quantum diſtant hæc duo, Vita, *Logos.*
Diſſerimus Logicè: Sic diſceptamus acutè.
   Eſt hominum proprium cum Ratione loqui.
Sed nunc *Caſæus* verbalis deſinit eſſe.
   Hæc docuiſſe ſat eſt; hæc didiciſſe ſatis.
Nunc opus eſt majus, noſtros cupit eſſe reales:
   Laus eſt, Virtutem moribus exprimere.
Sic Moralis eris, ſi non Quæſitor, at Actor. *Quæſtionum.*
   Quæres, ſed ut ceſſes quærere; Vive magis.
En! Schola *Xenocratis*, Quid Virtus, ſæpe requirit
   Quando inquit Sapiens, illius uſus erit? *Eudæmonidas.*
En! Schola noſtra ſonet Virtutem, ac Vivere diſcat.
   Attica Gens dicit, Turba *Lacæna* facit.
Sed quatuor recolas, quicunq; hæc *Ethica* Volvis; *Cautiones*
   Ut ſpinas vites, percipiaſq; Roſam. *quatuor.*
Finis *Ariſtoteli* fixus, non ultima Meta eſt. *1. Felicitas*
   Progredere ulterius, ni miſer eſſe velis. *Ariſtotelica.*
Noſce Deum Patrem, Chriſtúmq;, hæc vita beata eſt. *Joan.* 7.
   Hoc ſolum ſummum, ſalvificúmq; Bonum.
Naturæ palpo ne ſis, ſed deprime criſtas. *2. Liberum*
   Servum eſt, ni Chriſtus liberet, Arbitrium. *Arbitrium.*
Fac, operare: Operum meritis ne aſcribe Salutem. *3. Operum*
   Sola Fides, & non Ethica juſtificant. *juſtitia.*
Hic tua Facta ſeras; pòſt imminet hora metendi. *4. Opera &*
   Defunctos manes nil relevare poteſt. *Suffragia pro*
His ubi *Ariſtoteles* veſter contraria ſcripſit, *defunctis.*
   Conſule *Caſæum*; Gratia ſitq; Deo.

BOOK II.

NUMB. I.

Objections againſt bringing MARY *Queen of* Scots *to Tryal. With Anſwers thereunto: Being the Cenſure of the Civilians.*

MSS. Io Conyers Armig.

I. *OBIECTION.* She is Anointed. *Par in parem non habet Imperium.*

Reſp. It may be doubted, whether She be a Queen. Becauſe She ſtandeth Depoſed by the three Eſtates *Scotiæ.* 2. She willingly left her Right to her Son.

A King Depoſed is not afterwards to be taken for a King. *Thomas Gramat. Dec.* 65. Therefore *Frederic*, King of *Naples*, Deprived by the King of *Spain*, was afterward judged for no King by Sentence.

If She were Queen of *Scots* in Poſſeſſion, it may be doubted, that She were inferior to the Queen of *England*; as her *Feudatory.* The principal Maintainers of her Title to the Succeſſion affirm, that She was born under the Sovereignty of *England.*

The Sovereignty hath a neceſſary Relation to her own Subjects, and ſuch Actions as are committed within her own Dominions.

Each Prince without his Territories is no more than a private Perſon. *Ff. De hæredib. inſtituend.* L. 3.

Again, *Ratione Delicti*, each Perſon is Subject to the Juriſdiction of the Place wherin he offendeth. *Ibi Cauſa agatur, ubi Crimen committitur.*

The Preeminency of the Perſon altereth not the Cauſe. *Reatus omnem Honorem excludit, ubi de crimine agi oportet.*

An Archbiſhop may be puniſhed by a Biſhop; and one Emperor by another Prince, *Ratione delicti*; *ubicunq; quis juriſdictionem non habet, ibi delinquens puniri nequit.*

An Archbiſhop is Subject to the Law of the Place, where he reſideth, *Ergo* a Prince.

Legatus ſuſtinet Perſonam Principis. So his Ambaſſage is preſumed indifferent to both Princes, *ob publicam fidem.*

The Prince cometh only for his own Benefit and Protection.

Alſo, *Fruſtra quis privilegium, quod violavit, apud eum profert in quem privilegio eſt abuſus.*

Alſo, if the *Scotch* Queen were not Subject to the Queen, the Condition of a Prince were moſt miſerable in her own Kingdom.

Eodem jure defendimur, cui ſubjicimur.

II. *Object. Deletum non eſt conſummatum. Ergo.* Secondly, She ſubjecteth her ſelf *Juri Gentium Soli.*

Reſp. In reſpect of her Allegiance to the Crown of *England*, her Actions are rather to be meſured by the Poſitive Laws of the Land, than *Jure Gentium.* But by theſe it is Treaſon [what] She doth. *Ergo.*

Aliens are not exempt from ſuch Laws, as are of Force, where they remain. As *Pomponius Atticus* lived under the Laws of *Athens*, where he abode.

Si Advenæ quid faciunt in loco, ubi verſantur, quod ipſis Liberum ſit, videntur quaſi conſentire in Statuto.

Patere, quam ipſe tuleris Legem. This is agreeable to the Law of the Country.

In the Matter of Treaſon, and in the Maner of proceding therin, there is no Difference, or Privilege of a Perſon ſuſpected. *Ad Leg. Jul. læſæ Majeſtat. Lib.* 4.

She hath divers Times conſpired. *A. Delictum frequens aget pœnam.* Ff. *de pœnis. Lib.* 28. §. *Solent.*

The Nature of Treaſon is ſuch, as that the Puniſhment thereof is not tyed to any Law. *Cætera facta habent ſuas Leges. In iis Utilitas, Metus, Occaſio, Lex eſt.* Mark alſo *Publica Neceſſitas.*

The Law of Nations is nothing but *Sana Rem. Omnes patiantur, quod in alios factum voluerunt.* Good reaſon, *Ergo*, Account *Voluntatem pro facto.* For, *poſt factum* no Law. *Ergo*, Stay not to take *Conſpiratorem. Ergo, Mithridates* put to Death *Attilius ratione Propoſiti tantum.* So did *Albinus* to the Meſſenger of *Severus.*

A Confederate, being in the Country of his Confederate, for a Crime committed, is there to be puniſhed, *De Capite. Et poſtil. Et ſi ſunt apud nos rei ex Civitatibus Confœderatis, in eos Damnatos animadvertimus.*

Ergo, tho' She were a Confederate [only] She is puniſhable.

There is no Perſon but is to be tryed there, without exception of Degree, where the Crime is committed. *Ubi de Crim. verba. Quâ in Provincia quis deliquit, aut in quâ pecuniarum aut criminum reus ſit, ibi vindicari debet, Et hoc jus perpetuum ſit.* But She, &c. *Ergo.*

3. Thirdly, Every Perſon equally is to be judged. *In Crim. læſæ Majeſt. æqua eſt omnium Conditio. Lex ait. C. ad leg. Jul.* L. 4. *Ergo.*

4. Fourthly, A King in another Kings Territories may commit Treaſon; as another private Man. *Coretus, de Poteſtate Regia.*

Quæro (inquit) utrum Rex, non habens juſtum Titulum Regni, incidat in Crimen læſ. Majeſtatis. Ergo.

5. A King, paſſing through another Kings Realm, or there Reſiant, is but a private Perſon. Allegations follow for that.

6. The Benefit or Privilege of ſafe Conduct is loſt, when any Crime is committed, after the Grant of the Safe Conduct. Then follow Allegations.

7. It may be ſaid, *Non Subditus poteſt [Non] committere Crimen læſæ Majeſtat.* Yet that ſaying is to be taken where the Crime is to be committed without the Juriſdiction; but yet within, that may be puniſhed. *P. P. Clementine: de Sententia, & re judicata.*

And tho' the P. P. reverſed his Sentence; yet he ſaith, if the Party have been within the Juriſdiction at the time of the Crime committed, *juſtè Damnaretur. Verba. Si rex infra diſtrictum Imperialem fuiſſet inventus, potuiſſet contra eum Sententia dici. Ergo,* by the Popes Rule, &c.

8. *Henry* VII. Emperor gave a Solemne Judgment of Death at *Pyſca, Anno* 1311. againſt *Robert,* King of *Sicilia Deiotar,* condemned by *Jul. Cæſar. Joan* Queen of *Naples,* for murthering her Husband. §. *De pœnis.* Puniſhments ought to be equal to their Offences. Then follow Allegations.

It ſtandeth with the Law of Nature. Which is impoſſible, *ut quiſq; conſulat ſuæ Saluti, & ſuorum. Pœna unius, Salus multorum.* An Offence in the higheſt Degree, *Contra Principem*; being an Head of a Politic Body: as an Offence to each Member of the ſame.

Arctiora ſunt vincula virtutis, quàm Sanguinis.

NUMB. II.

An Analogy or Reſemblance between Joan *Queen of* Naples, *and* Mary *Queen of* Scotland. *Offered to Queen* Elizabeth *by the Parlament.*

I. JOAN Queen of *Naples*, being in Love with the Duke of *Tarent*, hanged her Husband *Andreas* (or as ſome write *Andraſias*) King of *Naples* in the Year of our Lord God 1348.

Mary Queen of *Scotland*, being, as appeareth by the *Chronicles*, and her own Letters, [in Love] with the Earl *Bothwell*, ſtrangled her Husband, the Lord *Darly*, King of *Scotland*, in the Year of our Lord God 1567.

II. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* did preſently after the foul ſlaughter of her Husband, mary with the ſaid Duke of *Tarent*; notwithſtanding they were joyned and knit in Kindred neer together.

Mary Queen of *Scotland*, within twelve Days after the Death of her ſaid Husband, was maried by the Biſhop of *Orkney*, to the ſaid Earl *Bothwel*: notwithſtanding he had two Wives alive: and was divorſed from them upon a likely Adultery, by himſelf committed.

III. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* had no long Fruition of her inordinate Luſt, and infamous Mariage of the ſaid Duke of *Tarent*. For he being therefore deteſted of all the Country, pined away ſhortly after with immoderate *Venerie*, and Thought.

Mary Queen of *Scots*, after the adulterous Mariage had with *Bothwell*, did but a ſmall time enjoy him. For the Nobility and Commons, riſing in Armes againſt them, put them both to their Several Shifts. Her, to fly into *England*: *Bothwel* into *Denmark*, where he living, or rather languiſhing, like a baniſhed and conſumed Man, had nothing ſo comfortable to his guilty Conſcience, as preſent Death; which ſhortly after enſued.

IV. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* raiſed a miſerable Schiſm in *Italy* and *France*, by reaſon of two Popes at one Time, *Urban*, Pope of *Rome*, and *Clement*, Pope of *Avignion*.

Mary the *Scotiſh* Queen did ſow the Seeds of Schiſm and Sedition, both in the Church of *England* and *Scotland*, by means of two Popes, *Gregory* XIII. and *Sextus* V.

V. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* was beſieged in *Caſtello*, now called *New Caſtle*, one of the 3 ſtrongeſt Forts within the Kingdom of *Naples*.

Mary Queen of *Scots*, was beſieged in the Caſtle of *Dumbar* [*Dunbar*] one of the three Forts, of the greateſt Force in all her Dominions, and Kingdom of *Scotland*.

VI. *Joau* Queen of *Naples* ſent to the Pope of *Avinion*, called by many Hiſtorographers, Antipope *Clement*, a Pope of her own Facture and Faction, to uphold and defend her Quarel againſt *Charles* his Forces. Who, by reaſon he was Nephew to *Lewis* King of *Hungary's*, Son according to ſome Right; or, as ſome ſay, next of Kin to *Andreas*, her firſt Husband, King of *Naples* by her murthered; was Competiter with her in the ſaid Kingdom: and that by the Title of *Robert* King of *Naples*, her Grandfathers Teſtament.

Mary Queen of *Scots* (which is far worſe,) ſent many times to Popes of *Rome*, both to the ſaid *Gregory* XIII. while he lived, and afterwards to the ſaid *Sextus* V. now Pope; not for the Defence of her ſelf, or her Son, in the Kingdome of *Scotland*, but to diſturbe and terrify the quiet State of *England* with the Thunderbolts of Excommunication, and other ſeditious Diſſenſions; tending to the bereaving of her Majeſty of her rightful Crowne and Dignity Royal.

VII. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* ſent alſo at that Time, and to the ſame End and Purpoſe to *Charles*, the *French* King, and *Aniens*, [*Anjou*] the *French* Kings Uncle, requeſting them to bring all the Forces they could; to the ſubduing of *Charles* Nephew to *Lewis* King of *Hungary*.

Mary Queen of *Scots* ſent many times to King *Philip*, and her Uncle, the Duke of *Guiſe*, to bring their foreign Forces, and to preſerve her in her Poſſeſſion of the Kingdom of *Scotland*; which ſhe had reſigned long before to her Son: But [alſo] to the Invaſion of this Realm of *England*, and ſubduing of her Majeſty, the moſt lawful and undoubted Queen of the ſame.

VIII. *Joan* the *Neapolitan* Queen, for that ſhe had no Child, offered to make the ſaid *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou* in *France*, her Heir by Adoption, and Succeſſor in the Kingdom of *Naples*.

Mary the *Scotch* Queen, altho' She had a Son, promiſed *England* and *Scotland* to the King of *Spain*; if her Son would not be called from Hereſy: As by her Letter lately written to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, *Mendoza*, evidently appeareth.

IX. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* had great and mighty Princes to take her Part, both out of *France*, and from the Province. But both She, and all that held on her Side, had ſo ſtrange and Diſaſter Fortune, as it is wonderful. For the Pope, by her Means exalted, was Depoſed. The ſaid Duke of *Anjou*, General of the Field, that came into *Italy*, as *Pandulphus Cornatius* writeth, with 50000 Men; and as *Peter Meria* affirmeth, 30000 of them Horſemen, dyed by the Way. And 16 Barons, and moſt of the gallant Company with him. And the Remnant that ſurvived returned home with more Shame, than with Pride they came forth: Begging all the way they went, by two or three in a Company, as *Plantina* witneſſeth. And the Queen her ſelf was taken Priſoner by him, whom ſhe firmely hoped to have taken, and ſlain.

Mary the *Scotch* Queen, which had in *Rome* at ſeveral Times two Popes, in *Spain* King *Philip*, in *France*, the *French* King, and the Duke of *Guiſe*; and in *England* and *Scotland*, Dukes, Earls, Lords, Gentlemen and others, too too many, bent to accompliſh her unquiet Humour, and Seditious Diſſenſion; yet neither had She, nor any other that took her Part, any proſperous Succeſs. For the beſt Friend of the two Popes dyed. King *Philip* and the *French* King have never been without Civil Warrs, and their Lands full of Uproars, and dangerous Tumults. The Duke of *Guiſe* ſo maugre, and ſo croſſed in all his Deſignments, that he could not at any time Help her, nor will relieve himſelf. The Dukes, Earles and Lords, for the moſt part, have loſt their Goods, Lands, Liberties and Countreys; or have been ſlain, or ſlain themſelves: many Gentlemen hanged for her ſake; to the perpetual Infamy of themſelves and their Names, and the utter Undoing of their Poſterity.

And as touching her ſelf, neither her own Land could abide Her, nor the Ocean Sea, to whoſe Mercy in extreme Refuge She committed her ſelf, could brook her. Nor the Land of *England* where She hath remained above 16 Years in our Sovereign Lady Queen *Elizabeth* her Protection, could for the more part like Her, or be liked of Her. And ſhe became all that while Priſoner unto Her; whoſe Royal Perſon She continually hoped, and often practiſed to have murthered.

X. *Joan* Queen of *Naples* being taken laſt of all by *Charles*, Nephew to *Lewis* King of *Hungary*, was, by the ſaid *Charles*, upon Advice taken and had of the ſaid King, ſecretly ſtrangled in Priſon. And ſo by Gods Providence payd the Debt, as the Hiſtory witneſſeth, that She gave to her firſt Husband *Andreas*, King of *Naples*.

Mary Queen of *Scots*, altho by flying out of her own Realm of *Scotland* into *England*, and by coming under the Queen of *Englands* Protection, ſhe eſcaped hitherto to have due Revengment for her Husbands Death, (when and where her chiefeſt Nobility purſued her End) by Juſtice: Yet becauſe ſhe had ſundry Times ſince that Time, conſpired the Deſtruction of the Sacred Perſon of her Majeſty: And being once or twice pardoned, hath fallen into a Relapſe, or recidevation; there hath been upon her due Hearing and Examination of the whole Matter, together with her perſonal Anſwers, taken by the chiefeſt Lords of the Realm, aſſiſted with the principal Judges of the ſame, Sentence of Death pronounced againſt Her, according to the Statute of *Aſſociation* by her ſelf ſubſcribed and Sworn.

There remaineth nothing to make the Hiſtory perfect, but that *Mary* of *Scotland* may have Gods Judgment in Her accompliſhed and performed; that did not only kil her firſt Husband, King of *Scots*, but practiſed oftentimes the End of her Majeſty, the Queen of *England*; and likewiſe was like to bring the whole Realm in danger of a general Maſſacre, and preſent Deſtruction; had not the Eternal and Mighty Lord, of his unſpeakable and accuſtomable Goodneſs by a miraculous Diſcovery, preſerved the ſame.

NUMB. III.

Sentences written by the Lord Treaſurer Burghley*: Occaſioned upon the Death of* Mary *Queen of* Scots*: and upon Queen* Elizabeths *Diſpleſure towards him on that Account. Endorſed* 1586. After the Scots Queen Death Wedneſday Febr. *The Warrant ſigned, To the Lord Chancellor, that night.*

MSS.Burghl. PECCATUM Ignorantiâ commiſſum.

Anima ſi peccaverit per Ignorantiam, offeret Arietem, & dimittetur ei, quia per Ignorantiam·

Melius eſt, ut benefacientes (ſi Voluntas Dei velit) pati, quàm malefacientes.

Quem diligit Deus, corripit.

Quem diligit Deus, caſtigat.

Tribulatio patientiam operatur.

Si benefacientes patienter ſuſtinetis, hæc eſt Gratia apud Deum.

Si bona ſuſcepimus de manu Dei, mala quare non ſuſcipiamus?

Deus meus, tu opem mihi tuliſti a Juventute mea: & uſq; ad Senectam & canos, non derelinques me.

Non eſt ſanitas in carne mea a facie iræ tuæ.

Job. Ipſe vulnerat, & medetur.

Domine Deus meus, clamavi ad te, & Sanâſti me.

Quoniam in me ſperavit, liberabo eum.

Secundum multitudinem dolorum meorum in Corde meo, Conſolationes tuæ lætificarunt animam meam.

Laus ſit Jehovæ, quod audiverit vocem deprecationum mearum.

Quæſivi Jehovam, & reſpondit mihi, & ex omnibus anguſtiis hiis eripuit me.

Earl of *Shrewsbury*. To tarry.

Earl of *Leiceſter*. Lord *Treaſure*.

Lord *Admiral*.

Mr. *Daviſon*. The Bill ſigned.

Mr. *Daviſon*. [His] Affirmation.

Earl of *Leiceſter*. Knowledg from the Queen.

Always not to be acquainted with the Circumſtances.

The Queen meant it not.

Eſto. This not known.

The Matter alway preſent.

The Matter for Surety.

Τρεῖς ἐστιν εἶπες εὐτυχος διὰ βίου.

Seneca. Decet timeri Regem, at plus diligi.

Potentior Rex, quando iraſcitur viro inferiori.

Lucan. Exeat Aula, qui vult eſſe pius.

Sit piger ad pænas princeps, ad præmia velox.

Quiq; dolet quoties cogitur eſſe ferox.

Proverb. 20. Thronus Dei corroboratur Clementiâ.

Morieris nec primus, nec ultimus.

Ne ſis miſer ante tempus.

Clementia. Leones proſtratis parcunt.

Nullum magis decet Clementia, quàm Principem.

Eſt omnibus Clementia ſecunda—— ſed maximè decora principibus.

Correctio. Pro menſura peccati erit plagarum modus.

Q. Phreneticum ligat, & lethargicum excitat, ambobus moleſtus, ſed ambos amat.

Conſilium. Sapiens non mutat Conſilium, omnibus illis manentibus quæ erant.

Confeſſio. Quum homo agnoſcit, Deus ignoſcit.

Bona quærentibus vix obtingunt mala, non quæſita.

Dolor. Ariſtoteles. Cor non comedendum.

Nemo poteſt valdè dolere, & diu.

Error. Errate eſt falſum pro vero putare.

Lauda parcè, vitupera parciùs.

Inopinatum malum valdè metuendum, ſi ſine exemplo ſit.

In ſummo Imperatore hæc quatuor eſſe oportet: Scientia rei militaris; Virtus; Authoritas; Fælicitas.

Colant te ſervi tui, potius quàm timeant.

Amare debemus Deum tanquam filii, timere tanquam Servi.

Non eſt bonum pluralitas principantium: Unus ergo Princeps.

Beatus qui beatis ſervit.

Juſtius eſt injuſtum juſtè evadere, quàm juſtum injuſtè puniri.

Anima dum vivificat Corpus, anima eſt. Dum vult animus eſt. Dum ſcit, Mens eſt. Dum recolit, Memoria eſt. Dum rectum judicat, Ratio eſt. Dum Spirat, Spiritus Dum aliquid ſentit, Senſus eſt.

Job. 16. *In mundo preſſuram ſuſtinebitis.*

Act. 14. *Oportet nos per multas tribulationes ingredi regnum Dei.*

Heb. 12. *Flagellat omnem filium, quem recipit.*

Job. 7. *Vita hominis Militia ſuper terram.*

1 *Cor.* 11. *Caſtigamur a Deo, ut non condemnemur in hoc mundo.*

Ecc. 28. *Afflictio dat Intellectum.*

1. *Naum.* Bonus Dominus eſt, confortans in tribulationibus.

Afflixi te, & non affligam te ultra.

Qui contra præpoſitam Poteſtatem murmurat, illum redarguit, qui dedit poteſtatem.

Maximum Solatium eſt, vacare Culpa.

Ante Senectutem curandum eſt, ut benè vivat.

Mors. Non facit malam mortem, quod Sequitur.

Vita amara. Vocantur ante tempus boni, ne diutius vexentur, morte. Mali, ne diutius perſequantur.

Latet ultimus dies, ut obſervetur omnis dies.

Mors calamitatis Terminus.

NUMB. IV.

The Lord Treaſurers Second Letter to the Queen, lying under her Diſpleſure, upon the Death of the Scots Queen. Dated Febr. 17. *But not received.*

MSS. Burghlian.

MOST Gracious Sovereign; Altho' to my great Grief, I cannot underſtand, that your Majeſtys Offence againſt me is diminiſhed, notwithſtanding my humble Submiſſion, to endure any thing that might pacify the ſame; yet finding my Mind continually oppreſt with Griefs for your Diſpleſure, and mine old Body and lame Limbs, by Day and Night vexed with Pains, and that therof I can imagine no Remedy, but by Continuance of my humble Interceſſion to your Majeſty, either to receive my Submiſſion, or rather firſt to hear me anſwer any thing wherewith your Majeſty ſhall charge me. Whereunto I will moſt plainly and truly anſwer for Thought and Deed, as if God himſelf ſhould call me to Judgment, from whom nothing can be hid. My Caſe alone is moſt miſerable. For tho' for this late Fact, for which your Majeſty is ſo deeply offended, I am no more to be charged than others; yet I find and hear by Report, that your Majeſty doth, with more bitter Termes of Diſpleſure, condemne me than others. And this, I ſuppoſe, encreaſeth, by reaſon your Majeſty hath not heard me, as you have others; whom your Majeſty hath admitted to your Preſence: Which through my Lameneſs and Infirmity, being not hable of my ſelf to come unto your Preſence, is my principal Let and Stay. And yet ſuch is my earneſt Deſire to appear before your gracious Preſence, as I am moſt willing to endure any Pain, to be caried to ſome Place, if to be laid on the Floor, neer your Majeſties Feet, there to receive your gracious Cenſure: hoping by Gods ſpecial Goodneſs, (in whoſe Hand your Heart is, and who knoweth beſt my Thoughts paſt and preſent, to be ſo reverend to your Majeſty, and ſo careful of your Favour) that I ſhall find ſome Drops of your Mercy, to quench the panting Sorrows of my Heart.

NUMB V:

The Lord Treaſurers Third Letter to the Queen, Dated Febr. 23. Remaining yet under her Diſpleſure, on the ſame Occaſion Delivered by Lord Buckhurſt.

Moſt Gracious and Mighty Queen.

MSS. Burghlian.

ALTHO' I am come to no Underſtanding what ſpecial Means to uſe, to pacify your Majeſtys heavy diſpleaſure, ſo often and grievouſly expreſt both to my Friends, and many others: Wherby I am ſo overborn in my weak Spirit, as no part of my Mind is ſound to perform that I ought to do. A Torment ſuch as I never felt. That I may ſay as is in the *Pſalme*, *Non eſt Sanitas in me a facie iræ tuæ.* Yet ſuch is the miſerable Condition of my State at this preſent, differing from others of my Company, that tho' I find my humble Submiſſions, to your Majeſty, and moſt lowly Requeſts to be heard, to be ſtill denyed, yet comparing in my knowledg, your Majeſtys natural, princely Clemency and Compaſſion with this late accidental Quality of your Mind by onely one Act miſcontented, I do turn my Face with my Fact paſſed, to behold rather thoſe princely Graces, which your Majeſty hath of God and Nature, than to abide the Cenſure of your Mind, now miſcontented; ſeeking by my Defence to have your Majeſty in any ſort touched, by maintaining any thing againſt your Honour; but to ſubmit my ſelf to your accuſtomed Clemency: And ſo to be heard, as if your Majeſty ſhall not allow of my Anſwer, yet I may hope to have your Concept of my Fact in ſome part alleviated.

I know ſurely by many Experiences your Majeſtys Sincerity and Chriſtian Conſcience ſuch, as except your Majeſty [eſteemed me] faulty indeed, your Majeſty would not thus extremely uſe me. And therfore I do not therein think any thing, but honorably of your Majeſty; as you are perſuaded, and as long as your Majeſty ſhall, for Lack of my Anſwer, ſo conceive of me; I can hope of no good End, but only by your Mercy. But if your Majeſty might be pleaſed to hear me, tho' in your Conceit as an offender, to anſwer to ſuch things as move you to think me faulty; Indeed I hope in my good God, to whoſe Judgment without Mercy, I dare yield my ſelf, (for any evil Meaning in this Cauſe) either to move your Majeſty to temper the ſeverity of your Judgment againſt me, as not being a wilful Offender; or to mollify your Diſpleſure with ſome Drops of your princely Pity towards me: whom I think, your Majeſty afore this Time, in no Action whatſoever towards your Perſon or Honour, found me wilful, over ſeen, or void of Care.

I perceive by my Son, *Thomas Cecil*, that in deferring the Time till my Acceſs, I might write to your Majeſty that which I had to ſay. For which Favour I know, that Writing is but a Compoſition of Words, that may be otherwiſe doubtfully taken, for Want of Explanation, or Reply.... [And therefore I deſire] to deliver the ſenſe of my Heart by mine own Tongue. I dare not aventure to write as the Cauſe requires; leſt in ſeeking Favour, Clemency and Pity, I might encreaſe the Countrary, &c.

Tribulationes Cordis mei multiplicatæ ſunt: de neceſſitatibus meis erue me.

NUMB. VI.

A Writing of the Lord Treaſurer; for his Abſence from Council; upon ſome angry Words uſed to him by the Queen. To be delivered to Her by Mr. Vice-Chamberlain. March the XV.

MSS. Burghlian.

I AM ſo wounded in the Heart with the late Sharp and Piercing Speeches of her Majeſty to my ſelf, in the hearing of my Lord of *Leiceſter*, and Mr. Secretary *Walſingham*, expreſſing therewith her Indignation, at ſuch Time as I was called to her Preſence for Matters of the *Low Countries*, my ſelf giving no Occaſion by any Speech of the Matter of the Queen of *Scots*, until her Majeſty did charge me therewith; as ſince regarding, in great Anguiſh of Heart, the weight of her Majeſtys Diſpleſure, ſo ſettled and encreaſed as I then deeply conceived; and mine own Humility, not hable to abide the Continuance of ſuch her Diſpleſure; I am therefore moſt careful, how by any Means poſſible, I may ſhun all Encreaſe of the Weight hereof: Knowing it very true that was ſaid by the moſt wiſeſt King, *Indignatio Principis Mors eſt.* And tho' my Conſcience doth certainly witneſs with me in the ſight of God, that I never had Thought, nor did ever any Act with Mind to offend her Majeſty. But now finding this heavy Burthen of her Majeſtys Diſpleſure in mine old Years, ſo long faithfully, painfully and dangerouſly ſpent, only for her Service, to be lately rather encreaſed; ſince her Majeſtys princely Compaſſion permitted me to her Preſence a few Days paſt; I have great Cauſe to fear, that this Encreaſe groweth more, by means of ſome ſecret Enemies to my ſelf, than of any Influence of her own Princely nature.

And therefore, tho' I cannot imagine, that any Perſon is my Enemy for any private Offence of my own, but only in reſpect of my Services for her Majeſty; wherin I have certainly felt of long time many ſharp Effects for doing my Duty; yet now being ſo publicly, in Town, in Court and Field, known, as I daily find it, her Majeſty is ſo grievouſly offended with me; whereby my Enemies may preſume, that her Ears are open to any ſiniſter Calumniations to be deviſed againſt me, for any thing I ſhall do in this Time of her Disfavour; I am therefore urgently moved to live warily; in Token of the reverend Fear I bear to her Majeſty, to forbear from all voluntary public Actions of State; wherunto I am not by her Majeſty expreſly commanded; until I may be releived to have her Preſence, as others of my Condition have. And which I do to avoid the Calumniations of the evil diſpoſed, that may untruly incenſe her Majeſty, that I make no Difference of Times between the Clearneſs of her former Favour, and the Darkneſs of her Diſpleſure.

And this having a ſpecial Deſire to notify to her Majeſty, being not the hundredth part of my heavy, bitter Cogitations, I do notwithſtanding remain free and ready to do, to ſerve and to ſuffer, without reſpect of Pain or Peril, as I may underſtand ſhall beſt content her Majeſty. For therein do I think my Happineſs to conſiſt, as the Greek Verſe is:

Μακάριος ὅστις μακαρίοις ὑπηρετεῖ.
Beatus qui beatis Servit.

NUMB: VII.

The Biſhop of Meath *in* Ireland *to the Lord Treaſurer Lord* Burghley; *Now Come into* England: *To Solicite for Favour upon Account of his Firſt fruits, not pay'd. His Caſe referred to the Lord Deputy, his Enemy.*

It may pleaſe your good Lordſhip,

MSS. Burghlian.

YOUR Reſolution for the Referment of my Cauſe back again to my Lord Deputy, doth much grieve and diſcomfort me. Your Lordſhip knoweth, that his hard Dealing hath forced me to come hither. Where according to your good Advice, I have ſuffered both him and his Agents, to play upon me; bearing all things patiently. Now if I ſhall be referred unto him, who hath confeſſed, that he never meant to have relieved me, until it were too late, I muſt needs ſay, my Hap is moſt hard.

Good my Lord, let me not be made the firſt Precedent to pay that, which before was never exacted of any of my Calling: but in my reaſonable Suit for my Relief, vouchſafe me your good Favour. If either my Service or Courſe of Life were known to your Lordſhip, I doubt not, you would more favourably conſider of me. I have theſe three Months followed only your Lordſhip, and wholly depended upon you, and none other. Your Lordſhip knoweth I am in *Ireland*, a Perſon hated for my Religion, greatly maliced by the Deputy; unles I may have her Majeſtys and your good Lordſhips Countenance, what Comfort can I have to return thither: Mine Eſtate is ſo poor that I profeſs unto your Lordſhip, I was enforced to employ the Mony which I owe unto her Majeſty upon my Charges hither, to ſeek Relief.

I am bold in the Paper encloſed to diſcover to your Lordſhip the yearly Value of all the Livings I have in *Ireland*. According to which Note I am contented that any Man ſhall be my Farmer. Upon which Livings I do keep always in a readineſs XX able men in my Houſe to ſerve her Majeſty. The one half of them well furniſhed on Horſeback : and I my ſelf daily employed in her Majeſtys Service without any Conſideration.

I humbly recommend my ſelf to your Lordſhips good Favour and Devotion, having none other to depend upon. So humbly craving Pardon for this Boldneſs, I take Leave, this 5th of *March*.

Your Lordſhips humbly to command,

THO. MIDENSIS.

NUMB. VIII.

Mr. Henton *Archdeacon of* Coventry *to the Biſhop of* Litchfield. *Account of the Bockwardneſs of ſome of the Clergy of that Archdeaconry, in the Payment of their Taxations for the Queens Forces in the* Low-Countries.

Rt. Reverend Father in God &c.

Epiſt. Epiſcopal. pen. me.

THESE may be to ſignify unto your, how that according to your Lordſhips Commandment, by your Lordſhips Commiſſion to us directed, and according to our Duties in that behalf, we have performed ſuch Service about the taxing of the Abler ſort of your Clergy within the Archdeaconry of *Coventry*, towards the Proviſion of the Sum of 3 Score and 15 Pounds for Lances, for the Service in the *Low Countries*; as by that Commiſſion was enjoyned us: And as to the uttermoſt of our Diſcretion, we thought convenient for the full Performance of the ſame. It may pleaſe your good Lordſhip, we required and commanded the Parties, ſo by us taxed, in her Majeſtys Name, to make ſpeedy Payments of their ſeveral Sums, wherunto they were by us taxed, at *Coventry*, the 19. day of *April*, 1586. without any Delay. At which Time and Place we alſo attended, to have received the ſame Sums, if they had been brought thither unto us. But it may pleaſe your good Lordſhip among them all, there was not above one Man ready, or willing to Satisfy his Taxation. This ſaid Party is ready to make Pay, and will be at your Lordſhips pleſure; namely the Parſon of *Harborough magna*, neer to *Rockby*, *Frauncis Kemberly*. All the reſidue utterly failing their Duties in this behalf, and ſhewing themſelves moſt unwilling hereunto, alledging their Diſability. Whoſe Names and ſeveral Sums, by us ſo taxed, we have ſent unto your good Lordſhip in a Scedule or Writing, here encloſed. That your Lordſhip may take Order with the ſaid Parties, as to your Lordſhips good Diſcretion ſhall ſeem moſt convenient.

We have moſt willingly performed our Service to your good Lordſhip herein; and don that which hath ſeemed to us in our Conſcience moſt beſt. And ſo we hope your Lordſhip will conceive of us and our Service.

It may pleaſe your good Lordſhip, we have dealt further with all the Reſidue of your Clergy of the ſaid Archdeaconry, to ſe what every other Miniſter would do of his own voluntary Will; but the Sums by all ſuch others of the Miniſtry offered voluntarily, did not ſurmount in the whole above 6 or 7 pounds, ſcarce the 4th part of one Horſe. For the Willingneſs wherof we gave them Thanks in your Lordſhips Name. But we left that Courſe, becauſe we ſaw it would ſerve neither to the Performance of our Commiſſion, or your

Lordſhips Expectation. And therefore continue the firſt Courſe above ſpecified according to the Scedule herein encloſed: And thus with our humble Duties unto your good Lordſhip, &c. At *Coventry*, the 20 of *April.* 1586.

Then followed the Names of the abler ſort of the Clergy within the ſeveral Deanries of the Archdeaconry, ceſſed for the Service of the Lances, together with their reſpective Sums to be paid.

Coventrie Deanry *Willy.* —	8	6	8	*Allſcleye.* —	5	0	0
Redworth. —	6	5	0	*Arden* Deanry. —	6	5	0
Harbrough. —	6	5	0	*Weddington.* —	6	5	0
Brymycham. —	6	5	0	*Marton* Deanry. —	6	5	0
Meryden. —	6	5	0	*Lodbroke.* —	6	5	0
Barkeſwel. —	12	10	0	*Stæcton.* —	6	5	0
Stonely Deanry. —	5	0	0	*Southan.* —	8	6	8
Warmington. —	5	0	0	*Hardwick.* —	5	0	0
Whitnaſh. —	5	0	0				

NUMB. IX.

June the 24, 1586. Frekes *Account for the* Monies *received of the Clergy for Lances, in all the Dioceſes from the Biſhops; and of* Recuſants *for Light Horſe. So endorſed by the Hand of the Lord Treaſurer.*

This Paper is defaced by Rain and Wet, where the Blanks are.

MSS Burghl.

MAY the 4. 1586. *Cantuar.* Received of my Lord Archbiſhop there.	—		
Suff. Received of Lord Biſhop there.	—	—	—
London. Received of my Lord Biſhop there.	—	—	—
Coventry and *Litchfield.* Received of my Lord Biſhop there. —	CC. —		
College *de Windſor*, received of Maſter Dean there. —	75 £.		
College *de Weſtmin.* Received of Maſter Dean there. —	75 £.		
Ebor. Received of my Lord Archbiſhop there. —	700 £.		
Suſſex. Received of my Lord Biſhop there. —	271 £.		
Wigorn. Received of my Lord Biſhop there. —	200 £.		
Exon. Received, &c. —	549	3	4
Norwich. Received of, &c. —	225 £.		
Hereford. Received of, &c. —	100 £.		
Lincoln. Received of, &c. —	800 £.		
Winton. Received of, &c. —	340 £.		
Burgum. Sti Petri. Received of, &c. —	250 £.		
Cheſter. Received of, &c. —	225 £.		
Carliol. Received of, &c. —	100 £.		
Glouceſter. Received, &c. —	200 £.		
Dunolm. Received, &c. —	300 £.		
Bath and Wells. Received, &c. —			
Sum —	6650	3	0

NUMB.

NUMB. X.

An Account of the Names and Preferments of the Prebrndaries of Weſtminſter. *Drawn up, and given in by* Goodman, *the Dean* April. 1586,

MSS.Burghl.

Months	Names.	Maried, or not.	Preferments and Benefices.
1.	1. Mr. *Mounford.*	Maried.	Two Benefices.
	2. Mr. *Read.*	Not Maried.	Fellow of S. *Johns*, *Oxon.*
	3. Mr. *Wyborne.*	Maried.	Prebendary of *Rocheſter.*
	4. Mr. *Wagſtaff.*	Not.	Parſon of *Henley.*
2.	5. D. *Bond.*	Not.	Chaplain of the *Savoy.*
	6. D. *Lewes.*	Maried.	One Benefice Prebendary of *Worceſt.* and *Hereford.*
	7. D. *Still.*	Maried.	Two Benefices; Maſter of *Trinity* Coll. *Cambr.* Parſon of *Hadley*, and Archdeacon.
	8. D. *Buckley.*	Maried.	Prebendary in *Weſt Cheſter.* A Benefice in *Bedfordſh.*
3.	9. Mr. *Read.*	Maried.	Prebendary of *Windſor.*
	10. The Bp. of *Rocheſter.*	Maried.	
	11. Mr. *Wickham.*	Maried.	Two Benefices; the one in *Suſſex*, the other in *Kent.*
	12. Mr. *Grant.*	Maried.	Two Benefices in *Norfolk.*

Then followes in the ſame Paper,

The Order by the Statutes, deviſed by Dr. Bill, *and ſo in Uſe ever ſince the late Erection, hath been that every Four in Courſe, after this Order for their Months, ſhould be* Reſidentiaries; *and ſo contribute to the Commons, for the Month*; *and either Preach themſelves, or find ſome other.*

The Allowance of every Prebendary towards the Commons for the Month is 40 Shil.

Howbeit few keep their Order, and Courſe of Reſidence. And ſo others that be preſents have the Benefit of the Diet.

In Term time other of the Prebendaries be ſometimes preſent, beſide the *Reſidentiaries.* Who for that Time have Allowance of Diet for themſelves, and their men: giving no Allowance for the ſame.

Moſt commonly preſent, Mr. *Grant*, Mr. *Wagſtaff*, Mr. *Wickham*, D. *Bond*, Mr. *Read*, in Midſummer Quarter.

Such as Preach, and come to Divine Service in their Habits being preſent: Dr. *Bond*, Mr. *Read*, Mr. *Wagſtaff*, Mr. *Grant*, Mr. *Mounford*, Mr. *Wickham*, D. *Lewes*, D. *Still.*

Mr. *Wyburn* and D. *Buckley* come not to divine Service in their Habits; nor do preach in this Church. Becauſe they have not ſubſcribed unto the Articles, ſent unto us by my Lord of *Canterbury*, in her Majeſtys Name. Howbeit they have here whole Living, as others have.

NUMB. XI.

Beza *to the Lord Treaſurer. The State of* Geneva; *Obliged to him, next to the Queen for Favour and Aſſiſtance ſhewed them This Letter brought over by Wil.* Cecil *the Treaſurers Grandſon, Returning home from Travail.*

*MSS.*Burghl. QUAM ægrè tuli, Spectatiſſime mi Domine, periculoſam chariſſimi tui nepotis in *Italiam* profectionem, tam mihi, imo nobis hic omnibus jucundus fuit illius ad nos Adventus, jucundiſſimus futurus, ſi diutius ipſius præſentiâ frui, & aliquibus Officiis noſtram in te & illum obſervantiam teſtari, licuiſſet. Verum magna fuit nobis Religio tua quidem gaudia, ipſis vero deſiderium renovari, nunquam alioqui paſſuris, ut ingrati tuorúmq; plurimorum ac maximorum apud nos meritorum immemores fuiſſe videamur. Cui enim hominum plura, ſecundum Sereniſſimam Regiam Majeſtatem, quàm tibi, tota hæc Civitas debet? Plura quidem certè, quàm animo complecti queamus, nedum ut *Heſiodi* præclarum illud de referendo beneficio præceptum poſſimus præſtare.

Quod unum igitur nobis ad animi ingrati vitandi notam ſuperſit, id ſedulo agimus, aſſiduè haud ſecus ac pro noſtra ipſorum ſalute, precantes, imprimis, ut ſereniſſimam Regiam Majeſtatem tot priorum non hominum modo, ſed etiam Populorum, inſigniſſimè oppreſſorum, vindicem; ſéd adeo, ſuáq; omnia rariſſimo vere Chriſtiani zeli exemplo, Evangelii propagationi poſtponentem firmiſſimo ſuo præſidio tutari, & omnibus ſancti ſui Spiritus eximiis donis ornare & amplificare pergat. Deinde, ut divinitus attributos ipſius Majeſtatis Regiæ Conſiliarios, & Te quidem præſertim, cujus illa non immeritò conſiliis plurimum tribuit, ea perpetuò Sapientia, Prudentiàq; ſemper inſtruat, quam tot ingentium negotiorum adminiſtratio requirit.

Cæterum, quis nunc ſit non hujus tantum Civitatis, ſed etiam *Helvetiæ* Status, & quid in his quoq; Regionibus, Conjurati moliantur, & niſi conatibus ipſorum obſiſtatur, perficere ſe poſſe confidant, ſi tibi videbitur, & tum univerſæ Reip. Chriſtianæ, tum privatim, id veſtra intereſſe arbitraberis, ex ipſo nepote tuo certiſſimè & pleniſſimè cognoſces. Benè vale, Nobiliſſime, & modis omnibus ornatiſſime Domine. D. *Jeſus*, Servator ille noſter, venerandam, & ſapientiſſimam canitiem tuam feliciſſimè conſervet. *Genevæ.* XVII. *Maij*, anno ultimi temporis. CIↃ IↃ LXXXVI.

3

Amplitudini tuæ addictiſſimus,

THEODORUS BEZA.

A Monſieur,

Monſieur Le Baron de Burghley
Conſeiller & grand Theſorier
D'Angleterre, Chevalier du
treſhonorable Ordre de la Jatiere.

NUMB. XII.

Parſons *the* Jeſuit *to Cardinal* Allen *at* Rome. *Concerning the Succeſs of his and other* Jeſuits, *their late Miſſion into* England, *by Commiſſion from him.*

Admodum Rde in Chro'. Pr. Pax Chri.

FÆliciſſimo planè itinere in ***Angliam*** pervenimus: Ubi magnum in Veritatis hoſtibus furorem, in Catholicis verò fervorem non imparem, ſumus experti. Percrebuit jam fama Adventus noſtri, & ex eorum, qui Reginæ à Conſiliis ſunt, ore, meum quibuſdam nomen innotuit. Terret res Adverſarium, & magnum neſcio quid, a nobis timet. Adeo nunc evaſit meticuloſus. Cum ***Londinum*** perveniſſem, primum inter Gladios, tum vero in Carcere quodam Catholicos conveni. Quæ (ſi ominari fas eſt) quiddam mihi non ingratum portendunt.

MSS. Eccleſiaſt.pen. me.

Poſt unum aut alterum diem, hominem, cui nos commiſiſti, incolumem, & de noſtro Adventu lætiſſimum, convenimus, & quibuſdam leviuſculé tractatis, longiores Sermones in tempus magis opportunum rejecimus. Quod non ita multo poſt nacti, præmiſſis de more Confeſſionibus, vota noſtra, non magno quidem Apparatu, ſed maximâ ſane conſolatione, renovavimus. Et ſi commodè res cecidiſſet ſacrum habuiſſemus, eodem die, qui Stæ. *Mariæ Magdalenæ* ſacer, ſolenni ritu, & inſigni, variorum Inſtrumentorum, & vocum Symphoniâ decantatum. Verum in ſequentem diem rejecta res eſt: quem ego illic alio vocatus agere non potui. Ea tamen quæ ad Facultates noſtras, & præcipua quæq; negotia pertinent, ſimul expendimus. Mirum in modum noſter in Inſulam Appulſus Catholicos animavit, recreavítq; qui ſe quodammodo a Societate derelictos prius conquerebantur, dubitabantque, ne difficultatibus territi paſtores gregem, operis nunquam magis indigentem, deſererent.

Capti ſunt hiſce menſibus Sacerdotes non pauci, quamvis neq; tam arctè aſſerventur. Nonnulli etiam è carceribus precio redempti, & liberi dimiſſi, nulla planè appoſita conditione. Verùm Lictores illi, quos penes eſt illos comprehendere, linceis oculis urbem obambulant, domos evertunt; & quos capiunt, nummis, Equis, omnibus deniq; ſpoliant. Mortui ſunt *Nugati*, carceris pœdore confecti Catholici aliquot, & eo in loco ſitu & ſquallore, miſerè cruciantur.

Newgate.

In Aulâ regiâ fertur quoddam jam præ manibus eſſe negotium, quod ſi fælicitet ſuccedat, extrema quæq; in nobis impendent; ſerena autem omnia, ſi ſecus acciderit. Verum hæc Catholicis puerorum terriculamenta viſa ſunt: quippe quos eo redegerunt, ut ad novam Crudelitatem, fere reliquum ſit nihil. Et quamvis poſt primam Decreti illius, quod in Parlamento, ſeu Comitiis, condiderunt promulgationem, magnum etiam optimi quiq; concepere timorem; poſtmodum tamen, collectis animis, ad priſtinum redire fervorem; licet operariorum defectu, nonnulli qui tunc languerent, nondum ad ingenium ſunt reducti. At certè dolendum maximè eſt, multos hic eſſe Comitatus non paucis Orthodoxis refertos, in quibus nec unus quidem degit Sacerdos, quamvis a pleriſq; eorum maximè expetitus. Et niſi mature ſuppetias mittant aliqui, res Catholica vehementer laborabit. Quanquam & illud ad malum accedit, quod qui jam ſunt in meſſe Sacerdotes, dum ad unum aut alterum Comitatum frequentiores confluunt, alios orbos planè paſtoribus relinquant.

Comiti *Arundelliæ*, propoſitum fuit a Primoribus, &, ut arbitror, a Regina, quod ſi vellet tantum Honoris cauſâ, Gladium de more, ante Reginam ad Templum ferre, & illi ad finem uſq; Conciliabuli, & Veſparum adeſſe, liber dimitteretur, Verum ille fraudem veritus, aut detrectabit penitus, aut certe nihil faciet, quod, conſultis doctioribus, non cognoverit licere. Neq; enim in animo habet, vel latum quidem unguem ab officio Catholici diſcedere, Contigit hiſce diebus Sacerdotem quendam, qui ut ſuſpicionem effugeret, nautico ſeſe habitu induerat, in portu comprehendi. Is ad Curiam ductus, & hinc inde per Ludibrium circumactus, tandem in Reginæ Conſpectum venit. Quæ ut Sacerdotem eſſe reſcivit, lepidè percontata eſt, an illam vellet convertere. Cui Sacerdos, Certè inquit, modo & Locus & attentio præbeatur, ego libentiſſimè omnem movebo Lapidem. Illa verò, has prius, ait, ancillas meas cōnvertas oportet, quàm ad me deveniatur. Poſt multa tandem Scommata & irriſiones Sacerdos carceribus committitur.

Mira quædam, ut audio, ab oculatis Teſtibus, circa *Energumenos* hic facta ſunt. Quæq; & multos converterunt ad fidem, & alios vacillantes magnopere confirmarunt. Unde nonnullos Sacerdotes, quorum & in his Officiis pietas & Sublimis planè Poteſtas ita inſigniter apparuit, hæretici magos & veneficos appellant. Ut quod factum negare non poſſunt, ſaltem non poteſtate Sacerdotali, ſed Dæmonis præſtigiis calumnientur: immemores illius, quod Chriſtus ait, *Omne regnum in ſe diviſum deſolabitur*.

Ego Concionibus, Confeſſionibus, aliiſq; *Societatis* muneribus vaco; quotidianis quidem circumſeptus periculis; nec ullo unquam vel breviſſimo tempore ſecurus. Sed ipſis animor difficultatibus, & ſuccedentium ſibi timorum multitudo, dum nullum ſinet eſſe diuturnum, adimit ferè omnem. Id ego unum contendo, ne imparatum hoſtis adoriatur. Quod reliquum eſt, Dei negotium eſto.

Tu verò, Reverende Pater, pro eo quo filios hujuſcemodi caſibus objectos amore complecteris, conatus noſtros, & ſuaviſſimos certe labores tuis aliorumq; patrum Sacrificiiſq; precibuſq; proſequere; ut qui ingreſſum præbuit, progreſſum ſecundet, & fælicem tandem tribuat dolorum exitum.

Mirum hic deſiderium eſt, & magna Neceſſitas eorum quæ ultimo petivimus Privilegiorum ac Facultatum; quæ certè ſi concedatur plurimum erunt è re Catholica. U. P. precibus nos omnes huc uſq; Dei gratia incolumes, humillimè commendamus. *XXplirz* † 25 Julii. 1586.

† *A Cipher perhaps of the Place from whence he wrote this Letter.*

R. V. filius indignus & Servus in Chriſto,

Admodum Rdo. Pri. Nro.

ROBERTUS.

NUMB. XIII.

The Juſtices of the Peace in Suffolk, *to the Lords of the Privy Council: Concerning certain Payments required of the Popiſh Recuſants there.*

Our humble Duties to your Lordſhips remembred.

MSS. Politic. pen. me.

IT may pleaſe you to be advertiſed, that according to the Commandment expreſt in your Lordſhips Letters, we have called before us all the Recuſants: whoſe Names in a Scedule we received encloſed in your Lordſhips ſaid Letters. To whom we imparted the Contents therof. Adviſing them to conſider of her Majeſtys gracious Favour, extended towards them; and meſuring the Benefit which hereby they are to receive, to make Offer by Writing ſeverally under their Hands, what reaſonable Portion they can be contented yearly, of their own Diſpoſition, to pay unto her Receipt, to be eaſed of the common Danger of Law for their Recuſancy. Whoſe ſeveral Offers under their own Hands, which herewith we ſend unto your Lordſhips, may particularly appear. Their ſeveral Rates and Valuations by your Lordſhips former Letters upon the diſarming of them we before Certified to your Lordſhips. So very humbly we take our Leaves, &c. From *Ipſwich*, the 23. of *April* 1586.

Signed,

Rob. Wyngfield.
Ph. Parker.
William Walgrave.
Nic. Bacon.
Will. Synger.
Job. Heigham.

Mr. *Fr. Mannock*, Eſq; mentioned in the Scedule received from your Lordſhips, hath of long time, and doth, ordinarily, and dutifully repair to his Pariſh Church; and there doth continue the time of the reading of Divine Service, and preaching of the Word of God.

" I *Ro. Rokewood* of *Stanfield* in the County of *Suffolk*; am content yearly " during my Recuſancy, to contribute and pay to her Majeſtys Receipt of " her Highneſs Exchequer, the Sum of 20 £. Thereby to receive and enjoy " the Benefit of her Majeſtys gracious Favour, to be exempt from all For" feitures, Vexations, Perils, and Penalties, that may hereafter happen unto " me, my Heirs or Executors, by reaſon of any Offence or Forfeiture, here" tofore by me committed, or that hereafter by me ſhall be committed a" gainſt the Law eſtabliſhed touching Recuſancy, for not reſorting unto the " Church, or other Place aſſigned by the ſaid Laws, in that Caſe made and " provided. *March* the 28. 1586.

Rob. Rokewood.

Will. Taxley, offered 40 £. *per ann.* His Eſtate he aſſerted was but 220 £. *per ann.* He writ, he had been levied for his Lands for Recuſancy, 280 £.

Wal. Norton 20 £. *per ann.*
Henry Drury, 20 £.
H. Everard, 10 £.
Ri. Martin, 6 £.
Edward Sulliard, 40 £.
Tho. Sulliard, 20 Nobles.
Ambr. Germin, 20 Mark.
Marg. Daniel 20 £.
John Bedingfield, 20 £.
Rob. Jetter, 6 13 4.
Joh. Daniel, 20 £.
Mich. Hare, 50 £.
Edw. Rookwood of Euston, 30 £.
Roger Martin, 40 Mark.

N U M B. XIV.

The Examinations of Martin Ara, *alias* Cotton *a Seminary Prieſt, and Mr.* Gervaſe Perpoint, a Popiſh Recuſant; *Taken before Mr.* Young, *a Juſtice of Peace in* London, *the 16th. Day of June.* 1586.

The Examination of Martin Ara, *alias* Cotton.

THE ſaid Examinate ſaith, that he hath been chiefly known by the *MSS. Burghlian.* Name of *Martin*, without any other Name. That he is a Seminary Prieſt: ſo made at *Doway* in *Artbois* by the Biſhop of *Cambray*, about eight Years paſt. And was brought up twelve Years in the Univerſity of *Lovain*. Where he proceded Maſter of Arts. And after that he was made Prieſt, he went to *Rome*, and ſtayed there 18 Months in the Hoſpital; and came into *England* about ſix Years paſt. During which time he hath made his moſt Abode about the City of *London*: and hath ſometimes layne in *Southwark*, ſometimes at *Lambeth*, and at common Inns, and other Places, and not elſewhere.

He went to *Hampſhire*, to a Market Town, five miles on this ſide *Wincheſter*, and came back again to *Guilford*. The Cauſe of his going there was to ſe, if he could live quietly there. For that he lived with great Danger and Trouble in *London*. And as he journeyed he enquired how the Biſhop behaved himſelf towards Recuſants, And hearing, that he was very troubleſome, he thought there was no ſtaying for him: and therefore returned, as is aforeſaid.

Four Years before he was in *Hampſhire*: Two Years ago in *Suſſex*. He heard no Bruits or Reports in his Journey, ſave that the poorer Sort were ready to break down Barnes to get Corn. And denyeth, that he heard any thing of the firing of the Beacons, or of any Ships coming on the Seas.

Saith that he hath known Mr. *Gervais Perpoint* this half year, and had been with him ſundry Times in the *Old Change* at his Lodgings: and one night this Examinate would have lain with him; but he ſaid, he durſt not, the Laws were ſo rigorous.

That at his coming to *London*, he went to Mr. *Perpoints* Lodgings: and that he invited this Examinate to dine with him. Wherunto he granted. And that he followed him aloof, becauſe he would not be ſeen in his Company, for fear of Danger; and dined with him at a Carpenters Houſe neer S. *Bartholomews* the leſs, where this Examinate was apprehended by the Purſevants.

He denyeth to declare in what Place he lay on that day, the 7th of *June* or at any time before. Neither will he ſignify where the Apparel, Linnin and Books are [uſed at the Celebration of the Maſs: at which it ſeems he had been diſcovered.] And denyeth to take his Oath, to anſwer to any Matters concerning the State of this Realm. [Which was, 'tis likely by Agreement among themſelves, to avoid diſcovering any thing of *Babingtons* Plot, now hatching.]

The Examination of Gervais Perpoint. *Gent.*

IMPRIMIS, he denyeth to take his Oath, to make anſwer to any Matter concerning the State of this Realm.

He ſaith, that he hath lain at *Earſleys* Houſe in the *Old Change*, ever ſince his Coming out of the Tower: which was ſhortly after *Chriſtmas* was Twelvemonth: and uſeth not to ly out of his own Lodging, unleſs it be with ſome Gentleman or Friend of his, coming to Town.

That he was acquainted with no *Hampſhire* Gentlemen, but Mr. *Gawen* of *Iſlington.*

Denyeth, that he knoweth *Martin Ara*, alias *Cotton*, or *Marten*, or one *Heywood*, alias *Blithe*. And ſaith, that toward the 9th of *June*, he went to Mr. *Edward Gage* his Lodging in *Southampton* Houſe. Where he found *Gages* Wife, and Mrs. *Baniſter* his Siſter, and no body elſe. And denyeth that any man went with him thither and returned from thence in his Company.

Blithe, a Prieſt went with him to Mr.Gages *and ſtaye there with him as Blithe confeſſeth.*

That on Sunday, the 12 of *June*, he this Examinate, *Henry Earſley*, his Hoſt, *James Taylor* of *Fleetſtreet*, Grocer, and *Chriſtopher Askwith* of *S. Martins*, Jerkin-maker, went together to Sr. *Tho. Fitz Herbert* his Houſe, about 8 of the Clock in the Morning; and returned about 4 of the Clock in the Evening. And denyeth that he heard any Service there.

That on Monday laſt he dined at Mr. *Walgraves* Lodgings, neer *little S. Bartholomews*. And that one Mr. *Charles Tilney* [one of that Name was concerned in *Babingtons* Plot] living in *Weſtminſter*, went thither with him.

And that during the time of Dinner, two Purſevants came in, and would needs have this Examinate, and another from away with him. And as they went, the other ran away. And they both went after him. So that this Examinate being left alone repaired to his own Lodging. And ſo he denyeth, that he did know the other man.

He invited Martin Ara a Seminary Prieſt to dine with him. Who is the Man that was apprehended with him.

NUMB XV:

Anthony Tyrrel, *a Prieſt, his Letter to the Queen. Giving his Reaſons for revoking what he had before confeſſed, and denying what he had before declared, concerning Jeſuits. And recanting his Recantation.*

MSS. Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

IF ever your Majeſtys Pity inclined unto the Complaint of a ſorrowful and diſtreſſed Subject, vouchſafe, O Gracious Queen, as to encline to mine. Which craveth no more at your Highneſs Hands than that you peruſe theſe Letters, which are longer than willing I would; but that they contain Matter, that concerneth your Princely Juſtice, by defending your innocent Subjects, and protecting them from harm.

I am the ſame, altho' now far different in Condition, that preſumed heretofore to write Letters unto your Majeſty, and as it hath been told me, you vouchſafed to receive and read them. And if the Report that hath been told me be true, you took great Joy and Comfort of them. Alas! my right dear Lady and Sovereign, I am right ſorry, that the Effect of your Comfort whatſoever it were, proceded from ſo ill a Cauſe. The Ground wherof when once it ſhall be known, will yield you more Diſcomfort, than fully may be ſhewed. For as for the Comfort your Majeſty received, it is onely that you were informed now, that I being a Seminary Prieſt had recanted my Religion, and ſubmitted my ſelf to your Majeſtys mercy, ſhould ſhew my ſelf more Loyal in diſcovering of Traitors, detecting their Treaſons, and doing many other Actions unto your Majeſtys good Liking. All which if they had been truly and ſincerely don, your Comfort had not been in vain. But now when your Highneſs ſhall hear, that I have revoked all that back again, I fear me, it will amaze your Majeſty, and make you to think at the firſt Bluſh, that a Catholic hath no Faith, no Fidelity, no Fear of God, no Religion, no Duty, no Subjection. And ſo indeed it may ſeem to appear, if abruptly you meſure the Diſpoſition of all others according unto one.

But when your Majeſty by your great Wiſdom ſhall juſtly ponder the Weight of the Cauſe with the Truth of the Thing, how grievouſly ſoever the News ſhall appear at the firſt View; yet if you will not let to ſhew your Princely Temperance, until you come to the full knowledge of the Thing; which Thing, when you have vouchſafed next unto Almighty God, I require no other Judge to determine of my Puniſhment. The which if you think me by your Juſtice worthy to ſuſtain in rigor, I patiently do accept it. Or if by Mercy you ſhall vouchſafe any way to qualify it, I do humbly acknowledg the Benefit, whatſoever ſhall be allotted unto me.

Let your innocent Subjects be defended, Truth preſerved, Falſehood contemned. And care not I, tho' I be made the one, and only Example of all Offenders that ever ſo tranſgreſſed: onely craving this, that by his Favour and Pity, from God his eternal Fury I may be exempted. I ſhall hope, there is none ſo cruelly enclined, that notwithſtanding whatſoever Offence I have committed, would wiſh my Puniſhment, for to be tormented eternally.

To come to the Effect of my Purpoſe. I am now able, moſt Gracious Sovereign, to let you underſtand the Weight of the Cauſe, and Greatneſs of my Faults: That rejecting of my Religion, lately received, the returning unto my former Faith again, unleſs I unfold truly unto your Highneſs with what Mind and Intent I being made Prieſt in *Rome*, came firſt unto your Majeſtys Land; how I have converſed, ſince the Time of my being there; the Cauſe that made me forſake my old Religion, and the Cauſe that hath now brought me back again: for without the Knowledge of theſe Particulars your Highneſs cannot diſcern the Offences that I have don. In the Peruſal wherof, altho' it may ſeem ſomewhat tedious unto your Majeſty, yet doubt I not, but that it ſhall breed ſome Contentment by that Time you have don. Wherby you may the better be warned of the Nature of a true, Loyal Subject, from him that playeth the Counterfeit and Hypocrite.

I. As touching therfore my firſt Coming to your Majeſtys Realm, ſince the Time of my Prieſthood, from *Rome*, even as if I were to dy this preſent Hour, and as I ſhall anſwer it at the dreadful Day of Judgment, I never was of other Mind than this, as if I proteſt unto my knowledge all other Prieſt to be of the ſame, only to help in my Vocation to ſave your Subjects Souls, and to keep them from Damnation. My meaning was never to perſuade any to Diſloyalty, but to fear God above all things; and ſo far forth as they did not hazzard the Loſs of their Souls, to obey your Majeſty. This was the only Mind I had, when I firſt came into your Majeſtys Realm; welpleaſing unto God: and ſo directed by my Superiors. But ſince in this Point our Profeſſion is different from your Highneſs Mind; and that by the Learned in your own Realm, you are perſuaded that Religion to be falſe which we profeſs moſt true; it is not my Meaning, being ſo vile a Vaſſal, to diſpute the ſame with my Liege and Sovereign, but only to ſay this, that for the Truth of our Religion, I was of this Mind, when firſt I came unto this Kingdom, that if I had a thouſand Lives, I would have loſt them all for the Defence of the ſame. And ſo long as the Fear of God was before mine Eyes I ſo continued. And ſo purpoſe I now again to continue, untill the day I dy. And thus much briefly, as touching the Mind wherewith I came unto this Realm.

II. Now as touching my Converſion, this is moſt ſure and certain, that if my Life had been agreeable to my Profeſſion, this Mind in me had never changed; neither Fear of Death, nor Hope of Preferment, would have made, or altered my Opinion; but rather than I would have been brought for to relent, or to have forſaken my Faith, as I have don, I would have yielded my Body moſt willingly unto Death, as divers of my moſt vertuous Brethren moſt glorioſly have don, and every good Prieſt hereafter will do, in deſpight of all the Devils in Hell, or Torments of any men. But alas! here, oh! moſt gracious Sovereign, to my temporal Shame and Confuſion, ſo as my Soul may find Mercy at the dreadful Day, I muſt openly confeſs, that I fell into a great Corruption of Life, and diſſolute Maners; ſuffering my ſelf to be drowned in all ſenſuality and pleaſure, that the Grace of the Holy Ghoſt could no longer abide in a Temple ſo defiled and polluted with ſin. Inſomuch that my own Conſcience, crying out againſt my own Impiety, I not amending yet my evil Maners, the Devil ſeized, and ſo expunged my Faith. Wherupon my Religion began to be irkſome unto me; Not for that I knew my Religion to be evil, but becauſe I knew my ſelf to be paſſing naught, as that God, nor any Goodneſs could not any longer abide in mee. I was therefore oftentimes, before that ever I did fall into the danger of your Majeſtys Laws, minded to have renounced my Religion, and to have yielded my ſelf unto your Majeſtys Council. And ſo either to have played the diſſembling Spy, or elſe to have counterfeited a Recantation, for no other End, but to have ſerved the World, and to live for the Time in Pleſure ; altho' in the End I was ſure thereby to purchaſe eternal Damnation.

Yet Gods Mercy expecting my Repentance, preſerved me ſtill from that horrible Crime. And altho' all the Branches of the Tree of my Soul were withered dry by Sin, and ready to be cut of, and caſt into the Fire ; yet ſo long as there was any Life left in the Root ; that is, that my Faith was not yet forſaken, there was ſome hope of my Return to God again. And ſo being by Gods Providence taken, and brought into the danger of your Majeſtys Laws, whereby I thought I was to loſe my Life for the ſame ; thoſe Thoughts then came into my Mind, that to dy for Gods Cauſe, or the Catholic Religion, I was not worthy : by reaſon I had ſo contaminated my Life by Sin. Yet ſuch was the Mercy of Almighty God, as he letted not to offer me the Grace, if I moſt wickedly had not forſaken him for the Devil, having gotten ſo great an Advantage of me through Sin, envied now my happy State, for to be called unto my Tryal for my Profeſſion : fearing, leſt that hereby he ſhould have loſt me altogether, aſſailed me more fiercely in another kind. Procuring me under the Colour of Pleſure to ſave my Life, by recanting my Catholic Religion. Altho' therby I was ſure in the End I ſhould leeſe that altogether.

III. And now I am come, moſt gracious Sovereign, unto the true Cauſe of my laſt Converſion, or rather meer Perverſion, (as truly I may term it.) By the which Means what lamentable Stratagems have been committed may now eaſily be ſeen. For after that the Devil had prevailed with me, that I was content, for my temporal Life, and worldly Preferment, to yield unto all maner of Sin, Oh! ſweet Lord, (for I tremble now to recount unto your Majeſty what a Number of Monſters I did preſently let in) think you, that I had either Care or Conſcience of my Doings ; when I had abandoned all Grace, all Goodneſs, all Truth and Honeſty, and caſt my ſelf wholly unto Sin? No verily ; for from that Time I became more malicious, than ever was *Judas*, that betrayed Chriſt. For I converted my Malice wholly againſt him. And for one Chop I forſook my Faith, which I knew for certain to be pure and good, and accuſed the Pope, and ſlandered the *Jeſuits*, belyed D. *Allen* and *Lewis* and D. *Gifford* ; reporting of them and divers others of our Nation, unto my Lord Treaſurer, ſuch horrible Matters, as againſt the Turk or the Devil, I could not deviſe the like. What *Ballard* his Practices were againſt your Majeſty, or any of the reſt, that ſuffered with him, I proteſt, I know not, nor ever yet could learn. And if they were guilty of any Crime, I do not, nor will not here excuſe them ; but rather will rejoyce at their Deſervings. Only this, O gracious Queen, I cannot but confeſs a Truth, (what Peril or Danger of my Life ſoever I ſuſtain) that I accuſed *Ballard* moſt falſely, in conſpiring your Majeſtys Death, that he ſhould have begun to break the Matter with D. *Lewis* at *Milain* ; continued the ſame with the Rector of the *Engliſh* Seminaries, and the General of the *Jeſuits* at *Rome*. By whoſe Helps his Speeches ſhould have been commended unto Pope *Gregory* XIII. And by him the Action of your Majeſtys Death ſhould have been allowed and confirmed. The ſame he ſhould have imparted unto D. *Alen* at *Rheimes* ; who ſhould like well enough of the thing: and after ſhould have been practiſed by *Ballard*, or ſome of his Complices here in *England*, when they ſhould ſe their Time.

Wherin I accuſed *Cha. Tilney* and *Edward Windſor* ; the one dead, the other living, to have been two of the chiefeſt Attempters of that Fact : all which, (as I hope to be ſaved at the latter Day) was as falſe, as God is true. For never in my Life did I hear ſo much as a Thought conceived awry of your Royal Perſon. When I had deeply waded into the Ford of Lying, I ſpared no maner of Perſon, upon whom I might colour any Cauſe of Miſchief to be don. Inſomuch as I accuſed the *French* Ambaſſador in many Things

He accuſed the Scots Queen falſely.

Things moſt wrongfully: as alſo his Secretary. I accuſed the Earl of *Arundel*, and his Counteſs, of many a hainous Matter: Divers other Noblemen and Women of your Land, of Matters moſt falſe and untrue. Among the reſt I falſely accuſed the *Scotiſh* Queen unto your Majeſty of Matters I knew no more than the Child new born. What otherwiſe She deſerved I know not, nor mind not to defend her, if ſhe have offended your Majeſty in any thing. But whatſoever I did inform your Highneſs, it was only to bring your Majeſty into a greater Hatred, where I ſuppoſe you did not greatly love: and that made me to enlarge lyes againſt all Catholics: and namely, againſt my Lord *Windſor*, the Lord *Storton* and his Wife, my Lord *Compton*, Sr. *John Arundel* and others. And I remember, that being ſettled in this malicious Humour, that I did write unto your Majeſty; wherin I warned you of three things. The firſt, to extirpate and root out all Seminary Prieſts, as Members moſt pernicious unto your Realm. For that they went about, whereſoever they came, to bring your Majeſty in Hatred and Contempt with your Subjects; perſuading them, that to ſeek the Deſtruction of your Perſon was a very laudable thing. The Second, that you ſhould have great Regard unto the *Scottiſh* Queen; by whom your Majeſtys Life ſtood moſt in danger: Who ſought by all the Means ſhe could, not only by foreign Power, but by domeſtical Attempt at home, to ſhorten and end your Days: that ſhe her ſelf might be advanced unto the Crown. The Third was, that your Majeſty now having cenſured the Heads of the Conſpirators, and had all your Enemies now at ſuch an Advantage, that it were not good, that you ſhould let to proſecute the ſame: And to enact ſuch Laws againſt all Recuſants; as whoſoever ſhould refuſe to ſwear againſt the Pope and all his Procedings againſt your Majeſty and this Realm, he ſhould be accounted no better than a rank Traitor unto your Majeſty.

All which Invectives, moſt gracious Prince, if you conſider with what a Mind I did write them, you have no maner of Cauſe to believe them. For I uttered theſe Matters, as one replete with all Malice; and intended not to ſay Truth in any thing.

Pope Gregory.

For as for Pope *Gregory*, I proteſt as I hope to be ſaved, I never heard him ſpeak any thing unto your Majeſtys Prejudice or Harm; but I have heard him with mine own Ears, and ſeen with mine own Eyes to ſhed Tears, for your Majeſty; Wiſhing, that all the Bloud in his Body were ſpilt to do you any good. And ſo far he hath been from perſuading us to any Treachery towards your Perſon, as he hath by his own Mouth commanded us to pray for you, and not to intermeddle in any thing, but that directly concerned our Profeſſion And this is the worſt, that ever I did know Pope *Gregory* to wiſh you. whom I have moſt falſely accuſed in many things.

Seminary Prieſts.

And as for Seminary Prieſts, I proteſt, as I hope to be ſaved, that never ſince I came into *England*, (which is now more than Six Years paſt) I never heard of any one but wiſht unto your Majeſty, as to his own Soul, and would willingly beſtow his own Life, unto the uttermoſt Drop of his Bloud, for the Preſervation and Safty of your Majeſty, as well in Soul as in Body. And that in all their Sermons, Exhortations, Informations, as well private as public, they perſuade your Subjects to all Obedience; to pray for your Majeſty, and to ſuffer the Affliction of your Penal Laws withal Patience, and not reſiſt, or move Sedition for any Cauſe. And this is the worſt that ever I did know by any Prieſt, *Ballard* only excepted. From whom neither I heard ever any Hurt intended (as I moſt falſely reported) againſt your anointed Perſon.

Ballard.

Queen of Scots.

And as for the Queen of *Scots*, who being dead, and God knows now, whether ſhe hath don well or ill, I can neither accuſe her, nor will defend her: but from the Wrong which I have don her, which hath been in objecting ſuch Matters againſt her, as in Truth to me were never known.

Catholics.

And laſtly, for all *Catholics*, as I accuſed them unto your Majeſty for moſt notorious Traitors, I would to God your Highneſs did but ſee their inward Minds and Intentions. And then I doubt not, but you would not then ſo much wonder at them, their Treaſons and Conſpiracies; or at leaſt for a few wicked and evil diſpoſed Members, to condemn all the reſt. For ſince my Coming into *England*, God be my Witneſs, I never heard of one or other, that ſought, or wiſhed Hurt or Harm to the leaſt Hair of your Majeſtys Head. And therfore that I ſhould adviſe you to proſecute them now upon the Advantage, as ſo to beat them down, it was ſpoken only of a Deviliſh mind on my part, and for no Treſpas that they had committed of their own.

For who ſeeth not, during the Time of your Majeſtys Reign, with what Patience and Obedience they have lived under the Sovereignty of your Majeſtys Laws? Which, when it ſhall pleaſe God, you may eaſe and mollify again. And if ſome few diſordered Perſons have ſtrayed aſide, (as in no Government or Commonwealth of any Continuance, but there have been always ſome) yet how their Doings have been hated and contemned of the reſt, your Majeſty may judge, if you pleaſe by your own Experience, that you have ſeen. Therefore there is none that can juſtly accuſe them of Diſloyalty, or worthily procure them your Majeſtys Diſfavour; but only ſuch as either in reſpect of a contrary Religion, cannot abide them, or ſuch as be deſperate Perſons, and ſeek to curry for his own particular Credit and Advantage, that cares not which End goe forward, ſo they may ſtand upright; or paſs not, who be the Looſers, ſo they may win. Men without all Pity and Compaſſion of others, that care not who Lament and Weep, ſo they may laugh. Of which kind I muſt confeſs my ſelf unto your Majeſty to have been one; and therefore worthy of all Puniſhment; not knowing what way to make Satisfaction, but by Penance, Death, or true Repentance.

Thus have I in part recounted unto your Majeſty the Cauſes, that induced me to forſake my Religion, to write ſuch Letters unto your Highneſs, to give out ſuch ſore and grievous Informations againſt many of your Majeſtys moſt Loyal and loving Subjects. Now, and if it may pleaſe you to give me Leave, but to ſay a word or two of my Turning back again; then will I make and End. And truly to ſpeak, as I ſhall anſwer before God, and not ly, the Devil was the Cauſe that made me ſo to counterfeit unto your Majeſty a *Converſion*; and the Grace of God undeſerved on my Part hath brought me back again. For I could never have been induced to have made ſo many notorious and monſtrous Slanders againſt ſo many worthy Princes, againſt ſo many Noble and Worſhipful, againſt my deareſt Friends and Acquaintance, whom I know to be moſt clear of all the Matters wherof I had charged them; had not Sin only and the Devil procured me unto it. Juſtice *Young* with all his Cunning could never have catched ſuch hold of it, nor never could have brought me to that Offence, as to forſake my Faith, to abuſe your Majeſty and my Lord Treaſurer with ſo many Writings and falſe Informations, had not Sin and the Devil procured me to it.

His Converſion.

Therefore think not, good Madam, that I could write or ſpeak unto your Majeſty with a pure and ſincere Heart being ſo foully ſtained with Filth and Corruption. Think, that I imagined nothing but Lyes; practiſed nothing but Lyes; ſought the Effuſion of innocent Bloud, by betraying of Prieſts, betraying of Catholics, and by doing all the Injuries I could againſt them, which never imagined Hurt or Harm. I was not ſo forward unto theſe Miſhapps my ſelf, as I was alſo perſuaded unto them by Juſtice *Young*. Of whom I cannot but ſay, altho' I abide all the Torments, that he can procure me, if ever I come again under his Hands, that he is a moſt cruel Bloudſucker, a Deſtroyer of your People, and a great Abuſer of your Majeſty; For his Cruelty in ſhedding of Bloud, it is too well known. For ſuch as he cannot deſtroy both in Body and Soul, (as he hath don me) he will be ſure to preferr unto the Gallows: otherwiſe under the Colour of perſuading them unto Gods Truth and Religion, he will not let to bring them ſtrait headlong unto Damnation. For ſo ſome as he hath made, either Prieſts or Catholics, to relent, all Religion is ſet apart. For his firſt Ground of his new Faith, muſt be to play the Spy: and under the

Account of himſelf.

Juſtice Young.

the Colour of Godlineſs to practice all the Knavery that he can, before we come to enjoy the Perfection of our new Faith.

We muſt learn the Rudiments, how to betray Chriſt and his Anointed, and to impeach the innocent, be they never ſo good, never ſo vertuous, never ſo far from offending your Highneſs, or your Laws. Some Means we muſt ſeek to find a Hole in their Coats; to no other End, but to cut their Throats. And when we have learned perfectly this Leſſon, then we muſt procede unto greater Evils. For we muſt yield unto all kind of Diſſimulation. For that was the chiefeſt Point of Juſtice *Young* his Perſuaſion: Never talking with me of any Matter of Religion, albeit I craved it my ſelf very often. I deſired him, that I might have Books, that I might have Conference; nay, that which is more, that I might come unto his Houſe, if I might not in the Church and receive the Communion. But no ſuch Matter could be obtained ſo long as there was any Means for me to perſecute the Catholics. In which Miſchief I muſt play the Seminary Prieſt, which notwithſtanding your Majeſtys Laws, which have made us Traitors and all ſuch Felons as ſhall receive us; yet muſt we now boldly practiſe our Treaſons, and make as many Felons, as we can. Laws were wont to be made to prohibit evil, and to ſave the innocent. But now by the Juſtices, and Miniſters of the Law, we muſt do contrary to the Law, to make others Traitors and Felons, which otherwiſe perhaps would not.

Diſſimulation required.

Before I made any Semblance of my counterfeit and feigned Converſion, it was a damnable thing with Juſtice *Young* to be a Papiſt; much more to practiſe Papiſtry; as to ſay Maſs, or to reconcile, or to do other ſuch like Actions. That there could be no Means of Salvation but preſently to return unto the Lord. And when I was deſirous ſo for to do, the Lord was not then at Leiſure for to receive me. It is no Matter, altho' I continue a Papiſt ſtill. It is no Sin to ſay Maſs: no Treaſon to reconcile; no Offence to commit Idolatry by way of Diſſimulation, with Intent to do miſchief; to ſeek innocent Bloud; to betray ſuch ſilly Souls as never thought Hurt or Harm; to deſtroy your Majeſtys Subjects, and to make you guilty of their Bloud. Oh! Heaven, Oh! Earth, what Heart would not bleed for Pity, to hear of theſe Things? O! gracious Queen, whom God hath made Governeſs over us, to protect and defend us, to whom next unto God, but unto your ſelf, may we complain? How are your Subjects betrayed? How are they ſpoiled? How are they brought like Sheep unto the Slaughter?

Diſcourſe between Juſtice Young and him.

Is it your Pleſure that Innocents ſhould be thus caſt away? That Treaſons ſhould be thus practiſed? Was this the End of your Laws, to bring men, whether they would or no, unto their Deaths? If I wiſt it were ſo, whether I have no more to ſay, but *Moriamur in Simplicitate noſtra? Let us dy in our Simplicity.* Better were it to dy, than ſo to live: Like Birds that be brought to the Pitfal unawares, by the Procurement of ſuch as be Miniſters of your Majeſtys Juſtice. Is this the Way to bring your Subjects unto Reformation? Is this the Sum of their Religion; Diſſimulation, Spiry, [*Viz.* to be *Spies*] Knavery, and all Abominations? I cannot contain, moſt gracious Prince, altho' I ſhould dy 10,000 Deaths, as I look for no Life, nor deſire no Life, if ever I be taken. Yet if I would ſtill have continued in this damnable Courſe, I might have lived, until God of his Juſtice had cut me off; and ſhould have been accounted no Traitor, but a good Subject, and have had I know not what Preferment.

I have my Lord Treaſurers Letters for my Safty. He perſuades me to continue in Diſſimulation ſtill. And ſo long he will continue his good Will. But that I now leave to play the Diſſembler, I fear me, I ſhall again be reputed for a Traitor. Oh! Dear Sovereign, what a World is this, that Flattery and all Impiety breeds Friendſhip, but Truth and Honeſty gets Hatred?

Lord Treaſurers Letters to him.

And Juſtice Youngs Letters.

I have alſo Mr. Juſtice *Youngs* Letters; wherin I am commanded by your Majeſty to continue my Diſſimulation, and againſt poor Catholics to do all the Miſchief that I can. For my own part, I cannot be perſuaded that ever your Majeſty would wiſh me, or any of your Subjects ſo to deal. For albeit you affect not our Religion, you pity our Miſery, you acknowledg us your poor Subjects; we love ——— your Scepter; we obey your Laws; and ſo far forth as we incurr not Damnation unto our Souls, and more I truſt, you will not require at our Hands; at the leaſt, if we that be Papiſts may not ſcape with our Lyves (altho' wee do nothing but our Duties) yet grant us of your Princely Favour and Pity, that we may go unto our Deaths with ſafty of Conſcience. Let us not be moleſted as we are, to be allured to play the Spyes, as many have don, beſides my ſelf; and I fear may remain as yet in that perverſe and wicked Mind. Which I know, they cannot do without a continual [Curſe] unto their Conſcience.

Popiſh Spies.

And therefore I wiſh your Majeſty not to truſt them, For they will never be true unto you that are falſe to God. Therefore whatſoever they do, whatſoever they promiſe, it is but for the Saving of a temporal Life, and the gaining of a little worldly Preferment. And whenſoever God ſhall touch them with Remorſe, they cannot do, but as I have don.

Flatters the Queen.

Think not therefore, my right Dear Lady and Sovereign, that becauſe I am returned back again unto the Catholic Religion, that now I am become unto your Majeſty a Traitor; God forbid. I wiſh rather preſently that my Fleſh were torn in pieces with hot Irons, than I would become any ways treacherous unto your Royal Perſon. Think not, that I love your Majeſty leſs now then I did then: But much more. For now I love you truly, where before I loved you diſſemblingly. Now would I willingly looſe my Life to do you good, where before I would ſcarce looſe a Point, to do you a pleſure. Your Majeſty may well think ſome important Cauſe hath moved me thus to alter my Condition; or elſe of all men Living in the World, I were the moſt deſperate, and unwiſe.

His preſent Condition.

For firſt, I have ſo grievouſly offended all Catholics, as I ſhall be aſhamed for ever, during my Life, to look any of them in the Face. And now had I gained the good will of your Majeſty, the Favour of my Lord Treaſurer and other Noblemen; as I might have lived temporally in great Credit and Grace: For me now voluntarily without Compulſion, to return back again, where I had deſerved moſt to have been contemned; and to forſake the State or Condition, wherein at this preſent I was beſt to be friended; what is the Cauſe? Verily, no Hope of any Reward. For all the Days of my Life I muſt look for no other than Penury, Poverty, Penance and Affliction; and very likely a temporal, violent Death for my Sins, that I have don. And yet all this I am moſt willing and deſirous to embrace, rather than for ever I would be caſt out of Gods Favour, and dy the Child of Reprobation.

And think not, moſt gracious Queen, that now I have received your Majeſtys Reward, that I have given you the Slip. I never received of Juſtice *Young*, but 30 £. and that by piecemeals. I loſt in my Chamber, that the Purſevant robbed me, when I was taken, better than 40 £. that never yet, for all my Favour, I could recover. Beſides, by the Searches I procured Juſtice *Young*, he had gotten better than an 100 £. So that in Truth, I am nothing in his Debt. My Rewards have not been comparable to my Loſſes, altho' they have been greater than in Truth I could deſerve for any ſuch Service. And I would to God, your Majeſty from henceforth would reward all diſſembling Spies, as *Parry* was rewarded. Then ſhould your Realm in ſhort time be purged; your Majeſty quieted from a Number of Devices, wherewithal now daily you be terrified. That your Life is more grievous unto you, than the State of a private man. How many falſe Reports and Lyes doth Juſtice *Young* bring your Majeſty in a year; partly, by his own deviſing, and partly by ſuch as I have been? How oft think you he hath been tampering with me for to accuſe ſome Ladies of your Privy Chamber, for poiſoning of your Majeſty. And of Truth I know of none. Yet for the ſatisfying of the mans Humour, I accuſed the Lady *Drury*, that ſhe ſhould ſay, when your Majeſty had given her a Blow, that ſhe would remember it. How fain would he have had me to appeach the Earl of *Cumberland*, the Lord *Scroop*, the Lord *Mountagu* and others. And I did what I could, eſpecially againſt the Earl of *Arundel*. Of whom I made ſo many Lyes, as if they may be credited were able to diſpatch him. I am in Conſcience bound to certify your Majeſty of this; that you may underſtand, how your Subjects are bought and ſold; and your Highneſs tormented with continual Fears. For as I hope to be ſaved, I ſay nothing now of any Malice, but that which I know by mine own Experience; and much more if I ſhould not be too tedious unto your Highneſs, to repeat it.

I have, for my own Diſcharge, truly ſet down in a Book the Truth of every thing; if it may pleaſe God it may come to your Majeſtys Peruſal, you ſhall find therin, that it may pity your Majeſty for to know: and yet very neceſſary that you ſhould underſtand.

To conclude, now that I have informed your Majeſty, as briefly as I could, what Mind and Affection I had, when I came firſt Prieſt into your Realm, as ſure as God lives, I never was, nor never will be any Traitor, to intend any kind of Treaſon. If my continual Converſation had been agreeable unto my Profeſſion, I had never ſo grievouſly tranſgreſſed the Laws, abuſed your Majeſty, and don ſo much Hurt unto my Neighbours, I had never feigned a Recantation to diſcredit your Majeſty and my Lords of your Honorable Council, nor played ſuch Pageants as I have don. And ſure I know mine own Doings to be naught, and to have proceeded from a corrupt Ground. And ſince I have been taught no other Thing, ſince the Time of my feigned Recantation, but how to diſſemble, and how to throw my ſelf down headlong to the Devil; grant me this Favour, moſt gracious Queen, that I now diſmiſt, blame me not for ſeeking true Amendment, howſoever you blame or puniſh my Offences committed. And let noe Innocence be caſt away upon my falſe Complaints, as your Majeſty will anſwer it at the latter day. For now, altho' too late, I tel you truly, I accuſed them all falſely, and betrayed them wrongfully. And for my ſelf I crave no further Favour or Mercy than it ſhall pleaſe God to put into your Majeſtys mind, enclining always unto Pity. If I be taken, I think no Death too grievous for me. Onely not preſuming in mine own Strength, I have ſought Means to ſave my ſelf. If I eſcape untaken, I think no Penance to ſharp to ſuffer all the Days of my Life. If I hap to be taken here, I proteſt, I have not preſumed this Act upon any Contempt, but in all Humility, Fear and Trembling: Knowing, that howſoever I might have abuſed the World, I could not have eſcaped the Judgment of God. And therfore whatſoever Death I ſuffer, what Torment ſoever I endure, God give me Grace to embrace them, as wholſome Medicines for my Soul: Praying notwithſtanding unto the laſt Moment of my Life moſt humbly, that God may long preſerve your Majeſty, and grant you a proſperous Reign; and finally, to reign with him in Glory everlaſting. Thus craving on my knees your Majeſtys Pardon, I moſt humbly take my Leave. From my Chamber in *London*, the 20th of *Febr. An.* 1586.

Your Highneſs moſt lamentable and
repentant Subject,

ANTH. TYRELL. *Prieſt,*
moſt unworthy of that Vocation.

NUMB.

NUMB. XVI.

Dr. Copcotts *Vicechancellor of* Cambridge, *to the* Lord Burghley, *High Chancellor of that Univerſity: Concerning Matters out of Order in* Chriſts *College. And his Viſitation of it.*

My Duty unto your Lordſhip in the humbleſt maner, remembred, &c.

YOUR Lordſhip as Chancellor of this Univerſity, or your Vicechancellor, is yearly Viſitor of *Chriſts* College. A thing omitted of long time heretofore; yet of ſuch Neceſſity at this preſent, that I was bold at the Time appointed by the Statutes of their Foundreſs to put it in Practice. And therby do find almoſt every Statute given unto them tranſgreſſed And this Abuſe following, not provided for by any Statute, or Order among them. Dr. *Howford* left at his Death in the Treaſure almoſt 700 £. Wherof they have laid out 400 £. for a Purchaſe. Which maketh the Commons of the Fellows 3 *ſh.* a week, that by Statute is but 12 pence. They uſe no means to reſtore in time this Mony to the common Treaſury, or to encreaſe that which there is left; but take all Commodities of Fines for Leaſes, and Woodſales to themſelves; and have a Dividend at the Bakers Hand, who alloweth 15 to the Dozen. The Commodity wherof goes to the Fellows. The Size in that reſpect is the leſs, and the Scholars and others of the Houſe therby are pinched. *MSS.* Burghlian.

If I give any Injunctions unto them in theſe Matters, the Maſter within a Month is to ſe them executed. Elſe he is to be admoniſhed the Second Time. And if then he ſe not thoſe things performed, which I require, it is Loſs of his Place. So that for the Time I continue in Office here, that which I give in Charge, ſhall be accompliſhed. But if it might pleaſe your Lordſhip to amend and ratify the Injunctions here encloſed (in that there is not one Clauſe, but meets with ſome Breach of Statute, or ſome Diſorder complained of among them) they would be obſerved to the great Benefit of that Society during your Lordſhips Life. Which I beſeech the Almighty long to preſerve. From *Trinity* College *Cambridge*, the 12. of *Decemb.* 1586.

Your Lordſhips moſt bounden,

JOHN COPCOT.

NUMB: XVII.

Injunctions for Chriſts *College* Cambridg. *Given by the Vicechancellor their Viſitor, Decemb.* 1586.

1. MAGISTER, Socii, Scholares, Penſionarii, omnes deniq; in Collegio veſtro literarum ſtudioſi, intererunt publicis ſupplicationibus in choro, temporibus & habitu à ſtatutis Academiæ & Collegii veſtri deſignatis.

2. Sacroſancta communio celebrabitur temporibus & modo à legibus hujuſce Regni & ſtatutis iſtius Academiæ requiſitis.

3. Communes loci ita tractabuntur, ut nullus cujuſcunq; tandem loci aut conditionis homo notetur, aut perſtringatur in iis, & ſtatim poſt auditam

horam ſextam finientur, ita ut habendis in aula prælectionibus poſthac amplius non ſint impedimento.

4. Magiſter curabit ſedulò, ut in eos qui in re divina celebranda, aut ſcholaſticis muneribus obeundis negligentes ſeſe præbuerint, animadvertatur, ut quicunq; in Collegio literis operam dant latino tantum ſermone, in area & aula utantur, ut nemo extra aulam, niſi magna aliqua de cauſa per Magiſtrum aut locum ejus tenentem approbanda prandeat, vel cænet: ut ibi ſinguli juxta gradum & conditionem ſuam pileis ſcholaſticis utantur ut in oppidum nemo niſi in eo habitu quem permittunt leges Academiæ, ſeſe conferat: & hiſce in rebus ipſe aliis exemplo erit: ut quiſquis in quacunq; tandem facultate obibit diſputationes, vel ad clerum concionabitur, eum illi qui ejuſdem ſunt Collegii concomitentur ad ſcholas publicas & ad templum Mariæ pro antiquo more Academiæ.

5. Magiſter cubicula diſtribuet Scholaribus ſecundùm tempora admiſſionis, eum ad locum, quem in Collegio obtinent, nec Penſionarium quempiam aut Siſatorem, cujuſcunq; tandem loci ſit, iis præferet, nec ſenioritatem in Collegio, ex ea, quam in Oppido habent Bacchalaurei Artium facti, metietur.

6. Cubicula ad Magiſtri domicilium ſive cameram pertinentia generoſis elocabuntur in commodum Collegii, nec patietur aliquid pecuniæ erogari pro cubiculo aut muſæo aliquo, quo quiſpiam ex eo, quem in Collegio poſſidet, loco fruitur gratis.

7. Magiſter rationem ſive computum reddet ſecundum ſtatuta præſente majori parte Sociorum, in quorum conſpectu & præſentia pecuniam omnem numerari curabit, ac vaſa aurea & argentea, ſeu jocalia ut vocant, oſtendi, petetq; ut ratio a ſe reddita à majori parte Sociorum comprobetur, quam niſi approbaverint pro nulla habebitur.

8. Magiſter nullos ſumptus de Collegii pecuniis faciet, pro conducendis equis, niſi cum negotia Collegii per majorem partem Sociorum approbata procuraverit, nec cum peregrinos invitaverit in nundinis Sturbrigienſibus.

9. Magiſter initio anni dies abſentiæ nemini Sociorum concedet nec alio quovis tempore ſub prætextu negotiorum Collegii procurandorum, niſi majori parti Sociorum idem innoteſcat, & ab iis approbetur, nec ſine conſenſu eorum ullis diſcipulis permittet abſentiæ dies, præter numerum illum dierum à ſtatuto conſtitutum, nec ſtatuet quenquam Promum, vel Cuſtodem Sacelli ſine approbatione eorundem.

10. Non ſinet quenquam in Collegio manere, qui ibidem, quamdiu in Academia verſetur non pernoctaverit, nec iis omnibus per ſe fungatur exerciciis quibus & per ſtatutum & per ordinem aſtringitur, nulloſq; in Collegio pueros niſi togatos feret.

11. Non patietur mulierem quampiam lectos ſternere in Collegio, niſi quis graviter ægrotaverit: nec quenquam ibidem commorari qui aliquando fuerit expulſus, nec puerum quempiam à debita caſtigatione detineri, nec quenquam ſeſe inſolenter gerere in ſuperiores dicto aut facto, prælectionum tempore aut alibi.

12. Curabit ut Decani officia ſua ſedulò præſtent ſecundum ſtatuta Collegii, & ad eos delatas ſchedulas legant publicè in aula unoquoq; die Veneris, non autem in promptuario aut cubiculis correctiones, quas vocant, habeant, & ut nullus Officiariorum bis mulctet aliquem pro uno exercitio negligendo, tametſi in abſentium nomina ſæpius, inquirat. 2

13. Curabit ut Seneſcallus menſtruus ſit Sociorum aliquis, alius autem communis ciſtæ cuſtos annuus quiſq; ſuo ordine: & ut id quod ſtatuta exigunt, debitè exequantur, & ut commeatus computetur unaquaq; hebdomada, itemq; ut termini tempore tantum undecima hora, exceptis feriis, die Dominica, & Sabbatis, niſi dies ſint jejunio deſtinati, prandeant.

14. Curabit ut lector ipſe philoſophiæ partem aliquam ſingulis hedomadis quater prælegat, & ut ex conſenſu Magiſtri & majoris partis Sociorum alios Magiſtros Artium vel Bacchalaureos ſocios præficiat aliis lectionibus per ſtatuta requiſitis, eam laboris compenſationem illis tribuens quam Magiſter & major pars Sociorum æquum judicabit: prælectio humaniorum artium ſedulo fiet in magna vacatione, nec diſcipulorum quiſpiam diſputationibus moderabitur.

15. Vaſa argentea quorum non ſit quotidianus in aula uſus, in theſaurario reponentur, nec inde expromentur niſi illis admodum opus eſſe liquido apparebit. Quod ſi quando accidat, quamprimum rurſus recondantur. Pecunia Collegii ne ſit in cuſtodia Magiſtri, ſed in theſaurario, prout ſtatuta requirunt, indeq; duntaxat deſumatur cum præſens neceſſitas poſtulaverit.

16. Tam Socii quam Penſionarii, gradus in ſe ſuſcipere cogentur quamprimùm illis per ſtatuta Academiæ licuerit, & omnes ejuſdem Societatis intererunt problemati theologico, diebus Veneris, quando non licebit reſpondenti ſtatam cænam aliquam de induſtria contra legem & laudabilem conſuetudinem apparare. Nec patietur Præfectus quenquam diſputandi munus ſubterſugere ullo modo, niſi graviſſima de cauſa per Magiſtrum & majorem partem Sociorum approbenda.

17. Socii intra ſex dierum ſpatium poſt ſingulos menſes expletos quod debitum fuerit ſolvent Collegii Officiario ad id munus conſtituto, & Officiarius eodem tempore debitam Piſtoribus, Potificibus vel cuipiam alteri pecuniam ſolvet, nec quiſquam in Collegio commorabitur, qui Socium non habeat qui pro illius debito Collegio ſatisfaciat.

18. Conciones in Fundatricis veſtræ & Benefactorum memoriam unaquaq; anni quarta debite celebrabuntur ſecundum ſtatutum Academiæ.

19. Penſionarii in Collegium veſtrum non admittentur niſi ſecundum formam in ſtatutis veſtris deſcriptam, nec quiſpiam tenebitur græcæ lectioni audiendæ niſi conſtet eum aliquid inde emolumenti capere poſſe.

20. Commoditas venditarum ſylvarum & prædiorum ad firmam dimiſſorum & quicquid commodi percipi poſſit à piſtoribus & potificibus non ampliùs dividetur inter Magiſtrum & Socios, ſed in Collegii uſum cedet, quoad Honoratiſſimi hujus Academiæ Cancellarii authoritate ſecus conſtitutum fuerit.

21. Magiſter curabit ut omnes hæ injunctiones fideliter obſerventur ſub pæna expreſſa in ſtatuto Fundatricis de modo viſitandi.

NUMB.

NUMB. XVIII.

The Archbiſhop of Canterbury *to the Vicechancellor and Heads of the Univerſity of* Cambridge. *To ſtay the printing of a Book, called,* The Harmony of Confeſſions, &c. *An Original.*

To my very loving Friend, the Vicechancellor, &c.

Regiſt. Acad. Cantabr.

SALUTEM *in Chriſto.* I underſtand, that there is now in printing by the Printer of that Univerſity, a certain Book, called *Harmonia Confeſſionum Fidei* in *Engliſh*, tranſlated out of *Latin.* Which Book for ſome ſpecial Cauſes, was here rejected, and not allowed to be printed. Theſe are therefore to require you, that preſently upon receipt hereof, you cauſe the ſaid Book to be ſtayed from printing any further; and that nothing be don more therein, until you ſhall receive further Direction from me. And wheras there is Order taken of late by the Lords of the Council, that from henceforth no Book ſhall be imprinted, either in *London*, or in either of the Univerſities, unleſs the ſame ſhall be allowed, and Authorized by the Biſhop of *London*, or my ſelf, I do likewiſe require you to take ſpecial Care, that hereafter nothing be imprinted in that Univerſity of *Cambridge*, but what ſhall be authoriſed accordingly.

And ſo not doubting of your diligent Circumſpection herein, I commit you to the Tuition of Almighty God.

From my Houſe at *Croyden*, the 8th of *Auguſt*, 1586.

Your Loving Friend in Chriſt,

Jo. CANTUAR.

NUMB. XIX.

The Archbiſhop of Canterbury *to the Vicechancellor and Heads: To require Subſcription to the three Articles, of ſuch as ſhould be admitted Univerſity Preachers. An Original.*

SALUTEM *in Chriſto.* Foraſmuch as a general Order hath been taken that whoſoever ſhould be admitted to preach, ſhould firſt ſubſcribe to the three Articles, lately agreed upon, and confirmed by her Majeſtys Authority, theſe are to require you to take care, that you do not hereafter admit, either to be your Univerſities Preacher, or any other Preacher whatſoever in that Univerſity, unleſs he ſhall firſt ſubſcribe unto the ſaid Articles. Otherwiſe you ſhall give me Occaſion not only to make further Complaint, but alſo to call in queſtion your Authority, to admit ſo many Preachers: which how ſlender it is, I do well know. And ſo requiring you to have ſuch a ſpecial Regard hereof, as appertaineth, I commit you to the Tuition of Almighty God.

From my Houſe in *Lambehith*, the ſecond of *May*, 1586.

Your aſſured loving Friend.

Jo. CANTUAR.

NUMB.

NUMB. XX.

Petitions of the Univerſity of Cambridge; *For Quietneſs to be had with the Towneſmen. Delivered by Dr.* Perue *to the Lord* Burghley *their High Chancellor.* Feb. 25. 1586.

FOR that the Maior of *Cambridge*, with other of the Freemen of that Corporation, have made certain Order, that no Scholar, nor Scholars Servant ſhall have any Booths in *Sturbridge* Fair, nor receive any Commodity ſpringing to the Town: And alſo hath ſhewed otherwiſe lately great Ingratitude to the Univerſity; bending themſelves more contemptuouſly, and, as it appeareth, contentiouſly againſt the ſame, than they have don heretofore:

MSS. Academ.pen. me.

May it pleaſe your Lordſhip to addreſs your Letters to Mr. Vicechancellor and to the Heads, to give your Lordſhips Advice and Conſent, that they do take Order, that no College, Scholar or Scholars Servant, ſhall ſell, or let any Lands or Tenements to any Freeman of the Town of *Cambridge*, but onely to Scholars, Scholars Servants or Foreigners, without your Honours expreſs Conſent, and with the whole Conſent of the Body of the Univerſity, Regents, and Non-regents, nor ſhall buy any Cloth, Apparel, Victuals, or any other ſuch uſual and neceſſary Things, of any Freeman, without the like Conſent: as your Honour hath written heretofore.

2. *Item*, That if any Scholar, or Scholars Servant, or Servants, or Foreigner, taking to Farm any ſuch Houſe, Land or Tenement, do at any time afterward become a Freeman of the ſame Town: or ſhall bargain, let or ſet over the ſame, or any Part or Parcel therof, to any Freeman of the Town: that then the ſame Leaſe to ceaſe, and be utterly void, and fruſtrate; any Covenant, Clauſe, Article or Agreement in any ſuch Leaſe or Grant to the contrary notwithſtanding.

3. Wheras there is a Privilege to the Univerſity of long time, for the Proviſion of Corn and Victuals within the Compaſs of five Miles, which hath been little profitable unto the Univerſity, but unto the Inhabitants within five Miles; For that the Univerſity hath no Juſtices of the Peace within the ſaid five Miles out of the Univerſity; beſides divers other Incommodities, that the ſaid Univerſity doth receive, by reaſon that for the moſt part all the Juſtices within the ſaid Compaſs of five Miles be ſworn to the Town of *Cambridg*, and Freemen of the ſame: May it therefore pleaſe your Lordſhip to move my Lord Chancellor, that the Vicechancellor for the Time being, with certain others of the Heads of the Colleges, which have any Livings within the ſaid Compaſs of five Miles, as Dr. *Perne*, Dr. *Bell*, Dr. *Bynge*, and Mr. *Ellis*; may be in Commiſſion of the Peace, for the Shire and County of *Cambridge*.

4. Whereas the Town of *Cambridge* hath drawn their Book for *Sturbridge* Fair, not only to the Prejudice of the Univerſity, and other Corporations for their own private Gains, but alſo to the great Abuſing of her Majeſtys great Goodneſs ſhewed to them in this ſaid Grant of *Sturbridge* Fair; the Forfeiture wherof they do not acknowledge, nor the great Benefit therof, to procede from her Majeſty, but by Right of certain ſurmiſed free Grants: the which they neither do, nor can ſhew the ſame, as Mr. *Solicitor* did plainly declare unto them: It may pleaſe your Honour thereſore, that the ſaid Book of the ſaid Town of *Cambridge* for *Sturbridge* Fair may not paſs without the Allowance of the Queens Solicitor. For that Mr. Atturney is of the Fee and Counſil of the ſaid Town of *Cambridge*; as he ſaith himſelf.

5. The Univerſity humbly deſireth your Honour, to be a Means to her Majeſty, that there be a *Proviſo* put into their ſaid Book, that it ſhall not be lawful for them, nor their Heirs, by vertue of her Majeſtys ſaid Grant of *Sturbridge* Fair, to make any Law, Conſtitution or Ordinance concerning the Booths in *Sturbridge* Fair, contrary to the common Laws of this Realm. But that any Scholar, or Scholars Servant may lawfully buy for their Mony, or receive by Gift, or other lawful Means, any of the ſaid Booths; as any other of her Majeſtys Subjects may do, according to the ſaid Laws.

NUMB. XXI.

An Inventory of the Mony and Jewels of Anne *Dutches of* Somerſet: *Taken after her Death* by the *Queens Order*, by *John Wolley, one of the Privy Council, and* John Forteſcue, *Maſter of her Majeſtys great Wardrobe.*

*MSS.*Burghl. 1. A Great Chain of Pearle and Gold enamelled, with Knotts. 2. A Carkenet of Gold and Pearles with Knotts, with a Pendent Sapphire, with a fair Pearle annexed. 3. A Carkenet of Pearl, and Padlocks of Gold. 4. A Chain of fair Pearls, furniſhed with Pipes of Gold, enamelled with Black. 5. A plain Chain of Gold with ſmall Links. 6. A Pomander Chain with ſmall Beads of Pomander, and true-Loves of Pearl, and many ſmall Pearl to furniſh the ſame, with Pendants of Mother of Pearl, and a little Acorn appendant. 7. A Salt of Gold like a Bell. 8. A Faucon of Mother of Pearl, furniſhed with Diamonds and Rubies, ſtanding upon a ragged Staff of fair Diamonds and Rubies. 9. A great Jacinct, garniſhed with Flowers of Gold and Pearl, with a leſs Jacinct on the Backſide, with a rough Pearl appendant. 10. A Tablet of Gold of a Story, furniſhed with Diamonds and Rubies, with a Pearl appendant. 11. A Tablet of Gold made like an Artichoke, black and blew enamelled: 12. An Agate, ſet in Gold, garniſhed with ſmall Pearls, with a Pearl appendant. 13. A Book of Gold with Artichokes of Day-Work upon black Velvet. 14. A Pair of Flaggon Braſlets of Gold plain: In each Braſlet a Jacinct. 15. A Pair of Braſlets of Gold, wrought with eſcalop Shells with hollow Work. 16. A double Rope of Pearl, of one Ell long. 17. A fair Pendent of Mother of Pearl, flouriſhed with Gold like an S. 18. Twenty eight ſmall Rubies unſet. 19. Three Pearls wherof two Pendent. 20. A double Rope of Pearl of one yard, 3 quarters Long. 21. A Chain of Pearl of a bigger ſort of four double. 22. A Lilly Pot of Gold, with a Sea-water Stone in the midſt with two Pearls pendant. 23. Four fair Emeralds ſet in Collets of Lead. 24. A little Tablet of Gold enamelled with Gold, with a Pearl appendant. 25. A Pillar of Gold, garniſhed with eight Diamonds. 25. 19 Amethiſts: wherof one great one. 26. A fair Jewel of Gold, ſet with Diamonds on both Sides, bordered with ſmall Pearl. 27. A great Tablet of Gold, enamelled black and white, garniſhed the one ſide with an Agate, and Six Rubies, and on the other ſide with twelve Diamonds. 28. A Tablet of Gold curiouſly wrought, ſet with ſix fair Diamonds, and three fair Pearls; wherof one pendent. 29. A Tablet of Gold, garniſhed round with ſmall Pearl, with a great Ballaſt in the midſt, and a Pearl pendant. 30. A fair ſquare Tablet of Gold, like and H with four Diamonds, and a Rock Ruby, or Ballaſt in the midſt, garniſhed with Pearl, and a Pearl pendant. 31. A Sopertakle Caſe of Gold. 32. A Chain of Gold enamelled black. 33. A Book of Gold enamelled black. 34. A Spoon of Gold, enamelled black. 35. A Bodkin of Gold with a Clawes in the End, enamelled black. 36. Two Pieces of an Unicornes Horn, in a red Taffata Purſe. 37. A folding Spoon of Gold. 38. A little Signet of Gold with her Graces own Creſt.

Beſides this in Gold: In ſeveral ſingle Purſes, either of Leather or Sattin, or Silk, in one Coffer. 2200 £. in Gold in ſingle Baggs. In another 1500 £. in Gold. And in another 1500 £. in Gold. In all. 5200 £.

Jewells more.

1. A Confect box of Gold like Scallop Shells. 2. A Pair of Bracelets, laced with Beugle. 3. The Pearls, in number four ſcore and eight. 4. A Pair of Bracelets of Coral, cut like Acorns, laced with ſmall Pearl. 5. In a little black Box, Six Rings ſet with Diamonds, ſome leſs, and ſome bigger. 6. In another little black Box, two Rings of Gold: one ſet with a fair Emerald; and the other with a Ruby. 7. In another Box two Rings; the one a Topis, the other a ſmall Ruby. 8. In another little Box, one little Ring with a Diamond. 9. In a little white Box, divers ſorts of courſe Pearl.

NUMB. XXII.

Howland, *the Biſhop of* Peterburghs *Letter to the Lord Treaſurer; requiring ſome Account of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioces. With his Ceriificate concerning ſome of them.*

YOUR Letter, Right Honorable, of the 4th of *September* I received the 8th of the ſame Month. For your great Care wherin, for the due Adminiſtration of Juſtice, as I thank God, deſiring him to bleſs your good Purpoſe, with all other your Honorable Studies for the Peace of his Church and this Realm; ſo I am heartily ſorry that I am not able to perform that Duty herein, which you have ſo lovingly laid upon me, and I would moſt willingly diſcharge: but by reaſon of Shortneſs of Time, and want of the Knowledge, as yet, of my Country, with the great Diverſity in Reports of men, (even by good men whom I have herein uſed) in nouriſhing their own Humours, and partial Conceits; by means whereof I know not what to write. For as I would be loth, in this Matter of ſo great Import, to commend any man that ſhall not be found fit for the Place, ſo to diſable any whom I do not know, upon any Mans Report, it were a great Raſhneſs in me, and a greater Injury unto them. For Epiſt. Epiſcop. pen. me.

Turpius ejicitur, quàm non admittitur Hoſpes.

So that I would be an humble Suitor unto your Lordſhip, not for my ſelf alone, but for the reſt of my Brethren (unto whom you have committed the like Charge) that ſome more time might be granted; whereby we may with better Aſſurance, (than by the Information of one or two) deliver that which may be for our Credit, and Diſcharge of our Duties herein. Leſt that we be deceived, as ſome of the Juſtices of Aſſize are ſaid to have been. So ſhall the Thing being well don, be but once don. The Want wherof hitherto (Pardon, my good Lord, if in the dutiful Love unto your Lordſhip, I lay open my own Folly, in telling you what I think and hear) and the often putting in and out of the Commiſſion gives Occaſion of more Speeches, than are convenient; the more earneſt I am herein and humbly deſire, for that I underſtand your Lordſhip hath taken the Cauſe in Hand, that as in all other Things you have don, So in this alſo upon ſound Information, you may lay a firm and honorable Foundation. Wherin alſo I beſeech your Lordſhip to go forward, aſſuring your Lordſhip, that altho' you have don many things of very great Import to the Benefit of the Realm, which all men do acknowledg, yet for the ſound ſettling of the whole Realm in firm Obedience to their Sovereign, and for the Preſervation of Love between every Member, you could never take (I ſpeak like a Fool but yet as I think) a more honourable Cauſe in Hand, and more acceptable to the People; who think it their greateſt Good or Hurt, to be under good or evil Juſtices. But the putting in Execution of this, I take to be the greateſt Labour, and to require a longer Time, both for the Choiſe of the Perſons to be, as *Jethro* counſilled, *Men of Courage, fearing God, Men dealing truly, hating Covetouſnes.* And therefore not to ſail in a needy Veſſel. As alſo for their Seat and Abode, wherby every Part of the Shire may have their needful Uſe of them, to their beſt Convenience, and leaſt Charges. Wheras being a great Number in ſome Part of the Shire on a Plumpe; and in ſome other needful Place few or none; it is rather accounted, (and ſo uſed) as a Countenance to the Parties, than a Benefit to the Country. Which if your Lordſhip can redreſs, in placing a good Phyſician neer that Patient, you ſhall do a comfortable Act, and bring the Commiſſion to its right Uſe.

But leſt I ſhould be thought to have uſed theſe Speeches to cover my Negligence, and for that I could not do all that I would to have don, therfore nothing, I have ſent herewith unto your Lordſhip the Names of ſuch as are in the Commiſſion in *Northamptonſhire*, (For *Rutland* and the *Soke* ſtand as they did) and of ſuch as are lately left out, as I received from the Clark of the Peace; with a ſhort Note, what Opinion ſome in the Country have of them: wherby your Lordſhip will find, as no great Cauſe to reſtore them which are out, ſo as ſmall to retain thoſe that are ſtill in Commiſion.

For my own ſelf, this only I have to ſay, referring my Cauſe to your Honorable and favourable Conſideration ; that tho' I acknowledg my ſelf unworthy of that Place, yet ſeeing it hath pleaſed God and her Majeſty, by your onely Means, to place me in this Biſhopric, it was thought ſtrange unto many, that I ſhould be left onely of all other Biſhops, out of the Commiſſion in my Dioces. What the Cauſe is, I know not, that twice or thrice before, I was wrong named *Edmund*; and now altogether left out. Wherof as I would gladly know the Cauſe, if there be any, ſo I humbly beſeech your Lordſhip to vouchſafe me that Countenance, to the better ſtrengthning of my neceſſary Duties, which now I am often, through Want therof, compelled to let paſs to my Grief and Diſcredit. For that my ordinary Juriſdiction is over-ſhort, and not able to reach to the Execution of them. And recommending your Lordſhip to the Protection of the Almighty, I reſt

Your Lordſhips at Commandment,

Caſtor, the 17. *Octob.* 1587.

RICH. PETRIBURG.

The Names of the Juſtices of the Peace in Northamptonſhire *: With the Biſhops Notes at each of them.*

EDWARD *Griffin, Armig.* A Man of no great Capacity or Religion. And whoſe Wife is a great Recuſant.

Edward Watſon, Armig. A Man ſuſpected in Religion.

Edward Cope, Armig. An honeſt Gentleman: but that he doth over-greatly countenance ſuch Preachers as do impugne all Orders eſtabliſhed. Which ſome others alſo in this Commiſſion do.

George Lynne, Armig. An antient Juſtice, but yet thought through Age to be eaſily over-ruled.

Tobias Chauncy, Armig. A Man of ſmall Hability in Learning; but yet, as I hear, favoured greatly by the Earl of *Warwick.* By whoſe Means he is thought to be put in again: wheras he was with others put out of Commiſſion.

The Juſtices of Peace out of Commiſſion.

Robert Lane, Miles. A Man not hable, through Infirmity of his Body.
——— *Elmer, Armig.* A Man likewiſe not hable by reaſon of Infirmities.
Val. Knightly, Armig. His Father in Commiſſion.
Tho. Harbie, Armig. } Theſe two I cannot know, but that Men ſay, they
Tho. Paget, Armig. } are not greatly needfull.
Jacobus Ellis LL. D. Chancellor to the late Biſhop. But now he hath no Abode in the Shire.
——— *Clark de Crowtor, Armig.* This Man is well reported for his Sufficiency: but that his Wife is a Recuſant.

In Comit. Rutland.

Kenelmus Digbie. A Man, whoſe Houſe, as your Lordſhip knoweth, hath been notably touched; and is thought to be not ſound himſelf in Religion.

Henry Herenden, Armig. A Man ſuſpected in Religion and thought to be a Nouriſher of Suits, by reaſon of his Profeſſion, being a Lawyer.

NUMB. XXIII.

Herbert *Biſhop of* Hereford *to the Lord Treaſurer, Certifying him of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioces.*

Right Honorable and my very good Lord.

Lit. Epiſcop.

ALL thoſe Points ſet down in your Lordſhips Letter, concerning Juſtices of the Peace within this Dioces, either lately left out of the Commiſſion, or meet to be left out hereafter, or to be put into the ſame again; I have, according to my Duty, enquired after, with ſuch Circumſpection and Diligence, as my ſmall Acquaintance yet in the Country, the little Knowledge of mens Diſcretions and Secreſie, ſome urgent and neceſſary Occaſions, and the ſhortneſs of Time, would ſuffer me. For your Lordſhips Letter, dated the 2. of *Septem.* came not until the 17th of the ſame Month. Since which Time I have had two Commiſſions ſit upon; the one between me and *Silvan Score,* [Son or Relation to Biſhop *Scory,* this Biſhops immediate Predeceſſor;] the other, between me and *Richard Abington*: both of good Weight.

But if by reaſon of theſe Hindrances, any Want of this Service ſhall be found, I will by Gods Leave, as I ſhall come by more Knowledge, ſupply the ſame with all convenient Speed. For I certainly perſuade my ſelf, that this your Lordſhips Care and Courſe (if it ſhall be anſwerable accordingly) will in a ſhort ſpace Work a very ſenſible and great Effect, beneficial both to the State and true Religion. Which I muſt, with the reſt of my Brethren, acknowledg my ſelf moſt bound to ſeek for, and to the uttermoſt of my Power to promote.

I. In the mean time therefore it may pleaſe your Lordſhip to be certified of thoſe that were left out of Commiſſion in the County of *Hereford,* I am informed, that

1. *Rich. Tomkins*, Eſq; were meet to be again put into the ſame: being a Man very well affected in Religion; a good Juſtitiar, of ſufficient Livelihood, and convenient Place for Service.
2. *Robert Vaughan*, Eſq; alſo for like Reſpects.

II. Of thoſe that are remaining in Commiſſion; and for the Cauſes, mentioned in your Lordſhips Letter, meet to be left out therof; I am informed, that theſe might be ſpared.

1. *Roger Bodenham* Eſq;. For his Wife is ſaid to be a Recuſant.
2. *Rich Minors.* Thought to favour Recuſants.
3. *Walter Baskervile.* For his Wife is a Recuſant. And he is now departed this Life.
4. *Humfrey Baskervile.* For he is not thought well affected in Religion, and greatly noted, and touched for Incontinency: being alſo aged, and not meet to travail.

III. Of Fathers, which have their Sons in Commiſſion; I hear not of any: Saving, that Mr. *Comptroller* hath his Son Mr. *Everard Crofte*, and his Son in Law, Mr. *Wigmore* in Commiſſion. And Mr. *Edward Crofte* His Sons in Law, Mr. *Scudamore* and Mr. *Rudhal*.

IV. Of ſuch as anſwer not her Majeſty after the Rate of 20 £. Land, or like Value in Goods, there are none as far as I can learn, but onely Dr. *Bevans*, my Chancellor, whom I think, in reſpect of the better executing of his Office, meet to be continued.

Touching the Juſtices of any other County within this Dioces I have not to certify your Lordſhip any thing, Becauſe I underſtand not any of them to be other than according to the Meaning of the Articles ſet down by your Lordſhip. Only I wiſh, that *William Hopton*, Eſq; (meet in all reſpects, before noted in others to be put into Commiſſion for the County of *Salop*) might be named in the ſame as one that the Place and Circuit, where he dwelleth hath need of. And might it pleaſe your Lordſhip alſo to name Mr. *John Watkins*, Dean of *Hereford*, among the Juſtices of the County of *Hereford*. I doubt not but as I take him to be every way fit for the Room, ſo the naming of him would be found, both an Eaſe, and Benefit; eſpecially to ſuch of the County as be inhabiting neer to the City, wherein mine Opinion ſome Want is of ſuch an one.

And thus have I ſimply and faithfully (as the Matter requireth in anſwer to your Lordſhips Letter) uttered mine Opinion in all the Points mentioned in the ſame, according to ſuch credible Report, as hath been made unto me: not doubting but your Lordſhip will ſo uſe the ſame, as it may beſt further that Good, which your Lordſhip ſheweth your ſelf only to reſpect; and by occaſion of any Effect, as eſpecially in this Country, where I am yet a Stranger, and muſt live, I have need to beware of. And ſo I humbly commend your good Lordſhip to Almighty God. From *Whitburn*, this VIIth of *Octob.* 1587.

Your Honour to command,

HARB. HEREFORD.

NUMB.

NUMB XXIV:

Freake *Biſhop of* Wigorn *to the Lord Treaſurer: In anſwer to his, to enquire of the Juſtices of Peace in his Dioces. With the Biſhops Certificate concerning them.*

My Duty unto your good Lordſhip humbly remembred,

WHERE upon an intended Reformation of the late renewed Commiſſion for the Peace within this Realm, upon more deliberate Advertiſements given in that Behalf, it hath pleaſed your Lordſhip to inform your Lordſhip to inform your ſelf privately by my Reports of the Conditions and Livings of the Juſtices of Peace within my Dioces, as well ſuch as be continued in Commiſſion of the Peace, as thoſe which be left out of the ſame; I have with all Diligence and Secreſie made Inquiſition accordingly, to give your Lordſhip the beſt Light I can therin. Ubi ſupra.

Firſt, Therefore in Generality to ſignify mine Opinion and knowledg of the Juſtices of Peace in this County of *Wigorn*, continued in Commiſſion, I do obſerve ſome Weakneſs in that Number: Divers of them being but ſuperficial, either for Advice, or for Execution of any weighty Affaires of the Country. And for Matter of Religion, albeit they are conformable enough, and forward in outward Obedience and Services; yet do I not perceive any ſuch fervent Zele indeed in ſome of them, as I could wiſh, or that may give me Cauſe to aſſure my ſelf of their conſtant Affection upon all Events and Mutations. And truly, my Lord, they do cary themſelves modeſtly in the Adminiſtration of Juſtice, and are the principalleſt Gentlemen for Living and Countenance that be in the Shire: being at hand for all Services, by reaſon of their Reſidence in the ſame. Againſt whom I have not heard nor do know any material Objection, either for hindring the State of Religion, or nouriſhing any Suits by Colour of Law.

Secondly, For ſome of thoſe that be left out of the Commiſſion, I am not able to accuſe them of Recuſancy, albeit ſome of their Wives be Recuſants. Which Exception ſet apart, they are otherwiſe, for Wiſdom, Livelihood, Reputation and diſcrete Government, of the beſt and meeteſt men that were in that Aſſociation. And as this Country never laboured, ſithence my Time, of any Superfluous Company in Commiſſion, ſo cannot the Number now remaining therin be conveniently diminiſhed in my Opinion; the ſame being ſo decreaſed by the Perſons excluded. And if there were any Need of new Supply, this Country, to my judgment, yieldeth ſmall Choiſe of ſufficient men in all Points to bear Rule and Authority.

But for the like particular Inſtructions touching the Juſtices in *Warwickſhire* (wherof ſome Part is within my Juriſdiction,) I cannot ſo preciſely ſatisfy your Lordſhip, becauſe I have not converſed with them in Services of the Country, as I have with the Juſtices in this Shire. Howbeit I have ſent thither to be informed of the Particularities of your Lordſhips Letter. And ſo ſoon as I ſhall hear from thence, I will certify the ſame.

And for your Lordſhips more particular Information of the Conditions of both Sorts in this Shire, and their Several Names in the Subſidy Books, I have made a Calendar therof encloſed herein. Which I deſire may be conceled with my Letter, by reaſon of the Dependancy or Diſpleſure on this Service; and in that alſo I have been the more liberal in reporting Things; preſuming upon your Lordſhips promiſed Secreſy. Wherein repoſing my ſelf, I humbly recommend your good Lordſhip to Gods Tuition. From *Hartlebury* Caſtle, the VIth of *October*, 1587.

Your Lordſhips humbly at Commandment,

Edmund Wigorn.

A Calandar, containing the Names of the Juſtices of Peace within the Dioces of Wigorn, *as well ſuch as be now in Commiſſion, as of thoſe that are lately left out of the ſame. Together with the ſeveral Valuations of every of them in the Subſidy Book, Conditions and Affections in Religion, in* Worceſterſhire.

Conditions and Affections in Religion.	*Juſtices continued in Commiſſion.*	*Valuation of the Subſidy.*
He is *Cuſtos Rotulorum*, and accounted wiſe.	Sr. *John Littleton*, Kt.	66 13 4
A Gentleman well conditioned.	Mr. *Guilleel Littleton*, his Son.	I cannot learn his Valuation.
A good wiſe Gentleman.	*John Packington*, Eſq;	In Lands 50 £.
Commended forwardneſs in Religion, but not ſo for Diſcretion.	*John Ruſſel*, Eſq;	40 £.
Very honeſt, wiſe and religious.	*Francis Walſh*, Eſq;	In Lands 13 6 8
Very honeſt and religious.	*Gualter Blunt*, Eſq;	In Lands 13 6 8
I think him to be religious.	*Edmund Horwel*, Eſq;	In Lands 20 £.
Old and paſt Service.	*John Knotteſworth*, Eſq;	In Lands 15 £.
A Man very meet for his Experience in Service.	*Edmund Colles*, Eſq;	In Lands 16 £.
A good Gentleman.	*Tho. Foliate*, Eſq;	In Land 20 £.
I think him to be religious.	*Wil. Sheldon*, Eſq;	In Land 13 6 8
A very honeſt Gentleman.	*Joh. Waſhborn*, Eſq;	In Land 13 6 8
A good ſufficient Gentleman for Service.	*Geo. Winter*, Eſq;	In Land 30 £.
A Man meet and able to ſerve well.	*Fra. Braſe*, Eſq;	In Land 13 6 8
An honeſt peaceable Gentleman.	*Joh. Rows*, Eſq;	In Land 20 £.
I think him to be very wiſe, honeſt and ſound in Religion.	*Arthur Saloway*, Eſq;	In Land 13 6 8

Gentlemen left out of Commiſſion in the County of Worceſterſhire.

Conditions and Affections in Religion.	*Juſtices left out of the Commiſſion.*	*Valuations in the Subſidy.*
Left out by reaſon of his Office. He is both wiſe and Wealthy.	*Will Child* Eſq; High Sheriff of *Warwickſhire.*	*In terris* 16 *£.*
Both of them very wiſe, honeſt and religious.	Sr. *Henry Bartley* Kt. *Miles Sandes*, Eſq;	They lived out of the ſhire, and therefore not ceſſed in the ſame.
His Wife a Recuſant, himſelf very wiſe, and a Man of good Sufficiency.	*Raphe Shelden*, Eſq;	In Land 60 *£.*
His Wife a Recuſant; She is now Lord of *Aburgavenies* daughter. Himſelf a Man not Inferior in Wiſdome to the reſt.	*Edward Blunt*, Eſq;	In Land 16 6 8
His Wife a Recuſant, Himſelf an honeſt Gentleman.	*Fra. Clare*, Eſq;	In Land 10 6 8
He is commended to be both wiſe and religious and dwelleth within the Shire, as I have heard.	*Giles Read*, Eſq;	In Land. His Valuation I cannot learn.
A Man of no great Account.	*Edward Pitte*, Eſq;	In Land 10 *£.*

NUMB. XXV.

The Biſhop of Norwich *to the Lord Treaſurer; Concerning the Juſtices in his Dioces and their Qualifications.*

Right Honorable,

Ubi ſupra.

YOUR Lordſhips Letters, concerning the Juſtices of Peace, wherof your Honour requireth to be advertiſed, came very late unto my Hand, with ſome ſuſpicion of the opening of them; being uſual almoſt in this Place, either to intercept ſuch Letters, or elſe to make a Stay of the Delivery. By which means I have had but a little Time to enquire their Hability to maintain that Calling, and leſs Conference in reſpect of the Weightineſs of this Cauſe, to ſet down perfectly ſure Grounds of their Forwardneſs in Religion. For the Parties themſelves are cloſe and prudent; pretending outwardly many ſignes to further Religion, howſoever inwardly they ſtand affected. Neverthéleſs I have penned truely unto your Honour my Opinion and Underſtanding in this your Lordſhips Requeſt, ſo far as I can be at this Time informed; or if the Voice of the Country may afford any Certainty. Wherupon I have briefly collected and ſent your Honour here encloſed, the Names, Places and Conditions of them. Which if it be not ſo perfect as your Honour doth expect, I deſire to be excuſed; for that the Commiſſion of Peace is ſo often altered, and daily renewed.

Furthermore, I pray your good Lordſhip, uſe this my Report for your Honours own Advertiſement: becauſe the Knowledg of ſuch Information is offenſive: and Truth hath many Enemies, as knoweth the Almighty. To whoſe Protection I commit your Lordſhip: praying unto him daily to multiply your Lordſhips days with Health and Encreaſe of Honour. *Ludham*, the XI of Octob. 1587.

Your Lordſhips moſt aſſured at
Command in the Lord.

EDMUND NORWICH.

The Certificate of the Juſtices of Peace ſent in by the Biſhop is contained in a large Sheet of Paper, intitled;

A brief Report of the Juſtices of Peace in the County of Norfolk.

Then follow in three Columnes, their *Names*, their *Places of Abode*, and their *Conditions*.

The firſt Names are the Earl of *Suſſex*, and the Biſhop of *Norwich*, *Harry* Lord *Crumwel*; His Place *North Elman*, and *Edward Coke*, Recorder, of whom it is thus certified, *Theſe are well known to your Lordſhip.*

The two next Names are Sir *Roger Woodhouſe*, and Sir *William Paſton*. Of theſe the Character ſet down is, *Obſervers of Laws.*

Then follow Sir *Arthur Heviningham*, Sir *Drue Drury*, Sir *Nicolas Bacon*, Sir *John Payton*, Sir *Harry Woodhouſe*, Sir *Edward Clere*, Dealers in Counſilſhip, Sir *Will. Heydon*, *Nathaniel Bacon*, *Baſingborn Gaudie*, *William Benerbaſſet*, Now rateo only to the Value of 20 £. *vere Harry Gaudre*, the Son of Sir *Tho. Gawdie*. The Conditions of all theſe ſet down, *Favourers of Religion.*

Then follow the Names of *Tho. Lovel*, *Herry Doylie*, *Tho. Towſend*, *Will. Rugg*, *Nicolas Hare*, *Clement Paſton*, and four more. Their Characters, *Suſpected*, and *reckoned to be backward* in *Religion.*

Sir *Robert Southwel*, Kt. a young man, not experienced. Whoſe Aſſociats for the moſt part, are *Popiſh.*

Two more young Juſtices, whoſe Fathers are in the Commiſſion of Peace.

Three more, wherof one is *Harrie Yelverton*; *Popiſh.* Out of the Commiſſion. And yet there is no Want of them.

Will. Greſham, and *John Reppes*; Late Juſtices. *Humfrey Gibbon*, Rich, but of no Religion.

Miles Hubbard; Sound in Religion, and very ſufficient, *Robert Kemp* Aged, yet religious. *Thomas Fearmer*; Obſerver of Law, and ſufficient. Theſe three were put out: and two yet ſo remain.

Memorandum, For their Wealths, and Habilities, either all or the moſt part of them, are ſufficient to maintain that Charge and Calling: But they differ in Religion, and are not ſo ſound and forward.

NUMB.

NUMB. XXVI.

The Biſhop of Wincheſter *to the Lord Treaſurer: His Letter and Report; Concerning the Juſtices of Peace in His Dioces. And chiefly in* Hampſhire.

Lit. Epiſcopales.pen.me.

IT may pleaſe your Lordſhip to underſtand, that *Hampſhire* is parted into Seven Diviſions. Which indeed cauſeth Diviſion oftentimes in the Government therof. For that the Juſtices in each Diviſion govern in the ſame, without intermeddling the one with the other. And ſeldome times meet together with the Reſidue for a Conference touching the common State; no not at the Quarter Seſſions. Wherby divers times there is ſome ſlackneſs in Service.

For your Lordſhips better underſtanding of the Things which your Letters principally mention, I have encloſed herein a Scedule, noting the Names of thoſe Juſtices that remain in Commiſſion in each Diviſion, and alſo of the Reſidue, that were left out in the laſt Commiſſion; which be to the Number of 7 or 8. Which in my Opinion, under Correction of better Information, may be well ſpared, in reſpect of divers of thoſe Notes which your Lordſhip layeth down in your Letters.

Onely Mr. *Jephſon*, who dwelleth within the Diviſion of *Alton*, I underſtand to be a very ſufficient man in all reſpects; ſaving that, I know not for what Cauſes, he hath withdrawn himſelf from all Service, either public, or particular in that Office. And therefore I think he was by ſome Information left out of the laſt Commiſſion. And yet therefore he, or ſome other, would of neceſſity be added in that Part. For that Diviſion, being one of the greateſt, hath only Sir *Richard Norton* remaining in it. Who in this laſt aſſeſſing of the Subſidy, hath none to joyn with him; but was fain to entreat ſome other, dwelling out of that Diviſion. If Mr. *Jephſon* be added again, he would be by ſome Letters provoked to attend that Service, more than beforetime he hath don.

Beſides thoſe Juſtices contained in the Scedule, here be ſundry others in Commiſſion, and not dwelling in the Shire, neither coming hither to any Service; of which Number ſome be in reſpect of their State of Honour; ſome in reſpect of their Service about the Prince. As for Example of the latter ſort, Dr. *Dale*, *Maſter* of the *Requeſts*; Mr. *Killigrew*, Mr. *Fines*.

Mr. *Kirby*, who remaineth in Commiſſion, and dwelleth in the Diviſion of *Chriſts Church*: how he came into the Commiſſion, I know not. Neither is he a Man of any Value in Subſtance, either Dexterity in Government: Nether doth he come commonly to any Meeting; &c. I cannot note any of them to be backward in Religion, but one whoſe Wife and Daughters be Recuſants. Himſelf never communicated, ſince the Queens Time, that is, *Richard White*, Eſq. ——— Dated the 2 of Octob. 1587.

NUMB. XXVII.

Godwin, *Biſhop of* Bath *and* Wells *to the Lord Treaſurer. His Letter and Certificate concerning the Juſtices in his Dioces.*

Ubi ſupra.

AFTER my due Commendations unto your Lordſhip, to your Letters of the 2. of *September*, this mine Anſwer. Upon Conference with the Truſty, I ſhew your Lordſhip, that of ſuch as be removed out of the Commiſſion, Mr. *Sam. Norton*, Mr. *Anthony Scutt*, and Mr. *Watkins*, being ſound in the Faith, and meet for their Abilities in the Places of their Abode, being very convenient; eſpecially, ſince the Death of Sir *John Horner*; are ſurely very fit men to be replaced.

Of ſuch as be left in Commiſſion, I think Sir *Jhon Sydnam* and *John Lancaſter*, to be unworthy of the Place, on theſe Conſiderations: Sir *Jhon Sydnams* Lady is a Recuſant; his eldeſt Sons Wife a Recuſant; and ſuſpected to be maried at a Maſs. *Jhon Lancaſter*, of all honeſt men taken to be an Enemy to the Truth. And for the ſame once expelled *Grays Inn*. His Father and Mother *Lady-Matin* Folks. One of his beloved Brothers a Seminary at *Rhemes*: His Wifes Father no Recuſant, but backward in Religion. And ſo is all his Alliance: and more countenanced by his Place. His Hability too ſmal: that at this laſt rating in the Subſidy refuſed to be ceſſed at 10 £. Lands.

Thus heartily thanking your Lordſhip for the good Opinion yee have conceived of me, that yee would truſt me in ſo weighty a Cauſe; wherin I have, and ever will, deal without Affection, I humbly take leave, wiſhing to your Lordſhip all Health of Body and Mind, long to endure.

From *Bunwoll*, Octob. 2. 1587. By,

Your Honours aſſured in the Lord,

THOMAS B. and WELLS.

NUMB. XXVIII.

Sandys, *Archbiſhop of* York *to the Lord Treaſurer. His Judgment of the Juſtices of Peace in* Yorkſhire, *&c.*

My Honourable good Lord,

Ubi ſupra.

I Have conſidered of your Letters and will anſwer your Requeſt therin with all Faithfulneſs. I have made one Gentleman onely acquainted with the Matter: a Man of great Integrity and good Skil, in all his Actions governed with an upright Conſcience: and a Man, *qui poteſt tacere*, Sc. F. P.

I have noted in a Paper, herein encloſed, ſuch as in mine Opinion may be well put out of Commiſſion, and given ſome Reaſons, Why. As alſo ſuch as are fit to be put in the Commiſſion again, of late put out. Herein I am not overruled with partial Affection, but directed by a good Conſcience, for the good of the Commonwealth: referring the whole to your wiſe and Honorable Conſideration.

In mine Opinion ſuch as are put out are well put out, and worthily; ſaving onely Three; Which I have noted in my Paper. I deal with no Knights, leſt I ſhould be noted to follow Affection; but I aſſure you ſome of them be of the baddeſt Sort: unworthy to govern, being ſo far out of Order themſelves. One Man hath brought in the moſt Part, who will be offended, if any be brought in without him. And to ſpeak the Truth, altho' there be many Gentlemen in *Yorkſhire*, yet very hard Choiſe of fit Men for that Purpoſe. *Nam omnes quærunt quæ ſua ſunt, non quæ ſpectant ad bonum Reip.* And if none ſhould be in Commiſſion but ſuch as are XX £. in Subſidy, you ſhould put out half of thoſe that be in, as I ſuppoſe. And thus I commend your good Lordſhip to the Direction of Gods Holy Spirit. *Biſhopthorpe*, the 27 of *Septem.* 1587.

Your Lordſhips bounden,

E. EBOR.

Poſtſcript.

POSTSCRIPT.

Straker, the Promoter, tryed at theſe Aſſizes at *York*: and there adjudged to the Pillory, for Compoſition contrary to the Statute; affirmed there in open Court, that he had brought in one ſitting to the Council at *York* 80 £. odd Mony. If thus much by one Promotor, how much by all the reſt? And if thus much at one Sitting, how much at all the Sittings?

Certificate touching the Juſtices of Peace in the Counties of Yorkſhire *and* Nottinghamſhire.

Yorkſhire Juſtices at this preſent in Commiſſion.

WEST-RIDING.

R. L. i. e. *Rob. Leo.* HE is a notable open Adulterer. One that giveth great Offence; and will not be reformed. He uſeth his Authority as well to work private Diſpleſure, as to ſerve other mens Tournes. A very bad Man, and one that doth no good. Better put out than kept in.

P. S. i. e. *Peter Stanley.* A Man noted to be a great Fornicator. Of ſmall Wiſdome, and leſs Skill. One that is little in Subſidy. Brought in onely to ſerve Tournes. He hangeth on the Brow at all Times, and in all Things. Ever at Commandment without further Reſpect. A Man of none Account.

T. W. i. e. *Tho. Wentworth.* A very ſenſeleſs Blockead: Ever wronging; and wronging his poor Neighbours. Being a great Graine-Man of himſelf. He bought in the beginning of laſt Year in every Market, ſo much as he could; and heaped it up in his Houſes to ſel againſt the Deareſt. He dependeth wholly upon him that brought him in: and will ſerve all Tournes. If you look into the Subſidy Book, you ſhall find him little there.

J. R. i. e. *Jam. Rither* This Man is noted to be a ſoure, ſubtil Papiſt; and brought into Commiſſion, in reſpect thereof. Ready to hinder any Matter, that ſhall touch any Papiſt. He dependeth upon Sir *Tho. Farefax*, to make good his evil Cauſes. A Man unprofitable for the Common wealth, and full of Contention.

G. W. i. e. *George Woodrof.* His Wife is an obſtinate Recuſant; and of long time hath been. One that doth very much Hurt. An Argument that he is not well affected himſelf. Such men as have ſuch Wives are thought very unfit to ſerve in theſe our Times.

B. S. i. e. *Brian Stapleton.* The Man is noted to be a great Papiſt. And ſo is his eldeſt Son. He maketh ſmall Abode in this Country. He liveth at *London*, and keepeth company with Sir *Robert Stapleton*. He keepeth no Houſe, having no Wife.

EAST-RIDING.

H. C. i. e. *Henry Conſtable*, K. He is Sheriff of his Shire this year; but was in Commiſſion before, and looketh for to be in again. His Wife is a moſt obſtinate Recuſant, and will not be reformed by any

Perſuaſion, or yet by Coertion. Her Example is very hurtful.

F. A. i. e. *Francis Alford.* This Man liveth much at *London*. He hath no Wife. A Man of ſmall Living; leſs Skill; of no Countenance. One that may be very well ſpared.

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE.

B. L. i. e. *Brian Laſcells.* He is a Man full of Quarells, and Contentions. One that maketh Diviſions, maintaining evil Cauſes; bolſtering out evil Matters; ever in Law, and one that onely liveth by other mens Loſſes.

G. N. I. L. W. I. i. e. *Gervace Nevyl, John Lewis, Walter Jobſon.* *Such as be fit men to be called in Commiſſion again.* All theſe are wiſe, upright, ſkilful and painful in that Office. And no juſt Cauſe, why they ſhould be removed out of the Commiſſion of Peace, ſo far as can be here known.

W. S. i. e. *Wil. Sutton* of *Aram* in *Nottinghamſh.* As he is a Man of good Living, and of an antient Houſe, ſo he is a very honeſt, upright Gentleman, and very fit to be put into the Commiſſion of Peace.

NUMB. XXIX.

Toby Matthew D D. *Dean of* Durham, *to Mr.* Francis Mills, *Attendant on Sir* Francis Walſingham, *Secretary of State: Upon his being Nominated to ſuccede in the See of* Durham, *now void. Dated from* Durham *Novemb.* 23. 1587.

S. P. in Dno. Jeſu.

Cotton Libr. Titus B. 2.

SIR. Whereas Mr. Secretary *Walſingham*, of his own Honorable Diſpoſition towards my Preferment, hath of late once again vouchſafed to advertiſe me of his Purpoſe to have me placed in the late Lord Biſhops Room here; a Benefice that I muſt ingenuouſly confeſs, I think my ſelf nothing ſo fit for, as I could deſire; I have adventured to acquaint you above all others, with that his Honours Pleſure and Determination: to the End, that albeit you would never yet like to be beholden to me in any Reſpect, notwithſtanding the Furtherance you gave me in my Coming hither; yet I may ſtill be more and more beholden to you, as well for that is to come as for that is paſt; In caſe you can think of me, as a Man not unmeet to be ſo far done for, nor unmindful of the State you may ſtand me therein. Which Meaning of mine I would in more Haſt have imparted unto you, having had Experience of your Friendſhip tofore, and knowing how inward you are with your Maſter; but that I was unreſolved my ſelf to procede therin for ſome good Conſiderations, that did much diſcourage me. For beſide mine own Inſufficiency for ſuch a Charge, beſt known to my ſelf, and my very hard Paſſage, as it were, through the Pricks, for every Suit that ever I obtained in Court; I ſee the Biſhopric greatly impaired. The beſt things Demiſed at Length; and many of the Leſs intangled. No Proviſion at all of Corn by Rent, or otherwiſe. The Rate very high in the Queens Books, and 1700 £. by year, *communibus Annis*, going out; yea, after the Firſtfruits are diſcharged. In the Dioces, namely, in *Northumberland*, and eſpecially about the Borders, moſt wretched and miſerable, able to burſt the Heart of an honeſt, well meaning Paſtor; ſo ſmall Aſſiſtance for the Public Services of Religion, and the State both Eccleſiaſtical

ſiaſtical and Civil, as no where elſe, Ithink, in all this Realm, or the next. The Place exceeding chargeable in Peace, and War ——— dangerous; which is more than likely in this broken World, between us and our Neibours: together with the night Crow, that ever croketh in mine Ears. "For Gods ſake get "us gone hence. Why came we hither? Who but we, would any longer tar"ry here? Which Voice you wot well, hath half the Force of an Inchantment "ſometimes. [The repeated Voice, 'tis likely, of the Deans Wife, after his Remove to thoſe Northern Parts.]

Theſe and the like did greatly diſſuade me; until of late, I aſſure you, that divers of my Friends both here and elſe where have put ſome Heart into me, by anſwering and replying to ſome of theſe Objections. So as now I have ſubmitted my Cares and Fears to Gods good Providence; my Service to her Majeſtys Diſpoſition, if it ſhall be ſuch; my Directions to Mr. Secretary by you from Time to Time.

Wherefore my ſpecial Requeſt is, that hereto I may have both your Advice and Aſſiſtance, if it ſhall pleaſe you to renew the Matter to Mr. Secretaryes Remembrance, with my moſt humble and moſt bounden Thanks for his great Favour and Goodneſs towards me, as well therin, as otherwiſe. To certify me by the next, what Termes the reſt that be Suitors do ſtand, in your Opinion: What Courſe you think fit for me to follow; and in what Sort the Cauſe to be Solicited. My Diſadvantages in compariſon of ſome other Men, I know, are great. They are many, and I but one. They are neer hand, I very far off. They that are worthy may be importune. I cannot ſo be with any Modeſty. They will have many Agents and Inſtruments, I neither can or will uſe any Means, but your Maſter, to her Majeſty. Nor any but you in effect to his Honour. If ſo God will ſend it, it ſhall be welcome: if otherwiſe, I am where I was; and in better Place than happly I deſerve: Leſs able, I confeſs to do for ſuch, as have don, or ſhall do for me. But no leſs Will, or readineſs to do his Honour any Service, or you any Friendſhip, ſo long as I ſhall live. Thus deſiring your courteous Acceptation of this my Motion, together with your ſpeedy Anſwer, I commit you to Gods good Keeping.

From *Dureſme*, this 23 of *Novemb.* 1587.

Tour aſſured Friend,

TOBY MATTHEW.

If Mr. Secretary ſhall find, that the Biſhopric will be for me, I would wiſh you will not neglect in time to conſider of any honeſt Sufficient Man to ſuccede me here, [in the Deanry.] For I can aſſure you, there is not a Place in this Land, all things conſidered, more worthy to be well beſtowed of this Calling. For which there will alſo be many Suitors. ***Sed non ſumus ibi adhuc,*** will you ſay.

NUMB. XXX.

Ten long Leaſes of the Biſhopric of Durham; *to the Queen Granted, moſt of them, by* Barnes *the Biſhop of that Dioces. With a Note of the Particulars demiſed. The Date of the Leaſes, Number of Years, and yearly Rent.*

Date of Leaſe.	*Number of Years.*	*Yearly Rent.*	*Particulars.*
Apr. 26. *An. Regin.* 24.	*For years* 99.	*Rent* 117 17 8	I. All the Mannors and Touns of *Whickham*, and *Gateſide*. *Memorandum*, Loſt in this Leaſe 110 £. reſerved in Leaſes *in Eſſe*. Which were for Colemines to three Perſons, *Viz. Anderſon*, *Lewen* and *White*; and to one, named *Blackſton*. For Way-leave 10 £. *per annum*.
May ult. *An. Regin.* 19.	*Years* 100	*Rent* 82 £.	II. All the Fiſhings in the Waters of *Tweede* within *Norham*, and *Norhamſhire*; with all Rents, Iſſues, Liberties, &c. *Memorandum*, that theſe Fiſhings are expreſly reſtored to the now Biſhop, but paid to her Majeſtys Receiver of *Northumberland*.
Apr. 17. *A. Reg.* 20.	*Years* 40.	27 18 8	III. All the Water Mills in *Darlington* and *Blackwell*, &c.
Jun. 20. *A. Reg.* 20	*Years* 50.	18 £.	IV. All the Rectory and Parſonage of *Leake* in *Yorkſhire*. And all the Tiths, Oblations, Profits, and Commodities therunto belonging.
May 14. *A. Reg.* 23	*Years* 80.	26 9 8.	V. All the Mannour and Graunge of *Mildredge* with the Appurtinences.
Oct. 24. *A. Reg.* 24.	*Years* 80.	*Rent accuſtomed.*	VI. All *Wolſingham* Park. The Water Mills there, Chappel Walls, &c.
Jul. 13. *A. Reg.* 26.	*Years* 90.	34 0 8.	VII. All the Manour of *Hoveden* in *Yorkſhire*, &c.
Jan. 17. *A. Reg.* 27.	*Years* 70.	62 £. 20 *d.*	VIII. All *Cowndon* Graunge, &c. All the Manour of *Moreton*, County *Dureſm*, 12 Meſſuages

Date of Leaſe.	*Number of Years.*	*Yearly Rent.*	*Particulars.*
			ſuages in *Stanhope Park* at *Weſtgate*, &c.
Oct. 15. *A. Reg.* 23.	*Years* 80.	18 *£.* 12 *d.*	IX. All thoſe Meddows, and Paſtures called *Biſhops Cloſe*, neer *Ryers Green*. All *Biſhop Midlam* Park with the Appurtinences: All the Demean of *Midlam*, &c.
Sep. 29. *A. Reg.* 28.	*Years* 80.	108. 19 5	X. All the Manour of *Crayke*; and all Graunges, Houſes, Meſſuages,

Milnes, &c. Waſts, Woods, Demean Lands, Quarries, Wards, Marriages, Heriots, Fines, Courts, Wares, *&c.* All Juriſdictions, Privileges, Franchiſes, *&c.*

All the Manour of *Welehal*; the Demean Lands there. The Fiſhings in the Waters of *Owſe*.

The Demain Lands at *Walkington*, &c. All the Wood and Underwood at *Walkington*.

The Paſſages, Shores, Fiſhings and firy [Ferrry] Boats at *Hoveden* Dike, &c.

NUMB. XXXI.

Toby Matthew *D. D. Dean of* Durham; *to Sir* Fra. Walſingham, *Secretary of State. Concerning his Preferment to that Biſhopric.*

Rt. Honorable,

Cotton Libr. Titus B. 2.

THIS whole Society of her Majeſtys Foundation, not the Dean and Chapter alone, but all and every the Members of this troubled Body, do acknowledge our ſelves ſo greatly bounden unto your Honour for the Furtherance we have obtained by your ſeveral earneſt and effectual Letters to my Lord Chancellor, and eſpecially, to my Lords Grace of *Canterbury*; as we deſire an Occaſion to be miniſtred, wherin at one time or other, we may declare, in how dutiful and thankful part we do receive ſo ſingular and extraordinary Benefits: my ſelf being in more particular and ſpecial maner, tyed to honour and ſerve ſuch a Patron, while I ſhall have Breath: Finding you amidſt the Perils, yea, of your own Life, to carry ſuch Regard, Care and Study of my Preferment, as would make me mervail, were I not ſo long and ſo well acquainted with your exceeding great Favour towards me; a Man no way worthy, ſaving in your own Eyes, of ſo good Hap. But the leſs my Deſert is, the deeper is my Debt, and my Bond the ſtrongeſt, which unleſs Gods Grace ſhall fail me utterly, (a Caſe, I truſt impoſſible) I will never break.

To my Lord of *Eſſex* [*Walſinghams* Son in Law] as to whom I think I am unknown, but only recommended by your Honour to his Lordſhip, I have not yet written ſo much as Thanks. For that I learn not as yet, how far it pleaſeth your Honour, that I take Knowledg of the Good his Lordſhip hath or may do me for your ſake. Wherein if by Slackneſs I have made any Fault, upon Advertiſement, I ſhall readily amend that is amiſſe.

In caſe it mought like your Honour to communicate your Purpoſe with my Lord *Steward* [the Earl of *Leiceſter*] my Singular good Lord and old Maſter, I ſhould right gladly take Notice of his Lordſhips Diſpoſition. Whoſe Inclination towards any other whatſoever, I would neither ſeem, nor ſeek, to impeach, for all the Promotions in this Realm.

Of my Years, wherof it appeareth ſome Queſtion hath been made, to wit 44, within two Months, if the Lord grant me ſo long to live, I have more largely written to Mr. *Milles* [*Walſinghams* chief Attendant] To whoſe Cuſtody, if your Honour will vouchſafe at my Requeſt to commit theſe, &c.

From *Dureſme*, the 23. of *Decemb* 1587.

Your Honours humble at Commandment,

TOBY MATTHEW.

NUMB. XXXII.

A Diſcovery of the preſent Eſtate of the Biſhopric of S. Aſaph. *Sent to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley, *Febr.* 24. 1587.

The Eſtate of the Biſhopric of S. Aſaph *now ſtandeth thus.*

MSs. Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

MOST of the great Livings within the Dioces; ſome with Cure of Souls, and ſome without Cure; are either holden by the Lord Biſhop himſelf in *Commendam*, or elſe they are in the Poſſeſſion of ſuch men as do dwell out of the Country.

Theſe are holden by the Lord Biſhop in *Commendam*. 1. The Archdeaconry being well worth 400 £. yearly. To the which theſe Benefices with Cure do belong; *Llangwſtenin*, *Diſetth* and *Rhylyſnwyde*. And theſe without Cure. *Viz.* 4. *Abergelo*. R. *Llundrillo* in *Roſſe* Parc. [i.e. Parcel] *Llanrwſt*. Parc. 2. *Cwin*. R. *ſine cura*. Yearly worth L £. 3. *Llandrillo* in *Deiznyon*, R. *ſine cura*. Worth LXXX £. 4. *Llangwn*. R. *ſine cura*, yearly worth LX £. 5. *Llandrinia* R. with three Cures. *Viz.* *Llaudrinia*, *Llandiſſilia*, *Melnerly*, worth yearly CLX £. 6. *Llyſvayn*. R. *cum cura*: yearly worth L £. or better. 7. *Caſtel*. R. *cum cura*: Yearly worth L £. 8. *Malloyd*. R. *cum cura*. Yearly worth LXX £.

IX Cures, and VII without Cure.

The ſaid Lord Biſhop hath had in his *Commendam* ſix other Benefices with Cure; the which he reſigned upon having of the better. 1. *Abergele*, V. [Vicarge] 2 *Battws*. V. 3. *Grefford*. V. 4. *Myvot*. V. 5. *Arbiſtock*. R. 6. *Llanyckil* R.

Theſe following are in the Poſſeſſion of them that live out of the Country. Wherof ſome were collated by the Lord Biſhop, that now is. 1. *Vaynol*; Prebend. Yearly worth 200 Mark. In the Poſſeſſion of Dr. *Yale*, of the *Arches*. 2. *Llanvſyth*. Prebend: Worth 100 £. yearly. In the Poſſeſſion of Dr. *Lewyn* of the *Arches*. 3. *Kilken*. R. Worth L £. yearly Sine Cure. In the poſſeſſion of Mr. *Tomſon*, dwelling about *London*. 4. *Skenviog*. R. In the poſſeſſion of Mr. *Henry Moſtyn*, Chancellor of *Bangor*. 5. *Whittinton*. R. *cum cura*. Of the Patronage of Mr. *Albany*: in the poſſeſſion of Mr. *Bagſhaw* of *Litchfield*. 6. *Oſweſtrie*. V. Of the Patronage of the Earl *Arundel*. In the Poſſeſſion of ——— ——— 7. *Mackynllaeth*, R. in the Poſſeſſion of Mr. *Hughes*, of *Merionythſhire*.

And of antient Collation theſe. The Poſſeſſors alſo living out of the Dioces. To the Number of Seven more. 1. *Meleden* Prebend Worth yearly L £. In the poſſeſſion of Dr. *Ireland* of *Cheſter*. 2. *Llancrwſt*. R. In the poſſeſſion of Dr. *Jones* of the *Arches*. 3. *Llanſanan*. R. Parc. [*Particula*] In the Poſſeſſion of the ſame. 4. *Llonarmon*. R. In the poſſeſſion of the Dean of *Canterbury*, [Mr. *Rogers*.] 5. *Eſtyn*. R. In the poſſeſſion of the ſaid Man. 6. *Covwen.* R. In the poſſeſſion of D. *Meurick* of *Litchfield.* 7. *Llandiſſyl.* R. in the poſſeſſion of Dr.... *Lewis*, the Queens Chaplain.

There is never a Preacher within the ſaid Dioces, (the Lord Biſhop only excepted) that keepeth ordinary Reſidence and Hoſpitality upon his Living, but Dr. *Powel*, and Dr. *Morgan*, and the Parſon of *Llanvechem*, an aged Man about LXXX. years old.

By reaſon of the *Commendams* and Abſence aforeſaid, Hoſpitality is now of late greatly decayed in that Dioces.

Theſe are clean gon, which of late were great Houſekeepers. 1. The Dean, [* one *Banks*, not 23 years old.] He that now hath the Name to be Dean never kept Houſe in all his Life, and is an unfit Man for that Place and Calling, in all reſpects; being not paſt XXIV Years old. 2. The Archdeacon hath been the beſt Houſekeeper in the Country: but now the Living is in the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* 3. The Parſon of *Llyſvaen.* Now the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* 4. The Parſon of *Skeiviog:* now abſent. 5. The Vicar of *Cwin.* The now Incumbent, being alſo Parſon of *Northop*, and of *Whitford*, (two of the greateſt Livings in all the Dioces,) boardeth in the Ale-houſe. Five Livings more follow wherin Hoſpitality ceaſed, *Viz.* 6. The Parſon of *Whittinton*, now abſent. 7. The Parſon of *Llandernio.* Now the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* 8. The Parſon of *Caſtel*: a great Houſekeeper. Now the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* 9. The Parſon of *Llandrillo.* Now the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* 10. The Parſon of *Mallayd.* Now the Lord Biſhops *Commendam.* The Livings being Subducted, the Relief of the Poor muſt needs decay.

* Added by the Lord Treaſurers Hand.

Parcels of the Biſhopric Leaſed and confirmed by the Lord Biſhop that now is, to the Hindrance of his Succeſſors.

1. The Lordſhip of *Meleden*; The Moyety wherof being in Leaſe before, he bought of Mr. *Symon Theloal*, Eſq; (To whom he gave for the ſame, the Vicarage of *Moulde* for his Son) he hath confirmed for Lives, to the Uſe of his own Children. 2. The Rectory of *Llanhaſaph* he hath for the Sum of CCC £. confirmed for Lives to Mr. *Piers Moſtyn*, Eſq; 3. The Manour of *Llandegla* to his Couſin [*Hue Kendryck* *] of *London.* 4. The Biſhops Lands in S. *Martins*, he granted to the old Tenants, if they will pay him 170 £. Otherwiſe the ſame are granted to the Uſe of his own Children. 7. A Portion of Tiths in the Pariſh of *Blodwal*, of the Yearly Rent of XV £. he hath confirmed in Leaſe to *Mard.* [*Marmaduke*] *Jones*, Gentleman, for 40 Shil. Rent in part of Payment of a Purchaſe of certain Freehold Lands, which he purchaſed of the ſame *Jones*; to him and to his Heirs for ever. For the which, beſide the ſaid Leaſe, he gave 100 £. in Mony; the Lands being worth 20 £. yearly. 8. *Llanwſtonm*, a Parcel of the Archdeaconry, he hath confirmed in Leaſe to *William ap Richard* of *Conwey.*

† Added by the Lord Treaſurer.

Other Leaſes which the ſaid Lord Biſhop, for Mony or other Pleaſures, hath confirmed: to the Number of Six good Rectories.

1. The Rectory of *Llanrhaiac* being yearly worth CLX £. he hath confirmed in Leaſe to the Widow of Mr. *John Dudley*, a ſmal Rent reſerved to the Incumbent. 2. The Rectory of *Whytfor*, He hath in like maner, for a piece of Mony, confirmed to Mr. *Roger Manering* of *Nantwych.* 3. The Rectory of *Northope*, being the beſt in all the Dioces, he hath in like maner confirmed in Leaſe. 4. The Rectory of *Eſtyn* he hath likewiſe confirmed in Leaſe. 5. The Rectory of *Llanſelyn*, being the Dividend of the Chapter, he confirmed to the Uſe of his own Wife and Children: Promiſing great Preferment to ſome of the Prebends, to grant to him their Portions of the ſame. And when he had obtained his Requeſt, he now refuſeth to perform his Promiſe with them. 6. He hath alſo confirmed a Parcel of Tith, belong-

ing to the Vicarage of *HenLlay*, and the two Coportionarie Prebends of *Llanvair*, to his own Siſter.

And to the End he may confirm what he will himſelf, he hath gotten all the Keyes of the Chapter Seal to the keeping of his own Chaplains, whom he may command. Wherby it will appear, what he meaneth to do hereafter.

1. The ſaid Biſhop, in all his ordinary Viſitations, cauſed the Clergy of his Dioces to pay for his Lordſhips Diet, and the Diet of his Train, over and above the accuſtomed Procurations, appointed by the Laws for that Purpoſe; and contrary to the ſame Laws.

2. He commonly giveth no Benefice, before he hath gotten the Harveſt for himſelf, if the ſame do fall, that he may ſo do.

3. And now (the more is the Pity) he is altogether given to the purchaſing of Lands to him and his Heirs. And hath given great Sums of Mony upon Mortgages of Lands. As upon the Lands of Mr. *Edwards* of *Chirk*, as it is reported, the Sum of 700 *£.* Mr. *Conwey*, the Sum of ————. Which thing is a Scandal to his Profeſſion, and an ill Example of Uſury to the Laity.

4. The Officers of his Conſiſtory Court do receive great Sums of Mony of Offenders, in redemption of their Corporal Penance. And never ſend the ſame, nor any Part therof to the Pariſh where the Offences are committed. But either take the ſame to their own Uſes, or give it to his Lordſhip, without any Notice or Satisfaction to the Congregation offended.

5. There is no Table of Fees ſet up in the Conſiſtory according to the late Canons.

6. There are no Overſeers appointed for Divine Service within that Dioces, according to the *Injunctions*. Which thing hath been a great Cauſe of ſo many Recuſants in that Country. All the Premiſſes are to be found of Record, or notoriouſly known, ſo that they cannot be denyed.

NUMB. XXXIII.

The Dean and Prebendaries of Ely *to the Lord Treaſurer, Upon occaſion of the Queens Letter to them, to Grant a Leaſe to one* Aſhby, *her Servant, of certain Manours of that Biſhopric, now void.*

Epiſt. Eccle-pen. me.

OUR Duty in moſt humble wiſe remembred, with moſt humble Thanks for your Lordſhips good Favour in procuring from her Majeſty the Grant and Confirmation of divers things of late belonging to the Church of *Ely*. Theſe ſhall be to certify your Honour at this Time, that we have received the 7th day of this Month of *June*, certain Letters from her Majeſty in Favour of Mr. *Will. Aſhby*, Eſq; one of her Majeſtys well beloved Servants; requiring and authorizing us therby, to make him a certain Leaſe under our Chapter-Seal, of the Manours of *Dunnington* and *Thriplow*, and of the Parſonage of *Hinkſton*, belonging to the Biſhopric of *Ely*. And likewiſe we have received another Letter from Mr. Secretary *Walſingham*, expreſſing her Majeſtys gracious Favour. (The Copy wherof they ſent encloſed) And altho' we are moſt willing to do in all Duty that her Majeſty ſhall command,

and ready of good Will to pleſure the ſaid honeſt Gentleman; yet, for that we are credibly informed, that your Honour hath beſtowed divers things, belonging to the ſaid Biſhopric already, and particularly the Manour of *Dunnington*, upon Mr. *Richard Cox*, during the Time of Vacancy of the See of *Ely*; we are perſuaded, that all the reſt doth belong to your Honour for that Time of Vacancy.

And therefore we have forborn to Seal the ſaid Leaſe, as we are authorized by her Majeſty for to do; until we ſhall underſtand your Lordſhips Pleſure herein; being our ſingular good Lord, and High Steward of our Church. Unto whoſe Counſil we do refer our ſelves herein to be directed.

And wheras the Church of *Ely*, among other of their Grants, made to the Prior and Covent, and their Succeſſors, hath had a ſpecial Privilege of keeping and receiving all the Temporalities belonging to the ſaid Biſhopric, during the Vacancy, as may appear unto your Honours by divers of her Majeſtys Noble Progenitors under their Seals, (which we do ſend unto your Honour to peruſe) Like as her Majeſty hath willed and Licenced us to do at this time in theſe Particulars: The which if we, the Dean and Chapter of *Ely*, for us and our Succeſſors may likewiſe obtain of her Majeſty and enjoy by your Honours good Means, the like Grant of keeping the Temporalities, *Sede vacante*, accordingly; then might we, not onely ſafly yield to theſe her Majeſtys Letters without Prejudice to this See of *Ely*, or any other Biſhopric hereafter; but alſo do promiſe by theſe our Letters, that we will not paſs any thing belonging to the ſaid Biſhopric, during the Vacancy, but ſuch as your Honour ſhall firſt be made privy of, and given your Aſſent thereunto. And ſo with our daily Prayers for the long Continuance of your Honours happy Proſperity, we humbly take our Leave.

From *Ely*, the 11. of *June*, 1587.

Your Honours moſt bonnden, and
daily Orators,

Robert Norgate *Andrew Pern.*
Jhon Bell, *Jhon Parkers.*
Edmund Barwel.

NUMB: XXXIV.

Orders made at a Synod of Puritans, *Sept.* 8. 1587.

1. DE Scribendis, & ſubſcribendis Literis; nimirum, ut familiari modo fiant.

MSS. Rev. T. Baker.

2. Literæ fiduciariæ certa Forma Scribendæ. Cujus Exemplum hoc ſit, Salutem in Chriſto, Amen. Reverende Frater, Chariſſimus Frater noſter Dns. N. rogatus eſt, ut te conveniret. Rogatus eſt etiam, ut quibuſdam rebus, quæ ad me, & alios quoſdam Fratres in his locis attinent, tecum communicet; & ſiqui præterea iſtic ſunt, quibuſcum utiliter communicare poſſunt; quos propterea his Literis non complexus ſum, quia is te conventurus eſt, cujus Fides ſatis nota eſt. Cui rogo Fidem adhibeas in eis quæ tecum noſtro nomine communicaturus eſt, Vale. Frater chariſſime. Deus omnibus tuis ſanctis laboribus & conatibus eos ſucceſſus concedat, qui maxime Dei Honori, & Eccleſiæ & tibiipſi, fructui atq; Solatio eſſe poſſint. *Tui Studioſus.*

3. Colloquia Fratrum nituntur. 1. Generalibus Cohortationibus & mandatis, de nobis mutuo juvandis. 2. Communione Sanctorum; illuſtratâ ſimilitudine humani Corporis. Quæ rationes magis urgent Miniſtros, qui ſunt præcipua membra Eccleſiæ. 3. Specialibus mandatis, & cohortationibus ad Miniſtros, de curandâ Eccleſiâ, quæ aliter procurari non poteſt. 4. Exemplis, quæ ſunt *Act.* 8. 14. Et 25. 2. (Schiſmatis Calumnia refellitur, in communicatione Fratrum cum Eccleſia in Verbo & Sacramentis, & cæteris omnibus, exceptis corruptelis. 2 do. quia nullam Authoritatem aſſumant alios ad ſua Decreta obſtringendi.) 5. Hæc eſt maxime opportuna ratio occurrendi Schiſmatis. 6. Et continendi Fratres in ſani judicii unitate. 7. Et vitandi Securitatem. 8. Et temeritatem. 9. Et augendi Scientiam, omniâq; dona Miniſterio neceſſaria. 10. Magiſtratus poteſtas non minuitur, cum ſit planè Eccleſiaſtica; nec adhuc diſertè prohibetur.

4. Ratio habendi Colloquia & Conventus ſumenda ex Synodica Diſciplina. In quibus commodum erit, ut Fratres Prophetiâ, vel alia ratione ad augendam Scientiam commoda, ſe exerceant.

5. Acta Conventuum referenda eadem ratione, quâ ferenda ſunt ipſa Mandata; hoc eſt, breviter ad Fratris ferentis memoriam juvandam.

6. Quærendum de Mulierum Baptiſmo, privata Sacramentorum adminiſtratione, *Apocryphorum* lectione, apertis depravationibus Scripturæ, Signo Crucis typico; an ſimpliciter impia.

7. Ad quæſtiones de Sacra Diſciplina, & Synodica. (1. An conveniat cum Verbo Dei. 2. Quoúſq; cum pace Eccleſiæ, uti liceat) nondum reſponſum eſt a pleriſq;. Quod curandum in proximum Conventum.

8. De neceſſitate idonei Miniſtri, de non communicando cum inidoneis Miniſtris, & non agnoſcenda Aucthoritate Hierarchiæ; & omnino de illegitima Diſciplina repudianda, atq; legitima inſtauranda praxi noſtra; deliberandum eſt a Fratribus inter ſe, & cum exteris Eccleſiis reformatis.

9. Reſponſio ad dubitationes certorum Conventuum de Diſciplina, dilata eſt, donec reliqui Conventus ſuam de tota Diſciplina Sententiam ſignificarint.

10. Superioris Conventus Acta mittenda ſunt ad proximè ſequentem.

11. Nomen loci & Temporis habendi Conventus celandum ab ipſo, cui ſignificatum fuerit ab aliis; & cum delectu tantum communicandum: idq; poſt quam delectus fuerit.

12. Scribendum

Suffolciæ { D. *Knewſtub.* *Allen.* } *Cantiæ.* { *Nichols, Eſtwel.* *Elvyn, Weſtwel.*
Eſſex. { *Gifford.* *Rogers.* } *Surrey.* { *Rychman.* *Udall.* } *Hartford.* { *Dyke,* *Figg.*
Northampt. { *Barbon.* *Flood.* } *London.* { *Field.* *Egerton.* } *Warwick.* { *Cartwright.* *Fen.*
Cambridge. { *Chatterton.*

3. Curandum

13. Curandum de Libris Diſciplinæ imprimendis, & per Conventus diſpergendis.

14. De Miniſterio Academico deliberandum a Fratribus in proximum Conventum, ſi interſint Academici.

15. De Libris D. *Cartwright* de *Diſciplina*, rogandus ipſe primum, ut vertantur. D. *Chatterton*, & D. *Gellibrand* procurent.

16. De Libro reſponſorio ad *Rhemenſis* Teſtamenti Tranſlationem, ſcribendum a D. *Fen* ad Comitem *Leiceſtrenſem*, & ad D. *Fennerum*.

17. Juramenta in Viſitationibus accipienda, non niſi proteſtatione, quatenus liceat, ſalvâ Conſcientiâ.

18. De proximo Conventu convocando demandetur Claſſi *Warwicenſi*, ex Sententia Claſſium ejuſdem Comitatus, modo intra tempus Semeſtre, & non ante trimeſtre.

Ex MSto. Magiſtri Lauton *Coll. Trin.*
Cant. Sacellan.

NUMB. XXXV.

Durden, a Miniſter, that called himſelf Elias; *His Propheſies concerning the Times approaching, and the Return of the* Jews, *by his Conduct. In a Letter to one of his Partie, named Williamſon, a Taylor in* Cambridge. *With his Interpretation of the Propheſies of* Daniel *and the* Apocalypſe.

Grace and Peace be with you from God the Father and our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

Brother W.

‘TIS Commanded, that as every one hath received a Gift, ſo he ſhould diſtribute the ſame to others, as faithful Diſpoſers of the manifold Gifts of God. For this Cauſe I durſt not concele from you, Brother *William*, as to whom I am eſpecially bound by manifold Links of Charity, Kindred and Calling to be beneficial, I dare not, I ſay, hide from you that Knowledge which I have by an extraordinary Means received from God, to impart to all in univerſal. The Matter is this in brief Sum.

MSS. Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

That we have hitherto like *Saul*, kicked againſt the Pricks, yet now, as *Paul*, we ſhall become choſen Veſſels to bear his Name not before *England* only (for which Cauſe I am in Priſon) but even before all Nations that are in the World: to fulfil theſe Scriptures, written long ſince of my Calling and Works. *Eſay* 49. 1. *&c.* And 59. v. 20. And *Mark*, 9. 12. And *Rom.* 10. 26. *Dan.* 7. 25. 26. *Ezek.* 38. and 39. *Apo.* 5. 11. 12. 14. 15. 16. 17. 19. By theſe Places I gather theſe four Points.

I. That the *Jews* are to be brought from among the *Gentils*, even unto the Land of *Judea*.

II. That I am appointed and ordained of God to be their Deliverer. And that we are the ſame *Iſraelites*, whom this Land doth perſecute. [*Puritans.*]

III. That we ſhall be ſent unto the Land promiſed us, *Ezek.* 36. and *Jer.* 31. And *Apo.* 12. 23. And that in this Queens days, that now reigneth.

IV. That ſhortly after that, all the Kings of the whole World ſhall be gathered together, to fight againſt us in *Judea.* Where we ſhall have the Victory: And all the Kings of the World ſhall be obedient unto us, and pay us Tribute: Yea, and for a whole Thouſand Years ſhall be obedient to the Goſpel.

All theſe four Propoſitions I do thus approve out of thoſe Scriptures.

Firſt Propoſition, That the very *Jews* by nature muſt be gathered into their own Land from the *Gentils*, theſe Teſtimonies, needing no Expoſition, do convince: Namely, *Ezek.* 36. and 39. *Eſa.* 14 1. And that of *Jer.* 7. and fully accompliſhed at the Death of the Infants, *Matth.* 2. For the Prophet doth add the Cauſe of *Rachels* Comfort: Namely, becauſe there is yet hope, that *they ſhall return into their own Border. Jer.* 31. 17. Wherefore now rather is this Promiſe to be accompliſhed, ſith they are yet to be brought into their own Borders. Neither was the Propheſy of *Mycheas*, Cap. 5. 2. yet fulfilled in the Perſon of Chriſt, *Mat.* 21. For it is all one with *Apo.* 12.

Secondly, That I am the Perſon ordained to be their Deliverer; and again, that this Land doth perſecute us; I gather by theſe Teſtimonies following. But for the Firſt, that I am ordained to theſe Works, I know by theſe Reaſons.

1. By mine extraordinary Calling I was moved to ſearch theſe Things. And ſo by Searching I underſtood theſe Things, and perceived that no other Interpreter underſtood them.

2. For this Cauſe I knew, that I was ordained onely, to ſe and work them. For it is teſtified, that no Man in Heaven or Earth, or underneath the Earth, was able to open the Book, or to looſe the Seven Seals therof. *Apoc.* 5. but the Lion of the Tribe of *Judah*; the Root of *David*, &c. Wherefore conſidering mine extraordinary Viſion which was moſt like the Viſion of thoſe Seven Seals; and conſidering that God did inwardly inform me with the Underſtanding of the *Apocalyps*; I did not doubt to believe that I was the Perſon figured by that Lion, and that Lamb, as it were ſlain. Furthermore, I was yet more fully certified of this by another Property of that Perſon in the 19 of that *Apo.* ver. 16. For upon my Thigh is a Mark and Print of a round Circle. Which I interpret to ſignify the Geometrical Proportion of that Poſſeſſion which I am promiſed. And therefore it is ſaid, that this Name written is, King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

Neither doth that Place of *Paul* to *Timothy*, Epiſtle 1. Cap gainſay this Interpretation, altho' he applieth it as peculiar to Chriſt. For it is proper to him, as the only Head of the Church, and even of all the World in all Ages, as *Micheas* teſtifyeth, 5. 2. But to his Servants it may be alſo applied, For the Power and Authority that he doth give unto them ſometimes upon Earth; as it appeareth in the 2. of *Dan.* 37. For *Daniel* ſaith of *Nebuchadnezzer*, *Thou art a King of Kings.* Yea, And in that Chapter he promiſeth the like Aucthority and Power to another Perſon, at the End of thoſe four Kingdoms. Which doth agree altogether with this, which *John* alſo propheſieth *Apo.* 19. 15 and 16. I conclude therefore by this Interpretation, that I am the Perſon, having the Mark or Name of *Potentate* upon my Thigh.

4. Laſtly, that I am the Perſon, the Time of my Calling doth verify, together with the Teſtimony of *Daniel* and *John* of the ſaid Time of my

Calling. For *Daniel* (*Dan.* 12.) by Viſion ſaw two others ſtanding, wherof one, he ſaith, asked, when the End of thoſe things ſpoken of in his Propheſy ſhould be. Now theſe two were not Angels but Men: as of him which asked of the Time in the 8th Chapter, it is plainly witneſſed. Of theſe two Men, the one was *John*. But he did not ask after the Time: but without asking, the Angel did ſhew him, both of the Time, and of my Calling alſo. For by the Reed to meſure the Temple and Altar, and them which worſhip therin, he did ſignify my raiſing to ſhew theſe Things. For how could he mete Worſhipers with a material Reed? Therefore *John* by the Reed doth ſignify no other thing than him whom *Daniel* ſaw, asking after the End of the Viſions. And this is apparent, for they both heard, that the Time ſhould last but three Years and an half, after my Calling, for a Time, two Times, and half: and 42 Months are all one with three Years and an half. And the Meaning of the Word muſt be ſhut up, until the End of the Days, *Dan.* 12.

Apoc. 11. 1.

Therefore the Time muſt not be Literally underſtood as they are written. Onely it reſteth upon the raiſing up of that Reed to mete; when we muſt begin to number.

And now to prove that I am this *Reed* and Inſtrument, I alledge Experience of Time: Namely, that now is the Time come, and the Days and Months muſt begin to be accounted at the Day of my Calling: which was the 24th of *Auguſt*, 1585. So that the holy City muſt be trodden under feet, until the 24th of *February*, 1589. The Proof wherof is this: that the End of theſe 42. Months ſo accounted ſhall end juſt with the Time appointed to the two Beaſts, ſpoken of in the 13th Chap. of the *Apocalyps*, *ver. ultimo.* For it is ſaid, that the *Jews*, which is ſignified by the *Holy City*, muſt get the Victory, of the Beaſt and of his Name, and Image, and Number of his Name. *Apoc.* 15. 2. And the Number of his Name, that is, his Poſſeſſion and Reign is 666. Which being called *Months*, (as no doubt they muſt) ſhall end the ſame Time, namely, *Anno Dom.* 1589. the 24 of *February*. For this Beaſt is the Kingdom of *England*. And the Image of the Firſt Beaſt hath been maintained in it, ſince the 25. of *Aug.* 1534. and muſt laſt 666 Months, that is, 55 Years, and an half. Which ſhall end the 24 of *Febr.* 1589. So it will fall out juſt with the End of the 42 Months after my Calling. I conclude therefore my Experience, that no other Perſon can be allotted to work theſe Things.

It remaineth, that I prove, that this is the Land and Place, from which the *Jews* muſt be delivered. Firſt, I alledge the Propheſies of *Daniel*; *Chap.* the 2d and *Apoc.* 17. Both which Propheſies do agree that the *Jews* muſt win Victory againſt the Beaſt with ten Hornes; which is without all Doubt the Government of *Rome*. But that little Horn which *Daniel* ſpeaks of *Cap.* 7. 25. and *Cap.* 8. muſt needs betoken this Kingdom, *England*: Which I prove by theſe infallible Reaſons following. Wherby it ſhall appear to all Men that this is the Land, wherin the *Jews* are perſecuted, and out of which they ſhall be gathered.

Pars Secundæ Propoſitionis 2dæ 6 modis ſeu rationibus.

For 1. This Kingdome departed from the Beaſt, the Pope, as *Daniel* ſaid 1.
it ſhould. *Cap.* 7. 24. and 8. 2. It is unlike to the former Hornes, or King- 2.
domes under the Pope. For they both ſerve him, and believe the Popes Do-
ctrine. But this Land doth not ſerve him, but yet doth believe ſome of his
Doctrines. Of this *Daniel* ſpake ver. 24. 25. And *John*, *Apoc.* 13. 11. and
12. 3. This Horn hath ſubdued three of the other, as *Daniel*, *Cap.* 7. 2. 3.
4. What way it is enlarged, it is witneſſed, *Dan. Cap.* 8. and 9. 5. What 4.
Opinions it holdeth againſt the Truth, it is witneſſed, *Cap.* 7. 25. Laſtly, 5.
how many Months it ſhould laſt; how many Changes it ſhould have in this 6.
Time; yea, how many Heads in all this Time, as well Kings as Queens,
John doth ſet forth unto us. So that nothing is wanting in the full Deſcri-
ption

ption of a Kingdom, the very name of Place and Perſon onely exepted. For he ſets down the Time of the whole Government: namely, 666 Months: The Number of Heads, Kings with Queens, are Seven. As *Apoc.* 17. 9. Of which five are now fallen. For he ſpake then as if he had lived now. For he ſpeaketh of the Perſon of that Elder. And by him he meant me. And therefore he noteth this his Meaning by that ſaying, *Here is the Mind that hath Wiſdome.* ver. 9. The like he uſeth in the 13th Chapt. ver. 18. That the Church might know, that whoſo could underſtand theſe two Places, he ſhould know all. And that it might be allotted to one Perſon onely. For he ſaith, *Here is the Mind that hath Wiſdom*: not Minds, &c. But of all things generall he ſaith generally. *Cap.* 13. *Here are they that keep the Commandments of God, and the Teſtimonies of Jeſus.*

Now to come to the Seventh Head again. He ſaith, as he were living, (for ſo he is, even that Elder, which in Viſion ſhewed *John* theſe things.) *Five are fallen*; as namely, *Henry* the King of late, of famous Memory: and his Wife, the Queen *Anne*. 3. *Edward* the Sixth. 4. and 5. *Philip* and *Mary*. One is; the Seventh is not yet come. And muſt tarry but a ſhort Time: Even five Months. For it is that *Abaddon* ſpoken of, *Apoc.* 9. This is manifeſt by the ſaying in the 4th verſe of the ſame 9th Chapter. For thereby it is manifeſt that *Abaddon* is the Seventh Head. And this Queen the Sixth. Becauſe the *Jews* which have the Seal of God in their Foreheads muſt not be hurt by *Abaddon*: But before his Time, under the Queen, they muſt be delivered. For this Queen her Reign is figured by the blowing of the fourth Trumpet. And that the *Jews* muſt at this Time be delivered, it is teſtified by both *Daniel Cap.* 8. and by *John Apoc. Cap.* 12. For by the Hoſt of Heaven, and the Prince of the Hoſt, and by the Woman and her Manchild, which ſhould rule all Nations with a Rod of Iron, the *Jews* and their Prince are ſignified: as *Daniel* doth plainly *Cap.* 8. And *John* in his 8th *Chap.* do mean one thing, by the Hoſt of Heaven, Sun, Moon and Starrs, it is manifeſt, becauſe *John* and *Daniel* do note the ſame Time, in that they both ſay, This ſhall be don in the laſt Wrath: *Dan.* 8. and *Apo.* 15. For *John* meaneth by them that have gotten Victory over the Beaſt, and his Name, and the Number of his Name, *Chap.* 15. 2. none but the *Jews*. For they are ſaid to have the Harps of God, both in the 15 and 14. Chapters. So then they alſo are the ſame, which muſt be the Deſtroyers of the Papiſts: as is ſignified by the Viols which they pour upon the World: *Cap.* 15. and 16. For the Seven Angels ſignify Seven Shepherds and principal Men of the *Jews*. As *Micheas* ſpeaking of that Time witneſſeth, *&c.*

And after ſome Pages. So that by the *Aſcending of the Beaſt* out of the Bottomleſs Pit is meant, that he ſhall again have his full Authority in *England*, at the Coming of the 7th Head. Which is the next Governour of this Realm. That he ſaith, *that the Beaſt was, and is not, and yet is,* he meaneth That it was when he had full Authority in *England*, but is not now, under the Queen *Elizabeth*, which is the Sixth Head: and yet is of ſome Authority: Not in his own Perſon, but in his Doctrin. For ſome of his Ceremonies are maintained. And therefore they Worſhip God in vain, which teach for Doctrines, the Precepts of Men. *Matth.* 15. If Chriſt ſaid it for waſhing of Hands, and for leaving unpuniſhed a looſe and careleſs Proviſion for Parents; how much more would he ſay it for the malicious ſlandering of his People, That they are called Rebells and Traitors; becauſe they obey not Cuſtoms leſs neceſſary. For the waſhing of Hands is more neceſſary, than the wearing of a Surplice, and Croſſing the Child, and marrying with the Ring, *&c.* And after a great deal more to this Purpoſe, he went on thus.

When I was called to this Matter, by Viſion, I was bold to Search. And in Searching I perceived, that the 7th Seal, ſpoken of by *John Apoc.* 6. was very like to the Viſion I had: and that made me more bold. And when I had well viewed the whole Book, and marked the Errors of other Interpreters,

ters, I was bolder than before. And eſpecially at the length, when I underſtood, that the Time was come indeed, that the Thing muſt not onely (and not before) be opened, but now to open by the Word, when this Deliverance promiſed unto the 144000 *Iſraelites*, muſt I ſay, that it ſhall be before the 24th day of *February* in the Year of our Lord, 1589. Which I prove thus. It is witneſſed by the XI. of the *Apocalypſe*, ver. 2. that the holy City muſt be trodden under foot 42 Months. Which doth interpret the Meaning of the *Time, two Times and Half a Time*, ſpoke of by *Daniel*, *Chap.* 7. 25. Which muſt begin at my Calling, to ask and know theſe Things; as alſo *Daniel* ſpake long before, *Chap.* 12. Which alſo *John*, who was figured by the one of thoſe two, ſtanding before *Daniel*, did prefigure, *Apo.* 11. 27. But he was not that Perſon, which asked of the Time. For he was enformed without asking. Neither could that Perſon ask and know, until the End of the Days. But I am that Inſtrument, as appeareth by the falling out of the Time of 42 Months from the Day of my Calling, to the End of 666 Months appointed to the Reign of the Second Beaſt. From which Beaſt the foreſaid *Iſraelites* muſt be delivered. As *Apoc.* 15. 2.

Therefore ſeeing this 666 Months (being 55 Years) and Half, began the 24th Day of *Auguſt*, 1534. and muſt End the 24th day of *February*, 1589. it is manifeſt, that the Time of my Calling was figured by the *Reed*, *Apoc.* 11. 1. For it is juſt 42 Months before the ſame 24th *Febr.* 1589. For as I ſaid, it was upon the 24th of *Aug.* 1535, *&c.*

I conclude therefore that theſe 144000 ſhall receive a Kingdom by themſelves the 24th day of *Febr.* 1589. And they muſt be ſent from this Queens Kingdom by the Queen before that Time. For ſo *Daniel* ſaith, that the Little Horn ſhould perſecute them, until the Time appointed, that the Saints ſhould poſſeſs the Kingdom. So that the Prophet meaneth, that they ſhall be under the Power of the Queen, until the End of the Time appointed: but yet ſhall be eaſed from Perſecution before the very End. How much, I have it not revealed. This is alſo the Meaning of the 42 Months, *Apoc.* 11. 2. And that it muſt be in her Majeſtys days appeareth, not by gueſſing, neither by Experience, nor yet by Conſequence upon this, that it muſt be ſo ſoon: But the Word ſaith, that it ſhall be in the Reign of the Prince who is figured by the Fourth Trumpet, *Apo.* 8. and by the Gift of Interpretation I affirm that it ſhall be in her Days, *&c.*

This and a great deal more of this Stuff makes up theſe Papers of this conceited Enthuſiaſt.

NUMB. XXXVI.

Anthony Tyrrel *Prieſt, to the Lord* Burghley, *after his Recantation* at S. Pauls *Croſs*; *For his Favour. With his Proteſtation, and Purpoſe for the Future.*

LIKE as *Abſalom*, being forced to flee his Fathers Diſpleſure for the outragious Murther of his Brother *Ammon*, (altho' by Policy of *Joab*, and Wiſdom of the *Thecnite*, he was brought back again to *Jeruſalem*) could not be in Quiet and Comfort of Mind, until he had ſeen the Face of *David* his Father; even ſo, Rt. Honorable, and my ſingular good Lord, altho' by the Providence and Mercy of Almighty God, the Clemency of my Prince, and the Favour of your Honour, I am not onely reſtored from Death unto Life, and left to enjoy the ſweet Liberty of my Country, but alſo reſtored unto the Life and Liberty of my Soul; yet can I not be of full Comfort or *MSS. Burghlian.*

Quiet of Mind, until I may enjoy your Lordſhips Preſence, or happily underſtand the Recovery of your Lordſhips good Favour again. And wheras my Offence, being now leſs outrageous and unnatural than that of *Abſalom*, hath not only deſerved two years Baniſhment from your Lordſhips ſight, but alſo your perpetual Contempt for my lewd Demeanour; yet hoping there is no leſs Compaſſion in you than was in *David*, I truſt, that your Honour hath granted me a perfect Forgiveneſs. I was bold therefore after ſome ſmall ſhew of my true and unfeigned Repentance to addreſs theſe Letters unto your Honour; Hoping that once again you will vouchſafe to take me into Patronage. And that the rather, for that the Enemies of God will now hate me for my well doing.

For my Part, I hope, God will ſo underprop me which his Grace, as from henceforth you ſhall not hear of me ſo much as a light Suſpition, either of Treachery, Hypocriſy or Diſſimulation. And wheras I fear that my Couſin, *Anthony Cook*, be worthily fallen into Diſpleſure with me, for falſifying my Faith unto God, my Prince and your Lordſhip; I hope your Honours favourable good Word, ſpoken in my Behalf ſhall reconcile me unto his Good will and Favour again. The which once gained I ſhall the more carefully conſerve the ſame, than hitherto I have don. As for the Reſidue of my Kindred, according to the Proverb, I have many, but few Friends: And the fewer I ſhall have, for that I purpoſe to live in the Fear of God; like a good Subject, and a Chriſtian.

I hope therefore your Honour of your accuſtomed Pity will further me ſome way, that I may have *Victum & Veſtitum*: whereby I may the better ſerve God, my Prince and Country in my Vocation. Thus craving Pardon of your good Lordſhip for my bold Attempt, I ceaſe further troubling your Honour to this Time. Moſt humbly praying God for your long and proſperous Health. S. *Katharines*, the 12. *Decemb.* 1588.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble and daily Orator,

ANTH. TYREL.

NUMB. XXXVII.

Fleetwood *Rector of* Wigan, *to the Lord Treaſurer. Upon Occaſion of a new Commiſſion of Juſtices of Peace for the County of* Lancaſter *And the good Effect thereof.*

Rt. Honorable,

Cotton Libr. Titus B. 2.

BEING by your ſpecial good Favour made acquainted with your Honorable Action, concerning the Placing and Diſplacing of the Juſtices of Peace in the County of *Lancaſter*, I have thought it my part to advertiſe you of the Sequel therof. Which I might the more fully be able to do, I beſtowed my Attendance at the Aſſizes. Where I perceived in them that ſtand diſplaced no ſmall Indignation towards thoſe whom they could any ways ſuſpect to have been Furtherers, or ſuppoſe to be Favourers of that honourable Action. Wherewith alſo they preſumed to poſſeſs the Rt. Honorable the Earl of *Derby*, as of a Matter of no ſmall Diſhonour unto him, and deep Diſcontentment. Whereupon for the preſent Time and Place, I thought good (my, ſelf remaining in ſome part of jealouſy with them) in general to lay forth, as Occaſion ſerved, in the Pulpit to their Faces, that which before I had more particularly delivered to your Honour, concerning the Corrupt State of the whole Country. That every guilty Conſcience of them might gather

ther up that which was due unto it. Wherof it pleaſed my Lords, the Judges, to take ſo good Notice, that they delivered the chief Points therof after, to the Jurors in Charge, and the ſame alſo more eſpecially recommended to the Juſtices of Peace, to be in their continual Service regarded. All which ſo neerly touched the guilty Conſciences of the diſcontented Sorts; That they began, for the Reſidue of the Aſſizes, to pluck down their high Looks, and ſomewhat better to pacify their diſcontented Minds, and to brook their emulated Friends, than before they ſeemed to do.

After which immediately, when Matters were at the hotteſt, I alſo thought good to attend the Rt. Honorable, my very good Lord, the Earl of *Derby* by way of accuſtomed Duty, which I accordingly did; therby to give opportunity to his Lordſhip of Speech in the premiſed Matters, and my ſelf alſo to win Occaſion to lay forth that to his Honour concerning the Unſoundneſs of divers of his Counſil, as might either fully ſatisfy his Lordſhip, or at the leaſt clearly juſtify your Honours moſt conſiderate Action. But I obtained not one Word of the premiſed Matter, tho' I endeavoured to ſtir him up thereto by many Words on my part uttered concerning your Honours Direction of the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion. Wherat he ſeemed to have great good Liking, and profeſſed his beſt Furtherance thereto. Wherefore howſoever the diſcontented Sort, (the rather to countenance their diſcontented State) will ſeem to caſt upon his Lordſhip a prefixed Purpoſe of diſcontented Expoſtulation; yet I am perſuaded, when he ſhall come in Preſence with your Honour, it will be wholly turned into an honourable Requeſt of a moſt diſhonorable Matter. Wherin, that your Honour ſhould not be narrowly overtaken, as unfurniſhed of ſufficient Intelligence, I have withall ſpeed adreſt theſe my Letters to your Honour, as ſoon as I underſtood of the Earl his ſudden Departure towards the Court.

By which to give your Honour to underſtand, that as our State ſtandeth the Satisfaction of his Lordſhips Requeſt, or rather of the Suggeſtion of ſome evil Inſtruments about him, ſhall breed not a little Inconvenience to your Honour, his Honour their Reformation that are diſplaced, to the public Service, and to the good Eſtate of the ſincere Profeſſors, both of the Commiſſion, and of the whole Country. For firſt it ſhall argue your Honours former Action of Inſufficiency; being indeed in all Judgment of thoſe that fear God among us, moſt ſincerely, diſcretely and fully, to all good Purpoſes accompliſhed; both for the ſincere Comfort of the faithful Profeſſors of the Truth, and the rare Diſparagement of the Adverſaries thereof in our Country. Then it ſhall not a *little* nouriſh in the Earl that Humour of careleſs Security in tolerating and no ways ſoundly reforming the notorious Backwardneſs of the whole Company in Religion, and chief of the chiefeſt about him. In ſum, it ſhall harden the Diſcontented in their former State of Unſoundneſs. It ſhall drive the zelous Gentlemen from the public Service; and ſettle in the Minds of all the true Profeſſors an utter Deſpair of any good Courſe of Reformation hereafter to be taken in theſe Parts, when they ſhall ſe your Honours firſt Acts, and the ſame of ſo great Importance to their wel doing, to receive ſo ſpeedy and untimely an Overthrow. And therby a main Wall as it were, of corrupt Magiſtrates ſet up here at home among us, againſt all good Directions of your Honours hereafter to be made from above.

Theſe Conſiderations, Rt. Honorable, have cauſed me to wiſh the Earl to want in this Matter ſome part of his Deſire. Whom yet I honour many ways, not unworthily: And ſo likewiſe many others: if ſuch there be, that ſeek to have their private Humours of ſingular Sovereignty, ſtill nouriſhed with public Diſcommodity. Neither may your Honour think, that two, or but one more of his Lordſhips Counſil added (as it were but Mr. *Halſall*, or Mr. *Farrington*) to the Commiſſion, or Mr. *Rigby* of the *Quorum*) ſhall work no great Prejudice. For one bad Man among many, not all good, ſhall be able to do no ſmall Hurt.

Halſall is a Lawyer, preſented this laſt Aſſizes, as a Recuſant in ſome Degree. *Farrington* is as cunning as he: not any thing ſounder in Religion; tho' much more ſubtil to avoid the public Note, than he. *Rigby* is as cunning and unſound, as either; and as groſly to be detected therein, as *Halſal.* All three of them as buiſy contrivers of dangerous Devices againſt the Peace of the Miniſtry, and free Courſe of the Goſpel, and direct Proceding of Juſtice in all common Opinion, as any that ever bore Authority among us. If there were yet room for any more of his Lordſhips Counſil, it might rather be wiſht, that Mr. *Tildeſly*, or Mr. *Scarsbrick*, Gentlemen of beſt Note among the reſt, for honeſt and upright Dealing in civil Matters. But much rather to be wiſht, that his Honour would be perſuaded to hold himſelf ſufficiently contented with thoſe Three of his Counſil, and chief about him, which your Honour hath already unrequeſted freely given to his Lordſhip, namely, Sir *Peter Lee*, Sir *Richard Sherborn*, and Mr. *Rigby*; all three of the ſame Affection of the reſt. And yet *Rigby* as diſcontented, and as preſumptuouſly uſing his Speech againſt your Honours former Procedings as any that remain wholly expulsed. But it may be that his Honour, or ſome other, the rather to gain their Purpoſe, ſhall bring in queſtion the State of the preſent Commiſſion, in reſpect either of the whole Body of the Commiſſioners, or of the particular Members therof.

Wherefore I thought it alſo moſt expedient to lay forth unto your Honour the ſundry Obſervations which I have made in this Behalf. Firſt, for the whole Body of the Commiſſioners, they are ſo proportionably allotted to the Shire as our Store of Sound Men would any way afford. Five or Four or Three Juſtices at the leaſt unto every Hundred. By means wherof every Hundred hath his ſufficient Magiſtracy within it ſelf, and every Quarter Seſſions, (entertaining the moſt of them two Hundreds) a competent Number of Juſtices, and the General Aſſizes a ful furniſhed Bench of Worſhipful Gentlemen to countenance and attend that great and honorable Service. Which appeared evidently in the Ey of all Men this late Aſſizes by the moſt plentiful Concourſe of all the Gentlemen Juſtices well affected, from all Parts of the Shire: Providing therby, that neither the common Service, ſpecially laid upon them ſhould be disfurniſhed of due Attendance, nor the diſcontented Sort ſhould obtain any juſt Occaſion to argue your Honours Direction of Inſufficiency, or them of any Neglect of Duty. Where they employed themſelves ſo throughly in the Cauſe of Religion, that there enſued a moſt plentiful Detection of 600 Recuſants by Oath preſented; as alſo the Indictment of 87 of them, (as many as for the Time could be preferred to the Jury.) And further a Notification by Oath of 21 vagrant Prieſts uſually received in *Lanchaſhire*; and 25 notorious Houſes of Receit for them. Such are the manifold Commodities which we feel already by your Honours moſt ſound Direction. In reſpect wherof it is of all that deſire Reformation among us, (as Juſtice of her Children) moſt confidently juſtified.

The only Want in general is, the Want of ſound Gentlemen in moſt Parts of the Country, wherof (I aſſure my ſelf) they that promote the Office againſt your Honours Direction will ſay little. Hereunto your Honour conceived a moſt apt and neceſſary Supply, namely, the Attendences of the Juſtices of *Salford* Hundred at the Quarterly Seſſions of other Parts of the Country worſt affected. To which Effect it is given out, that your Honour hath already ſent down Letters to the Earl. But I fear me, his Lordſhips Abſence, and the ſiniſter Emulation of ſome of his Counſil; as namely, of Mr. *Farrington*, (as I certainly hear) will diſappoint them of their due Succeſs. Wherefore it were good your Honours more eſpecial Letters were written to the Gentlemen themſelves, of whom I doubt not but they ſhall enjoy a moſt dutiful Acceptance, and a moſt effectual Regard to the great Commodity of my ſelf and others that dwell in the moſt deſolate Parts of the Country, from all Goodneſs and good men.

Then for the particular Gentlemen, by your Honours more particular Direction aſſigned to this Service: as namely, Mr. *Warren*, and Mr. *Talbot*, moſt commodiouſly borrowed of the two Countries next adjoyning: Mr. *Baniſter* and Mr. *Hopwood*; for their former moſt approved Service, put forward to the *Quorum*: Mr. *Wrightington*, and Mr. *Brodſhaw*, for the ſpecial Benefit of the Miniſtry, moſt happily planted in the Parts where they both dwel; neceſſarily added: Mr. *Lancton*, Mr. *Eccleſton*, ſtill retained in place, moſt disfurniſhed of Able men for that Service; there is no Exception to be taken, either for their Gentry, Livings, Affections in Religion, good Diſcretion, and well furniſhed Experience for all Parts of the Services. And ſo I beſeech your Honour to reſt moſt reſolute upon my poor Credit with your Honour. Which I be eaſily able to uphold in this Matter with your Honour; with the moſt plentiful Teſtimony and Cenſure of my Brethren, the Preachers of the Country, and of the Gentlemen beſt affected in the Commiſſion, if your Honour require it of me.

In the mean time I ſhall crave your Honour to vouchſafe me your ſpecial Letters unto them of Encouragement and Direction; by which they ſhall not a little be ſtrengthned in the buiſy Charge they have in Hand, for the Suppreſſing of many ungodly Enormities of the Sabbath, impoſed upon them by my Lords, the Juſtices of Aſſize, at the ſpecial Inſtance of my ſelf and ſome other of my Brethren. Where I muſt not omit to ſignify unto your Honour the ſpecial good Countenance I enjoyed at their Lordſhips Hands; being indeed the more favourably beſtowed upon me, as upon ſpecial Notice they had ſome way taken, and there openly profeſſed, of your Honours good Favour towards me. Wherupon, I ſuppoſe your Honour ſhall gather convenient Occaſion to make your Honorable good Liking of their effectual Procedings this laſt Aſſizes in the Cauſe of Religion, to appear unto them. Wherby no doubt they ſhall receive no ſmall Encouragement to continue the ſame hereafter, to the great Comfort of the true Profeſſors and faithful Preachers. For the which I ſhall not ceaſe to be thankful to the Lord, withall my Brethren of the Miniſtry. By which we ſhall enjoy a moſt ſound Means of Thankfulneſs to your Honour.

Concerning my Procedings with the Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical, I have according to your Honours Direction, wholly poſſeſt Mr. Soliciter therewith. And he further required of me and Mr. *Goodman* a full Advertiſement of our manifold Enormities; which by mutual Conference with all my Brethren, I have readily furniſhed; and againſt the next Week to attend the Biſhop and Mr. Solicitor by their Appointment. I fear nothing therin, but my Lord of *Darby* his Diſcontinuance: leſt it breed ſome inconvenient Delays. But your Honours continual Preſence and ready Mind, ſhall work us, I truſt in the Lord, a more ſpeedy Diſpatch.

Commiſſion Eccleſiaſtical.

Thus commending my humble Duty to your Honour, and your Soul and Spirit and Body to the moſt comfortable Preſence of Chriſts Spirit in you now and for ever, I humbly take my Leave. From *Wigan*, the 7 day of *September*, 1587.

Your Honours moſt bounden in the
Lord, EDWARD FLEETWOODDE
Paſtor of Wigan.

NUMB.

NUMB. XXXVIII.

Perſons executed under Q. ELIZABETH, *Prieſts and others, of the Popiſh Religion,* in the Years 1570. 71. 73. 77. 78. 1581. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. *As they are ſet down in a Book, intitled,* Theatrum Crudelitatis Hæreticorum in Anglia : *Printed* 1587. *at* Antwerp.

Prieſts.

Thomas Woodhouſe.
Cutbert Mayne.
John Nelſon.
Everard Hance.
John Shert.
Robert Johnſon,
William Tilby,
Luke Kirby,
Laurence Richardſon,
Tho. Cotton,
John Pain,
William Lacy,
Richard Kirkman,
James Thomſon,
William Hart,
Richard Threlkeld.

Prieſts.

P. Edm. Campion,
Rodulph Cervine,
Alexander Briant,
Tho. Ford,
John Mundin,
John Nutter,
George Haddock,
James Fenn,
Thomas Hemerford,
Tho. Alfield, *
James Bell,
Hugh Taylor,
Edward Stranſham
Nicolas Woodfin,
Francis Engleby.

* *He was executed for bringing in Cardin.* Allens *Books.*

Laics.

Tho. Percy, Earl of *Northumberland.* Whoſe Brother *Henry* not long ago was Murthered in Priſon.
Joh. Story, *Jur. D.*
John Felton, Gent.
Tho. Sherwood,
James Laburn, Gent.
John Fynche,

Laics.

Richard Wit,
John Bode,
John Slaide,
Tho. Webly,
Will. Carter,
Margaret Middleton,
Marmaduke Bous [Bowes] Gent.

Such as were executed for Religion, in the Reign of King Henry VIII. in the Years 1535 37. 38. 39. 1541. 43. *as they are are ſet down in the* Theatrum.

Prieſts, to the Number of 52. Wherof one Cardinal [*Fiſher,*] nine Abbots, three Priors. Beſides thirty two *Franciſcans,* that dyed in Several Priſons. And *Laics* Six. Whereof two of them were Sir *Tho. More,* Lord Chancellor, and the Counteſs of *Salisbury.*

But in Truth, ſome of them ſuffered for denying the Kings Supremacy: and others about the Buſineſs of the Holy Maid of *Kent.*

NUMB. XXXIX.

A Decree of the Vicechancellor and Heads of the Univerſity of Cambridg, *for diſcommoning* Edmunds, *the Maior of the ſaid Town.*

Maii 27. 1587.

QUIA conſtat Ven. Viro *Jobi. Copcot*, S. Th. P. hujus Almæ Academiæ Procan. & majori parti Præpoſitorum Coll. & aliorum Doctorum in Univerſitate præſentium. *Viz.* Doctorum, *Goad*, *Norgat*, *Tyndal*, *Hickman*, *Betts*, *Ward*, *Baroe*, *Mundeford*, Magiſtrorum, *Whitaker*, *Barwell*, *Preſton*, & *Nevell*, *Johannem Edmundi*, modernum Majorem Villæ *Cant.* gravem, imo maximam Ingratitudinem adverſus Academiam, Scholares, & eorum famulos, exhibuiſſe, & exhibere: Idcirco D. Procan. Præpoſiti Collegiorum, & cætus Doctorum ſuper nominatorum, ſecundum Statuta Univerſitatis, decreverunt; Quod nullus Scholaris, aut ſub privilegio Scholarum, in hac Univerſitate degens, deinceps, & in poſterum, aliquo modo, directè vel indirectè, emptione, venditione, contractu, aut quaſi, cum eodem *Johe. Edmundi*, alias *Meers*, ingratiſſimo, aut contrahat, aut communicet, ſub pæna 100 ſol. legalis monetæ *Angliæ*, communi ciſtæ Academiæ præd. ſolvend. toties quoties in contrarium huic Decreto aliquid quiſquam prædictorum attentaverit. Regiſtr. Acad.Cantab.

Acta pub. Acad. Cantab. ad ann. 1587.

[NUMB. XXXIX.]

The Maſter and Fellows of Peter Houſe *in* Cambridge, *to the Lord* Burghley; *Occaſioned by the Queens Letter to them, to admit one unqualified to be Fellow of their College againſt their Statutes.*

Rt. Honorable, and our very good Lord.

WHEREAS her moſt excellent Majeſty hath of late directed unto us her Gracious Letters of Diſpenſation in the behalf of one *John Teniſon*, Student in our College; and therin hath willed us, notwithſtanding his Degree, being Maſter of Artes, to elect, and admit him into the Place of a Fellow, either preſently void, or next hereafter to become void, in our ſaid College; Which gracious Favour hath been vouchſafed to the ſaid *Teniſon*, chiefly in Conſideration of his Poverty, and Want of Maintenance, as may appear by the Copy of her Highneſs Letter encloſed: *MSS.*Burghlian.

May it pleaſe your good Lordſhip to underſtand, that by divers Points of certain Statutes (wherunto upon our Oaths we are ſtraitly bound) being not yet diſpenſed with by her Highneſs, we are barred from accompliſhing her Highneſs Pleſure in the ſaid Behalf. As namely, it is required by our ſaid Statutes, that the ſaid *Teniſon* ſhould ſtand a Year in Probation and at the End therof ſhould be admitted by the Biſhop of *Ely*, or Viſitor, or by ſome Deputed for him in like Caſes. And further, that he ſhould be poor, and of a quiet and humble Spirit. Wheras on the contrary, he is taken to be of ſufficient Hability. For that heretofore he hath been taken Ward; and of late the Thirds of his Mother have fallen to him. Beſides a Leaſe, as we are informed, yielding a yearly Rent, exceeding the Rate of Living allowed by our Statutes: Having otherwiſe of certain Worſhipful Friends very good and

ſufficient Allowance by the Year. And during the Time of this his Suit, he hath ſhewed ſome manifeſt Tokens of Diſpoſition, *neither quiet nor humble*.

And further, it may pleaſe your good Lordſhip to be advertiſed, that as we have not any Room void at this preſent; ſo for the next Places, we have provided before the coming of her Highneſs Letter, an Election of Four young Men very poor, and utterly deſtitute of Maintenance; yet very ſtudious and of great Towardneſs in Vertue and Learning, and brought up among us in the Places of poor Scholars. By reaſon wherof they were the rather capable of Preferment by the Statutes of our Houſe. And accordingly have been elected. For all which Cauſes, not diſpenſed with by her Majeſty, we do, in moſt humble and earneſt maner, pray and beſeech your Lordſhip, of lawful Favour to us, our Statutes and the ſaid young men, to whoſe great Prejudice and Diſcouragement the Suite of the ſaid *Teniſon* directly tendeth, that being not in Caſe to continue in the Univerſity, if by reaſon of the ſaid Suit, the ſaid Election ſhould miſcarry. As alſo, to the Diſturbance of our Quiet, and of the ſaid lawful and orderly Election.

And further, we beſeech your good Lordſhip to be an Honorable Means to her Majeſty, that wheras at divers and ſundry Times heretofore we have performed all due Obedience to her Highneſs to the like Suits, to the manifeſt violating and infringing of our ſaid Statutes, we may now at the laſt be ſuffered to uſe the Liberty of the ſame. And namely at this Time, when we cannot pleſure the ſaid *Teniſon* without the manifeſt Prejudice and hurt of ſo many poor and forward young Men. As upon the Sight and Knowledg of her Majeſtys Mind, we were in all Humbleneſs of Duty and Reverence willing to do. And we aſſure your Lordſhip, that when it ſhall appear unto us that the ſaid *Teniſon* is not able, as it is ſuppoſed and reported to be, we can be contented to pleſure him all we may; that is to take Order for his Entrance next after the ſaid young men already choſen; he bearing himſelf in the meantime in other Reſpects, provided for by our ſaid Statutes; as one capable of ſuch Preferment. And this to perform by Vertue of her Highneſs; Command without any further Delay or Let at all to the Contrary.

Thus our Duty to your good Lordſhip remembred, in moſt humble maner, we commit the ſame, in our Prayers, to the Almighty; Beſeeching his Heavenly Majeſty to bleſs the ſame, with Encreaſe of good Health and Honour, to his Glory, and the Comfort of many with us.

Your Lordſhips ever at Commandment.

Andrew Pern,
Richard Betts,
Marke Sadlington,
John Mountford,

Peter Baro,
Raphe Amery,
Fynes Moriſon,
John Blythe.

NUMB.

N U M B. XL.

The Maſter and Fellows of Chriſts *College* Cambridg, *to the Lord Treaſurer ; Thanking him for putting ſo ſeaſonable an End to a long Controverſy between* Dr. Copcot, *late Vicechancellor, their Viſitor, and them.*

To the Rt. Honorable and our very good Lord, the Lord Burghley, *Lord high Treaſurer of* England, *and chief Chancellor of the Univerſity of* Cambridg.

CUM curam tuam qua Reip. ſummam complecti ſoles, Honoratiſſime Domine, ad privatas Collegii noſtri res demittere dignatus fueris, ac ſingulari & prædicanda humanitate certis viris negotium per literas dederis, ut de cauſa quæ inter procancellarium ac nos controverſa eſſet dijudicarent ; alterum neceſſitas expreſſit, ut de tota re quid actum ſit Honorem tuum certiorem faceremus, alterum meriti tui magnitudo libentibus ac volentibus nobis, imò cupientibus elicuit, ut quàm qua maximas quamq; mens hominis capere poteſt ampliſſimas ageremus gratias, ob maximum æternumq; beneficium tuum. Literas ergo tuas, vir Honoratiſs. ad quos ſcriptæ erant iis dedimus, qui & ipſi procancellario legendas tradiderunt : ille verò cum primum judices ſibi ferri recuſaſſet poſtea tamen Summâ certe (ut nos interpretamur) benignitate & modeſtia, ne alterutri parti, ſi ſecundum ſe nôſve deciſa lis eſſet, levis aliqua labecula aut nota addita videri poſſet, rem ſilentio effluere paſſus eſt, & quem diem viſitationis ſuæ prolationi dixerat, ad eum diem ipſe non aderat : ita viſitatione defuncti ſumus : quæ certè niſi, immortali beneficio tuo, & magna procancellarii moderatione, hunc exitum habuiſſet, turbulentiſſimæ profectò (ne quid gravius dicamus) tempeſtates extitiſſent, & collegio vel vincenti parum utiles. Tibi ergo, Honoratiſſime *Burghleie*, quem toties afflictas res noſtras erigere atq; excitare voluit Deus, quòd florentes ſumus, quod liberi, tibi uni acceptum referendum eſt ; quem cum habeamus authorem ſalutis voluimus etiam grati noſtri animi habere teſtem : ſed cum id non tam oratione qua re appareat, nulla autem res eſſe queat ; quæ à nobis in tantam fortunæ amplitudidinem, pro meritis tuis, proficiſci poſſit, cum omnia dixerimus, id tantum conſequi nos fatendum eſt, non ut grati, ſed ne ingrati fuiſſe videamur Deum ergo Opt. Max. precamur veneramúrq;, ut is, vicem noſtram, te augeat ornétq; omnemq; tibi vitam, jam longam, lætam, atq; honorificam, & cum naturæ conceſſeris beatam immortalemq; eſſe velit. ———— Dat. *Cantabrigiæ* è Collegio *Chriſti*. MSS. Academ.

Honori tuo plane devoti, Præfectus & Socii Collegii Chriſti.

Edm. Barwell.

Guilielmus Perkins.
Johannes Powell.
Thomas Morton.
Thomas Bradocke.
William Knight.

Franciſcus Johnſon.
Robertus Baines.
Georgius Downame.
Andreas Williatt.
Cuthbert Bambrigg.

NUMB XLI:

The Epiſtle of the Univerſity of Oxford, *to the Lord Treaſurer: In thankful Acknowledgment of Favours ſhewn them.*

MSS. Academ.

NON quaſi (vir honoratiſs.) inſolitum hoc, aut etiam ſolum in nos collatum beneficium extitiſſet, quòd dudum in rebus Academicis ſuſcipiendis, tantum tibi negotium faceſſeres, idcirco ſolennes has gratias Amplitudini tuæ inſtituendas, arbitrari velimus: at verò, cum tua (quantúm ab eruditiſſi. noſtro vicecancellario accepimus) aliis atq; aliis, nos Academiamq; noſtram, ornandis beneficiis, pietas indies ſuccreſceret auctiorq; fieret, gratitudinem noſtram ſilentio perire, & prolabi, improbitatis eſſe duximus: præſertim cum, ea fuerit modò Amplitudinis tuæ non cura ſolum, ſed plane anxietas & ſolicitudo, ut prius eam, in rebus noſtris verſari intellexerimus, quàm honorem tuum eas intelligere potuiſſe putaremus. Quarè (ne multis Amplitudini tuæ, rerum agendarum immenſitate, obrutæ, importum videamur) cum tua nunquam inſperata, reipſa, jam notiſſima, animosomnium noſtrûm Amplitudini tuæ, tam digno, tam indiſſolubili, tam deniq; volenti & non violento vinculo, pietas devinxerit & colligarit, ut fortiori, etiamſi maxime cupiamus, minimè tamen poſſimus, nec certè alio quoquam, niſi hâc certâ animorum conſenſione, gratificari; nos omnium ſæliciſſimos judicaverimus, ſi honori tuo, hoc noſtrum quod reliquum eſt, grati animi munuſculum, acceptum iri intellexerimus. Quod quidem ità eſſe, Amplitudo tua planum efficiet, ſi gratias, quæ pietate tua, dignæ exprimi non poterant, eas, tacitis cogitationibus noſtris, magnas imprimi, multipliceſq; confundi, id quod res eſt interpretari voluerit. Deus Opt. Max. Amplitudinem tuam quam diutiſſimè reipub. ſervet incolumem. Decemb. 18.

Ampliſſimo, honoratiſſimoq; Viro,
Dno. CECILIO Baroni de
Burghleigh, ſummo totius *Angliæ*
Theſaurario, Regiæ Majeſtati ab
intimis Conſiliis, Dno. noſtro
Colendiſs.

Honoris tui ſtudioſiſſima,

Academia Oxon.

NUMB. XLII.

Mr. William Lambard *to the Lord Treaſurer. Upon Notice of his being nominated for a Judge, or ſome other eminent Place in the Law.*

MSS Burghlian.

AFTER my moſt humble and bounden Duty, My Rt. Honorable good Lord, your Lordſhips Letters of the 30. of *September* were even now delivered to my Hand, having (by whoſe Default I wot not) ſuffered that great delay in the Coming towards me. Which howſoever it may fall out to my Detriment in the Matter that they purport, yet came they not unſeaſonable to glad my poor Heart, in that they were the infallible Meſſengers, not only of the Continuance, but of the Encreaſe (if any may be) of your moſt honorable Favour, and Diſpoſition to work my Good. Who as I never demerited any thing at your Hands, ſo neverthleſs have I drawn more from the Fountain of your mere Bounty, than from all the good Willes and Wyles of all the Perſons that be alive. Thus tyed, I may not ceaſeto pray to God for

your Honour: Praying withal, that he will make my Prayer effectual for you.

As touching the Matter contained in your Lordſhips Letter, albeit I know mine own Inſufficiency, (now alſo encreaſed by Decay of Sight, and Diſcontinuance from Study) to ſerve in any Place where Wiſdom or Learning muſt be ſet on Work; yet acknowledging, that I do reap ſome Benefit by her Majeſty (which I received from the free Hand of your Honour) I hold my ſelf double bounden to ſerve her Highneſs with all the Powers that I have. And the rather alſo, for that it hath pleaſed you, my moſt Honorable Lord, to give my Name, and your Report of me. Therefore ——— Only I do moſt humbly beſeech your Lordſhip to add this unto the reſt of your great Favours vouchſafed, that I may be not inveſted in the Service, but upon Probation: and for this next Term onely; To the End, that after ſuch an Experiment, and Conference made of my ſmall Abilities with the Office it ſelf, I may faithfully (and in that Duty which I bear to God, her Majeſty and your Honour) aſſure your good Lordſhip, whether I ſhall find my ſelf fit to diſcharge the Truſt that belongeth to the Place.

Thus much I moſt humbly pray your good Lordſhip to accept at this Time; and until that I may, as Duty bindeth, perſonally attend your good Lordſhip which alſo, by the Favour of God, I will not fail with all good Speed to perform. And ſo I moſt humbly take my Leave of you, my Rt. Honorable Lord; and do in my hearti
eſt Prayer recommend you to the gracious Protection of the Almighty. From *Hallyng* this 4. of *Octob.* 1589.

Your Lordſhips moſt humble and
bounden,
WILL. LAMBARDE.

[NUMB. XLII.]

Certain true general Notes upon the Actions of the Lord Burghley. *In Anſwer to a Libell.*

Cott. Librar.

BUT above all, it is a ſtrange Fancy in the Libeller, that he maketh his Lordſhip to be *Primum Mobile* in every Action without Diſtinction. That to him her Majeſty is accountant of her Reſolutions; and to him the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and the Secretary Mr. *Walſingham*, both men of great Power, and great Wiſdome, were but as Inſtruments. Wheras it is well known that as to her Majeſty, there was never Counſillor of his Lordſhips long Continuance, that was ſo appliable to her Majeſtys princely Reſolutions, labouring always after faithful Propoſitions and Remonſtrances (and thoſe in the beſt Words, and the moſt grateful maner) to reſt upon ſuch Concluſions, as her Majeſty in her own Wiſdom determineth: and them to execute to the beſt. So far hath he been from Conteſtation, or drawing her Majeſty into any his own Courſes.

And as for the forenamed Counſillors, and others with whom his Lordſhip hath conſorted in her Majeſtys Service, it is rather true, that his Lordſhip, out of the greatneſs of his Experience and Wiſdom, and out of the Coldneſs of his Nature, hath qualified generally all hard and extreme Courſes, as far as the Service of her Majeſty and the Safty of the State, and the making himſelf compatible with thoſe with whom he ſerved in like Parity. So far hath his Lordſhip been from inciting others, or running a full Courſe with them in that kind. But yet it is more ſtrange, that this Man ſhould be ſo aſſuredly Malicious, as he ſhould charge his Lordſhip not only with all Actions of State, but alſo with all the Faults and Vices of the Times. As if Curioſity and Emulation have bred ſome Controverſies in the Church, (tho' Thanks be to God, they extend but to outward Things) if Wealth and the Cunning of Wits have brought forth multitudes of Suits of Law; if Exceſs in Pleſure or in Magnificence, joyned with the Unfaithfulneſs of Servants, and the Greatneſs of many men, have decayed the Patrimony of many Noble men and others; that all theſe and ſuch like Condition of the Time, ſhould be put upon his Lordſhips Account, who hath been as far as to his Place appertaineth a moſt religious and wiſe Moderator, in Church Matters, to have Unity kept. Who with great Juſtice hath diſpatched infinite Cauſes in Law, that have been orderly brought before him. And for his own Example, may ſay (that few may ſay) that what was ſaid by *Cephalus*, the *Athenian*, ſo much renouned in *Plato*'s Works, who having lived neer unto the Age of an hundred Years, and in continual Affairs and Buſines, was wont to ſay of himſelf thus, *He never ſued any, neither had been ſued by any.* Which by occaſion of his Office, hath preſerved many great Houſes from Overthrow by relieving ſundry Extremities towards ſuch as in their Minorities have been circumvented. And towards all ſuch as his Lordſhip might adviſe, did ever perſuade ſober and limited Expence.

Nay, to make Proof further of his contented maner of Life, free from Suits and Covetouſneſs, as he never ſued any Man ſo did he never raiſe any Rent, or put out any Tenant of his own, or ever give Conſent to have the like don to any of the Queens Tenants: Matters ſingular to be noted in his Age. But he that will blame his Lordſhip for the Tales of every *Novellante*, and for the vain and fond Pamphlets, and Ballads of every idle Fellow; that will put News in Writing, or in Print, ſometimes upon Gain, ſometimes upon Humour; Wheras his Lordſhip neither hath any Charge of the Preſs, neither can his great and weighty Buſineſs permit him to intend ſuch Trifles; doth ſhew, that tho' this Libeller meant to ſpare no Powder, yet ſurely, he ſhot but at rovers.

But however by this Fellow, as in a falſe artificial Glaſs, which is able to make the beſt Face deformed and hideous, his Lordſhips Doings be ſet forth; yet let his Procedings, which be indeed his own, be indifferently weighed and conſidered, and let men call to mind, that his Lordſhip was never no violent and tranſported Man in Matters of State, but ever Reſpective and Moderate, that he was never no Vindicative Man; in particular, no breaker of Necks, no heavy Enemy, but ever placable and mild; that he was never no Brewer of Holy Water in Court, no Dallier, no Abuſer; but ever real and certain: that he was never no Bearing Man, nor Carrier of Cauſes, but ever gave way to Juſtice and Courſe of Law: that he was never no glorious, wilful, proud Man, but ever civil, familiar, and good to deal withall. That in the Courſe of his Service, he hath rather ſuſtained the Burthen, than ſought the Function of Honour or Profit: Scarcely ſparing any Time from his Cares and Travail to the Suſtentation of his Health. That he never had nor ſought to have, for himſelf or his Children, any penny Worth of Land or Goods, that appertained to any Perſon, that was attainted of any Treaſon, Felony, or otherwiſe. That he never had, nor ſought any kind of Benefit by any Forfeiture to her Majeſty. That he never was a factious Commender of men to her Majeſty, as he that any ways intended to beſiege Her, by bringing in his at his Devotion; but was ever a true Reporter unto Her of every mans Deſert and Ability. That he never took the Courſe to unquiet or offend her Majeſty; but to content her Mind, and mitigate her Diſpleſure. That he ever bare himſelf reverently, and without Scandal in Matters of Religion, and without Blemiſh in his private Courſe of Life.

Let men, I ſay, without paſſionate Malice, call to mind theſe things, and they will think it reaſon, that tho' he be not Canonized for a Saint at *Rome*, yet he is worthily celebrated as *Pater Patriæ* in *England*. And tho' he be Libellated againſt by Fugitives, yet he is prayed for by a Multitude of good Subjects. And laſtly, tho' he be ſomewhat envied without juſt Cauſe, while he liveth, yet he ſhall be deeply wanted, when he is gon. And aſſuredly many Princes have had many Servants of Truſt and Sufficiency: but where there hath been great Parts, there hath often wanted Temper of Affection. Where there hath been Ability and Moderation, there hath wanted Diligence and Love of Travail. Where all three have been, there have wanted ſometimes Faith and Sincerity. Where ſome have had all theſe Four, yet they have wanted Time and Experience. And where there is a Concurrence of all theſe, there it is no Marvail that a Prince of Judgment be conſtant in the Employment and Truſt of ſuch a Perſon: of whoſe Faithfulneſs, as She hath had Proof ſo many Years in her own Time, as it were very hard, but if he had gon about to abuſe Her, at ſome time ſhe ſhould have eſpyed it; So to begin withall, he brought with him ſuch a notable Evidence of his conſtant Loyalty, as a greater could not have been.

For to confirm her Majeſtys Opinion in chooſing him to be her firſt Counſellor, as he is the only Counſillor living of thoſe She did uſe many Years from the Beginning of her Crown, ſo ſhe had Cauſe to do. For that he, of all other Counſillors, in King *Edwards* Time, refuſed to conſent to the Determination of a pretended Will of King *Edwards*, to deprive the Lady *Mary*, afterwards Queen, and then the Lady *Elizabeth*, now Queen. For whom two Times he only of all the then Counſillors, did for Conſcience ſake adhere, to the Peril of his Head, if Queen *Mary* had not enjoyed the Crown. For the which it is well known, that Queen *Mary* did not only reward him, but offered him to have been of her Counſil. Which he for good reſpects did forbear to accept.

NUMB. XLIII.

The Earl of Leiceſter *to the Lord Treaſurer Juſtifying himſelf for ſome angry Speeches, uſed to that Lord: Who had thwarted him in ſomewhat diſcourſed before the Queen in Council.*

MSS. Burghlian.

My Lord,

I Know not from whence my Hap hath it, but hit hath fallen out ſundry Times, both contrary to my Expectation; (and much leſs by any Deſert of mine,) that I have found your Lordſhip more ready to thwart and croſs my Endeavours, than any other mans; eſpecially, in the Preſence of her Majeſty; and for ſuch Cauſes as I have been the more earneſt in: when by your Lordſhips own Allowance and Opinion hit had been ſo reſolved on by our Conference before, as fit and meet Advices to be given her Majeſty, for the beſt Furtherances of her own Services. And theſe Cauſes have lately been moſt in Queſtion, in which I my ſelf by her Appointment, have been furtheſt employed [*Viz.* about Aſſiſtance of the *Low Countries.*] And therefore did, both at your Lordſhips Hands, and other my Lords, hope to be aſſiſted and comforted, ſo far as my Opinion ſhould tend to the Service of her Majeſty, and to Matters being before by your Lordſhip and others debated and agreed upon. Wherefore finding it to fall out otherwiſe, and to draw Difference in Argument, where there was good Aſſent before, what was it, but to leave mee in her Majeſtys Opinion to be a Man either affectionate, or opiniative in mine own Conceits; and withall to ſe her Majeſtys Service hindred, and to take Lack through ſuch needleſs and unprofitable Controverſies among Counſillors.

Albeit I know and grant among Counſillors there may and muſt riſe, by way of Argument, Diviſions in Opinion; which is both lawful and very convenient: and oft doth, without any Cauſes of Miſlike at all. And, God forbid, there ſhould be. But my Lord, in theſe Cauſes we have been two or three Times before her Majeſty, we had debated the Matter before. And the Courſe I took was no other, than your Lordſhip did beſt like, and moſt adviſe. And to fall into contrary Opinions before her Majeſty, cauſed me both to take it ill; and to ſhew it plainly to you, as I did. And for the Words which I added withal, which your Lordſhip doth ſet down in your Letter, that I did charge you with ſome Matters towards her Majeſty; Aſſuredly, my Lord, I uſed no ſuch Words. But finding my ſelf grieved with ſuch croſs Handling, as both at this and at other Times I have don, I told your Lordſhip I ſaw your Lordſhip very ready to croſs me now a days before her Majeſty. That I like it ſo ill, that I would and could find way to anger you as well. And that I had not dealt in this ſort either with you, or any of yours; but much otherwiſe. And ſo, my Lord, I have don to my poor Power, and with as much Deſire to have you my aſſured Friend as any Friend you have found in *England*, which finding theſe Occaſions more than once, falling to my Lot, I can hardly diſſemble, or bear the unkind Dealing of them: but rather to deal as I am dealt withall: when all Kindneſs is not only ſo little regarded, but hardly requited.

In which Conceit, my Lord, I pray you, think I can be as others are to me. And to that End was my Speech, and my Meaning. And that I ſaid was to your Lordſhips ſelf, and before none other; but moved, as your Lordſhip ſaid, in Paſſion. And as I have been loth to have the Occaſion that ſhould drive me, to take ſuch hard, or unkind Courſes as I ſee ſome do, and my ſelf very deeply felt.

Thus much, my Lord, I have thought good to ſet down; which receiving your Lordſhips Letter, even as I came away from the Court, had no Time till late this Night to anſwer. Wherein I will not hide the Conceit I had upon the Cauſes I have ſhewed; finding my ſelf indeed heartily moved and grieved: but plainly and flatly to deliver my Mind, rather than to diſſemble as many can. Leaving to your Lordſhip to conſider of my Doings, how you have found them, if I be well uſed. And ſo in very Haſt, leaving the reſt, till I ſpeak with your ſelf, I commit you to the Lord; From my Houſe this Monday night.

Your Lordſhips very Friend, if you
ſo regard me,

R. LEYCESTER,

NUMB. XLIV.

John Fox *his Epiſtle to Dr.* Laurence Humphrey, *Preſident of* Magdalene *College*, Oxon, *and the Scholars of the ſame*; *Written with his own Hand, before his Book of Martyrs*; *Preſented to the ſaid College.*

Multis magniſq; dotibus Ornatiſſimo Viro D. Laurentio *Colleg Megdalenſis Præſidi: pariter cum Univerſio Choro reliquorum Juvenum, lectiſſimiſq; ejuſdem Collegii Sociis.*

Joannes Foxus Salutem & Pacem in Chriſto ſine fine.

MSS. S. Magdan. Coll. Oxon.

ETSI nihil erat in rebus meis dignum atq; idoneum quod *B. Mariæ Magdalenæ*, veteris hoſpitæ ac nutricis meæ pixidi mitterem; at Viduæ tamen Evangelicæ opulentam illam imitatus penuriam, has qualeſcunq; Lucubrationum noſtrarum minutias, pro veteri meo erga Vos ſtudio, vel officio potius,

tius, Eximie, idemq; Doctiſſime Laurenti, præſidum decus, Voſq; pariter univerſi ejuſdem Sodalitatis Collegæ conjunctiſſimi, in publicum ærarium veſtrum conjiciendas cenſui. Vos in admittendo libro ſtatuetis, pro libero arbitratu veſtro, quod videbitur. Mihi, ut ingenuè fatear indignius quiddam, ac jejunius eſſe videtur, quam ut in Chartophylacium veſtrum recipi debeat; præſertim quum eo ſermonis genere conſcripta Hiſtoria nullum Magnopere uſum ſtudiis veſtris præſtare queat. Et tamen huc me, neſcio quo pacto, pertraxit, vincens pudorem & judicium meum, *Garbrandi* Bibliopolæ pellex oratio, ſic ad perſuadendum inſtructa, ut non fruſtra in tali tam diu Academia videri poſſit enutritus. Auxit porro nonnihil hanc mittendi fiduciam tacita quædam, & jam olim inſita mihi erga Collegium iſtud propenſio, Veſtræ deinde erga me humanitatis, ſimulq; mei viciſſim erga Vos officii recordatio. Intelligo enim quid veteri Scholæ, quid charis Conſodalibus, quid demum univerſo *Magdalenſium* Ordini ac cætui, ſed præcipue quid ipſi imprimis chariſſimo Collegiarchæ, viro ornatiſſimo, *D. Laurentio* debeam: cui quot, quantiſq; ſim nominibus devinctus, nullo modo oblivíſci aut præterire potero. Præter hos ſtimulos accedit deniq;, quod quum Hiſtoriæ hujus bona magnaque pars Oxonienſem hanc veſtram attingat Academiam, unde ceu ex fonte, prima non ſolum initia ſed & incrementa ſumpſit, ac ſumit quotidie fælix hæc & auſpicata Reformatæ per Orbem Chriſtianum Religionis propagatio; id circo rem facturus, nec vobis ingratam, nec meo indignam officio videbar, ſi de rebus maximè *Oxonienſibus* conſcriptam Hiſtoriam, ad *Magdalenæum* Gymnaſium veſtrum, hoc eſt, ad primarium ac nobiliſſimum Oxonienſis Academiæ Collegium, velut in arce quadam ſtudiorum ac literarum, penes vos aſſervandam commendarem. Hoc unum dolet, Latinè non eſſe ſcriptum opus, quo vel ad plures emanare fructus hiſtoriæ, vel vobis jucundior ejus eſſe poſſet Lectio. Atq; equidem multo id maluiſſem: ſed huc me adegit communis Patria ac multitudinis ædificandæ reſpectus, cui & vos ipſos idem hoc redonare æquum eſt. Habetis rationes & cauſas, quibus ad mittendam Hiſtoriam ſum provocatus. Nunc Hiſtoriam habete ipſam, quam, veluti pro teſſera *Foxianæ* erga vos voluntatis mittimus. Eam, pro candore veſtro, rogo etiam atq; etiam, benignè ſuſceptam velitis. Atq; ne nihil aliud quam Hiſtoriam nudam & incomitatam mittere videamur, en! ſimul cum Hiſtoria, inter cæteros, quos in hoc Multiplici & numeroſo Chriſtianorum Militum ſatellitio *Oxonia* veſtra, tanqam fælix Mater, tum imprimis *Magdalenæ* fæliciſſima fæcunditas, produxit *Jocelimum* veſtrum *Palmerum*, e choro veſtro proximis his annis ereptum, denuo ad vos tanquam redeuntem & reſtitutum recipietis: ſimulq; cum eo cæteros, nec paucos, nec vulgares Oxoniæ veſtræ quondam Alumnos nunc illuſtres Chriſtianæ Militiæ Agoniſtas tanquam veterem. *Martyrii* Scholam gratis animis ſuſcipite, & Chriſtum in Martyribus ſuis glorificate. Quod ſupereſt, quoniam Chartæ arctamur anguſtia, rogo, præſtantiſſimi Juvenes, ut Dominus Jeſus iſtum vobis præſidem, Vos orbi & Eccleſiæ Chriſtianæ diu ſervet incolumes, veſtraq; ſtudia indies in majus ac melius provehat ad Nominis ſui gloriam.

Veſter in Chriſto

Londini, *Maii* 24. [1562.]

JOANNES FOXUS.

NUMB.

NUMB. XLV.

Mr. Rither, *a Gentleman* in the North, *his Letter to the Lord Treaſurer* Burghley*: Conſolatory; upon the Death of his Mother, the Lady* Cecill*; dying in thoſe Parts.*

MSS. Burghlian.

MANY are the Perſuaſions, lying upon your Lordſhip to take this Cauſe of Grief, as becometh your Gravity. And tho' *Socrates* and *Phocian* are ſufficing Witneſſes, that deep, wiſe Minds are ſeldom moved with intemperate Joyes or immoderate Sorrows, (the Uncomelineſs of both which *Plutarch* condemneth) yet all this cannot diſcharge my Duty, burthening me with your Lordſhips Care, in reſpect of my private, but more for the common Good of my Country: knowing, that a Mite, when Might can afford no more, will be accepted. And if the Griefs, in reſpect of your Lordſhips Grief for this Cauſe, impoſed upon the Back of all the beſt affected Subjects of this Realm, yea, and upon our Sovereign her ſelf, might eaſe your Lordſhip, no doubt the Weight would then be moſt light and eaſy, where the Burthen now lyeth moſt heavy and painful. By which this Comfort may accrew to your Lordſhips Mind, that next her Majeſty, all the good Hopes of all good men, in their good Cauſes, principally do depend upon your Lordſhips Health, Life and Help.

Your Honour daily ſaith to God, *Thy Will be don.* If we could all at all Times ſo think, there would be no Adverſity come to men, for our Croſſes commonly of Diſcontentment with his Will, that muſt command all Wills. Who as he is beſt, doth all for our beſt; if we do not oppoſe our ſelves againſt our Sovereign Good. And this is manifeſt, that to Chriſtians there ought no Croſs to ſeem bitter; becauſe all know, that he which did no Sin, endured worſe for our Sins, than he offereth to any of us for our own. And all adverſe Accidents, be they never ſo much againſt our Minds, we are yet aſſured that they do either exerciſe in Patience, correct to Amendment, or ſatisfy the merciful Juſtice of God. Can wee then, within any Compaſs of our Duty, think otherwiſe?

When *Paulus Emylius* the Pagan, yet a moſt worthy and nobler Pillar of the Common wealth of his Country, took the loſs of his only two Sons, chancing immediately after he had proſperouſly delivered the Empire from a dangerous Enemy, to be a Satisfaction for the Juſtice of the Gods, having ſo good Cauſe of Offence againſt the *Romans*, now by their continual good Succeſs and Greatneſs grown newly into the Vice of ſuch Nations, as by their old virtuous Diſciplin they had ſubdued; Your Lordſhip may compare with him for the Stay, State and Delivery of your Country. But your Cauſes of Comfort left do ſo far excede his, as the Number of Imps, grown out of your Noble Houſe excel the Number of none. But as your Lordſhip looketh to reap Comfort of theſe remaining, ſo you muſt with a cheerful Heart offer up to God your patient Conſent for ſuch as he hath taken. Your Honour is a *Chriſtian*, he was an *Ethnic*, that not only gave Solace to himſelf, but alſo comforted the Commonwealth, mourning generally for his Loſs. And all this he did for the tranſitory Glory of this Life. Your Lordſhip muſt do it for the Glory that ſhall never dy.

And to draw your Lordſhip on further from theſe preſent Cauſes of Sorrow, into the manifold Bleſſings yet left you by God, your Lordſhip, I ſay, may live happily and long, becauſe your Age is underſet with all Comforts of this Inſtant, and thoſe in the World to come.

The Wiſe Man ſaid true, *His Life was dear to few, whoſe Death is Lamented by none* But this late weak Lady, by the divine Providence longer lent to your Lordſhip than by Humane Reaſon could be expected, as She is, for her own ſake, of many lamented much, ſo more for your Lordſhips Cauſe; leſt Nature, who will have her Courſe, (tho' with the more Wiſe the leſs while) ſhould in your Lordſhip excel Nourture, and by piercing Care cut off ſome of your Years by ſooner Death, whoſe Life is ſo Dear and neceſſary to many.

The only Ornament to the Dead is the Tears of the good Sort. To the which moſt Honorable Obſequie and Epitaph, as your Lordſhip may reſt aſſured to come; ſo that it may be late, all good Subjects heartily wiſh, and daily pray. Among the reſt, I, the meaneſt in many Reſpects, yet not hindermoſt in hearty Deſire of your Honours long Continuance here, to the Glory of God, and Comfort of your Country, your Lordſhips principal Care; do now remain more ſatisfied, than before I had delivered my ſimple Endeavour. *Sacam*, this 7th of *Apr.* 1588.

Your Honours ever deſirous in all Duty,

JAMES RITHER.

NUMB. XLVI.

Inſcription upon the Monumental Stone, ſet up in the Chancel of S. Giles Criplegate *Church, againſt the South Wall; in Memory of the Rev.* John Fox, *the Martyrologiſt.*

JOHANNI Foxo, Eccleſiæ *Anglicanæ* Martyrologo fideliſſimo, Antiquitatis Hiſtoricæ Indicatori ſagaciſſimo, Evangelicæ Veritatis Propugnatori acerrimo, Thaumaturgo admirabili. Qui Martyres *Marianos*, tanquam Phœnices ex cineribus redivivos præſtitit. Patri ſuo omni Pietatis officio imprimis colendo, SAMUEL FOXUS, illius Primogenitus, hoc Monumentum poſuit, non ſine Lachrymis.

Obiit die 18. *Mens. April. Anno Domini* 1587. *jam Septuagenarius.*
Vita vitæ mortalis eſt, Spes vitæ immortalis.

On a fair plated Stone over his Body, and the Bodies of Richard Bullen *and* Will. Bullen *M. D. are theſe Verſes.*

SACRA ſub hoc Saxo tria Corpora miſta quieſcunt
Guilielmi Bullen Medici, fratriſq; *Richardi*;
Ac *Johannis Foxi*. Quitres, mihi crede, fuerunt
Doctrinâ clari, rari, & Pietatis Alumni.
Guilielmus Bullen Medicamina ſemper habebat,
Æquè pauperibus danda, ac locupletibus æquè.
Sicq; *Richardus* erat benefacere & ipſe paratus:
Omnibus ex æquo, quibus ipſe prodeſſe valebat.
At FOXUS noſter per multas hos Paraſangas,
Vitâ præcurrit Studiiſq; accedimus omnes.
Extant quæ ſcripſit tormenta cruenta piorum,
Extant perdoctè permulta Volumina ſcripta:
Quæ Scripſit FOXUS: Nulli fuit iſte Secundus.
Obiit Anno Dom. 1587. *Apr.* 16.

NUMB. XLVII.

Inſcription upon the Monument of Simeon Fox, *Dr. of Phyſic, Buried in St. Pauls. Compoſed and erected by Dr.* Tho. Fox, *Phyſician, his Nephew.*

P. M
SIMEONIS FOX.
Qui JOHANNIS FOX ex ANNA RANDAL,
Uxore, jam quinquagenaria, Filius natu minor,
Quum Etonæ Gymnacio pueritiæ Rudimenta
Poſuiſſet,
In hujus Collegii ſocius merito aſcitus eſt.
Exinde
JOHANNIS CANTUARIENSIS Archiep.
Familiam Honeſtate ornavit.
Peregrè Studiorum Cauſa profectus,
PADUÆ claruit:
In Medicinæ Doctoris Titulo inſignitus
Syndiciq; Officio ibidem functus,
LONDINI
Symmiſtarum Sodalitio quinquennio
Præſedit.
Arte, Fide, Probitate eximius.
Quo clariorem
Vix habuit *Aſclepiadum* Schola.
Animam Deo reddidit, cœlebs in Terris,
Æternum maritandus in Cælis,
Ætatis ſuæ an. 80. Sal. humanæ MDCXLII.
Hoc Votum Solvit tibi mærens THOMAS FOX
Ex Fratre Nepos,
Amore & Officio.

NUMB. XLVIII.

Samuel Fox *his Diary: Concerning himſelf; his Education, Travails, Gifts, Purchaſes, and Children.*

I Was born *Anno D.* 1560. in the Third Year of Queen *Elizabeth*; the laſt day of the Year, being New-Years Eve. Born at *Norwich.* Where I remained til I was three Years old, thence brought up to *London.* My Father then dwelling at the Dukes [of *Norfolk*] Houſe [in *Dukes* Place or *Charter* Houſe.] And went to School with Several [Maſters.] And at laſt with *Mulcaſter* [an eminent learned Grammarian, and Schoolmaſter at *Merchant Taylors* School, and afterwards removed to St. *Pauls* School.]

At 14 Years of Age, *Anno* 1574. I was ſent to *Oxford*: Where I was elected *Demi* of *Magdalen* College. And ſo remained Seven Years. *An.* 1576. I went into *France*: *An.* 1581. I was choſen Probationer in *Magdalen* College. And being repelled by a contrary Faction, was reſtored by the Queens Letters Mandatory. *Anno* 1583. On Eaſter-Day I went out of *England* to *Germany.* Where I ſtudied at *Lipſic* a Year. *Ann* 1584. I went to *Baſil.* And after an half Years Abode there, I paſſed over the *Alpes* into *Italy.* Where I remained

mained a Year and an half: And returned home through *France*. Came into *England* in the End of *June An.* 1586.

At my Return from beyond Seas, my Father gave me the Leaſe of *Shipton Underwich Wood*.

Anno 1587. in Eaſter-Holydays, my Father dyed, as may more exactly appear by his Monument, ordered by me, neer his Burying Place, in a Wall of the Chancel at St. *Giles* without *Criplegate*.

In the ſame Year I took Degree of Maſter of Arts at *Oxford*. The ſame Year I was entertained into Sir *Tho. Heneages* Service, being then made *Vice chamberlain* [to the Queen.] *Anno* 1588. I was ſent once to *Hamburgh*.

Anno 1589. Maried to *Anne Luſon*, or *Leveſon* at *Eaſtwel* in *Kent*, in Sir *Moyle Finches* Houſe, being the 15th of *Auguſt*, where were only preſent Sir *Moyle Finch* and his Lady, my Lady *Heneage*, and Mr. *Alworth* and his Wife and Mr. *Stubbs*, the Miniſter.

Anno 1590. The laſt day of the Month and Year, being New-Years Eve, (and the ſame Thirtyeth Year, wherin my ſelf was born) was born into this World my leereſt Daughter *Anne*, at *Shipton* in the Parlour Chamber in the Parſonage Houſe. Godfather, Sir *Moyle Finch*, Godmothers, Lady *Heanage*, and Mrs. *Baret*.

An. 1590. I had given me the Leaſe of St. *James's* in *Cornwel*, of *Kings* College in *Cambridge*.

I ſurrendred my Place of *Madgalen* College in *Oxford*. For which I had 73 £. and a Promiſe of the Manour of *Canket* Hall in *Loveland*. Which I ſurrendred to *Kemp* the Tenant for 125 £.

Burges of Parlament. [Choſen this Year, the Place not ſet down by him.]

Anno 1591. The keeping of *Havering Houſe* [called *Havering at the Bowre*, a Houſe of the Kings of *England*] was given me by my Maſter, [Sir *Tho. Heneage.*]

The Receiverſhip of the *High Peak* in *Darbiſhire* granted me which I ſold to *William Crowſhlowe* for 90 £.

I bought *Beacon* Houſe [perhaps *Bacon Houſe* in *London*] of *Rich. Copland* for 50 £.

My Lady [*Heneage*] procured me the Clarkſhip of the Market of *Epping*.

I had the Leaſes given me of *Sheply* and *Burton* in *Northumberland*.

An. 1592. I went twice into *Lancaſhire* about the Manour of *Halton*; and through *Weſtmerland* and *Cumberland*, all along the Middle Marches; and into *Scotland*.

An. 1591. 14. *Febr.* upon Shrove Sunday, about 2 of the Clock in the Morning was born *Tho. Fox* [his eldeſt Son, afterwards Dr. *Fox* of the College of Phyſicians, *London.*] at *Havering* in the *Bower*, in the Kings Houſe. His Godfathers, Sir *Tho. Heneage*, and Sir *John Leveſon*. His Godmother, my Lady *Finche*.

Then follow the Names of the reſt of his Sons and Daughters, *Viz.* Their Names, and the Times, when, and Places, where born.

NUMB. XLIX.

An Expoſtulatory Letter to the Puritans, *upon occaſion of their Contentions in the Church, and Exhortatory to Peace, and earneſt Application of themſelves to preach the Goſpel, Written, as it ſeems, about the Year* 1587. *by* John Fox, *or* Laurence Humfrey, *D. D.*

Ad omnes fideles Miniſtros JESU, Cooperarios ſuos in Evangelio, & qui verum habent Domus Dei reformandæ zelum.

MSS. R. Tho. Brett. *LL. D.* TESTOR vos in Domino, Fratres, iſta vera eſſe quæ ſcripſi; ne reſiſtatis quæſo veritati. Scio, nihil tam rectum eſſe, quin arte poſſit depravari; nihil tam falſum, quod non dicendo fiat probabile & certè beavit Deus dies noſtros mirificè, acumine hoc ingeniorum, & maturitate. Patres noſtri non viderunt tantam felicitatem ingeniorum, tantam maturitatem, tantum acumen, in omnibus, in infantibus, in ruſticis, ſicut nos videmus. Nè imitemur hic Adamum, Proavum noſtrum, in illo ſummo Sapientiæ ac cognitionis ſuæ gradu, ut peccata tegamus, ut verba Domini pervertamus, ut Subterfugia, latebras quæramus. Exquiret nos certo certius Dominus. In luce, in ſole (quod aiunt) degamus; non cum illo in umbra, in latebris, in diverticulis. Et hoc ſanè peccatum noſtri temporis. Adeò ſumus ingenioſi, adeo acuti, ut quidlibet facere poſſumus ex quolibet. Nemo peccatum fatebitur, nemo errorem, nemo Lapſum. Hoc turpe ducimus. Omnes jam poſſint fucum ſuperinducere. Norunt jam omnes, quos habet Propheta, linguas ſuas veluti arcus, ad mendacia, ad dolos, ad lites, ad querelas tuendas, tendere.

Sed nos, Fratres, quantum in nobis eſt, Pacem perſequamur, pro veritate dimicemus. Hoc bonum curriculum, hæc bona perſecutio; iſta Sancta violentia. Ad hæc exeramus vires ingeniorum. Non ſicut multi ad illa priora; hoc laudem commerebitur apud Dominum. Iſtos curſores, anhelantes, ipſe Dominus ſua manu coronabit. Bonum noſtrum, contentionibus noſtris, ne blaſphemetur. Talenta ſunt Domini quæ vobis commendo. Ne ſitis hic rigidi Cenſores, nealios deterreatis, quo minus Talenta ſua depromant, & in lucem proferant. Hoc Dominus ipſe non faciet; hoc non feret: Abſit a Servis ejus in conſervos ſuos vel criminis ejus ſuſpicio. Sedete quæſo, in cathedra fidelium, non irriſorum. Hoc ſummus improbitatis gradus; hæc cathedra peſtilentiæ. Cavete, quomodo in ea acquieſcitis, vel vobis ipſis placeatis. Et quod in auro veſtro ſoletis (ſiquid fractum, ſiquid imminatum, ſiquid impurum) ex amore, aurifabrorum fornacibus committatis, ut repurgetur, ut reſtituatur, non cum contemptu in plateas projicite, vel concultate pedibus. Separate prudenter fæces ab auro, non utrumq; projicite. Ut cum Dominus venerit, quod ſuum eſt purum, non deperditum, cum fænere, non in ſtercore, recipiat.

Ex horto multorum & variorum floſculorum, faſciculum urticarum, quæ ſuccreſcent, velimus, nolimus, in hac maledicta terra noſtra, colligere, & olfacientibus præbere, improbitatis, invidiæ eſt. Ex arvo multarum frugum, lolii & zizaniarum manipulos decerpere, & cibum familiæ Domini præbere, nequitiæ eſt. Apes imitemur. Quod bonum eſt ſectemur tantum; illi adhæreamus: Mala ſiquæ fuerint, & noxia, prætereamus, linquamus, ne attingamus quidem; tantum abeſt, ut his ſolis inſiſtamus. Hoc ædificatio eſt; hoc negotiatio, hoc agricultura Domini.

JERUSALEM, Mater noſtra, non eſt adhuc cæleſtis, ſed terreſtris eſt; in peregrinatione, non in patria. Tabernaculum noſtrum non eſt illud quod *Moiſes* viderat in monte, ſed illi ſimile. Sponſa Chriſti, cæleſtis *Adæ* noſtri, non eſt nuda, ut in Paradiſo, ante Lapſum, Habet ſua tegumenta, ceremonias, cultus, ornamenta: non tamen illud meretricium & *Babylonicum* apparatum, faſtum & ſplendorem. Habet tunicam pelliceam, planum, ſimplicem, decoram, a Domino ipſo illi datam. Mater noſtra non eſt ſine ruga, & ſine macula.

Talis eſt futura. Triticum noſtrum non eſt ſine zizania; imo, non ſine palea congenita. Nuces noſtræ habent cortices: Fructus corda habent. Pruna non ſine oſſe. Et tamen aliqui volunt, pruna, ceraſa ſine oſſiculis. Poma ſine cordibus habere. At hoc curioſitas eſt. Hoc eſt naturæ repugnare: hoc eſt ingenium venditare; Laudem & gloriam aucupari. Iſtos in Paradiſo Domini, in ejus Eccleſia, in fructibus noſtris & operibus, ne imitemur. Secundum hominem loquamur, vivamus, incedamus, cum Apoſtolo. Mores & Conſuetudines Eccleſiæ Dei, ne ſpernamus. Ejus rugas, maculas, tegumenta, ceremonias agnoſcamus. Unuſquiſq; habet ſuum nævum; omne granum ſuam ariſtam. Apoſtoli ipſi (teſte *Johanne*) non ſine peccato. Et præcones omnes Evangelii uſq; niſi fictilia vaſa; non aurea, non argentea vel angelica. 2 Cor. 4. 7.

Et ut vita, ſic etiam ſcientia, ſic prædicatio, ſic precatio, ſic Politia Eccleſiaſtica, ſic noſtra omnia imperfecta. Peccata æque gravia, licet forſan non tam vulgaria, in Apoſtolica Eccleſia, ac in noſtra, & in paſtoribus, & in ovibus. Omnes quæ ſua ſunt quærunt, inquit Apoſtolus, nemo quæ Jeſu Chriſti Omnes Apoſtolum *Paulum*, in prima illa Apologia ſua, deſeruerunt, non ſine ſalutis periculo. Quàm gravia peccata iſta, quàm etiam latè patentia? Inter Apoſtolos φιλονεικία, ὀλιγοπιστία, καρδία ἀσύνετος, Somnus, oſcitantia, proditio. Sic eſt ſedulus *Satan*; ſic cribrat oves. Inter duodecim tantum palearum. In Eccleſia *Corinthiaca*, hæreſes, lites, inceſtus, ſuperbia, cœnæ profanatio. Apud *Galatas* reſumptio legis, receſſus ab Evangelio. Adeo ut dixerat Apoſtolus, vereri ſe ne inter eos fruſtra laboraſſet. Adeo ut ad Apoſtolos, Salvator benigniſſimus, mitiſſimus, patientiſſimus coactus ſit dicere, *Annon adhuc intelligitis?* Et, *Quouſq; feram Vos?* Et nos nihil infirmitatum in fratribus feremus?

Ne ſimus ſeveri judices. Fratres, ne ipſimet in nos ipſos judicium Domini accerſamus. Et tum quis ſuſtinebit? Preces ſint in ore aſſiduæ, ferventes, non falces in manu ob tranſgreſſores legis Domini; fundamus pro eis lachrymas, non in eos contumelias. Ne propter iſta Schiſma in Eccleſia faciamus. Ne tunicam Chriſti dilaceremus. Hic nobiſcum illud Servatoris prævaleat, *Qui non eſt contra me, mecum eſt*; licet mè non ſequatur, non prohibetur: ſi dæmonia ejiciat, ſi regnum illud Satanæ oppugnet. Idem in regno Antichriſtiano ſubvertendo nos dicere poſſumus. Et illud Apoſtoli recordemur, Licèt quidam ob lucrum Chriſtum prædicent, ob contentionem alii, alii ob invidiam, pauci ſincerè, Quid? Num iſta Schiſma in Eccleſia facerent? Num iſta communionem precum, Sacramentorum, concionum diſtraherent? Cavete, Milites ipſi non dilacerare vellent tunicam Chriſti; Ne ſitis illis nequiores. Schiſma omnium ſcelerum graviſſimum. Simus paſtores, non milites, non ſemet mutuò vulnerantes. Simus gementes, ſuſpirantes columbæ; non oblatrantes, a tergo mordentes canes. *Non alii aliou deinceps mordentes*, quod habet Apoſtolus, *nè ab aliis conſumamur*. Τὸ ἐπιεικὲς ὑμῶν γνωσθήτω πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις.

Non eſt jam tempus rixarum, querelarum, contumeliarum. Eſt jam tempus reconciationis, pacis, unitatis. Nam judicium appropinquat. Recordamini illius, Servatoris, *Reconciliare cum fratre, dum es in via*, (quicquid negotii fuerit) *ne ſi ad judicem acceſſerit, tradat te lictori, & committatte carceri*; *unde nunquam exibis*. Componamus omnes ergo lites, precor in Domino. *Unitatem ſpiritus in vinculo pacis ſervemus*. Ne damnemus fratres, ne ipſi condemnemur. Ne atomos, feſtucas, in oculis eorum exquiramus, ne trabes noſtras, ne talenta multa in judicium vocet Dominus. Quis eſt tandem, qui hic ſe debitorem non fatebitur?

Indefeſſum Illud veſtrum concionandi ſtudium in peccato extirpando, conferte. Illud creſcit indies, & mirifice ramos ſuos extendit, manipuli illius, imo ſinus pleni non deerunt vobis; ſi illud ſolum acutis falcibus veſtris demetieritis.

In *Apocalypſi* reperio tres Angelos prædicantes; ſuas habentes certas legationes, & definitas, & etiam diſtinctas, ſed conſentientes. Et ſane Angeli illi Typi erant Miniſtrorum noſtrorum. Sicut Doctrinam, Legationem eorum arripuimus, ſic utinam harmoniam & conſenſum, retineremus. Angeli iſti, ultimi Legati, ante judicium miſſi: Præcones iſti noſtri temporis. Primus vocavit voce magna, *Timete Deum* ; *date illi Gloriam. Nam hora judicii venit Adorate eum, qui fecit cælum & terram, mare & quæ in eis ſunt.* Non creaturas ullas, ſed Creatorem ſolum. Hoc Evangelium, hoc radix Fidei, hoc religio Chriſti ; hic finis Sæculi.

Secundus ſequutus eſt, & clamavit, *Cecidit*, *Cecidit* Babylon, *Civitas illa magna. Bibere fecit omnes gentes ex vino fornicationis ſuæ.* Hinc religio Papiſtarum, vinum fornicationis. Religio læta, felix, proſpera, hilaris (ut prædicant.) Hic Concio contra Antichriſtum ; & hoc ejus Regnum.

Et Tertius ſequutus eſt illos, clamans voce magna, *Siquis adoraverit Beſtiam & imaginem ejus, & accipiet characterem ejus ſuper frontem ejus, vel ſuper manum ejus, & ipſe bibet ex vino iræ Dei.* Et in hac tanta luce, quæ venit in mundum, ſiquis adhuc recipiet Antichriſti characteres, Agnos ejus Dei, ejus grana benedicta, ejus Reliquias, non ſolum illum Agnum Dei, JESUM CHRISTUM, non Sanctum illud granum verbi ejus in terram cordium ſuorum, in arcam conſcientiarum, torquebuntur iſti igne & ſulphure coram Agno illo, quem ſpreverant, & coram ſanctis Angelis ejus, in æternum.

Iſtam Angelorum Domini, nuntiorum ejus, ejus legatorum inter nos diſtinctionem, advertere poſſumus, alii quaſi miſſi ad fidem & bona opera prædicanda, in illis præcipuè Seminandis inſudant: hoc ſtudium eſt, hoc gaudium ; hoc quaſi deligatum munus. Alii ruinam ROMÆ, *Babylonis* vaſtitatem, voce omnibus denuntiarunt. Alii contra *Jeſuitas* Seminarios, illius Hominis nequam, linguas & calamos exacuerunt: & contra iſtos voce magna intonuerunt, & jam adhuc tonant. Sic imitemur, Fratres, doctrinam horum Angelorum ; ſic precor in Domino JESU, ut imitemur [eorum] Harmoniam. Conſentiebant inter ſe iſti, docentes diverſa ; Sic itidem & nos.

Non damnat eorum unus alterum : Nec nos damnemus Fratres. Non curſum interrumpunt ; ſed ſequuntur ſeſe mutuò, pacificè, pacatè, placidè. Sic non poſteri, ne damnemus Majores, Patres, Prædeceſſores noſtros, qui primam hujus legationis partem ſtrenuè, non ſine ſudore & ſanguine ſuo, obierunt. Qui bona opera urgent, ne *Phariſæos* ; qui cælibatum profitentur, ne *Papiſtas* judicemus. Abſit, ut judicemus fratres. Illud Satan ſolum poteſt, cum navis JESU curſum non valet interrumpere, procellas, turbines, tempeſtates in eandem excitare. Hæc eſt jam ejus oppugnandæ & expugnandæ ſola ratio. Ne feramur nos præcipites hoc vento ejus. Reſiſtamus huic ejus violentiæ unanimes, mutuò hic jungamus dextras, corda, corpora, ut hunc ejus impetum ſuſtineamus, frangamus, ſuperemus. Si noſmet ſejunxerimus, ſine dubio potens ille abripiet quo voluerit.

Rectè item ſecemus Verbum Dei ; Cuiq; perſonæ, loco, tempori, ſuam doctrinam, ſuum cibum, idq; opportunè, adminiſtremus. Lac ruri præbeatur ; Myſteria inter muſas aperiantur. In Aula, de Legibus, de reformatione Eccleſiæ, & Reipublicæ. In Villa, de moribus, de obedientia, de ſancta converſatione, prædicetis. Peccatoribus peccata ſua, in faciem, cum *Paulo*, non a tergo, cum *Satana*, (qui Calumniator fratrum noſtrorum dicitur) idq; amicè, non aſperè, fraterné, non hoſtiliter, declaretis. Illud enim vulnerare eſt, non curare, defamare non ſanare. Emplaſtrum Salutiferum applicetur oportet vulneri, & faſciis fortiter alligetur. Si componatur, & oſtendatur, & probatum ſæpius prædicetur, ſine tamen applicatione iſta, nil omnino proderit. Multi, qui videri volunt periti Chirurgi & Medici, & morborum Eccleſiæ, & vulnerum fratrum, non hoc obſervant ; Exquirunt morbos ſerio, emplaſtra parant ſedulò ; eadémq; mundo oſtendunt crebrò : ſed non applicant iſta, non alligant, non adhibent. Et hinc curationes vulnerum tam raræ inter nos ; hinc tumor tantus, & ut ita dicam, rancor ad invicem morbi manifeſtantur infirmorum ; Emplaſtra parantur medicorum, ſed non applicantur Therapeutarum [manu]

JOHANNES prurientem illam libidinem *Herodis*, Sale illo Evangelico in faciem, in menſam aſperſit. *Ahabi* avari illius Hydropiſten inexplebilem, *Elias* coram aperit, incidit. Sic *Amaſiam* ſuperbientem *Amoſus*, ſic principes *Judæorum*, laſcivientes *Sodomitas*, in præſentia vocavit *Eſaias*. Hæc vulnera poſt terga revelare, non ſanat, non curat: nunquam ſuperinducet carnem, nunquam cicatricem faciet.

In aula ergo reges erudiatis, in villa ruſticos reformetis, in Eccleſia, in concionibus ad Clerum, (quas Dicitis) fratrum veſtrorum nævos, ulcera, morbos manifeſtetis.

Oleum cum vino miſceatis, ſicut fecit miſericors & prudens ille *Samaritanus* Evangelicus. Redarguatis cum omni lenitate: Docentes eos qui reſiſtunt cum omni manſuetudine. Jam opus Evangeliſtarum perficiatis. Non onera Prophetarum imponatis. *Jeſaiam*, Salutem Domini annuntiate; non *Ezechielem*, robur, Severitatem Domini. *Qui fecerit iſta, vivet in eis.* 20. *Ezek.* 11. Sic ille. *Dominus redemit, non confundar.* Sic ille. Prædicate non quod ſcripſit *Moſes*, qui fecerit iſta, vivet in iſtis; ſed Verbum Fidei quod prædicaverunt Apoſtoli. *Qui corde crediderit, & ore confeſſus fuerit* Jeſum Chriſtum; *hic ſalvus erit.* Iſta legatio noſtra, Verbum reconciliationis, Evangelizatio pacis. Et ſi quando virga opus fuerit, ſi gladio; ita exerceatis, ut corrigantur refractarii, ut confundantur, ut emergant ex luto profundo; non ut abſorbiantur. Melius eſt in miſericordiam inclinare, quàm in juſtitiam. Tutius eſt olei plus miſcere, quàm vini. Hoc, mihi credite, Sanabit citius, movebit fortius: Vel lapides ut mollis guttula cavabit. Repugnant humanæ indoli, cogi, compelli ad aliquid: Allici, flecti vult.

Papiſmum ſedulo eradicate; ſed ubi ſe prodit. Alias, ſi ubi non eſt, ligonem veſtrum inſerueritis ad effodiendum, terram ſubvertetis, & perdetis. Teneram Religionis & Fidei plantam cautè tractetis; Cavete, ne eradicetis. Satius eſt mola aſinaria in mari demerſum aliquem, quàm ut unus minimorum Chriſti fidelium perderetur, imò ſcandalizetur. Tam propenſus & indulgens eſt in ſuos JESUS; tam ſunt illi chari omnes ſui. Cavete offendicula talium; cavete vel fidei, veluti grani ſinapis, Suffocationem. Quod in vaſa ſtricti oris, in obbas quas vocant, facere ſolent mortales, hic vos facite Liquorem Domini pretioſum, ſenſim ac guttatim infundite. Sic recipietur; alias defluet. Recordamini verbi illius JESU, *Qui guſtaverit vinum vetus, non ſtatim deſiderabit novum Diert enim vetus melius.* Senes illos educatos, nutritos, aſſuetos Papiſmo, ne expectate ut non ejus aliquem guſtum retineant. Si acetum ipſum effundere poteſtis: ſi abſinthii illius Stellæ, amarum ſuccum expellere, gaudete. Et ſi ejus Sapor aliquis remaneat, hoc ſapienter ferre, ac tolerare debetis. Ne dum illum Saporem etiam expellere laboretis, corrumpatis vaſa.

Legimus apud Apoſtolum *Paulum* pſeudo-apoſtolorum formam. Cavete, ne aſſimilemini. Imperioſi erant, magnifici, acuti, avari, elati, contumelioſi. Ita horum, & vitæ inſtitutionem, & prædicationis rationem depingit nobis 2 Cor. 11. 20.
Paulus. Suſtinetis ſiquis καταδουλοῖ, Servos, mancipia, vernas reddat; *Siquis* κατεσθίει, Devoret, conſumat: *Siquis* λαμβάνει, Accipiat, bonis veſtris inhiet, fortunis ſpoliet: Siquis ἐπαίρεται, ſe efferat, alios deſpiciat, vilefaciat: *Siquis vos* εἰς πρόσωπον δέρει, in faciem percutiat, apertis planè contumeliis impetat. Cavete, Fratres, veſtigia iſta nè inſiſtatis, precor in Domino. Cavete hic, quomodo fratres veſtros, licet peccatores, errones, mancipia, monſtra hominum, ipſum [ipſos] *Raca*, in doctrina veſtra vocetis. Cavete illam comeſtionem, illam devorationem: ne quemquam verbo perimatis; ne arundinem, vel anhelitu, concutiatis, confringatis. Ne ſint conciones enſes, Verba, gladii. Ne hic obliviſcamini, quos voſmet alibi ſtatuatis. Non eſtis Paſtores, vel Doctores, ſi ita inſtructi his telis, in ovile Domini ingrediamini: Non piſcatores JESU, ſed perditores; non tincæ Salutares, ſed voraces lupi. Cavete expilationem; ne grex per vos expiletur. Ne auditoribus veſtris oneri, imò, nè æris alieni cauſa ſitis. Hoc non eſt Apoſtolicum. Maluit ſuis manibus laborare *Paulus*, quàm cuiq; oneroſum eſſe.

Cavete elationem, contemptum etiam infirmorum cum *Phariſæo* illo; licèt bis in Sabbato jejunetis, et etiam concionemini; licèt oretis multum; neminem tamen, qui in hoc ſtadio vobiſcum non decertaverit, qui multis gradibus ſequitur, deſpiciatis. Suo Domino ſtat, aut cadit. Superbia, elatio, contemptus, judicium de fratre, licèt juſtum, fermentum eſt, corrumpens omnia. Cavete contumeliam. Ne percutite in faciem, ſint reprehenſionibus veſtris circumſtantiæ adhibitæ, charitatis, ædificationis, emendationis. Φάρμακον, medicamentum omne, licèt efficax, licèt Salutare, non tamen omni tempori, omni loco, omni perſonæ aptandum eſt. Habent perſonæ, ætates, dignitates, loci, tempora, ſua pharmaca. Irritant quædam hanc carnem, quæ ſanarent eam. Omnia ad ædificationem (pro virili) & ad ſanitatem facitote. Intra Domeſticos parietes peccata commiſſa, licet præſentibus duobus aut tribus, ego privatas offenſas judicarem. Et iis autem correptionem benignam, privatam, fraternam adhibendam. Iſta forſan ſanaret, cum aperta bilem moveret. Publica peccata judico, qualia inceſtuoſi illius apud *Corinthios*, quæ omnino audiuntur; cum extra tecta, in oculos, in ora, in aures omnium evolarunt. Et iſta publicè, aſperè redarguenda cenſeo, ut cæteri timorem habeant. Ἐπιείκεια, πραότης, manſuetudo, bonitas Jesu Chriſti in ſervis ſuis elucere debet. *Diſcite ex me* (inquit Jesus) *quia mitis & humilis ſum ego.* Iſta ejus documenta Indocti planè ſunt in Jesu Chriſto, nihil ſciunt, qui non iſta didicerunt. Iſta Apoſtolus *Paulus* ſemper præ ſe ferebat: Majeſtatem, elationem aſperitatem, contumeliam pſeudo-apoſtoli.

At cooperti avaritia, ſuperſtitione, ſocordia noſtri. Sic dicitis; ſic inſimulatis. Utinam ſequaces veſtri eſſent ſine pecato. Cavete hic, ne linces ſitis foris, & talpæ domi. Judicium auget peccatum, & ſcientia pænam. Cui Dominus multum dederit, ab eo multum requirit. Cavete, ne dum *Argi* videri vultis, 2 Pet. 2. ſitis cæcis illis Papiſtis obtuſiores. Cavete, nè in operibus fidei ἀργοὶ ſitis, Joh. 8. ϗ ἄκαρποι. Innocentem eſſe oportet, ac etiam planè mundo corde, qui in Evangelio lapides in fratres jacere vult: ipſius Jesu Chriſti, judicis, jam ſic lata Sententia de re iſta.

Non ego hic excuſo noſtros, vel accuſo. Tantum dico, quod dixerat Dominus Jesus ad *Judæos* in ſimili negotio: Habent *Moſen* accuſantem, vel excuſantem. Noſtri verò non *Moſen*, qui de terra loquutus eſt, ſed Jesum Chriſtum, filium Dei, qui de cælo: quem profitentes in ejus verba jurarunt. Recordentur Pſal. 50. illius Sententiæ judiciariæ, jam etiam ante judicium, ad cautionem noſtram a benigniſſimo judice in lucem editæ: *Cur audes prædicare legem meam & odiſti reformationem?* Habent in manu lucernam, & ſi in foveam ceciderint, quemnam accuſabunt? Seipſos planè (quod habet Apoſtolus) transgreſſores faciunt, ſeipſos perdunt.

Damnandas perhibent leges regni: Non-reſidentium, Pluralitates. Sine cauſa gravi & approbata, Diſpenſatio non conceditur. Videat quiſq;, quo animo non modo duo beneficia, ſed vel unum capiat. Si per feneſtram (quod aiunt) ſi aliunde quam per oſtium, quàm per Jesum Chriſtum, & propter illum ſolum, vel in unum intraverit, eſt illud unum maleficium, planè, & ſupplicium [meretur] in diem Domini. Hic quiſq; conſcientiam ſuam probet, & probè examinet. Dominus novit. finis certus, collimatio legitima. Non eſt hic incerta meta [in quam] jaculandum. Jesus ſolus, unicus, certus ſcopus propoſitus eſſe debet. Et in hunc ſolum & manus & oculus & animus eſt figendus. Alias חטאת, aberraſti a ſcopo, peccatum commiſiſti.

Multa ſunt, fratres, quæ juxta regulam etiam charitatis, illam quandoq; Diſpenſationem poſtulare poſſunt. Quid ſiquis magnam familiam habet? Quid ſi unum beneficium ad familiam alendam non ſufficiat? Annon eſt operarius dignus mercede ſua? Annon præcones Evangelii vivere debent ex Evangelio? Hoc caſu duo poſſunt beneficia in unum coincidere. Ita ut hic tamen mutua gratia referatur. Ut quemadmodum corpora paſcuntur, & refocillantur viſcera, ſic animæ non negligantur.

Et hic etiam, fratres, Cavete. Quod ſatis eſt ſufficit, quod plus ſatis eſt, crapula eſt. Εὐσέβεια, Religio αὐτάρκειαν illam Apoſtolicam, aureum illud medium *Ariſtotelicum*, quadriſyllabum, illud *Terentianum*, *nequid nimis*, proprium omnino, & quod habent *Dialect*: quarto modo adjunctum, habet. Ἀσέβεια Impietas πλεονεξίαν illam inexplebilem, φιλαργυρείαν illam amariſſimam, avaritiam illam cœcam, inſatiabilem, infernalem umbram, habet comitem, pediſſequam. Cavete jam, cuinam harum dominarum ſerviatis. Ut ὁδηγοὺς, duces, ore, ſermone, ſic hic Τύπους, opere, ἔργῳ, converſatione, voſmet gregibus veſtris in domino, precor, exhibeatis; ut monſtrum hoc avaritiæ exularet prorſus, & ne nominetur inter vos.

Quid, quod Neceſſitas, non ſolum charitas, quæ nullam habet legem, idem videtur quodammodo extorquere? Quod enim Apoſtoli de panibus, idem mea Sententia de Paſtoribus verè dici poteſt: Decem millia paſtorum non ſufficicerent huic regno, ut quælibet grex, imò, ut bini greges, unum paſtorem habeant. Et hic ergo, quod prudens ille pater familias, Dominus Jhesus, fecit de panibus, faciendum nobis eſt de paſtoribus. Quos Dominus dederit, diſtribuendi in multitudine. Plures etiam exorandi a Domino meſſis. Et ſane numerum eorum quotannis videmus multiplicatum. Addo, ut brevi non eſt dubitandum, quin ceſſantibus murmurationibus noſtris & litibus, de negotio iſto, & precibus potius ſurſum aſcendentibus, Dominus ipſe, ut olim in terreſtri *Manna*, ſic in hoc ſpirituali *Manna* Verbi ſui, illud ipſum affatim omnibus preberet.

Interim illud audeo pronuntiare, ad Dei gloriam, & verorum Paſtorum, in hoc opere Domini, exſuſcitationem, duodecim valent & ſufficiunt panem Domini diſtribuere in Septem millia. Non legimus cuiq; turbæ ſuum diſtributorem a Domini aſſignatum. Hic ego credo, inter nos deeſſe potius manus ad accipiendum, corda ad ſervandum; quàm manus ad frangendum & diſtribuendum panem hunc Domini. Hic etiam ego credo, quod etiam illic in Evangelio, in panibus illis Domini, non venter plenus, non panes integri; ſed buccella unica, vel micæ panis Domini (quas ſolas Canaanæa illa poſtulavit ad vitam filiæ) ſufficient ad famem extinguendam, imò ad vitam æternam. Verbum Domini jam æquè potens ac efficax eſt ad vitam animarum; ut fuerunt panes illi ad ſuſtentationem corporum. Qui etiam tantam habent fidei menſuram, tantam plenitudinem ſpiritus, tantum zelum ad æidificandam domum Dei, ut bis in die Dominico, ut ſæpius in Septimana concionari poſſint; plus ædificaturos, mea Sententia, & profuturos magis, ſi mutarent, auditores, ſi loca alia peterent, quam in eodem & apud eoſdem, ſemper conciones ſuas haberent. Piſcatores præcones ſuos vocavit Servator. Illi verò non ſemper ejuſdem ripæ parti inſiſtunt: Mutant ſtationes ſuas Piſces, qui hac parte fluminis eſcam non attingerent, aliâ fortè caperentur hamo, Sic eſt in captura piſcium Domini;

Hac arte etiam piſcatoribus Domini utendum eſt: Ubi plurimum prodeſſe poſſumus, ibi figenda ſtatio; ibi eſta projicienda Superſtitioſi multi ſenes, obdurati peccatores, *Papiſtæ* refractarii: non intereſſe volunt ſacris concionibus: at forte intereſſe volunt nuptiis; erunt in baptiſmate Fidejuſſores; ad amicos in diem feſtum congregabuntur: ibi rete ſuum expandat. Hoc eſt tempori ſervire. Hoc eſt ſummæ prudentiæ. Quis neſcit, quantam prædam jam tum dabit Dominus Jesus: licèt antea multi multum, forſan incaſſum, laborarunt?

Venit Dominus Jesus quærere ovem deperditam. Itidem & ejus Diſcipuli, ejus Servi & Miniſtri omnes, quærere debent, quod eſt deperditum; non uno, ſed omni loco, ubi erit ſpes ulla inventionis vel unius oviculæ, vel unius drachmæ. Non eſt morandum hic, donec revertantur oves, vel ut paſtorem exquirant. Non eſt hic eodem in loco ſemper habitandum. Et pedes ſic peregrinantium, ſic Evangelizantium pacem, ſic quærentium quod eſt deperditum, ſpecioſi ſunto.

Illud certo certius verum eſt, qui talentum ſuum ad maximum lucrum expoſuerit, cum venerit Dominus, maximam laudem commerebitur. Qui reti Evangelico plurimos piſces complexus fuerit, hic piſcator optimus. *Qui multitudinem juſtificaverint*, vel *multos*, (ut habet *Daniel*) *hi ſplendebunt ut ſtellæ in firmamento.* Stadium eſt Domini Miniſterium. In illo partes primæ, ſecundæ, tertiæ. Multis omnes in eodem gradu conſiſtere? pari paſſu ambulare? Pugiles Domini ſunt Præcones ejus eandemne palæſtram omnibus conſtituetis? Operarii ſunt; an eadem onera omnium humeris ſuper imponetis? Alius fortè valet duos lapides magnos ad Structuram adferre facilius, quàm unam alius. Vultiſne, ut non vires ſuas hic non exerat? *Unuſquiſq; ſicut accepit donum, adinvicem miniſtrent* (inquit *Petrus*) *ut boni diſpenſatores multiformis gratiæ Dei.*

Gratia Dei multiformis eſt: Talenta ejus decem, duo, unum. *Secundum gratiam ſibi datum, quiſq;* cum Apoſtolo, *in anteriora ſe extendat.* Enitatur, ut quam plurimis proſit. Exerat vires ad ſummum; ne deficiat a gratia Dei. Hic non anhelitus, feſtinatio, curſus, ſed torpor, fatigatio, ſomnus damnantur. Qui decem habet talenta, præficiet Dominus decem civitatibus. Quis ad iſta idoneus, inquit aliquis? Quis? niſi cui Dominus vires dederit. Proportio eſſe debet inter Talentum & lucrum; inter gratiam datam, & queſtum inde enatum.

Hic autem quilibet vires ſuas conſideret; ne plus oneris ſuſcipiat humeris ſuis, quàm ſuſtinere poſſit.

Qui pluralitatem beneficiorum venantur, non hoc animo, ut talenta ſua exponant, ut proſint plurimis, ut lucrentur multos; ſed potius ut multum lucrentur, ut proſint ſuis, ut theſaurizent hic in terris, ut otientur, exulentur, opibus affluant: hii certo certius theſaurizant una iram cum auro ſuo, in diem Vindictæ; damnum animabus ſuis cum dignitatibus in diem Domini. Iſti non cœnam, mercedem, coronam cum agno, in diem nuptiarum, ſed Maledictionem, infamiam, gehennam, cum Diabolo & Angelis ejus, in die pænarum, pro ſtipendio reportabunt. Et talis Pluralitas periculoſa: Hoc non Honos, ſed onus graviſſimum; qui carè nimis emitur. Caveamus ergo.

Illud etiam non minus verum, qui unum beneficium nanciſcitur, ut amplectatur præſens Seculum, non ut ſequatur JESUM, *Demas* eſt. Qui Epiſcopatum deſiderat, ut crumenam impleat, non ut gregem paſcat, *Judas* eſt. Qui quærunt, quæ ſua ſunt, non quæ JESU Chriſti, licet Reſidentes ſemper ſint, mercenarii ſunt. Qui ſequuntur JESUM, ut latibalum ſibi acquirant, vulpes ſunt. Deniq; qui gregem, vel unum, ut ſe paſcant, ut præemineant aliis, ut avaritia vel Socordia ——— Domini poſſiderent, diaboli ſunt.

Quare hic ſibi ipſis proſpiciant, qui ita acerbè in non-reſidentes invehuntur: Ipſi non ſunt extra jactum telorum, extra periculum hoſtis. Caveant ne hic item labantur, ne ingreſſum dent hoſti, ne ſecure degant, & ſe prorſus ſartos, quod aiunt, & tutos exiſtiment.

Illud vero hic teſtor in Domino, nos non patrocinari, vel probare quorundam inexplebilem avaritiam, qui nulla habita virium ſuarum, nulla donorum ratione, nulla cura gregis Dei, nulla fratrum, qui hujuſmodi ſtipendiis carent compaſſione, tacti, *totquot*, ut loquuntur, beneficia in manus rapiunt: qui hic ſibi ipſis nullum modum ſtatuunt: qui quater in anno greges ſuos, vel videre ſatis putant, nullo ſubſtituto paſtore ſufficiente; qui non curant pauperes, non componunt lites, juxta illud in ſuſcepto miniſterio ſuo pænè votum præſtitum Domino; qui non ſunt exemplaria gregibus, ſed planè peregrini barbari ovibus ſuis: quorum voces non cognoſcunt, & non vix aliquando vultus: tales cæcos (ſiqui fuerint) avaros, ſecuros, otioſos, non paſtores, ſed idola paſtorum, quicunq; tandem fuerint; non probo, ſed ut hoſtes Eccleſiæ peſtilentiſſimos, & pernicioſiſſimos judico.

Sed ut iſta mittantur conſcientiarum negotia, ut hoc Scrutinium ſupremo illi Judici relinquatur, ad res ipſas paulo proprius accedamus. Et hic una Vobiſcum, fratres, docemus, & profitemur, regnum Dei non eſſe nec cibum, nec
1 Cor. 14 4. potum, nec veſtem, nec carnem, nec crucem, nec aliquid iſtiumodi; ſed pacem, fidem, gaudium in Spiritu Sancto. Omnia tamen in Eccleſia εὐσχημόνως, &, quoad externam ſpeciem decenter, & non ruditer fieri debent, & κατὰ τάξιν; ordine quodam, non perturbatè, non promiſcue, ut habet Apoſtolus. Deus noſter qui ipſe indutus eſt decorè; qui appariturus eſt ex *Sion*, in pulchritudinis perfectione: qui ordinem ſtatuit inter ſtellas, inter feras, inter ipſas apes, inter omnia opera ſua, quæ ordine etiam ſuo & viciſſitudine, nobis etiam multo jucundiora & gratiora ſunt. Non vult in domo ſua ruditatem ferinam, agreſtem, apparatum ordinem nullum, vel inverſum. Sed vel hic imprimis & decorem illum & ordinem inter omnes domeſticos ſuos, & in omnibus requiret.

Hinc licet dignatur nos audire unanimiter precantes, in coelo exiſtens; vult tamen non in agro, ſed in Templo congregari. Licèt lavare nos dignetur non precioſo aliquo Nectare, ſed aqua; non vult tamen baptizandos flumina jam petere, ſed aquam in domo ſua. Hoc jam non eſt fide firmata Eccleſia ſua regum ac reginarum lacte nutrita decorum, nec pelves manibus noſtris lavandis formatas vult huic ſacro uſui adaptari. Æquè peccatum eſt mea Sententia, vaſa ſacrata, (quod fecit *Balthaſar*) uſibus noſtris profanare, ac noſtra vaſcula fictilia urnas divinis uſibus accommodare. Vult Dominus ſua ſacra, in ſua domo, a ſuis Servis, ſuis vaſibus non alienis, non profanis celebrari.

Paſcit nos cibo cæleſti, carne & Sanguine filii ſui, Symbolis panis & vini, rebus viſibilibus quidem, ſed non humi, Turcarum more, non menſa nuda ruſticorum vult nos ipſa participare. Quis noſtrûm ſic cibum ſumere non dedignabitur. Ergo menſa ornata, habitus convivarum externus & corporis & veſtis, hic decens eſſe oportet. Si mulierum orantium habitus, geſtus gravis & religioſus eſſe debet, quanto magis convivantium apud Dominum? *David* de hoc convivio ſic prophetavit. *Comederunt, & adoraverunt, omnes pingues terræ.* Hoc eſt *Davidis.* Et cum vobis tum hic cæleſtium convivarum genu flexio diſplicere debet. Miniſter orans Deum, alloquitur. Mulierum orantium habitus gravis eſſe debet. Et annon, Miniſtrorum? Deus hic reſpicit veſtes orantium, convivantium apud eum. Quid tunica ſolum tectum eum vultis alloquentem Dominum quod vidi? hoc indecorum? Quid ſi utatur veſte linea Eccleſia? Quid, ſi non habeat propriam, aptam, decentem? Quod multorum vanitas, multorum curioſitas, neceſſitas quandoq; multorum facit, *Veſtis, inceſſus, riſus declarant, quid ſit homo,* inquit *Eccleſiaſticus.* Et ſane vanitates veſtium hic multorum etiam Miniſtrorum vanas mentes demonſtrant.

Quid annon hic tantum Eccleſiæ authoritatis concedetis, ut veſtem decentem præſcribat Miniſtro ſacra celebranti? At quamlibet veſtem hic ſcio dicetis præter iſtam Superpelliciam. Si quamlibet cur non iſtam? At Papiſticæ efformationis eſt. At hoc non eſt probatum. Quod ſi ſuerit, cur voſmet *Turcicas, Italicas,* Paganas, profanas formas veſtium, certas, agnitas, induatis? An veſtes coinquinant? An Fides ſequitur veſtis formam? Si ſequatur, ipſi videte ne conſpurcamini. Sed non ſunt Papiſticæ veſtes noſtræ, ſed potius cæleſtes. Hoc vel conſimili amictu cæleſtes cives in Scriptura veritatis induti leguntur. *Danielis* interpres myſteriorum, veſte linea indutus erat. Miniſter ille Domini Dan. 10. qui in exidio illo *Hieroſolymitano,* atramentario inſtructus, ſignavit in frontibus Ezek. 9. 4. omnes ſervos Dei, veſte linea indutus erat. Cur non jam etiam qui interpretantur nobis Myſteria Sacra ſimili veſte ornentur? Cur non qui ſignans jam in Eccleſia, non atramento, ſed ſancto Spiritu, omnes ſalvandos; qui ſeribunt Epiſtolas Chriſti, non in tabulis lapideis, ſed in cordibus, in Miniſterio ſuo, ſimili veſte induantur? Typus erat Miniſter ille certo certius Miniſtrorum noſtrorum: Signatio illa, conſignationis noſtræ: *Jeruſalem* illa, Eccleſiæ noſtræ: Salus illa, ſalutis noſtræ. Et cur non veſtis etiam illa Miniſtri illius, inter tantam convenientiam, Miniſtris noſtris non correſpondeat? Cæleſtes Act. 1 item illi Præcones, qui docent Apoſtolos & fideles Aſcenſum Jesu, & item reverſionem ad judicium, veſte item alba induti ſunt.

Veſtes horum omnium non fruſtra nobis deſcribuntur. Cur non Miniſtri noſtri idem docentes, eodem habitu non veſtiantur? Cur dicemus hunc Veſtitum potius Papiſticum, quâm cæleſtem? Non lineæ, ſed ſericeæ; non planæ, ſimplices, cæleſtes; ſed aureæ, magnificæ, regales erant veſtes Papiſticæ. Poculum aureum habuit meretrix illa in manu ſua. Omnia in religione ejus ex auro; omnia ſumptuoſa, omnia faſtu mundano plena. Eccleſia noſtra quid habet ſimile?

At dicet aliquis, nos Dei cultum in his ſtatuere. At caveat quid dicat. De omni verbo otioſo reddemus rationem. Ergo de falſa. Mentiri jam peccatum eſt: Et portio eorum in lacu. At de fratre, in negotio pacis, idq; Eccleſiæ, Apoc. 20. non mentiri, ſed falſum teſtimonium perhibere; peccatum eſt ſine dubio graviſſimum. Uſu veſtium iſtorum, voce, Scriptione, quantum poſſumus, teſtamur vobis, nos nullam in his cultûs divini partem conſtituere. Et annon credetis? Veſtes iſtæ decoris ſunt, ordinis, unitatis; non devotionis, Sanctitatis, religionis. Hoc nos & ore & opere docemus, & proteſtamur.

Libro illi Precum publicarum in quem tam acerbè invecti eſtis, ſubſcripſiſtis, baptizati; ſubſcripſiſtis juxta ejus formam, ſæpius ſacra Domini participati. Praxis etiam inſtitutionum ejus præſentia veſtra in precibus ejus. Illud Amen quod tam ſæpe repetiiſtis, ſubſcriptio eſt apud Dominum. Et cur jam manum ſubtrahetis? Subſcriptio enim [quid] niſi conſenſionis teſtatio eſt?

Et hic etiam videte, quantum ſit, de quo tam anxii eſtis. Subſcribitis cuiq; rei in libro illo [non] niſi juxta naturam ſuam. *Doctrinæ,* ut rei certæ, indubitatæ; quæ mutari non poteſt, nec debet. *Ceremoniis* vero ejus, & ritibus, veluti rebus mutabilibus, quæ mutari poſſunt; ſi ita Eccleſiæ & Principi viſum fuerit. Quid ni iſta in Eccleſia noſtra poſſint mutari, veluti oſculum pacis in Eccleſia Apoſtolica; & item Unctio illa externa?

Sed ut finem faciam, rogo in Domino, ut pacem perſequamini: extirpetis peccatum: Evangeliſtarum opera perficiatis; ut de rebus his levibus, externis non amplius litigetis; ut regnum Dei propagetis ut cauſam cum cauſa, in his controverſijs noſtris, non perſonas, peccata, nævos fratrum, cum cauſis panderetis. Quid vobis cum fratre labente, ut judicis partes ſuſcipiatis? Domino ſuo ſtat, aut cadit. Jungamus dextras in plantatione fidei, in inculcatione bonorum operum, in Jeſuitarum profligatione. Hoc eſt ſatis operis pro nobis. *Alter alterius onera portemus: Et ſic adimpleamus legem Chriſti. Diligamas mutuo*; & ſic cognoſcent omnes nos ejus eſſe Diſcipulos.

Quod dignetur ille operari in cordibus noſtris per Sanctum Spiritum ſuum, qui operatur omnia in omnibus, Dominus JESUS. Cui cum Deo patre, & ſancto Spiritu, ſit omnis Laus, Honor, Gloria, Salus & Imperium, & nunc & in omnem æternitatem, Amen.

NUMB. L.

The Queen, upon Apprehenſion of the Spaniſh *Invaſion; her Letter ſent to all the Lord Lieutenants of all the Counties, to make large Preparations for Defence. Her Letter to the Lord Marques of* Wincheſter, *and to the Earl of* Suſſex, *for* Hampſhire, *was as followeth.*

By the QUEEN.

ELIZABETH R.

Cott. Librar. Titus B. 2.

RIGHT Truſty and Right well beloved Couſins, Wee grete you well. Wheras heretofore upon the Advertiſement, from Time to Time, and from ſundry Places, of the great Preparations of forein Forces made, with a full Intent to invade this our Realm, and other our Dominions; We gave our Directions unto you, for the preparing of our Subjects within your Lieutenancy, to be in a Readineſs for Defence againſt any Attempts that might be made againſt us and our Realm; which our Directions wee find ſo well performed, that Wee cannot but receive great Contentment thereby, both in reſpect of your careful Procedings therein, and alſo of the great Willingneſs of our People in general to the Accompliſhment of that wherunto they were required, ſhewing thereby their great Love and Loyalty towards Us, which as Wee accept moſt thankfully at their Hands; acknowledging our ſelves, infinitely bound to Almighty God, in that it hath pleaſed him to bleſs us with ſo loving and Dutiful Subjects; ſo would we have you make it known unto them upon our Behalf.

Foraſmuch as We find the ſame Intention not only of Invading, but of making a Conqueſt alſo of this Our Realm, now conſtantly more and more detected, and confirmed, as a Matter fully reſolved on; an Army being allready put to the Sea for that Purpoſe, (which We doubt not, but by Gods Goodneſs ſhall prove fruſtrate) We have therfore thought meet to will and require you forthwith, with as much convenient Speed as you may, to call together at ſome convenient Place, or Places, the beſt Sort of Gentlemen under your Lieutenancy; and to declare unto them, that conſidering theſe great Preparations and arrogant Threatnings, now burſt out in Action upon

the Seas, tending to a Conqueſt; wherin every mans particular State is in the higheſt Degree to be touched, in reſpect of Country, Liberty, Wiſe, Children, Lands, Liſe, and (that which is eſpecially to be regarded) for the Profeſſion of the true and ſincere Religion: Laying before them the infinite and unſpeakable Miſeries that fall out upon any ſuch Accident and Change. Which Miſeries are evidently ſeen by the Fruits of the hard and cruel Government that is holden in Countries not far diſtant, where ſuch Change doth happen; (whatſoever Pretence is otherwiſe given forth for the Cauſe of Religion,) We do look that the moſt part of them ſhould have, upon this Inſtant extraordinary Occaſion, a larger Proportion of Furniture, both for Horſemen and Footmen, but eſpecially Horſemen, than hath been certifyed. Thereby to be in their beſt Strength againſt any Attempt whatſoever. Or to be employed both about our own Perſon, or otherwiſe: as they ſhall have Knowledge given unto them. The Number of larger Proportion aſſoon as you ſhall know, we require you to ſignify to Our Privy Council. Hereunto as we doubt not, but by your good Endeavours, they will be the rather conformable; ſo alſo we aſſure our ſelves, that Almighty God will ſo bleſs theſe their Loyal Hearts born towards Us, their Loving Sovereign, and their natural Country, that all the Attempts of any Enemy whatſoever ſhall be made void, and fruſtrate to their Confuſion, your Comforts, and to Gods high Glory. Given under our Signet; At Our Manour of *Grenewich*, the XVIIIth day of *June*, 1588. The XXXth Year of our Reign.

NUMB. LI.

An Account of the Spaniſh Armada, *that invaded* England Anno 1588; *their Number of* Gallions, *Ships, Pinnaces, Zabres*, &c. *Together with their Burthens, Soldiers, Mariners, Munition, Weapons, Artillery, and other Furniture of War, brought with them: Taken from a* Spaniſh *Book, by Order publiſhed. Briefly here ſet down.*

Squadron of the Galleons of Portugal.

CONſiſted of 12 Veſſes. Wherof the Firſt was the Galleon of S. *Mark*, Captain General of the Army of 1000 Tunns; carrieth 177 Mariners, 300 Soldiers, choſen Men, 50 Pieces of Canon: Bullets, Powder, Lead, Corde, and all that which is needful, &c. Feliciſſime Armada.

Theſe 12 Veſſels, (wherof 10 are Galleons, and 2 Zabres) in all make 7737 Tunns. And there are imbarked in them 3330 Soldiers, Footmen, and 1230 Mariners. Which are in Sum 4624 Men. And they cary 350 great Pieces; and all that which is neceſſary to the reſt, as Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, &c.

The Army of Biſcay, *of which is Captain General* Juan Martines *of* Ricalda.

In this Squadron are 14 Ships, Ten of them great, and 4 Pinnaces. Which are of 6567 Tunns of Burthen. In the which Ships be embarked 2037 Souldiers, 862 Mariners. And 260 great Pieces of Canon: 119000 Bullets. 467 Quintals of Powder, 140 of Lead, 89 of Match.

The Army of the Gallies of Caſtille; *of the which is General* Jaques Flores de Valdes.

There is in this Squadron 14 Gallions and Ships, and 2 Pinnaces, Which bear 8714 Tunns. In them are embarked 2458 Soldiers, 1719 Mariners. Which are in all 4177. And 348 great Pieces: Powder, Bullet, Lead, Match, &c. as they ſhall need.

The Army of the Ships of Andalouſie: *of which is Captain* Don Pedro de Valdes.

There are in this Squadron 11 Ships. Ten great, and a Pinnace. Of the Burthen of 8762 Tunns. In the which are embarked 2400 Soldiers; and 800 Mariners, and 260 great Pieces.

The Army of Ships come from the Province of Gepouzce: *of which is General* Michel de Oquendo.

There are in this Squadron 14 Ships: wherof 10 great Ships, 2 Pataches, and 2 Pinnaces; of 6991 Tunns of Burthen. In the which there are embarked 2092 Men of War, and 670 Mariners. All cometh to 2708.

The Army of the Eaſt.

In the which Squadron there are Ten Ships. Which are of 7705 Tunns of Burthen. And imbarked in them 2880 Soldiers, 807 Mariners, 310 great Pieces.

The Army of Hulkes.

Which conſiſted of 14 Ships, Which are of 10271 Tunns in the which are embarked 3221 men of War, 708 Mariners, 410 great Pieces; and their neceſſary Proviſion.

Pataches and Zabres.

There are in this Squadron 12 Pataches and Zabres. Which are of the Burthen of 1131 Tuns. In the which there are embarked 479 Soldiers, 574 Mariners. And there are 193 great Pieces; And all their Furniture.

The Four Galleaces of Naples.

In theſe are 873 Soldiers, 468 Mariners; 200 great Pieces; 1200 Slaves, and the reſt of their Furniture.

And Four Gallies.

Bearing 400 Soldiers; 20 great Pieces: And 888 Slaves.

The general Sum of the whole Army.

So that there are in the ſaid Army 130 Ships, of 57868 Tunns, 19295 Soldiers, and 8450 Mariners: 2088 Slaves, and 2630 great Pieces of Braſs of all Sorts.

Moreover and above the aforenamed 130 Veſſels, there are 20 *Caravels*, for the Service of the above named Army: and likewiſe Ten *Salves* with ſix Oars apeice.

The *Adventurers*, or Voluntiers, Noblemen and Gentlemen of Quality, and others, that went in the ſaid Army, and their Servants that were able to fight. Their Names are ſet down, The Number whereof (to whom Shipping hath been given in the ſaid Army) were 124. And the Servants brought with them 456 bearing Armes and Weapons.

Then follow the Names of thoſe that were entertained and in Pay, in the ſaid Army (whereof are 4 or 5 *Engliſhmen*) to the Number of 238 with 163 Servants.

Moreover ſuch Perſons as are embarked for the Service of the Cannon are 167. Conſiſting of a Lieutenant of the Captain General, a Prieſt Maior, 20 Gentlemen: two Engineers, One of the great Maſter Gunners and his Helpers. A Phyſician, a Chirurgeon, an Apothecary, a great Maſter Carpenter, a Lock-ſmith, other Workmen, Smiths, &c. a Commiſſary of the Moyles, with 22 Boyes and Officers Servants.

Perſons of the Hoſpital.

General Adminiſtrator his Lieutenant. Phyſicians 5. The great Chirurgeon. 4 other Chirurgeons: Five Perſons to help. Four Cures, a Controwler. A great Maſter. 62 other Officers and Boyes of Service. Which are in all 85 for all the Perſons that are in the Hoſpital.

Religious Men which do accompany the ſaid Army.

Of the Order of St. *Francis*, of the Province of *Caſtile*, 8.
Of the ſame Order of the Province of *Portugal*, 20.
Friers *Capuchins*, *Caſtillians*, 29.
Friers *Capuchins*, *Portugais*, 10.
Caſtillians of the Order of St. *Auguſtin*, 9.
Portugais, of the ſame Order, 14.

There were alſo in the Army, of the Order of St. *Francis*, of St. *Dominique*, of the Company of *Jeſus*. In all 180 Religious Men.

Proviſions.

Quintals 11000 of Biſcuit. Which ſufficeth to nouriſh the Army ſix Months.

Wine 14170 Pipes. Which ſhall ſuffice for the ſaid 6 Months.

Quintals of Bacon 6500. That ſhall ſuffice for the ſame Time.

Goats Cheeſe, 3458 Quintals.

8000 Quintals of Fiſh.

3000 Quintals of Rice.

6320 Septiers of Beans, and white Peaſe. Which ſhall ſuffice for more than ſix Months.

11398 Pounds of Oyl Olive.

33870 Meſures of Vinegar. Which ſhall ſuffice for the Proviſion.

For the Service of the ſaid Army, there is caried a great Quantity of Hogsheads full of Water; Diſhes, Cupps, Saucers, in the which they ſhall part each Portion. Links, Lanthornes, Lamps, Lead in Sheets, Neats Leather, and Tampans, in caſe that the Enemies Shot do ſome Hurt to the Ships, and Quantity of Leather Baggs for Powder; Torches of Wax, Candles for Lanthornes, Creſſets, 8000 *Roman* Bottles of Leather, for their Wine and Water: 5000 Pair of Shoes, and 11000 Bundles of Cord.

There is alſo all the Furniture for the Sea, belonging to the Canon.

Moreover, there is of Proviſion of Overplus, double Wheels, and other Furniture for twelve double Cannons of Battery, and for 21 Pieces of Field Pieces, with 3500 Bullets for them. Beſides the Proviſions, that are here above written; And alſo Cables for Ships, Pitch, Flax. And there be alſo Standards Antients and Banners: Where the Figure of JESUS Chriſt, and our Lady, and of his Majeſty are painted.

And for to bring the ſaid Cannons a Land, they cary Moyls, Carts, Mantlets, Gabions, and ſuch like Sorts; and the reſt which is neceſſary for the ſaid Purpoſe.

And beſides the Weapons which Soldiers have, they cary alſo for the Neceſſity Armes which are here under written.

7000 Gunns with their Furniture, A Thouſand Muskets with their Furniture, 10000 Pykes. 1000 Partiſans and Halbards. 6000 half Pykes.

Alſo they cary of Overplus, in caſe they ſhould come a Land, all their Tools, as Iron Crowes, Porters Baskets, Maſons Hammers, Tents, Sacks for the Pioneers, in great Quantity.

So that there is in the ſaid Army, the Veſſels, the men of War, Munitions, neceſſary Furniture, Victuals, *&c.* which are contained in this Diſcourſe. Made in *Lisbon* the 20 of *May*, 1588.

Afterwards there went out of *Lisbon*, toward the End of *June* laſt, a ſupply of an Army in good Furnitures; Containing fourſcore Sayl of Ships; to joyn with the Said Army.

NUMB. LII.

LITANIAE, *&* *Preces pro fœlici Succeſſu Claſſis Regis noſtri* PHILIPPI *adverſus* Angliæ *Hereticos, Veræ Fidei Impugnatores. De Mandato Sereniſſimi Principis Cardinalis: Excudebat* Antonius Riberius, 1588.

Verſic. EXURGE Domine. *Reſp.* Et judica Cauſam tuam Kyrie eleiſon. Chriſte, eleiſon Kyrie, eleiſon. Chriſte, audi nos; Chriſte exaudi nos, &c. Sancta *Maria*, ora pro nobis. Sancta Dei genetrix, ora pro nobis. Sancta Virgo Virginum, Ora, &c. Sancte *Michael*, ora, Sancte *Gabriel*, ora. Sancte *Raphael*, ora. Omnes Sancti Angeli, & Archangeli Dei, Orate pro nobis. Omnes Sancti beatorum Spirituum Ordines, Orate. Sancte *Joannes* Baptiſta, ora pro nobis, &c. And then naming each Saint diſtinctly with the Petition *Ora*, &c. and ſo to the End of that part of their Litany. And then are proper Pſalmes appointed for each day in the Week: beginning at Sunday. For which is *Pſalm* III. *Domine, quid multiplicati ſunt, qui tribulant me? Multi inſurgunt adverſum me, &c.*

Then follow certain Verſicles and Reſponſes, And after them ſome Collects compoſed for the Occaſion. Which were theſe.

Da, quæſumus, Eccleſiæ tuæ, miſericors Deus, ut Spiritu Sancto congregata, hoſtili nullatenus incurſione turbetur.

Concede, nos famulos tuos, quæſumus, Domine Deus, perpetua mentis & Corporis Sanitate gaudere, & glorioſa Beatæ *Mariæ* ſemper Virginis Interceſſione, a præſenti libera triſtitia; & æterna perfrui lætitia.

Eccleſiæ tuæ, quæſumus Domine, preces placatus admitte; ut deſtructis Adverſitatibus, & erroribus univerſis, ſecura tibi ſerviat libertate.

Deus, omnium fidelium Paſtor & Rector, famulum tuum N. (quem Paſtorem Eccleſiæ tuæ præeſſe voluiſti) propitius reſpice. Da ei, quæſumus, Verbo & Exemplo, quibus præeſt, proficere; ut ad vitam, una cum grege ſibi credito, perveniat ſempiternam

Quæſumus, Omnipotens Deus, ut famulus tuus *Philippus*, Rex noſter (qui tua miſeratione ſuſcepit Regni gubernacula) Virtutum etiam omnium percipiat incrementa. Quibus decenter ornatus, & Vitiorum Monſtra devitare; & ad te (qui Via, Veritas & Vita es) gratioſus valeat pervenire.

Deus, qui conteris bella & impugnatores in te ſperantium potentia tuæ Defenſionis expugnas; auxiliare famulis tuis implorantibus Miſericordiam tuam; ut Hæreticorum & omnium inimicorum ſuorum feritate depreſſa, ineffabili te gratiarum actione laudemus.

Deus noſter, refugium & Virtus ade piis Eccleſiæ tuæ precibus, auctor ipſe Pietatis. Et præſta, ut quod fideliter petimus, efficaciter conſequamur.

Hoſtium noſtrorum, quæſumus, Domine, elide ſuperbiam, & eorum contumaciam Dexteræ tuæ Virtute proſterne.

Libera, quæſumus, Domine, a peccatis & hoſtibus tibi famulos ſupplicantes ut in ſancta Converſatione viventes, nullis afficiantur adverſis.

Protector noſter, aſpice, Deus, & propugnatores tuos a Paganorum & Hæreticorum defende periculis. Ut ab omnibus perturbationibus ſemoti, liberis tibi mentibus ſerviant.

Omnipotens Sempiterne Deus, mœſtorum Conſolatio, laborantium Fortitudo; perveniant ad te preces de quacúnq; tribulatione clamentium; ut omnes ſibi in neceſſitatibus ſuis miſericordiam tuam gaudeant affuiſſe. Per Chriſtum Dominum noſtrum. *Amen.*

Verſ. Exaudiat nos omnipotens & miſericors Dn̄s.

Reſp. Et cuſtodiat nos ſemper.

[NUMB. LII.]

The miſerable Condition of the Spaniſh *Fleet, fled to the North of* Scotland*: and ſcattered for many Weeks on the Sea Coſts of* Ireland.

Copy of a Letter to *Don Bern. do Mendoza.*

THE Fleet was by Tempeſt driven beyond the Iſles of *Orkney*, about the Firſt of *Auguſt*, the Place being above threeſcore Degrees from the North Pole; an unaccuſtomed Place for the young Gallants of *Spain*, that never had felt Stormes on the Sea, or cold Weather in *Auguſt*. And about thoſe *North* Iſlands their Mariners and Soldiers dyed daily by Multitudes; as by their Bodies caſt on Land did appear. And after twenty days, or more, having ſpent their Time in Miſeries, they being deſirous to return home to *Spain*, ſailed very far Southward into the Ocean to recover *Spain*. But the Almighty God, who always avengeth the Cauſe of his afflicted People, which put their Confidence in him, and bringeth down his Enemies that exalt themſelves with Pride to the Heavens; ordered the Winds to be ſo violently contrarious to this proud Navy, as it was with Force diſſevered on the High Seas, Weſt upon *Ireland*; and ſo a great Number of them driven into ſundry dangerous Bayes and upon Rocks, all along the *Weſt* and *North* Parts of *Ireland*, in ſundry Places diſtant above an hundred Miles aſunder: and there caſt away: ſome ſunk, ſome broken, ſome run on Sandes, ſome burned by the *Spanyards* themſelves.

As in the *North* part of *Ireland* towards *Scotland*, between the two Rivers of *Loughfoile* and *Lough Swilly*, nine were driven to Land, and many of them broken; and the *Spanyards* forced to come to Land for Succour amongſt the wild *Iriſh*.

In another Place, twenty Miles South-Weſt from thence, in a Bay, called *Calbeggy*, three other Ships, were driven alſo upon Rocks.

In another Place Southwards, being a Bay, called *Borreys*, twenty Miles Northwards from *Gallowey*, belonging to the Earl of *Ormond*, one ſpecial great Ship of a Thouſand Tunn, with Fifty Braſs Pieces, and four Canons, was ſunk, and all the People drowned, ſaving Sixteen: Who by their Apparel, as it is advertiſed out of *Ireland*, ſeemed to be Perſons of great Eſtimation.

Then, to come more to the Southward, thirty Miles upon the Coaſt of *Thomond*, North from the River of *Shennan*, two or three more periſhed. Wherof one was burned by the *Spanyards* themſelves, and ſo driven to the Shore. Another was of St. *Sebaſtians*, wherin were three hundred men who were alſo all drowned, ſaving threeſcore. A third Ship with all her Lading, was caſt away at a Place, called *Breckan*.

In another Place, afore Sir *Tirlogh Obrynes* Houſe, there was alſo another great Ship loſt, ſuppoſed to be a Galliaſs.

Theſe Loſſes above mentioned were betwixt the 5th and 10th of *September*; as was advertiſed from Sundry Places out of *Ireland*. So as by Accompt from the 21ſt. of *July*, when this Navy was firſt beaten by the Navy of *England* until the 10th of *September*, being the Space of Seven Weeks, and more, it is moſt likely, that the ſaid Navy had never good Day, or Night.

Of the reſt of the Navy Report is alſo made, that many of them have been ſeen, lying off and on upon the Coaſt of *Ireland*, toſſed with the Winds in ſuch Sort, as it is alſo doubted, that many of them ſhall hardly recover *Spain*, if they be ſo weakned for Lack of Victuals and Mariners, as part of their Companies that are left on Land, do Lamentably report.

This was written *Octob.* the 9th 1588.

NUMB. LIII.

Ships and Men ſunk, drowned, killed and taken Upon the Coaſt of Ireland *in the Month of* Septemb. 1588.

Counties	Places there	Ships	Men
Tyrconnel.	*Loughfoyle.*	1.	1100 of that Ship, and others, that eſcaped.
Connaught.	*Sligo Haven,*	3 great Ships.	1500
	Tyrcawley,	1.	400
	Clere Iſland,	1.	300
	Finglaſſe,	1.	400
	Offartie,	1.	200
	Irriſe,	2.	The Men fled into other Veſſels.
	Galway Bay,	1.	70
Munſter.	*The Shennan,*	2.	600
	Trayle,	1.	24
	Dingle,	1.	500
	Deſmond,	1.	300
	The Shennen.	1 burnt.	The Men embarked in another Ship.
	Total.	17 Ships.	Of Men 5394

Afore the Loſs of the foreſaid Seventeen Ships in Ireland, *there periſhed in* July *and* Auguſt *Fifteen other great Ships in the Fight betwixt the* Engliſh *and* Spaniſh *Navies, in the Narrow Seas of* England.

	Ships	Men	
Firſt Gallies.	4	1622	
Near *Ediſton* by *Plimouth* at the firſt Conflict.	1		Unknown.
The ſame Time was diſtreſſed, and taken *Don Petro i· Valdes* Ship.	1	422	Theſe two remain in *England.*
At the ſame Time a great *Biſcan* Ship.	1	289	
Afore *Callice* ſpoiled the principal Galleaſs of *Naples.*	1	686	
In the Conflict was ſunk a great *Biskain.*	1		Unknown.
The Gallion, St. *Philip.*	1	532	Theſe two forced into *Fluſhing,* being ſore beaten by the *Engliſh* great Shot.
The Gallion, St. *Matthew.*	1	397	
A *Biſcain* wrecked before *Oſtend.*	1		Unknown.
The Day after the Fight there ſank two *Venetians.*	2	843	
A great *Biſcain* forced by two of the Queens Ships to periſh at *Newhaven.*	1		Unknown.
Total of theſe Ships	15	Men 4791	
Total of both theſe Loſſes	32	10185. Whereof there are Priſoners in *England* and *Zeland* at the leaſt 1000. Beſides a great Multitude of Men, not here accounted, that were ſlain in the Fight, and that have dyed of Famine, as by the Examinations appeareth.	
Beſides many Ships not yet heard of, thought to be loſt.			

Don Pedro de Valdes taken

In this Veſſel of *Naples Don Hugo de Moncada* was ſlain.

Don Diego Piemental taken in this.

NUMB LIV.

Sir Francis Drake *to the Lord Treaſurer. Diſcovery of the* Spaniſh Armada. *Their Preparations to receive them. The Courage of the* Engliſh. *And particularly the Lord Admirals Forwardneſs.*

To the Right Honorable, my very good Lord, the Lord High Treaſurer of England.

Rt. Honorable and my very good Lord.

MSS. Burghlian.

THE XXXth of *May* we ſet Sail out of *Plymouth*, Having the Wind Eaſtwardlie: which continued but a Short Tyme. Yet neverthleſs all Men were ſo willing of Service, and none more than my Lord Admiral himſelf; That we endured a great Storm (conſidering the Tyme of the Year) with the Wind Southerly, and at South-Weſt, for Seven Days. And longer we had, had not the Wynde come Weſtwardlie. And that ſo much as in keeping Sea, we ſhould have bin put to Leeward of *Plymouth*, either for *Portland* or *Wight*. Which Places had not been ſo meet, either for the meeting of the Enemy, or relieving our ſelves, of thoſe Wants, which dayly will bee in ſo great an Army of Shipps.

At our being at Sea we had divers Intelligences: but ſpecially one of moſt Importance. Which is a Hulk, which came from S. *Lucar* ſix Weeks paſt. And in her way homewards, ſaw this day ſixteen days, a great Fleet of Ships which came from *Liſbborne*, having the Wind Northerlie, and ſo coming to the Weſtwards: which the Skipper and his Company judge to be the Great Fleet, that the King of *Spaigne* hath made ready. For that they ſaw ſo many as they could not nombre them. They ſay, that they ſaw 150 or 200 Saile. And yet could not diſcover the End of their Fleet, although they lay to the Eaſtwardes, and the Fleet to the Weſtwardes.

It is now to be looked for, that either we ſhall hear of them very ſhortly, or elſe they will go to the *Groyne*; and there aſſemble themſelves; and make their full *Randevous*.

I aſſure your good Lordſhip, and proteſt it before God, that I find my Lord Admirall ſo well affected for all Honorable Services in this Action, as it doth aſſure all his Followers of good Succeſs, and Hope of Victorie.

Thus humblie taking my Leave of your good Lordſhip, I daylie pray to God to bleſs her Majeſty, and to give us Grace to feare him. So ſhall we not need to doubt the Enemye, although they be many. From aboard her Majeſtys good Shipp, *The Revenge*, ryding in *Plymouth* Sound.

This VIth of *June*, 1588.

Your good Lordſhips very ready
to be commanded,

FRA. DRAKE.

NUMB.

[NUMB. LIV.]

A Prayer uſed in the Queens Chapel, and other Places; for Preſervation, and Succeſs againſt the Spaniſh *Navy, and Forces.*

O Lord God Heavenly Father, the *Lord of Hoſts*, without whoſe Providence nothing procedeth, and without whoſe Mercy nothing is ſaved. In whoſe Power ly the Hearts of Princes, and the End of all their Actions; Have mercy upon thine afflicted Church; and eſpecially regard thy Servant ELIZABETH, our moſt excellent Queen. To whom thy diſperſed Flock do fly, in the Anguiſh of their Soules, and in the Zele of thy Trueth. Behold! how the Princes of the Nations do band themſelves againſt her, becauſe She laboureth to purge thy Sanctuary, and that thy Holy Church may live in Security.

Conſider, O Lord, how long thy Servant hath laboured to them for Peace: but how proudly they prepare themſelves unto Battail. Ariſe therefore, maintain thine own Cauſe, and judge thou between Her, and her Enemies. She ſeeketh not her own Honour, but thine; nor the Dominions of others, but a juſt Defence of her Self; not the ſhedding of Chriſtian Bloud, but the ſaving of poor afflicted Souls. Come down therfore, come down, and deliver thy People by Her. To vanquiſh is all one with thee, by few, or by many; by Want or by Wealth; by Weakneſs, or by Strength. O! poſſeſs the Hearts of our Enemies with a Fear of thy Servants. The Cauſe is thine, the Enemies thine, the Afflicted thine; the Honour, Victory and Triumph ſhall be thine.

Conſider, Lord, the End of our Enterprizes. Be preſent with us in our Armies. Terrify the Hearts of our Enemies; and make a joyful Peace for thy Chriſtians.

And now ſince in this extreme Neceſſity, thou haſt put into the Heart of thy Servant, DEBORAH, to provide Strength, to withſtand the Pride of *Siſera*, and his Adherents; bleſs thou all her Forces by Sea and Land. Grant all her People one Heart, one Mind and one Strength, to defend her Perſon, her Kingdom, and thy true Religion. Give unto all her Council and Captains, Wiſdome, Warineſs and Courage. That they may ſpeedily prevent the Devices, and valiantly withſtand the Forces of all our Enemies. That the Fame of thy Goſpel may be ſpread unto the Ends of the World. We crave this in thy Mercy, O Heavenly Father for the precious Death of thy dear Son Jeſus Chriſt. *Amen.*

NUMB. LV.

Spaniſh *Letters of the Succeſs of their* Armada.

I. *The Copy of a Letter ſent unto* Spain *by* Juan de Gamarra, *a* Spaniſh *Merchant. Dated the* 31 *of* September, 1588.

Anſw. to certain *Span.* Lyes. prin. 1589.

THAT the *Engliſh* have loſt 40 Ships at one Encounter, where they could not fly: the which was in *Luxaten*, a Port of *Scotland*. Unto which Place the *Engliſh* had followed the *Spaniſh Armada* from before *Calice*. And they thinking that our *Armada* had gon to take this Port, got before ours, to defend it. But ours ſeeing themſelves ſo neer the *Engliſh*, (and that they could not retyre, as they had often don before, running for Succour to the *Engliſh* Ports) had them now, as they would; and ſet upon them ſo ſtrongly, that they Sunk 20 Ships, and took 26 ſafe and ſound. And the reſt, perceiving their Deſtruction, fled without men, all rent and torn. And then (it is reported) that our *Armada* took the ſaid Port: where they are in very good Harbour, as all affirme.

Thus is the News. God grant them ſuch Succeſs as is needful. And this is underſtood by a Poſt that is come from *Calice*. And that it is commanded in *England*, upon paine of Loſs of Life and Goods, that none write News to any Place. Which is a Confirmation of the aforeſaid.

II. *The Copy of a* Letter, *which* Pedro de Alva, (*a* Spaniſh *Merchant*) *wrot from* Roan *unto* Spain, *the* 1 *of* September.

I Write no News of the *Spaniſh Armada*, for that they be varying, and I deſirous to write nothing but Truth. Now by News (which run from many Places, from *Callis*, *Deepe*, *Holland*, and by ſome Preſuppoſings from *England*, and other Places) it is held for a Matter moſt certain that they have fought with the *Engliſh*; ſpoiled and ſunk many of them, and taken others: and that the reſt (reported to be 27 Ships) are returned, ſpoiled, to the River of *London*, being all that could eſcape.

With this Poſt there goeth one from *George Segum* of *Callis*: who ſaith, that Maſters and Mariners of *Zeland* have affirmed to the Governour of *Callis Monſieur de Gordan*, that the *Armada* is in a Port or River of *Scotland*, called *Triffla*: where they ſay, there may ride two Thouſand Ships. This is the common Report.

III. *The Copy of a Letter*; *which* Diego Perez, *Poſtmaſter of* Logronno, *wrot, in Confirmation of the Victory againſt* England *in the Ocean Sea, Dated the* 2 *of* September, 1588.

Ubi ſupra. THIS day is the *Engliſh* News confirmed by a Letter from the Governour of *Roan*: who writeth, that he hath in his Power the chief Pilot of Captain *Drake*; and that he knoweth, that al the *Engliſh* Navy was utterly diſcomfitted: 25 Ships ſunk, and about 40 taken, and *Francis Drake*, Priſoner; having chaſed them as far as *Abſpurge*, and put many to the Sword: ſaying, that there was found in *Drakes* Ship, a Piece of 25 Spanns, of one Kintal of Munition; made on purpoſe of one only Shot to ſink the Admiral of *Spain*. But it pleaſed God, (tho' She was hurt therewith, yet She was repaired again) and overcome the *Engliſh* Fleet.

IV. *By a Letter from the Poſtmaſter of* Bourdeaux, *written to the Ambaſſador in* Fraunce, *the* 2 *of* December, 1588.

Ubi ſupra. SINCE The writing hereof is arrived a *Scottiſh* Man. Who ſaith, that all the *Spaniſh Armada* are harboured in *Scotland*: and that the *Scots* have taken Armes againſt *England*.

NUMB. LVI.

Auguſt *the* 5. 1588. *Articles for the Examination of* Don Pedro dé Valdes: *Taken Priſoner in the Defeat of the* Spaniſh Armada. *In ſeveral Queſtions with* Don Pedro's *Anſwers.*

Queſtions propounded to Don Pedro de Valdez.	*Don Pedro's* Anſwers.
WHO hath the Kings Commiſſion? How many are Counſillors to the General by the Kings Commiſſion?	The Duke of *Medina.*
If the General ſhould miſcarry, who ſhould ſuccede in his Places?	The Vice Ad.
Who is the Admiral General: who the Vice admiral? If they ſhould miſcarry who ſhould ſuccede in their Places?	They are to ſuccede one to another accordingly as they are now placed.
To how many was the Kings Will for Landing, and following the Invaſion, imparted?	They were to receive Direction from the Duke of *Parma.*
Was it not known to you, that the King about *Eaſter* laſt ſent a Commiſſion to the Duke of *Parma* to treat, and conclude Peace with *England*?	He heard, that ſuch a Commiſſion was granted.
How was it meant, that this Army ſhould procede, if the Duke had made Peace?	He knoweth not what was the Reſolution: but thinketh the ſame was referred to the Two Dukes.
What Opinion was had of the King of *Scots*, or of any of his Realm, to joyne with this Enterprize, or to favour it?	He knew him not.
What did the Earl *Morton*, otherwiſe called *Maxwel*, promiſe the King of *Scotland*?	
What Opinion was had for any landing in *Ireland*? What men of *Ireland*, of Title or Value, be there in the Navy?	
In how many Places of *England* was there had Opinion to Land in? And what Succours were promiſed to be had in *England*?	
Was there any Promiſe made, to have any Rebellion ſtirred in *England*? And in what Parts?	
What Opinion was had of the Power of *England*, both by Land and Sea, to reſiſt the Invaſion?	
What Power was thought ſhould come with the Duke of *Parma*.	
What Shipping was thought, that the Duke of *Parma* had?	
If the Duke of *Parma* had come to the Seas to Land, who ſhould then be the General by Land, and alſo by Sea?	The Duke of *Parma.*
What Loſs had the Navy from her coming forth [when a great Storm happened] untill their Return to the *Groyne*.	Two Hulkes only loſt.
Whether was not there a Diſpoſition in the Duke of *Medina* to have returned, or broken off? And how was that altered?	
Upon what Occaſion did the King write a particular Letter to himſelf [*Don Pedro*] and to whom elſe did he write the Like?	
What Opinion was had by Seamen, where the Navy might take Water, either in *England* or *France*?	The Iſle of *Wight.*
Where did they accompt to have any Port, either in *England* or *France*, or *Flanders.*	
If the Navy of *England*, had not purſued them toward the Eaſt, whither meant the *Spaniſh* Navy to have made their Courſe?	
What Pilotts have they of Knowledg for the Coaſts of *England*? In what Ships went they?	

If the Duke of *Parma* could not come with his Army to the Seas, what ſhould the *Spaniſh* Army have don?

Whether there paſſed any Advertiſements between the Duke *Medina*, and the Duke of *Parma*?

Anſwered before.

If the *Spaniſh* Navy had not prevailed in their Purpoſe this Summer, where ſhould it have wintered?

For how long time was it Victualled, coming from the *Groyne*?

Where was it purpoſed to have revictualled?

In what State was the Water of the Navy, when he was taken?

What Ayd was promiſed them out of *France*? And by whom? And out of what Ports?

No Meaning.

Whether was there any Meaning to Land in *Zealand* or *Holland*? And in what Places?

There was 6 Months pay due to them.

For how longtime was the Army pay'd?

Whether was the Duke of *Medina* ever in any Service for the Warr.

What Number of Ships were left behind in *Spain*, of Men of Warr?

Whether was there any Purpoſe in *Spain*, to ſecond this Navy with any more Shipping, or with more Victuall?

Who are the principal men in the Navy of Knowledge for Sea Service? And who for Land?

He will not tonch that String.

What Determination was there for the Proceding againſt the Queen, and the Nation of *England*?

How would they have known the Catholic from the Proteſtant?

To whom in the Land ſhould Favour have been ſhewed.

Who ſhould haue had the Title of this Crown?

Whether ſhould the Nation have been ruled, by the Rulers of the *Engliſh* Nation; or the Government changed?

NUMB. LVII.

Intelligence ſent from Rome, Liege, *and* Liſle *to the Lord Treaſurer: Of divers Matters concerning the* Spaniſh Armada, *and King* Philip. *And his Purpoſe of ſending the Queen, being taken, to the* Pope.

MSS. Burghlian.

I Had a Chamber in the Houſe, where one *Joh. Dutche* (ſome time of the [Queens] Guard, now Mace-bearer to Cardinal *Allen* at *Rome*) lodged; neer to *Peter Mountauro*, wheras the ſaid St. *Peter* was martyred. And as he and I were on St. *Peters* Eve, one year now paſt, walking on the ſame *Mount*, on Purpoſe, to behold the Fire-Works that night, as well out of the Caſtle St. *Angelo*, as other Places of *Rome*, (for ſtanding there we might ſe moſt Parts of the City) we fell into Talk of the Overthrow of the *Spaniſh Armado*. And after ſome Speeches had of the great Loſs the King had in that Attempt, he told me, that he heard the Cardinal ſay that the Kiug of *Spain* gave great Charge to Duke *Medina*, and to all the Captains, that in no wiſe they ſhould harm the Perſon of the Queen; but upon taking Her, uſe the ſame with Reverence; looking well to the ſame Cuſtody of Her. And further, that the Duke ſhould ſo ſpeedily, as he might, take Order for the Conveyance of her Perſon to *Rome*: To the purpoſe, that his Holineſs, the Pope, ſhould diſpoſe therof in ſort as it ſhould pleaſe him,

The ſame *Dutche* and I beholding, among others, the great Number of Pictures, as well of Emperors, Kings and Queens, as others of the greateſt Nobility, both chriſtned, and not chriſtned; and of ſome dead:

All which were orderly placed in Degree, (in a certain Place, between *Caſtel S. Angelo* and St. *Peters* Church in the long Street there) *Dutch* eſpied placed next to King *Philips* Picture on the better Hand, the Picture of Sir *Francis Drake*. Wherat raging, (in Words *Italian*) overheard by the Painter, (or ſome his Friends) and haſting to the Cardinals Lodgings, and to him, informing of the ſame; wherof preſently came ſome, as ſent to pull down the ſame Picture. It was, before *Dutch* his Repair thither again, taken away. But yet the poor Painter was in Trouble; albeit he proteſted, he knew not who erected it there, or who took it down, or what was become of it.

The Picture of her Majeſty was not among them; neither, as an Heir, is permitted to open Shew. Nevertheleſs ſundry *Romans* have it in their Chambers in ſecret. As one *William*, a poor Man there maried, (after his Eſcape with *Fox*, from Bondage of the Inquiſition) told me, and brought me into a Senators Houſe, whoſe *Vinerol* the ſame *William* worketh in. Where I ſaw her Majeſtys Picture at large, and coſtly ſet out, and depainted. The poor Man told me the ſame Day, wherin the Tryumphing was in *Rome*, for taking of her Majeſty, and ſubduing the Realm, the Cardinal made a great Feaſt, and invited, and had at the ſame, all *Engliſh*, *Scottiſh* and *Iriſh* Men in *Rome*: but it was his Hap not to be there, being at his Work in a *Vinerol*.

And the next day after, *Dutch* met him asking him, why he came not the other Day to my Lord Graces Banquet, as all others did, in Rejoyce of the great Victory the King of *Spains* Forces had againſt *England*, and of the taking of the Queen, his *Dame* Captive. Wherunto when he anſwering, that he would not believe it, and would adventure the Loſs of his Ears, if it were true; the ſame *Dutch* informed of the Speeches, and the poor Man was checked, and had been ill dealt with, if the News had been true.

At *Liege* upon ſome Occaſion of Talk, as well of your Honour, as ſome others of her Majeſtys Privy Council; and how by your Policy and Wiſdome, your Lordſhip, and the reſt over-reached ſtill the King of *Spain*, and all his many Counſils and Counſillors in all Matters; the Council of *Spain* procraſtinate and delay, not putting in Execution their Determinations; the Counſil of *England*, uſing Expedition in all their Intentions: the Council of *Spain* giving out now, what they will do or put in Execution a Year hence: the Council in *England* at preſent Execution of their Determination, before any Speech in public be had, or blown abroad. And thus the Expedition of the one overmatcheth the long temporizing of the other.

At which Time of Talk, *D. D.* ſaid he could not more aptly compare the Lord Treaſurer of *England* to any Man, than to a Waterman of the *Thames*; whoſe Affair is to look one way, and row another. When he is to work, or to compaſs any Matter of Importance, he will give out Matter carying great ſhew of Reaſon, that the ſame ſhall and muſt of Neceſſity ſort to the End and Effect of what the Ears of men are filled with by that his Courſe of Invention and Policy. And while Ey is had upon the ſame; and Means working to croſs as much, then he putteth in execution a contrary Determination, and hazzards or effects the ſame, before it be revealed; wherby Prevention might, or can be had. By which Courſe of Policy, with his Expedition in all his Actions, together with his long Time of Continuance in place of Government; and having Wit at Wil, he is ſo experienced and grounded, with ſo deep a Judgment, as his pierſing Ey foreſees and looks into all Accidents and ſequences, that may prejudice, or further his Purpoſes and Intentions in any Matter he takes in hand, or is to be handled in Government of the Realm, and practiſed, and followed againſt any other State.

Upon St. *Nicolas* day laſt, being then kept Feſtival, I dined in *Liſle* with D. *Marſhal*, [a *Scotch* Prieſt.] Among other Talk he ſaid, it was time now for the King of *Scots* to adviſe himſelf well; and to caſt his Ey upon the apparent Hazzard, wherin the King of *Navarr*, [a Proteſtant] ſtandeth of Loſs of the Crown of *France*: leſt he come alſo in like *Predicament*, not only for *Scotland*, but alſo for his Claime and Intereſt unto the Crown of *England*; both which no doubt, but he ſhall looſe too, after the King of *Spain* hath eſtabliſhed a Catholic King in *France*: unleſs he reform himſelf and his Realm in Matter of Religion, and yield to the Obeiſance of the Church of *Rome*, and Profeſſion of the ſame. We were in this Country ſaith he [the ſaid Dr. *Marſhal*] in ſome Comfort, hearing that a Courſe and full Determination was had, and taken [and perhaps a *Spaniſh* Invaſion of *Scotland*] wherby upon great Liklihood he might be drawn to Reformation, and other Purpoſes in the Catholic Cauſe, and for our Return into our Country. But we hear not that the ſame is put in execution. Pope *Sixtus* promiſed to diſburſe ſome Summs of Mony to be uſed in that Affair. But what is, or ſhall be don therein, I cannot learn, nor yet think in Haſt any Matter to Purpoſe therof will be forwarded; ſuch Variance is among them in *Rome*, ſince the ſaid *Sixtus* dyed.

Theſe before recited, and the like Speeches, I have heard among them, beſide their Talk and Opinion of the King of *Spain*, now of late. Of whom the moſt part, and wiſeſt ſort, deſpair of all Hope in him, that may ſort to their Liking; unleſs he gain Victory againſt *Navarr*, as they term him. Whereof alſo they make doubt greatly, as fearing *England*, *Scotland* and the *Germaine* Princes will afford him Aid.

[NUMB. LVII.]

An Account of the Procedings between Spain *and* England, *beginning at the Acceſs of* Queen Elizabeth *to the Crown. In Anſwer to a Libell.*

MSS. Burghlian.

HER Majeſty at her coming to the Crown, found her Realm intangled with the War of *France* and *Scotland*, her mightieſt and neereſt Neibours. Which Warrs were grounded onely, upon the *Spaniards* Quarel. But the Purſuit of them had loſt *England* the Town of *Calais*. Which from the Year of *Edward* III. had been poſſeſſed by the Kings of *England*. Now there was a Meeting neer *Dorleas*, towards the End of Queen *Maries* Reign, between the Commiſſioners of *France*, *Spain* and *England*. And ſome Overtures of Peace were made: but broke off upon the Article of the Reſtitution of *Calais*. After Queen *Maries* Death the King of *Spain* thinking himſelf diſcharged of that Difficulty; tho' in Honour he was no leſs bound to ſtand to it, than before, renewed the like Treaty; wherin her Majeſty concorded. So as the Commiſſioners for the ſaid Princes, met at *Chaſteau Cambreſy*, neer *Cambray*.

In the Proceding of which Treaty it is true, that at the firſt the Commiſſioners of *Spain*, for Form and in Demonſtration only, pretended to ſtand firm upon the Demand of *Calais*, but it was diſcovered indeed, that the Kings Meaning was, that after ſome ceremonious and perfunctory inſiſting therupon, to grow apart to a Peace with the *French*, excluding her Majeſty; and ſo to leave to make her own Peace, after her People had made his Warrs. Which covert Dealing being politicly lookt into, her Majeſty had reaſon, being newly inveſted in her Kingdom, and of her own Inclination being affected to Peace, to conclude the ſame with ſuch Conditions as She mought. And yet the King of *Spain* in his Diſſimulation had ſo much Advantage as She was fain to do it in a Treaty apart with the *French*. Wherby to one that is not informed of the Counſils and Secrets of State, as they paſt, it ſhould ſeem to be a voluntary Agreement of her Majeſty, where the King of *Spain* would be party. Wheras indeed he left Her no other Choice. And this was the firſt Aſſay and earneſt Penny of that Kings good Affection to her Majeſty.

About the ſame Time when the King was ſolicited to renew ſuch Treaties and Leagues as had paſt between the two Crownes of *Spain* and *England*, and by the Lord *Cobham* ſent unto him, to acquaint him with the Death of Queen *Mary*, and after by Sir *Thomas Chaloner*, and Sir *Thomas Chamberlain* ſucceſſively, Ambaſſadors Reſident in his *Low Countries*, who had Orders divers Times, during their Charge, to make Overtures therof, both unto the King and certain principal Perſons about him; and (theſe former Motions taking no effect) by Viſcount *Mountague*, and Sir *Tho. Chamberlain*, ſent into *Spain* in the Year 1560; no other Anſwer could be had or obtained of that King but that the Treaties did ſtand in as good Force to all Intents, as new Ratifications could make them. An Anſwer ſtrange at that Time; but very conformable to his Procedings ſince: which belike even then were cloſely hatching in his own Breaſt. For had he not at that Time ſome hidden Alienation of Mind and Deſign of an Enemy towards her Majeſty, ſo wiſe a King could not be ignorant, that the renewing and ratifying of Treaties between Princes and Eſtates do add a great Life and Force, both of Aſſurance to the Parties themſelves, and Countenance and Reputation to the World beſides: and have for that Cauſe been commonly and neceſſarily uſed and practiſed.

In the Meſſage of Vicount *Mountague* it was alſo contained, that he ſhould crave the Kings Counſil and Aſſiſtance according to Amity and good Intelligence, upon Diſcovery of certain pernicious Plots of the Houſe of *Guiſe* to annoy this Realm by the way of *Scotland*. Wherunto the Kings Anſwer was ſo dark, and ſo cold, as nothing could be made of it; till he made an Expoſition of it by Effects in the expreſs Reſtraint of Munition to be caried out of the *Low Countries*, unto the Siege of *Leith*; becauſe our Nation was to have Supply therof from thence. So that in all the Negotiations that paſt with the King, ſtill her Majeſty received no Satisfaction; but more and more Suſpition, and hard Tokens of evil Affection.

Soon after, when upon that Project, which was diſcloſed before, the King had reſolved to diſannul the Liberty and Privilege unto his Subjects, the *Netherlanders*, antiently belonging, and to eſtabliſh among them a material Government; which the People, (being very wealthy, and inhabiting Townes very Strong and defencible by Fortifications, both by Nature, and the Hand) could not endure; there followed the Defection and Revolt of thoſe Countries. In which Action (being greateſt of all thoſe which have paſt between *Spain* and *England*) the Proceding of her Majeſty hath been ſo juſt, and mingled with ſo many honorable Regards, as nothing doth ſo much clear and acquit Her Majeſty not only from Paſſion, but alſo from all diſhonorable Policy.

For firſt, at the Beginning of the Troubles, She did impart unto him faithful and ſincere Advice of the Courſe that was to be taken for the quieting and appeaſing them; and expreſly forwarned both himſelf and ſuch as were in principal Charge in thoſe Countries, during the Warrs, of the Danger like to enſue, if he held ſo heavy a Hand over that People, leſt they ſhould caſt themſelves into the Armes of a Stranger. But finding the Kings mind ſo exulcerate, as he rejected all Counſil that tended to mild and gracious Procedings, her Majeſty neverthleſs gave not over her honourable Reſolution. Which was, if it were poſſible to reduce and reconcile thoſe Countries unto the Obedience of their natural Sovereign, the King of *Spain*. And if that might not be, yet to preſerve them from alienating themſelves to a foreign Lord: as namely, unto the *French*; with whom they much treated, and among them the Enterprize of *Flanders* was ever propounded, as a Mean to unite their own civil Diſſenſions; but patiently temporized, expecting the good Effect which Time might breed. And whenſoever the State grew into Extremity of Diſpair, and therby ready to embrace the Offer of any Foreigner, then would her Majeſty yield them ſome Relief of Mony, or permit ſome ſupply of Force to go over unto them; to the End to interrupt ſuch violent Reſolutions: And ſtill mediate unto the King ſome juſt and honourable Capitulation of Grace and Accord ; ſuch as whereby always ſhould have been preſerved unto him ſuch Intereſt and Authority, as he in Juſtice could claim, or any Prince, moderatly minded, would ſeek to have. And this Care She held interchangeably ; ſeeking to mitigate the Wrath of the King, and the Diſpair of the Country ; til ſuch Time as after the Death of the Duke of *Anjou*, into whoſe Hands, according to her Majeſtys Prediction, but againſt her good Liking, they had put themſelves, the Enemy preſſing them, the *Vnited Provinces* were received into her Majeſtys Protection. Which was after ſuch Time as the King of *Spain* had diſcovered himſelf, not only an implacable Lord to them, but alſo profeſſed Enemy unto her Majeſty, having actually invaded *Ireland*, and deſigned the Invaſion of *England*.

For it is to be noted, that the like Offers which were then made unto her Majeſty, had been made unto her long before. But as long as her Majeſty conceived any Hope either of making their Peace, or entertaining her own with *Spain*, ſhe would never harken therunto. And yet now even at laſt retained a ſingular and evident Proof to the World of her Juſtice and Moderation, in that ſhe refuſed the Inheritance and Sovereignty of thoſe goodly Provinces, which by the States with much Inſtance was preſt upon Her : and being accepted would have wrought great Contentment and Satiſfaction both to her People, and them ; being Countries, for the Seat, Wealth and Commodity of Traffic, and Affection to our Nation, moſt convenient to have been annexed to the Crown of *England* : (And withall one Charge, Danger and Offence of *Spain*.) Only took upon Her the Defence and Protection of their Liberties. Which Liberties and Privileges are of that Nature, as they may juſtly eſteem themſelves but *Conditional* Subjects to the King of *Spain*, more juſtly than *Aragon*, and may make her Majeſty as juſtly eſteem the antient Confederacies and Treaties with *Burgundy* to be of Force with the People and Nation, rather than with the Line of the Dukes. Becauſe it was never an abſolute Monarchy. So as to Sum up her Majeſtys Proceding in this great Action, they have been but this, that She hath ſought to reſtore them to *Spain*, or at the leaſt to keep them from Strangers, and in no wiſe to purchaſe them to her ſelf.

But during all this Time the King of *Spain* kept good Conformity in his Procedings toward her Majeſty ; breaking forth more and more into Injuryes and Contempts. Her Subjects trading into *Spain* have been many of them burnt ; ſome caſt into the Gallies ; others have dyed in Priſon, without any other Crime committed, but upon Quarrels picked upon them for their Religion here at home. Her Merchants, at the Sack of *Antwerp*, were divers of them ſpoiled, and put to their Ranſome, tho' they could not be charged with any partaking. Neither upon the Complaint of Dr. *Wylſon* and Sir *Edward Horſey* [the Queens Ambaſſadors] could a Redreſs be had. A general Arreſt was made by the Duke of *Alva* of *Engliſh* mens Goods and Perſons ; upon Pretence that certain Ships ſtayed in this Realm, laden with Goods and Mony of certain Merchants of *Genua*, belonged to the King. Which Mony and Goods were afterwards to the utmoſt Value reſtored, and payd back ; wheras our men were far from receiving the like Juſtice from the other ſide. Dr. *Man*, her Majeſtys Ambaſſador, received, during his Legation, ſundry Indignities, himſelf being removed out of *Madrid*, and lodged in a Village : as they are accuſtomed to uſe the Ambaſſadors of the *Moors*. His Son and Steward forced to aſſiſt at a Maſs with Tapers in their Hands ; beſides ſundry other Contumilies and Reproches. But the ſpoiling and dammaging of a Merchant, Vexation of a common Subject, Diſhonour of an Ambaſſador, were rather but Demonſtrations of evil Diſpoſition, than Effects, if they be compared with theſe Actions of State ; wherin he and his Miniſters have ſought the Overthrow of this Goverment.

As in the Year 1569. when the Rebellion in the North parts of *England* brake forth. Wherof who but the Duke of *Alva*, then the Kings Lieutenant in the *Low Countries*, and *Don Guerres de Eſpees*, then his Ambaſſador Ledgier here, were diſcovered to be chief Inſtruments and Practiſers, having complotted with the Duke of *Norfolk* at the ſame Time as was proved at the ſaid Dukes Condemnation; that an Army of 10000 men ſhould have landed at *Harwich*, in Aid of the Party that the ſaid Duke had made within the Realm: and the ſaid Duke of *Alva* having ſpent and employed 150000 Crowns in that Preparation.

Not contented thus to have conſorted, and aſſiſted her Majeſtys Rebells in *England*, he procured a Rebellion in *Ireland*: Arming and ſending thither in the Year an Archrebel of that Country, *James Fitz Morris*, (which before was fled) as truly to ſpeak the whole Courſe of Moleſtation which her Majeſty hath received in the Realm, by the riſing and keeping out of the *Iriſh*, hath been nouriſhed and fomented from *Spain*. But afterward in the Year he invaded the ſame Iſland with *Spaniſh* Forces, under an *Italian* Collonel, being but the Forerunner of a greater Power, which by Treaty between him and the Pope ſhould have followed; but that by the Speedy Defeat of thoſe former they were diſcouraged to purſue the Action. Which Invaſion was proved to be don by the Kings own Order, both by the Letters of his Secretary *Eſcobed*, and of *Guerras* to the King, and alſo by divers other Letters; wherin the particular Conferences were ſet down, which paſt concerning this Enterprize between Cardinal *Riario*, the Popes Legate, and the Kings Deputies in *Spain*; touching in general the Number of men, the Contribution of Mony, and the Maner of proſecuting the Action. And by the Confeſſion of ſome of the chiefeſt of thoſe that were taken Priſoners at the Fort. Which Act being an Act of apparent Hoſtility added unto all the Injury aforeſaid; and accommpanied with the continual Receipt, Comfort and Countenance, by Audiences, Penſions and Employments, which he gave to the Traitors and Fugitives both *Engliſh*, and *Iriſh*; as *Weſtmerland*, *Paget*, *Englefield*, *Baltinglas*, and Numbers of others did ſufficiently juſtify and warrant the Purſuit of Revenge. Which either in the Spoil of *Cartagena* and *San Domingo* in the *India* by Mr. *Drake*, or in undertaking of the Protection of the *Low Countries*, when the Earl of *Leiceſter* was ſent over, after followed.

But before that Time her Majeſty, tho' ſhe ſtood upon her Guard, in reſpect of the juſt Cauſe of Jealouſy, which the ſundry Injuries of the King gave Her, yet had entred into no offenſive Action againſt him. For both the voluntary Forces, which *Don Antonio* had collected in this Realm, were by expreſs Commandment reſtrained; and Offer was made of Reſtitution to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador of ſuch Treaſure, as Mr. *Drake* had brought into this Realm, upon Proof that it had been taken by Wrong. And the Duke of *Anjou* was, (as much as could ſtand with the neer Treaty of a Mariage, which then was very forward betwixt her Majeſty and the ſaid Duke) directed from the Enterprize of *Flanders*.

NUMB.

NUMB. LVIII.

A Speech in Parlament An. 31. Regin. *againſt a Bill of Subſidy to be granted for four Years, in Order to a Preparation againſt any Aſſaults from* Spain.

MSS. Burgh-lian.

WHEREAS I am, tho' unworthy, a Member of this Houſe, and zelouſly deſirous to conjoyn my ſelf by Conſent in all good Procedings with the Body therof, I have hitherto in this great Matter of the Subſidy received ſo ſmall Satisfaction for the Direction of my Judgment, that unleſs I ſhould manifeſtly diſſent from mine own Conſcience, which neither this Place requireth, nor Chriſtianity alloweth, I cannot conſent with the Bill therin, which may ſeem to have had ſo general and current a Conſent, as it might ſeem ſuperfluous to offer to ſpeak to it: and eſpecially at this Time after the engroſſing thereof, after the Reſolution thereon by a great, grave and wiſe Committee, I may be deemed preſumptuous, but to ſpeak againſt this Bill: Whereby the Service of her Majeſty and the whole Realm may be ſuppoſed to be hindred; it may be thought impious; it may be thought dangerous. The Conſent of the greateſt Part of this Houſe, as I take it, concludeth all the reſt at the Queſtion, but Excludeth none in the arguing.

This Time, I confeſs, to be ſomewhat unſeaſonably choſen, but yet is now Time to ſpeak, or elſe hereafter for ever to be ſilent. And therin I do ſomewhat rely upon the Authority of an Honorable Perſonage, who, at the putting of this Bill to Engroſing, affirmed it in his Experience, not to be unuſual to have a Bill argued upon, between the 3d reading, and the Queſtion, 2 or 3 days.

As for the Service of her Majeſty and my Country, unto which two I owe all Subjection and Duty, I am ſo far from withdrawing either my ſelf or others there from, that my Speech ſhall have none other End, than the Advancement thereof; Neither, as I hope, ſhall in that behalf need any other Apology, than it ſelf.

My Meaning is not to diſpute, whether it be lawful to grant a Subſidy, or no. For then our Saviour Chriſt himſelf would ſtop my Mouth with his Anſwer to the captious Queſtioniſts in the XXth of *Matthew*. For ſure, the very Impreſſion and Superſcription of our Mony puts us in mind to whom it doth appertain. Neither will I argue whether it be neceſſary to grant a Subſidy, or not. But therin content my ſelf with the Example of our Saviour, who in the XVIIth of *Matthew*, paid his XXth peny out of his Fiſhes Mouth for himſelf and *Peter*. Nor yet whether it be convenient to contribute toward the neceſſary Exigences of our Lawful Princes. For St. *Paul* teacheth me, in the XIIIth to the *Romans*, that Tribute appertaineth unto them of Duty, as unto Governours ſent by God, for the well ordering and guiding of his People.

But the Queſtion, wherin I endeavour to be reſolved, is, whether it be neceſſary or convenient for us at this Time to tender unto her Majeſty ſuch a Subſidy, and in ſuch maner and Form, as hath been by divers heretofore moved, as the Purport of this Bill offereth unto us. That is in brief, a double Subſidy to be paid in four Years.

And Firſt, for the *Neceſſity* therof, I cannot deny, but if it were a Charge impoſed upon us by her Majeſtys Commandment, or a Demand, proceding from her Majeſty by way of Requeſt, that I think, there is not one among us all, either ſo diſobedient a Subject in Regard of our Duty, or ſo unthankful a Man in reſpect of the ineſtimable Benefits which by Her, and from her, we have received, which would not with frank Conſent, both of Voice and Heart, moſt willingly ſubmit himſelf thereunto, without any unreverend Enquiry

into

into the Cauſes thereof. For it is continually in the Mouth of us all, that our Lands, Goods and Lives are at our Princes Diſpoſing. And it agreeth very well with that Poſition of the Civil Law, which ſaith, *Quòd omnia Regis ſunt.* But how? *Ita tamen, ut omnium ſint. Ad Regem enim Poteſtas omnium pertinet; ad ſingulos proprietas.* So that altho' it be moſt true, that her Majeſty hath, over our ſelves and our Goods, *Poteſtatem imperandi*, yet it is as true, that until that Power command, (which, no doubt, will not command without very juſt Cauſe) every Subject hath his own *Proprietatem poſſidendi.* Which Power and Commandment from her Majeſty, which we have not yet received, I take it (ſaving Reformation) that Wee are freed from the Cauſe of *Neceſſity*.

The Danger of Invaſion conſidered.

Another Cauſe of *Neceſſity* is the dangerous Eſtate of our Commonwealth in reſpect of *Invaſion* by our common and mighty Enemies. Which Reaſon, becauſe in my Hearing it hath been the principal, and almoſt only Perſuader of the Bill, requireth a more ſufficient and exquiſite Anſwer, than perhaps I ſhall make unto it. I have before acknowledged it to be a neceſſary Anſwer to move all to unwonted and extraordinary Contribution. And I muſt herein needs Subſcribe to a wiſe and learned man of our Age. Who ſaith, that they be *pia, quæ cum Civibus imperantur Tributa, ſine quibus Civitas ipſa funditus ſit interitura.* But as I do aſſuredly hope, that our Country is at this preſent in no ſuch deſperate and dangerous Caſe; the very Teeth and Jaws of our mightieſt and moſt malicious Enemy have been ſo lately broken, and the Sword of his greateſt Confederate more lately ſheathed in his own Boſome. Beſide the Hope which may juſtly be conceived of the Expedition now ſetting forward, * for the defeating all their Plots, and diſappointing all their Devices: As, I ſay, I do aſſuredly hope, that our Country for theſe Reaſons is in no ſuch great Danger, as it is pretended, ſo may I conſtantly affirm, that altho' by way of conceſſion, I ſhould grant it to be ſo, yet the Subſidy, required by this Bill to be granted, could give little or no Relief thereunto. For as a Pardon comes unprofitably to the Offender after his Execution, or a Potion to a Patient after his Death, or Recovery to Health; ſo if the Stroke of Gods Enemy and ours be likely to light upon us, either this Year, as it hath been here affirmed; ſo the next, as it is in my ſmall Judgment more likely, I doubt not, but you will all conſent with me, that a Subſidy, the firſt Part wherof is not to be paid, till the End of three Years, (for unto that only my Speech hath relation) can ſerve neither for Pay, nor Proviſion, in Defence therof.

* Of invading ſome parts of *Spain* by Sir *Fr. Drake* and other *Engliſh*.

Utilis eſt Medicina ſuo quæ tempore venit.

ſaith the Poet. And *Sapientia ſera*, is ſaid to be *Proxima Stultitiæ*.

Inconveniences of the Subſidy:

And thus having briefly ſet down mine Opinion againſt the Neceſſity of this Grant, I will by your favourable Patience, with like Brevity declare ſuch *Inconveniences*, as I have conceived may enſue thereby. It is not unknown to you all, but moſt ſenſibly felt through the whole Realm, what Charge and Expences the Commons therof were this laſt Summer driven unto by Preparation and Proviſion of Armes, Horſes, Apparel, and other Neceſſaries, for their juſt and natural Defence againſt the pretended Invaſion: you know, that ſince that Time a Payment of the Subſidy laſt granted, hath been made unto her Majeſty. There is none of us ignorant what Numbers of Privy Seals are even now diſperſed through the whole Realm, to the emptying mens Coffers, and impairing of their Stocks: with what Readineſs, Duty and Goodwill, theſe things have been, and ſhall be performed by the Subjects, no man here may doubt. Now then to bring a new and unaccuſtomed Continuation of Payments, one to role in the Neck of another, *ſicut unda ſuperierit undam*, I know not, by what Warrant of Reaſon or Conſcience, wee may do it: Eſpecially, conſidering, that it is not a Matter neceſſarily impoſed upon us, as I ſaid before, but voluntarily to be offered by us. Surely, ly, one ſpeaketh very plainly, and ſaith, *Aſini eſt clitellam ferre libenter.* But I will, as it becomes me, uſe more Reverence in this Honorable Place; and ſay, that I think it not convenient, that we ſhould lay Burthens on our own Shoulders, or put Shackles on our own Feet.

But it is ſtill urged, that the Service of her Majeſty, and Safeguard of our own ſelves, is provided for hereby; ſurely, by your Honorable Patience, I will attempt to prove, that by this Grant her Majeſtys Service ſhall be rather hindred than forwarded; and our ſelves rather endangered, than ſecured. It was very gravely and wiſely delivered unto us in her Majeſtys Preſence, at the Beginning of this Parlament, by my Lord Chancellor, *Quod tutius Fide, quàm Ferro regnant Reges.* And ſurely, if *Auro* were put in the Place of *Ferro*, the Sentence were notwithſtanding nevertheleſs true. For it is not the Abundance of Treaſure, nor the Multitude of Poſſeſſions, neither the infinite Number of Men, which maintain and eſtabliſh a King in his Throne, but the Faith, Love, Loyalty and Contentment of his People and Subjects, which as her Majeſty hath hitherto, from her firſt Auguration, moſt deſervedly had: and that as fully and amply, as ever had any Prince in *Europe*: ſo were it greatly to be lamented, that now through our Debates, any ſuch Diſcontents ſhould be bred in the Minds and Hearts of her People: wherby their accuſtomed Affections towards Her, might receive the leaſt Diminution. And ſurely, whoſoever they be, that by new and ſtrange Exactions on the People, ſhall go about to fill up the Princes Coffers, may perhaps pleaſe the Prince, by ſerving his Turn from the Time, but ſhall in the End be found to have don him, but bad Serviee. The Anſwer of the Emperor *Tiberius* unto his *Queſtors*, or Treaſurers; which perſuaded him for the repairing of the Treaſury, to load the Provinces with Tribute, is worthy eternal Memory; which was, that it was *Boni Paſtoris tondere oves, non autem deglubere.* And the Practice of the *Romans*, while *Hanibal* beſieged their City, is of all Nations worthy to be imitated. For being hardly preſt by the Siege, and their common Treaſure quite exhauſted, the Senate took Counſil together for the Redreſs of theſe Miſchieves: ſome of them perſuading, like *Tiberius*'s Treaſurers, that the People were to be charged with a Subſidy or Impoſition. But the greater and wiſer ſort (whoſe Authority alſo prevailed) would by no Means aſſent therunto: thinking it, (eſpecially in that Time of Extremity) moſt inconvenient by new Taxes and Impoſitions, to diſcontent the People, in whom the Strength and Defence of their City conſiſted. And what did they? Mary, they decreed that a Contribution ſhould be made, by way of a Benevolence. And they themſelves would firſt go unto the *Triumviros Menſarios*, which were Officers appointed for that Receipt; and there beſtow ſo liberally of their own, that the inferior People ſhould by their Example be incited to a large and bountiful Contribution. But what followed? The People, as the Story ſaith, came in ſo faſt, and the Mony in ſuch Abundance, *Ut nec Triumviri Menſarii accipiendo, nec Scribæ referendo, ſufficerent.* It is written by *Livy* in the 26 Book, and needeth no Application. Only this I would wiſh to be conſidered, whether if we ſhould by Extremity be put to the like ſhift for a Benevolence, before the Payment of this latter Subſidy the Grant of this would not do greater Hurt to that Contribution, than it ſelf could do good, when it ſhall be paid.

I could with Enumeration and Amplification of the Inconveniences which may grow by this double Subſidy, detain you longer than either it is fit for me to ſpeak, or pleaſing for you to hear. But I will haſten to an End. It may be objected, that this Subſidy cannot be an Occaſion of any ſuch Grievance or Diſcontent, as is ſpoken of; or if it were, that the Sharpneſs therof is well allayed and tempered by the prolonging of the Payment. Surely, it may be, that to all, or the moſt part of this Honorable Houſe, who both in reſpect of their Ability, may, and by reaſon of their liberal Education, and great Wiſdom, will ſubmit themſelves unto it: It is a light and eaſy Burthen and accounted but for a flea-biting. But unto the People, and needy Countrymen, to the Artificer, whoſe Treaſure is always in his Hand, (for whom we do ſit here more principally, than for our ſelves) under Correction, it cannot be accounted, but for a Puniſhment.

Samuel, in the Oration which he made unto the *Iſraelites*, when th y would needs have a King, among other Burthens, which he told them they ſhould bear under that kind of Government, accounteth the Payment of the Tenth of their Seed, their Vinyards and their Sheep. Which may prove, that then it was reckoned for a Pain. And the Suits, Exclamations, Complaints and Lamentations of the Commons of this Realm, well known to the moſt part of this Houſe, which they make either at the Acceſſing, or collection of theſe Subſidies, or both, doth ſufficiently teſtify unto us, that they account it now a Puniſhment. And as for the prolonging of the Payment, I am ſo far from thinking, that it is any Mitigation of the Puniſhment, that I am rather perſuaded, that it is encreaſed therby. As it is well ſaid of *Seneca* in the beſtowing of Benefits, *Quod bis dat, qui cito dat*; ſo is it as truly ſpoken of another in the inflicting of Puniſhment, *Dilatio pœnæ* eſt *duplicatio pœnæ*. And of another, that the irrevocable Sentence of “ Death “ being once pronounced, it is *Miſericordiæ genus, cito occidere*. Neither “ have I heard any great Reaſon, why the Pains of Hell are intolerable, but “ becauſe they are perpetual. For *Malorum ſenſus accreſcit die*. And, *Leve* “ *eſt miſerias ferre, perferre grave*.

Seeing then, that it is apparent, that this Impoſition, how much the greater it ſhall be, by ſo much the more grievous it will be to the mean, ignorant and untaught Commons of this Land; who bend all their Thoughts and Actions, to the procuring and maintaining of their private Commodity; and ſeeing, that their long Meditation theron will encreaſe and double this their Grief and Puniſhment, and that no Man, how well natured or nourtered ſoever he be, can well content himſelf with Pain and Grief; I hope you ſe as clearly as you hear, that the Subſidy required by this Bill to be granted, muſt after breed a Diſcontent in the Minds and Hearts of her Majeſtys People. Of which their Diſcontentment, what might enſue and follow, I would be very loth to divine. What if a Dearth of Victuals? What if Reſtraint of Traffic by means of Wars? What if therby Occaſion ſhould be given to ſeditious and traiterous Whiſperers, to augment and encreaſe it?

Sure I am, that hereof could follow no good Service to her Majeſty, no great Safty to our ſelves; no Benefit to the Commonwealth. But we ſhould then all too late, cry, Woe be to them that brought the firſt Spark to the kindling of this Fire. And it hath often been proved heretofore by Experience, that Mony, this Sort obtained from the People, hath been ſpent in greater Meſure in the pacifying of them of whom it was collected.

The Precedent beſides may be dangerous both to our ſelves and our Poſterity. For we commonly ſee, that in all Counſels and Deliberations, a Precedent is a forceable and perſuading Argument. And it was a wiſe and true Saying, that *Diuturnitas temporis efficere poteſt, ut quod perniciore more & exemplo convaluit, potentius ipſa Lege dominetur.* And altho' I have before granted you by way of Conceſſion, that her Majeſtys Will and Commandment is a neceſſary Argument, to perſuade us to the paſſing of this Bill; yet leſt it may be thought of more abſolute Neceſſity, than perhaps it is requiſite it ſhould be, I will ſet down a Precedent or two, wherin in the like Caſes, have in this Houſe been determined heretofore.

In the 39. H. 3. a Parlament was ſummoned: wherin was required an extraordinary Reparation of the Kings Treaſury by a Subſidy. The Commons becauſe his Demand was greater than uſually had been paid, would grant no Subſidy at all. [This goes no further, tho' it ſeems to want ſomething.]

Thus have I preſumed to deliver my Opinion; hoping that if any thing hath eſcaped me, worthy reprehenſion, through Ignorance, it ſhall be excuſed by reaſon of mine Infancy in this Practice of Speaking; if any part of my Speech may receive a double Conſtruction, it may be defended by your beſt Interpretation.

NUMB. LIX.

A Speech in Parlament. Anno 1588. *Upon a Bill againſt Strangers and Aliens, ſelling Wares by Retail.*

MSS. Burghlian.

TO the Bill now red and the Matter therin contained, a Word or two: and that briefly. This Bill as I conceive, offereth to the Conſideration of this Honorable Houſe a Controverſy between the natural born Subjects of this Realm, and a Stranger inhabiting among us.

Surely, before I procede any further, I find my ſelf doubly affected, and doubly diſtracted. For on the one Side, the very Name of my Country and Nation is ſo pleaſant in mine Ears, and ſo delightful in my Heart, that I am compelled to ſubſcribe unto him, who having rehearſed all the Degrees of Conjunction and Society, concludeth thus, That *omnes omnium charitates una Patria complexa eſt.* Inſomuch, that in this Caſe, wherin my Country is a part, and eſpecially, that Part * of my Country which as it is the Head of the Body, ſo ought it of me, for ſpecial Reſpect to be moſt Honored, and loved in this Cauſe, and therefore methinks I might needs judge my ſelf to be no competent Judge. But on the other Side, when in the Perſon of the Stranger, I conſider the miſerable and afflicted State of theſe poor Exiles, who together with their Countries have loſt all, or the greateſt Comforts of this Life; and for Want of Friends ly ſubject and expoſed to the Wrongs and Injuries of the malicious and ill affected, (for that the Condition of Strangers is, that they have *Multa Hoſpitia,* but *paucos amicos*) in theſe reſpects I am moved with an extraordinary Commiſeration of them, and feel in my ſelf a Sympathy and Fellow-ſuffering with them.

* London.

In the Third Place, I look on my ſelf, or rather into my ſelf, and as I am of my ſelf, which is nothing, but as I am intended here to be, (which is more than I can be, tho' no more than I ought to be) *Judicis eſt iu Cauſis verum ſequi, Seponere Affectum, admittere rationem, ex rebus ipſis, non ex Perſonis judicare.* And therefore I pray you, that I may with like Brevity lay before you my Judgment in the Matter, as I have declared mine Affection to the Parties.

The Bill requireth, that it may be enacted, that no *Aliens* born, not being Deniſens, nor having ſerved as Apprentices by the Space of Seven Years, ſhould ſell any Wares by Retail. Becauſe it is required, that this be made a Law, let us firſt conſider, how it may ſtand with the Grounds and Foundations of all Laws. Which are the Laws of Nature, and the Law of God. And Secondly, with the Profit and Commodity of the Commonwealth.

I will not detain you with *Mathematical* or *Philoſophical* Diſcourſes, to ſhew that the whole Earth, being but a Point in the Center of the World will admit no Diviſion of Dominions. For *Punctum eſt indiviſibile.* And that Man, as *Plato* ſaith, is no earthly, but a Heavenly Creature. And therefore hath *Caput tanquam radicem infixum cælo.* Neither will I ſtand upon it, that the Reſidence or Continuance of one Nation in one Place is not of the Law of Nature, which being in its ſelf immutable, would then admit no ſuch

Tranſmigration of People, and Tranſplantations of Nations, as in daily Experience we ſe. But I will only propound unto you two Grounds of Nature, as more proper to this Purpoſe. One that we ſhould give to others the ſame Meſure that we would receive from them. Which is the Golden Rule of Juſtice. And the other, that we ought by all good Means, *Tum artibus, tum opera, tum facultatibus, devincire hominum inter homines Societatem.* And, *Qui civium rationem dicunt eſſe habendam, externorum negant, hi dirimunt communem humani generis Societatem.*

The *Law of God* is next: which in infinite Places commendeth unto us the good Uſage and Entertainment of Strangers. In *Deuteronomy, God loveth the Stranger, giving him Food and Rayment. Therefore love yee the Stranger.* In *Leviticus, If a Stranger ſojourn with you in your Land, yee ſhall not vex him. But the Stranger which dwelleth with you, ſhall be as one of your ſelves, and ye ſhall love him as your ſelves. For ye were Strangers. In Ezekiel* it appeareth, that the Land of Promiſe was by Gods Appointment allotted as well to the Stranger, as to the *Iſraelite. For they ſhall part the Inheritance with you in the Midſt of the Tribes of Iſrael,* ſaith the Text. And the Commandment which is given for the Obſervation of the Sabbath, forbids the Stranger on that Day to labour. Wherby it may well be gathered, that at other Times it is lawful for him to exerciſe his lawful Trade or Vocation.

So that for this Point, I may well conclude with Mr. *Calvin,* who ſaith, that it is *Barbaries & immanitas inhoſpitalis miſeros Advenas opprimere, qui in Fidem noſtram confugiunt.*

It hath been confeſſed, that the Arguments uſed againſt this Bill do cary with them a great ſhew of Charity, which ſay they, being ſevered from Policy, is now no Charity, but Folly. I will anſwer, that if it be a good Rule and Principle in Divinity, that in compariſon between the Laws, Moral and Ceremonial, *Moralia ſunt anteponenda Ceremoniis;* It ought much more to be overruled in all Conſultations, that *Humana ſunt poſtponenda divinis.* And therfore Policy without Charity is Impiety.

Retailers.

But let us conſider, how this Charity overthroweth our Policy. Forſooth it is ſaid generally, by impoveriſhing the natural Subject, and enriching the Stranger; by nouriſhing a Scorpion in our Boſoms; by taking the Childrens Bread, and caſting it to Doggs. And this more particularly, as they ſay, effected by two Means. Firſt, by Multitude of *Retailers.* For the more men Exerciſe one Trade, the leſs is every one of his Gain. And Secondly, by the Strangers Policy. Which conſiſteth either in providing their Wares in in ſuch Sort, that they may ſell better cheap, than the natural Subject: or elſe by perſuading our People, that they may do ſo.

To the general Accuſation, if I ſhould uſe no other Defence but this, that theſe People, the Deniſons I mean, (for of them, and for them do I only ſpeak) having renounced their Obedience to their natural Governour and Countries, and Subjected themſelves, even by their Oaths, to the Obedience of her Majeſty, her Laws and Authority, are now to be accounted of us, tho' not natural, yet naturalized Subjects: Tho' not Sprung up from our Root, yet firmely grafted into our Stock and Body: Tho' not our Children by Procreation, yet our Brethren by Adoption. If I ſay, I ſhould uſe no other Defence but this, I doubt not, but I might in the Opinion of all, or the moſt part of this Honorable Houſe, clear them of the envious Title of the *Rich Strangers;* of the odious Name of the *Venomous Scorpion;* and of the uncharitable Term of *Contemptible Doggs.*

But becauſe the Strength of the general Accuſation conſiſteth in the Validity of the particular Objections, I will, by your good Favour, in a Word or two, make Anſwer unto them. It cannot be denyed, but that the Number of *Retailers* by theſe Denizons is ſomewhat encreaſed; but yet not ſo much, that the Burthen of them is ſo inſupportable, as is pretended. For by the Confeſſion of their Adverſaries, they are not in all, Deniſons and not Deniſons, in and about this City, of all maner of Retaylers, above the Number of Fifty or thereabouts. Wherof it is probable, that the Deniſons (whom only my Purpoſe is to maintain) exceed not the Number of Thirty. Who being divided into many Trades and Companies with the infinite Numbers of the Retailers of all Sorts in the City of *London* and the Suburbs therof, cannot in common, or ſo much impoveriſh any one Trade or Company by their Number only, as is ſuggeſted.

As touching their Policy, which conſiſteth in Drawing of Cuſtomers to their Shops or Houſes, either in ſelling Cheap indeed, or elſe by perſuading us, that they ſell their Wares more cheap than our Nation can do; I take (ſaving Reformation) very eaſy to be anſwered. For if the firſt be true, that they do indeed ſel better Peniworths, then have we no Cauſe to puniſh but to cheriſh them as good Members of our Commonwealth. Which by no means can better be enriched, than by keeping down the Prizes of foreign Commodities, and enhauncing the Value of our own. Beſide the Benefit of Cheapneſs of foreign Commodities by ſo much exceedeth the Benefit of dear Prizes. But how much the Number of Buyers of them excedeth the Number of Sellers; which is infinite. But if the Second be true, that it is but our Error, to believe that they ſell their Wares better cheap than our Nation doth; then ſurely, I cannot but think it very great Injuſtice to puniſh them for a Fault committed by us.

It hath been further objected unto them in this Houſe, that by their ſparing and frugal Living, they have been the better enabled to ſell good Pennyworths. It ſeems, we are much ſtreitned for Arguments, that are driven to accuſe them for their Vertues.

This Paper ſeems to be defective; going no further: but at the End are added

---

Sentences concerning Strangers. Taken from Scripture, and other Authors.

***Which ſeem to be Collections from this and other Speeches made in the Houſe upon the Occaſion of this Bill againſt the* Strangers.**

GOD Loveth the Stranger, giving him Food and Rayment. Love yee therfore the Strangers, &c. *Deut.* X. 18.

If a Stranger ſojourn with you in your Land, ye ſhall not vex him. But the Stranger which dwelleth with you, ſhall be as one of your ſelves. And you ſhall love him, as your ſelves. For ye were Strangers, &c. *Levit.* XIX. 33.

The Land of Promiſe was to be divided to Strangers, as well as to the *Iſraelites*. For they ſhall be as born among the Children, *Ezek.* XLVII. 22.

In the midſt of thee have they oppreſt the Stranger. *Ezek.* XXII. 7.

Et Advena, qui eſt intra Portas, Sabbatum Sanctificat; i. e. Sacrum otium celebrat. Unde colligitur, licet ipſis operari. [*That is, to follow their Work and Buſineſs among them on other Days*:]

In peregrinatione vitam agentibus hoc evenit, ut Hoſpitia multa habeant, nullas amicitias.

Civis eſt liber homo, qui ſummæ alterius poteſtati obligatur.

Sicut Servi, aut nati ſunt, aut facti; ſic etiam Cives aut fiunt, aut naſcuntur.

Mali, qui peregrinos urbibus uti prohibent, eoſq; exterminant. Nam eſſe pro Cive, qui Civis non ſit, rectum eſt non licere. Uſum verò Urbis prohibere peregrinos, ſane inhumanum. *Cic. Offic.* 3°. 255.

Hoſpitalitatem ne obliviſcamini. Per hanc enim quidam exceperunt Angelos præter expectationem. *Petrus.*

Qui Civium rationem dicunt eſſe habendam, Externorum negant, hi dirimunt communem humani generis Societatem. *Cic. Offic.* 3°. 212.

Civis natus : Civis factus : Civis Honorarius. Bodin. 48.

Optimo jure eſt, non qui creatur, ſed qui naſcitur Civis. Et ideo Præfectus Mercatorum *Luteciæ* eſt nemo, niſi in Urbe natus.

Tarentini Principem rogarent, ut ante peregrinos conſerentur.

Verum & proprium Civis & Peregrini diſcrimen eſt, quod alter juſſa Principis reſpuere poteſt, alter Imperio civili obligatur.

Strangers doubly charged in Cuſtoms and ſubſidies. Indued with Benefices in Times of Superſtition.

Multo latius officiorum patet, &c.

Privantur Honoribus, Magiſtratibus & Dignitatibus.

Num etiam ad Vitam neceſſariis privabuntur?

Quid Patria carere? Num magnum eſt malum? Reſpondet *Polynices* ex *Euripide*, Eſt maximum : & re magis quam dici queat.

Natura Patriam nullam cuiquam dedit. *Plutarch.*

Socrates ſe mundi civem eſſe dixit.

We ſhall be more miſerable by their Departure hence, than they are by the Cauſes of their coming hither.

NUMB. LX.

Articles of Agreement between the Dean and Chapter of Norwich, *and the Patentees: Drawn up by the Attorney and Solicitor: And offered to the Dean. To which in theſe Terms he accorded.*

19. *Aug.* 1587. WHEREAS This day Sir *Thomas Shirley*, Kt. for him and other her Majeſtys Patentees, and their Aſſignees of the Lands, ſometime appertaining to the late Prior and Covent of *Norwich*, and the now Dean of *Norwich* for himſelf and the Chapter of the ſame Church, did with their Learned Council on both ſides confer and conſult together about ſome reaſonable End or Order, touching the ſaid Lands, and for the better perfecting therof; had, by View and Conſideration of an Order lately drawn, and indifferently ſet down by Maſter Atturney General, and Maſter Solicitor General for both Parties with their ſeveral Hands therunto Subſcribed; Mr. Dean doth now, upon due Conſideration and through-debating of the Cauſe, not now only, but at divers other Times, yield to the ſaid Order for himſelf and the Church, in maner and Forme following. *MSS.* Eccle. pen. me.

Firſt, he thinketh it not convenient to ſurrender, before they have a new Grant from her Majeſty; both to avoid the Clamour of the Fermours, and for ſome other Cauſes. But if her Majeſty pleaſe to make a new Leaſe to the Patentees for fourſcore and nineteen Years; reſerving the old Rents, which have been heretofore moſt beneficially reſerved for the Church; then they will take a new Grant from her Majeſty of the Reverſion and the Rent: which amounteth to a Surrender in Law. And therewith hold themſelves content.

And wheras it is ordered, that ſo much yearly Rent ſhould be reſerved for the Queen, upon her new Erection of the Dean and Chapter, as was reſerved in the former Erection; Mr. Dean ſaith, 39 £. and other Mony of the old Rents is already releaſed, 50 £. now only due to her Majeſty yearly. And therfore his Deſire is for the Church, that they may be no further charged, then for the 50 £. according to her Majeſtys former Patent.

Item, Mr. Deans Deſire is, that the Patentees new Leaſe may be of no more Lands appertaining to the Church, than that which is in the Counties of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* only; and not in the County and City of *Norwich*.

By me,

Geo. Gardiner.

NUMB. LXI.

Dr. Gardiner, *Dean of* Norwich, *to the Lord Treaſurer*; *Referring the Caſe of their Church againſt* Sir Tho. Shirley, *and other Patentees, to his Lordſhips Orders.*

Rt. Honorable, My Duty in moſt humble wiſe remembred.

MSS. Burglian.

I Have now ſent up to attend your Honours good Pleaſure, both Mr. *Caſtelton*, and Mr. *Suckling*, two of our Prebendaries, with Warrant under our Chapter Seal, to proſecute the Cauſe of our Church: and by the Advice of Learned Counſil, but eſpecially, by your Honours good Means and Help, happily to finiſh the ſame. The Matter is of great Importance, and hitherto we have found hard Meſure to be offered by the Patentees, and ſome intereſſed under them. Blame us not my ſingular good Lord, that we are bold to trouble your Honour in this our Churches Cauſe; and that we are jealous of other mens Dealings in the ſame.

The Bearers hereof will impart unto your Honour, that divers Parcels of our Church Lands have been ſold away for ever, and Mony taken for them; and ſome one Parcell Sold to five ſundry men; and every Man having paid for one and the ſame Intereſt; ſome Violently entred upon without Payment of Rent or Farm, for theſe two Years laſt paſt. And one hath paid no Farm theſe ſix years, even ſithen the Controverſy did begin. Wee have no Parcel of Lands, no not the Houſes within our Cathedral Church, but that they have been offered to Sale; or elſe Mony taken before hand for long Leaſes hereafter to be granted, *Si Dii volunt*.

Wherefore wee moſt humbly beſeech your good Honour, that we may ſeek for Succour under the Shadow of your Wings, and moſt Honorable Protection. We crave, that the Agreement, wherof her Majeſty was informed, and wherupon her Highneſs's Warrant was granted, may faithfully be performed by the Patentees, and thoſe intereſſed under them. All other Matters contained in her Majeſtys Warrant, we cannot but like very well of them; and with thankful Minds to receive our new Foundation and Dotation, after that the Patentees have fully ſurrendred their Several Intereſts. Which as yet they have not don. And that a new Leaſe be made from her Majeſty to *Mr. Fanſhaw* and Mr. *Osborn*, of 600 £. by Year, in ſuch Order, with ſuch Conditions, and to ſuch Ends, as in her Majeſtys ſaid Warrant is ſet down and expreſt.

The Books are ſent up, plainly and truly drawn, to be peruſed and allowed by the Learned Counſil on both ſides. And then we leave the Concluſion to your good Honours Friendſhip, Favour, and moſt grave and wiſe Conſideration, and ordering. And ſo moſt humbly taking my Leave, and craving

Pardon for this my too too much Boldneſs, I commit your good Honour, with my Continual Prayers, to the Almighty. From *Norwich*, the 11th of *Novemb.* 1588.

Your Honours, as Duty bindeth for ever to command,

GEORGE GARDINER.

NUMB. LXII.

A Brief Declaration, how the Caſe ſtandeth between Sir Tho. Sherley *Kt. and other her Majeſtys Patentees, on the one Partie, and the Fermours of the Poſſeſſions of the Dean and Chapter of* Norwich *on the other Partie. With the humble Suit of Sir* Tho. Sherley, *to the Lord Treaſurer,* June, 10. 1590.

THE Dean and Chapter of *Norwich*, *An.* 23d. of her Majeſtys Reign, made a Leaſe to her Majeſty of divers Mannours, parcel of their Poſſeſſions for the Term of one Hundred Years.

CCXL. £. per Ann. *MSS. Eccl.* pen me.

The Queens Majeſty *An.* 25. of her Reign, did by her Letters Patents aſſign over the ſame Leaſe to *Henry Rice*, one of her Gentlemen Uſhers.

Sir *Thomas Sherley* purchaſed the ſame Leaſe of Mr. *Ryce* at a dear Rate and gave CC £. to the Dean of *Norwich*. Which was before promiſed to be paid him at ſuch Time as her Majeſty ſhould be pleaſed to make her beforeſaid Aſſignment.

After which the late Lord *Wentworth* paſſed all the Lands and Poſſeſſions of the ſaid Dean and Chapter from her Majeſty, as concealed.

Hereupon Sir. *Tho Shirley* and others, intereſſed in ſuch Leaſes, under the Dean and Chapter, finding their Leaſes to be made fruſtrate, yf the ſaid Lord *Wentworths* Title took place, were driven, in ſaveguard of that which they had diſburſed before, to diſburſe more Mony to purchaſe in the Title of the ſaid Concealments; which they paid alſo dearly for.

After this an Information of Intruſion was exhibited in the Exchequer in her Majeſtys Name, at the Suit of Sir *Tho. Sherley* againſt one of the Fermours of the Poſſeſſions of the ſaid Dean and Chapter, for an Intruſion, ſuppoſed to be before her Majeſtys Grant to the ſaid Lord *Wentworth*: Purpoſing thereby to try how the Law would ſtand touching the Title of the ſaid Concealment.

This Suit the Lord High Treaſurer of *Englaud* thought not fit to be ſuffered to procede; unleſs Sir *Tho. Sherley* would become bound to her Majeſty in a Bond of 20000 £. to ſtand to the Order of the Lord Treaſurer, and the Chancellor of th' Exchequer for the Time being, touching the Title of the ſaid Lands; howſoever the Law ſhould fall out.

Sir *Tho Shirely*, willingly ſubmitted himſelf hereunto; and became bound in the ſaid Bond which yet reſteth of Record in full Force and Vertue.

After which it further pleaſed the Lord Treaſurer to require her Majeſtys Atturney General and her Solicitor, to conſider of ſome good Courſe meet to be taken, for indifferent Ending of the Controverſy.

Mr. Atturney and Mr Solicitor herupon took ſome pains about the Cauſe; and ſet down under their Hands a Courſe, which they thought meeteſt to be taken. Which was to this Effect, *Viz.* That the Lands ſhould be aſſured by the Church and the Patentees, to her Majeſty. Then that her Majeſty
might

might pleaſe to leaſe the ſame to the uſe of the Patentees for 99 Years at the uſual Rents. And to grant the Reverſion to the Dean and Chapter: reſerving to her ſelf ſuch Rents as were formerly due unto her. And that the two Remembrancers of the Exchequer ſhould have Power to make Compoſitions between the ſaid Patentees and other Fermours of the ſaid Poſſeſſions. To which Order the Dean that then was, and his Counſil did agree.

Wherupon it pleaſed her Majeſty by her Letters Patents, bearing Date in *May* in the 30th year of her Reign, to grant a Warrant to the Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and to the Chancellor of the Exchequer, for the paſſing of Books accordingly, and for the perfect Fulfilling of the ſaid Order.

Since which Time the Lord Treaſurer hath pleaſed to offer the ſame End to the Dean and Chapter, for ſo much as concerneth them. But they have wilfully refuſed her gracious Meaning therin towards them.

In the mean ſpace the Law hath proceded upon the ſaid Information of Intruſion. And after many days of Deliberation and Advertiſement what could be ſaid on each Side, Judgment hath paſſed for the Queen.

Then follows Sir Tho. Sherleys *Petition.*

Now therefore the humble Suit of Sir *Thomas Sherley* is, that ſeeing he hath always been ready on his part to obey all Orders that have been thought fit in the Cauſe; and that the ſaid laſt Order, and her Majeſtys Warrant upon it, is moſt beneficial for the ſaid Dean and Chapter; that although they do wilfully refuſe their own Good; It would nevertheleſs pleaſe the Lord Treaſurer to accept his Surrender of the ſaid Lands, according to the ſaid Order: and to grant him inſtead thereof a Leaſe for 99 Years, as the ſaid Order and Warrant importeth.

NUMB. LXIII.

The laſt Will and Teſtament of the moſt Reverend Father in God Edwin Sandys, *Archbiſhop of* York. *Who dyed at* Southwell *the* 10th *of* July, 1588. *And was there buried, under a fair Monument.*

MSS. R. T. Bak. S. Th. B.

IN *Dei noie. Amen.* I *Edwin Sandys*, Miniſter of Gods Holy Word and Sacraments, Archbiſhop of *York*, tho' moſt unworthy; often minding the Frailty and uncertainty of mans Life in general, and withal feeling mine own manifold Infirmities, in particular; both of my Years, and for my Sins: And alſo remembring, that when the Lord God ſhall ſay, *Redde rationem villicationis tuæ*, I among others ſhall appear before the Tribunal Seat of Chriſt, to receive in this Body according to that I have don, be it good or evil; I reckon it is in my ſelf a Chriſtian Duty with *Ezechias Diſponere Domui meæ*. And conſidering, that as I brought nothing into this World, (for naked I came out of my Mothers Womb) ſo can I cary nothing there out, but naked muſt I return again, even Earth to Duſt, and Carcaſs to Wormes; the Way of all Fleſh: While the Lord God hath lent me Leiſure preſently in ſome Health of Body, and perfect of Memory, I humbly thank him for both, even ſo I diſcharge my ſelf of theſe Talents which the Lord hath committed unto my Charge, and make my laſt Will and Teſtament, in ſuch ſort, as followeth.

Firſt and above all, my Soul and Spirit I commend, with *David* and *Stephen*, into the merciful Hands of my gracious God, and loving Father:

Aſſuredly believing by Faith, and certainly truſting by Hope, that he in the Fulneſs of his good Time, beſt known unto him, and leaſt unto me, will receive the ſame unto himſelf; not in reſpect of any my Deſerts, (for my Righteouſneſs is but a very Dunghil and defiled Cloth) but for his Love, free Mercies, and for the alone Merits of his only Son, my onely Saviour Jeſus Chriſt: who being without any Sin, was made a Curſe and Sacrifice for all my Sins; that I might be made the Righteouſneſs of God in him, who in his own Body bare all my Tranſgreſſions upon the Tree, that by ſmart of his Stripes, and Bloud of his Wounds, I might be healed. Who hath cancelled upon the Croſs the whole Hand Writing, that was againſt me. That I might not only be entred, as a Servant, or reconciled as a Friend, but adopted as a Son, and accepted as an Heir with God the Father, and an Heir together with Jeſus Chriſt. Who is alſo made unto me Wiſdom and Righteouſneſs, Sanctification and Redemption. And as in this Faith and full Aſſurance of my perfect Redemption by the Death and onely Deſerts of Jeſus Chriſt, the true Lamb of God, and Lion of the Tribe of *Judah*, I have and do live, ſo in the ſame firm and ſtedfaſt Faith and Hope, I end my ſinful Life, and gladly yield up withall my Soul immortal my mortal Body.

2ly, Altho' this Body of mine is but a Clod of Clay, and Priſon of my Soul, my Will is, it ſhall be buried, neither in Superſtitious or ſuperfluous maner; yet for that it hath been, and is my Truſt, not only a Veſſel of the Goſpel, but likewiſe a Temple of the Holy Ghoſt, I require, that the ſame be ſo decently and conveniently brought to the Ground, as appertaineth to a Chriſtian, a Servant of Almighty God, and a Man of my Calling: Putting no Doubt, but that I ſhall ſe my Redeemer with mine own Eyes, and be covered with mine own Skin; and that the Lord *Jeſus* ſhall make this my vile Body, like unto his glorious Body. Wherby he is able to ſubdue all things to himſelf. *Repoſita eſt hæc ſpes in ſinu meo.*

3ly, Becauſe I have lived an old Man in the Miniſtry of Chriſt, a faithful Diſpoſer of the Myſteries of God, and to my Power an earneſt Labourer in the Vinyard of the Lord, I teſtify before God and his Angels, and Men of this World, I reſt reſolute to yield up my Spirit in that Doctrin which I have privately ſtudied, and publicly preached; and which is this Day maintained in the Church of *England*; both taking the ſame to be the whole Counſil of Gods Word, and Bread of Eternal Life, the Fountain of Living Water, the Power of God unto Salvation, to all them that do believe: and beſeeching the Lord to turn us unto him, that we may be turned. Leaſt if we repent not, the Candleſtick be removed out of its Place, and the Goſpel of the Kingdom, for our Unthankfulneſs, taken from us, and given to a Nation, that ſhall bring forth the Fruits therof. And further proteſting in an upright Conſcience of mine own, and in the Knowledg of the Majeſty before whom I ſtand, that in the preaching of the Truth of Chriſt, I have not laboured to pleaſe men, but ſtudied to ſerve my Maſter, who ſent me, not to flatter either Prince or People: but by the Law to tell all Sorts of their Sins; by the Spirit to rebuke the World of Sin, of Righteouſneſs, and of Judgment: by the Goſpel to teſtify of the Faith which is in Jeſus Chriſt, and him crucified.

4ly, Concerning *Rites* and *Ceremonies* by Political Conſtitution authorized, *&c.* His Judgment and Approbation therof, and of his Diſlike of other Platformes, this next Period of the Archbiſhops Will declares. Which I ſhall not repeat here, having already tranſcribed it in the Life of Archbiſhop *Whitgift*. Concluding that Part of his Will with theſe Words.

Book III. *Chap.* 21. *Pa.* 287.

"Thus much I thought good to teſtify concerning theſe Eccleſiaſtical
"Matters, to clear me from all Suſpicion of double and indirect Dealing in

“ the Houſe of God. Wherin as touching mine Office, I have not halted,
“ but walked ſincerely, according to that Skill and Ability, which I recei-
“ ved at God's merciful Hands, And then it follows,

Lord, as a great Sinner, by reaſon of my frail Fleſh and Infirmities, I fly unto thee for Mercy. Lord, forgive me my Sins. For I acknowledg my Sins. Lord, perform thy Promiſe, and do away all mine Iniquities: and haſt the Coming of thy Chriſt: and deliver me from this Body of Sin. *Veni cito, Domine* J E S U. Cloath me with Immortality, and give me that promiſed Crown of Glory. So be it.

And as concerning theſe worldly Things, which God of his bountiful Goodneſs hath given for our Uſe, thus I, a Steward of the ſame, for a Diſcharge of my Duty in that Behalf, diſpoſe of them, *&c.*

N U M B. LXIV.

Benet *a Prieſt to* Philip *Earl of* Arundel*: bewailing his falſe Accuſation of him.* Jan. 23. 1588.

To the Rt. Honorable the Earl Arundel *be theſe delivered.*

Rt. Honorable and moſt Noble Peare,

MSS. Burg-
lian.

I Moſt humbly upon my Knees, before God and all his Angels, and before all the World, if need require, with a moſt penitent, rent and afflicted Conſcience and Heart, crave Mercy and Forgiveneſs for the great Offence I have committed againſt your Honour in my late Troubles and Confeſſions. So it is, Rt. Honorable, that being [called] in queſtion about certain ſuppoſed Offences in the Tower, unto which my Anſwers being not to their Contentment, a Letter of my own Hand, which I did write unto a Prieſt there in Defence of my Juriſdiction, by him brought in Queſtion, was produced. And becauſe therin I derived my Authority from the Apoſtolic [See] I was accounted and termed among them as a dead Man, without her Majeſtys ſpecial Pardon. Which was promiſed upon Condition .... (*Pauca Sapienti.*) with many other fair Speeches and Allurements, together with many thundring Threats of returning to the Tower, Torments and Death it ſelf, if I failed. By which unexpected Letter of mine, with Threats mixed with fair Promiſes of Life and ſpeedy Liberty, together with the great Weakneſs both of Body and Mind, by the reaſon of my long and ſore Impriſonment, was ſtrucken into ſuch an Aſtoniſhment and Maſe, that I confeſſed every thing, that ſeemed to content their Humour, which I parſeved at the firſt altogether to tend to the Ruine of your Honour. But being demaunded, whether you did ſend a Note unto the Prieſts in *Colebarbour*, to pray for the good Succeſs of the *Spaniſh* Fleet, I anſwered, as Truth was, that I never knew, or was privy to any ſuch Note; yet with a moſt guilty, fearful, unjuſt and moſt tormented Conſcience, onely for ſaving of my Life and Liberty, I confeſſed, that you moved me to ſay a Maſs of the Holy Ghoſt, for the good Succeſs of the *Spaniſh* Fleet.

For which unjuſt Confeſſion, or rather Accuſation, I do again and again, and ſo to my Lifes End, moſt inſtantly crave Gods Pardon and yours. And for my better Satisfaction of this my unjuſt Suggeſtion, I will, if Need require, offer up both Life and Limne, in avowing my Accuſation as it is deed, [indeed] and as I ſhall anſwer before Almighty God, before the Faces of Angels and Men, moſt unjuſt, and don onely of Fear of the Tower, Torments and Death. Thus not doubting of your Honours gracious Pardon and Forgiveneſs, I will reſt my poor afflicted Conſcience in only Gods Mercy. My Body and Life I freely offer to the World, to diſpoſe, as it ſhall pleaſe God. The holy Trinity preſerve your Honour from Peril of Soul and Body, *Amen.*

Your Honours poor bondman,

WILLIAM BENET, *Prieſte.*

NUMB. LXV.

An Licitum ſit Catholicis in Anglia *arma ſumere, & aliis modis, Reginam & Regnum defendere contra* Hiſpanos. *Reſolved by one* Wryght *a Prieſt as it ſeems, of the College of* Doway.

MSS. Burghlian. P*etierunt a me*, &c. In Engliſh, Some *Engliſh* Catholics have deſired of me, when they ſee Warrs hang over *England* and *Spain*, to know to which Party they are chiefly bound in Conſcience to adhere: and ſpecially when it is concerning the Queen and Kingdom.

Whether they may ſafely defend the Part of *England*; and by any maner and way, as they are wont to ſet upon the *Spanyards*, to offend him and overcome him.

To which Requeſt, that we might not be wanting to mine and their Duty, I will anſwer with what Brevity, Clearneſs, Force of Reaſon and Charity I can.

And firſt he propoſed the Reaſon of this Doubting. Secondly, ſome Propoſitions, on which depend the Knot and Reſolution of it.

The Reaſon of Doubting is threefold: which Reaſons are wont to caſt a Scruple to Catholics in this Buſineſs; and to perſuade, that it is by no means Lawful to reſiſt the *Spanyard* in the Invaſion of *England*.

Firſt, The *Spanyard* is ſent by the Pope; whom Catholics are bound in Conſcience to obey. Therfore he that reſiſteth the *Spanyard* oppoſeth the Pope. Which is a Sin of Diſobedience.

Secondly, The King of *Spain* hath ſuffered many Wrongs from the Queen of *England*. Therefore he may juſtly bring War upon Her. But no Subject can defend a King or Kingdom in an unjuſt War. And then becauſe She hath aſſiſted the rebellious Subjects in *Flanders* againſt their Lawful Lord. Then becauſe She invaded, took, poſſeſt the Town G   againſt Juſtice. Then becauſe She often ſpoiled the Kings *Indian* Treaſure, Ships, Cities, Subjects of the King of *Spain*. Laſtly, becauſe *England* alone almoſt creates him Buſineſs in *Flanders*, *France*, *Portugal*, *Italy*, and in the Ocean. Therefore to revenge all theſe Injuries, it is Lawful to bring a juſt War upon Her. To which [King] Catholics cannot reſiſt without mortal Sin.

Thirdly, It was the Kings Intention to introduce the Catholic Faith in *England*. But Catholics are bound not to reſiſt him, who endeavours to reſtore and amplify Catholic Faith. The Major is proved, as well becauſe he is ſent by the Pope, as becauſe there appeared no other way to reſtore the Catholic Religion. And becauſe in general all Catholics do think ſo.

I. I ſay firſt, that the Queen and Kingdom of *England* have ſuffered very many, and thoſe very grievous Wrongs from the King of *Spain*. Firſt, becauſe he had detained in *Spain* many Ships and Goods of Merchants againſt his Faith given, as many Merchants worthy of Credit have ſignified to me: Who as yet dwell in *London*, and lament the Loſs of their Goods. 2. It is certain (as a certain *Spanyard*, that was preſent, afterward told me) that

Mendoza, the Kings Ambaſſador, procured by all means to intercept the Queen travailing between *London* and *Greenwich*, and in her Boat, (for it was then Summer) to carry her to *Dunkirk*, a Priſoner, by a Band of Soldiers. And in a certain Night they prepared all things to finiſh this Buſineſs. 3. In a Fleet at Sea in the Year 88, he invaded the Kingdom. 4. He ſent into *Ireland* a Band of Soldiers, to move the Subjects againſt their Lady and lawful 1594. Queen. 5. The *Spanyards* ſtirred up many to kill, and eſpecially Dr. *Lopes*, as it clearly appeareth by Letters intercepted, and by his own Confeſſion.

II. I ſay, Secondly, it is lawful for the Queen to require lawful Satisfaction for theſe Injuries offered. Which if he ſhall refuſe to yield, ſhe may juſtly declare War againſt him. The firſt Part is manifeſt. For if a private Man may require from a private Man due Satisfaction for Injury done, why not alſo a Prince? Yea, the King himſelf is bound in Conſcience to give Satisfaction. *Non enim dimittetur peccatum, niſi reſtituetur ablatum.* Adde, that the Queen is bound in Juſtice to revenge Wrongs brought upon her Subjects.———The ſecond Part is alſo certain, becauſe there are here Cauſes for declaring War. 1. It is lawful to declare War, to recover one's own. As the Example of *David* witneſſeth: Who, 2 *Reg.* 2. fought with *Iſhboſheth*, the Son of *Saul*, for the Kingdom of *Iſrael*, granted him by God. Therefore, for the Recovery of the Goods of the Merchants, which the King took away, the Queen might bring War upon him. 2. It is lawful to wage War againſt him, that bringeth Aids to an Enemy. Wherefore *David* fought againſt *Syria* of *Damaſcus*, becauſe it aided *Adar-ezer*, King of *Zoba*, 2 *Kings* 8. The *Spanyard* aided the *Iriſh* Men: Wherefore the Queen might declare lawful Wars upon him. 3. It is lawful to wage Wars againſt a Prince that violates his League. The *Spauyard* hath violated it, as we ſaid before. *Ergo*.

III. I ſay, Thirdly, That it cannot appear, that the *Spanyard*, onely for the Reſtoration of the Catholic Faith, doth wage War with the *Engliſh*; But upon another Pretence; either upon the Account of Revenge, or for extending his Empire. It is proved, 1. By moſt evident Conjecture. For it is certain, that many Years are paſt, wherein the Faith of *Proteſtants* hath taken very deep Root. Yet it appears in all that Time, that the *Spanyard* did not ſo much as think of reſtoring that antient Religion, until the *Engliſh* had layd the Axe to the Root, and had wounded him to the quick by ſetting upon the *Indian* Fleet, that firſt he began to think of War. This Reaſon is confirmed hence, that before that Time, before the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmorland* in the *North* had craved Aid to reſtore the Faith, his Ear was ſhut: No Help was afforded; which without doubt he had afforded, if Religion had moved him to wage War. You will ſay, he was not then ready. But you had better have ſaid, he would not be ready. For to defend his Money, he could preſently be ready: But to defend Religion, he could not be ready.

Secondly, This Aſſertion is proved *à ſimili*. Becauſe the *Spanyard* had been contented, that the *Hollanders* ſhould profeſs any Religion, ſo they refuſed not to be ſubject to him. Which is a Sign, that he was but little ſolicitous of Religion, but much concerning Rule. This is ſo tryed a Matter, that the Ambaſſadors of *Germany* in the Year 91. being ſent to make Peace betwixt the King and the *Hollanders*, at *Mentz*, at *Liege*, and elſewhere, affirmed for a certain, that the *Spanyard* would yield in Religion, ſo that they refuſed not the other Conditions of Peace.

Thirdly, It is proved by the Example of the *Indians*. By what Title, I pray, do the *Spanyards* poſſeſs the *Weſt India*? What? becauſe they endeavoured to introduce Religion? But it was not lawful for Catholics to deprive of his Kingdom a lawful Lord, tho' an Infidel, for the ſake of Religion,

gion, or to throw him out of it. Chriſt ſaith, *Give to* Cæſar *the things that be* Cæſar*'s*; altho' he was an Unbeliever. Or was it, becauſe the *Indians* hindred the preaching of the Law of the Goſpel? But neither by Way or Means did they attempt preaching from the Inſtitution of Chriſt; but by a Fury truly tyrannical, and altogether barbarous, as almoſt all the *Indian* Hiſtories teſtify. Or perhaps did the Pope give him Dominion, or the *Indian*? But by the common Doctrine of Catholics, neither can he grant it, nor can it be proved, that he hath ever granted it any where. As therefore the *Spanyards* in the Luſt of ruling invaded the *India*, took it, poſſeſt it; ſo, it is very much to be feared, that they think of *England*. For altho' aſterwards, as it were by Accident, they pretend Religion; yet it was very like, that they chiefly intend Revenge and Dominion.

IV. I ſay, Fourthly, It is againſt Policy, and the Quiet of all Chriſtian Princes, to permit the *Spanyard* to invade *England*. This Aſſertion is explained, and likewiſe proved. For if he ſubject *England* to his Yoke, who ſeeth not, that *France*, *Scotland*, *Denmark*, and other adjacent Juriſdictions, are placed in extreme Danger. For if the leaſt Occaſion be given to the *Spanyard*, (Occaſions are eaſily taken and feigned to conquer Kingdoms) of fighting with others, who will reſtrain his Boldneſs? Who will keep him within his Duty? He will girt in *France* round about. His Forces will be invincible by Land and Sea. Hence will follow that extreme Fear, ſo hated by all Princes, and ſo alien from the beſt State of a Commonwealth. *The Lion roareth, who will not fear?* If ſo great Forces be preſent with the *Spanyard*, who will dare ſo much as to whiſper [*muſſitare*] againſt him? Wherefore to no Chriſtian Prince will there be any Security, any Tranquillity. All Kingdoms, States, Commonwealths, ſhall obey the Will of the *Spanyard*.

You will ſay, Do we not ſee the Dukes of *Italy*, of *Florence*, of *Ferrara*, of *Mantua*, the *Venetian*, the *Genoeſe*, the Duke of *Lorrain*, to enjoy the greateſt Peace, notwithſtanding the Rule of the *Spanyard*? 'Tis true, they enjoy ſome kind of Peace; but every one ſeeth, how much the Dominion of the *Spanyards* ſpreading far and near, diſpleaſeth them; with how great a Yoke they are preſt; with what Compliance they are compelled, tho' unconquered, to yield to the *Spanyard*. Add, that the *Spanyards* are employed elſewhere. But if they had Peace and Reſt from War, the *Venetians* for *Bergonium* ſhould try what it were to permit the *Spaniard* ſo widely to ſtretch the Confines of his Empire. The *Genoeſes* for *Savona*. The Duke of *Florence* for *Siena*. The Duke of *Mantua* for *Mont Ferrat*. But let us grant the preſent King *Philip* doth not vex them, nor diſturb the Peace, who can render us ſecure of his Son, of his Succeſſor. For it is incumbent upon Kings, not only to take care of the preſent, but alſo to provide afar off for the future.

V. I ſay, Fifthly, It is againſt the Good of the Church, to permit the *Spaniard* to invade *England*. This Aſſertion is clearly ſhewn by the former. For if the *Spanyard* ſo widely diffuſe, if he obey not the Church; if he become an Heretic, if he riſe up againſt the Church, and its Dominions: if he favour the *Moors* [*Mauri*], who may defend the Church? We know *Conſtantius*, the worſt Son of the beſt Father, introduced *Arianiſm* into almoſt the univerſal Church; baniſhed *Liberius*, the chief Prelate of the Church: becauſe there was none that could break his Power, or reſiſt him. Why ſhould it not happen to the Son, Grandſon, or Great Grandſon of the *Spanyard*? It is confirmed. For it is known, how irreverently the *Spanyards* deal with the Church, when the Pope's Bulls are ſent, which in a manner touch the State of the Kingdom. They ſcarcely hear them, much leſs obey them. They may pretend, the Pope is not rightly informed. And ſo leaſt they might ſeem to ſhew themſelves rebellious to the Church, they receive them; but ſo diſſemble, that they do not obey them at all.

It is confirmed moreover, becauſe there is no body but knoweth, how propenſe the *Spanyards* are to *Mahometiſm*. *Buterus* delivereth in his Rela-

In Hiſpania. tions. In the only Kingdom of *Valentia* were found two Millions of Families of *Moors*. Wherefore when the promiſcuous common People do ſo hang towards *Mahometiſm*, (of which there will be very many, yea, the greateſt Part of them, who ſhall inhabit *England*) ſurely it will be doubtful, leaſt in the Place of *Lutheraniſm* and *Calviniſm*, they introduce *Mahometiſm*; if the Kingdom of *Spain* incline to Diviſions. Add laſtly, that egregious Praiſe of *Pius* V. Pope concerning the *Spanyard*; who was wont to ſay, that the *Spanyards* were Catholics only by Permiſſion. For if the Pope ſhould deny them chief Privileges, many of them, which he granted unwillingly to them, it would be hazardous, leaſt they wholly made a Defection from the Church.

VI. I ſay, Sixthly, The Pope may err in ſending the *Spanyard* into *England*. It is proved, 1. From the common Doctrine of Catholics, that the Pope may err in all thoſe Decrees, which do not belong to Faith, and the Meaſures of the univerſal Church. But the ſending of the *Spanyards* into *England* doth not belong to Meaſures, nor to the Faith of the univerſal Church. *Ergo*. 2. If the *Spanyard* were averſe from the Pope, altho' he might command him, yet he would not obey. And yet he is not otherwiſe bound to obey the Pope commanding, than the Catholics in *England*. *Ergo*. Hence it manifeſtly appeareth, that the *Spanyards* think that they are not obliged by the Pope's Decree to invade *England*.

It is confirmed, becauſe no body is ignorant, that the Pope commandeth the *Spanyards* many things: all which they evade under ſome Diſſimulation. Wherefore in this Buſineſs they think the Pope may err. But in this Aſſertion there is no place of doubting left among Catholics. For it is Matter of Fact; and a particular Matter concerning the Certainty of which there is no Teſtimony of Scripture, no Tradition, no Precept of Councils. *Ergo*. Hence it follows, that the Catholics in *England*, on whom hangeth ſo great a Dangers of Goods and Life, are not obliged to believe, either that the Pope ſendeth the *Spanyard*; or altho' he ſhould, that the Pope doth not erre herein. When the Pope doth not well underſtand, neither the King's Intentions, nor the great Danger wherein he caſteth all the Catholics of *England*, if he ſhould oblige them to defend the Part of the *Spanyard*. For by that Means he expoſeth all the Catholics to manifeſt Danger of Death, if they do not take up Arms againſt the *Spanyard*. For all the *Proteſtants* will eſteem them as Betrayers of their Country; and to proceed againſt them. Wherefore if they underſtand this before the Fights, undoubtedly they will deſtroy all. If the *Spanyard* doth not obtain the Victory, who doth not ſee, how hateful the Name of *Catholic* will be throughout all *England*? Who will not eſteem him for the Peſt of his Country, Enemy of the Commonweal, a domeſtic Enemy, a Betrayer of his own Countrymen? Now it is not to be thought, that the Pope inſtructed of theſe Dangers, would call the Catholics into ſo many Hazards. For we know, he ought to carry the Bowels of a Father, a Paſtor, Chriſt's Vicar; not to expoſe his Son, his Ships, his Subjects, to ſo many and ſo great Dangers.

You will ſay, if the thing be ſo, we muſt never obey the Pope, if he command one King, for the Good of the Church, to keep another in his Duty by War. I anſwer, that Buſineſs is difficult; yet this Rule may be kept, when the Subjects of one King, by an unanimous Conſent, (that is, the whole Community, or the chief Heads) have informed the Pope of their State, and affirm the Safety of their Souls are in extreme Jeopardy; and they judge, there is no other Remedy remaineth: Then Subjects are bound, after the Dangers unfolded, and all the Harmes which naturally might occur, to obey the Pope. Which was never done in *England*.

VII. I ſay, Seventhly, It is the greateſt Doubt, whether the *Dutch* War, which the *Hollander* had undertaken againſt the King, was lawful on the Part of the King. The Reaſon is, becauſe it appeareth, that one of the chief

Cauſes of that War was the Impoſition of new Taxes or *Gabells*, which the Duke of *Alva*, againſt all Juſtice, endeavoured to introduce; to wit, a certain Tithing of their Goods: which now take place in *Spain*. When therefore ſuch Burthens and Grievances were contrary to Juſtice, and the King's Oath, whereby he bound himſelf to defend their Privileges, nor to impoſe any new Yoke upon them without their Conſent; they might lawfully reſiſt him, and take up Armes. It is confirmed hence, becauſe many Men of *Flanders*, learned and religious, do think this very thing. They ſuppoſe that War on the Part of the Subjects was lawful; but unlawful on the King's Part. It is confirmed beſides, that the ſame Duke *D'Alva* did unjuſtly put to Death two of their chief Counts, *Egmond* and *Horn*. To revenge which, an antient Cauſe was given of waging War.

VIII. I ſay, Eighthly, The Catholics will not be otherwiſe afflicted, if the *Spanyards* invade *England*, than the Proteſtants would be. It is proved firſt, from the common Condition of War; in which the Innocent together with the Nocent are puniſhed alike. For when all things are mingled with War, who will diſcern a Catholic from a Proteſtant. The Conqueſt of *Antwerp* is an Example. I have heard myſelf from very many *Dutch* Catholics, that after the City was taken, all Men were puniſhed, who appeared for three Days in the City of *Antwerp*; no Account at all being had of Catholics. For they know there are many, who, to defend their Lives and Fortunes, aſſume a Shape of what Religion you will. They know that Politicians wear Religion after the manner of Garments; which they change again according to Time and Place. The Confirmation of this is, that I have underſtood from a certain Perſon worthy of Credit, who himſelf heard the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, General of the whole *Spaniſh* Fleet in *Anno* 88. ſay, that he thought no *Engliſh* Man a Catholic, but eſteemed them all for *Lutherans*: and ſo he would indifferently handle all.

This Aſſertion is proved, 2. From two Vices, which will rule the *Spaniard*, having gotten Victory. One is inſatiable Revenge. For it is certain, they will not obtain Victory without an huge Effuſion of Blood, and the Slaughter of their Fellow Soldiers. But the killing of their Men rendreth them cruel and inſatiable in Blood. Therefore they will ſlay all whom they ſhall find, for the Puniſhment of their Fellow Soldiers. Who of them, I pray, will ſpare a Catholic? Will conſider Religion? Theſe are far from Soldiers in the Fury of War. Did not the *Spanyards* alſo ſpoil many Temples of Catholics in *Portugal* and *Flanders*, and left them wholly naked? Yea, they therefore ſacrilegiouſly waſted the Temples of God, which they very well knew to be God's Houſe, nor could diſſemble Religion. What will they, how will they handle Catholics, of whoſe Religion, among ſo many Troops of Proteſtants and Politicians, they may deſervedly doubt?

The other Vice is intolerable Luſt and Heat towards Women. What Maid will they not violate, becauſe ſhe is a Catholic? What Husband's Bed will they not pollute, becauſe the Wife acknowledgeth the Pope of *Rome*?

From theſe two let a prudent Catholic weigh diligently in what Place he is put, that his own Buſineſs be done. If you ſhall not take Armes, you expoſe your ſelves to the Danger of Death, as well on the Part of the *Engliſh*, who will reckon you a Betrayer of your Country; as on the Part of the *Spanyards*, who will kill you, as a Proteſtant. You will ſee your Father, your Brother, your Son, your Couſin, your Friend, wallowing in his own Bloud, breathing out his laſt in his Wounds, taken off by Death. You will behold your Wife, your Mother, your Daughter to be violated, polluted, defiled before your Eyes. You that ſee thoſe Enemies ruling over you, with the higheſt Arrogance inſulting, affecting you with Contumelies; wherefore Death it ſelf would be more pleaſant to you, than your Life. If therefore you live or dye, Death is every where upon you. Therefore it would be better to endeavour to defend your ſelves and yours, than to give your ſelves over voluntarily to Death.

IX. I ſay,

IX. I ſay, Ninthly, There are many other ways of bringing in the Catholic Faith into *England*, than by the *Spanyards*. 1. If the Catholics ſhew themſelves faithful Subjects to the Queen. Who knoweth whether ſhe may be converted and live? Who knoweth the Mind of the Lord? Truly, ſhe hath received moſt excellent Gifts of Nature from God. She is endued with a very good Nature, and clear Wit. When therefore ſhe is certain, that all Catholics ſo ſtrenuouſly will fight for her Safety and Kingdom, I do not ſee indeed, but ſo kind a Nature, ſo eaſy a Diſpoſition, ſo motherly a Piety may at laſt yield to them the Liberty of Conſcience: as ſhe hath already granted to ſome. Becauſe ſhe very well hath known them to be good Subjects. 2. Since the Queen doth not dye in *England*, who therefore ſucceedeth her ſhall be certainly a Catholic, or will permit us to live catholicly. Of which thing many Reaſons may be produced. As well becauſe it is very uncertain who ſucceeds, there is none but ſeeth every one of the Pretenders will try all Ways to bring the Catholics to their Sides. Which certainly they will never perform, unleſs Faith be given, that they will permit the Catholic Religion: as becauſe by this means he ſhall moſt eaſily enter into, and keep peace with all the Chriſtian Princes. Laſtly, When it appears to him concerning the Fidelity of the Catholics; and moreover, a Doctrine be eſtabliſhed between the Proteſtants, that none is to be puniſhed on that Account, becauſe he is a Catholic; truly, it will be doubtful to none, but that all Catholics will enjoy the greateſt Peace.

Wherefore, I think, we muſt yield to the Time; and for a Time bear the Yoke which Chriſt hath laid upon us with all Humility.

Many things offer themſelves for this Opinion. As, the Difference between Proteſtants and *Puritans*. Which Contention undoubtedly will be the Peace of Catholics. The Multitude of Atheiſts and Politicians, [that is, Time-ſervers] who by how much the more they infect *England* with their Plague, by ſo much the ſtraiter League Catholics and Proteſtants will be joined. But Atheiſm daily creeps in wider and wider. And when among learned Men ſo many diſagreeing Opinions daily bud forth about the chief Doctrines of Faith, and the Fundamentals of Religion, new Sects do ever and anon ariſe: That all things are proved by Scriptures; that no End is put to Controverſies, ſcarce any certainly knoweth to what Party to adhere. Hence Men, not altogether mad, (tho' all imprudent) think nothing true, nothing to be believed. A learned Proteſtant, being ſet in the midſt between Catholics and *Puritans*, if they muſt incline to one Extreme, it is far more probable they will embrace Catholiciſm. For ſince thence they have been cut off, they do very ſharply defend their Doctrines againſt *Puritans*. But that the Religion of Proteſtants cannot long ſtand, Arguments are not wanting, and Marks manifeſt enough to prove it: but to be wrapt up in Silence.

X. I ſay, Tenthly, He that doubteth of the Juſtice of the War, may with a ſafe Conſcience fight for the Prince. It is a common Opinion of the Catholics, *Cæi. in ſumma, Verbo* BELLUM. *Sylveſt. Verbo* BELLUM. 159. *Et Verbo* CONSCIENTIA. 9. 4. And he aſſerteth it to be a common Opinion of the Doctors, *&c.*

It is proved, 1. Becauſe in doubtful Matters, the Subject ought to preſume of the Princes Juſtice. Nor is he bound, or is able to examine the Cauſes of War, eſpecially when one Circumſtance changeth the whole Cauſe, and of unjuſt rendreth it juſt. For it is known, that a Prince being ſet in a Watch Tower, ſeeth very many things which are ſecret from Subjects, who dwell in the Vallies.

2. It is confirmed, becauſe a Prince is not bound to explain to his Soldiers the Cauſe of War. But it is enough, that it is decreed in the King's Council, after a diligent Examination of Cauſes. And it is often expedient, that Soldiers ſhould not know the Cauſes of War. And ſo the Practice is among all Chriſtian Princes. Who gather Soldiers, not relating the Cauſe of the

War. Yea, oftentimes they know not in what Place, nor with whom they muſt fight. 2. The Executioner doth not examine the Sentence of the Judge, whether it be juſt or unjuſt; but executeth the Act of Juſtice there: ſuppoſing the Sentence of the Judge to be lawful.

3. In doubtful Cauſes the ſafer Part is to be choſen and followed. But if the Subject goeth not to War, he expoſeth himſelf to the Danger of betraying the Commonweal. Which is a greater Evil, than to fight againſt an Enemy. *Ergo.*

4. It is the expreſs Judgment of St. *Aug. Lib.* 22. *contra Fauſtum*, c. 75. where he thus writeth: *Vir juſtus ſi forte ſub rege, homine & ſacrilego, militet, rectè poteſt, illo jubente, bellare, civicæ Pacis ordinem ſervans, cui quid jubetur, vel non eſſe contra Dei præceptum, certum eſt, vel utrum ſit, certum non eſt.* Namely, even when he doubteth of it: So that perhaps, when the Unrighteouſneſs of governing will make the King guilty, the Order of ſerving will render the Soldier innocent.

You will ſay, he that acteth doubting of the Juſtice of the War, ſinneth, becauſe he expoſeth himſelf to the Danger of acting againſt Juſtice. But he that expoſeth himſelf to the Danger of ſinning, ſinneth. I anſwer, a ſpeculative Doubt is one thing, and a practical another. He that acteth doubting in the firſt, ſinneth not. But he that acteth doubting in the ſecond reſpect, it is certain he ſinneth. For Example: I have a Sheep. I doubt, whether it be mine, or another Man's. I ſeek; I find not, who is Maſter of it. But I *ſpeculatively* doubt; and perhaps on the Part of the thing it is not mine. Yet if I ſell it, or kill it, *practically*, I do not err; nor doubt, becauſe I know the Condition of the Poſſeſſor is better. So in the Caſe propounded: The Subject doubteth of the Princes Intention of a juſt Cauſe of a War. But he knew practically, it is lawful, in ſuch a Caſe, to follow the ſafer Part, and to obey the Command of his Prince.

I ſay, Laſtly, It is lawful for Catholics to wage War in *England* againſt the *Spanyards*. It is proved, 1. Becauſe it appeareth from the firſt Aſſertion, that the *Spanyard* hath affected *England* with very many and very great Wrongs. Which, it is evident, are ſufficient to declare a lawful War, from the ſecond Propoſition. *Ergo*, if the Queen may lawfully declare War, a Catholic may ſafely in Conſcience obey the Prince. 2. The Intention of the *Spanyard* is very ſuſpicious to us, as I ſhewed in the third Propoſition; it doth not appear to us, that the Pope ſent him. And if he ſhould ſend him, he might erre in this, when he is not fully informed of the State of *England*; as it is mentioned in the ſixth Propoſition. Such a Conqueſt alſo brings more Diſprofit to the Church, to Chriſtian Princes, to all the Catholics in *England*, than Benefit; as was proved in the 4th, 5th, and 8th Propoſitions. Therefore they may juſtly defend the Queen, the Kingdom, and their Places, with a defenſive War. 3. If the Reaſons alledged prove not the War to be juſt abſolutely and on every Part; yet they are ſuch as every one may prudently doubt, whether the War be juſt, or no. Therefore when from the tenth Aſſertion it is ſhewn, that in a doubtful War the Subject may, and is bound (unleſs he would be held for a Betrayer of his Country) to obey his Prince. And conſequently may bear Armes againſt the *Spanyard.*

Now it remains, that we anſwer to the Arguments propounded in the Beginning.

To the Firſt, It appears from the 3d and the 6th Aſſertion, that it appears not to us, that he is ſent by the Pope. Neither, if he were ſent, that the Pope erreth not in this Matter; for Reaſons contained, *viz.* that the Pope is not rightly inſtructed concerning the Loſſes, which from this Invaſion of the *Spanyards* would redound upon the whole Church; and eſpecially upon all the Catholics in *England.*

To the Second, a Solution is in effect had from the 7th Propoſition. For if the *Dutch* War were lawful on the Part of the Subjects, (as was ſaid there) then the Queen might protect innocent Subjects againſt the unjuſt Prince. As *Abraham*, *Gen.* 14. juſtly fought againſt four Kings, who had unjuſtly ſpoiled

Lot. *Joſaphat* helped *Joram* againſt King *Meſſa*, 4 *Reg.* 3. For it is known, that Charity ſo uniteth Friends, that they are reputed for one and the ſame: where he that bringeth a Wrong upon one, is reputed to bring it upon the other. Hence it cometh to paſs, as to do a good Work is good, ſo to help in a good Work, as is a juſt War, is good alſo.

To the third; It appeareth from the third Propoſition, that the Intention of the King is very much ſuſpected by us, whether he fight for Religion, or for Rule. And tho' it ſhould appear to us, yet the Loſſes which hang over us, and likely moſt certainly to follow, do far ſurpaſs the good things which may be hoped for.

NUMB. LXVI.

Certain Liſts of the Names of all the Recuſants and Prieſts in England, *and beyond the Seas in the Year* 1587.

FIRST, of the Knights and Ladies, Wives and Widows of Knights: and then in all the Counties diſtinctly.

KNIGHTS.

Sir *Tho. Cornwallis.*
Sir *John Arundell.*
Sir *Tho. Treſham.*
Sir *William Catesbie.*
Sir *Tho. Fitz-Herbert.*
Sir *John Southworth.*
Sir *Tho. Jarret.*
Sir *George Peckham.*
Sir *John Cotton*, of *Cambridgeſhire.*
Sir *Alexander Culpepper.*

10

LADIES.

Lady *Waldgrave*, Wife to Sir *William.*
Lady *Allen* of *Kent.*
Lady *Lovel* of *Norfolk.*
Lady *Peter* of *Eſſex.*
Lady *Kitſon* of *Henegré.*
Lady *Throgmorton.*
Lady *Theſham.*
Lady *Catesby.*
Lady *Conſtable.*
Lady *Paulet* of *Hampſhire.*
Lady *Babington* of *Oxfordſhire.*
Lady *Metham.*
Lady *Ingleby.*
Lady *Bapthorp.*
Lady *Jarret.*
Lady *Catlyn.*
Lady *Copley.*
Lady *Hurleſton.*
Lady *Paulet* of *Borly.*
Lady *Stonard.*
Lady *Eliz. Gage.*
Lady *Gammage.*
Lady *Baskerfield.*
Lady *Gilford.*

24

Several Gentlemen, whoſe Wives were Papiſts, and their Children, in the ſeveral Counties: And the Numbers of them.

In	*Norfolk*	34
	Suffolk	26
	Eſſex	13
	Kent	15
	Southampton	13
	Surry	7
In	*Suſſex*	5
	Middleſex, taking in without the Liberties	18
	London	19
	Barkſhire	6

The Numbers in the other Counties inconſiderable. Then follow,

The Names of the Seminary Prieſts, and others as be, or have been in England*; as well at Liberty, as in the Priſons; with the Places where they frequent and reſort.*

The Nation well ſtocked with them. For they are in Number 189. Whereof in *Wisbich*, the *Counter*, the *Gatehouſe*, the *Clink*, and *Marſhalſee*, 47.

Engliſh *Prieſts out of the Nation, beyond the Seas,* in Number 38. *And were theſe that follow.*

Cardinal *Allen* Rob *Parſons*	at *Rome*.
Baily, Preſident Dr. *Giffard* *Reynolds* *John Wolſley* *Worthington* Dr. *Webb* Dr. *Barret*	at *Rheimes*.
Mann *Walter Stokes*	at *Ewe*.
Gratly, alias *Bruges* *Woodward* *Johnſon* *Cletherow* *Bridgwater* *Veal* *Aldridge* *Seth Forſter*.	at *Roan*.
Dr. *Wryght*, alias *Dobſon* Dr. *Stapleton*	at *Doway*.
Dr. *Nicoldſon*, and his Brother. *Darbiſhire*, and his Brother. *Story* *Gilbert Gifford* *Vincent Warner* *Rob. Tempeſt* *Blackſmith* *Thomſon* *Nelſon*	at *Paris*.
Biſhop *Norris* *Parkins*, Jeſuit.	At *Prage*.
Dr. *Lewis*.	At *Milain*.
Father *Roberts*.	
Boſgrave, the Jeſuite.	
Hutchinſon.	At *Diepe*.
Shelborn with Mr. *Shelley*.	

Certificate of Seminary Prieſts, the 30. Sept. 1588. *in their Priſons in, or about* London. *This ſeems to be ſent in from the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion in this dangerous Time.*

Theſe Perſons by their own Confeſſions guilty of Treaſon, or Felony.

Jonas Meredith. *John Robinſon*. *John Wildon*. *James Tayler*. *Robert Nutter*. *John Bickerton*. *Will. Claregenett*. *John Boulton*.	All Prieſts.
John Cradock. *Thomas Hall*. *Edward Tyas*. *Rob. Sutton*. *Richard Andrew*.	All reconcil'd.

Theſe will not take the Oath miniſtred in the *Leets*: Nor take the Queen's Part againſt the Pope's Army.

Martin Rainbow.
Lionel Edes, alias *Genynge*.
William Travers.
Thomas Pencavel.
Peter Pencavel.

Gratian Brown.
Rafe Emerſham, a Lay Jeſuite.
John Williams.
Godfrey Barton: To be re-examined touching *Ballard*.

Nicolas Marwood; a dangerous Perſon.
Edward Cheſter.
Nicolas Horner.
Richard Webſter.

These Perſons are Seminary Prieſts, being taken upon the Seas, or in Priſon, at the Time of the Statute; and in Danger of the Law.

John Marſh.
David Kempe.
John Vivian.
Thomas Layton.
William Parry.
Thomas Haberley.
George Stocker.
Walter Blunt.

Theſe Perſons were reconciled to the Pope of *Rome* before the Statute, and are dangerous Perſons; refuſing to take the Queen's Part againſt the Pope's Army, and refuſe to take the Oath given in *Leets*: which every Subject ſhould take, being above the Age of twelve Years.

Robert Standen.
Roger Tardley.
Richard Sampſon.
Richard Waldern.
Rob. Bellamie.
Thomas Briſcoe.

Theſe *Recuſants* will not take the Queen's Part againſt the Pope's Army; and yet have taken the Oath in the *Leete*.

Rob. Jackſon.
Richard Wakefield.
John Bradſtock.
John Gray.
Roger Aſtel.
John Beckenſal.
John Launder.
Richard Randal.

These Perſons are only *Recuſants*.

Anthony Snape.
Nicolas Burlace. This Gentleman proveth to be committed to ſome Man's Houſe, upon ſufficient Bonds with Sureties, until he recover his Health.
Owyn Fletcher; was reconciled ten Years paſt.
Thomas Cavet.
John Tucker.
George Napper.
Francis Erman.
Tho. Edmunds.
Tho. Pett.
John Rayſon.
Thomas Richardſon.
Stephen Cheſton.
Rich. Tremain.
William Lyngyn.
William Ryngſted; reconciled eight Years paſt.
Rich. Daws; reconciled 7 Years paſt.
Steven Valenger.
Tho. Becket; reconciled ſixteen Years paſt.
Francis Baſtard.
William Green.
Elizabeth Sherwood; her Son is a Seminary Prieſt.
John Eliot.
William Bray; a common Conveyer of Prieſts and Recuſants; and of naughty Books over the Seas: and was taken carrying the Earl of *Arundel* over the Seas.
Henry Foxcroft; hath taken the Oath in the *Leet*, and the Oath of Supremacy, and will go to Church.

NUMB. LXVII.

A Paper concerning the Superiority of Biſhops: Put into the Hands of Sir Francis Knolles *by ſome unknown Perſon: And by him delivered to the Lord* Burghley, Jan. 1588.

MSS. Eccleſiaſt. pen. me.

HIerom upon the Epiſtle to *Titus*, Chap. 1. declared, that in the antient Time of the Church, an Elder and a Biſhop were all one. And that becauſe it ſhould not be thought he meant a Community in Name only, and not in Charge and Authority, adding theſe Words: *Communi Presbyterorum Conſilio Eccleſiæ regebantur*: He ſhewed the Occaſion, how it happened afterwards, that one in every Church had Superiority over the reſt of Elders. But yet to put Men out of doubt, that this Superiority was not God's Inſtitution, he concludeth in this manner: *Sicut ergo Presbyteri ſciunt ſe ex Eccleſiæ Conſuetudine ei qui ſibi præpoſitus fuerit eſſe ſubjectos; ita Epiſcopi noverint ſe magis Conſuetudine, quàm Diſpenſationis Dominicæ virtute, Presbyteris eſſe majores.*

As much in Subſtance, tho' not ſo largely, he delivered in an Epiſtle, which he writeth to *Evagrius*. And *Cyprian* long before that *Jerom* lived, in ſundry Epiſtles ſheweth, that he is of the ſame Judgment.

Such again as before this latter Age travailed to diſcover, how unjuſtly the Pope uſurped his Authority, began at this Point, as a neceſſary Foundation to ground the Diſcourſe. The Book intitled, *Defenſorium Pacis*, written in Defence of *Lewis* the Emperor againſt the Pope, with ſundry other, will witneſs that I ſay true.

The Learned of this latter Time call this Superiority in Biſhops, *Humanum Inſtitutum*, as *Calvin in Inſtitutionibus*, *Muſculus in Loc. communibus*, *Beza in Confeſſionibus*, *Hemingius in Epiſtolis*, *Zanchius in Confeſſionibus*, *Antonius Sadelius ad repetita Turriani Sophiſmata*.

Lambertus Danæus making three Sorts of this Function of Biſhops according to the Diverſity of Times of the Church; and naming one Sort *Divinum*, the other Sort *Humanum*, the third *Satanicum*, he placeth in the ſecond Rank the moderate Superiority, which the Church, to avoid ſome Confuſion and Schiſm, and ſo for Neceſſity ſake, was induced to beſtow upon one in every Church: Having before deſcribed that to be the divine Function which was one with the reſt of the Elders, and common in one equal Authority with them. The third Sort he maketh that which exceedeth the Bounds of Neceſſity, and deſtroyeth the Policy of the Holy Ghoſt in Church Government. Such as the Biſhops of *Rome* of long time have uſurped.

NUMB. LXVIII.

The Examinations of divers Perſons about the Printing Preſs of Martin Marprelate: *And of the Books ſo printed.* Feb. 15. 1588. apud Lambhith in Com. Surr.

The EPITOME.

Sergeant Puckring's MSS.

SIR *Rich. Knightly* in his Examination confeſſed, that at his Houſe at *Pauſley*, a Book, called *The Epitome*, was printed. The Printing Preſs brought to his Houſe there by *Jeffs*, a Tenant of his Son. From whence the Preſs was carried to his Houſe at *Norton* about *Chriſtmas* laſt [1588.] And touching the Author of the Book, he knoweth not, unleſs it were *Penry*. Who came and moved him, that he might have a Room in his Houſe, to print a like Book to that which he had before made, concerning the unlearned Miniſtry of *Wales*. He likewiſe ſaid, that *Waldgrave* was the Printer. And further confeſſeth, that *Newman*, the Cobler, had his Livery and Conizance, and that *Stephen* his Servant carried the Preſs and Letters from *Norton* to *Coventry*, to the Houſe of *John Hales*, Eſq;.

The SUPPLICATION.

Mr. *Hales* being examined ſaith, That Sir *R. Knightly* ſhortly after *Chriſtmas* [88] ſent him a Letter by *Waldgrave*, requiring this Examinate to ſuffer this Bearer to have room in this Examinate's Houſe in *Coventry* for a time. And the ſaid *Hales*, upon the Receit of that Letter, did admit *Waldgrave* to his Houſe at *Coventry*, and delived to him the Keys thereof. And was afterwards brought by *Penry* to the Place where the Preſs ſtood. And after printing received a Book, called, *The Supplication* for the Parliament.

MINERALS.

Henry Sharpe depoſeth, That the Preſs ſettled at *Hale's* Houſe, *Waldgrave* there printed three Books, *viz.* the *Mineral Concluſions*, the *Supplication* to the Parliament, and *Have you any Work for the Cooper?*

Martin Junior, and *Martin Senior*.

Appeareth by *Roger Weekſton* Gentleman, his Confeſſion, that his Wife moved him, that *Hodgkins* might do a piece of Work in his Houſe; which he ſaw not, but heard afterwards, that *Martin Junior*, and *Martin Senior*, were printed there in a low Parlour of his Houſe.

Udal. Demonſtration. Diotrephes.

Henry Sharpe depoſed, That *Penry* (which appears to be a principal Dealer in all the Acts every where) told him, that *Udal* was the Author of the *Demonſtration of Diſcipline.*

Tomkyns [a Printer] alſo depoſed, That he believed *Udal* was alſo the Author of the Dialogues, called *Diotrephes*; becauſe in a Catalogue of ſuch Books, as is ſaid, *Udal* had made, this Examinate ſaw as well the ſaid Dialogue, as the *Demonſtration* mentioned. And that *Udal* reſorted ſundry times to Mrs. *Crane's* Houſe at *Mowſely*; while *Penry* and *Waldgrave* were there.

Stephen Chatfield, Vicar of *Kingſton*, depoſed, That before the coming forth of the firſt *Martin*, he ſaw in *Udal's* Study certain written Papers, importing ſuch Matter as is contained in the Libel; and ſaith further, that about a Fortnight before *Michaelmas*, 88. the ſaid *Udal*, in Conference with this Examinate, ſaid, It were beſt for the Biſhops not to ſtop his Mouth. For if they did, he would then ſet himſelf to writing, and give ſuch a Blow, as they never had the like in their Lives.

Udal himſelf confeſſeth, that ſome things contained in the firſt *Martin* proceeded from his Report, but ſaith, he knoweth not how it came in writing. And yet being aſked, Whether he made not Collections of ſome things that are contained in that Book; and whether he did ſhew thoſe his Collections to Mr. *Field*, [a *Puritan* Miniſter] and Mr. *Chatfield*, or to either of them, ſaith, that he did. He ſaid further, that he told Mr. *Chatfield*, that if the Biſhops reſtrained him and others from preaching, then they would give them Occaſion to employ themſelves in writing the more againſt their Government.

Henry Sharpe [a Bookſeller] ſaith, That *Waldgrave* printed at Mr. *Hale's* Houſe, firſt, the *Mineral Concluſions*, that came forth *Febr.* the laſt [88] next, *the Supplication*, which came forth in *Midlent*; and afterward, the

Book, *Have you any Work*, &c. that came forth about *Palm Sunday*. And further ſaith, That of the firſt Sort of Books *Waldgrave* ſent to this Examinate a Thouſand to be bound for him: Of the ſecond ſort, *Newman* brought him the like Number: And of the third, *Newman* brought him about 700.

And the ſaid *Sharpe* depoſed, That in *Eaſter* Week laſt *Waldgrave* told him, that they all were diſpatched; and the Mill was not then going, for that was the Phraſe of their Printing. And further ſaid, That he would no longer deal in that Courſe; for that he had gotten Mr. *Cartwright's* Teſtament againſt the *Jeſuits*; which, he ſaid, he would print in *Devonſhire*.

Henry Sharpe depoſed, That after *Waldgrave* departed, *Penry* procured *Hodgkins*, (now Priſoner in the *Tower*) to ſupply *Waldgrave's* Place in printing: And ſaith, That within a Fortnight after Midſummer laſt, this Examinate found *Hodgkins* at Work in *Weekſton's* Houſe, printing of *Martin Junior*, and *Martin Senior*: and working there privately under the Name of an *Embroiderer*.

Hodgkins, and *Symms*, and *Tomlyn*, *Hodgkins* Men, confeſs, That beginning to print the Book, called, *More Work for the Cooper*, in *Newton Lane* near *Mancheſter*, they had printed thereof about ſix a Quire of one Side, before they were apprehended. They alſo depoſed, That *Hodgkins* told them, the next Book, or the next but one, which they had to print, ſhould be in *Latin*, [which perhaps was *Diſciplina Sacra.*] And that there was another Parcel of *More Work*, &c. which ſhould ſerve them to print another time. For this was but the firſt Part of the ſaid Book. And the other Part was almoſt as big again.

Symms depoſed, That while *Hodgkins*, himſelf and *Tomlyn* were coming up to *London*, *Hodgkins* told him, That notwithſtanding their Preſs and Letters were taken, yet ſaid he, we have, as you know, a Preſs at Mr. *Weekſton's*, and ſome Letters; and alſo two Sorts of Letters at a Merchant's Houſe in *London*; which were bought of *Waldgrave*.

Humfrey Newman [a ſecret Diſperſer of theſe Books] uſed to reſort to Sir *Ric. Knightlies* Houſe; firſt in a green Coat, and a green Hat; and within a ſhort time after, did wear Sir *R. Knightlies* Livery.

Mrs. *Crane* called before the Commiſſion to be examined upon theſe Matters, refuſed to anſwer upon Oath to any Queſtion, either concerning her ſelf; for that, as ſhe ſaid, ſhe would not be her own Hangman: Or concerning others; for that ſhe could not in her Conſcience be an Accuſer of others.

To this Mrs. *Crane's* Houſe in *London*, *Waldgrave* brought a Caſe of Letters. And a Load of Stuff was laid in her Houſe at *Mouldſey*, (at the Requeſt of *Penry*) wherein thoſe Letters were. While the Load of Stuff remained at Mrs. *Crane's* Houſe, *Penry* and *Waldgrave* continued thereabouts three Weeks after Midſummer, 88. And were thereabouts *Michaelmas* following. And that Mr. *Udal*, late Preacher at *Kyngſton*, reſorted there ſundry times to the ſame Houſe: Printing, as the Examinate ſaith, ſome Books there.

NUMB. LXIX.

Cauſes conſidered in proceeding againſt Mr. Digby, *Fellow of* S. John's *College,* Cambridge, *in Order to his* Deprivation: *and moving thereunto. Which were offered by Dr.* Whitaker, *the Maſter, to the Lord* Burghley, *and the Archbiſhop, Viſitors of that College.*

1. PReaching at St. *Maries*, he ſo commended voluntary Poverty, as that Dr. *Fulk* preaching in the ſame Place confuted him ſhortly after about the ſame Point, being a Popiſh Poſition. 2. He inveighed in open Diſputation againſt *Calviniſm*, as againſt Schiſmaticks. 3. Sir *Birch*, a known Papiſt, *Vehemently ſuſpected upon great Preſumption to be of corrupt Religion.*

piſt, perſuaded one Mr. *Heyward*, a Gentleman's Son in our Houſe; whom he would have induced to Popery, with this Reaſon among others, that Mr. *Digby*, and ſome others of Account in our Houſe, were ſo. 4. Sir *Smith*, (who lately fled from our Houſe for Religion) confeſſed to Mr. *Palmer*, that he was encouraged in his Religion by Mr. *Digby*, and others. 5. The Confeſſion of another unto our Maſter, under his Hand writing, that Mr. *D.* was ſuch an one. 6. Mr. *Higgins*, a Senior of our Houſe, reported unto Mr. *Palmer*, that he moved Mr. *Conſtable*, the ſame Mr. *Higgins* Pupil, to ſome Points of Popery. And Mr. *Conſtable* confirmed the ſame unto the ſaid Mr. *Palmer* of late. 7. He preached out of *Eſdras* [3. c. 4. 4.] gathering Papiſtical Notes: As, that *Eva* ſhould be turned in *Ave*, and ſuch like. 8. In the Time of a Sermon and Communion, he went about fiſhing openly in the Backſide with a Caſting Net, with ſome Scholars in his Company; even then, when Charge was given by Authority from above, That whoſoever did not communicate, his Name ſhould be ſent up. 9. He uſeth to ſpeak dangerouſly and undutifully, and that openly, of the Matters in the *Low Countries*; and of Sir *Francis Drake*. 10. He liveth familiarly with ſome known Papiſt in our Town, and giveth Countenance unto all that are ſuſpected. 11. The common Opinion of him abroad doth for the moſt part condemn him. And divers of our Houſe are ready to depoſe, that they think him to be a Man of corrupt Religion.

2. Open Contempt of the Maſter, Preſident, and Government.

1. By often putting off his Puniſhment, and other things impoſed by the Maſter and Deans. 2. He willingly brake a Decree made by the Maſter and Seniors very lately. 3. He cometh not among the Seniors at any time, being ſent for by the Maſter, but at his mere Pleaſure. 4. He doth uſe to blow a Horn often in the College in the Day time, and hollow after it. 5. He is ſcandalous in the College by a public Challenge in Bills ſet up in divers Places, being flatly forbidden to meddle in the Matter. 6. He threatned openly to meet the Preſident in the Stocks in the hearing of the Scholars, then when in the Maſter's Abſence he ſupplied his room. 7. He openly cried out againſt the Preſident at the ſame time, in the hearing of all the Company in the Hall, theſe Words, and in this Order, and like one in a Rage, beating the Table with his Hands, repeated them often: *Qui non diſtinguit, artem deſtruit, quam tu non habes*, Palmere, *Dialecticam.* 8. He called openly to the Scholars, ſtanding round about the Fire, and ſpake thus of the Preſident, (being then alſo in the Room of the Maſter) becauſe he was not moved with his great Words, *viz.* My Maſters, mark this Man. He hath an *Italian* Trick. He will counterfeit a Laughter, when he is moſt angry. 9. He bragged openly, that he would bring into the Hall one that was expelled immediately before, and he would ſet him down at the Table, to ſee if any Man durſt do any thing againſt it. 10. Since his Deprivation, he chalengeth the Right of a Fellow, ſitting down Preſident, and threatning the Officers for denying him his Commons. 11. Profeſſing himſelf to be as much Fellow, as the Maſter was Maſter, and more.

For which things, tho' we might, and would have proceded againſt him, yet it was thought more convenient, in reſpect of his Credit, to deal with him for the Breach of Statute, which is now layd againſt him, than to have dealt for thoſe Crimes, for ſome Cauſes which we ſpare to ſpeak of.

N U M B. LXX.

Articles framed and propounded to Cutbert Bainbrigg; *as collected out of a* Sermon *by him preached at St.* Maries, Cambridge. *Of which the Vicechancellor required him to declare under his Oath, what he ſpake publickly. With his Anſwers.*

THE Articles were, 1. That ſome ſeek Preferment ; themſelves pay Money for it: and pay their Money before hand. 2. That there be, that have a Bar, that ſtands between them and the Fire ; if Need ſhall be, to ſtrike the Fire out of their Hand, which do bring it. And the Bar to be your Statutes, and poſitive Laws. 3. Extremity uſed, in Execution eſpecially. 4. The Fire put out, by ſtopping their Mouths that be Bringers thereof. 5. If you mind indeed to awake. [*As tho' he had irreverently reflected upon the Sleepineſs of the Doctors at Sermons.*] 6. Baſe Eloquence. 7. Ceremonies no ſooner ſpoke of, but ſnatched at.

MSS. Academ. penes me.

[Thoſe Expreſſions of *Fire* were in Alluſion to his Text, *Luk.* xii. 49. *I am come to ſend fire on the Earth,* &c.]

That which I ſpake in my Sermon touching theſe ſeveral Articles, was uttered in theſe Words.

To the firſt I anſwer, I ſaid, that the Excellency of a public Function in the Church or Commonwealth conſiſted rather in Labour and Diligence for the common Profit, than in Pomp and Shew. Our Saviour Chriſt came into the World, not to be miniſtred unto, but to miniſter unto others. And if this Rule were obſerved and kept, Men would rather with *Moſes* and *Jeremiah* come away, when they were called, than ſeek Preferment with ſuch Deſire, and buy it with their Money, when it falleth.

Matth. xx. 28.

To the ſecond I anſwer, That principal Word in this Sentence which importeth moſt, namely this Word, *Your*, I ſaid it not at all. I ſaid, Poſitive Laws and Statutes had been abuſed by Men in all Ages, to this end, either to be a Bar, to keep the Fire of the Word of God from them, or ſometimes to ſtrike it out of his Hand that bringeth it. My further Explication of my Meaning was after this manner, and my Words were theſe concerning this whole Matter. " There is not any Man that hath Wiſdom and the Fear of " God, but he knoweth and will acknowledge, that there muſt be an Order " both *in Perſonis, rebus & Functionibus*, both in the Church and Common" wealth, and will reverence it with all his Heart; being one of the moſt " excellent Works of God, wherein the Beams of his Wiſdome ſhine moſt " clearly. And he will acknowledge alſo the Neceſſity and Excellency of " theſe Nerves and Sinews of wiſe and wholſome poſitive Laws and Statutes: " Whereby Societies are united and knit together, and receive Strength and " Comelineſs, and a Dexterity to move unto good things. But yet I ſaid, " the Wiſe and Learned knew and would acknowledge, that tho' theſe Laws " were good in themſelves, yet imperfect Rules of Man's Obedience. And " therefore no ſufficient Bar to keep off this Fire, the Word of God, which " requireth more Perfection in Men. My Reaſon to prove that they were imperfect Rules of Mens Obedience was this, becauſe we have not only Community one with another, but, as St. *John* ſaith, *We have fellowſhip with God the Father, and Chriſt Jeſus.* Which muſt be worſhipped in Spirit and in Truth. Wherein the Laws of Men, acknowledging their Imperfection, give Reverence and Place to the perfect Word of God.

My Exhortation, which ſheweth my Purpoſe herein, was this, That Men when they are reproved for their Sins, ſhould not regard ſo much, how to quit themſelves before Men, and by poſitive Laws, tho' this ſometimes be needful, (if the Quality of his Fault require ſuch a Purgation,) but rather enter into their dark Chamber, in the Silence of Night, when the Cogitation of Mens Hearts aſcend, and when their Reines chaſtiſe them, and try, how all things ſtand in the Court of Conſcience. And, by the Tryal of this Fire, the Word of God. Much leſs ſhould they be Means to ſtrike the Fire out of the Hand, which bringeth it, and requireth more Perfection in Man than the Law of Man can give. Offences indeed againſt poſitive Laws muſt be puniſhed, leaſt others by too much Lenity be encouraged to do evil. But with great Regard, eſpecially if he be a Miniſter that offendeth, upon whom many depend. Then a Care muſt be had, that the Church be not deprived of this excellent Treaſure of the Word, which the Lord hath committed unto him. For the Lord maketh much Account of one Soul. And how many Souls may be won by a few Sermons?

To the Third I anſwer, I do not affirm that Extremity that was uſed in executing of Laws. It ſeems, that theſe that ſecretly accuſe me, did take this Article out of theſe Words, which I uſed, ſpeaking of the Cauſes of Contention in Societies; when young Men offending by Ignorance, or for Want of Experience, ſhould hear of their Superiors only Words of Authority, This I will do, becauſe I may do it, either by general Laws, or Local Statutes; and never hear this in Love, This we ought both to do by the Law of God. I ſaid, it cauſed young Men to note and reprehend many things in their Superiors, which otherwiſe in Charity they ſhould and ought to tolerate, and paſs over, remembring the great Burthen that lyes upon them which are in Authority, and have Government, tho' it be but over a few. Which no Man knoweth, but he that ſtandeth under it. And therefore many things ſhould be tolerated in them by Love. But I ſaid, this could hardly be performed towards them, when they dealt extremely with others their Inferiors. And this, I ſaid, was the Cauſe of the Beginning and Continuance of Contention.

To the Fourth I anſwer, I had neither theſe Words of *putting out the Fire*, nor *ſtopping their Mouths*.

To the Fifth I anſwer, I ſaid thus, directing my Speech to the Doctors, If you deſire indeed, (I ſpeak it with Reverence) that they ſhould awake from their Sleep, (meaning the Townſmen) if you would have them forſake the Works of Darkneſs, and that Chriſt Jeſus may be heard, provide, that Chriſt Jeſus may ſpeak more often unto them.

To the Sixth I anſwer, Theſe were my Words. I ſaid, I did not ſpeak againſt good Eloquence, becauſe of all temporal Gifts to Men, there were none more excellent in it ſelf, none more profitable to humane Society in the Church and Commonwealth: But againſt the ridiculous Eloquence uſed of ſome in theſe Days; which conſiſteth more in leaping at the Letter, than Subſtance of the Matter; and which diſgraceth the Majeſty of the Word of God. Neither did I ſpeak it, as tho' I ſhould be able to give Inſtruction unto others, how they ſhould preach: But they muſt give me Leave to note that which ſometime had offended my ſelf. And it might be a Note of Remembrance to put them in mind of that, which a grave and learned Father had ſpoken of the ſame thing not long before.

To the Seventh I anſwer, I ſaid I could not ſufficiently marvail at theſe Men, which hearing Ceremonies ſpoken of generally without Diſtinction, would ſnatch at the Word to make ſome Action of Treſpaſs. Whereas the Lord himſelf had ſpoken againſt idle and unprofitable Ceremonies in the *Pſalmes* and Prophets.

CUTHB. BAINBRIGG.

NUMB.

NUMB. LXXI.

Francis Johnſon'*s Account of his Sermon, preached at St.* Maries, Cambridge, Jan. *the* 6. 1588. *upon* 1 Pet. v. 1—4. The Elders which are among you I exhort, who am alſo an Elder, and a Witneſs, *&c. Againſt which Sermon were divers Articles framed, and propounded to him. Of which Mr. Vicechancellor and Dr.* Perne, *with other Heads, required him to deliver under his Oath, what he ſpake publickly.*

THE Articles. 1. The Neceſſity of Elders. 2. This Form of Government commanded. 3. No other to be allowed of. 4. Neglect hereof Cauſe of Ignorance, *&c.* 5. We have not this Diſcipline: and the Reaſon why. 6. Miniſters ſhould keep continually at their Charge. Univerſity Eaſe, Quiet, Wealth, the Cauſe why ſome do not continue. 7. That there ſhould be Equality among Miniſters and Elders. Which the Popiſh Hierarchy, and all of that Sort, ſo diſlike of. 8. *Amaziah* forbad *Amoz* to preach at *Bethel*. 9. Ours do not exhort to feed; but ſtay them that would.

MSS. Acad. pen. me.

That which I ſpake in my Sermon touching theſe ſeveral Articles.

Touching the Firſt, I did prove by divers Reaſons, which follow in the Anſwers to the other of the Articles; that as the Church to whom *Peter* wrote, and the other Churches then fully eſtabliſhed, had, for the inſtructing and governing them, this one uniform and preſcript Order by the teaching and ruling Elders; ſo alſo that the ſame ſtill by the Word of God are neceſſary for the teaching, and Eccleſiaſtical governing of the Churches of God.

1 Pet. 5. 1.
Jam. 5. 14.
Acts 14. 21, 23. & 20. 17.
2 Cor. 12. 28.
1 Theſſ. 5. 12, & 14.
Heb. 13. 17, 24.

Touching the Second upon that Place of *Paul* to the *Corinthians*; where having ſpoken of the Ordinances appointed to them, and of the Officers of the Church, and of Prophecy, *&c.* he then concludeth, *If any Man think himſelf to be a Prophet*, or *Spiritual*, *let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you*, *are the Commandments of the Lord.* Upon this I ſaid, If they be the Commandments of the Lord, then till a Repeal be ſhewed, we are ſo to hold them.

1 Cor. 11. 2. & 12. 28. & 24.

Touching the Third, ſpeaking of *Elders*, I asked, ſeeing God hath ſet theſe in the Church, who hath Authority to ſet them out, or others in? For they were not appointed for a little time only, or a few Years, but to continue to the End of the World. Which we ſee in the ſtrait Charge which the Apoſtle gives to *Timothy*. For the keeping of the Commandment given him, *unrebrakeable, and without Spot*, is not unto the Time only of Peace, or of having Chriſtian Magiſtrates, but until the appearing of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt. And if any ask, how *Timothy* could poſſibly do this, *Paul* ſhews in the next Epiſtle; that what things he had heard of him, he ſhould deliver the ſame to faithful Men, which were able to teach others alſo. Where we ſee, that the Apoſtle's Deſire was, that the Commandment and Charge ſhould be known and obeyed in the Ages following. And our Saviour Chriſt alſo plainly requires the ſame, in that after his Commiſſion and Charge given to the Apoſtles for Teaching, Baptizing, and the Obſervation of Diſcipline commanded, he promiſeth his Preſence with them to the End of the World. Now the Apoſtles, (as it is ſaid of *David*) ſerved their Time only, and dyed. So that he did not give that Commiſſion and Charge to the Apoſtles only, but to all his faithful Miniſters to the End of the World. With whom obeying this Commandment, he promiſeth ſtill to be preſent.

2 Cor. 12. 28.
1 Tim. 6. 23, 24.
2 Tim. 2. 2.
Matth. 28. 19, 20.
Act. 13. 36.

Touching the Fourth, ſpeaking of the Neceſſity of the *Elders*, I ſaid, I doubt not in the Fear of God to affirm, that the Want of theſe (Want of the ordinary Means appointed by God) is the Cauſe of Ignorance, Atheiſm, Idolatry, Profanation of the Sabbath, Diſobedience to Superiors, &c. too lamentable Experience proves it.

Touching the Fifth, having proved the more ſpecial Neceſſity of Teach-
Prov. 29. 16. cum 1 Cor. ing Elders to be had in ſeveral Congregations; and that the only Means of
14. 3. Salvation appointed by God is the Word preached, I ſaid, that it would be
Rom. 10. 14. objected againſt this, that there are not enough fit and ſufficient to this purpoſe: To which I anſwered, Firſt, That ſo many as are fit are not employed.
Secondly, I asked, Where the Fault was? Anſwering, That it was not in the
Lord, which is moſt ready, his Church being his City, to ſet Watchmen
Eſ. 62. 6. upon the Walls of it: and being his Flock, to give Paſtors to feed it with
Jer. 3. 15. Knowledge and Underſtanding. And indeed ſhall we think, that God is not
as able and willing to furniſh Men with his Spirit of Wiſdome, Underſtanding and Knowledge for the Work of the Miniſtry of the Goſpel, as he was to
Exod. 35. furniſh *Aboliab* and *Bezaleel* for the Work of the Tabernacle; and *Hiram* for
30 — 35. the Temple? Yes, doubtleſs he is ſtill the ſame God, able and as willing.
1 King. 7. 14. But the Fault is in our ſelves. And I think I may in this Caſe ſay, as *Paul*
2 Cor. 6. 12. ſaith in another, *We are not kept ſtrait in God, but we are kept ſtrait in our own Bowels.* Our Hearts are ſet on the Pomp of this World, and on Courts.
Exod. 36. 2. And of this Work it is noted as a ſpecial Furtherance of the Tabernacle, and
1King. 7. 14. of the Wall built about *Jeruſalem, their Heart was to the Work.*

My Exhortation therefore in the Lord is, That all in their Places would ſet their Hearts to further this Work. And if you do indeed deſire, that Men ſhould be awaked out of their Sleep, and ſtand up from the dead, that *Chriſt*
Eph. 5. 14. *may give them Light:* that they ſhould *caſt off the Works of Darkneſs, and put*
Rom. 13. 12 *on the Armour of Light:* Then in the Fear of God, labour by all Means of
Mat. 17. 5. Petition to God, and of Supplication to them in Authority, that Chriſt Jeſus may be heard in our Congregations.

Touching the Sixth, After Proof that the Elders were to be with their ſpecial Flock, and to feed them, over whom the Holy Ghoſt, by the mediate
Act. 20. 28. Calling of the Church, had made them Overſeers: Becauſe that as Chriſt
Hebr. 13. 7. had purchaſed them, ſo alſo he would have of the Elders, whom he had ſet
over them, an Account for their Souls. In Application I exhorted thoſe that had ſuch ſpecial Flocks committed to them, and yet lived ſtill among us here
Pſal. 4. 4. [in the Univerſity] that they would enter into their Chambers, and herein examine their Hearts before the Lord. And if Univerſity, Eaſe, Quiet, Wealth, or any other ſiniſter thing were as dear unto them as Father and Mother; yet in this Caſe of the Glory of God, for the feeding of his People
Deut. 33. 9. committed to them, to ſay with *Levi, I know you not.* Yea, if they were
Matt. 18. 8, 9. as dear as the Parts of our own Bodies; yet to follow Chriſt's Counſil, rather to cut them off, than with them to be caſt into Hell-fire.

Touching the Seventh, I ſaid, That if *Peter* had had ſuch Authority, as the Papiſts think he had, he might well have uſed it here, in urging and commanding theſe Elders unto that, unto which as a Fellow Elder, he doth *exhort them. The Elders which are among you, I exhort:* Yea, that he was ſo far from thinking himſelf the Chief of the Apoſtles, as that here he cal-
1 Pet. 5. 1. leth and accounteth himſelf a *Fellow Elder* with the ordinary Elders of the
Luk. 22. 26. ſeveral Congregations. Yet the Pomp and the Popiſh Hierarchy eſteem otherwiſe both of him, touching his Superiority over the reſt of the Apoſtles, and of themſelves, to be BB. of Biſhops. But we are to like of a godly Equality.

1Theſſ. 5. 11. Touching the Eighth and Ninth, ſpeaking of that that the Apoſtle *Peter*
Act. 20. 17. 28. exhorted the Elders to feed the Flock, which depended on them, I ſhewed,
That as it was the Duty of all Chriſtians, ſo alſo of the Miniſters of the
Amoz 7. 12, 13. Word of God, to exhort and ſtir up one another. And that this Practice

of the Apoſtle did condemn them that are ſo far from exhorting others to feed, as that they ſtay thoſe that would feed. The Spirit of God hath noted it, as a thing to be taken heed of, which we read of *Amaziah*, that he forbade *Amoz* to prophecy at *Bethel*. We are rather to follow the Example of *James*, and *Cephas*, and *John*: Of whom it is ſet down by the Spirit of Gal. 2. 5. God, that they gave the Right Hand of Fellowſhip to *Paul* and *Barnabas*; joyning and ſtrengthning themſelves to the Work of the Miniſtry. That his own Company ſhould preach to the *Gentiles*, and the other to the Circumciſion.

NUMB. LXXII.

A Note of ſuch Matters, as do appear againſt Mr. Edward Crofts*; upon Examination of one* Smith*, a Conjurer, and others, after named; concerning the procuring the Death of the Earl of* Leiceſter *by Conjuration.*

JOhn Smith examined ſaith, That at ſuch time as Sir *James Crofts* was MSS. Burghlian. committed, this Examinant being at *Charing Croſs*, Mr. *Crofts* deſired this Examinant to help him, that he might know, who were his Father's Friends. And this Examinant bade him ſet down the Names of the Council. And Mr. *Crofts* gave him the Names of 8 or 9. And this Examinant told him, that the Earl of *Leiceſter* was his Enemy: But whom elſe he doth not remember.

After the Earl was gone into the Country, one came into Mr. *Crofts* Houſe, and ſaid, That one of the Queen's Phyſicians was come up from the Earl, who did report, that he was ſick. And this Examinant ſaid, *Tea, the Lord help him. For he is ſick indeed. And now the Bear is muzzled*, who was Mr. *Crofts* Enemy.

That *Pillis* his Wife did ſay, that the Earl was not dead. No, ſaid this Examinate? Then I will be hanged.

That he told *George Lewis*, That Mr. *Crofts*, and all his Kindred, were beholden unto him. For their great Enemy was dead; meaning the Earl of *Leiceſter*. *Anne Pilly* ſaid the ſame. And further, that when *Crofts* had given *Smith* the Names of all the Councils, *Smith* went up into Mr. *Crofts* Chamber, Mr. *Crofts* ſtaying beneath. And within a Whiſtle after, *Smith* came down and ſaid, That the Earl of *Leiceſter* was Sir *James Crofts* great Enemy. That ſhortly after the Earl was gone out of Town, *Smith* ſaid, The Bear was muzzled; and holding a Glaſs of Water in his Hand, ſaid, That if he were by the Earl, and yet have a thouſand Pounds, he could ſave his Life; yet, and yet, and yet. That when it was reported, that the Earl was dead, ſhe ſaid unto *Smith*, that the Earl was not dead: Then let him be hanged. Which Speeches did make her verily believe, that *Smith* did kill the Earl.

That Mr. *Crofts* writ certain Names, and ſent them by her to *Smith*. And within four or five Days after, ſhe fetched the Writing from *Smith* again. And ſaid, that all thoſe whom he had croſſed were Mr. *Croftes* Friends, and the reſt were his Enemies. And that he ſhould make choice of the Earl of *Ormund*, *Richard Aubrey*, and Sir *Martin Furbiſhed* [*Furbiſher.*] For they would travail for his Protection. And next, to deal with the Lord Chancellor [*Hatton.*]

One *Pulman* told *George Lewis*, that was examined, that *Smith* willed *Crofts* to give him the Names of all the Council, and he would tell him, which were his Father's Friends: which was done. And he pointed out his Friends and Enemies. After which Mr. *Crofts* came to *Smith*, and ſaid, Now *Leiceſter* goes a Journey into the Country. And *Smith* ſaid, He doth indeed,

deed, but ſhall never return: And ſaid after, that he had muzzled the great Bear: and ſaid, that if he might have a 1000*l.* he could help him yet, and yet, and yet. And a little while after he ſaid, that all the World could not help him. And the next News came, that he was dead. And ſo *Pulman* ſaid, that the ſaid Earl was made away by Witchcraft.

That *Smith* called Mr. *Crofts* a Lyar, a forſworn Man, and a Diſſembler, with other ſhameful Words. But Mr. *Crofts* replied very gently, ſaying, that his Life lay in *Smith*'s Hands. And *Smith* told this Examinant [*George Lewis*] that Mr. *Crofts* and all his Kin were beholden to him: for their great Enemy was dead. And the other Matter might have been brought to paſs, if the Party had lived.

NUMB. LXXIII.

The Lord Treaſurer Burghley'*s Letter to Mr.* Dyer, *the Queen*'s *Agent in the Parts of* Germany; *ſignifying the Queen's Invitation of Sir* Edward Kelly: *Labouring his coming into* England, *to give his Service to the Queen.*

SIR,

Cott. Librar. Titus B. 2.

AT one time I have received your two Letters; the one of the 15th, the other of the 16th. By both which I perceive you hold faſt your firſt Opinion of Sir *Edward Kelly*, namely, as you write, for that worthy Truth in him at the higheſt Point that hath been before by you reported, and thereto you add in the ſame Letter, that for his perfect Love towards her Majeſty, you think there cannot be found better in any Man; move me to expect certainly by your Means a perfect Reſolution in Sir *Edward K.* without all Scruples to return to his native Country; to honour her Majeſty, as a loyal natural Subject, with the Fruits of ſuch great Knowledge, as God hath given him. And thereby to yield her ſome Aid to withſtand her Enemies, to maintain her Crown in Glory; and generally to comfort all her good Subjects, by making them to live under her Majeſty in Security; yea in Triumph over their Enemies.

And what greater worldly Felicity can any Man that ever was born in any Country deſerve to have? And if his Knowledge be as certain as you make it, and his dutiful Love be thereto joyned, what would you have me think could ſtay him from coming hither, to attain to this Felicity in his own Country. All other imagined Stayes of Bruits carried thither of evil Speeches here, or of Diſgraces uttered againſt him, yea, or of mortal Threatnings, as you write, that come hither every Fortnight, ought not to ſtay a Man of his Valour, from the honouring of his Sovereign; whom all Princes honour; yea, whom the Grand Seignor, who deſpiſeth others, hath Reverence for her princely Virtues and royal Acts; but to contemne all flying Rumours, in reſpect of the Eſtimation of ſuch a Princeſs, as the Queen is; of her very divine Nature almoſt ready to reward; yea, to honour Knowledge in any Perſon according to the Meaſure thereof. And ſuch Account ought he to make of her Majeſty's princely Aſſurance, as never was ſtained with any Breach of Promiſe to them that deſerved her Favour. And if I knew not to whom I did write, that have had ſo long Experience of her rare Vertues, and moſt princely Condition, I could uſe many Arguments to move any Man never to miſtruſt her Favour, her Maintenance, and rewarding of any ſuch as ſhould do her any Service, according to the Value thereof.

And ſeeing you are fully perſuaded of the ineſtimable Value of his Service, and by my confident Opinion of your Wit and Affection, I doubt not, but you are able to perſuade him to remit himſelf to her Majeſty's Protection againſt all Impediments that ſeem to ariſe of light and very falſe Rumours carried thither; the Falſhood of ſome of them being by me even at this preſent diſcovered, that my Lord Chancellor ſhewed me in a Letter from you brought with mine. Wherein you writ, that Sir *Edw. K.* is informed, that my Lord Chancellor hath uttered divers reproachful Speeches even afore her Majeſty; whereof my Lord is notably wronged. For on my Faith, I never heard my Lord uſe any evil Words of him: and he himſelf upon the Receit of your Letter hath and doth avow it upon his Faith and Honour, and ſo hath proteſted afore her Majeſty; and that he never uttered any reproachful Words, either afore her Majeſty, or out of her Preſence. Which alſo her Majeſty in my hearing hath confirmed, never to have heard his Lordſhip to have depraved him. And this Report being ſo notoriouſly falſe, I ſee not but he may miſtruſt the reſt. Tho' I think ſome may be found in ſome ſort true, by theſe two Sorts of Men, as in ſome part I my ſelf have in way of Argument heard uttered. One Sort ſeeming to think the Action impoſſible to perform, which is reported of Sir *Edw. K.* conceive that they which make Report of their own Excellence by ſetting Tranſmutation of Mettals into Gold by him, do notwithſtanding contend with the Reporters, that they are deceived; and ſo may be to us. Even the wiſe Senate of *Venice* were the laſt Year notoriouſly deceived by one that made Profeſſion of ſuch a Science; yea, that was honoured of the whole State of *Venice* for the ſame. And indeed there are many, and not unwiſe, that do, without Malice to Sir *Edw. K.* utter their Opinions by Speeches in Condemnation of him. And yet I am ſure, if they ſhall at any time by Demonſtration ſee the Effect of his Knowledge proved, will honour him, and think that Country bleſſed, that have ſuch a Member.

There are I think ſome others of another Condition, that percaſe have no dutiful Mind towards her Majeſty and their Country, that would not Sir *Edw. Kelly* ſhould return to benefit her Majeſty and the Realm; and ſuch cunningly to utter reprochful Speeches, both againſt his Perſon, and his Knowledge, of ſet Purpoſe to be heard by his Friends here; from whom it is likely ſuch Reports be brought. But, Mr. *Dyer*, againſt theſe Obſtacles one only Remedy reſteth; which is the princely Authority of her Majeſty, which you may aſſure him, if he ſhall return and yield to her Majeſty the Fruits of that Knowledge which you affirm he hath, ſhall yield to him all Kind of Contentation for his Credit and Eſtimation, and Ability to live here in his native Country, as far forth as any other Prince, to whom he is a Stranger by Birth, can or will give him.

To conclude with you: If by theſe and ſuch like Reaſons you cannot perſuade him to come hither, then one of theſe two things, according to my preſent Opinion, which I have, muſt needs follow; either that I muſt certainly think that he cannot perform that which you conceive of him, but that by ſome Cunning, or, as they ſay, *Legerdemain*, both you and all others have been deceived, as the wiſeſt in *Venice* were the laſt Year: or elſe I muſt in my Heart (which I would be moſt loth to do) condemn him, as an unnatural born Man to his Country, and a very diſloyal Subject to a moſt vertuous, godly Lady, his Sovereign.

While I was writing this Letter, Report was brought to *London* by one *Kelly*, that once ſerved Mr. Vicechamberlain, and came from *Staden*, that Sir *Edw. K.* and you were ſtolen from *Prage*: Which, he ſaith, was told him by a *Scottiſh* Man that came from *Prage*, with much more Circumſtance, as the Bearer hereof, your Servant, can at length tell you. But until I was better adviſed to ſee the Unlikelihood of the Report, comparing the ſame with your laſt Letters, I did ſtay to end my Letter one or two Days; but your Servant being to return, I did not defer it any longer, having only one thing, whereof to remember you, which is, that if you cannot obtain Sir *Edw. Kellies* Return perſonally, yet that you would for Maintenance of your Credit, procure ſome ſmall, tho' very ſmall Portion of the Powder, to make a Demonſtramonſtration, in her Majeſty's own Sight, of the Perfection of his Knowledge.

But if I might have my Wiſh, next to his own coming home, I wiſh he would in ſome ſecret Box ſend to her Majeſty for a Token, ſome ſuch Portion as might be to her a Sum reaſonable to defer her Charges for this Summer for her Navy; which we are now preparing to the Sea, to withſtand the ſtrong Navy of *Spain*, diſcovered upon the Coaſts between *Britain* and *Cornwal* within theſe two Days. But Wiſhers and Woulders were never good Houſholders. And ſo I end with my moſt hearty Commendation, hoping to receive ſome comfortable Anſwer to this long Letter. From the Court at my Houſe at *Theobalds*, where her Majeſty hath been already ever ſince *Monday* this of this Month; and I think departeth not until *Thurſday*. Which Time I could be contented might have been tripled, ſo I had but one Corn of Sir *Edw. Kellies* Powder.

NUMB. LXXIV.

A Letter from an Engliſh *Merchant lately at* Prague, *to Mr.* Edward Wotton; *concerning ſeizing Sir* Edw. Kelly, *and committing him to the Caſtle at* Prague, *by a ſpecial Commiſſion from the Emperor; with the Cauſes thereof.*

MSS. Burg-lian.

——TO *Prague* I came on the 28th of *April*, making my Journey ſo as I might fall in with the End of the *Leipſig* Mart——

At my firſt Coming I was advertiſed, that there were many *Engliſh* in the Town. Upon which I meant not to diſcover my ſelf, till I had ſounded out what they were, the State they bear, and what Courſe they took. Word was given me, that one Mr. *Dyer* was in Sir *Edward Kellies* Houſe, and another Page with one of the *Lees* in the Town, and two or three other Captains; which departed, as I was enformed, that Day to *Norinberg*: I did think the next Day to offer my Duty to Mr. *Dyer*. In mean while happened this Alteration. His Majeſty [the Emperor] on the laſt of *April*, about twelve of the Clock, ſent the moſt Part of the Gentlemen of his Guard, and the other, down from the Court Caſtle to Sir *Edward Kellies* Houſe, with Commandment to bring him up bound, the Cauſe concealed: The Houſe choſen, as it was thought, that he might be taken at Dinner. And becauſe it ſeemed ſomewhat a hard Proceeding to enter the Houſe of a Conſillor of Eſtate with the Guard alone, they had joyned unto them the Captain and Lieutenant of the Caſtle, Provoſt of the Town, and Secretary in the State of *Bohemia*.

The Officers coming in found him not there; but, as ſome ſaid, upon Intelligence from a ſecret Friend in the Court, departed a little before. Which by reaſon of the little Diſtance between the Court and Sir *Edward*'s Lodgings, (being no further than from *Boughton* Houſe to the Vineyard) was unprofitable, eſpecially being not able to go. So that ſometime muſt be ſpent in the Preparation of an Horſe or Coach. Others ſaid, that he was departed the night before. Which indeed was the right Truth: tho' done ſo ſecretly, as his own Family was kept from it. The Officers finding not the Principal, ſeized on the Acceſſaries; bound his Servants, and led them up to Priſon in Sight of the whole Town: Sealed up the Doors of every Chamber: Uſed chief Extremity on his Brother: not without Speech that he was tortured; which yet was falſe. Mr. *Dyer* with his Servant was commanded to keep the Houſe, until further hearing of his Majeſty's Pleaſure. Some ſay he kept in upon his own Wiſdom and Judgment: which the Secretary of *Bohemia* told me himſelf: But I dare not affirm it; becauſe I hear of Perſons in great Authority the contrary. It may be, he was only admoniſhed without Commandment or Charge: and thence it aroſe.

His Majeſty advertiſed that he was gone, is ſaid to have curſed in the *Dutch* manner; gave forth preſent Order to have the Highways ſet: Places ſuſpected to harbour him were ſearched in the Town: a Poſt diſpatched toward the Earl of *Roſemberg*, his Patron, with a Letter from the Emperor of theſe Contents, that if he came unto him, he ſhould deliver him upon his Allegiance to the Crown of *Bohemia*.

The Tumult being over, what ſhould be the Cauſe was the next Queſtion? To be weighty and hainous it was conjectured, becauſe it was contrary to the Emperor's Humour, and Courſe of his Houſe of *Auſtria*, to procede in criminal Matters either ſo violently, or ſo generally. That it touched the Emperor's own Perſon, was manifeſted by keeping it cloſe, at leaſt by Interpretation received no otherwiſe. The Cauſes given forth were theſe. Some ſaid, it was for Debt. Which tho' it were probably ſpoken, becauſe I find the Supputation of his Debt in the Town to ariſe to 32 Thouſand Dollars: Which he oweth to two *Colen* Merchants, that trade with Jewels; yet did two Reaſons make evidently againſt it. Firſt, becauſe he was known to have much more in preſent Money and Lands, than his Debts came unto; and no Entry or Diſtrainment heard of upon his Unmoveables, which according to the Proceſs of that Crown ought to have been in the Caſe of Debt. Secondly, to the Emperor he was known to have owed nothing, nor ever to have put him in any Charge, ſave for Coals and Houſe-room. And it was not his Majeſty's Maner to follow the Actions of his own Subjects, being *Princeps* and *Procurator* of his People.

Others ſaid, that the Duke of *Bavaria*, exalting the Gold-maker of *Venice*, (whom he executed at *Monch* the 25. of *April*) confeſſed unto him, that he was ſworn in one League unto Mr. *Kelly*. Which the Duke ſignifying unto the Emperor, ſhould deſire in his Letter to have him impriſoned. Of this I can neither find the Falſhood, nor Truth.

A third gave forth, That Mr. *Dyer* had brought unto him the Queen's Letter to call him home. Which coming to the Emperor's Ears, and his Majeſty ſeeking to hinder it, Impriſonment was thought for the preſent time a good Means to ſtay his Departure. And afterwards he might be talked further withal. This I take to have been ſome of his Friends Invention, to ſtill the People from ſpeaking the worſt of him. Whether Mr. *Dyer* brought them, or no, I cannot ſay. The *French* Agent hath affirmed it moſt conſtantly unto me; as likewiſe that the Emperor was certified. A Doctor's Son in the Town told me, he knew the Queen's Hand, and read the Letters, having ſerved Sir *Phylip Sydney* ſometime in *England*: by whoſe Means he came to the Sight of ſuch things. I dare not haſten to believe it, till I hear further Grounds of Truth. Becauſe being Letters of Secreſy, Mr. *Dyer*, a Gentleman of rare Diſcretion, would have handled it ſo, as they ſhould not have come forth, at leaſt be known, that he did bring them; which might endanger himſelf. Till certain Advice, I will hold the Opinion, that Sir *Edward Kelly* had at ſome time or other vaunted at the Table, or in his Converſation with others, that the Queen had ſent for him, as he is a Man, who taketh, as I hear, a Pleaſure, that Princes deſire him. Howſoever it be, it is like in this Caſe much to hurt him, the Emperor being aſſuredly informed, that he is ſent for.

The Fourth Cauſe alledged was, That he had at his Table ſpoke perillous Words againſt the Emperor and the *Poples*; which is the ſecond Family of *Bohemia*. Which being the old Enemies of *Roſemberg*, and being at this preſent the principal Officer of that State; as one a Privy Counſillor, another Maſter of the Court, a third Land Officer, a fourth of them Preſident in the Appellation; have prevailed with the Emperor to have him impriſoned; ſo under pretence of public Juſtice, to revenge their own private Quarrel upon the *Roſſembergs:* who have been both the Setters up of Sir *Edward Kelly*, and the principal Maintainers of him hitherto.

The Fifth Report was, That his Majeſty having long had a Throbbing of the Heart, as it were an hereditary Diſeaſe from his Father, who dyed of it: by which he often falleth into a Swound; Sir *Edward Kelly* diſtilled an Oyl for it. Which being ſent unto the Emperor, and Sir *Edward*'s Enemies being by, perſuaded his Majeſty that it was appointed to poiſon him. Proof was made of the Force of it; and it wrought the Effect of Poiſon. Some ſaid, the Throbbing of the Heart was given forth for a Colour to hide a more infamous Diſeaſe: Which I leave in Doubt. The Circumſtances beat ſhrewdly about it. For the Oyl is ſaid to have had the Vertue of effecting in Favour, or otherwiſe, according to the Quantity. Which for an inward Diſeaſe ſoundeth ſomewhat unprobably.

The laſt Reaſon of his Impriſonment, which I could by any means learn, was, That his Majeſty three Days before his Departure ſhould have ſent for him, to make Proof of his Art at the Court, which one *Scoto*, an *Italian*, had diſabled him in. Mr. *Kelly* returned Anſwer, he was ſick; and not long after fled. He was taken on the 2. of *May* at *Sobiſlaus*, twelve Miles from *Prague*, a Town belonging to *Peter*, Earl of *Roſenburgh*, as he was in his Journey towards *William*, Earl of *Roſenbergh*. At firſt he reſiſted the Officer, making Anſwer, he was a Citizen of *Bohemia*, and a Counſillor of Eſtate. His Flight was objected to him. Which he denyed, and called it onely a Viſiting of his Patron the Earl. Which he might do, either ſecretly, or otherwiſe. A Courier was diſpatched in Poſt to the Court, to know the Emperor's Will. Who commanded him to be brought to the Caſtle *Pirglitz*, ſituate three Miles from *Prague*. Mr. *Dyer* was, as I take it, on the 11th of *May* ſent for up to the Court, with the Secretary and another Counſillor, that conducted him in good convenient ſort home again. The Secretary I ſpake withal afterwards; who commended him for his grave Behaviour and Anſwers, and added this Praiſe of him, That he had ſo great a Grace in Court, as *Non potuimus ullo modo par referre.* Thoſe were his Words.

What will be the Concluſion, I know not. The Action is *Læſæ Majeſtatis:* which the Emperor intends. To have him openly executed there is no Fear, becauſe the Earl of *Roſenberg* will earneſtly interpoſe himſelf. And in *Bohemia* it is Rule, that his Majeſty dares do nothing without the Earl's Conſent, being Burgrave of *Prague*, the immediate Perſon and Officer under the Crown. If Difference ſhould ariſe between them, the Emperor hath Cauſe to think upon his own Security, Matters going not ſo, as the People would, in the Regiment. Who wait upon ſuch an Occaſion to work a Change in the State. Secretly in the Caſtle it may be done, and the Earl not know otherwiſe than that he liveth, or is dead by Diſeaſe: Almoſt grown now to be a common Practice in the Empire, and in the *Palatine*, eſpecially noted that way. This I fear is either done already, or will be done. His Servants ſhall no doubt be ſet at Liberty. One of them, I hear, was racked. Mr. *Dyer* at his Return from the Court, where he made his Anſwers before the Counſillors, was not fully free, as far as I could hear, by the *French* Agents Means.

It was a great Croſs that kept me from Mr. *Dyer*, Sir *Edward Kelly*, and the reſt of the *Engliſh:* the Action being Treaſon drew the whole Nation into Jealouſy. And for my part, I had rather be quiet and ſtill.

F I N I S.

B L